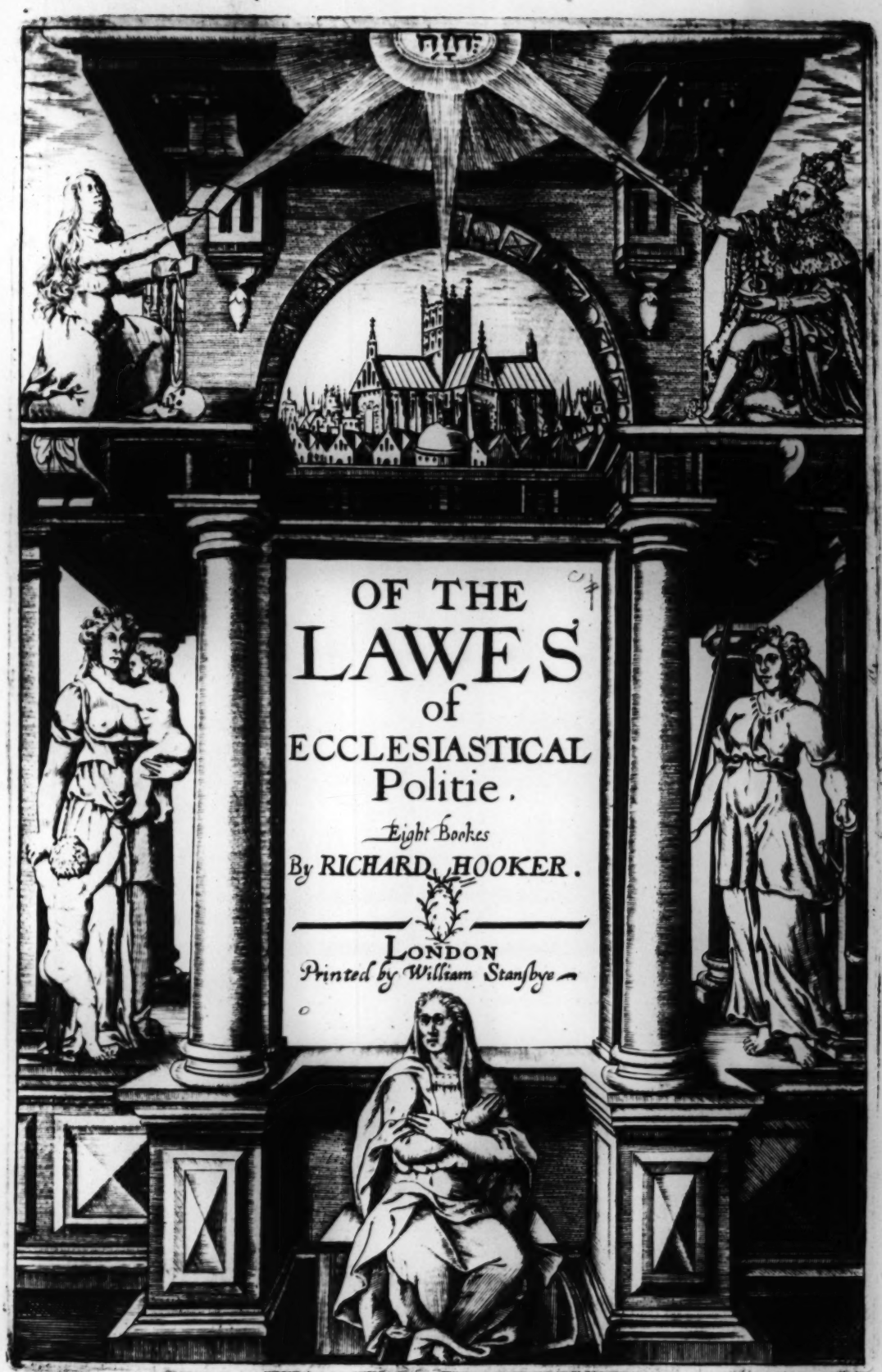
89



OF THE LAWES of ECCLESIASTICAL Politie.

Eight Bookes

By RICHARD HOOKER.

LONDON
Printed by William Stansbye

To the Reader.



His vnhappy Controuersie, about the receiued Ceremonies & Discipline of the Church of England, which hath so long time withdrawne so many of her Ministers from their principall worke, and imployed their Studies in contentious Oppositions: hath by the vnnaturall growth and dangerous fruits therof, made knowne to the World, that it neuer receiued blessing from the Father of Peace. For whose experience doth not find, what confusion of Order, and breach of the sacred Bond of Loue hath sprung from this Dissention; how it hath rent the body of the Church into diuers parts, and diuided her people into diuers Sects; how it hath taught the Sheepe to despise their Pastors, and alienated the Pastors from the loue of their Flockes: how it hath strengthened the Irreligious in their Impieties, and

hath raised the hopes of the sacrilegious deuourers of the remaines of Christs Patrimonie, and giuen way to the common Aduersarie of Gods Truth, and our prosperitie, to grow great in our Land without resistance; who seeth not how it hath distracted the minds of the multitude, and shaken their faith, and scandalized their weakenesse, and hath generally killed the very heart of true Pietie, and religious Deuotion, by changing our zeale towards Christs glorie, into the fire of Enuie and Malice, and Heart-burning, and zeale to euery mans priuate cause? This is the summe of all the gaines which the tedious contentions of so many yeers haue brought in, by the ruine of Christs Kingdome, the encrease of Satans, partly in Superstition, and partly in Impietie. So much better were it in these our dwellings of Peace to endure any inconuenience whatsoeuer in the outward frame, then in desire of alteration, thus to set the whole house on fire. Which mooued the Religious heart of this learned Writer, in zeale of Gods truth, and in compassion to his Church, the mother of vs all, which gaue vs both the first breath of Spiritnall Life, and from her Brests hath fed vs vnto this whatsoeuer measure of growth we haue in Christ, to stand vp and take vpon him a generall defence both of her selfe, and of her established Lawes, and by force of demonstration, so farre as the nature of the present matter could beare, to make knowne to the World, and these Oppugners of her; that all those bitter accusations laide to her charge, are not the faults of her Lawes and Orders,

but

but either their owne mistakes in the misvnderstanding, or the abuses of men in the ill execution of them. A Worke subiect to manifold reprehensions and oppositions, and not suitable to his soft and mild disposition, desirous of a quiet priuate life, wherein he might bring forth the fruits of Peace in Peace. But the loue of God and of his Countrie, whose greatest danger grew from this Diuision, made his heart hot within him, and at length the fire kindled, and amongst manie other most Reuerend and Learned men, hee also presumed to speake with his Pen. And the rather, because hee saw that none of these ordinarie obiections of partialities could eleuate the authoritie of his writing, who alwaies affected a priuate State, and neither enioyed, nor expected any the least Dignitie in our Church. What admirable height of Learning, and depth of Iudgement dwelled within the lowly mind of this true humble Man, great in al wise mens eyes, except his owne; with what Grauitie and Maiestie of speech his tongue and Pen vttered heauenly Mysteries, whose eyes in the humilitie of his heart were alwayes cast downe to the ground, how all things that proceeded from him were breathed, as from the spirit of Loue, as if He like the Bird of the Holy Ghost, the Doue, had wanted Gall; let them that knew him not in his person, iudge by these liuing Images of his Soule, his writings. For out of these, euen those who otherwise agree not with him in Opinion, doe afoord him the testimonie of a milde and a louing Spirit: and of his Learning, what greater proofe can we

haue

haue then this, that his writings are most admired by those who themselues doe most excell in iudicious Learning, and by them the more often they are read, the more highly they are extolled & desired: which is the cause of this sixth Edition of his former bookes, and that without any addition or diminution whatsoeuer. For who will put a Pencile to such a Worke, from which such a workman hath taken his? There is a purpose of setting forth the three last Books also, their Fathers *Posthumi*. For as in the great declining of his body spent out with studie, it was his ordinarie Petition to Almightie God, that if hee might liue to see the finishing of these bookes, then *Lord let thy seruant depart in peace* (to vse his own words,) so it pleased God to grant him his desire: For he liued till he saw them perfected; & though like *Rachel* he died as it were in the trauell of them, and hastned death vpon himselfe, by hastening to giue them life: yet he held out to behold with his eyes, these *partus ingenij*, these *Beniamins*, Sonnes of his right hand, though to him they were *Benonies*, Sonnes of Paine and Sorrow. But some euil disposed minds, whether of Malice or couetousnesse, or wicked blind Zeale, it is vncertain, as if they had beene Egiptian Mid-wiues, as soone as they were borne, and their Father dead, smothered them, & by conueying away the perfect Copies left vntous nothing but certain old vnperfect and mangled Draughts, dismembred into pieces, and scattered like *Medeas Absirtus*: no fauor, no grace, not the shadowes of themselues almost remaining in them. Had

the

the Father liued to ſee them brought foorth thus defaced, he might rightfully haue named them *Benonies*, the Sonnes of Sorrow.

But ſeeing the importunities of many great and worthy perſons, will not ſuffer them quietly to die and to be buried, it is intended that they ſhall ſee them as they are. The Learned and Iudicious eye, will yet perhaps delight it ſelfe in beholding the goodly Lineaments of their well ſet Bodies, and in finding out ſome ſhadowes and reſemblances of their Fathers face. God graunt that as they were with their Brethren dedicated to the Church for Meſſengers of Peace: ſo in the ſtrength of that little breath of life that remaineth in them, they may proſper in their worke; and by ſatisfying the doubts of ſuch as are willing to learne, may helpe to giue an end to the calamities of theſe our Ciuill

VVarres.

F. S.

A PREFACE,

To them that ſeeke (as they terme it) the *Reformation of Lawes and Orders* Eccleſiaſticall, in the Church of ENGLAND.



THough for no other cauſe, yet for this, that poſteritie may know, we haue not looſely through ſilence permitted things to paſſe away as in a dreame, there ſhall be for mens information extant thus much concerning the preſent ſtate of the Church of God eſtabliſhed amongſt vs, and their carefull endeauour which would haue vpheld the ſame. At your hands, beloued in our Lord and Sauiour Ieſus Chriſt (for in him the loue which we beare vnto all that would but ſeeme to be borne of him, it is not the ſea of your gall and bitterneſſe that ſhall euer drowne) I haue no great cauſe to looke for other then the ſelfe-ſame portion and lot, which your manner hath beene hitherto to lay on them that concurre not in Opinion and Sentence with you. But our hope is, that the God of peace ſhall (notwithſtanding mans nature, too impatient of contumelious malediction) enable vs quietly, and euen gladly to ſuffer all things, for that worke ſake which we couet to performe. The wonderfull zeale and feruour wherewith yee haue withſtood the receiued orders of this Church,

The cauſe and occaſion of handling theſe things: and what might be wiſhed in them, for whoſe ſakes ſo much paines is taken.

was

was the first thing which caused me to enter into consideration, whether (as all your published Bookes and Writings peremptorily maintaine) euery Christian man fearing God, stand bound to ioyne with you for the furtherance of that which yee terme the Lords Discipline. *Wherein I must plainly confesse vnto you, that before I examined your sundrie declarations in that behalfe, it could not settle in my head to thinke, but that vndoubtedly such numbers of otherwise right well affected and most religiously inclined minds, had some marueilous reasonable inducements which led them with so great earnestnesse that way. But when once, as neere as my slender abilitie would serue, I had with trauell & care performed that part of the Apostles aduice and counsell in such cases, whereby he willeth to* trie all things; *and was come at the length so farre, that there remained onely the other clause to be satisfied, wherein he concludeth, that* what good is must be held: *there was in my poore vnderstanding no remedy but to set downe this as my finall resolute perswasion;* Surely the present forme of Church gouernment which the Lawes of this Land haue established, is such, as no Law of God, nor reason of man hath hitherto beene alleadged, of force sufficient to prooue they doe ill, who to the vttermost of their power withstand the alteration thereof: *Contrariwise;* The other which insteade of it wee are required to accept, is only by errour and misconceipt named the ordinance of Iesus Christ, no one proofe as yet brought forth, whereby it may cleerely appeare to bee so in very deede. *The explication of which two things I haue here thought good to offer into your owne hands: heartily beseeching you euen by the meeknesse of Iesus Christ, whom I trust ye loue, that, as ye tender the peace and quietnesse of this Church, if there bee in you that gracious humilitie which hath euer beene the Crowne and glory of a Christianly disposed minde; if your owne soules, hearts and consciences, (the sound integritie whereof can but hardly stand with the refusall of truth in personall respects) be, as I doubt not but they are, things most deare and precious vnto you,* Let not the faith which ye haue in our Lord Iesus Christ, be blemished with par-
Iam. 2. 1. tialities, *regard not who it is which speaketh, but weigh only what is spoken. Thinke not that ye reade the words of one, who bendeth himselfe as an Aduersary against the Truth, which ye haue alreadie imbraced; but the words of one who desireth euen to imbrace together with you the selfe same truth, if it bee the truth; and for that cause (for no other God bee knoweth) hath vndertaken the burthensome labour of this painfull kind of conference. For the playner accesse whereunto, let it bee lawfull for me to*

rip

rip vp to the very bottome how and by whom your Diſcipline was planted, at ſuch time as this age we line in began to make firſt triall thereof.

2. A founder it had, whom, for mine owne part, I thinke incomparably the wiſeſt man that euer the French Church did enioy, ſince the houre it enioyed him. His bringing vp was in the ſtudie, of the Ciuill Law. Diuine knowledge he gathered not by hearing or reading ſo much, as by teaching others. For though thouſands were debters to him, as touchinge knowledge in that kind: yet he to none but only to God, the author of that moſt bleſſed Fountaine the Booke of Life, and of the admirable dexteritie of wit, togeather with the helps of other learning which were his guides: till being occaſioned to leaue France, he fell at the length vpon Geneua: Which Citie, the Biſhop and Clergie thereof had a little before (as ſome doe affirme) forſaken, being of likelyhood frighted with the peoples ſudden attempt for aboliſhment of Popiſh Religion: the euent of which enterprize they thought it not ſafe for themſelues to wait for in that place. At the comming of Caluine thither, the forme of their ciuill Regiment was popular, as it continueth at this day: neither King, nor Duke, nor Nobleman of any authoritie or power ouer them, but officers choſen by the people yeerely out of themſelues, to order all things with publique conſent. For ſpirituall Gouernement, they had no Lawes at all agreed vpon, but did what the Paſtors of their ſoules by perſwaſion could winne them vnto. Caluine being admitted one of their Preachers and a Diuinitie-Reader amongſt them, conſidered how dangerous it was that the whole eſtate of that Church ſhould hang ſtill on ſo ſlender a threed, as the liking of an ignorant multitude is, if it haue power to change whatſoeuer it ſelfe liſteth. Wherefore taking vnto him two of the other Miniſters, for more countenance of the action, (albeit the reſt were all againſt it) they moued, and in the end perſwaded with much adoe, the People to binde themſelues by ſolemne Oath, firſt, neuer to admit the Papacie amongſt them againe; And ſecondly, to liue in obedience vnto ſuch orders concerning the exerciſe of their Religion, and the forme of their Eccleſiaſticall Gouernement, as thoſe their true and faithfull Miniſters of Gods Word had agreeably to Scripture ſet downe for that end and purpoſe. When theſe things began to be put in vre, the people alſo (what cauſes mouing them thereunto, themſelues beſt know) began to repent them of that they had done, and irefully to champe vpon the bit they had taken into their mouthes, the rather for that they grew by meanes of this innouation into diſlike with ſome

The firſt eſtabliſhment of new Diſcipline by M *Caluines* induſtrie, in the Church of *Geneua*: and the beginning of ſtrife about it amongſt our ſelues.

Churches neere about them, the benefit of whose good friendship their state could not well lacke: It was the manner of those times (whether through mens desire to enioy alone the glory of their owne enterprises, or else because the quicknesse of their occasions required present dispatch,) so it was, that euery particular Church did that within it selfe, which some few of their owne thought good, by whom the rest were all directed. Such number of Churches then being, though free within themselues, yet small, common conference before-hand might haue eased them of much after-trouble. But a greater inconuenience it bred, that euery later endeuoured to be certayne degrees more removed from conformitie with the Church of Rome, then the rest before had beene: whereupon grew maruellous great dissimilitudes, and by reason thereof, iealousies, heart-burnings, iarres, and discords amongst them. Which notwithstanding might haue easily beene prevented, if the orders which each Church did thinke fit and conuenient for it selfe, had not so peremptorily beene established vnder that high commanding forme, which tendered them vnto the people, as things euerlastingly required by the Law of that Lord of Lords, against whose statutes there is no exception to be taken. For by this meane it came to passe, that one Church could not but accuse and condemne another of disobedience to the will of Christ, in those things where manifest difference was betweene them: whereas the selfe-same orders allowed, but yet established in more varie and suspence manner, as being to stand in force till God should giue the opportunity of some generall conference what might bee best for euery of them afterwards to doe; this, I say, had both preuented all occasion of iust dislike which others might take, and reserued a greater libertie vnto the Authors themselues of entring into further consultation afterwards. Which though neuer so necessarie, they could not easily now admit, without some feare of derogation from their credit: and therefore that which once they had done, they became for euer after resolute to maintayne. Caluine therefore and the other two his Associates, stiffely refusing to administer the holy Communion to such as would not quietly without contradiction and murmure submit themselues vnto the orders which their solemne Oath had bound them to obey, were in that quarrell banished the Towne. A few yeeres after (such was the leiuty of that people) the places of one or two of there Ministers being fallen voyd, they were not before so willing to be rid of there learned Pastor, as now importunate to obtayne him againe from them who had giuen

him

him entertainment, and which were loth to part with him, had not vnresistable earnestnesse bene vsed. One of the Towne-Ministers that saw in what manner the people were bent for the reuocation of Caluine, gaue him notice of their affection in this sort. The Senate of two hundred being assembled, they all craue *Caluine*. The next day a generall Conuocation. They crie in like sort againe all: Wee will haue *Caluine* that good and learned man Christs Minister. This, *saith he*, when I vnderstood, I could not choose but praise God, nor was I able to iudge otherwise, then that this was the Lords doing, and that it was maruellous in our eyes, *And that* the stone which the builders refused, was now made the head of the corner. *The other two whom they had throwne out (together with* Caluine) *they were content should enioy their exile. Many causes might leade them to be more desirous of him. First, his yeelding vnto them in one thing, might haply put them in hope, that time would breed the like easinesse of condescending further vnto them. For in his absence he had perswaded them, with whom he was able to preuaile, that albeit himselfe did better like of common bread to be vsed in the Eucharist, yet the other they rather should accept, then cause any trouble in the Church about it. Againe, they saw that the name of* Caluine *waxed euery day greater abroad, and that together with his fame, their infamy was spread, who had so rashly and childishly ejected him. Besides, it was not vnlikely but that his credit in the World, might many wayes stand the poore Towne in great stead: as the truth is, their Ministers forreine estimation hitherto hath beene the best stake in their hedge. But whatsoeuer secret respects were likely to moue them, for contenting of their minds,* Caluine *returned (as it had beene another* Tully) *to his old vbam. He ripely considered how grosse a thing it were for men of his qualitie, wise and graue men, to liue with such a multitude, and to be Tenants at will vnder them, as their Ministers, both himselfe and others had beene. For the remedy of which inconuenience, he gaue them plainly to vnderstand, that if he did become their Teacher againe, they must be content to admit a complete forme of Disciplin, which both they and also their Pastors should now be solemnly sworne to obserue for euer after. Of which discipline the maine and principall parts were these: A standing Ecclesiasticall Court to be established: perpetuall Iudges in that Court to be their Ministers, others of the people annually chosen (twice so many in number as they) to be Iudges together with them in the same*

Epist. Cal. 24.

Luc. 10. 17.

Court: these two sorts to haue the care of all ment manners, power of determining of all kinde of Ecclesiasticall causes, and authoritie to conuent, to controll, to punish, as farre as with Excommunication, whomsoeuer they should thinke worthy, none either small or great excepted. This deuice, I see not, how the wisest at that time liuing could haue bettered, if we duly consider what the present estate of Geneua did then require. For their Bishop and his Clergie being (as it is said) departed from them by Moone-light, or howsoeuer, being departed; to choose in his roome any other Bishop, had beene a thing altogeather impossible: And for their Ministers to seeke, that themselues alone might haue coercive power ouer the whole Church, would perhaps haue beene hardly construed at that time. But when so franke an offer was made, that for euery one Minister there should be two of the People to sit and giue voice in the Ecclesiasticall Consistorie, what inconuenience could they easily finde which themselues might not be able alwayes to remedie? Howbeit (as euermore the simpler sort are, euen when they see no apparant cause, iealous notwithstanding ouer the secret intents and purposes of wiser men) this Proposition of his did somewhat trouble them. Of the Ministers themselues which had stayed behind in the Citie when Caluine was gone, some, vpon knowledge of the peoples earnest intent to recall him to his place againe, had before-hand written their Letters of submission, and assured him of their alleageance for euer after, if it should like him to harken vnto that publike suite. But yet misdoubting what might happen, if this Discipline did goe forward; they obiected against it the example of other reformed Churches, liuing quietly and orderly without it. Some of the chiefest place and countenance among st the Laytie professed with greater stomacke their iudgments, that such a Discipline was little better then Popish tyrannie, disguised and tendered vnto them vnder a new forme. This sort, it may be, had some feare that the filling vp of the seates in the Consistorie, with so great a number of lay-men, was but to please the minds of the people, to the end they might thinke their owne sway somewhat; but when things came to triall of practice, their Pastors learning would be at all times of force to ouer-perswade simple men, who knowing the time of their owne Presidentship to be but short, would alwayes stand in feare of their Ministers perpetuall authoritie. And among the Ministers themselues, one being so farre in estimation aboue the rest, the voices of the rest were likely to be giuen for the most part respectiuely vnto a kinde of secret dependencie

dencie and awe: so that in shew a marvellous indifferently composed Senate Ecclesiastical was to governe, but in effect one only man should, as the Spirit and Soule of the residue, doe all in all. But what did these vaine surmises boot? Brought they were now to so straight an issue, that of two things they must choose one; Namely, whether they would to their endlesse disgrace, with ridiculous lightnesse, dismisse him, whose restitution they had in so impotent manner desired, or else condescend vnto that demand, wherein he was resolute either to haue it, or to leaue them. They thought it better to be somewhat hardly yoked at home, then for euer abroad discredited. Wherefore in the end those orders were one all sides assented vnto, with no lesse alacritie of minde, then Cities vnable to hold out longer are wont to shew, when they take conditions such as it liketh him to offer them which hath them in the narrow streights of aduantage. Not many yeeres before ouerpassed, before these twice-sworne men aduentured to giue their last and boldest assault to the Fortresse of the same Discipline, childishly granting by common consent of their whole Senate, and that vnder their Towne-Seale, a relaxation to one Bertelier whom the Eldership had Excommunicated; further also decreeing, with strange absurditie, that to the same Senate it should belong to giue finall iudgement in matter of Excommunication, and to absolue whom it pleased them; cleane contrarie to their owne former Decrees and Oathes. The report of which Decree being forthwith brought vnto Caluine; Before (saith he) this Decree take place, either my bloud or banishment shall signe it. Againe, two dayes before the Communion should be celebrated, this speech was publiquely to like effect, Kill me, if euer this hand doe reach forth the things that are Holy, to them whom THE CHRIST hath iudged Despisers. Wherevpon, for feare of tumult, the fortnamed Bertelier was by his friends aduised for that time not to vse the liberties granted him by the Senate, nor to present himselfe in the Church, till they saw somewhat further what would ensue. After the Communion quietly ministred, and some likelyhood of peaceable ending of these troubles without any more adoe, that very day in the after-noone, besides all mens expectation, concluding his ordinary Sermon, he telleth them, That because he is neither bold learned nor rangle to strine with such as are in authoritie, therefore (saith he) the case standing as now it doth, let me vse these words of the Apostle vnto you; I commend you vnto God

An. Dom. 1541

and the Word of his grace, *and so had them heartily* Adieu. *It sometimes commeth to passe, that the readiest way which a wise man hath to conquer, is to flie. This voluntarie and unexpected mention of sudden departure, caused presently the Senate (for according to their wonted manner they still continued only constant in inconstancie) to gether themselues together, and for a time to suspend their owne Decree, leauing things to proceede as before, till they had heard the iudgement of foure* Heluetian *Cities concerning the matter which was in strife. This to haue done at the first before they gaue assent vnto any order, had shewed some wit and discretion in them: but now to doe it, was as much as to say in effect, that they would play their parts on a Stage.* Caluine *therefore dispatcheth with all expedition his letters vnto some principall Pastor in euery of those Cities, crauing earnestly at their hands, to respect this cause as a thing whereupon the whole state of Religion and Pietie in that Church did so much depend, that God and all good men were now inuitably certaine to be trampled vnder foote, vnlesse those foure Cities by their good meanes might be brought to giue sentence with the Ministers of* Geneua, *when the cause should be brought before them: yea, so to giue it, that two things it might effectually containe, the one an absolute approbation of the Discipline of* Geneua, *as consonant vnto the Word of God, without any cautions, qualifications, ifs, or ands; the other an earnest admonition not to innouate or change the same. His vehement request herein as touching both points was satisfied. For albeit the said* Heluetian *Churches did neuer as yet obserue that Discipline, notwithstanding the Senate of* Geneua *hauing required their iudgements concerning these three questions: First,* After what manner, by Gods commandement, according to the Scripture and vnpolluted Religion, Excommunication is to be exercised. *Secondly,* Whether it may not be exercised some other way then by the Consistorie. *Thirdly,* What the vse of their Churches was to doe in this case. *All these returned from the said Churches,* That they had heard already of those Consistoriall Lawes, & did acknowledge them to be *godly* Ordinances, *drawing* (saith the) the precept of the Word of God: for which cause that they did not thinke it good for the Church of Geneua by innouation to change the same, but rather to keepe them as they were. *Which answere, although not answering vnto their former demands, but reflecting vnto Master* Caluine *had iudged requisite for them*

Epist. 166.

them to answere, was notwithstanding accepted without any further replie: in as much as they plainly saw, that when stomacke doth striue with wit, the match is not equall. And so the heat of their former contentions began to slake. The present Inhabitants of Geneua, I hope, will not take it in euill part, that the faultinesse of their people heretofore, is by me so farforth laid open, as their owne learned Guides and Pastors haue thought necessarie to discouer it vnto the world. For out of their Bookes and Writings it is that I haue collected this whole narration, to the end it might thereby appeare in what sort amongst them that discipline was planted, for which so much contention is raised amongst our selues. The reasons which moued Caluine herein to be so earnest, was, as Beza himselfe reciteth, For that he saw how needfull these bridles were to be put in the iawes of that Citie. That which by wisedome he saw to be requisite for that people, was by as great wisedome compassed. But wise men are mens, and the truth is truth. That which Caluine did for establishment of his Discipline, seemeth more commendable, then that which he taught for the countenancing of it established. Nature worketh in vs alla loie to our owne counsels. The contradiction of others is a fuell to inflame that loue. Our loue set on fire to maintaine that which once we haue done, sharpeneth the wit to dispute, to argue, and by all meanes to reason for it. Wherefore a maruaile it were if a man of so great capacitie, hauing such incitements to make him desirous of all kinde of furtherances vnto his cause, could espie in the whole Scripture of God nothing which might breed at the least a probable opinion of likelyhood, that diuine entendine to selfe was the same way somewhat inclinable. And all which the wit men of Caluine was able from thence to draw, by sifting the very vttermost sentence and syllable of no more then that ordeined esse ecclesiae bene ene, which to him did seeme to intimate, that all Christian Churches ought to haue their Eldership indued with like power of Excommunication, and that a part of those Elderships euery where should be chosen out from among the people after such forme which himselfe had deuised. Concerning which vnwritable position, whereof it was euer grounded by Caluine, that any one sentence of Scripture doth necessarily enforce these things, one be reason wherein your opinion seemeth rather with his against those diuines of our owne church? Who should be iniurious vnto their wisedome, if we did derogate from them whom their industrie hath made great. Two things of principall moment there are which haue deseruedly procured him honour throughout the World: the

Quod eam Vrbem videret omnino his frenis indigere.

the one bis exceeding paines in composing the Institutions of Christian Religion; the other, bis no lesse industrious trauailes for expositions of holy Scripture according vnto the same Institutions. In which two things whosoeuer they were that after him bestowed their labour, hee gained the aduantage of preiudice against them, if they gaine-said; and of glorie aboue them, if they consented. His writings published after the question about that Discipline was once begunne, omit not any the least occasion of extolling the vse and singular necessitie thereof. Of what account the Master of sentences was in the Church of Rome, the same and more amongst the Preachers of reformed Churches Caluine had purchased: so that the perfectest Diuines were iudged, they which were skilfullest in Caluines writings. His Bookes almost the very Canon to iudge both Doctrine and Discipline by French Churches, both vnder others abroad, and at home in our owne Country, all cast according vnto that mold which Caluine had made. The Church of Scotland in erecting the fabricke of their reformation, tooke the selfe-same patterne. Till at length the Discipline, which was at the first so weake, that without the staffe of their approbation, who were not saluerd vnto it themselues, it had not brought others vnder subiection, began now to challenge vniuersall obedience, and to enter into open conflict with those verie Churches, which in dessensie warremitie had beene beleeuers of it. To one of those Churches which liued in most peaceable sort, and abounded as well with men for their learning in other professions singular, as also with Diuines whose equalls were not elsewhere to be found, a Church ordred by Geneua discipline, and yet by that which Geneua adorneth vnto that Church, the Church of Heidelberge, there commeth one who crying downe as disagreeable vnto holy Scripture, with open disdaine of their gouernement, that to a Minister with his Eldership power is giuen by the Law of God to excommunicate whomsoeuer, yea euen Kings and Princes themselues. Here were the seeders sowne of that controuersie which sprang vp betweene Beza and Erastus about the matter of Excommunication, whether there ought so to be in all Churches an Eldership hauing power to Excommunicate, and a part of that Eldership to be of necessitie ordinable chosen out from amongst the Laymen for that purpose. In which dispute whether they haue, as to mine seemeth, diuided verie equally the truth betweene them; Beza much truly maintaining the necessitie of Excommunication; Erastus as truly the non-necessitie of Lay-elders to be Ministers

mſters thereof. Amongſt our ſelues, there was in King Edwards *dayes ſome queſtion mooned by reaſon of a few mens ſcrupuloſitie touching certaine things. And beyond Seas, of them which fled in the dayes of Queene* Marie, *ſome contenting themſelues abroad with the vſe of their owne Service-booke, at home authorized before their departure out of the Realme; others liking better the Common Prayer Booke of the Church of* Geneua *tranſlated, thoſe ſmaller contentions before begunne were by this meane ſomewhat increaſed: Vnder the happie Reigne of her Maieſtie which now is, the greateſt matter awhile contended for, was the wearing of the Cap and Surpleſſe, till there came Admonitions directed vnto the High Court of Parliament, by men who concealing their names, thought it glorie enough to diſcouer their minds and affections, which now were vniuerſally bent euen againſt all the Orders and Lawes wherein this Church is found vnconformable to the platforme of* Geneua. *Concerning the Defender of which Admonitions, all that I meane to ſay is but this:* There will come a time when three words vttered with charitie and meekeneſſe, ſhall receiue a farre more bleſſed reward, then three thouſand Volumes written with diſdainefull ſharpneſſe of wit. *But the manner of mens writing muſt not alienate our hearts from the truth, if it appeare they haue the truth: as the followers of the ſame Defender doe thinke he hath, and in that perſwaſion they follow him, no otherwiſe then himſelfe doth* Caluine, Beza, *and others, with the like perſwaſion that they in this cauſe had the truth. Wee being as fully perſwaded otherwiſe, it reſteth that ſome kind of triall be vſed to find out which part is in error.*

3 *The firſt meane whereby Nature teacheth men to iudge good from euill, aſwell in Lawes as in other things, is the force of their owne diſcretion. Hereunto therefore S. Paul referreth oftentimes his owne ſpeech to be conſidered of by them that heard him,* I ſpeak as to them which haue vnderſtanding, iudge yee what I ſay. *Againe afterward,* Iudge in your ſelues, is it comly that a woman pray vncouered? *The exerciſe of this kind of iudgement our Sauiour requireth in the Iewes. In them of Berea the Scripture commendeth it. Finally, whatſoeuer we doe, if our owne ſecret iudgements conſent not vnto it as fit and good to be done; the doing of it to vs is ſinne, although the thing it ſelfe be allowable. Saint* Pauls *rule therefore generally is,* Let euerie man in his owne minde bee fully perſwaded of that thing which

By what meanes ſo many of the people are trained into the liking of that Diſcipline.

1. Cor. 10. 13.
1. Cor. 11. 13.
Luc. 12. 56, 57.
Act. 17. 11.

Rom. 14. 5.

which he either alloweth or doth. *Some things are ſo familiar and plaine, that Truth from falſhood, and good from euill is moſt eaſily diſcerned in them, euen by men of no deep capacitie. And of that nature, for the moſt part, are things abſolutely vnto all mens Saluation neceſſarie, either to be held or denied, either to be done or auoided. For which cauſe* S. Auguſtine *acknowledgeth that they are not onely ſet downe, but alſo plainely ſet downe in Scripture: ſo that he which heareth or readeth, may without any great difficultie vnderſtand. Other things alſo there are belonging (though in a lower degree of importance) vnto the offices of Chriſtian men: which becauſe they are more obſcure, more intricate and hard to be iudged of, therefore God hath appointed ſome, to ſpend their whole time principally in the ſtudie of things diuine, to the end that in theſe more doubtfull caſes, their vnderſtanding might be a light to direct others.* If the vnderſtanding power or facultie of the ſoule be (*ſaith the graue Phyſian*) like vnto bodily ſight, not of equall ſharpneſſe in all; what can be more conuenient, then that, euen as the dark-ſighted man is directed by the cleere about things viſible, ſo likewiſe in matters of deeper diſcourſe the wiſe in heart doth ſhew the ſimple where his way lyeth. *In our doubtfull caſes of Law, what man is there who ſeeth not how requiſite it is, that Profeſſors of skill in that facultie be our Directors? So it is in all other kinds of knowledge. And euen in this kind likewiſe the Lord hath himſelfe appointed, that* the Prieſts lips ſhould preſerue knowledge, and that other men ſhould ſeeke the truth at his mouth, *becauſe* he is the meſſenger of the Lord of Hoſts. Gregorie Nazianzen, *offended at the peoples too great preſumption in controlling the iudgement of them to whom in ſuch caſes they ſhould haue rather ſubmitted their owne, ſeeketh by earneſt intreatie to ſtay them within their bounds:* Preſume not, yee that are ſheepe, to make your ſelues guides of them that ſhould guide you, neither ſeeke yee to ouer-skip the fold which they about you haue pitched. It ſufficeth for your part, if yee can well frame your ſelues to be ordered. Take not vpon you to iudge your ſelues, nor to make them ſubiect to your lawes who ſhould be a law to you for, God is not a God of ſedition and confuſion, but of order & of peace. *But ye will ſay, that if the guides of the people be blind, the common ſort of men muſt not cloze vp their owne eyes and be led by the conduct of ſuch; if the Prieſt be partial in the Law, the flock muſt not therefore*

Galen. de opt. docen. Gen.

Mal. 2. 7.

Greg. Nazian. Orat. qua ſe excuſat.

Matth. 10. 14.

therefore depart from the wayes of ſincere truth, and in ſimplicitie yeeld to be followers of him for his place ſake & office over them. Which thing, though in it ſelfe moſt true, is in your defence notwithſtanding weake: becauſe the matter, wherein ye thinke that ye ſee and imagine that your wayes are ſincere, is of farre deeper conſideration then any one amongſt five hundred of you conceiveth. Let the vulgar ſort amongſt you know, that there is not the leaſt branch of the cauſe wherein they are ſo reſolute, but to the triall of it a great deale more appertaineth then their conceit doth reach vnto. I write not this in diſgrace of the ſimpleſt that way given; but I would gladly they knew the nature of that cauſe wherein they thinke themſelues throughly inſtructed and are not: by meanes whereof they dayly runne themſelues, without feeling their owne hazzard, vpon the dint of the Apoſtles ſentence againſt euill ſpeakers, as touching things wherein they are ignorant. If it be granted a thing vnlawfull for priuate men, not called vnto publike conſultation, to diſpute which is the beſt ſtate of ciuill Policie (with a deſire of bringing in ſome other kind then that vnder which they already liue, for of ſuch diſputes I take it his meaning was) if it be a thing confeſt, that of ſuch queſtions they cannot determine without raſhneſſe, in as much as a great part of them conſiſteth in ſpeciall circumſtances, and for one kind as many reaſons may be brought as for another; is there any reaſon in the World, why they ſhould better iudge what kinde of Regiment Eccleſiaſticall is the fitteſt? For in the ciuill State more inſight, and in thoſe affaires more experience a great deale muſt needs be granted them, then in this they can poſſibly haue. When they which write in defence of your Diſcipline, and commend it vnto the Higheſt, not in the leaſt cunning manner, are forced notwithſtanding to acknowledge, that with whom the Truth is they know not, they are not certaine; what certaintie or knowledge can the multitude haue thereof? Weigh what doth moone the common ſort ſo much to fauour this innouation, and it ſhall ſoone appeare vnto you, that the force of particular reaſons which for your ſeuerall opinions are alleaged, is a thing whereof the multitude neuer did, nor could ſo conſider as to be therewith wholly caried; but certaine generall inducements are vſed to make ſaleable your Cauſe in groſſe: and when once men haue caſt a fancie towards it, any ſlight declaration of ſpecialties will ſerue to leade forward mens inclinable and prepared minder. The method of winning the peoples affection vnto a generall liking of the Cauſe (for ſo yee terme it) hath

Mal. 2. 9.

Iude ver. 10. 2. Pet. 2. 12.

Caluin. Inſtit. lib 4. cap. 10. ſect. 8.

The Author of the Petition directed to her Maieſtie, pag. 3

hath beene this. First, in the hearing of the multitude, the faults especially of higher callings are ripped vp with maruellous exceeding feruentie and sharpneſſe of reproofe; which being oftentimes done, begetteth a great good opinion of integritie, zeale and holineſſe, to ſuch conſtant Reprooners of ſinne, as by likelyhood would neuer be ſo much offended at that which is euill, vnleſſe themſelues were ſingularly good. The next thing hereunto is to impute all faults and corruptions wherewith the world abounderh, vnto the kind of Eccleſiaſticall Gouernement eſtabliſhed. Wherein, as before by reproouing faults, they purchaſed vnto themſelues with the multitude a name to be vertuous; ſo by finding out this kind of cauſe, they obtaine to be iudged wiſe aboue others: whereas in truth vnto the forme euen of Jewiſh Gouernement, which the Lord himſelfe (they all confeſſe) did eſtabliſh, with like ſhew of reaſon they might impute thoſe faults which the Prophets condemne in the Gouernours of that Common-wealth; as to the Engliſh kind of Regiment Eccleſiaſticall (whereof alſo God himſelfe though in other ſort is Authour) the ſtaines and blemiſhes found in our State; which ſpringing from the roote of humane frailtie and corruption, not only are, but haue beene alwayes more or leſſe, yea, and (for any thing we know to the contrarie) will be till the worlds end complained off, what forme of Gouernment ſoeuer take place. Hauing gotten thus much ſway in the hearts of men, a third ſtep is to propoſe their owne forme of Church-Gouernment, as the only ſoueraigne remedie of all euils; and to adorne it with all the glorious titles that may be. And the nature, as of men that haue ſicke bodies, ſo likewiſe of the people in the crazednesſe of their minds poſſeſt with diſlike and diſcontentment at things preſent, is to imagine that any thing (the vertue whereof they heare commended) would helpe them; but that moſt, which they leaſt haue tried. The fourth degree of inducements, is by faſhioning the very notions and conceites of mens minds, in ſuch ſort that when they read the Scripture, they may thinke that euerie thing ſoundeth towards the aduancement of that Diſcipline, and to the vtter diſgrace of the contrarie. Pythagoras, by bringing vp his Schollers in ſpeculatiue knowledge of numbers, made their conceits therein ſo ſtrong, that when they came to the contemplation of things naturall, they imagined that in euery particular thing they euen beheld as it were with their eyes, how the Elements of number gaue eſſence and being to the workes of Nature. A thing in reaſon impoſſible: which notwithſtanding through their miſfaſhioned preconceite, appeared vnto

them

them no leſſe certaine, then if Nature had written it in the very foreheads of all the creatures of God. When they of the Family of Loue haue it once in their heads, that Chriſt doth not ſignifie any one Perſon, but a qualitie whereof many are partakers; that to be rayſed is nothing elſe but to be regenerated or indued with the ſayd qualitie; and that when ſeperation of them which haue it from them which haue it not, is here made, this is iudgement; how plainely doe they imagine that the Scripture euery-where ſpeaketh in the fauour of that Sect? And aſſuredly, the very cauſe which maketh the ſimple and ignorant to thinke they euen ſee how the Word of God runneth currantly on your ſide, is, that their minds are foreſtalled and their conceits peruerted beforehand, by being taught that an Elder doth ſignifie a Lay-man, admitted only to the office of Rule or Gouernment in the Church; a Doctor, one which may only teach, and neither Preach nor adminiſter the Sacraments; a Deacon, one which hath charge of the Almes-boxe, and of nothing elſe: that the Scepter, the Rod, the Throne and Kingdome of Chriſt, are a forme of Regiment, only by Paſtors, Elders, Doctors and Deacons: that by myſticall reſemblance Mount Sion and Ieruſalem are the Churches which admit, Samaria and Babylon the Churches which oppugne the ſaid forme of Regiment. And in like ſort they are taught to apply all things ſpoken of repayring the walls and decayed parts of the Citie and Temple of God by Eſdras, Nehemias, and the reſt: as if purpoſely the holy Ghoſt had therein meant to fore-ſignifie, what the Authors of admonitions to the Parliament, of ſupplications to the Councell, of petitions to her Maieſtie, and of ſuch other like Writs, ſhould either doe or ſuffer in behalfe of this their cauſe. From hence they proceed to an higher point, which is the perſwading of men credulous and ouer-capable of ſuch pleaſing errors, that it is the ſpeciall illumination of the holy Ghoſt, whereby they diſcerne thoſe things in the Word, which others reading yet diſcerne them not. Dearely beloued, ſaith S. Iohn, Giue not credit vnto euery ſpirit. There are but two wayes whereby the ſpirit leadeth men into all truth: the one extraordinary, the other cõmon; the one belonging but vnto ſome few, the other extending it ſelfe vnto all that are of God; the one that which we call by a ſpeciall diuine excellency, Reuelation; the other, Reaſon. If the Spirit by ſuch reuelation haue diſcouered vnto them the ſecrets of that Diſcipline out of Scripture, they muſt profeſſe themſelues to be all (euen men, women, and children) Prophets. Or if reaſon be the hand which the Spirit hath led them

1. Iohn 4.1.

them by, for as much as perſwaſions grounded vpon reaſon, are either weaker or ſtronger, according to the force of thoſe reaſons whereupon the ſame are grounded, they muſt euery of them from the greateſt to the leaſt, be able for euery ſeuerall Article to ſhew ſome ſpeciall reaſon as ſtrong as their perſwaſion therein is earneſt. Otherwiſe how can it be, but that ſome other ſinewes there are from which that ouerplus of ſtrength in perſwaſion doth ariſe? Moſt ſure it is, that when mens affections doe frame their opinions, they are in defence of errour more earneſt a great deale, then (for the moſt part) ſound Beleeuers in the maintenance of Truth apprehended according to the nature of that euidence which Scripture yeeldeth: which being in ſome things plaine, as in the principles of Chriſtian Doctrine in ſome things, as in theſe matters of Diſcipline, more darke and doubtfull, frameth correſpondently that inward aſſent which Gods moſt gracious Spirit worketh by it as by his effectuall inſtrument. It is not therefore the feruent earneſtneſſe of their perſwaſion, but the ſoundnes of thoſe reaſons whereupon the ſame is built, which muſt declare their opinions in theſe things to haue beene wrought by the
2. Theſ. 2. 11. Holy Ghoſt, and not by the fraud of that euill Spirit which euen in his illuſions ſtrong. After that the phancie of the common ſort hath once thorowly apprehended the Spirit to be author of their perſwaſions concerning Diſcipline, then is inſtilled into their hearts; that the ſame Spirit leading men into this opinion, doth thereby ſeale them to be Gods children; and that as the ſtate of the times now ſtandeth, the moſt ſpeciall token to know them that are Gods owne from others, is an earneſt affection that way. This hath bred high termes of ſeperation betweene ſuch and the reſt of the World; whereby the one ſort are named the Brethren, The Godly, and ſo forth; the other, Worldlings, Time ſeruers, Pleaſers of men, not of God, with ſuch like. From hence they are eaſily drawn on to thinke it exceeding neceſſary, for feare of quenching that good Spirit, to vſe all meanes whereby the ſame may bee both ſtrengthned in themſelues, and made manifeſt vnto others. This maketh them diligent hearers of ſuch as are knowne that way to incline; this maketh them eager to take and to ſeeke all occaſions of ſecret conference with ſuch; this maketh them glad to vſe ſuch as Counſellors and Directors in all their dealings which are of waight, as Contracts, Teſtaments, and the like; this maketh them, through an vnwearied deſire of receiuing inſtruction from the Maſters of that companie, to caſt off the care of thoſe verie affaires which doe moſt concerne their eſtate, and to thinke that then they

are

are like vnto Marie, commendable for making choyce of the better part. Finally, this is it which maketh them willing to charge, yea oftentimes euen to enterchange themselues, for such mens sustenance and reliefe, lest their zeale in the cause should any waies be vnwitnessed. For what is it which poore beguiled soules will not doe through so powerfull incitements? In which respect it is also noted, that most labour hath beene bestowed to winne and retaine towards this cause them whose iudgements are commonly weakest by reason of their sexe. And although not women laden with sinne, as the Apostle S. Paul speaketh, 2. Tim. 3.6. but (as we verily esteeme of them for the most part) women propense and inclinable to holinesse, better otherwise edified in good things, rather then carried away as captiues into any kind of sinne and euill, by such as enter into their houses with purpose to plant there a zeale and a loue towards this kind of Discipline: yet some occasion is hereby ministred for men to thinke, that if the cause which is thus furthered, did gaine by the soundnesse of proofe whereupon it doth build it selfe, it would not most busily endeuour to preuaile, where least abilitie of iudgement is: and therefore that this so eminent industry in making Proselites, more of that sexe then of the other, proceeds for that they are deemed apter to serue as instruments and helpes in the cause. Apter they are through the eagernesse of their affection, that maketh them which way soeuer they take, diligent in drawing their husbands, children, seruants, friends and allies the same way; apter through that naturall inclination vnto pitie, which breedeth in them a greater readinesse then in men, to be bountifull towards their Preachers who suffer wants; apter through sundrie opportunities which they especially haue, to procure encouragements for their brethren; finally, apter through a singular delight which they take in giuing very large and particular intelligence, how all neere about them stand affected as concerning the same cause. But be they women or be they men, if once they haue tasted of that cup, let any of contrarie opinion open his mouth to perswade them, they close vp their eares, his reasons they weigh not, all is answered with rehearsall of the words of Iohn, We are of God, he that knoweth God heareth vs, as for the rest, ye are of the world, for this worlds pomp and vanitie it is that yee speak, & the world whose ye are, heareth you. Which cloke sitteth no lesse fit on the back of their cause, then of the Anabaptists, who the dignitie, authoritie and honor of Gods Magistrates is vpheld against them. Shew these eagerly-affected men their inabilitie to iudge of such matters, their 1. Iohn 4.6.

1. Cor. 1. 27. Act. 26. 24. Sap. 5. 4. We fooles thought his life madneſſe. Tertul. Apol. cap. 3. Ὁι ἐκ γενεῆς δίκαι ἐπὶ τῶν παλαιῶν ἀρχαιοτάτων, ἐπὶ δὲ τοῦτων ἀνόμων ἀνθρώπων ἀμφιλόγων ἢ ἄπιστοι, καὶ χλευασταὶ ἐγένοντο. Vide Lactant. de Iuſtit. lib. 5. c. 16. Auguſt. Epiſt. 50.

anſwere is, God hath choſen the ſimple. *Convince them of folly, and that ſo plainely, that very children vpbraid them with it; they haue their bucklers of like defence.* Chriſts owne Apoſtle was accounted mad; The beſt men euermore by the ſentence of the world haue beene iudged to bee out of their right minder. *When inſtruction doth them no good, in them ſeeks but the leaſt degree of moſt merciſull tempered ſeuerities, they faſten on the head of the Lords Vicegerents here on earth, whatſoeuer they may where finde vttered againſt the traitrie of blood-thirſtie men; and to themſelues they draw all the ſentences which Scripture hath in the fauour of innocencie perſecuted for the truth; yea they are of their due and deſerued ſufferings no leſſe proud, then thoſe ancient diſturbers, to whom* S. Auguſtine *writeth, ſaying;* Martyrs rightly ſo named are they, not which ſuffer for their diſorder, and for the vngodly breach they haue made of Chriſtian vnitie; but which for righteouſneſſe ſake are perſecuted. For *Agar* alſo ſuffered perſecution at the hands of *Sara*, wherein, ſhee which did impoſe was holy, and ſhee vnrighteous which did beare the burthen. In like ſort, with the theeues was the Lord himſelfe crucified, but they who were matcht in the paine which they ſuffered, were in the cauſe of their ſufferings diſioyned. If that muſt needs bee the true Church which doth endure perſecution, and not that which perſecuteth, let them aske of the Apoſtle what Church *Sara* did repreſent, when ſhe held her Maide in affliction. For euen our Mother which is free, the heauenly *Ieruſalem*, that is to ſay, the true Church of God, was, as hee doth affirme, prefigured in that verie Woman by whome the Bondmaide was ſo ſharply handled. Although, if all things bee throughly ſcanned, ſhee did in truth more perſecute *Sara* by proud reſiſtance, then *Sara* her, by ſeuerite of puniſhment. *Theſe are the pathes wherein ye haue walked that are of the ordinarie ſort of men; theſe are the very ſteps ye haue troden, and the manifeſt degrees whereby yee are of your guides and directors trained vp in that Schoolers cuſtome of inuiring your eares with reproofe of faults eſpecially in your Gouernours; and ſo to attribute thoſe faults to the kind of ſpiritual regiment vnder which ye liue, boldneſſe in warranting the forme of their diſcipline for the cauſe of all ſuch euils, a ſleight of framing your conceits to imagine that Scripture euery where fauoureth that diſcipline; perſwaſion*

that the reaſon, why we find it in Scripture is the illumination of the Spirit, that the ſame Spirit is a Seale vnto you of your acceſſe into Gods fauour, and in all diſcuſſions and diſputes he is in your ſelues, and to bring them to euery ſide, your minds againſt the ſtrength of ſuch reaſons, as you ſhall finde to confirme that

What hath caused ſo many of the learneder ſort to approue the ſame diſcipline

which you haue in hand. Whoſe indulgent interpretation of diuine things, how it ſhewes it ſelfe in the matter of diſcipline, I willingly perſwade my ſelfe) of a politique intent or purpoſe, that your ſelues being firſt couched with the weighe of ſuch reaſons in iudgement, you might ſhoulder in with the burthen of vpholding the ſame by argument. For which purpoſe ſentences of the word of God ye alledge diuerſly inſo much that when the ſame are diſcuſſed, that it alters in a manner ſuddenly, and that thing by vertue whereof ye vrge vpon vs diſcipline neceſſarie, is found to be ſcarce collected euen by proofe and reaſon without ſlight coniectures. I need not giue inſtance in euery one ſentence ſo alledged, for that I thinke the inſtance in any alledged otherwiſe a thing not vnfit to be giuen. A verie ſtrange thing ſure it were, that ſuch a Diſcipline as ye ſpeake of ſhould be taught by Chriſt and his Apoſtles in the Word of God, and no Church euer haue found it out, nor retained it till this preſent time; contrariwiſe, the Gouernment againſt which yee bend your ſelues, be obſerued euery where throughout all generations and ages of the Chriſtian world, no Church euer perceiuing the Word of God to be againſt it. We require you to find out but one Church vpon the face of the whole earth, that hath beene ordered by your Diſcipline, or hath not bin ordered by ours, that is to ſay, by Epiſcopall regiment, ſithence the time that the bleſſed Apoſtles were here conuerſant. Many things out of antiquitie ye bring, as if the pureſt times of the Church had obſerued the ſelfe-ſame orders which you require; and as though your deſire were, that the Churches of old ſhould be patternes for vs to follow, and euen glaſſes wherein we might ſee the practice of that which by you is gathered out of Scripture. But the truth is, yee meane nothing leſſe. All this is done for faſhion ſake onely; for ye complaine of it as of an iniurie, that men ſhould be willed to ſeeke for examples & patterns of gouernment in any of thoſe times that haue beene before. Ye plainly hold, that from the very Apoſtles times till this preſent age wherein your ſelues imagine ye haue found out a right paterne of ſound diſcipline, there neuer was any time ſafe to be followed. Which thing ye thus endeuour to proue. Out of Egeſippus yee ſay that Euſebius writeth, how although as long as the

T. C. lib. 1. pag. 91.

Euſeb. 3. lib. 32.

Apostles lived, the Church did remaine a pure Virgin, yet after the death of the Apostles, and after they were once gone whom God vouchsafed to make Fathers of the Church in their owne times, the planting of wicked errors began to contrive the Church. Clement also in a certaine place, to confirme that state and corruption of doctrine immediately after the Apostles times, alleageth the proverb, that there are new formes like their fathers. Socrates saith of the Church of Rome and Alexandria, the most famous Churches in the Apostles times, that about the yeare 400. the Romane and Alexandrian Bishops having the sacred function, were departed to a secular rule or dominion. Whereupon we conclude, that it was not safe to fetch our Government from any other then the Apostles times. Wherein by the way it may be noted, that in proposing the Apostles times as a patterne for the Church to follow, though the desire of you all be one, the drift and purpose of you all is not one. For the chiefest thing which Lay-reformers pursue for, is, that the Clergie may through conformitie in state and condition be Apostolicall, poore as the Apostles of Christ were poore. In which one circumstance if they imagine so great perfection, they must thinke that Church which hath such store of mendicant Friers, a Church in that respect most happy. We aime for the glorie of God, and the good of his Church indeed, that the Clergie should be left even as bare as the Apostles when they had neither staffe nor scrip, that God, which should lay upon them the condition of his Apostles, would I hope, endue them with the self-same affection which was in that holy Apostle, whose words concerning his owne right Christian contentment of heart, As well how to want, as how to abound, are a most fit Episcopall empresa. The Church of Christ is a bodie mysticall. A bodie cannot stand, unlesse the parts thereof be proportionable. Let it therefore be required on both parts, as the hands of the Clergie, to be in meanenesse of state like the Apostles; as the hands of the Laytie, to be as they were who lived under the Apostles: and in this reformation there will be, though little wisedome, yet some indifferencie. But your reformation which are of the Clergie (if yet it displease you not that I should say yee are of the Clergie) seemeth to aime at a broader marke. Yee thinke that hee which will perfectly reforme, must bring the forme of Church-discipline unto the state which then it was at. A thing neither possible, nor certaine, nor absolutely convenient. Concerning the first, what was used in the Apostles times, the Scripture fully declareth not; so that making their times the Rule

Lib. 5. cap. 21. Somewhat after the beginning.

Phil. 4. 12.

and

and Orders of Church-politie, ye make a rule which being not possible to be fully kept, is as impossible to be kept. Againe, sith the later euen of the Apostles owne times, but that which in the former was not thought vpon; indeed neuer all purposing of the Apostles times, there is no certainty which should be followed, especially seeing that yee giue so great cause vnduly how farre yee allow those times. For albeit the loue of Antichristian building were not, (as yee say) as then set vp, yet the foundations thereof were secretly and vnder the ground laid in the Apostles times: so that all ouer times yee plainly reiect, and the Apostles owne times ye approue with marueilous great suspition, leaning it intricate and doubtfull wherein we are to keepe our selues vnto the patterne of their times. Thirdly, whereas it is the error of the common multitude, to consider only what hath beene of old, and if the same were well, to see whether still it continue, if not, to condemne that presently which is, and neuer to search vpon what ground or consideration the change might grow: such rudenesse cannot be in you so well borne with, whom learning & iudgement hath enabled much more soundly to discerne how far the times of the Church, and the orders thereof may alter without offence. True is it, the ancienter the better ceremonies of Religion are; howbeit, not absolutely true, and without exception, but true onely so farre-forth as those different ages doe agree in the state of those things, for which at the first those rites, orders, and ceremonies, were instituted. In the Apostles times that was harmelesse, which being now renued would be scandalous; as their [a] oscula sancta. Those Feasts of charitie, which being instituted by the Apostles, were retained in the Church long after, are not now thought any where needfull. What man is there of vnderstanding, vnto whom it is not manifest, how the way of prouiding for the Clergie by Tithes, the deuice of Almes-houses for the poore, the sorting out of the people into their seuerall Parishes, together with sundry other things which the Apostles times could not haue, (being now established) are much more conuenient and fit for the Church of Christ, then if the same should be taken away for conformities sake with the ancientest and first times? The orders therefore which were obserued in the Apostles times, are not to be vrged as a Rule vniuersally, either sufficient or necessary. If they bee, neuertheleſſe on your part it still remaineth to bee better prooued, that the forme of Discipline which yee intitle Apostolicall, was in the Apostles time exercised. For of this very thing yee faile euen touching that which

a *Antiquitas ceremonijs aliquis tantum sanctitatis tribuere consueuit, quantum adpraxerit vetustatis.* Arn. p. 746

b Rom. 16. 16. 2. Cor. 13. 12. 1. Thes. 5. 25. 1. Pet. 5. 14 In their meetings to serue God, their maner was in the end to salute one another with a kisse, vsing these words, Peace bee with you. For which cause, *Tertul.* doth call it, *signaculū orationis*, the seale of Praier, *l. de Ora.*

c *Epiſt. Ind. verſe* 121 Concerning which feasts, S. *Chryſ.* saith, *Statis diebus mensas faciebant communes, & paratis ſynaxi poſt ſecramentorum communionem inibant conuiuium, dimittebus quidē cibos afferentibus, pauperibus autem & qui nihil habebant etiam vocatis, in* 1. Cor. 11. *Hom.* 27. Of the same feasts in like sort, *Tertul. Cœna noſtra de nomine rationem ſui oſtendit. Vocatur enim, id quod eſt penes Græcos dilectio. Quantiſcunq; ſumptibus conſtet, lucrum eſt pietatis nomine facere ſumptum* Apolog. c. 39.

which yee make most account of, as being matter of substance in Discipline, I meane the power of your Lay-elders, and the difference of your Doctors from the Pastors in all Churches. So that in summe, we may be bold to conclude, that besides those last named, which for insolencie, pride, and egregious contempt of all good order are the worst, there are none wherein yee can truly affirme, that the complete forme of your Discipline, or the substance thereof yee practiced. The evidence therefore of Antiquitie failing you, yee flie to the Iudgements of such Learned men, as seeme by their Writings, to bee of opinion that all Christian Churches should receive your Discipline, and abandon ours. Wherein, as yee heape up the names of a number of men not to be worthy to bee had in honour; so there are a number whom when yee mention, although it serue you to purpose with the ignorant and vulgar sort, who measure by tale and not by waight, yet surely they who know what qualitie and value the men are of, will thinke yee doue verie verie euen the dogs. But were they all of as great account as the best and chiefest amongst them, with vs notwithstanding neither are they, neither ought they to bee of such reckoning, that their opinion or coniecture should cause the Lawes of the Church of England to giue place. Much lesse when they neither doe all agree in that opinion, and of them which are at agreement, the most part through a curteous inducement, haue followed one man as their Guide, finally, that one therein not vnlikely to haue swarued. If any chance to say it is probable that in the Apostles times there were Lay-elders, or not to mislike the continuance of them in the Church; or to affirme that Bishops at the first were a name, but not a power distinct from Presbyters; or to speake any thing in praise of those Churches which are without Episcopall Regiment; or to reproone the fault of such as abuse that Calling; all these yee register for men perswaded as you are, that euerie Christian Church standeth bound by the Law of God to put downe Bishops, and in their roomes to erect an Eldership so authorized as you would haue it for the Gouernment of each Parish. Deceiued greatly they are therefore, who thinke that all they whose names are cited amongst the Fauourers of this cause, are on any such verdict agreed. Yet touching some materiall points of your Discipline, a kind of agreement we grant there is amongst many Diuines of Reformed Churches abroad. For first, to do as the Church of Geneua did, the Learned in some other Churches must needs be the more willing, who hauing vsed in like maner not the slow & tedious help of proceeding by publike authoritie,

tie, but the peoples more quicke endeuour for alteration, in such an exigent I see not well how they could haue staied to deliberate about any other Regiment then that which alreadie was deuised to their hands, that which in like ease had beene taken, that which was easiest to be established without delay, that which was likeliest to content the people by reason of some kind of sway which it giueth them. When therefore the example of one Church was thus at the first almost through a kind of constraine or necessitie followed by many, their concurrence in perswasion about some materiall points belonging to the same Politie is not strange. For we are not to marueil greatly, if they which haue all done the same thing, doe easily imbrace the same opinion of concerning their owne doings. Besides, marke, I beseech you, that which Galen in matter of Philosophie noteth; for the like falleth out euen in questions of higher knowledge. It fareth many times with mens opinions, as with rumours and reports. That which a credible person telleth, is easily thought probable by such as are well perswaded of him. But if two, or three, or foure, agree all in the same tale, they iudge it then to be out of Controuersie, and so are many times ouertaken, for want of due consideration; either some common cause leading them all into errour; or one mans ouersight deceiuing many through their too much credulitie and easinesse of beleefe. Though ten persons bee brought to giue testimonie in any cause, yet if the knowledge they haue of the thing whereunto they come as witnesses, appeare to haue growne from some one amongst them, and to haue spred it selfe from hand to hand, they all are in force but as one testimonie. Nor is it otherwise here, where the Daughter Churches doe speake their Mothers Dialect; here where so many sing one Song, by reason that he is the Guide of the Quire, concerning whose deserued authoritie, amongst euen the graueſt Diuines, wee haue alreadie spoken at large. Will yee aske what should moone those many Learned to bee followers of one mans iudgement, no necessitie of Argument forcing them thereunto? Your demand is answered by your selues. Loth yee are to thinke that they whom ye iudge to haue attained as sound knowledge in all points of Doctrine, as any since the Apostles time, should mistake in Discipline. Such is naturally our affection, that whom in great things we mightily admire; in them we are not perswaded willingly that any thing should be amisse. The reason whereof is, for that as dead Flyes putrifie the ointment of the Apothecarie, so a little Folly him that is in estimation for Wisdome. This in euery profession hath too much authorized

Galen. Clas. 2. lib. De cuiuſque enim. peccat. notitia atque medela.

Petit. to the Q. M. Pag. 14.

Eccle. 10. 1.

yeld the iudgement of a few. You with Germans but vansed Luther, and with many other Churches Caluin, to preuaile in all things. Yet are we not able to define, whether the wisdome of that God (who setteth before vs in Holy Scripture so many admirable patternes of Vertue, and no one of them without somewhat noted wherein they were culpable, to the end that to him alone it might alwaies be acknowledged, Thou onely art Holy, thou onely art Iust) might not permit those terrible Vessels of his Glorie to be in somethings blemished with the staine of humane frailtie, euen for that cause, lest we should esteeme of any man aboue that which beboueth.

Their calling for triall by Disputation.

5. Notwithstanding, although yee were able to say a great deale more then hitherto your Bookes haue reuealed to the World, earnest Challengers ye are of triall by some publike Disputation. Wherein if the thing ye craue be no more then onely leaue to dispute openly about those matters that are in question, the Schooles in Vniuersities (for any thing I know) are open vnto you: they haue their yeerely Acts and Commencements, besides other Disputations both ordinarie and vpon occasion, wherein the seuerall parts of our owne Ecclesiasticall Discipline are oftentimes offered vnto that kind of Examination; the Learnedest of you haue beene of late yeeres noted seldome or neuer absent from thence at the time of those greater Assemblies; and the fauour of proposing therein conuenient sorts whatsoeuer ye can obiect (which thing my selfe haue knowne them to grant of Scholastical courtesie vnto Strangers) neither hath (as I thinke) nor euer will (I presume) bee denied you. If your Suit bee to haue some great extraordinarie confluence, in expectation whereof the Lawes that abroadie are should steepe and haue no power ouer you, till in the hearing of thousands yee all did acknowledge your error, and renounce the further prosecution of your Cause; haply, they whose authoritie is required vnto the satisfying of your demand, doe thinke it both dangerous to admit such course of deuided minds, and vnmeete that Lawes which being once solemnely established are to exact obedience of all men, and to constraine thereunto, should so farre stoope, as to hold themselues in suspence from taking any effect vpon you, till some Disputer can perswade you to be obedient. A Law is the deed of the whole bodie Politike, whereof if yee iudge your selues to be any part, then is the Law euen your deed also. And were it reason in things of this qualitie, to giue men audience, pleading for the ouerthrow of that which their own very deed hath ratified?

fied? Lawes that haue beene approoued, may bee (no man doubted) againe repealed, and to that end alſo diſputed againſt, by the Authors thereof themſelues. But this is when the whole doth deliberate what Lawes each part ſhall obſerue, and not when a part refuſeth the Lawes which the whole hath orderly agreed vpon. Notwithſtanding, for as much as the cauſe we maintaine is (God bee thanked) ſuch as needeth not to ſhunne any triall, might it pleaſe them on whoſe approbation the matter dependeth, to condeſcend ſo farre vnto you in this behalfe, I wiſh heartily that prooſe were made euen by ſolemne conference in orderly and quiet ſort, whether you would your ſelues bee ſatisfied, or elſe could by ſatisfying others, draw them to your peace. Prouided alwayes, firſt, in aſmuch as yee goe about to deſtroy a thing which is in force; and to draw in that which hath not as yet beene receiued; to impoſe on vs that which we thinke not our ſelues bound vnto, and to ouerthrow thoſe things whereof we are poſſeſſed; that therefore yee are not to claime in any conference, other then the Plaintifes or opponents part which muſt conſiſt altogether in prooſe and confirmation of two things: the one, that our Orders by you condemned we ought to aboliſh; the other, that yours we are bound to accept in the ſtead thereof. Secondly, becauſe the queſtions in Controuerſie betweene vs are many, if once we deſcend vnto particulars; that for the eaſier and more orderly proceeding therein, the moſt generall be firſt diſcuſſed, nor any queſtion left off, nor in each queſtion the proſecution of any one Argument giuen ouer and another taken in hand, till the iſſue whereunto by replyes and anſweres both parts are come, be collected, read and acknowledged aſwell on the one ſide as on the other, to be the plaine concluſion which they are growne vnto. Thirdly, for auoiding of the manifold inconueniences whereunto ordinarie and extemporall Diſputes are ſubiect, as alſo becauſe if yee ſhould ſingly diſpute one by one as euery mans owne wit did beſt ſerue, it might be conceiued by the reſt, that haply ſome other would haue done more, the chiefeſt of you doe all agree in this action, that whom ye ſhall then chooſe your ſpeaker, by him that which is publikely brought into diſputation be acknowledged by all your conſents not to bee his allegation but yours, ſuch as yee all are agreed vpon, and haue required him to deliuer in all your names: the true copie whereof being taken by a Notarie, that a reaſonable time be allowed for returne of anſwer vnto you in the like forme. Fourthly, whereas a number of conferences haue bin had in other cauſes with the leſſe effectuall ſucceſſe, by reaſon of partiall and

vntrue

vntrue reports, publiſhed afterwards vnto the World, that to preuent this euill, there be at the firſt a ſolemne Declaration made on both parts of their agreement to haue that very Booke and no other ſet abroad, wherein their preſent authorized Notaries doe write thoſe things fully and only, which being written and their read, are by their owne open teſtimony acknowledged to be their owne. Other circumſtances hereunto belonging, whether for the choice of time, place, and language, or for preuention of impertinent and needleſſe ſpeech, or to any end and purpoſe elſe, they may be thought one when occaſion ſerueth. In this ſort to breach my priuate conceit for the ordering of a publique action, I ſhould be loth, (albeit I doe it not otherwiſe then vnder correction of them whoſe grauitie and wiſedome ought in ſuch caſes to ouer-rule) but that ſo venturous boldneſſe I ſee is a thing now generall, and am thereby of good hope that where all men are licenced to offend, no man will ſhew himſelfe a ſharpe Accuſor.

No ende of contention, without ſubmiſſion of both parts vnto ſome definitiue ſentence.

6 What ſucceſſe God may giue vnto any ſuch kinde of Conference or Diſputation, we cannot tell. But of this we are right ſure, that Nature, Scripture, and Experience it ſelfe, haue all taught the World to ſeeke for the ending of contentions, by ſubmitting it ſelfe vnto ſome iudiciall and definitiue ſentence, whereunto neither part that contendeth may vnder any pretence or colour refuſe to ſtand. This muſt needs be effectuall and ſtrong. As for other meanes without this, they ſeldome prenaile. I would therefore know whether for the ending of theſe irkſome ſtrifes, wherein you and your followers doe ſtand thus formally diuided againſt the authorized guides of this Church, and the reſt of the people ſubiect vnto their charge, whether, I ſay, yee be content to referre your cauſe to any other higher iudgement then your owne; or elſe intend to perſiſt and proceed as yee haue begun, till your ſelues can be perſwaded to condemne your ſelues. If your determination be this, we can be but ſorry that ye ſhould deſerue to be reckoned with ſuch, of whom God himſelfe pronounceth,

Rom. 3. 17. The way of peace they haue not knowne. Wayes of peaceable conclusion there are but theſe two certaine: the one, a ſentence of iudiciall deciſion giuen by authoritie thereto appointed within our ſelues; the other, the like kind of ſentence giuen by a more vniuerſall authority. The former of which two wayes God himſelfe in the Law preſcribeth, and his Spirit it was which directeth the very firſt Chriſtian Churches in the world to vſe the later. The ordinance of God in the Law was this:

Deut. 17. 8. If there ariſe a matter too hard for thee in iudgement betweene

bloud

bloud and bloud, betweene plea, &c. then shalt thou arise, and goe vp vnto the place which the Lord thy God shall choose, and thou shalt come vnto the Priests of the Leuites, and vnto the Iudge that shall be in those daies, and aske, and they shall shew thee the sentence of iudgement, and thou shalt doe according to that thing which they of that place which the Lord hath chosen shew thee; and thou shalt obserue to doe according to all that they enforme thee, according to the Law which they shall teach thee, and according to the iudgement which they shall tell thee shalt thou doe, thou shalt not decline from the thing which they shall shew thee, to the right hand, nor to the left. And that man that will doe presumptuously, not harkening vnto the Priest (that standeth before the Lord thy God to minister there) or vnto the Iudge, that man shall die, and thou shalt take away euill from Israel. *When there grew in the Church of Christ a question*, Whether the Gentiles beleeuing might bee saued, although they were not circumcised after the manner of *Moses*, nor did obserue the rest of those legall Rites and Ceremonies whereunto the Iewes were bound: *After great dissention and disputation about it, their conclusion in the end was, to haue it determined by sentence at Ierusalem: which was accordingly done in a Counsell there assembled for the same purpose. Are yee able to alleage any iust and sufficient cause wherefore absolutely yee should not condescend in this Controuersie, to haue your iudgements ouer-ruled by some such definitiue sentence, whether it fall out to be giuen with or against you, that so those endlesse contentions may cease? Yee will perhaps make answere, That being perswaded already as touching the truth of your cause, yee are not to harken vnto any sentence, no not though Angels should define otherwise, as the blessed Apostles owne example teacheth vs: Againe, that Man, you Counsell may erre, and that vnlesse the iudgement giuen doe satisfie your minde, vnlesse it be such as yee can by no further argument oppugne; in a word, vnlesse you perceiue & acknowledge it your selues consonant with Gods Word, to stand but not allowing it, were to sinne against your owne conscience. But consider, I beseech you, first, out of the Apostle, how that wherein he was so resolute and peremptory, our Lord Iesus Christ made manifest vnto him, namely by extraordinary reuelation, wherein there was no possibility of error. That which you are perswaded of, yea, haue it not* Acts 15.

other-

otherwise then by your owne onely probable collection? and therefore such bold affeverations as in him were allowable, should in your mouthes but argue rashnesse. God was not ignorant that the Priests and Iudges, whose sentence in matters of Controuersie he ordayned should stand, both might and oftentimes would be deceiued in their iudgement. Howbeit, better it was in the eye of his vnderstanding, that sometime an erroneous sentence definitiue should preuaile, till the same authority perceiuing such ouer-sight, might afterwards correct or reuerse it, then that strifes should haue respit to grow, and not come speedily vnto some end. Neither wish wee that men should doe any thing which in their hearts they are perswaded they ought not to doe, but this perswasion ought (we say) to be fully settled in their hearts, that in litigious and controuersed causes of such quality, the will of God is to haue them to doe whatsoeuer the sentence of iudiciall and finall decision shall determine, yea, though it seeme in their priuate opinion to swarue vtterly from that which is right: as no doubt many times the sentence amongst the Iewes did seeme vnto one part or other contending; and yet in this case God did then allow them to doe that which in their priuate iudgement it seemed (yea and perhaps truly seemed) that the Law did disallow. For if God be not the author of confusion, but of peace; then can he not be the author of our refusall, but of our contentment, to stand vnto some definitiue sentence; without which almost impossible it is, that either we should auoid confusion, or euer hope to attaine peace. To small purpose had the Councell of Ierusalem beene assembled, if once their determination being set downe, men might afterwards haue defended their former opinions. When therefore they had giuen their definitiue sentence, all controuersie was at an end. Things were disputed before they came to be determined; men afterwards were not to dispute any longer, but to obey. The sentence of iudgement finished their strife, which their disputes before iudgement could not doe. This was ground sufficient for any reasonable mans conscience to build the duety of obedience vpon, whatsoeuer his owne opinion were at touching the matter before in question. So full of wilfulnesse and selfe-loue is our nature, that without some definitiue sentence, which being giuen may frame, and vse necessity of silence on both sides afterward imposed, small hope there is that strifes that haue prosecuted, will in short time quietly end. Now it were in vaine to alle[ge], you whatsoeuer could be meant that the sentence of any Court already erected, should be so farre authorized, as

that among the Iewes eſtabliſhed by God himſelfe, for the determining of all Controuerſies: That man which will doe preſumptuouſly, not hearkning vnto the Prieſt that ſtandeth before the Lord to miniſter there, nor vnto the Iudge, let him die, *Ye haue giuen vs already to vnderſtand, what your opinion is in part concerning her ſacred Maieſties Court of high Commiſſion, the nature whereof is the ſame with that amongſt the Iewes, albeit the power be not ſo great. The other may haply may like you better, becauſe Maſter* Beza *in his laſt Booke ſaue one written about theſe matters, profeſſeth himſelfe to bee now weary of ſuch combats and encounters, whether by word or writing, in as much as he findeth that Controuerſies thereby are made but Brawles; and therefore wiſheth* that in ſome common lawfull aſſembly of Churches, all theſe ſtrifes may at once bee decided. *Shall there be then in the meane while no doings? Yes. There are the weightier matters of the Law,* iudgement and mercie and fidelitie. *Theſe things we ought to doe, and theſe things, while we contend about leſſe, we leaue vndone. Happier are they, whom the Lord, when hee commeth, ſhall find doing in theſe things, then diſputing about Deſtures, Elders and Deacons. Or if there be no remedy but ſomewhat needs you muſt doe which may tend to the ſetting forward of your Diſcipline, and that which viſemen, who thinke ſome Statutes of the Realme more fit to be repealed then to ſtand in force, are accuſtomed to doe before they come to Parliament where the place of enacting is; that is to ſay, ſpend the time in reexamining more daily your cauſe, and in more throughly conſidering of that which you labour to ouerthrow. As for the Orders which are eſtabliſhed, fith equitie and reaſon, the Law of nature, God and man, doe all fauour that which is in being, till order by iudgement of diuines be giuen againſt it; it is but Iuſtice you aſke of you, and perſwaſion in you it ſhould be to denie thereunto your willing obedience. Not that I iudge it a thing allowable for men to obſerue theſe Lawes, which in their hearts they are ſtedfaſtly perſwaded to bee againſt the Law of God: but your perſwaſion in that caſe yet are all bound for the time to ſuſpende, and in obedience doing, you offend againſt God, by troubling the Church without any iuſt or neceſſarie cauſe. Be it that there are ſome reaſons inducing you but thinke badly of ours. Are thoſe reaſons demonſtratiue, are they neceſſarie, or but ſome probabilities onely? And* Prælect. de Excom. & Presbyt.

Mat. 23.23.

The matter contained in theſe eight Bookes.

ny one such reason discharged I grant the conscience, and setteth it at full libertie. For the publike approbation giuen by the body of the whole Church vnto those things which are established, doth make it but probable that they are good. And therefore vnto a necessarie proofe that they are not good, it must giue place. But if the skilfullest amongst you can shew, that all the Bookes you haue hitherto written be able to afford any one argument of this nature, let the instance be giuen. As for probabilities, what thing was there euer set downe so agreeable with sounde reason, but some probable shew against it might be made? Is it meete that when publikely things are receiued and haue taken place, generall obedience thereunto should cease to be exacted, in case this or that priuate person led with some probable conceit, should make open protestation, Peter or Iohn disallow them, and pronounce them naught? In which case your answere will bee, that concerning the Lawes of our Church, they are not only condemned in the opinion of a priuate man, but of thousands, yea and euen of those amongst which diuers are in publike charge and authoritie, as though when publike consent of the whole hath established any thing, euery mans iudgement being thereunto compared were not priuate, howsoeuer his calling bee to some kind of publike charge. So that of peace and quietnesse there is not any way possible, vnlesse the probable voice of euery priuate societie or body politique, ouer-rule all priuate of like nature in the same bodie. Which thing vniuersally pronounced, that God being author of peace and not of confusion in the Church, must needs be author of those mens peaceable resolutions who concerning these things, haue determined with themselues to thinke and doe as the Church they are of hath decreed, will they see what is like hereafter vnfolding themselues the contrarie.

T.C.l.3. p.171.

The matter contained in these eight Bookes.

Now as mine owne answere vnto euery obiection in these seuerall Bookes of discourse, that seemeth to appeare vnto you, that for the Ecclesiasticall Rites of this Realme, we are not bound to giue reason to yeelde vnto them and yet by no necessitie bound to oppugne them: In the first part of my seuenth booke vnto the ende, I haue set downe. In the second part of my seuenth booke vnto the ende, I haue set downe.

haue eſtabliſhed, when the minde doth ſift and examine them, it muſt needs haue often remembred a number of doubts and queſtions about the nature, kinds, and qualities of Lawes in generall, whereof vnleſſe it be throughly informed, there will appeare no certaintie to ſtay our perſwaſion vpon: I haue for that cauſe ſet downe in the firſt place an Introduction, on both ſides neceſſarie to be conſidered: Declaring therein what Law is, how diuerſe kinds of Lawes there are, and what force they are of touching euery ſeuerall kinde. This done, becauſe yee ſuppoſe the Lawes for which yee ſtriue, are found in Scripture; but thoſe not againſt which we ſtriue; and from this fountaine are drawne to bold it as the very maine pillar of your whole cauſe, that Scripture ought to bee the onely rule of all our actions, & conſequently that the Church-orders which we obſerue being not commanded in Scripture, are offenſiue and diſpleaſant vnto God: I haue ſpent the ſecond booke in ſifting of this point, which ſtandeth with you for the firſt and chiefeſt principle whereon yee build. Wherevnto be next in degree is, that as God will haue alwaies a Church vpon earth while the world doth continue, and that Church ſtand in needs of Gouernment, of which Gouernment is be ſhe hath himſelfe to be both the author and teacher: ſo it cannot ſtand with duetie, that man ſhould euer preſume in any wiſe to change and alter the ſame; and therefore, That in Scripture there muſt of neceſſity be found ſome particular forme of Eccleſiaſticall Politie, the Lawes whereof admit not any kind of alteration. *The firſt three Bookes being thus ended, the fourth proceedeth from the generall grounds and foundations of your cauſe, vnto your generall accuſations againſt vs, as hauing in the Orders of our Church (for ſo you pretend) corrupted* the right forme of Church-politie with manifold Popiſh Rites and Ceremonies, which certaine reformed Churches haue baniſhed from amongſt them, and haue thereby giuen vs ſuch example as (*you think*) we ought to follow. *This your aſſertion hath herein drawne vs to make ſearch, whether theſe bee iuſt exceptions againſt the cuſtomes of our Church, when yee plead that they are the ſame which the Church of Rome hath, or that they are not the ſame which ſome other Reformed Churches haue deuiſed. Of thoſe foure Bookes which remaine, and are beſtowed about the ſpecialties of that cauſe which lyeth in Controuerſie, the firſt examineth the cauſes by you alledged, wherefore the publike duties of Chriſtian Religion, as our Prayers, our Sacraments and the reſt, ſhould not be ordered in ſuch*

sort as with vs they are; nor that power whereby the persons of men are consecrated vnto the Ministerie, bee disposed of in such maner as the Lawes of this Church doe allow. The second and third are concerning the power of Iurisdiction: the one, whether Lay-men, or your governing Elders are, ought in all Congregations for euer to be inuested with that power; the other, whether Bishops may haue that power ouer other Pastors, and therewithall that honour which vnto them they haue. And because besides the power of Order which all consecrated persons haue, and the power of Iurisdiction which neither they all, nor they only haue, there is a third power, a power of Ecclesiasticall Dominion communicable, as we thinke, vnto persons not Ecclesiasticall, and most fit to be restrained vnto the Prince our Soueraigne Commander ouer the whole body Politike. The eight Booke we haue allotted vnto this question, and haue sifted therein your Obiections against those preeminences Royall which thereunto appertaine. Thus haue I laide before you the briefe of these my trauailes, and presented vnder your view the limmes of that cause litigious betweene vs: the whole entire bodie whereof being thus compast, it shall bee no troublesome thing for any man to find each particular Controuersies resting place, and the coherence it hath with those things, either on which it dependeth, or which depend on it.

How iust cause there is to feare the manifold dangerous euents likely to ensue vpon this intended reformation, if it did take place.

8. The case so standing therefore my brethren, as it doth, the wisedome of Gouernours yee must not blame, in that they further also forecasting the manifold strange & dangerous innouations, which are more then likely to follow, if your Discipline, should take place, haue for that cause thought it hitherto a part of their duetie to withstand your endeuours that way: The rather, for that they haue seene already some small beginnings of the fruites thereof, in them, who concurring with you in iudgement about the necessitie of that Discipline, haue aduentured without more adoe, to seperate themselues from the rest of the Church, and to put your speculations in execution. These mens hastines the warier sort of you doth not commend, yee wish they had held themselues longer in, and not so dangerously flowne abroad before the feathers of the cause had beene growne; their errour with mercifull termes yee reproue, naming them in great commiseration of mind, your poore brethren. They on the contrarie side more bitterly accuse you as their false brethren, and against you they pleade, saying: From your breasts it is, that we haue sucked those things, which when yee deliuered vnto

2. Pet. 2. 2.

vs,

vs, yee termed that heauenly, ſincere, and wholeſome milke of Gods word, howſoeuer yee now abhorre as poyſon that which the vertue thereof hath wrought and brought forth in vs. Yee ſometime our companions, guides and familiars, with whom we haue had moſt ſweete conſultations, are now become our profeſſed aduerſaries, becauſe wee thinke the Statute Congregations in England to be no true Chriſtian Churches; becauſe we haue ſeuered our ſelues from them; and becauſe without their leaue or licence that are in Ciuill Authoritie, we haue ſecretly framed our owne Churches according to the platforme of the word of God. For of that point betweene you and vs their is no controuerſie. Alas, what would you haue vs to doe? At ſuch time as you were content to accept vs in the number of your owne, your tenebrings we heard, wee read your Writings: and though wee would, yet ible we are not to forget with what zeale yee haue euer profeſſed, that in the Engliſh Congregations (for ſo many of them as be ordered according vnto their owne Lawes,) the verie publique Seruice of God is naught, as touching matter, with heapes of intolerable pollutions, and as concerning forme, borrowed from the Shoppe of Anticbriſt, ſhamefull both wayes in the eyes of the moſt Holy: the kind of their Gouernment by Biſhops and Archbiſhops, Antichriſtian, that Diſcipline which Chriſt hath eſſentially tied, that is to ſay, ſo vnited vnto his Church, that wee cannot account it really to be his Church, which hath not in it the ſame Diſcipline, that verie Diſcipline no leſſe there deſpiſed, then in the higheſt throne of Antichriſt, all ſuch parts of the word of God as doe any way concerne that Diſcipline, no leſſe vnſoundly taught and interpreted by all Authorized Engliſh Paſtors, then by Antichriſts factors themſelues: as Baptiſme Croſſing, at the Supper of the Lord kneeling, at both a number of other the moſt notorious badges of Antichriſtian recogniſance vſuall. Being moued with theſe and the like your effectuall diſcourſes, whereunto wee gaue moſt attentiue eare, till they entred euen into our ſoules, and were as fire within our boſomes; wee thought we might hereof bee bold to conclude, that ſith no ſuch Antichriſtian Synagogue may be accompted a true Church of Chriſt, yee by accuſing all Congregations ordered according to the Lawes of England as Antichriſtian, did meane to condemne thoſe Congregations, as not being any of them worthy the name of a true Chriſtian Church. Yee tell vs now it is not your meaning. But what meane your often threatnings of them, who profeſſing themſelues the Inhabitants of mount Sion,

Pſal. 55. 13.

Pref. againſt D. Bancr.

Sion, were to loth to depart wholly as they should out of Babylon? Whereas our hearts being fearefully troubled, we durst not, we durst not continue longer so neere her confines; lest her plagues might be suddenly ouertake vs, before we did cease to be partakers with her sinnes: for so we could not chuse but acknowledge with griefe what we were, when they doing euill, we by our presence in their assemblies seemed to like thereof, or at least wise not so earnestly to dislike, as became men heartily zealous of Gods glorie. For aduenturing to erect the Discipline of Christ without the leaue of the Christian Magistrate, haply ye may condemne vs as fooles, in that we hazard thereby our estates and persons, further then you which are that way more wise thinke necessarie: but of any offence or sinne therein committed against God; with what conscience can you accuse vs, when your owne positions are, that the things we obserue should euery of them be dearer vnto vs then ten thousand liues; that they are the peremptorie commandements of God; that no mortall man may dissence with them, and that the Magistrate grieuously sinneth in not constraining thereunto? Will ye blame any man for doing that of his owne accord, which all men should bee compelled to doe that are not willing of themselues? When God commandeth, shall we answere that we will obey, if so be Cæsar will grant vs leaue? Is Discipline an Ecclesiasticall matter or a Ciuill? If an Ecclesiasticall, it must of necessitie belong to the dutie of the Minister. And the Minister (yee say) holdeth all his authoritie of doing whatsoeuer belongeth vnto the Spirituall charge of the house of God, euen immediatly from God himselfe, without dependencie vpon any Magistrate. Whereupon it followeth, as we suppose, that the hearts of the people being willing to bee vnder the Scepter of Christ, the Minister of God, into whose hands the Lord himselfe hath put that Scepter, is without all excuse, if thereby he guide them not. Nor doe we finde that hitherto greatly ye haue disliked those Churches abroad where the people with direction of their godly Ministers, haue euen against the will of the Magistrate brought in either the doctrine or Discipline of Iesus Christ. For which cause we must now think the very same thing of you, which our Sauiour did sometime vtter concerning falsehearted Scribes and Pharises, They say & doe not. Thus the foolish Barrowist deriueth his schisme by way of conclusion, as to him it seemeth, directly and plainly out of your principles. Him therefore we leaue to be satisfied by you from whome he hath sprung. And if such by your own acknowledgement bee persons dangerous, although as yet the attentions

Matth. 23.3.

which

which they haue made are of ſmall and tender growth; the changes likely to enſue throughout all ſtates and vocations within this Land, in caſe your deſire ſhould take place, muſt be thought vpon. *First*, concerning the ſupreme power of the higheſt, they are no ſmall prerogatiues, which now thereunto belonging the forme of your Diſcipline will conſtraine it to reſigne, as in the laſt Booke of this Treatiſe we haue ſhewed at large. Againe it may iuſtly be feared, whether our Engliſh Nobilitie, when the matter came in triall, would contentedly ſuffer themſelues to be alwaies at the call, and to ſtand to the ſentence of a number of meane perſons, aſſiſted with the preſence of their poore Teacher, a man (as ſometimes it happeneth) though better able to ſpeake, yet little or no whit apter to iudge then the reſt; from whom, be their dealings neuer ſo abſurd (vnleſſe it be by way of complaint to a Synod) no appeale may be made vnto any one of higher power, inaſmuch as the order of your Diſcipline admitteth no ſtanding inequalitie of Courts, no ſpirituall Iudge to haue any ordinarie ſuperiour on earth, but as many Supremacies as there are Pariſhes and ſeuerall Congregations. Neither is it altogether without cauſe that ſo many doe feare the ouerthrow of all learning, as a threatned ſequele of this your intended Diſcipline. For if the worlds preſeruation depend vpon the multitude of the wiſe; and of that ſort the number hereafter be not likely to waxe ouer-great, when (that wherewith the ſonne of Syrach profeſſeth himſelfe at the heart grieued) men of vnderſtanding are already ſo little ſet by: how ſhould their minds, whom the loue of ſo precious a Iewell filleth with ſecret iealouſie euen in regard of the leaſt things, which may any way hinder the flouriſhing eſtate thereof, chuſe but in ſome doubt leſt this Diſcipline, which alwaies you match with diuine doctrine as her naturall and true ſiſter, bee found vnto all kinds of knowledge a ſtepmother; ſeeing that the greateſt worldly hopes, which are propoſed vnto the chiefeſt kind of learning, ye ſeeke vtterly to extirpate as weedes, and haue grounded your platforme on ſuch propoſitions, as doe after a ſort vndermine thoſe moſt renowned habitations, where, through the goodneſſe of Almightie God, all commendable Arts & Sciences are with exceeding great induſtry hitherto (and ſeemly they for euer continue ſtudied, proceeded in, & profeſſed! To charge you as purpoſely bent to the ouerthrow of that wherein ſo many of you haue attained vnto ſmall perfection, were iniurious. Only therefore I wiſh that your ſelues did well conſider how oppoſite certaine your poſitions are vnto the ſtate of collegiate ſocieties, whereon the two Vniuerſities

Sap. 6. 24.

Eccl. 26. 29.

and. conſiſt

conſiſt. Thoſe degrees which their ſtatutes bind them to take, are by your Lawes taken away, your ſelues who haue ſought them yee ſo excuſe, as that yee would haue men to thinke yee iudge them not allowable, but tolerable onely, and to be borne with, for ſome helpe which ye find in them vnto the furtherance of your purpoſes, till the corrupt eſtate of the Church may be better reformed. Your Lawes forbidding Eccleſiaſticall perſons vtterly the exerciſe of Ciuill power, muſt nordes deprive the Heads and Maſters in the ſame Colledges of all ſuch authoritie as now they exerciſe, either at home, by puniſhing the faults of thoſe, who not as children to their parents by the law of Nature, but altogether by Ciuill authoritie are ſubiect vnto them, or abroad, by keeping Courts amongſt their tenants. Your lawes making permanent inequalitie amongſt Miniſters, a thing repugnant to the word of God, enforce thoſe Colledges, the Seniors whereof are all or any part of them Miniſters vnder the gouernment of a Maſter in the ſame vocation, to chooſe, as oft as they meete together, a new Preſident. For if ſo ye iudge it neceſſarie to do in Synods, for the auoiding of permanent inequalitie amongſt Miniſters, the ſame cauſe muſt needs euen in theſe Collegiate aſſemblies enforce the like. Except peraduenture yee meane to auoid all ſuch abſurdities, by diſſolning thoſe Corporations, and by bringing the Vniuerſities vnto the forme of the Schools of Geneua. Which thing men the rather are inclined to looke for, in aſmuch as the miniſteria, whereinto their foundres with ſingular prouidence haue by the ſame Statutes appointed them neceſſarily to enter at a certaine time, your Lawes bind them much more neceſſarily to forbeare, till ſome Pariſh abroad call for them. Your opinion concerning the Law Ciuill is, that the knowledge thereof might bee ſpared, as a thing which this Land doth not need. Profeſſors in that kind being few, yee are the bolder to ſtarue all them, and not to diſſemble your minds as concerning their reuenewes: in thoſe ſtudies although my ſelfe haue not much beene conuerſant, neuertheleſſe exceeding great cauſe I ſee there is to wiſh that thereunto more encouragement were giuen, as well for the ſingular treaſures of wiſedome thereto conteined, as alſo for the great vſe we haue thereof both in deciſion of certaine kinds of cauſes ariſing daily within our ſelues, and eſpecially for commerce with Nations abroad, whereunto that knowledge is moſt requiſite. The reaſons wherewith yee would perſwade that Scripture is the onely rule to frame all our actions by, are in truth ſo ſufficient for proofe thereof, the ſame is the onely Law whereby to determine all our Ciuill controuerſies.

Humb. Motion to the L.L. p. 50.

And

And then what doth let, but that as thoſe men may haue their deſire, who frankly broach it already that the worke of Reformation will neuer be perfect, till the Law of Jeſus Chriſt be receiued alone; ſo Pleaders and Councellors may bring their Bookes of the Common-Law, and beſtow them as the Students of curious and needleſſe arts did theirs in the Apoſtles time? I leaue them to ſcan how farre theſe words of yours may reach, wherein yee declare that whereas now many houſes lye waſte through inordinate ſuites of Law, This one thing will ſhew the excellencie of Diſcipline for the wealth of the Realme, and quiet of Subiects, that the Church is to cenſure ſuch a partie who is apparantly troubleſome and contentious, and without REASONABLE CAVSE vpon a meere will and ſtomack doth vexe and moleſt his Brother, and trouble the Country. *For mine owne part I doe not ſee but that it might very well agree with your principles, if your diſcipline were fully planted, euen to ſend out your Writs of Surceaſe into all Courts of* England *beſides, for the moſt things handled in them. A great deale further I might proceede and deſcend lower. But for as much as againſt all theſe and the like difficulties, your anſwere is, That we ought to ſearch what things are conſonant to Gods will, not which be moſt for our owne eaſe; and therefore that your diſcipline, being (for ſuch is your errour) the abſolute commandement of Almightie God, it muſt be receiued, although the World by receiuing it ſhould be cleane turned vpſide-downe; herein lieth the greateſt danger of all. For whereas the name of diuine Authoritie is vſed to countenance theſe things, which are not the Commandements of God, but your owne erroneous collections; on him yee muſt father whatſoeuer yee ſhall afterwards be led, either to doe in withſtanding the Aduerſaries of your cauſe, or to thinke in maintenance of your doings. And what this may be, God doth know. In ſuch kinds of error, the mind once imagining it ſelfe to ſeeke the execution of Gods will, laboureth forthwith to remoue both things and perſons, which any way binder it from taking place; and in ſuch caſes if any ſtrange or new thing ſeeme requiſite to be done, a ſtrange or new opinion concerning the lawfulnes thereof is wilbe all receiued and broached vnder countenance of diuine authoritie. One example herein may ſerue for many, to ſhew that falſe opinions touching the will of God to haue things done, are wont to bring forth mighty and violent practiſes againſt the hinderances of them; and thoſe practiſes new opinions more pernitious then the firſt, yea, moſt extreamely ſome-*

Act. 19. 19.

Humb. Mot. Pag. 74.

Country. Pag. 108.

sometimes opposite to that which the first did seeme to intend. Where the people tooke vpon them the reformation of the Church by casting out Popish superstition, they hauing receiued from their Pastors a gene-
Mat. 15. 13. rall instruction that whatsoeuer the heauenly Father hath not planted, must be rooted out, proceeded in some forreine places so farre, that downe went oratories and the very Temples of God themselues. For as they chanced to take the compasse of their Commission stricter or larger, so their dealings were accordingly more or lesse moderate. Amongst others there sprang vp presently one kind of men, with whose zeale and forwardnesse the rest being compared, were thought to be maruellous cold and dull. These grounding themselues on Rules more generall, that whatsoeuer the law of Christ commandeth not, thereof Antichrist is the author; & that whatsoeuer Antichrist or his adherents did in the world, the true professors Christ are to vndoe; found one many things more then others had done, the exportation whereof was in their conceit as
Guy de Bres contre l'erreur des Anabaptistes. Pag. 4. necessary as of any thing before remooued. Hereupon they secretly made their dolefull complaints euerie where as they went, that albeit the world did begin to professe some dislike of that which was euill in the Kingdome of darknesse, yet fruits worthy of sincere repentance were not seene; and that if men did repent as they ought, they must endeuour to purge the truth of all manner of euill, to the end there might follow a new world afterward, wherein righteousnesse onely should dwell. Pri-
Pag. 5. uate repentance they said must appeare by euery mans fashioning his owne life contrarie vnto the customes and orders of this present world, both in greater things and in lesse. To this purpose they had alwaies in their mouthes those greater things, Charitie, Faith, the true feare of God, the Crosse, the mortification of the flesh. All their exhortations were to set light of the things in this world, to count riches and honors vanitie, and intoxicate thereof not onely to seeke neither, but if men were possessors of both, euen to cast away the one and resigne the other that all
Pag. 16. men might see their vnfained conuersion vnto Christ. They were so-
Pag. 118. 119. licitors of men to fasts, to often meditations of heauenly things, and as it were conferences in secret with God by prayers, not framed according to the grosse manner of the world, but expressing such feruent desires as might euen force God to harken vnto them. If they found men in diet, attire, furniture of house, or any other way obseruers of ciuility & decent order such they reproued as being carnally & earthly minded. Every word o-
120. Pag. 116. therwise then seuerely & sadly vttered seemed vnpetuous like a sword thro-

row

saw them. If any men were pleasant, their manner was presently with
sighes to repeat those words of our Saviour Christ, Woe bee to you Pag. 124.
which now laugh, for ye shall lament. So great was their desire Luke 6. 12.
to avoid any trouble, that such as did quietly lead their lives, they
judged all other men to be in most dangerous case. They so much af- Pag. 117.
fected to crosse the ordinarie custome in every thing, that when other
men did pray on bended knees, they would stand upon their feet, be-
cause (forsooth) the ordinarie custome of the Church is to pray kneeling.
Whether they thought it a kind of prophanesse to use, and therefore ne-
glected the same, to make no other distinction then by number, I can
not say. First, Second, Third day. From this they proceeded unto publique re-
formation first Ecclesiasticall, and then Civill. Touching the former, Pag. 40.
they boldly auouched, that themselues only had the Truth, which shining
upon all of their lines they would at all times defend; and that since
the Apostles time, the same was never before in all points sincerely
taught. Wherefore that strange thing be it, or bee it not, that ever in
any age since Christ by his word reuiued, they began to call
to controule the Ministers of the Gospell for ascribing so much force
and vertue vnto the Scriptures of God read, whereas the Truth was
then when the Word is said to engender Faith in the heart, and to re-
ioyce the Soule of man, not to worke any such spirituall Diuine effect,
these speeches are not thereunto applyable as it is read or preached, but
as it is ingrafted in vs by the power of the holy Ghost opening the
eyes of our vnderstanding, and so reuealing the mysteries of God, ac-
cording to that which Jeremie promised before should bee; saying, I
will put my Law in their inward parts, and I will write it in Ier. 31. 34.
their hearts. The Booke of God they notwithstanding for the most part
so admired, that other disputation against their opinions then only by Pag. 291
allegation of Scripture they would not heare; besides it, they thought Pag. 27.
no other Writings in the World should be studied, in so much as one of
their great Prophets exhorting them to cast away all respects vnto hu-
mane Writings, so farre to his motion they condescended, that as many
as had any Bookes saue the Holy Bible in their custodie, they brought
and set them publikely on fire. When they and their Bibles were alone
together, what strange phantasticall opinion soeuer at any time entred
into their heads, their vse was to thinke the Spirit taught it them. Their
phrensies concerning our Saiours incarnation, the state of soules de-
parted, and such like, are things needlesse to bee rehearsed. And for as

much as they were of the same Suite with those of whom the Apostle
2. Tim. 3. 7. speaketh, saying, They are still learning, but never attaine to the knowledge of truth, it was no marualle to see them euery day broach some new thing, not heard of before. Which restlesse leuitie they did interpret to be their growing to spirituall perfection, and a proceeding
Pag. 65. from faith to faith. The differences amongst them grew by this meane
Pag. 66. in a manner infinite, so that scarcely was there found any one of them, the forge of whose braines was not possest with some speciall mysterie.
Pag. 135. Whereupon although their mutuall contentions were most fiercely prosecuted amongst themselues: yet when they came to defend the cause common to them all against the Aduersaries of their Faction, they had paies to lieke one another whole, the founder in his owne perswasion, excusing THE DEARE BRETHREN, which were not so farre
Pag. 25. enlightned, and professing a charitable hope of the mercy of God towards them, notwithstanding their swarming from him in some things.
Pag. 71. Their owne Ministers they highly magnified, as men whose Vocation was from God: the rest their manner was to terme disdainfully Scribes
Pag. 224. and Pharises, to accounte their Calling an humane Creature, and to detaine the people as much as might bee from hearing them. As touching
Pag. 764. Sacraments, Baptisme administred in the Church of Rome, They Iudged to bee but an execrable Mockerie and no Baptisme; both because the Ministers thereof in the Papacie are wicked Idolaters, lewd Persons, Theeues and Murderers, cursed Creatures, ignorant Beasts; and also for that to baptize is a proper action belonging vnto none but
Pag. 742. the Church of Christ, whereas Rome is Antichrists Synagogue. The
Pag. 512. custome of vsing God-fathers and God-mothers at Christnings they
Pag. 528. scorned. Baptizing of Infants, although confest by themselues to haue beene continued euen sithence the verie Apostles owne times, yet they altogether condemned: partly, because sundry errours are
Pag. 712. of no lesse Antiquitie; and partly, for that there is no Commande-
Pag. 716. ment in the Gospell of Christ, which saith, Baptize Infants, but bee contrariwise in saying, Goe Preach and Baptise, doth appoint that the Minister of Baptisme shall in that action first administer Doctrine,
Pag. 688. and then Baptisme, as also in saying, Whosoeuer doth beleeue & is baptised, he appointeth that the partie to whom Baptisme is administred shall first beleeue, and then be baptized; to the end that beleeuing may go before this Sacrament in the receiuer, no otherwise then preaching in the Giuer, seth equally in both, the Law of Christ declareth not onely

what

what things are required, but alſo in what order they are required. The Euchariſt they received (pretending our Lord and Sauiours example) after Supper: and for auoyding all thoſe impieties which haue beene grounded vpon the myſticall words of Chriſt, This is my body, This is my bloud; *they thought it not ſafe to mention either Body or Bloud in that Sacrament, but rather to abrogate both, and to vſe no words but theſe,* Take, eate, declare the death of our Lord: Drinke, ſhew forth our Lords death. *In Rites and Ceremonies their profeſſion was hatred of all conformitie with the Church of Rome: for which cauſe they would rather indure any torment then obſerue the ſolemne feſtiuals which others did, in as much as Antichriſt (they ſaid) was the firſt inuenter of them. The pretended end of their Ciuill reformation, was that Chriſt might haue dominion ouer all, that all Crownes and Sceptors might bee throwne downe at his feete, that no other might raigne ouer Chriſtian men but he, no Regiment keepe them in awe but his Diſcipline; amongſt them no Sword at all be carried beſides his, the Sword of ſpirituall Excommunication. For this cauſe they laboured with all their might in ouer-turning the ſeates of Magiſtracie, becauſe Chriſt hath ſaid,* Kings of Nations; *in aboliſhing the execution of Iuſtice, becauſe Chriſt hath ſaid,* Reſiſt not euill; *in forbidding Oathes the neceſſarie meanes of iudiciall tryall, becauſe Chriſt hath ſaid,* Sweare not at all; *finally, in bringing in communitie of goods, becauſe Chriſt by his Apoſtles hath giuen the World ſuch example to the end that men might excell one another, not in wealth the Pillar of ſecular authoritie, but in vertue. Theſe men at the firſt were onely pitied in their errour, and not much withſtood by any; the great Humilitie, Zeale, and Deuotion, which appeared to be in them, was in all mens opinion a pledge of their harmeleſſe meaning. The hardeſt that men of ſound vnderſtanding conceiued of them, was but this,* O quàm honeſta voluntate miſeri erant? With how good a meaning theſe poore ſoules doe euill; Luther *made requeſt vnto* Fredericke *Duke of* Saxonie, *that within his Dominion they might be fauourably dealt with and ſpared, for that (their errour exempted) they ſeemed otherwiſe right good men. By meanes of which mercifull toleration they gathered ſtrength, much more then was ſafe for the State of the Common-wealth wherein they liued. They had their ſecret corner-meetings and aſſemblies in the night, the people flocked vnto them by thouſands. The meanes whereby they both allured and retayned ſo great multitudes,*

Pag. 31. Pag. 122. Pag. 141. Pag. 833. Pag. 849. Pag. 400. Lactant. de Iuſtit. lib. 5. ca. 18. Pag. 6. Pag. 420.

were moſt effectuall; firſt, a wonderfull ſhew of zeale towards God, wherewith they ſeemed to bee euen rapt in euery thing they ſpake: ſe-
Pag.55. condly, an hatred of ſinne, and a ſingular loue of integritie, which men did thinke to be much more then ordinarie in them, by reaſon of the cuſtome which they had to fill the eares of the people with Inuectiues againſt their authorized Guides as well Spirituall as Ciuill: thirdly, the bountifull reliefe wherewith they eaſed the broken eſtate of ſuch needie Creatures, as were in that reſpect the more apt to bee drawne away: fourthly, a tender compaſſion which they were thought to take vpon the miſeries of the common ſort, ouer whoſe heads their manner was euen to
Pag.6. powre downe ſhowres of teares in complayning that no reſpect was had
Pag.7. vnto them, that their goods were deuoured by wicked Cormorants, their perſons had in contempt, all libertie both Temporall and Spirituall taken from them; that it was high time for God now to heare their grones, and to ſend them deliuerance: laſtly, a cunning ſlight which they had to ſtroke and ſmooth vp the mindes of their Followers, as well by appropriating vnto them all the fauourable Titles, the good words, and the gracious promiſes in Scripture; as alſo by caſting the contrarie alwaies on the heads of ſuch as were ſeuered from that retinue. Whereupon,
Pag.71 the peoples common acclamation vnto ſuch deceiuers was: Theſe are verily the men of God, theſe are his true and ſincere Prophets. If any ſuch Prophet or man of God did ſuffer by order of Law condigne and deſerued puniſhment; were it for Fellonie, Rebellion, Murder, or what elſe: the people (ſo ſtrangely were their hearts inchanted) as though bleſ-
Pag.27. ſed Saint Stephen had beene againe martyred, did lament that God tooke away his moſt deare Seruants from them. In all theſe things being fully perſwaded, that what they did, it was obedience to the will of God, and that all men ſhould doe the like; there remayned after ſpeculation, practice, whereby the whole World thereunto (if it were poſſible) might
Pag.8. be framed. This they ſaw could not bee done, but with mightie oppoſition and reſiſtance: againſt which to ſtrengthen themſelues, they ſecretly entred into a League of Aſſociation. And peraduenture conſidering, that although they were many, yet long Warres would in time waſte them out; they beganne to thinke whether it might not bee that God would haue them doe for their ſpeedy and mighty increaſe, the ſame which ſometime Gods owne choſen people, the people of Iſrael did. Glad and faine they were to haue it ſo: which very deſire was it ſelfe apt to breed both an opinion of poſſibilitie, and a willingneſſe to gather Argu-

ments

ments of likelihood, that ſo God himſelfe would haue it. Nothing more cleere vnto their ſeeming, then that a new Ieruſalem being often ſpoken of in Scripture, they vndoubtedly were themſelues that new Ieruſalem, and the old did by way of a certayne figurative reſemblance ſignifie what they ſhould both be and doe. Here they drew in a Sea of matter, by applying all things vnto their owne Company, which are any where ſpoken concerning diuine fauours and benefits beſtowed vpon the old Common-wealth of Iſrael; concluding, that as Iſrael was deliuered out of Egypt, ſo they ſpiritually out of the Egypt of this Worlds ſeruile thraldome vnto Sinne and Superſtition; as Iſrael was to roote out the Idolatrous Nations, and to plant in ſtead of them a People which feared God, ſo the ſame Lords good will and pleaſure was now, that theſe new Iſraelites ſhould, vnder the conduct of other Ioſuaes, Samſons, and Gedeons, performe a worke no leſſe miraculous in caſting out violently the wicked from the Earth, and eſtabliſhing the Kingdome of Chriſt with perfect libertie: and therefore as the cauſe why the children of Iſrael tooke vnto one man many vitues, might be, leſt the caſualties of Warre ſhould any way hinder the promiſe of God concerning their multitude from taking effect in them; ſo it was not vnlike that for the neceſſary propagation of Chriſts Kingdome vnder the Goſpell, the Lord was content to allow as much. Now whatſoeuer they did in ſuch ſort collect out of Scripture, when they came to iuſtifie or perſwade it vnto others, all was the heauenly Fathers appointment, his commandement, his will and charge. Which thing is the very point, in regard whereof I haue gathered this declaration. For my purpoſe herein is to ſhew that when the mindes of men are once erroniouſly perſwaded, that it is the will of God to haue thoſe things done which they phancy; their opinions are as Thornes in their ſides, neuer ſuffering them to take reſt till they haue brought their ſpeculations into practice: the lets and impediments of which practice their reſtleſſe deſire and ſtudy to remoue, leadeth them euery day forth by the hand into other more dangerous opinions, ſometimes quite and cleane contrary to their firſt pretended meanings: ſo as what will grow out of ſuch errors as goe maſked vnder the cloke of diuine authoritie, impoſſible it is, that euer the wit of man ſhould imagine, till time haue brought forth the fruits of them: for which cauſe it behoueth Wiſedome to feare the ſequels thereof, euen beyond all apparant cauſe of feare. Theſe men, in whoſe mouthes at the firſt, ſounded nothing but onely mortification of the fleſh, were

come at the length to thinke they might lawfully haue their fiue or ſeuen Wiues apiece: they which at the firſt thought Iudgement and Iuſtice it ſelfe to be mercileſſe cruelty; accompted at the length their owne hands ſanctified with being imbrued in Chriſtian blood: they who at the firſt were wont to beate downe all Dominion, and to vrge againſt poore Conſtables, Kings of Nations; *had at the length both Conſulls and Kings of their owne erection amongſt themſelues, finally, they which could not brooke at the firſt that any man ſhould ſeeke, no not by Law, the recouery of goods iniuriouſly taken or with-held from him; were growne at the laſt to thinke they could not offer vnto God more acceptable ſa-*
Pag.41. *crifice, then by turning their Aduerſaries cleane out of houſe and home, and by inriching themſelues with all kind of ſpoile and pillage; which thing being laid to their charge, they had in a readineſſe their anſwere, that now the time was come, when according to our Sauiours promiſe,*
Mat.5.4. The meeke ones *muſt inherit the earth, and that their title hereunto was the ſame which the righteous* Iſraelites *had vnto the goods*
Exod.11.2. *of the wicked* Egyptians. *Wherefore ſith the World hath had in theſe men ſo freſh experience, how dangerous ſuch abſtruſe errors are, it muſt not offend you though touching the ſequell of your preſent miſperſwaſions much more be doubted, then your owne intents and purpoſes doe haply ayme at. And yet your words already are ſomewhat, when yee affirme that your Paſtors, Doctors, Elders, and Deacons, ought to bee in this Church of* England, Whether her Maieſtie and our State will
Mart. in his 3. Libell, Pag.28. or no, *when for the animating of your Confederates, ye publiſh the muſters which yee haue made of your owne Bands, and proclaime them to amount I know not to how many thouſands; when yee threaten, that ſith neither your ſuits to the Parliament, nor ſupplications to our Conuocation-houſe, neither your defences by Writing, nor challenges of Diſputation in behalfe of that cauſe are able to preuaile, we muſt blame our ſelues, if to bring in diſcipline ſome ſuch meanes hereafter be vſed as ſhall cauſe*
Demonſtr. in the Pref. *all our hearts to ake.* That things doubtfull are to be conſtrued in the better part, *is a principle not ſafe to be followed in matters concerning the publike State of a Common-weale. But howſoeuer theſe and the like ſpeeches be accounted as arrowes idely ſhot at random, without either eye had to any marke, or regard to their lighting place: hath not your longing deſire for the practiſe of your Diſcipline, brought the matter already vnto this demurrer amongſt you, whether the People and their godly Paſtors that way affected, ought not to make ſeparation from*

the

the reſt, and to beginne the exerciſe of Diſcipline without Licence of Ciuill Powers, which Licence they haue ſought for, and are not heard? Vpon which queſtion, as ye haue now deuided your ſelues, the worſer ſort of you taking the one part, and the forwarder in zeale the other; ſo in caſe theſe earneſt Ones ſhould preuaile, what other ſequell can any wiſeman imagine but this, that hauing firſt reſolued that attempts for Diſcipline without Superiors are lawfull, it will follow in the next place to bee diſputed what may bee attempted againſt Superiors, which will not haue the Scepter of that Diſcipline to rule ouer them? Yea euen by you which haue ſtayed your ſelues from running head-long with the other ſort, ſomewhat notwithſtanding there hath beene done without the leaue or liking of your lawfull Superiors, for the exerciſe of a part of your Diſcipline amongſt the Clergie thereunto addicted. And leſt examination of principall parties therein ſhould bring thoſe things to light, which might hinder and let your proceedings; behold for a barre againſt that impediment, one Opinion ye haue newly added vnto the reſt euen vpon this occaſion, an Opinion to exempt you from taking Oaths, which may turne to the moleſtation of your Brethren in that cauſe. The next neighbour Opinion whereunto, when occaſion requireth, may follow for Diſpenſation with Oaths alreadie taken, if they afterwards bee found to import a neceſſitie of detecting ought which may bring ſuch good men into trouble or damage, whatſoeuer the cauſe be. O mercifull God, what mans wit is there able to ſound the depth of thoſe dangerous and fearefull euils, whereinto our weake and impotent nature is inclinable to ſinke it ſelfe, rather then to ſhew an acknowledgement of errour in that which once we haue vnaduiſedly taken vpon vs to defend, againſt the ſtreame as it were of a contrarie publike reſolution; Wherefore, if we any thing reſpect their errour, who being perſwaded euen as ye are, haue gone further vpon that perſwaſion then ye allow, if wee regard the preſent State of the higheſt Gouernour placed ouer vs, if the qualitie and diſpoſition of our Nobles, if the Orders and Lawes of our famous Vniuerſities, if the profeſſion of the Ciuill, or the practice of the Common Law amongſt vs, if the miſchiefes whereinto euen before our eyes ſo many others haue falne head-long from no leſſe plauſible and faire beginnings then yours are: there is in euery of theſe conſiderations moſt iuſt cauſe to feare, leſt our haſtineſſe to embrace a thing of ſo perilous conſequence, ſhould cauſe Poſterity to feele thoſe euils, which as yet are more eaſie for vs to preuent, then they would be for them to remedie.

9. The

The conclusion of all

9. *The beſt and ſafeſt way for you therefore my deare Brethren is, to all your deeds paſt a new reckoning, to re-examine the cauſe ye haue taken in hand, and to try it euen point by point, argument by argument, with all the diligent exactneſſe ye can; to lay aſide the gall of that bitterneſſe wherein your minds haue hitherto ouer-abounded, and with meekeneſſe to ſearch the Truth. Thinke yee are men, deeme it not impoßible for you to erre: ſift vnpartially your owne hearts, whether it be force of reaſon, or vehemencie of affection, which hath bred, and ſtill doth feede theſe opinions in you. If Truth doe any where manifeſt it ſelfe, ſeeke not to ſmother it with glozing Deluſion, acknowledge the greatneſſe thereof, and thinke it your beſt Victorie when the ſame doth prenaile ouer you.*

That yee haue beene earneſt in ſpeaking or writing, againe and againe the contrarie way, ſhould be no blemiſh or diſcredit at all vnto you. Amongſt ſo many ſo huge Volumes, as the infinite paines of Saint Auguſtine *haue brought forth, what one hath gotten him greater loue, commendation and honour, then the Booke wherein he carefully collected his owne ouerſights, and ſincerely condemneth them? Many ſpeeches there are of* Iobs, *whereby his Wiſdome and other Vertues may appeare: but the glorie of an Ingennous minde he hath purcheſed by theſe words onely,* Behold, I will lay mine hand on my mouth; I haue ſpoken once, yet will I not therefore maintaine Argument, yea twice, howbeit for that cauſe further I will not proceed. *Farre more comfort it were for vs (ſo ſmall is the ioy wee take in theſe ſtrifes) to labour vnder the ſame yoke, as men that looke for the ſame eternall reward of their Labours, to be enioyned with you in bands of indiſſoluable loue and amitie, to liue as if our perſons being many, our Soules were but one, rather in ſuch diſmembred ſort to ſpend our few and wretched dayes in a tedious proſecuting of wearieſome Contentions: the end whereof, if they haue not ſome ſpeedie end, will bee beanie euen on both ſides. Brought alreadie wee are euen to that eſtate vnto* Gregorie Nazianzene *mournefully deſcribeth, ſaying,*

Iob 39.37.

Greg. Naz. in Apol.

My minde leadeth me (*ſith there is no other remedy*) to flie and to conuey my ſelfe into ſome corner out of ſight, where I may ſcape from this cloudie tempeſt of malicioufneſſe, whereby all parts are entred into a deadly warre amongſt themſelues, and that little remnant of loue which was, is now conſumed to nothing. The onely godlineſſe wee glorie in, is to finde

out

out ſomewhat whereby wee may iudge others to bee vngodly. Each others faults we obſerue, as matter of exprobration, and not of griefe. By theſe meanes wee are growne hatefull in the eyes of the Heathens themſelues; and (which woundeth vs the more deeply) able wee are not to denie but that wee haue deſerued their hatred. With the better ſort of our owne, our fame and credit is cleane loſt. The leſſe wee are to maruell if they iudge vilely of vs, who although wee did well, would hardly allow thereof. On our backes they alſo build that are lewd, and what wee obiect one againſt another, the ſame they vſe to the vtter ſcorne and diſgrace of vs all. This wee haue gained by our mutuall home-diſſentions. This wee are worthily rewarded with, which are more forward to ſtriue, then becommeth men of vertuous and mild diſpoſition. *But our truſt in the Almightie is, that with vs contentions are now at their higheſt flote, and that the day will come (for what cauſe of deſpaire is there?) when the paſſions of former enmitie being allayed, we ſhall with ten times redoubled tokens of our vnfainedly reconciled loue, ſhew our ſelues each towards other the ſame, which* Ioſeph *and the brethren of* Ioſeph *were at the time of their enter-view in* Egypt. *Our comfortable expectation and moſt thirſtie deſire thereof what man ſoeuer amongſt you ſhall any way helpe to ſatisfie, (as we truely hope there is no one amongſt you but ſome way or other will) the bleſſings of the God of Peace both in this World and in the World to come, be vpon him more then the ſtars of the Firmament in number.*

WHAT THINGS ARE HANDLED IN THE BOOKES Following.

THe *first* Booke, concerning Lawes in generall.

The *second*, Of the vſe of diuine Law contayned in Scripture, whether that bee the onely Law which ought to ſerue for our direction in all things without exception.

The *third*, Of Lawes concerning Eccleſiaſticall Politie, whether the forme thereof bee in Scripture ſo ſet downe, that no addition or change is lawfull.

The *fourth*, Of generall exceptions taken againſt the Lawes of our Politie, as being Popiſh and baniſhed out of certaine Reformed Churches.

The *fifth*, Of our Lawes that concerne the publike religious duties of the Church; and the manner of beſtowing that power of order, which inableth men

men in ſundrie degrees to aſſiſt and execute the ſame.

The *ſixt*, Of the power of Iuriſdiction, which the reformed platforme claymeth vnto Lay-Elders, with others.

The *ſeuenth*, Of the power of Iuriſdiction, and the honor which is annexed thereunto in Biſhops.

The *eighth*, Of the power of Eccleſiaſticall Dominion or ſupreme Authoritie, which with vs the higheſt Gouernour or Prince hath, as well in regard of domeſticall Iuriſdictions, as of that other forrainly claimed by the Biſhop of *Rome*.

OF THE LAWES OF ECCLESIASTICALL POLITIE:

The first Booke.

Concerning Lawes, and their seuerall kindes *in generall.*

The matter contained in this first Booke.

1 *THe cause of writing this generall discourse concerning lawes.*
2 *Of that law which God from before the beginning hath set for himselfe to doe all things by.*
3 *The law which naturall agents obserue, & their necessary manner of keeping it.*
4 *The law which the Angels of God obey.*
5 *The law whereby man in his actions directed to the imitation of God.*
6 *Mens first beginning to vnderstand that law.*
7 *Of mans will, which is the first thing that lawes of action are made to guide.*
8 *Of the naturall finding out of lawes by the light of reason to guide the will vnto that which is good.*
9 *Of the benefit of keeping that law which reason teacheth.*
10 *How reason doth leade men vnto the making of humane lawes whereby politike societies are gouerned, and to agreements about lawes whereby the fellowship or communion of independent societies standeth.*
11 *Wherefore God hath by Scripture further made knowne such supernaturall lawes as doe serue for mens direction.*
12 *The cause why so many naturall or rationall lawes are set downe in holy Scripture.*
13 *The benefit of hauing diuine lawes written.*
14 *The sufficiencie of Scripture vnto the end for which it was instituted.*
15 *Of lawes positiue contained in Scripture, the mutabilitie of certaine of them, and the generall vse of Scripture.*
16 *A conclusion, shewing how all this belongeth to the cause in question.*

The cauſe of writing this generall diſcourſe.

HE that goeth about to perſwade a multitude, that they are not ſo well gouerned as they ought to be, ſhall neuer want attentiue and fauourable hearers; becauſe they know the manifold defects whereunto euery kinde of regiment is ſubiect, but the ſecret lets and difficulties, which in publique proceedings are innumerable and inuitable, they haue not ordinarily the iudgement to conſider. And becauſe ſuch as openly reproue ſuppoſed diſorders of ſtate are taken for principal friends to the common benefite of all, and for men that carry ſingular freedome of mind; vnder this faire & plauſible colour whatſoeuer they vtter, paſſeth for good and currant. That which wanteth in the waight of their ſpeech, is ſupplyed by the aptneſſe of mens mindes to accept and beleeue it. Whereas on the other ſide, if we maintaine things that are eſtabliſhed, we haue not onely to ſtriue with a number of heanie preiudices deepely rooted in the hearts of men, who thinke that herein we ſerue the time, and ſpeake in fauor of the preſent ſtate, becauſe thereby we either hold or ſeeke preferment; but alſo to beare ſuch exceptions as mindes ſo auerted before-hand vſually take againſt that which they are loath ſhould be powred into them. Albeit therefore much of that wee are to ſpeake in this preſent cauſe, may ſeeme to a number perhaps tedious, perhaps obſcure, dark, and intricate, (for many talke of the truth, which neuer ſounded the depth from whence it ſpringeth, and therefore when they are led thereunto they are ſoone weary, as men drawne from thoſe beaten pathes wherewith they haue been iniured:) yet this may not ſo farre preuaile, as to cut off that which the matter it ſelfe requireth, howſoeuer the nice humour of ſome be therewith pleaſed or no. They vnto whom we ſhall ſeeme tedious, are in no wiſe iniured by vs, becauſe it is in their owne hands to ſpare that labour which they are not willing to endure. And if any complaine of obſcuritie, they muſt conſider, that in theſe matters it commeth no otherwiſe to paſſe, then in ſundry the workes both of art and alſo of nature, where that which hath greateſt force in the very things we ſee, is notwithſtanding it ſelfe oftentimes not ſeene. The faireneſſe of houſes, the goodlineſſe of trees, when we behold them delighteth the eye; but that foundation which beareth vp the one, that roote which miniſtreth vnto the other nouriſhment and life, is in the boſome of the earth concealed; and if there bee at any time occaſion to ſearch into it, ſuch labour is then more neceſſary then pleaſant, both to them which vndertake it, and for the lookers on. In like maner the vſe and benefite of good Lawes, all that liue vnder them may enioy with delight and comfort, albeit the grounds and firſt originall cauſes from whence they haue ſprung bee vnknowne, as to the greateſt part of men they are. But when they who withdraw their obedience, pretend that the lawes which they ſhould obey are corrupt and vicious; for better examination of their qualitie, it behoueth the very foundation & roote, the higheſt welſpring and fountaine of them to be diſcouered. Which becauſe we are not oftentimes accuſtomed to doe, when we doe it, the paynes wee take are more needfull a

great deale than acceptable, and the matters which wee handle ſeeme by reaſon of newneſſe, (till the minde grow better acquainted with them) darke, intricate, and vnfamiliar. For as much helpe whereof as may be in this caſe, I haue endeuoured throughout the bodie of this whole Diſcourſe, that euery former part might giue ſtrength vnto all that follow, and euery later bring ſome light vnto all before. So that if the iudgements of men doe but hold themſelues in ſuſpence as touching theſe firſt more generall Meditations, till in order they haue peruſed the reſt that enſue: what may ſeeme darke at the firſt will afterwards bee found more plaine, euen as the later particular deciſions will appeare I doubt not more ſtrong, when the other haue beene read before. The Lawes of the Church, whereby for ſo many Ages together we haue beene guided in the exerciſe of Chriſtian Religion, and the ſeruice of the true God, our Rites, Cuſtomes, and Orders of Eccleſiaſticall Gouernment, are called in queſtion; we are accuſed as men that will not haue Chriſt Ieſus to rule ouer them. but haue wilfully caſt his Statutes behinde their backes, hating to be reformed and made ſubiect vnto the ſcepter of his Diſcipline. Behold therefore we offer the Lawes whereby we liue, vnto the generall triall and iudgement of the whole World; heartily beſeeching Almighrie God, whom wee deſire to ſerue according to his owne will, that both wee and others (all kinde of partiall affection being cleane laid aſide) may haue eyes to ſee, and hearts to embrace, the things that in his ſight are moſt acceptable. And becauſe the point about which wee ſtriue is the qualitie of our Lawes, our firſt entrance herein to cannot better be made, then with conſideration of the nature of Law in generall, and of that Law which giueth life vnto all the reſt which are commendable, iuſt, and good, namely the Law whereby the Eternall himſelfe doth worke. Proceeding from hence to the Law, firſt of Nature, then of Scripture, we ſhall haue the eaſier acceſſe vnto thoſe things which come after to be debated, concerning the particular cauſe and queſtion which we haue in hand.

Of that Law which God from before the beginning hath ſet for himſelfe to do all things by.

2 All things that are, haue ſome operation not violent or caſuall. Neither doth any thing euer beginne to exerciſe the ſame, without ſome fore-conceiued end for which it worketh. And the end which it worketh for is not obtayned, vnleſſe the worke be alſo fit to obtayne it by. For vnto euery end euery operation will not ſerue. That which doth aſſigne vnto each thing the kinde, that which doth moderate the force and power, that which doth appoint the forme and meaſure of working, the ſame wee tearme a *Law*. So that no certaine end could euer bee attained, vnleſſe the actions whereby it is attained were regular, that is to ſay, made ſuteable, fit, and correſpondent vnto their end, by ſome Canon, Rule or Law. Which thing doth firſt take place in the workes euen of God himſelfe. All things therefore doe worke after a ſort according to Law: all other things according to a Law, whereof ſome Superiours vnto whom they are ſubiect is Author; onely the workes and operations of God, haue him both their worker, and for the Law whereby they are wrought. The being of God, is a kinde of Law to his working: for that perfection which God is, giueth perfection to that hee doth. Thole naturall, neceſſary, and internall operations of God, the *generation* of the Sonne, the *proceeding* of the Spirit, are without the compaſſe of my preſent intent: which is to touch onely ſuch opera-

tions as haue their beginning and being by a voluntary purpose, where with God hath eternally decreed when and how they should be. Which eternall decree is that we tearme an eternall Law. Dangerous it were for the feeble braine of man to wade farre into the doings of the most High; whom although to know be life, and ioy to make mention of his name; yet our soundest knowledge is, to know that wee know him not as indeede hee is, neither can know him; and our safest eloquence concerning him is our silence when wee confesse without confession, that his glory is inexplicable, his greatnesse aboue our capacitie and reach. He is aboue, and we vpon earth; therefore it behooueth our words to be warie and few. Our God is one, or rather very *Oneness*, and meere vnitie, hauing nothing but it selfe in it selfe, and not consisting (as all things doe besides God) of many things. In which essentiall vnitie of God, a Trinitie personall neuertheleſſe subsisteth, after a manner farre exceeding the possibilitie of mans conceit. The works which outwardly are of God, they are in such sort of him being one, that each person hath in them somewhat peculiar and proper. For being three, and they all subsisting in the essence of one deitie, from the Father, by the Sonne, through the Spirit, all things are. That which the Sonne doth beare of the Father, and which the Spirit doth receiue of the Father and the Sonne, the same we haue at the hands of the Spirit, as being the last, and therefore the neareſt vnto vs in order, although in power the same with the second and the first. The wise and learned amongst the very Heathens themselues haue all acknowledged some first cause, whereupon originally the being of all things dependeth. Neither haue they otherwise spoken of that cause, then as an Agent, which knowing *what* and *why* it worketh, obserueth in working a most exact *Order* or *Law*. Thus much is signified by that which *Homer* mentioneth, [a] Thus much acknowledged by *Mercurius Trismegist.* [b] Thus much confest by *Anaxagoras* and *Plato*, terming the maker of the world an *Intellectual* worker. Finally the Stoiks, although imagining the first cause of all things to be fire, held neuertheleſſe that the same fire hauing art, did [c] They all confesse therefore in the working of that first cause, that *Counsell* is vsed, *Reason* followed, a *Way* obserued, that is to say, constant *Order* and *Law* is kept, whereof it selfe must needs be author vnto it selfe. Otherwise it should haue some worthier & higher to direct it, & so could not it selfe be the first. Being the first, it can haue no other then it selfe to be the author of that Law which it willingly worketh by. God therefore is a Law both to himselfe, & to all other things besides. To himselfe he is a Law in all those things whereof our Sauiour speaketh, saying, *My Father worketh as yet, so I.* God worketh nothing without cause. All those things which are done by him, haue some end for which they are done: & the end for which they are done, is a reason of his will to doe them. His will had not inclined to create woman, but that he saw it could not be well if she were not created, *Non est bonum, It is not good man should be alone.* Therefore let vs make an helper for him. That & nothing else is done by God, which to leaue vndone were not so good. If therefore it bee demanded, why God hauing power and habilitie infinite, the effects notwithstanding of that power are all so limited as wee see they are: the reason hereof is, the end which hee hath proposed, and the Law where-

by

1 Iohn 16. 13. 14. 15.

a Iupiters counsell was accomplished.

b The creator made the whole world not with hands but by reason. Ratio, in oratione Pimandri.

c Proceed by a certaine and a set way in the making of the world.

Iohn 5. 17.

Gen. 2. 18.

by his wiſdome hath ſtinted the effects of his power in ſuch ſort, that it doth not worke infinitely, but correſpondently vnto that end for which it worketh, euen all things, χρεῶν, in moſt decent and comely ſort, all things in *meaſure, number, & waight*. The generall end of Gods externall working, is the exerciſe of his moſt glorious and moſt abundant vertue: Which abundance doth ſhew it ſelfe in varietie, and for that cauſe this varietie is oftentimes in Scripture expreſt by the name of *riches*. *The Lord hath made all things for his owne ſake*. Not that any thing is made to be beneficiall vnto him, but all things for him to ſhew beneficence and grace in them. The particular drift of euery act proceeding externally from God, wee are not able to diſcerne, and therefore cannot alwayes giue the proper and certaine reaſon of his Workes. Howbeit vndoubtedly, a proper and certaine reaſon there is of euery finite work of God, in as much as there is a Law impoſed vpon it; which if there were not, it ſhould be infinite euen as the Worker himſelfe is. They erre therefore who thinke that of the will of God to doe this or that, there is no reaſon beſides his will. Many times no reaſon knowne to vs; but that there is no reaſon therof, I iudge it moſt vnreaſonable to imagin, in as much as he worketh all things, κατὰ βουλὴν τοῦ θελήματος αὐτοῦ, not onely according to his own will, but *the counſell of his owne will*. And whatſoeuer is done with counſell or wiſe reſolution, hath of neceſſitie ſome reaſon why it ſhould be done, albeit that reaſon be to vs in ſome things ſo ſecret, that it forceth the wit of man to ſtand, as the bleſſed Apoſtle himſelf doth, amazed thereat, *O the depth of the riches, both of the wiſdome and knowledge of God! How vnſearchable are his iudgements! &c.* That Law eternall which God himſelfe hath made to himſelfe, and thereby worketh all things whereof he is the cauſe and Author; that Law in the admirable frame whereof ſhineth with moſt perfect beautie the countenance of that wiſedome which hath teſtified concerning her ſelfe, *The Lord poſſeſſed me in the beginning of his way, euen before his workes of old I was ſet vp*; that Law which hath beene the Patterne to make, and is the Card to guide the World by; that Law which hath beene of God, and with God euerlaſtingly; that Law the Author and Obſeruer whereof is one onely God to be bleſſed for euer; how ſhould either Men or Angels be able perfectly to behold? The Booke of this Law we are neither able nor worthy to open and looke into. That little thereof which we darkly apprehend we admire; the reſt with religious ignorance we humbly and meekly adore. Seeing therefore that according to this Law he worketh, *of whom, through whom, and for whom are all things*; although there ſeeme vnto vs confuſion and diſorder in the affaires of this preſent World; *Tamen quoniam bonus mundum rector temperat, rectè fieri cuncta ne dubites*, Let no man doubt but that euery thing is well done, becauſe the World is ruled by ſo good a Guide, as tranſgreſſeth not his own Law, then which nothing can be more abſolute, perfect, & iuſt. The Law whereby he worketh, is eternall, and therefore can haue no ſhew or colour of mutabilitie: for which cauſe a part of that Law being opened in the promiſes which God hath made, (becauſe his promiſes are nothing elſe but Declarations what God will doe for the good of men) touching thoſe promiſes the Apoſtle hath witneſſed, that God may as poſſibly denie himſelfe & not be God, as faile to performe them. And concerning the counſell of God, hee termeth it likewiſe a thing *vnchangeable*, the counſell of God, and that Law of God where-

Sapi.8.1. Sapi.11.17. Ephes.1.7. Phil.4.19. Col.1.3. Prou.16.4. Ephes.1.11. Rom.11.33. Prou.8.23. Rom.11.36. Boet.Lib.4. de Conſol.Philoſ. 2.Tim.2.13. Hebr.6.17.

of now we ſpeake being one. Nor is the freedome of the will of God any whit abated, let or hindred by meanes of this, becauſe the impoſition of this Law vpon himſelfe is his owne free and voluntary act. This Law therefore we may name eternall, being *that order which God before all Ages hath ſet downe with himſelfe, for himſelfe to doe all things by.*

The law which naturall agents haue giuen them to obſerue, and their neceſſary manner of keeping it.

3 I am not ignorant that by Law eternall the learned for the moſt part doe vnderſtand the order, not which God hath eternally purpoſed himſelfe in all his workes to obſerue, but rather that which with himſelfe he hath ſet downe as expedient to be kept by all his creatures according to the ſeuerall condition wherewith he hath indued them. They who thus are accuſtomed to ſpeake, apply the name of *Law* vnto that onely rule of working which Superior Authoritie impoſeth; whereas wee ſomewhat more enlarging the ſenſe thereof, terme any kind of rule or Canon whereby actions are framed, a Law. Now that Law which as it is laid vp in the boſome of God, they call *eternall*, receiueth according vnto the different kind of things which are ſubiect vnto it, different and ſundry kindes of names. That part of it which ordreth naturall Agents, we call vſually *Natures* Law: that which Angels doe clearly behold, and without any ſwaruing obſerue, is a Law *celeſtiall* and heauenly: the Law of *Reaſon*, that which bindeth creatures reaſonable in this World, and with which by reaſon they may moſt plainely perceiue themſelues bound; that which bindeth them, and is not knowne but by ſpeciall reuelation frō God, *diuine* Law; *humane* Law, that which out of the Law either of reaſon or of God, men probably gathering to be expedient, they make it a Law. All things therefore, which are as they ought to be, are conformed vnto *this ſecond Law eternall*; and euen thoſe things which to this *eternall* Law are not conformable, are notwithſtanding in ſome ſort ordered by *the firſt eternall Law*. For what good or euill is there vnder the Sunne, what action correſpondent or repugnant vnto the Law which God hath impoſed vpon his creatures, but in or vpon it God doth worke according to the Law which himſelfe hath eternally purpoſed to keepe, that is to ſay, the *firſt Law eternall?* So that a two-fold Law eternall being thus made, it is not hard to conceiue how they both take place in all things. Wherefore to come to the Law of nature, albeit thereby we ſometimes meane that manner of working which God hath ſet for each created thing to keepe: yet for as much as thoſe things are termed moſt properly naturall Agents, which keepe the Law of their kind vnwittingly, as the Heauens and Elements of the World, which can doe no otherwiſe then they doe; and for as much as wee giue vnto intellectuall natures the name of *voluntary* Agents, that ſo wee may diſtinguiſh them from the other, expedient it will be, that wee ſeuer the Law of Nature obſerued by the one, from that which the other is tyed vnto. Touching the former, their ſtrict keeping of one Tenure, Statute and Law is ſpoken of by all, but hath in it more then men haue as yet attained to know, or perhaps euer ſhall attaine, ſeeing the trauell of wading herein is giuen of God to the ſonnes of Men, that perceiuing

* Id omne quod in rebus creatis fit, eſt materia legis æternæ. Th. 1. 2. q. 93. art. 4, 5, 6. Nullo modo aliquid legibus ſummi creatoris ordinationique ſubtrahitur, à quo pax vniuerſitatis adminiſtratur. *Aug. de Ciuit. Dei, li.* 19. c. 13. *Iuuno & peccatum, quatenus à Deo iuſtè permittitur, cadit in legem æternam. Etiam legi æternæ ſubijcitur peccatum; quatenus voluntaria legis tranſgreſſio pœnale quoddam in ordinem ad ſuum inferit, iuxta illud Auguſtini,* Iuſſiſti Domine & ſic eſt, vt pœna ſua ſibi ſit omnis animus inordinatus. *Confeſſ. l. 1. c. 12. Nec male ſcholaſtici,* Quemadmodum inquiunt videmus res naturales concluſas, hoc ipſo quòd à fine particulari ſuo, atq; adeo à lege æternâ exorbitãt, in eandem legẽ æternam incidere, quatenus conſequuntur alium finem à lege etiam æternâ ipſis in caſu particulari conſtitutum: ſic veriſimile eſt homines etiam cùm peccant & deſciſcunt à lege æternâ vt præcipiente, reincidere in ordinem æternæ legis vt punientis.

ceiuing how much the leaſt thing in the World hath in it more then the wiſeſt are able to reach vnto, they may by this meanes learne humilitie. *Moſes*, in deſcribing the worke of Creation, attributeth ſpeech vnto God, *God ſaid, Let there be light: Let there be a firmament: Let the Waters vnder the Heauen be gathered together into one place: Let the Earth bring forth: Let there be Lights in the Firmament of Heauen.* Was this onely the intent of *Moſes* to ſignifie the infinite greatneſſe of Gods power, by the eaſineſſe of his accompliſhing ſuch effects, without trauell, paine, or labour? Surely it ſeemeth that *Moſes* had herein, beſides this, a further purpoſe, namely, firſt, to teach that God did not worke as a neceſſary, but a voluntary Agent, intending beforehand and decreeing with himſelfe that which did outwardly proceed from him: Secondly, to ſhew that God did then inſtitute a Law naturall to be obſerued by creatures, and therfore according to the manner of Lawes, the Inſtitution thereof is deſcribed, as being eſtabliſhed by ſolemne iniunction. His commanding thoſe things to be which are, and to be in ſuch ſort as they are, to keepe that tenure and courſe which they doe, importeth the eſtabliſhment of Natures Law. This Worlds firſt Creation, and the preſeruation ſince of things created, what is it, but only ſo far forth a manifeſtation by execution, what the Eternall Law of God is concerning things naturall? And as it commeth to paſſe in a kingdome rightly ordered, that after a Law is once publiſhed, it preſently takes effect far and wide, all States framing themſelues thereunto; euen ſo let vs thinke it fareth in the naturall courſe of the World: ſince the time that God did firſt proclaime the Edicts of his Law vpon it, Heauen and earth haue harkned vnto his voyce, and their labour hath bin to doe his will: *He made a Law for the Raine*, He gaue his *Decree vnto the Sea, that the Waters ſhould not paſſe his commandement.* Now, if nature ſhould intermit her courſe, and leaue altogether, though it were but for a while, the obſeruation of her own Lawes; if thoſe principall and Mother Elements of the World, whereof all things in this lower World are made, ſhould looſe the qualities which now they haue; if the frame of that Heauenly Arch erected ouer our heads ſhould looſen and diſſolue it ſelfe; if Celeſtiall Spheres ſhould forget their wonted Motions, and by irregular volubilitie turne themſelues any way as it might happen; if the Prince of the Lights of Heauen, which now as a Gyant doth run his vnwearied courſe, ſhould as it were through a languiſhing faintneſſe begin to ſtand and to reſt himſelfe; if the Moone ſhould wander from her beaten way, the times and ſeaſons of the yeere blend themſelues by diſordered and confuſed mixture, the Winds breathe out their laſt gaſpe, the Clouds yeeld no Raine, the Earth be defeated of Heauenly Influence, the Fruits of the Earth pine away as Children at the withered breſts of their Mother, no longer able to yeeld them reliefe; what would become of Man himſelfe, whom theſe things now doe all ſerue? See wee not plainly, that obedience of Creatures vnto the Law of Nature is the ſtay of the whole World? Notwithſtanding, with Nature it commeth ſometimes to paſſe as with Art. Let *Phidias* haue rude and obſtinate ſtuffe to carue, though his Art doe that it ſhould, his Worke will lacke that beautie which otherwiſe in fitter matter it might haue had. Hee that ſtriketh an Inſtrument with Skill, may cauſe notwithſtanding a very vnpleaſant ſound, if the String whereon hee ſtriketh chance to be vncapeable of Harmonie. In the matter whereof things naturall *Pſal.19.5.*

Theophraſt. in Metaph.

turall conſiſt, that of *Theophraſtus* taketh place, Πολὺ τὸ ἐκ ἀνάγκης ἐθέλει δεχόμενον τὴν ὕλην, *Much of it is oftentimes ſuch, as will by no meanes yeeld to receiue that impreſſion which were beſt and moſt perfect.* Which defect in the matter of things naturall, they who gaue themſelues vnto the contemplation of nature amongſt the Heathen, obſerued often: but the true originall cauſe thereof, diuine malediction, laid for the ſinne of man vpon theſe creatures which God had made for the vſe of man; this being an article of that ſauing truth which God hath reuealed vnto his Church, was aboue the reach of their meerely naturall capacitie and vnderſtanding. But howſoeuer theſe ſwaruings are now and then incident into the courſe of nature, neuertheleſſe ſo conſtantly the Lawes of nature are by naturall agents obſerued, that no man denyeth but thoſe things which nature worketh, are wrought either alwayes or for the moſt part after one and the ſame manner. If here it be demanded what that is which keepeth Nature in obedience to her owne Law, we muſt haue recourſe to that higher Law whereof we haue already ſpoken, and becauſe all other Lawes doe thereon depend, from thence we muſt borrow ſo much as ſhall needs for briefe reſolution in this point. Although we are not of opinion therefore, as ſome are, that nature in working hath before her certayne exemplarie draughts or patternes, which ſubſiſting in the boſome of the Higheſt, and being thence diſcouered, ſhee fixeth her eye vpon them, as Trauellers by Sea vpon the Pole-ſtarre of the world, and that according thereunto ſhee guideth her hand to worke by imitation: although we rather embrace the Oracle of *Hippocrates*, that *each thing both in ſmall and in great fulfilleth the taske which deſtinie hath ſet downe:* and concerning the manner of executing and fulfilling the ſame, *What they doe they know not, yet is it in ſhew and appearance, as though they did know what they doe, and the truth is, they doe not diſcerne the things which they looke on:* neuertheleſſe, for as much as the workes of nature are no leſſe exact, then if ſhee did both behold and ſtudie how to expreſſe ſome abſolute ſhape or mirror alwayes preſent before her; yea, ſuch her dexteritie and skill appeareth, that no intellectuall creature in the world were able by capacitie to doe that which nature doth without capacitie and knowledge; it cannot be, but nature hath ſome Directer of infinite knowledge to guide her in all her wayes. Who the guide of Nature, but onely the God of Nature? *In him we liue, moue, and are.* Thoſe things which nature is ſaid to doe, are by diuine Arte performed, vſing Nature as an inſtrument: nor is there any ſuch Arte or Knowledge diuine in Nature her ſelfe working, but in the guide of natures worke. Whereas therefore things naturall, which are not in the number of voluntarie Agents (for of ſuch onely we now ſpeake and of no other) doe ſo neceſſarily obſerue their certaine Lawes, that as long as they keepe thoſe * formes which giue them their being, they cannot poſſibly be apt or inclinable to doe otherwiſe then they doe; ſeeing the kindes of their operations are both conſtantly and exactly framed according to the ſeuerall ends for which they ſerue, they themſelues in the meane while though doing that which is fit, yet knowing neither what they doe, nor why: it followeth that all which they doe in this ſort, proceedeth originally from ſome ſuch agent, as knoweth, appointeth, holdeth vp, and euen actually frameth the ſame. The manner of this diuine efficiencie being farre aboue vs, we are no more able to conceiue by our reaſon, then creatures vnreaſonable by their ſenſe

Ariſt. Rhet. 1. cap. 39.

Τὸν ὑπερφυᾶ μοῖραν ἑκάστου ἐκτελεῖ ἢ ἐπὶ τὸ μεῖζον ἢ ἐπὶ τὸ ἔλαττον. ὁ ὑφαίνων ἐν ὕδατι, ὡς ὑφαίνει δοκέων ἐν ἔργοις ἢ γνώμῃσι· ἀλλ' οὐ μὲν ἐρέει ὁ γνώμενος.

Act. 17. 28.

* Forme in other creatures, is a thing proportionable vnto the ſoule in liuing creatures. Senſible it is not, nor otherwiſe diſcernable, then only by effects. According to the diuerſitie of inward formes, things of the world are diſtinguiſhed into their kindes.

ſenſe are able to apprehend after what manner we diſpoſe and order the courſe of our affaires. Onely thus much is diſcerned, that the naturall generation and proceſſe of all things receiueth order of proceeding from the ſetled ſtabilitie of diuine vnderſtanding. This appointeth vnto them their kinds of working, the diſpoſition whereof in the puritie of Gods owne knowledge and will is rightly tearmed by the name of *Prouidence*. The ſame being referred vnto the things themſelues here diſpoſed by it, was woont by the Ancient to be called *naturall deſtinie*. That law the performance whereof we behold in things naturall, is as it were an authenticall, or an originall draught written in the boſome of God himſelfe; whoſe ſpirit being to execute the ſame, vſeth euery particular nature, euery meere naturall agent, onely as an inſtrument created at the beginning, and euer ſince the beginning vſed to worke his owne will and pleaſure withall. Nature therefore is nothing elſe but Gods inſtrument: in the courſe whereof *Dionyſius* perceiuing ſome ſuddaine diſturbance, is ſaid to haue cried out, *Aut Deus naturæ patitur, aut mundi machina diſſoluitur*, Either God doth ſuffer impediment, and is by a greater then himſelfe hindred; or if that be impoſſible, then hath he determined to make a preſent diſſolution of the World, the execution of that law beginning now to ſtand ſtill, without which the world cannot ſtand. This workman whoſe ſeruitor nature is, being in truth but onely one, the Heathens imagining to be moe, gaue him in the skie the name of *Iupiter*, in the ayre the name of *Iuno*, in the water the name of *Neptune*, in the earth the name of *Veſta*, and ſometimes of *Ceres*, the name of *Apollo* in the Sun, in the Moon the name of *Diana*, the name of *Aeolus*, and diuers other in the winds; and to conclude, euen ſo many guides of Nature they dreamed of, as they ſaw there were kindes of things naturall in the world. Theſe they honored, as hauing power to worke or ceaſe according as men deſerued of them. But vnto vs there is one onely guide of all agents naturall, and he both the creator and the worker of all in all, alone to be bleſſed, adored and honoured by all for euer. That which hitherto hath beene ſpoken, concerneth naturall agents conſidered in themſelues. But we muſt further remember alſo (which thing to touch in a word ſhall ſuffice) that as in this reſpect they haue their Law, which Law directeth them in the meanes whereby they tend to their owne perfection: ſo likewiſe another Law there is, which coucheth them as they are ſociable parts vnited into one bodie; a Law which bindeth them each to ſerue vnto others good, and all to preferre the good of the whole before whatſoeuer their owne particular; as we plainely ſee they doe, when things naturall in that regard forget their ordinary naturall woont, that which is heauie mounting ſometime vpwards of it owne accord, and forſaking the center of the earth, which to it ſelfe is moſt naturall, euen as if it did heare it ſelfe commanded to let goe the good it priuately wilbeth, and to relieue the preſent diſtreſſe of Nature in common.

Vide Thom. in Compend. Theol. Cap. 3.

Omne quod mouetur ab aliquo, oß queſi inſtrumentum quoddam primi mouentis.

Ridiculum eß existimare apud indoctos potuiſſe inſtrumentum naturæ non ab aliquo principali agente.

4 But now that we may lift vp our eies (as it were) from the footſtoole to the throne of God, and leauing theſe naturall, conſider a little the ſtate of heauenly and diuine creatures; touching Angels which are ſpirits immateriall and intellectuall, the glorious Inhabitants of thoſe ſacred Pallaces, where nothing but light and bleſſed immortalitie, no ſhadow of matter for teares, diſcontentments, griefes, and vncomfortable paſſions to worke vpon, but all ioy, tranquillitie, and

The law which Angels doe worke by. *Pſal. 104. 4. Heb. 1. 7. Eph. 3. 10.*

and peace, euen for euer and euer doe dwell; as in number and order they are huge, mightie, and royall armies; so likewise in perfection of obedience vnto that Law, which the Highest, whom they adore, loue, and imitate, hath imposed vpon them; such obseruants they are thereof, that our Sauiour himselfe being to set down the perfect *Idea* of that which we are to pray and wish for on earth, did not teach to pray or wish for more, then onely that heere it might bee with vs, as with them it is in heauen. God which moueth meere naturall agents as an efficient onely, doth otherwise mooue intellectuall creatures, and especially his holy Angels. For beholding the face of God, in admiration of so great excellencie they all adore him; and beeing rapt with the loue of his beautie, they cleaue inseparably for euer vnto him. Desire to resemble him in goodnesse, maketh them vnweariable, and euen vnsatiable in their longing to do by all meanes all maner good vnto all the creatures of God, but especially vnto the children of men; in the countenance of whose nature looking downeward they behold themselues beneath themselues, euen as vpward in God, beneath whom themselues are, they see that character which in no where but in themselues and vs resembled. Thus farre euen the Painims haue approched, thus farre they haue seene into the doings of the Angels of God; *Orpheus* confessing, that the fierie throne of God is attended on by those most industrious Angels, carefull how all things are performed amongst men; and the mirror of humane wisedome plainely teaching, that God mooueth Angels, euen as that thing doth stirre mans heart, which is thereunto presented amiable. Angelicall actions may therefore be reduced vnto these three generall kinds; first, most delectable loue, arising from the visible apprehension of the puritie, glorie, and beautie of God, inuisible sauing onely vnto Spirits that are pure; secondly adoration, grounded vpon the euidence of the greatnesse of God, on whom they see how all things depend; thirdly, imitation, bred by the presence of his exemplary goodnes, who ceaseth not before them daily to fill heauen and earth with the rich treasures of most free and vndeserued grace. Of Angels we are not to consider onely what they are, and doe, in regard of their owne being; but that also which concerneth them as they are linked into a kind of corporation amongst themselues, and of societie or fellowship with men. Consider Angels each of them seuerally in himselfe, and their Law is that which the Prophet *Dauid* mentioneth, *All ye his Angels praise him*. Consider the Angels of God associated, and their Law is that which disposeth them as an *Army*, one in order and degree aboue an other. Consider finally the Angels as hauing with vs that communion which the Apostle to the Hebrewes noteth, and in regard whereof Angels haue not disdained to professe themselues our *fellow-seruants*; from hence there springeth vp a third Law, which bindeth them to works of ministeriall imployment. Euerie of which their seuerall functions are by them performed with ioy. A part of the Angels of God notwithstanding (we know) haue fallen, and that their fall hath beene through the voluntarie breach of that Law, which did require at their hands continuance in the exercise of their high and admirable vertue. Impossible it was that euer their will should change or encline to remit any part of their dutie, without some obiect hauing force to auert their conceit from God, and to draw it another way; and that before they attained that high perfection

Deu. 7. 19.
Matth. 26. 53.
Heb. 12. 22.
Luc. 2. 13.
Matth. 6. 10.
Matth. 18. 10.
Psal 91. 11. 12.
Luc. 15. 7.
Heb. 1. 14.
Act. 10. 3.
Dan. 9. 23.
Matth. 18. 10.
Dan. 4. 10.
Σὺ δὲ τὸν θρόνον περιστεροῦσιν ἀμφιπόλοι θεσπεσίαι μεμάασιν. Ἄγγελοι, οἵτε μέμηλε βροτοῖς ἐφορᾶν ἐπὶ γαῖαν ἕκαστα.
Aristotle. de mundo. c. 7.
Zeb. 96. 7.
Matth. 18. 10.
Psal. 148. 2.
Heb. 2. 6.
Esa. 6. 3.
This is intimated wheresoeuer we finde them termed the sonnes of God: as Iob 1. 6. and 38. 7. 2. Pet. 2. 4.
Ep. Iud. vers. 6.
Psal. 148. 2.
Luc. 2. 13.
Matth. 26. 53.
Psal. 148. 2.
Heb. 12. 22.
Apoc. 22. 9.

bue of

of bliſſe, wherein now the elect Angels are without poſſibilitie of falling. Of any thing more then of God they could not by any meanes like, as long as whatſoeuer they knew beſides God, they apprehended it not in it ſelfe without dependencie vpon God; becauſe ſo long God muſt needs ſeeme infinitely better then any thing which they ſo could apprehend. Things beneath them could not in ſuch ſort be preſented vnto their eyes, but that therein they muſt needes ſee alwayes how thoſe things did depend on God. It ſeemeth therefore that there was no other way for Angels to ſinne, but by reflex of their vnderſtanding vpon themſelues; when being held with admiration of their owne ſublimity and honour, the memorie of their ſubordination vnto God, and their dependencie on him was drowned in this conceipt; whereupon their adoration, loue, and imitation of God, could not chooſe but be alſo interrupted. The fall of Angels therefore was pride. Since their fall, their practiſes haue beene the cleane contrary vnto thoſe before mentioned. For being diſperſed ſome in the ayre, ſome on the earth, ſome in the water, ſome amongſt the minerals, dennes, and caues, that are vnder the earth: they haue by all meanes laboured to effect an vniuerſall rebellion againſt the lawes, and as farre as in them lyeth, vtter deſtruction of the workes of God. Theſe wicked ſpirits the Heathens honoured in ſtead of Gods, both generally vnder the name of *Dij infiri* Gods infernall; and particularly, ſome in Oracles, ſome in Idolles, ſome as houſhold Gods, ſome as Nymphes; in a word, no foule and wicked ſpirit which was not one way or other honoured of men as God, till ſuch time as light appeared in the world, and diſſolued the workes of the diuel. Thus much therefore may ſuffice for Angels, the next vnto whom in degree are men.

Iohn 8. 44. 1. Pet. 5 8. Apoc. 9. 11. Gen. 3. 15. 1. Cho. 21. 1. Iob 1. 7. & 2. 5. Iohn 13. 27. Act. 5. 3. Apoc. 20. 8.

5. God alone excepted, who actually and euerlaſtingly is whatſoeuer hee may be, and which cannot hereafter bee that which now hee is not; all other things beſides are ſomewhat in poſſibilitie, which as yet they are not in act. And for this cauſe there is in all things an appetite or deſire, whereby they incline to ſomething which they may bee: and when they are it, they ſhall be perfecter then now they are. All which perfections are contained vnder the generall name of *Goodneſſe*. And becauſe there is not in the world any thing whereby another may not ſome way be made the perfecter, therefore all things that are, are good. Againe, ſith there can be no goodneſſe deſired which proceedeth not from God himſelfe, as from the ſupreme cauſe of all things: and euerie effect doth after a ſort conteine, at leaſt wiſe reſemble the cauſe from which it proceedeth: all things in the world are laid in ſome ſort to ſeeke the higheſt, and to conuert more or leſſe the participation of God himſelfe. Yet this doth no where ſo much appeare as it doth in man: becauſe there are ſo many kinds of perfections which man ſeeketh. The firſt degree of goodneſſe is that generall perfection which all things do ſeeke, in deſiring the continuance of their being. All things therefore coueting, as much as may be, to be like vnto God in being euer, that which cannot hereunto attayne perſonally, doth ſeeke to continue it ſelfe another way, that is, by off-ſpring and propagation. The next degree of goodnes, is that which each thing couereth by affecting reſemblance with God, in the conſtancie and excellencie of thoſe operations which belong vnto their kind. The immutabilitie of God they ſtriue vnto, by working either alwayes or for the moſt

The law whereby man is in his actions directed to the imitation of God.

Πάντα γὰρ ἐαυτῶν ἐφίεται θεὸν Ari. de an. lib. 2. cap. 4.

most part after one and the same manner; his absolute exactnes they imitate, by tending vnto that which is most exquisite in euery particular. Hence haue risen a number of axiomes in Philosophie, shewing, how *The workes of nature doe alwaies aime at that which cannot be bettered.* These two kinds of goodnes rehearsed, are so neerely vnited to the things themselues which desire them, that wee scarcely perceiue the appetite to stirre in reaching foorth her hand towardes them. But the desire of those perfections which grow externally is more apparent; especially of such as are not expressely desired vnlesse they be first known, or such as are not for any other cause then for knowledge it selfe desired. Concerning perfections in this kind, that by proceeding in the knowledge of truth, and by growing in the exercise of vertue, man amongst the creatures of this inferiour world, aspireth to the greatest conformitie with God; this is not onely knowne vnto vs, whom hee himselfe hath so instructed, but euen they doe acknowledge, who amongst men are not iudged the neerest vnto him. With *Plato* what one thing more vsuall, then to excite men vnto the loue of wisedome, by shewing how much wise men are thereby exalted aboue men; how knowledge doth raise them vp into heauen; how it maketh them, though not Gods, yet as Gods, high, admirable, and diuine? And *Mercurius Trismegistus* speaking of the vertues of a righteous soule, *Such spirits* (saith he) *are neuer cloyed with praising and speaking well of all men, with doing good vnto euerie one by word and deed, because they studie to frame themselues according to* THE PATERNE *of the father of spirits.*

Εν τοῖς φύσει τὸ βέλτιον ἀεὶ ἐνδέχεται ὑπάρχειν μᾶλλον ἢ φύσει ἀεὶ τοῦ τῶν ἐνδεχομένων τὸ βέλτιστον. Arist. 1. de cæl. cap. 1.

Matth. 5. 48. Sap. 7. 27.

ἃ δὴ τοιαῦτα ἀγαθὰ μέγιστον ἐν ψυχῇ ἔχει, ὅταν ἔρως ἐμπεσὼν πάντας ἀνθρώπους, ἐπαίνοις ἔργων τε πέρι καὶ λόγοις εὐφημῆσαι, μιμήσεσθαι δ' αὐτῆς τὸν πατέρα.

6 In the matter of knowledge, there is betweene the Angels of God and the children of men this difference. Angels alreadie haue full and complete knowledge in the highest degree that can bee imparted vnto them: men if wee view them in their spring, are at the first without vnderstanding or knowledge at all. Neuertheless from this vtter vacuitie they grow by degrees, till they come at length to be euen as the Angels themselues are. That which agreeth to the one now, the other shall attayne vnto in the end; they are not so farre disioyned and seuered, but that they come at length to meete. The soule of man being therefore at the first as a booke, wherein nothing is, and yet all things may be imprinted; we are to search by what steppes and degrees it riseth vnto perfection of knowledge. Vnto that which hath beene already set downe concerning naturall agents this wee must adde, that albeit therein wee haue comprised as well creatures liuing, as voide of life, if they bee in degree of nature beneath men; nevertheless a difference we must obserue between those naturall agents that worke altogether vnwittingly, and those which haue though weake, yet some vnderstanding what they doe, as fishes, foules, and beastes haue. Beasts are in sensible capacitie as ripe euen as men themselues, perhaps more ripe. For as stones, though in dignitie of nature inferiour vnto plants, yet exceed them in firmenesse of strength or durability of being; and plants though beneath the excellency of creatures indued with sense, yet exceed them in the facultie of vegetation and of fertility: so beasts though otherwise behind men, may notwithstanding in actions of sense and phancie goe beyond them; because the endeuors of nature, when it hath an higher perfection to seeke, are in lower the more remisse, not esteeming thereof so much as those thing doe, which haue no better

Mens first beginning to grow to the knowledge of that law which they are to obserue. Vide Isa. 7. 16.

proposed

proposed vnto them. The soule of man therefore being capable of a more diuine perfection, hath (besides the faculties of growing vnto sensible knowledge which is common vnto vs with beasts) a further abilitie, whereof in them there is no shew at all, the ability of reaching * higher then vnto sensible things. Till we grow to some ripenesse of yeeres, the soule of man doth onely store it selfe with conceits of things of inferiour and more open qualitie, which afterwards doe serue as Instruments vnto that which is greater: in the meane while aboue the reach of meaner creatures it ascendeth not. When once it comprehendeth any thing aboue this, as the differences of time, affirmations, negations, and contradictions in speech; we then count it to haue some vse of naturall reason. Whereunto if afterwards there might be added the right helpes of true Art and Learning, (which helpes I must plainely confesse, this Age of the VVorld, carrying the name of a Learned Age, doth neither much know nor greatly regard) there would vndoubtedly bee almost as great difference in maturitie of iudgement betweene men therewith inured, and that which now men are, as betweene men that are now and Innocents. VVhich speech if any condemne, as being ouer-Hyperbolicall, let them consider but this one thing. No Art is at the first finding out so perfect, as industrie may after make it. Yet the very first man that to any purpose knew the way wee speake of and followed it, hath alone thereby performed more very neere in all partes of naturall knowledge, then sithence in any one part thereof, the whole VVorld besides hath done. In the powertie of that other new-deuised aid, two things there are notwithstanding singular. Of maruailous quicke dispatch it is, and doth shew them that haue it as much almost in three dayes, as if it dwell threescore yeeres with them. Againe, because the curiositie of mans wit doth many times with perill wade further in the search of things, then were conuenient: the same is thereby restrained vnto such generalities, as euery where offering themselues, are apparant vnto men of the weakest conceit that need bee. So as following the Rules and Precepts thereof, wee may find it to be an Art, which teacheth the way of speedie Discourse, and restraineth the mind of man that it may not waxe ouer-wise. Education and Instruction are the meanes, the one by vse, the other by Precept, to make our naturall faculties of reason, both the better and the sooner able to iudge rightly betweene Truth and Error, good and euil. But at what time a man may be said to haue attained so farre forth the vse of reason, as sufficeth to make him capable of those Lawes, whereby hee is then bound to guide his Actions; this is a great deale more easie for common sense to discerne, then for any man by Skill and Learning to determine: euen as it is not in Philosophers, who best know the nature both of Fire and of Gold, to teach what degree of the one will serue to purifie the other, so well as the Artizan (who doth this by Fire) discerneth by sense, when the fire hath that degree of heate which sufficeth for his purpose.

* ἡ δὲ ἀνθρωπικὴ ἐκ τῶν ὑφειμένων ἀρχὴ καὶ πασῶν, καὶ μετὰ ταύτην ἀνθρωπικὴ, καὶ ἐπιστήμη μὲν ἐστὶ τοῦ ὑπερκειμένου γένους ἀνθρωπικὴ, οὐδαμοῦ δὲ παρέστηκε τοῦτο, καὶ τὰ πολλὰ τῶν ἀνθρωπικῶν ἀγνοεῖται. Καὶ τὸ πάντων μεῖζον, ὑπὸ τῶν ἐπιστημῶν ἀνθρωπικῶν οὐδὲν γίνεται. Mercur. Trism. Aristotelicall demonstration

Ramisty.

7. By reason man attaineth vnto the knowledge of things that are, and are not sensible: It resteth therefore that we search how man attaineth vnto the knowledge of such things vnsensible, as are to be known that they may be done. Seeing then that nothing can moue vnlesse there be some end, the desire whereof prouoketh vnto motion; how should that diuine power of the Soule, that *Spirit* of

Of mans will, which is the thing that lawes of action are made to guide.

Ephes.4.23. *of our mind*, as the Apostle termeth it, euer stir it selfe vnto action, vnlesse it haue also the like spurre? The end for which we are moued to worke, is sometimes the goodnesse which we conceiue of the very working it selfe, without any further respect at all; and the cause that procureth action, is the meere desire of action, no other good besides being thereby intended. Of certaine turbulent
Liuie. wits it is said, *Illis quiet a mouere magna merces videbatur.* They thought the verie disturbance of things established, an hire sufficient to set them on worke. Sometimes that which wee doe is referred to a further end, without the desire
Mat.6. whereof we would leaue the same vndone, as in their actions that gaue Almes to purchase thereby the prayse of men. Man in perfection of nature being made according to the likenes of his Maker, resembleth him also in the manner of working; so that whatsoeuer wee worke as men, the same we doe wittingly worke and freely; neither are wee according to the manner of naturall Agents any way so tyed, but that it is in our power to leaue the things wee doe vndone. The good which either is gotten by doing, or which consisteth in the verie doing it selfe, causeth not action, vnlesse apprehending it as good, wee so like and desire it. That wee doe vnto any such end, the same wee choose and preferre before the leauing of it vndone. Choice there is not, vnlesse the thing which wee take, be so in our power that wee might haue refused and left it. If fire consume the stubble, it chooseth not so to doe, because the nature thereof is such that it can doe no other. To choose, is to will one thing before another. And to will, is to bend our soules to the hauing or doing of that which they seeme bee good. Goodnesse is seene with the eye of the vnderstanding. And the light of that Eye, is Reason. So that two principall fountaines there are of humane action, *Knowledge* and *will*; which will in things tending towards any
Deut.30.19. end, is termed *Choice*. Concerning Knowledge, Behold, saith Moses, *I haue set before you this day good and euill, life and death.* Concerning Will, he addeth immediately, *Choose life*; that is to say, the things that tend vnto life, them choose. But of one thing we must haue speciall care, as being a matter of no small moment, and that is, how the will properly and strictly taken, as it is of things which are referred vnto the end that man desireth, differeth greatly from that inferiour naturall desire which wee call appetite. The obiect of appetite is, whatsoeuer sensible good may be wished for; the obiect of will is, that good which Reason doth lead vs to seeke. Affections, as ioy, and griefe, and feare, and anger, with such like, being as it were the sundry fashions and formes of appetite, can neyther rise at the conceit of a thing indifferent, nor yet choose but rise at the sight of some things. Wherefore it is not altogether in our power, whether we will be stirred with affections or no: whereas actions which issue from the disposition of the will; are in the power thereof to bee performed or staied. Finally, appetite is the wils Sollicitor, & the will is appetites Controuler; what we conet according to the one, by the other we often reiect: neither is any other desire termed properly will, but that where reason and vnderstanding, or the shew of reason, prescribeth the thing desired. It may be therefore a question, whether those operations of men are to bee counted voluntary, wherein that good which is sensible prouoketh appetite, and appetite causeth action, Reason being neuer called to counsel; as when we eate or drinke, or betake our selues vn-

to

to reſt, and ſuch like. The truth is, that ſuch actions in men hauing attayned to the vſe of reaſon are voluntarie. For as the authoritie of higher powers hath force euen in thoſe things which are done without their priuitie, and are of ſo meane reckoning, that to acquaint them therewith it needeth not: in like ſort voluntarily we are ſaid to doe that alſo, which the will if it liſted might hinder from being done, although about the doing thereof wee doe not expreſſely vſe our Reaſon or Vnderſtanding, and ſo immediately apply our wils thereunto. In caſes therefore of ſuch facility, the will doth yeeld her aſſent, as it were with a kinde of ſilence, by not diſſenting; in which reſpect her force is not ſo apparant, as in expreſſe Mandates or Prohibitions, eſpecially vpon aduice and conſultation going before. Where vnderſtanding therefore needeth in thoſe things, Reaſon is the Directer of mans will, by diſcouering in action what is good. For the Lawes of wel-doing are the Dictates of right Reaſon. Children which are not as yet come vnto thoſe yeeres whereat they may haue; againe, Innocents which are excluded by naturall defect from euer hauing: Thirdly, mad men which for the preſent cannot poſſibly haue the vſe of right Reaſon to guide themſelues, haue for their guide the Reaſon that guideth other men, which are Tutors ouer them, to ſeeke and to procure their good for them. In the reſt there is that light of Reaſon, whereby good may bee knowne from euill, and which diſcouering the ſame, rightly is termed right. The will notwithſtanding doth not incline to haue or doe that which Reaſon teacheth to be good, vnleſſe the ſame doe alſo teach it to be poſſible. For albeit the appetite, being more generall, may wiſh any thing which ſeemeth good, bee it neuer ſo impoſſible: yet for ſuch things the reaſonable will of man doth neuer ſeeke. Let Reaſon teach impoſſibilitie in any thing, and the will of man doth let it goe; a thing impoſſible it doth not affect, the impoſſibilitie thereof being manifeſt. There is in the will of man naturally that freedome, whereby it is apt to take or refuſe any particular obiect whatſoeuer being preſented vnto it. Whereupon it followeth, that there is no particular obiect ſo good, but it may haue the ſhew of ſome difficultie or vnpleaſant qualitie annexed to it; in reſpect whereof the will may ſhrinke and decline it: contrariwiſe (for ſo things are blended) there is no particular euill which hath not ſome appearance of goodneſſe whereby to inſinuate it ſelfe. For euill as euill cannot be deſired: if that be deſired which is euill, the cauſe is the goodneſſe which is or ſeemeth to bee ioyned with it. Goodneſſe doth not moue by being, but by being apparant; and therefore many things are neglected which are moſt precious, onely becauſe the value of them lyeth hid. Senſible goodneſſe is moſt apparant, neere, and preſent; which cauſeth the appetite to bee therewith ſtrongly prouoked. Now purſuit and refuſall in the will doe follow, the one the affirmation, the other the negation of goodneſſe; which the vnderſtanding apprehendeth, grounding it ſelfe vpon ſenſe, vnleſſe ſome higher reaſon doe chance to teach the contrary. And if reaſon haue taught it rightly to be good, yet not ſo apparantly that the minde receiueth it with vtter impoſſibilitie of being otherwiſe; ſtill there is place left for the will to take or leaue. Whereas therefore amongſt ſo many things as are to bee done, there are ſo few, the goodneſſe whereof reaſon in ſuch ſort doth or eaſily can diſcouer; wee are not to marualle at the choice of euill, euen then when the

O mihi præteriti referat ſi Iuppiter annos!

Εἰ δ' τι ἐπὶ ταῖς ἡμέραις, πρῶτον μὲν οὐχ ὡς ἐπὶ ταῖς αὐτῶν ἡμέραις ἀλλ' ὡς ἐπ' ἀγαθῷ. *Paulò poſt.* Ἀδύνατον γὰρ ἡμᾶς ἐπὶ ταῦτα βιάζεσθαι ἐκτὸς αὐτά, ἐπεὶ ἐκεῖνά γ' ἀγαθὰ, ἐπὶ φῦλον μᾶζόν τι ταῦτα. *Alcin. de dogmat. Plat.*

the contrarie is probably knowne. Hereby it commeth to paſſe, that cuſtome inuring the minde by long practice, and ſo leauing there a ſenſible impreſſion, preuaileth more then reaſonable perſwaſion what way ſo euer. Reaſon therfore may rightly diſcerne the thing which is good, & yet the will of man not incline it ſelfe thereunto, as oft as the preiudice of ſenſible experience doth ouerſway. Nor let any man thinke that this doth make any thing for the iuſt excuſe of iniquitie. For there was neuer ſinne committed, wherein a leſſe good was not preferred before a greater, and that wilfully; which cannot bee done without the ſingular diſgrace of nature, and the vtter diſturbance of that diuine Order, whereby the preeminence of chiefeſt acceptation is by the beſt things worthily challenged. There is not that good which cõcerneth vs, but it hath euidẽce enough for it ſelfe, if reaſon were diligent to ſearch it out. Through neglect thereof, abuſed we are with the ſhew of that which is not; ſometimes the ſubtiltie of Satan inueagling vs, as it did [a] *Eue*; ſometimes the haſtines of our wils preuenting the more conſiderate aduice of ſound reaſon, as in [b] the Apoſtles, when they no ſooner ſaw what they liked not, but they forthwith were deſirous of fire from Heauen; ſometimes the very cuſtome of euil, making the heart obdurate againſt whatſoeuer inſtructions to the contrarie, as in them ouer whom our Sauiour ſpake weeping, [c] *O Ieruſalem, how often, and thou wouldſt not?* Still therefore that wherewith we ſtand blameable, and can no way excuſe it, is, In doing euill, wee preferre a leſſe good before a greater, the greatnes whereof is by reaſon inueſtigable and may be knowne. The ſearch of knowledge is a thing painfull; and the painfulneſſe of knowledge is that which maketh the will ſo hardly inclinable thereunto. The roote hereof, diuine malediction; whereby the [d] inſtruments being weakened wherewithall the ſoule (eſpecially in reaſoning) doth worke, it preferreth reſt in ignorance, before wearieſome labour to know. For a ſpurre of diligence therefore we haue a naturall thirſt after knowledge ingrafted in vs. But by reaſon of that originall weakneſſe in the inſtruments, without which the vnderſtanding part is not able in this World by diſcourſe to worke, the very conceit of painfulneſſe is as a bridle to ſtay vs. For which cauſe the Apoſtle who knew right well, that the wearineſſe of the fleſh is an heauie clog to the will, ſtriketh mightily vpon this Key, *Awake, thou that ſleepeſt, Caſt off all which preſſeth downe, Watch, labor, ſtriue to go forward & to grow in knowledge.*

a 2. Cor. 11. 3.
b Luke 9. 51.
c Mat. 23. 37.
d Sap. 9. 15. A corruptible bodie is heauy vnto the ſoule, and the earthly Manſion keepeth downe the mind that is full of cares. And hardly can we diſcern the things that are vpon Earth, & with great labour find we out the things which are before vs. Who can then ſeeke out the things that are in Heauen? Epheſ. 5. 14. Heb. 12. 1. 2. 2. Cor. 16. 13. Pro. 2. 4. Luke 13. 24.

Of the natural way of finding out Lawes by reaſon, to guide the will vnto that which is good.

8 Wherefore to returne to our former intent of diſcouering the naturall way, whereby Rules haue bin found out concerning that goodnes wherewith the wil of man ought to be moued in humane actions; As euery thing naturally and neceſſarily doth deſire the vtmoſt good and greateſt perfection wherof nature hath made it capable, euen ſo man. Our felicitie therefore being the obiect and accompliſhment of our deſire, we cannot chooſe but wiſh and couet it. All particular things which are ſubiect vnto action, the will doth ſo farre forth incline vnto, as reaſon iudgeth them the better for vs, & conſequently the more auaileable to our bliſſe. If reaſon erre, we fall into euill, and are ſo farre forth deprined of the generall perfection we ſeeke. Seeing therefore that for the framing of mens actions, the knowledge of good from euill is neceſſarie; it onely reſteth that we ſearch how this may be had. Neither muſt we ſuppoſe that there needeth one rule to know the good, and another the euill by. For he that knoweth what

what is ſtraight, doth euen thereby diſcerne what is crooked, becauſe the abſence of ſtraightneſſe in bodies capable thereof is crookednesſe. Goodneſſe in actions is like vnto ſtraitneſſe, wherefore that which is done well we terme right. For as the ſtraight way is moſt acceptable to him that trauaileth, becauſe by it he commeth ſooneſt to his iourneyes end: ſo in action, that which doth lye the cueneſt betweene vs and the end wee deſire, muſt needes bee the fitteſt for our vſe. Beſides which fitneſſe for vſe, there is alſo in rectitude, beauty, as contrariwiſe in obliquitie, deformitie. And that which is good in the actions of men, doth not onely delight as profitable, but as amiable alſo. In which conſideration the Grecians moſt diuinely haue giuen to the actiue perfection of men, a name expreſſing both beautie and goodneſſe, becauſe goodneſſe in ordinary ſpeech is for the moſt part applyed onely to that which is beneficiall. But we in the name of goodneſſe, doe heere imploy both. And of diſcerning goodneſſe there are but theſe two wayes; the one the knowledge of the cauſes whereby it is made ſuch; the other the obſeruation of thoſe ſignes and tokens, which being annexed alwayes vnto goodneſſe, argue that where they are found, there alſo goodneſſe is, although we know not the cauſe by force whereof it is there. The former of theſe is the moſt ſure and infallible way, but ſo hard that all ſhun it, and had rather walke as men doe in the darke by hap hazard, then tread ſo long and intricate Mazes for knowledge ſake. As therefore Phyſicians are many times forced to leaue ſuch Methods of curing as themſelues know to bee the fitteſt, and being ouer-ruled by their Patients impatiency are faine to try the beſt they can, in taking that way of cure, which the cured will yeeld vnto: In like ſort, conſidering how the caſe doth ſtand with this preſent age full of tongue and weake of braine, behold wee yeeld to the ſtreame thereof, into the cauſes of goodneſſe we will not make any curious or deepe inquirie; to touch them now and then it ſhall bee ſufficient, when they are ſo neere at hand that eaſily they may be conceiued without any farre remoued diſcourſe: that way we are contented to proue, which being the worſe in it ſelfe, is notwithſtanding now by reaſon of common imbecility the fitter and likelier to be brookt. Signes and tokens to know good by, are of ſundry kindes: ſome more certaine, and ſome leſſe. The moſt certaine token of euident goodneſſe is, if the generall perſwaſion of all men do ſo account it. And therefore a common receiued error is neuer vterly ouerthrowne, till ſuch times as we goe from ſignes vnto cauſes, and ſhew ſome manifeſt roote or fountayne thereof common vnto all, whereby it may cleerly appeare how it hath come to paſſe that ſo many haue beene ouer-ſeene. In which caſe ſurmiſes and ſleight probabilities will not ſerue; becauſe the vniuerſall conſent of men is the perfecteſt and ſtrongeſt in this kind which comprehendeth onely the ſignes and tokens of goodneſſe. Things caſuall do varie, and that which a man doth but chance to thinke well of, cannot ſtill haue the like hap. Wherefore although wee know not the cauſe, yet thus much wee may know, that ſome neceſſary cauſe there is, whenſoeuer the iudgements of all men generally or for the moſt part runne one and the ſame way, eſpecially in matters of naturall diſcourſe. For of things neceſſarily and naturally done there is no more affirmed but this, [a] *They keep either alwaies or for the moſt part one tenure.* The generall and perpetuall voyce of men is as the ſentence of God himſelfe.

Τῶν γὰρ ἐξ ἀνάγκης καὶ κατὰ φύσιν γινομένων, ταὐτὸν ἕνα τρόπον ἢ ἐπὶ τὸ πολὺ γίνεσθαι φαμέν. Κρίνει γὰρ ἕκαστα ὀρθῶς ὁ καλός. Ariſtot. ad. l. 1.

Καταλαμβάνεται.

[a] Καὶ ἐπὶ τῶν ἀπὸ τύχης γινομένων ἐπὶ τὸ πολὺ ὁμοίως φαίνεται.

selfe. [a] For that which all men haue at all times learned, Nature her selfe must needes haue taught: and God being the Author of Nature, her voyce is but his instrument. By her from him we receiue what soeuer in such sort we learne. Infinite duties there are, the goodnes whereof is by this rule sufficiently manifested, although wee had no other warrant besides to approoue them. The Apostle S. Paul hauing speech concerning the Heathen saith of them, [b] *They are a law vnto themselues.* His meaning is, that by force of the light of reason, wherewith God illuminateth euery one which commeth into the world, men being inabled to know Truth from falshood, and good from euill, doe thereby learne in many things what the will of God is, which will himselfe not reuealing by any extraordinarie means vnto them, but they by naturall discourse attayning the knowledge thereof, seeme the makers of those Lawes which indeed are his, and they but onely the finders of them out. A Law therfore generally taken, is a directiue rule vnto goodnesse of operation. The rule of diuine operations outward, is the definitiue appointment of Gods owne Wisedome set downe within himselfe. The rule of naturall agents that worke by simple necessity, is the determination of the Wisedome of God, knowne to God himselfe the principall director of them, but not vnto them that are directed to execute the same. The rule of naturall agents which worke after a sort of their owne accord, as the beasts doe, is the iudgement of common sense or fancie concerning the sensible goodnesse of those obiects wher with they are moued. The rule of ghostly or immateriall natures, as Spirits and Angels, is their intuitiue intellectuall iudgement concerning the amiable beauty and high goodnes of that obiect, which with vnspeakeable ioy and delight doth set them on worke. The rule of voluntary agents on earth, is the sentence that reason giueth concerning the goodnesse of those things which they are to doe. And the sentences which reason giueth, are some more, some lesse generall, before it come to define in particular actions what is good. The main principles of reason are in themselues apparent. For to make nothing euident of it selfe vnto mans vnderstanding, were to take away all possibilitie of knowing any thing. And herein that of *Theophrastus* is true, *They that seek a reason of all things doe vtterly ouerthrow reason.* In euery kind of knowledge some such grounds there are, as that being proposed, the mind doth presently imbrace them as free from all possibilitie of error, cleere and manifest without proofe. In which kind, axiomes or principles more generall are such as this, *That the greater good is to be chosen before the lesse.* If therefore it should be demanded, what reason there is why the will of man, which doth necessarily shun harme, and couet what soeuer is pleasant and sweete, should bee commaunded to count the pleasures of sinne, gall, and notwithstanding the bitter accidents wherewith vertuous actions are compast, yet still to reioyce and delight in them; surely this could neuer stand with reason: but that Wisdome thus prescribing, groundeth her Lawes vpon an infallible rule of comparison, which is, that small difficulties, when exceeding great good is sure to ensue; and on the other side momentanie benefites, when the hurt which they draw after them is vnspeakeable, are not at all to be respected. This rule is the ground whereupon the Wisdome of the Apostle buildeth a Law, inioyning patience vnto himselfe, *The present lightnesse of our affliction worketh vnto vs euen with abundance vpon abundance an eternall*

waight

[a] *Non priscæ errori cedere, vbi omnes idem opinantur.* Montcat. in 1. Polit. *Quicquid in duobus individuis vnius speciei communiter inest, id causam communem habet aptitudinis, quæ est eorum individuorum specialis & natura. Idem. Quod à tota aliqua specie fit, vniuersalis particularisque natura fit instinctu.* Ficin. de Christ. Relig. *Si proferre cupis, primo firmè id verum puta quod sana mens omnium hominum attestatur.* Cusa. in compend. cap. 1. *Non licet naturale vniuersalisque hominum iudicium falsum vnumquam existimare.* Telef. Ὅ γὰρ πᾶσι δοκεῖ, τοῦτο εἶναι φαμέν. ὃ δὲ ἀναιρῶν τοῦτον τὸν λόγον, οὐδὲν ἂν οὐδέποτε ὑγιὲς εἴποι. Arist. Eth. 10. cap. 2.

[b] Rom. 2. 14.

Ἀνάγκη ζητοῦντας λόγον, ἀπόδειξιν λέγειν. Theoph. in Metaph.

1. Cor. 4. 17.

maiesty of glory, while we looke not on the things which are seene, but on the things which are not seen. For the things which are seen are temporal, but the things which are not seene eternall. Therefore Christianitie to be embraced, whatsoeuer calamities in those times it was accompanyed withall. Vpon the same ground our Sauiour proueth the Law most reasonable, that doth forbid those crimes which men for gaines sake fall into. For a man to win the World, if it be with the losse of his soule, what benefit or good is it? Axiomes little generall, yet so manifest that they need no further proofe, are such as these, *God to be worshipped, Parents to be honored, Others to be vsed by vs as we ourselues would by them.* Such things, as soone as they are alleaged, all men acknowledge to be good; they require no proofe or further discourse to bee assured of their goodnesse. Notwithstanding whatsoeuer such principle there is, it was at the first found out by discourse, and drawne from out of the very bowels of Heauen and Earth. For we are to note, that things in the World are to vs discernable, not onely so farre forth as serueth for our vitall preseruation, but further also in a two-fold higher respect. For first if all other vses were vtterly taken away; yet the mind of man being by nature speculatiue and delighted with contemplation in it selfe, they were to bee knowne euen for meere knowledge and vnderstandings sake. Yea further besides this, the knowledge of euery the least thing in the World, hath in it a second peculiar benefit vnto vs, in as much as it serueth to minister Rules, Canons, and Lawes for men to direct those actions by, which wee properly terme humane. This did the very Heathens themselues obscurely insinuate, by making *Themis* which we call *Ius* or Right, to be the Daughter of Heauen and Earth. We know things either as they are in themselues, or as they ate in mutuall relation one to another. The knowledge of that which man is in reference vnto himselfe, and other things in relation vnto man, I may iustly terme the Mother of all those principles, which are as it were edicts, statutes, and decrees in that law of nature, whereby humane actions are framed. First therefore hauing obserued that the best things, where they are not hindered, doe still produce the best operations; (for which cause where many things are to concurre vnto one effect, the best is in all congruitie of reason to guide the residue, that it preuailing most, the worke principally done by it may haue greatest perfection:) when hereupon we come to obserue in our selues, of what excellencie our soules are in comparison of our bodies, and the diuiner part in relation vnto the baser of our soules; seeing that all these concurre in producing humane actions, it cannot bee well vnlesse the chiefest doe command and direct the rest. The soule then ought to conduct the bodie, & the spirit of our minde the soule. This is therefore the first Law, whereby the highest power of the minde requireth generall obedience at the hands of all the rest concurring with it vnto action. Touching the seuerall graund Mandates, which being imposed by the vnderstanding faculty of the mind, must be obeyed by the will of man, they are by the same method found out, whether they import our dutie towards God or towards man. Touching the one, I may not heere stand to open, by what degrees of discourse the minds euen of meere naturall men haue attayned to know, not onely that there is a God, but also what power, force, wisedome and other properties that God hath, and how all things depend on him. This being therefore presupposed, from that knowne

Matth. 16. 26.

Arist. Polit. 1. cap. 5.

relation

relation which God hath vnto vs[a] as vnto children, and vnto all good things as vnto effects, whereof himselfe is the[b] principall cause, these axiomes and Lawes naturall concerning our dutie haue arisen; *That in all things we go about, his aid is by Praier to be craued*; *That he cannot haue sufficient honor done vnto him, but the vttermost of that we can do to honor him we must*; which is in effect the same that we read, *Thou shalt loue the Lord thy God with all thy heart, with all thy soule, and with all thy mind.* Which Law our Sauiour doth terme the [f] *First and the great Commandement.* Touching the next, which as our Sauiour addeth is like vnto this (he meaneth in amplitude and largenes, in as much as it is the root out of which all Lawes of duty to men-ward haue growne, as out of the former all offices of Religion towards God) the like naturall inducement hath brought men to know, that it is their duty no lesse to loue others then themselues. For seeing those things which are equal, must needs all haue one measure: if I cannot but wish to receiue all good, euen as much at euery mans hand as any man can wish vnto his own soule; how should I look to haue any part of my desire herein satisfied, vnlesse my selfe bee carefull to satisfie the like desire, which is vndoubtedly in other men, we all being of one and the same nature? To haue any thing offered them repugnant to this desire, must needes in all respects grieue them as much as mee: so that if I doe harme, I must looke to suffer; there being no reason that others should shew greater measure of loue to mee, then they haue by mee shewed vnto them. My desire therefore to be loued of my equals in nature as much as possible may be, imposeth vpon me a naturall dutie of bearing to them-ward fully the like affection. From which relation of equalitie betweene our selues and them that are as our selues, what seuerall rules and Canons naturall reason hath drawne for direction of life, no man is ignorant; as namely, [g] *That because we would take no harme, we must therefore do none*; *That sith we would not be in any thing extremely dealt with, we must our selues auoid all extremitie in our dealings*; *That from all violence and wrong we are vtterly to abstaine*, with such like; which further to wade in would bee tedious, and to our present purpose not altogether so necessarie, seeing that on these two generall heads already mentioned, all other specialties are dependent. Wherefore the naturall measure whereby to iudge our doings, is the sentence of reason, determining and setting downe what is good to bee done. Which sentence is either mandatorie, shewing what must bee done; or else permissiue, declaring onely what may be done; or thirdly admonitorie, opening what is the most conuenient for vs to doe. The first taketh place, where the comparison doth stand altogether betweene doing & not doing of one thing which in it selfe is absolutely good or euill; as it had beene for *Ioseph* to yeeld or not to yeeld to the impotent desire of his lewd Mistris, the one euill, the other good simply. The second is, when of diuers things euill, all being not euitable, wee are permitted to take one; which one sauing only in case of so great vrgency were not otherwise to bee taken; as in the matter of diuorce amongst the Iewes. The last, when of diuers things good, one is principall and most eminent; as in their act who sold their possessions and layd the price at the Apostles feete, which possessions they might haue retained vnto themselues without sinne; againe in the Apostle Saint *Pauls* owne choyce to maintayne himselfe by his owne labour, whereas in liuing

a Οὐ μόνῳ θεὸς πάντων ἀνθρώπων. Plat. in Theæt.

b Ὅτι γὰρ θεὸς ἁπάντων τὸ ἄριστον πάντων αἴτιος ἀναγκαῖον. Arist. Metap. lib. 1. cap. 2.

c Αλλ' ὁ δεύτερος τούτῳ γε δὴ πάντες ἴσως ἐκ τοῦ βραχυ συμφορᾶς μετέχουσιν, ἴσα πάντα ἀμῷ καὶ μικρῷ καὶ μεγάλῳ ποιοῦμεν δεῖ ἀντιπαλλεῖν. Plat. in Tim.

d Arist. Ethic. lib. 8. cap. vlt.

e Deut. 6. 5.

f Mat. 22. 38.

g *Quod quis in se approbat, in alio reprobare non potest.* l. in arrogan. C. de inof. test. *Quod quisque iuris in alium statuerit, ipsum quoque eodem vti debere.* l. quod quisq. *Ab omni penitus iniuria atque vi abstinendum.* l. 1 §. 1. quod vi, aut clam.

Matth. 22. 40. On these two Commandements hang the whole law.

Gen. 39. 9.

Marke 10. 4.

Acts 4. 37.

Acts 5. 4.

2 Thes. 3. 8.

liuing by the Churches maintenance, as others did, there had beene no offence committed. In goodnes therefore there is a latitude or extent, whereby it commeth to paſſe that euen of good actions ſome are better then other ſome; whereas otherwiſe one man could not excell another, but all ſhould bee either abſolutely good, as hitting iumpe that indiuiſible point or center wherein goodneſſe conſiſteth, or elſe miſſing it, they ſhould be excluded out of the number of well-doers. Degrees of wel-doing there could be none, except perhaps in the ſeldomneſſe and oftenneſſe of doing well. But the nature of goodneſſe being thus ample, a Law is properly that which reaſon in ſuch ſort defineth to bee good that it muſt be done. And the Law of Reaſon or Humane Nature is that, which men by diſcourſe of naturall reaſon haue rightly found out themſelues to be all for euer bound vnto in their actions. Lawes of Reaſon haue theſe marks to be knowne by. Such as keepe them, reſemble moſt liuely in their voluntarie actions, that very manner of working which Nature her ſelfe doth neceſſarily obſerue in the courſe of the whole World. The works of Nature are all behoouefull, beautifull, without ſuperfluitie or defect: euen ſo theirs, if they be ſo framed according to that which the Law of Reaſon teacheth. Secondly, thoſe lawes are inueſtigable by reaſon, without the help of reuelation ſupernaturall and diuine. Finally, in ſuch ſort they are inueſtigable, that the knowledge of them is generall, the World hath alwaies beene acquainted with them; according to that which one in *Sophocles* obſerueth concerning a branch of this Law, *It is no Child of two daies or yeſterdaies birth, but hath beene no man knoweth how long ſithence.* It is not agreed vpon by one, or two, or few, but by all: which we may not ſo vnderſtand, as if euery particular man in the whole World did know and confeſſe whatſoeuer the Law of Reaſon doth containe; but this Law is ſuch, that being propoſed, no man can reiect it as vnreaſonable and vniuſt. Againe, there is nothing in it, but any man (hauing naturall perfection of wit, and ripeneſſe of iudgement) may by labour and trauaile find out. And to conclude, the generall principles thereof are ſuch, as it is not eaſie to find men ignorant of them. Law Rationall therefore, which men commonly vſe to call the Law of Nature, meaning thereby the Law which humane Nature knoweth it ſelfe in reaſon vniuerſally bound vnto, which alſo for that cauſe may be termed moſt fitly the law of Reaſon: this Law, I ſay, comprehendeth al thoſe things which men by the light of their naturall vnderſtanding euidently know, or at leaſtwiſe may know, to be beſeeming or vnbeſeeming, vertuous or vicious, good or euill for them to doe. Now, although it be true, which ſome haue ſaid, that whatſoeuer is done amiſſe, the Law of Nature and Reaſon therby is tranſgreſt; becauſe euen thoſe offences which are by their ſpeciall qualities breaches of ſupernaturall Lawes, doe alſo, for that they are generally euill, violate in generall that principle of Reaſon, which willeth vniuerſally to flie from euill: yet doe we not therefore ſo far extend the Law of Reaſon, as to containe in it all manner Lawes whereunto reaſonable creatures are bound; but (as hath beene ſhewed) we reſtraine it to thoſe onely duties, which all men by force of naturall wit either doe or might vnderſtand to be ſuch duties as concerne all men. *Certayne halfe-waking men there are* (as Saint *Auguſtine* noteth) *who neither altogether aſleepe in folly, nor yet thorowly awake in the light of true vnderſtanding, haue thought that there is not at all any thing iuſt and righteous in it ſelfe: but looke wherewith Nations are inured, the*

ὁ γὰρ τι πῶν τὸ κἀχθὲς, ἀλλ' οὐ ποτε ζῇ τοῦτο κοὐδεὶς οἶδεν ἐξ ὅτου φάνη, *Soph. Anti.*

Th. 1. 2. q. 94. art. 3. Omnia peccata ſunt in vniuerſum contra rationem & naturalem, Aug. de Ciuit. Dei, lib. 12. cap. 1. Omne vitium naturam nocet, ac per hoc contra naturam eſt De Doct. Chriſt. *lib. 3. cap. 14.*

the ſame they take to be right and iuſt. Whereupon their Concluſion is, that ſeeing each ſort of people hath a different kinde of right from other, and that which is right of it owne nature, muſt be euery where one and the ſame, therefore in it ſelfe there is nothing right. Theſe good folke (ſaith he, *that I may not trouble their wits with rehearſall of too many things*) *haue not looked ſo farre into the world as to perceiue, that*, Doe as thou wouldeſt be done vnto, *is a ſentence which all Nations vnder heauen are agreed vpon. Refer this ſentence to the loue of God, and it extinguiſheth all haynous crimes: refer it to the loue of thy Neighbour, and all grieuous wrongs it baniſheth out of the world.* Wherefore, as touching the Law of Reaſon, this was (it ſeemeth) Saint *Auguſtines* iudgement, namely, that there are in it ſome things which ſtand as Principles vniuerſally agreed vpon: and that out of thoſe Principles, which are in themſelues euident, the greateſt morall duties we owe towards God or Man, may without any great difficultie be concluded. If then it be here demanded, by what meanes it ſhould come to paſſe (the greateſt part of the Law morall being ſo eaſie for all men to know) that ſo many thouſands of men notwithſtanding haue beene ignorant euen of principall morall duties, not imagining the breach of them to be ſinne: I denie not, but lewd and wicked cuſtome, beginning perhaps at the firſt amongſt few, afterwards ſpreading into greater multitudes, and ſo continuing from time to time, may be of force euen in plaine things to ſmother the light of naturall vnderſtanding, becauſe men will not bend their wits to examine, whether things wherewith they haue beene accuſtomed, be good or euill. For examples ſake, that groſſer kinde of Heathenish Idolatrie, whereby they worſhipped the very works of their owne hands, was an abſurditie to reaſon ſo palpable, that the Prophet *Dauid* comparing Idols and Idolaters together, maketh almoſt no oddes betweene them, but the one in a manner as much without wit and ſenſe as the other, *They that make them are like vnto them, and ſo are all that truſt in them.* That wherein an Idolater doth ſeeme ſo abſurd and fooliſh, is by the Wiſeman thus expreſt, *He is not aſhamed to ſpeake vnto that which hath no life, He calleth on him that is weake, for health; He prayeth for life vnto him, which is dead; Of him, which hath no experience, he requireth helpe; For his iourney he ſueth to him, which is not able to goe; For gayne, and worke, and ſucceſſe in his affaires, he ſeeketh furtherance of him that hath no manner of power.* The cauſe of which ſenſeleſſe ſtupiditie is afterwards imputed to cuſtome: *When a father mourned grieuouſly for his ſonne that was taken away ſuddenly, he made an Image for him that was once dead, whom now he worſhipped as a God, ordayning to his ſeruants ceremonies and ſacrifices. Thus by proceſſe of time this wicked cuſtome preuailed, and was kept as a Law*; the authoritie of Rulers, the ambition of Crafts-men, and ſuch like meanes thruſting forward the ignorant, & increaſing their ſuperſtition. Vnto this which the Wiſeman hath ſpoken, ſomewhat beſides may be added. For whatſoeuer we haue hitherto taught, or ſhal hereafter, concerning the force of mans naturall vnderſtanding, this wee alwayes deſire withall to be vnderſtood, that there is no kinde of facultie or power in man or any other creature, which can rightly perform the functions allotted to it, without perpetuall ayde and concurrence of that ſupreme cauſe of all things. The benefit whereof as oft as wee cauſe God in his iuſtice to with-draw, there can no other thing follow then that which the Apoſtle noteth, euen men indued with

Pſal. 115. 18.

Wiſd. 13. 17.

Wiſd. 14. 12.

with the light of Reaſon to walke notwithſtanding *in the vanitie of their minde, having their cogitations darkened, and being ſtrangers from the life of God through the ignorance which is in them, becauſe of the hardneſſe of their hearts.* And this cauſe is mentioned by the Prophet *Eſay*, ſpeaking of the ignorance of Idolaters, who ſee not how the manifeſt Law of Reaſon condemneth their groſſe iniquitie & ſinne. They haue not in them, ſaith he, ſo much wit as to thinke, *Shall I bow to the Stocke of a tree? All Knowledge and Vnderſtanding is taken from them. For God hath ſhut their eyes that they cannot ſee.* That which we ſay in this cauſe of Idolatry, ſerueth for all other things, wherein the like kind of generall blindneſſe hath preuailed againſt the manifeſt Lawes of Reaſon. Within the compaſſe of which Lawes we doe not onely comprehend whatſoeuer may be eaſily knowne to belong to the duty of all men; but euen whatſoeuer may poſſibly be knowne to be of that qualitie, ſo that the ſame be by *neceſſarie* conſequence deduced out of cleere and manifeſt principles. For if once wee deſcend vnto probable collections what is conuenient for men, we are then in the Territorie where free and arbitrarie determinations, the Territorie where humane Lawes take place, which Lawes are after to be conſidered.

Ephes. 4. 17.

Eſay 44. 18, 19.

9 Now the due obſeruation of this Law which Reaſon teacheth vs, cannot but be effectuall vnto their great good that obſerue the ſame. For wee ſee the whole World and each part thereof ſo compacted, that as long as each thing performeth onely that worke which is naturall vnto it, it thereby preſerueth both other things, and alſo it ſelfe. Contrariwiſe, let any principall thing, as the Sunne, the Moone, any one of the Heauens or Elements, but once ceaſe or faile, or ſwarue; and who doth not eaſily conceiue that the ſequell thereof would be ruine both to it ſelfe, and whatſoeuer dependeth on it? And is it poſſible that man, being not onely the nobleſt Creature in the World, but euen a very World in himſelfe, his tranſgreſſing the Law of his Nature ſhould draw no manner of harme after it? Yes, *tribulation and anguiſh vnto euerie ſoule that doth euill.* Good doth follow vnto all things by obſeruing the courſe of their nature, and on the contrarie ſide euill by not obſeruing it: but not vnto naturall Agents that good which we call *Reward*, not that euill which are properly tearmed *Puniſhments*. The reaſon whereof is, becauſe amongſt creatures in this World, only mans obſeruation of the Law of his nature is *Righteouſneſſe*, onely mans tranſgreſſion *Sinne*. And the reaſon of this is, the difference in his manner of obſeruing or tranſgreſſing the Law of his nature. Hee doth not otherwiſe then voluntarily the one or the other. What wee doe againſt our wills, or conſtrainedly, wee are not properly ſaid to doe it; becauſe the motiue cauſe of doing it is not in our ſelues, but carrieth vs, as if the wind ſhould driue a Feather in the Aire, wee no whit furthering that whereby wee are driuen. In ſuch caſes therefore the euill which is done, mooueth compaſſion; men are pitied for it, as being rather miſerable in ſuch reſpect then culpable. Some things are likewiſe done by men, though not through outward force and impulſion, though not againſt, yet without their wils; as in alienation of mind, or any the like inculpable want or abſence of wit and iudgement. For which cauſe, no man did euer thinke the hurtfull actions of furious Men and Innocents to bee puniſhable. Againe, ſome things wee doe neither againſt nor without, and yet not ſimply and mainly

The benefit of keeping that law which reaſon teacheth.

with our wills, but with our wills in ſuch ſort moued, that albeit there be no impoſſibilitie but that wee might, neuertheleſſe wee are not ſo eaſily able to doe otherwiſe. In this conſideration one euill deede is made more pardonable then another. Finally, that which we doe being euill, is notwithſtanding by ſo much more pardonable, by how much the exigence of ſo doing, or the difficultie of doing otherwiſe is greater; vnleſſe this neceſſitie or difficultie haue originally riſen from our ſelues. It is no excuſe therefore vnto him, who being drunke committeth inceſt, and alleageth that his wits were not his owne; in as much as himſelfe might haue choſen whether his wits ſhould by that meane haue beene taken from him. Now rewards and puniſhments doe alwayes preſuppoſe ſome thing willingly done well or ill, without which reſpect though wee may ſometimes receiue good or harme, yet then the one is onely a benefite, and not a reward; the other ſimply an hurt, not a puniſhment. From the ſundrie diſpoſitions of mans will, which is the roote of all his actions, there groweth varietie in the ſequele of rewards and puniſhments, which are by theſe and the like rules meaſured: *Take away the will, and all acts are equall: That which we doe not and would doe, is commonly accepted as done.* By theſe and the like Rules mens actions are determined of and iudged, whether they be in their owne nature rewardable or puniſhable. Rewards and puniſhments are not receiued, but at the hands of ſuch as being aboue vs, haue power to examine and iudge our deedes. How men come to haue this authoritie one ouer another in externall actions, wee ſhall more diligently examine in that which followeth. But for this preſent, ſo much all doe acknowledge, that ſith euery mans heart and conſcience doth like good or euill, euen ſecretly committed and knowne to none but it ſelfe, either like or diſallow it ſelfe, and accordingly either reioyce, very nature trembling as it were in certaine hope of reward, or elſe grieue as it were in a ſenſe of future puniſhment; neither of which can in this caſe bee looked for from any other, ſauing onely from him, who diſcerneth and iudgeth the very ſecrets of all hearts: therefore he is the onely Rewarder and Reuenger of all ſuch actions, though not of ſuch actions onely, but of all whereby the Law of nature is broken, whereof himſelfe is Author. For which cauſe, the Romane Lawes, called the Lawes of the twelue Tables, requiring offices of inward affection, which the eye of man cannot reach vnto, threaten the Neglecters of them with none but diuine puniſhment.

Voluntate ſublatâ, omnem actum parem eſſe, l. paſſim. & C. de Iudic. Ἐκούσια τὰ μὴ κατὰ τὴν ἐπιτάττουσαν προαίρεσιν πραττόμενα l. ſi quis in Teſtament.

Deus cæſi adulteris, pietatem adhibento. Qui ſceleris fauit, Deus ipſe vindex erit.

How Reaſon doth leade men vnto the making of humane Lawes, whereby politique ſocieties are gouerned, and to agreement about Lawes, whereby the Fellowſhip or Communion of independent ſocietie ſtandeth.

Ἐπεὶ γὰρ ὁ μεγαλόψυχος τὰ μὲν ἄλλα φίλος πανὶ μάλιστα ἐστὶ καὶ ἀδόκητον ἐπὶ δόκησιν πράττει μετὰ παρρησίας πρὸς ἀλλήλους ἢ μετὰ εἰρωνείας.

Ariſt. Rhet. 1.

To that which hitherto we haue ſet downe, is (I hope) ſufficient to ſhew their boldneſſe, which imagine that Religion & Vertue are only artes men will accounte of them, that we might make as much account, if we would, of the contrarie, without any harme vnto our ſelues, and that in nature they are as indifferent as the other. We ſee then how nature it ſelfe teacheth Lawes and Statutes meete for men. The lawes which haue bin hitherto mentioned, do bind men abſolutely, euen as they are men, although they haue neuer any ſettled fellowſhip, neuer vſe ſolemne agreement amongſt themſelues what to do or not to do. But ſeeing that we are not by our ſelues ſufficient to furniſh our ſelues with conuenient ſtore of things needfull for ſuch a life as our nature doth deſire, a life fit for the dignitie of man: therefore to ſupply thoſe defects and imperfections which are in vs, liuing ſingle and ſolely by our ſelues; we are naturally induced

to

to ſeeke communion and fellowſhip with others. This was the cauſe of mens vniting themſelues at the firſt in politique ſocieties, which ſocieties could not bee without gouernment, nor gouernment without a diſtinct kind of law from that which hath beene already declared. Two foundations there are which beare vp publique ſocieties; the one, a naturall inclination, whereby all men deſire ſociable life and fellowſhip; the other, an order expreſly or ſecretly agreed vpon, touching the manner of their vnion in liuing together. The later is that which we call the law of a common-weale, the very ſoule of a politique body, the parts whereof are by law animated, held together, and ſet on worke in ſuch actions as the common good requireth. Lawes politique, ordained for externall order and regiment amongſt men, are neuer framed as they ſhould be, vnleſſe preſuming the will of man to be inwardly obſtinate, rebellious, and auerſe from all obedience vnto the ſacred Lawes of his nature; in a word, vnleſſe preſuming man to be in regard of his depraued minde, little better then a wild beaſt, they doe accordingly prouide notwithſtanding ſo to frame his outward actions, that they bee no hinderance vnto the common good for which ſocieties are inſtituted: vnleſſe they do this, they are not perfect. It reſteth therfore that we conſider how nature findeth out ſuch lawes of gouernment, as ſerue to direct euen nature depraued to a right end. All men deſire to leade in this world an happy life. The life is led moſt happily, wherin all vertue is exerciſed without impediment or let. The Apoſtle in exhorting men to contentment, although they haue in this world no more then verie bare food and raiment, giueth vs thereby to vnderſtand, that thoſe are euen the loweſt of things neceſſary, that if we ſhould be ſtripped of all thoſe things without which we might poſſibly be, yet theſe muſt be left; that deſtitution in theſe is ſuch an impediment, as till it be remoued, ſuffereth not the mind of man to admit any other care. For this cauſe firſt God aſſigned *Adam* maintenance of life, & then appointed him a law to obſerue. For this cauſe after men began to grow to a number, the firſt thing we reade they gaue themſelues vnto, was the tilling of the earth, and the feeding of cattle. Hauing by this meane whereon to liue, the principall actions of their life afterward are noted by the exerciſe of their religion. True it is, that the Kingdome of God muſt be the firſt thing in our purpoſes and deſires. But in as much as righteous life preſuppoſeth life, in as much as to liue vertuouſly it is impoſſible except we liue; therefore the firſt impediment, which naturally we endeuour to remoue, is penury and want of things without which we cannot liue. Vnto life many implements are neceſſary; moe, if we ſeek (as all men naturally do) ſuch a life as hath in it ioy, comfort, delight, & pleaſure. To this end we ſee how quickly ſundry Arts Mechanicall were found out in the verie prime of the World. As things of greateſt neceſſitie are alwayes firſt prouided for, ſo things of greateſt dignitie are moſt accounted of by all ſuch as iudge rightly. Although therefore Riches be a thing which euery man wiſheth; yet no man of iudgement can eſteeme it better to bee rich, then wiſe, vertuous, and religious. If wee bee both or eyther of theſe, it is not becauſe we are ſo borne. For into the world we come as empty of the one as of the other, as naked in minde as wee are in body. Both which neceſſities of man had at the firſt no other helpes and ſupplies, then onely domeſticall; ſuch as that which the Prophet implieth, ſaying, *Can a mother forget her childe?* Such as that

2. Tim. 6. 8.

Gen. 1. 29.
Gen. 2. 17.
Gen. 4. 2.
Gen. 4. 26.

Mat. 6. 33.

Gen. 4. 20. 21. 22

Eſay 49. 15.

1.Tim.5.8. which the Apoſtle mentioneth, ſaying, *He that eareth not for his owne is worſe then an Infidell*; ſuch as that concerning ABRAHAM, *Abraham will command his ſonnes and his houſhold after him, that they keepe the way of the Lord.* But neyther
Gen.18.19. that which we learne of our ſelues, nor that which others teach vs can preuayle, where wickednesse and malice haue taken deepe roote. If therefore when there was but as yet one onely Family in the World, no meanes of inſtruction humane or diuine, could prevent effuſion of bloud: how could it bee choſen but
Gen.4.8. that when Families were multiplied and increaſed vpon earth, after ſeparation, each prouiding for it ſelfe, enuy, ſtrife, contention, and violence, muſt grow amongſt them? For hath not nature furniſht man with wit and valour, and as it were with armour, which may bee vſed as well vnto extreame euill as good?
Gen.6.5. yea, were they not vſed by the reſt of the world vnto euill; vnto the contrarie
Gen.5. onely by *Seth, Enoch*, and thoſe few the reſt in that line? We all make complaint of the iniquitie of our times: not vniuſtly; for the dayes are euill. But compare them with thoſe times, wherein there were no ciuill ſocieties, with thoſe times wherein there was as yet no manner of publique regiment eſtabliſhed, with thoſe times wherein there were not aboue eight righteous perſons liuing
2.Pet.2.5. vpon the face of the earth: and wee haue ſurely good cauſe to thinke that God hath bleſſed vs exceedingly, and hath made vs behold moſt happy daies. To take away all ſuch mutuall greeuances, iniuries and wrongs, there was no way but onely by growing vpon compoſition and agreement amongſt themſelues, by ordaining ſome kinde of gouernement publique, and by yeelding themſelues ſubiect thereunto; that vnto whom they graunted authority to rule and gouerne, by them the peace, tranquility, and happy eſtate of the reſt might be procured. Men alwayes knew that when force and iniury was offered, they might be defendours of themſelues; they knew that howſoeuer men may ſeeke their owne commoditie, yet if this were done with iniury vnto others, it was not to be ſuffered, but by all men and by all good meanes to be withſtood; finally, they knew that no man might in reaſon take vpon him to determine his own right, and according to his owne determination proceede in maintenance thereof, in as much as euery man is towards himſelfe, and them whom he greatly affecteth, partial; and therefore that ſtrifes and troubles would be endleſſe, except they gaue their common conſent all to be ordered by ſome whom they ſhould agree vpon: without which conſent, there were no reaſon that one man ſhould take vpon him to be Lord or Iudge ouer another; becauſe although there be, according to the opinion of ſome verie great and iudicious men, a kinde of naturall right in the noble, wiſe, and vertuous, to gouerne them which are of ſeruile
Ariſt.Pol.lib.3. diſpoſition; neuertheleſſe for manifeſtation of this their right, and mens more
c.4. peaceable contentment on both ſides, the aſſent of them who are to bee gouerned, ſeemeth neceſſary. To Fathers within their priuate Families, Nature hath giuen a ſupreme power; for which cauſe we ſee throughout the World, euen from the firſt foundation thereof, all men haue euer bin taken as Lords and lawfull Kings in their owne houſes. Howbeit ouer a whole grand multitude, hauing no ſuch dependency vpon any one, and conſiſting of ſo many Families as euery politique ſociety in the world doth, impoſſible it is that any ſhould haue complete lawfull power, but by conſent of men, or immediate appoynt-

ment

ment of God; becauſe not hauing the naturall ſuperiority of Fathers, their power muſt needes be eyther vſurped, and then vnlawfull; or if lawfull, then eyther granted or conſented vnto by them ouer whom they exerciſe the ſame, or elſe giuen extraordinarily from God, vnto whom all the World is ſubiect. It is no vnprobable opinion therefore which the Arch-Philoſopher was of, that as the chiefeſt perſon in euery houſhold was alwayes as it were a King; ſo when numbers of houſholds ioyned themſelues in Ciuil Societies together, Kings were the firſt kind of Gouernors amongſt them. Which is alſo (as it ſeemeth) the reaſon, why the name of *Father* continued ſtill in them, who of Fathers were made Rulers: as alſo the ancient cuſtome of Gouernors to doe as *Melchiſedec*, and being Kings to exerciſe the office of Prieſts, which Fathers did at the firſt, grew perhaps by the ſame occaſion. Howbeit not this the onely kind of Regiment that hath bin receiued in the World. The inconueniences of one kind, haue cauſed ſundry other to be deuiſed. So that in a word all publike Regiment, of what kind ſoeuer, ſeemeth euidently to haue riſen from deliberate aduice, conſultation and compoſition betweene men, iudging it conuenient and behoofefull, there being no impoſſibilitie in nature conſidered by it ſelfe, but that men might haue liued without any publike Regiment. Howbeit the corruption of our nature being preſuppoſed, we may not denie but that the Law of Nature doth now require of neceſſity ſome kind of Regiment; ſo that to bring things vnto the firſt courſe they were in, and vtterly to take away all kind of publike Gouernment in the World, were apparantly to ouerturn the whole World. The caſe of mans nature ſtanding therefore as it doth, ſome kind of Regiment the Law of nature doth require, yet the kinds thereof being many, nature tyeth not to any one, but leaueth the choice as a thing arbitrary. At the firſt when ſome certaine kind of Regiment was once approued, it may be that nothing was then further thought vpon for the manner of gouerning, but all permitted vnto their wiſdome and diſcretion which were to rule;* till by experience they found this for all parts verie inconuenient, ſo as the thing which they had deuiſed for a remedie, did indeed but increaſe the ſore which it ſhould haue cured. They ſaw that to liue by one mans will, became the cauſe of all mens miſerie. This conſtrained them to come vnto Lawes, wherein all men might ſee their duties beforehand, and know the penalties of tranſgreſſing them.* If things be ſimply good or euill, and withall vniuerſally ſo acknowledged, there needs no new Law to be made for ſuch things. The firſt kind therefore of things appointed by Lawes humane, containeth whatſoeuer being in it ſelfe naturally good or euill, is notwithſtanding more ſecret then that it can be diſcerned by euery mans preſent conceit, without ſome deeper diſcourſe and iudgement. In which Diſcourſe, becauſe there is difficultie and poſſibility many waies to erre, vnleſſe ſuch things were ſet downe by Lawes, many would bee ignorant of their duties which now are not; and many that know what they ſhould do, would neuertheleſſe diſſemble it, and to excuſe themſelues pretend ignorance and ſimplicitie, which now they cannot. And becauſe the greateſt part of men are ſuch as preferre their owne priuate good before all things, euen that good which is ſenſuall, before whatſoeuer is moſt Diuine; and for that the labour of doing good, together with the pleaſure ariſing from the contrary, doth make men for the moſt part ſlower to the one, and proner to the other,

Ariſt. Polit. l. 1. cap. 3. Vide & Platonem in 3. de legibus.

* *Cùm premeretur initio multitudo ab iis qui maioris opes habebant, ad vnum aliquem confugiebant, virtute præſtantem; qui eis prohiberet iniuriâ ſeruiores, æquitate conſtituendâ ſummos cum infimis pari iure retinebat. Cum id minus contingeret, leges inuenta ſunt.* Cic. Offic. lib. 2. Τὸ γοῦν τιμᾶν καὶ φίλους ἐν ποιεῖν καὶ τοῖς ὑπερέχουσι χάριν ἀποδιδόναι τοῦτο καὶ τοῦτο ἴδιόν ἐστι τοῖς ἀνθρώποις· οἱ γὰρ μὴ νόμοι ποιοῦσιν ἀλλ' ἐνδεὴς ἀσφάλεια καὶ κοινῶν νόμων κώλυσις. Ariſt. Rhet. ad Alex.

* *Tanta eſt enim vis voluptatum, vt & ignorantiam protelet in occaſionem, & conſcientiam corrumpat in diſſimulationem.* Tertull. lib. de Spectacul.

other then that duty prescribed thē by Law can preuaile sufficiently with them: therefore vnto Lawes that men doe make for the benefit of men, it hath seemed alwayes needfull to adde Rewards, which may more allure vnto good then any hardnesse deterreth from it; and punishments, which may more deterre from euill then any sweetnesse thereto allureth. Wherein as the generalitie is naturall, *Vertue rewardable, & Vice punishable*: so the particular determination of the reward or punishment, belongeth vnto them by whom Lawes are made. Theft is naturally punishable, but the kind of punishment is Positiue, and such lawful, as men shall thinke with discretion conuenient by Law to appoint. In Lawes that which is naturall bindeth vniuersally, that which is positiue not so. To let goe those kind of Positiue Lawes, which men impose vpon themselues, as by vow vnto God, contract with men, or such like; somewhat it will make vnto our purpose, a little more fully to consider, what things are incident into the making of the Positiue Lawes for the Gouernment of them that liue vnited in publike Societie. Lawes doe not onely teach what is good, but they inioyne it, they haue in them a certaine constraining force. And to constraine men vnto any thing inconuenient, doth seeme vnreasonable. Most requisite therefore it is, that to deuise Lawes which all men shall be forced to obey, none but Wisemen be admitted. Lawes are matters of principall consequence; men of common capacitie, and but ordinary iudgement, are not able (for how should they?) to discerne what things are fittest for each kind and state of Regiment. Wee cannot be ignorant how much our obedience vnto Lawes dependeth vpon this point. Let a man, though neuer so iustly, oppose himselfe vnto them that are disordered in their wayes, and what one amongst them commonly doth not stomake at such contradiction, storme at repoose, and hate such as would reforme them? Notwithstanding euen they which brooke it worst that men should tell them of their duties, when they are told the same by a Law, thinke very well and reasonably of it. For why? They presume that the Law doth speake with all indifferency, that the Law hath no side-respect to their persons, that the Law is as it were an Oracle proceeded from wisdome & vnderstanding. Howbeit, Lawes do not take their constraining force from the qualitie of such as deuise them, but from that power which doth giue them the strength of Lawes. That which wee spake before concerning the power of Gouernment, must here be applyed vnto the power of making Lawes whereby to gouerne; which power God hath ouer all; and by the natural Law whereunto he hath made all subiect, the lawfull power of making Lawes, to command whole Politike Societies of men, belongeth so properly vnto the same intire Societies, that for any Prince or Potentate, of what kind soeuer vpon earth, to exercise the same of himselfe, and not eyther by expresse Commission immediatly & personally receiued from God, or else by authoritie deriued at the first from their consent vpon whose persons they impose Lawes, it is no better then meere tyrannie. Lawes they are not therefore which publike Approbation hath not made so. But Approbation not onely they giue who personally declare their assent by voyce, signe, or act, but also when others doe it in their names, by right originally at the least deriued from them. As in Parliaments, Councels, and the like Assemblies, although we be not personally our selues present, notwithstanding our assent is by reason of others agents there

in

in our behalfe. And what wee doe by others, no reaſon but that it ſhould ſtand as our deed, no leſſe effectually to bind vs then if our ſelues had done it in perſon. In many things aſſent is giuen, they that giue it not imagining they doe ſo, becauſe the maner of their aſſenting is not apparent. As for example, when an abſolute Monarke commandeth his ſubiects that which ſeemeth good in his owne diſcretion, hath not his edict the force of a law, whether they approue or diſlike it? Againe, that which hath been receiued long ſithence, and is by cuſtome now eſtabliſhed, we keepe as a Law which we may not tranſgreſſe; yet what conſent was euer thereunto ſought or required at our hands? Of this point therefore we are to note, that ſith men naturally haue no full and perfect power to command whole politique multitudes of men; therefore vtterly without our conſent, we could in ſuch ſort be at no mans commandement liuing. And to be commanded we doe conſent, when that ſociety whereof we are part, hath at any time before conſented, without reuoking the ſame after by the like vniuerſall agreement. Wherefore as any mans deed paſt is good as long as himſelfe continueth: ſo the acte of a publique ſociety of men done fiue hundred yeares ſithence, ſtandeth as theirs, who preſently are of the ſame ſocieties, becauſe corporations are immortall: we were then aliue in our Predeceſſors, and they in their Succeſſors do liue ſtill. Lawes therefore humane, of what kinde ſoeuer, are annealeable by conſent. If here it be demanded how it commeth to paſſe, that this being common vnto all Lawes which are made, there ſhould be found euen in good Lawes ſo great variety as there is: we muſt note the reaſon hereof to be, the ſundrie particular ends, whereunto the different diſpoſition of that ſubiect or matter for which Lawes are prouided, cauſeth them to haue eſpeciall reſpect in making Lawes. A Law there is mentioned amongſt the Grecians, whereof *Pittacus* is reported to haue beene Author: and by that Law it was agreed, that he which being ouercome with drinke did then ſtrike any man, ſhould ſuffer puniſhment double as much as if he had done the ſame being ſober. No man could euer haue thought this reaſonable, that had intended thereby onely to puniſh the iniury committed, according to the gravity of the fact. For who knoweth not, that harm aduiſedly done is naturally leſſe pardonable, and therefore worthy of ſharper puniſhment? But for as much as none did ſo vſually this way offend as men in that caſe, which they wittingly fell into, euen becauſe they would be ſo much the more freely outragious: it was for their publique good where ſuch diſorder was growne, to frame a poſitiue law for remedy thereof accordingly. To this appertaine thoſe knowne lawes of making lawes; as that Law-makers muſt haue an eye to the place where, and to the men amongſt whom; that one kind of lawes cannot ſerue for all kinds of regiment: that where the multitude beareth ſway, lawes that ſhall tend vnto the preſeruation of that ſtate, muſt make common ſmaller offices to goe by lot, for feare of ſtrife and diuiſion likely to ariſe, by reaſon that ordinary qualities ſufficing for diſcharge of ſuch offices, they could not but by many be deſired, and ſo with danger contended for, & not miſſed without grudge and diſcontentment, whereas at an vncertaine lot none can finde themſelues grieued on whomſoeuer it lighteth; contrariwiſe the greateſt, whereof but few are capable, to paſſe by popular election, that neither the people may enuie ſuch as haue thoſe honours, in as much as themſelues beſtow them; and

Ariſt. polit. lib. 2. cap. vlt.

that the chiefeſt may bee kindled with deſire to exerciſe all parts of rare and beneficiall vertue; knowing they ſhall not loſe their labour by growing in fame and eſtimation amongſt the people: if the helme of chiefe gouernement bee in the handes of a few of the wealthieſt, that then Lawes prouiding for continuance thereof muſt make the puniſhment of contumely and wrong offered vnto any of the common ſort, ſharpe and grieuous, that ſo the euill may bee preuented, whereby the rich are moſt likely to bring themſelues into hatred with the people, who are not wont to take ſo great offence when they are excluded from honours and offices, as when their perſons are contumeliouſly troden vpon. In other kindes of regiment the like is obſerued concerning the difference of poſitiue Lawes, which to bee euerie where the ſame is impoſſible and againſt their nature. Now as the learned in the Lawes of this Land obſerue, that our Statutes ſometimes are onely the affirmation or ratification of that which by common Law was held before: ſo heere it is not to be omitted, that generally all Lawes humane which are made for the ordering of politiques Societies, be either ſuch as eſtabliſh ſome dutie whereunto all men by the Law of Reaſon did before ſtand bound; or elſe ſuch as make that a dutie now which before was none. The one ſort wee may for diſtinction ſake call *mixtely*, and the other *meerely* humane. That which playne or neceſſarie reaſon bindeth men vnto, may bee in ſundrie conſiderations expedient to be ratified by human law. For example, if confuſion of bloud in marriage, the libertie of hauing many wiues at once, or any other the like corrupt and vnreaſonable cuſtome doth happen to haue preuayled farre, and to haue gotten the vpper hand of right reaſon with the greateſt part; ſo that no way is left to rectifie ſuch foule diſorder, without preſcribing by law the ſame things which reaſon neceſſarily *doth* enforce, but is not perceiued that ſo it doth; or if many be growne vnto that which the Apoſtle did lament in ſome, concerning whom he writeth, ſaying, that *Euen what things they naturally know, in thoſe verie things as Beaſts void of reaſon, they corrupted themſelues*; or if there be no ſuch ſpeciall accident, yet for as much as the common ſort are led by the ſway of their ſenſuall deſires, and therefore doe more ſhun ſinne for the ſenſible euils which follow it amongſt men, then for any kind of ſentence which reaſon doth pronounce againſt it: this verie thing is cauſe ſufficient why duties belonging vnto each kinde of vertue, albeit the law of reaſon teach them, ſhould notwithſtanding bee preſcribed euen by humane Law. Which Law in this caſe we terme *mixt*, becauſe the matter whereunto it bindeth, is the ſame which reaſon neceſſarily doth require at our hands, and from the Law of Reaſon it differeth in the manner of binding onely. For whereas men before ſtood bound in conſcience to doe as the Law of Reaſon teacheth; they are now by vertue of humane Law become conſtrainable, & if they outwardly tranſgreſſe, puniſhable. As for Lawes which are *meerely* humane, the matter of them is any thing which Reaſon doth but probably teach to be fit and conuenient; ſo that till ſuch time as Law hath paſſed amongſt men about it, of it ſelfe it bindeth no man. One example whereof may bee this: Landes are by humane Law in ſome places after the owners deceaſe, diuided vnto all his children; in ſome, all deſcendeth to the eldeſt ſonne. If the Law of Reaſon did neceſſarily require

Staundf. prof. to the Pleas of the Crowne.

Epiſt. Iud. v. 10. Ἐν οἷς φυσικῶς ἐπίστανται, ὡς τὰ ἄλογα ζῶα, ἐν τούτοις φθείρονται. *Ariſt. 8 Ethi. lib. 10. cap. 10.*

but

but the one of theſe two to be done, they which by Law haue receiued the other, ſhould be ſubiect to that heauy ſentence, which denounceth againſt all that decree wicked, vniuſt, and vnreaſonable things, *woe*. Whereas now which ſoeuer be receiued, there is no law of reaſon tranſgreſt; becauſe there is probable reaſon why either of them may be expedient, and for eyther of them more then probable reaſon there is not to be found. Lawes whether mixtly or meerly humane are made by politique ſocieties: ſome, onely as thoſe ſocieties are ciuilly vnited; ſome, as they are ſpiritually ioyned and make ſuch a body as wee call the Church. Of Lawes humane in this latter kind wee are to ſpeake in the third Booke following. Let it therefore ſuffice thus farre to haue touched the force wherewith Almighty God hath graciouſly endued our nature, and thereby inabled the ſame to find out both thoſe Lawes which all men generally are for euer bound to obſerue, and alſo ſuch as are moſt fit for their behooſe who leade their liues in any ordered State of Gouernment. Now beſides that Law which ſimply concerneth men as men, and that which belongeth vnto them as they are men linked with others in ſome forme of politique ſocietie; there is a third kinde of Law which toucheth all ſuch ſeuerall bodies Politicke, ſo farre forth as one of them hath publike commerce with another. And this third is the *Law of Nations*. Betweene men and beaſts there is no poſſibilitie of ſociable communion; becauſe the wel-ſpring of that communion is a naturall delight which man hath to transfuſe from himſelfe into others, and to receiue from others into himſelfe, eſpecially thoſe things wherein the excellency of this kinde doth moſt conſiſt. The chiefeſt inſtrument of humane communion therefore is ſpeech, becauſe thereby we impart mutually one to another the conceits of our reaſonable vnderſtanding. And for that cauſe ſeeing beaſts are not hereof capable, for as much as with them wee can vſe no ſuch conference, they being in degree although aboue other creatures on Earth to whom Nature hath denyed ſenſe, yet lower then to be ſociable companions of man to whom Nature hath giuen reaſon; it is of *Adam* ſaid that amongſt the beaſts *He found not for himſelfe any meete companion*. Ciuill ſociety doth more content the nature of man, then any priuate kind of ſolitary liuing; becauſe in ſociety this good of mutuall participation is ſo much larger then otherwiſe. Herewith notwithſtanding we are not ſatisfied, but we couet (if it might be) to haue a kinde of ſociety and fellowſhip euen with all Mankinde. Which thing *Socrates* intending to ſignifie, profeſſed himſelfe a Citizen, not of this or that Commonwealth, but of the World. And an effect of that very naturall deſire in vs, (a manifeſt token that wee wiſh after a ſort an vniuerſall fellowſhip with all men) appeareth by the wonderfull delight men haue, ſome to viſit forreine Countries, ſome to diſcouer Nations not heard of in former Ages; wee all to know the affaires and dealings of other people, yea to be in league of amity with them: and this not only for trafficks ſake, or to the end that when many are confederated each may make other the more ſtrong; but for ſuch cauſe alſo as mooued the Queene of Saba to viſit *Salomon*; and in a word becauſe Nature doth preſume that how many men there are in the World, ſo many Gods as it were there are, or at leaſtwiſe ſuch they ſhould be towards men. Touching Lawes which are to ſerue men in this behalfe; euen as thoſe Laws of reaſon, which (man retaining his ori-

Eſay 10.1.

Ariſt. pol. 1.c.2.

Gen. 2.20.

Cic. Tuſc. 5. & 1. *de Legib.*

1. *Reg.* 10.1. 2. *Chron.* 9.1. *Mat.* 13.42. *Luke* 11.31.

originall integrity) had bin ſufficient to direct each particular perſon in al his affaires and duties, are not ſufficient but require the acceſſe of other laws, now that man and his of-ſpring are growne thus corrupt and ſinfull; againe as thoſe lawes of Polity & Regiment, which would haue ſerued men liuing in publike ſociety together with that harmleſſe diſpoſition which then they ſhould haue had, are not able now to ſerue when mens iniquity is ſo hardly reſtrained within any tollerable boundsin like manner the nationall lawes of naturall cõmerce between ſocieties of that former & better quality might haue bin other then now, when nations are ſo prone to offer violence, iniury and wrong. Hereupon hath growne in euery of theſe three kindes, that diſtinction betweene *Primary* and *Secundary* Lawes; the one grounded vpon ſincere, the other built vpon depraued nature. Primary lawes of nations are ſuch as concerne embaſſage, ſuch as belong to the courteous entertainment of Forreiners & Strangers, ſuch as ſerue for commodious traffick, and the like. Secundary lawes in the ſame kind, are ſuch as this preſent vnquiet world is moſt familiarly acquainted with, I meane lawes of Armes, which yet are much better known then kept. But what matter the law of nations doth containe I omit to ſearch. The ſtrength & vertue of that law is ſuch, that no particular nation can lawfully preiudice the ſame by any their ſeuerall lawes and Ordinances, more then a man by his priuate reſolutions the Law of the whole Common-wealth or State wherein he liueth. For as ciuill Law being the act of a whole body Politique, doth therefore ouer-rule each ſeuerall part of the ſame body: ſo there is no reaſon that any one Commonwealth of it ſelfe, ſhould to the preiudice of another annihilate that whereupon the whole world hath agreed. For which cauſe the Lacedemonians forbidding al acceſſe of ſtrangers into their Coaſts, are in that reſpect both by *Ioſephus* & *Theodoret* deſeruedly blamed, as being enemies to that hoſpitality which for common humanities ſake, all the nations on earth ſhould embrace. Now as there is great cauſe of communion, and conſequently of lawes for the maintenance of communion amongſt Nations: ſo among Nations Chriſtian the like in regard euen of Chriſtianity hath beene alwaies iudged needfull. And in this kind of correſpondence amongſt nations, the force of generall Councels doth ſtand For as one and the ſame law diuine, whereof in the next place we are to ſpeake, is vnto all Chriſtian Churches a rule for the chiefeſt things, by meanes whereof they all in that reſpect make one Church, as having all but *one Lord, one Faith, & one Baptiſme*: ſo the vrgent neceſſitie of mutuall communion for preſeruation of our vnity in theſe things, as alſo for order in ſome other things conuenient to be euery where vniformly kept, maketh it requiſite that the Church of God here on earth haue her Lawes of ſpiritual commerce betweene Chriſtian Nations, Lawes by vertue whereof all Churches may enioy freely the vſe of thoſe reuerend religious and ſacred conſultations, which are termed Councels generall. A thing whereof Gods own bleſſed Spirit was the Author; a thing practiſed by the holy Apoſtles themſelues; a thing alwayes afterwards kept and obſerued throughout the World; a thing neuer otherwiſe then moſt highly eſteemed of, till pride, ambition and tyranny began by factious and vile endeuors, to abuſe that diuine inuention vnto the furtherance of wicked purpoſes. But as the iuſt authority of ciuill Courts and Parliaments is not therefore to be aboliſhed, becauſe ſometime there is cunning vſed to frame them ac-

cor-

Ioſ. lib. 2. contra Appion. Theod. lib. 9. de ſanand. Græc. affect.

Ephes. 4. 5.

Acts 15. 28.

cording to the priuate intents of men ouer-potent in the Common-wealth: So the grieuous abuſe which hath beene of Councels, ſhould rather cauſe men to ſtudie how ſo gracious a thing may againe bee reduced to that firſt perfection, then in regard of ſtaines and blemiſhes ſithence growing, be held for euer in extreme diſgrace. To ſpeake of this matter as the cauſe requireth, would require very long diſcourſe. All I will preſently ſay, is this: Whether it be for the finding out of any thing whereunto diuine Law bindeth vs, but yet in ſuch ſort, that men are not thereof on all ſides reſolued; or for the ſetting downe of ſome vniforme iudgement to ſtand touching ſuch things, as being neither way matters of neceſſitie, are notwithſtanding offenſiue and ſcandalous when there is open oppoſition about them; bee it for the ending of ſtrifes touching matters of Chriſtian beleefe, wherein the one part may ſeeme to haue probable cauſe of diſſenting from the other; or bee it concerning matters of Politie, order and regiment in the Church; I nothing doubt but that Chriſtian men ſhould much better frame themſelues to thoſe heauenly precepts, which our Lord and Sauiour with ſo great inſtancie gaue as concerning peace and vnitie, if we did all concurre in deſire to haue the vſe of ancient Councels againe renued, rather then theſe proceedings continued, which either make all contentions endleſſe, or bring them to one onely determination, and that of all other the worſt, which is by ſword. It followeth therefore that a new foundation being laid, we now adioyne hereunto that which commeth in the next place to be ſpoken of, namely, wherefore God hath himſelfe by Scripture made knowne ſuch lawes as ſerue for direction of men. *Ioh.14.27.*

11 All things (God onely excepted) beſides the nature which they haue in themſelues, receiue externally ſome perfection from other things, as hath beene ſhewed. In ſo much as there is in the whole world no one thing great or ſmall, but either in reſpect of knowledge or of vſe, it may vnto our perfectō adde ſomwhat. And whatſoeuer ſuch perfection there is which our nature may acquire, the ſame wee properly terme our good; our ſoueraigne *good* or *bleſſednes*, that wherin the higheſt degree of al our perfection conſiſteth, that which being once attained vnto, there can reſt nothing further to be deſired, & therfore with it our ſoules are fully content & ſatisfied, in that they haue they reioyce & thirſt for no more: wherfore of good things deſired, ſome are ſuch that for themſelues we couet them not, but only becauſe they ſerue as inſtruments vnto that for which we are to ſeeke; of this ſort are riches: another kinde there is, which although we deſire for it ſelfe, as health, & vertue, & knowledge, neuertheles they are not the laſt marke whereat we aime, but haue their further end whereunto they are referred; ſo as in them we are not ſatisfied as hauing attained the vtmoſt we may, but our deſires doe ſtill proceede. Theſe things are linked, and as it were chained one to another: we labour to eate, and wee eate to liue, and wee liue to doe good, and the good which we doe, is as ſeede ſowne [a] with reference vnto a future harueſt. But we muſt come at the length to ſome pawſe. For if euery thing were to bee deſired for ſome other without any ſtint, there could be no certaine end propoſed vnto our actions, we ſhould goe on we know not whither, yea whatſoeuer wee doe, were in vaine, or rather nothing at all were poſſible to bee done. For as to take away the firſt efficient of our being, were to annihilate vtterly our perſons;

Wherfore God hath by Scripture further made knowne ſuch ſupernaturall lawes, as doe ſerue for mens direction.

[a] *Gal. 6.8.* He that ſoweth to the Spirit, ſhall of the Spirit reap life euerlaſting.

persons; so we cannot remoue the last finall cause of our working, but wee shall cause whatsoeuer we worke to cease. Therefore something there must be desired for it selfe simply and for no other. That is simply for it selfe desireable, vnto the nature whereof it is opposite and repugnant to be desired with relation vnto any other. The Oxe and the Asse desire their food, neither propose they vnto themselues any end wherefore; so that of them this is desired for it selfe; but why? By reason of their imperfection, which cannot otherwise desire it: whereas that which is desired simply for it selfe, the excellency thereof is such as permitteth it not in any sort to be referred vnto a further end. Now that which man doth desire with reference to a further end, the same he desireth in such measure as is vnto that end conuenient: but what he coueteth as good in it selfe, towards that his desire is euer infinite. So that vnlesse the last good of all which is desired altogether for it selfe, be also infinite; wee doe euill in making it our end: euen as they who placed their felicitie in wealth, or honour, or pleasure, or any thing here attayned; because in desiring any thing as our finall perfection, which is not so, we doe amisse. Nothing may be infinitly desired, but that good which indeed is infinite. For the better, the more desireable; that therfore most desireable, wherin there is infinitie of goodnesse; so that if any thing desirable may be infinite, that must needes be the highest of all things that are desired. No good is infinite but only God: therefore he our felicitie and blisse. Moreouer desire tendeth vnto vnion with that it desireth. If then in him we be blessed, it is by force of participation and coniunction with him. Againe, it is not the possession of any good thing can make them happy which haue it, vnlesse they inioy the thing wherewith they are possessed. Then are we happy therefore, when fully we enioy God, as an obiect wherein the powers of our soules are satisfied euen with euerlasting delight: so that although we be men, yet by being vnto God vnited, we liue as it were the life of God. Happines therefore is that estate whereby we attaine, so far as possibly may be attayned the full possession of that which simply for it selfe is to be desired, and containeth in it after an eminent sort the cõtentation of our desires, the highest degree of all our perfection. Of such perfection capable we are not in this life. For while we are in the world, we are subiect vnto sundrie * imperfections, griefe of body, defects of minde; yea, the best things we doe are painfull, and the exercise of them grieuous, being continued without intermission; so as in those very actions whereby we are especially perfected in this life, we are not able to persist, forced we are with very wearinesse, and that often, to interrupt them; which tediousnesse cannot fall into those operations that are in the state of blisse, when our vnion with God is complete. Complete vnion with him must be according vnto euery power and faultie of our minds, apt to receiue so glorious an obiect. Capable we are of God both by vnderstanding and will; by vnderstanding, as he is that Soueraigne truth, which comprehendeth the rich treasures of all wisedome: by will, as he is that Sea of goodnesse, whereof whoso tasteth, shall thirst no more. As the will doth now worke vpon that obiect by desire, which is as it were a motion towards the end as yet vnobtayned; so likewise vpõ the same hereafter receiued it shal worke also by loue. *Appetitus inhiantis fit amor fruentis*, saith S. AVGVSTINE: *The longing dispositiõ of them that thirst, is changed into the sweet affection of them that taste and are replenished.*

Where-

Vide Arist. Eth. 10. cap. 10. & Metaph. 12. cap. 6. & cap. 4. & cap. 30.

* Μόνον δὲ Ἀσυλλόγιστα τὰ ὀνόματα τῷ ἀγαθῷ ἐν ἀνθρώποις τὸ ἔργον ἐνδέχεται, τὸ μὴ λίαν κακὸν, ἢ δεῖσθαι τὸ ἀγαθὸν εἶναι. Τὸ δὲ ἱκανῶς ἀγαθὸν, μέρος τοῦ καλοῦ τὸ ἐλάχιστον. Ἀδύνατον οὖν τὸ ἀγαθὸν ἀνθρώπινον καθαρεύειν τῆς κακίας, Καγὼ δὲ χάριν ἔχω τῷ θεῷ τῷ ἐν τοῖς μὴ βαλόντι τὴν γνώσιν τοῦ ἀγαθοῦ, ὅτι ἀδύναλον ἐστιν αὐτὸ ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ εἶναι. ὁ γὰρ κόσμος ὅλος μὴ ἔστι τῆς κακίας, ὁ δὲ θεὸς ἀγαθὸν, ἢ τὸ ἀγαθὸν θεῖον, Μοσχ. Τίσμεγ. *Aug. de Trin. lib. 9 cap. vlt.*

Whereas wee now loue the thing that is good, but good eſpecially in reſpect of benefit vnto vs; we ſhall then loue the thing that is good, onely or principally for the goodnes of beauty in it ſelfe. The ſoule being in this ſort as it is actiue, perfected by loue of that infinite good; ſhall as it is receptiue, be alſo perfected with thoſe ſupernaturall paſſions of ioy, peace, and delight. All this endleſſe and euerlaſting. Which perpetuitie, in regard whereof our bleſſednes is termed *a crowne which withereth not*, doth neither depend vpon the nature of the thing it ſelfe, nor proceede from any naturall neceſſitie that our ſoules ſhoud ſo exerciſe themſelues for euer in beholding and louing God, but from the will of God, which doth both freely perfect our nature in ſo high a degree, and continue it ſo perfected. Vnder man no creature in the world is capable of felicitie and bliſſe; firſt, becauſe there chiefeſt perfection conſiſteth in that which is beſt for them, but not in that which is ſimply beſt, as ours doth; ſecondly, becauſe whatſoeuer externall perfection they tend vnto, it is not better then themſelues, as ours is. How iuſt occaſion haue wee therefore euen in this reſpect with the Prophet to admire the goodneſſe of God; Lord, what is man that thou ſhouldeſt exalt him aboue the workes of thy handes, ſo farre as to make thy ſelfe the inheritance of his reſt, and the ſubſtance of his felicity? Now if men had not naturally this deſire to be happy, how were it poſſible that all men ſhould haue it? All men haue. Therefore this deſire in man is naturall. It is not in our power not to doe the ſame: how ſhould it then be in our power to doe it coldly or remiſſely? So that our deſire being naturall, is alſo in that degree of earneſtneſſe whereunto nothing can bee added. And is it probable that God ſhould frame the hearts of all men ſo deſirous of that which no man may obtaine? It is an axiome of nature, that naturall deſire cannot vtterly be fruſtrate. This deſire of ours being naturall ſhould be fruſtrate, if that which may ſatisfie the ſame were a thing impoſſible for man to aſpire vnto. Man doth ſeeke a triple perfection, firſt a ſenſuall, conſiſting in thoſe things which very life it ſelfe requireth, eyther as neceſſary ſupplements, or as beauties and ornaments thereof; then an intellectuall, conſiſting in thoſe things which none vnderneath man is either capable of, or acquainted with; laſtly, a ſpirituall and diuine, conſiſting in thoſe things whereunto we tend by ſupernatural meanes here, but cannot here attaine vnto them. They that make the firſt of theſe three the ſcope of their whole life, are ſaid by the Apoſtle to haue no God, but onely their belly, to be earthly minded men. Vnto the ſecond they bend themſelues, who ſeeke eſpecially to excell in all ſuch knowledge and vertue as doth moſt commend men. To this branch belongeth the law of morall and ciuill perfection. That there is ſomewhat higher then either of theſe two, no other proofe doth need, then the very proceſſe of mans deſire, which being naturall ſhould be fruſtrate, if there were not ſome farther thing wherein it might reſt at the length contented, which in the former it cannot doe. For man doth not ſeeme to reſt ſatisfied either with fruition of that wherewith his life is preſerued, or with performance of ſuch actions as aduance him moſt deſeruedly in eſtimation; but doth further couet, yea oftentimes manifeſtly purſue with great ſedulity and earneſtnes, that which cannot ſtand him in any ſtead for vitall vſe; that which exceedeth the reach of ſenſe; yea ſomewhat aboue capacity of reaſon, ſomewhat diuine and heauenly, which with hidden exultation it rather ſurmiſeth then conceiueth; ſomwhat it ſeeketh, & what that is

Mat.25. The iuſt ſhall goe into life euerlaſting.

Mat.22. They ſhall be as the Angels of God

2.Tim.4.8.

1.Pet.1.4.

Pſal.8.

Comment. in prooem. 2. Metaph

Phil.3.19.

is directly it knoweth not; yet very intentiue desire thereof doth so incite it, that all other knowne delights and pleasures are laide aside, they giue place to the search of this but onely suspected desire. If the soule of man did serue onely to giue him being in this life, then things appertayning vnto this life would content him, as wee see they doe other creatures: which creatures inioying what they liue by, seeke no further, but in this contentation doe shew a kinde of acknowledgement, that there is no higher good which doth any way belong vnto them. With vs it is otherwise. For although the Beauties, Riches, Honors, Sciences, Vertues, and perfections of all men liuing, were in the present possession of one: yet somewhat beyond and aboue all this there would still bee sought and earnestly thirsted for. So that Nature euen in this life doth plainly claime and cal for a more diuine perfection, then either of these two that haue beene mentioned. This last and highest estate of perfection, whereof we speake, is receiued of men in the nature of a [a] reward. Rewards doe alwayes presuppose such duties performed as are rewardable. Our naturall meanes therefore vnto blessednesse are our workes: nor is it possible that nature should euer find any other way to saluation then onely this. But examine the workes which we doe, and since the first foundation of the World what one can say, My wayes are pure? Seeing then all flesh is guilty of that for which God hath threatned eternally to punish, what possibility is there this way to bee saued? There resteth therefore either no way vnto saluation, or if any, then surely a way which is supernaturall, a way which could neuer haue entred into the heart of man as much as once to conceiue or imagine, if God himselfe had not reuealed it extraordinarily. For which cause wee terme it the mysterie or secret way of saluation. And therefore S. *Ambrose* in this matter appealeth iustly from man to God, [b] *Cali mysterium doceat me Deus qui condidit, non homo qui seipsum ignorauit, Let God himselfe that made mee, let not man that knowes not himselfe, bee my instructour concerning the mysticall way to Heauen.* [c] *When men of excellent wit* (saith Lactantius) *had wholly betaken themselues vnto studie, after farewell bidden vnto all kind as well of priuate as publike actions, they spared no labour that might be spent in the search of truth; holding it a thing of much more price to seeke and to find out the reason of all affaires, as well Diuine as Humane, then to sticke fast in the toyle of piling vp riches, and gathering together heapes of Honors. Howbeit they both did faile of their purpose, and got not so much as to quit their charges; because truth which is the secret of the most high God, whose proper handy-worke all things are, cannot be compassed with that wit and those senses which are our owne. For God and man should be very neere Neighbours, if mans cogitations were able to take a suruey of the counsels and appointments of that Maiesty euerlasting. Which being vtterly impossible, that the eye of man by it selfe should looke into the bosome of diuine Reason; God did not suffer him being desirous of the light of wisdome, to stray any longer vp and downe, and with bootlesse expense of trauell, to wander in darknesse that had no passage to get out*

a *Mat* 5.12. Reioyce and be glad, for great is your reward in Heauen. *Aug. de doct. Christ. cap.* 8 *Summa merces est vt ipso perfruamur.*

b *Ambros. contra Sym.*

c *Magno & excellenti ingenio viri, cum se doctrine penitus dedissent, quicquid laboris potuerat impendi (contempto omnibus & priuatis & publicis actionibus) ad inquirendæ veritatis studium contulerunt, existimantes nullis esse pretio tot hominum diuinorumq; rerum ignorare ac scire rationem, quàm seruendo opibus aut cumulandis honoribus inhærere. Sed neq; adepti sunt id quod volebant, & operam simul & industriam perdiderunt; quia veritas, id est, arcanum summi Dei qui fecit omnia, ingenio ac propriis sensibus non potest comprehendi. Alioqui nihil inter Deum hominemq; differret, si consilia & dispositiones illius maiestatis æternæ cogitatio assequeretur humana. Quod quia fieri non potuit vt homini per seipsum ratio diuina non tegeretur, ne est passus hominem Deum lumen sapientiæ requirentem diutius aberrare, ac sine vllo labore officia vagari per tenebras inextricabiles. Aperuit oculos eius aliquando, & notionem veritatis mutuo sensu fecit, vt & humanam sapientiam vanam esse monstraret, & errantis ac vagæ viam consequendæ immortalitatis ostenderet, Lactan. lib. 3. cap. 2.*

out by. His eyes at the length God did open, and beſtow vpon him the knowledge of the truth by way of Donatiue, to the end that man might both be cleerely conuicted of folly, and being through erreur out of the way, haue the path that leadeth vnto immortalitie laid plaine before him: Thus far *Lactantius Firmianus*, to ſhew, that God himſelfe is the Teacher of the Truth, wherby is made knowne the ſupernaturall way of Saluation and Law for them to liue in that ſhall be ſaued. In the naturall path of euerlaſting life, the firſt beginning is that abilitie of doing good, which God in the day of mans Creation indued him with; from hence obedience vnto the will of his Creator, abſolute righteouſneſſe and integritie in all his actions; and laſt of all, the Iuſtice of God rewarding the worthineſſe of his deſerts with the Crowne of eternall glory. Had *Adam* continued in his firſt eſtate, this had bin the way of life vnto him and all his Poſteritie. Wherein I confeſſe notwithſtanding with the * wittyeſt of the Schoole Diuines, that if we ſpeake of ſtrict Iuſtice, God could no way haue bin bound to requite mans labours in ſo large & ample manner as humane felicitie doth import: in as much as the dignitie of this exceedeth ſo far the others value. But be it that God of his great liberalitie had determined in lieu of mans endeuours to beſtow the ſame, by the rule of that iuſtice which beſt beſeemeth him, namely, the iuſtice of one that requireth nothing mincingly, but all with preſſed and heaped & euen ouer-inlarged meaſure: yet could it neuer hereupon neceſſarily be gathered, that ſuch iuſtice ſhould adde to the nature of that reward the propertie of euerlaſting cõtinuance; ſith poſſeſſion of bliſſe, though it ſhould be but for a moment, were an aboundant retribution. But we are not now to enter into this conſideration, how gracious and bountifull our good God might ſtill appeare in ſo rewarding the ſonnes of men, albeit they ſhould exactly performe what ſoeuer dutie their Nature bindeth them vnto. How ſoeuer God did propoſe this reward, we that were to be rewarded, muſt haue done that which is required at our hands; we failing in the one, it were in nature an impoſſibilitie that the other ſhould be looked for. The light of Nature is neuer able to find out any way of obtaining the reward of bliſſe, but by performing exactly the duties and workes of righteouſneſſe. From Saluation therefore and life all fleſh being excluded this way, behold, how the wiſedome of God hath reuealed a way myſticall and ſupernaturall, a way directing vnto the ſame end of life, by a courſe which groundeth it ſelfe vpon the guiltineſſe of ſinne, and through ſinne deſert of condemnation and death. For in this way the firſt thing is the tender compaſſion of God reſpecting vs drowned and ſwallowed vp in miſerie; the next is Redemption out of the ſame by the precious death & merit of a mightie Sauiour, which hath witneſſed of himſelfe, ſaying, [a] *I am the way*, the way that leadeth vs from miſerie into bliſſe. This ſupernaturall way had God in himſelfe prepared before all Worlds. The way of ſupernaturall dutie which to vs he hath preſcribed, our Sauiour in the Goſpell of Saint *Iohn* doth note, terming it by an excellencie, The Worke of God: [b] *This is the Worke of God, that yee beleeue in him whom he hath ſent.* Not that God doth require nothing vnto happineſſe at the hands of men, ſauing only a naked beliefe (for Hope and Charitie we may not exclude:) but that without beliefe all other things are as nothing, and it the ground of thoſe other diuine Vertues. Concerning Faith, the principall obiect whereof is that eternall Veritie

* Scot. *lib.* 4. *Sent. diſt.* 49. *Loquendo de ſtrictâ iuſtitiâ, Deus nulli noſtrum propter quascunque merita eſt debitor perfectionis reddenda tam intenſæ, propter immoderatum exceſſum illum perfectionis vltra illa merita. Sed eſto quod ex liberalitate ſuâ determinaſſet meritis conferre actum tam perfectum tanquam premium tali quidem iuſtitiâ qualis decet eum, ſcilicet ſupererogantis in præmijs: tamen non ſequitur ex hoc neceſſariò, quòd per illam iuſtitiam ſit reddenda perfectio perennis tanquã præmium; imò abundans fieret retributio in beatitudine vnius momenti.*

a *Iohn* 14. 6.

b *Iohn* 6. 29.

which hath discouered the Treasures of hidden Wisdome in Christ; concerning Hope, the highest object whereof is that euerlasting goodnesse which in Christ doth quicken the dead; concerning Charitie, the finall object whereof is that incomprehensible beautie which shineth in the countenance of Christ the Sonne of the liuing God: concerning these vertues, the first of which beginning heere with a weake apprehension of things not seene, endeth with the intuitiue Vision of God in the World to come; the second beginning heere with a trembling expectation of things farre remoued, and as yet but onely heard of, endeth with reall and actuall fruition of that which no tongue can expresse; the third beginning heere with a weake inclination of heart towards him vnto whom we are not able to approch, endeth with endlesse vnion, the mysterie whereof is higher then the reach of the thoughts of men; concerning that Faith, Hope and Charitie, without which there can be no Saluation; was there euer any mention made sauing only in that Law which God himselfe hath from heauen reuealed? There is not in the Word a syllable muttered with certaine truth concerning any of these three, more then hath bin supernaturally receiued from the mouth of the eternall God. Lawes therefore concerning these things are supernaturall, both in respect of the manner of deliuering them which is diuine, and also in regard of the things deliuered, which are such as haue not in nature any cause from which they flow, but were by the voluntary appointment of God ordained besides the course of Nature, to rectifie Natures obliquitie withall.

a The cause why so many naturall or rationall Lawes are set downe in holy Scripture.

b *Ius naturale est quod in lege & Euangelio continetur, pag. 2. d. 1.*

12 [a] When supernaturall duties are necessarily exacted, naturall are not reiected as needlesse. The Law of God therefore is, though principally deliuered for instruction in the one, yet fraught with Precepts of the other also. The Scripture is fraught euen with Lawes of Nature. In so much that [b] *Gratian* defining naturall right (whereby is meant the right which exacteth those generall duties, that concerne men naturally euen as they are men) termeth naturall right that which the Bookes of the Law and the Gospell doe containe. Neither is it vaine that the Scripture aboundeth with so great store of Lawes in this kind. For they are either such as wee of our selues could not easily haue found out, and then the benefit is not small to haue them readily set downe to our hands; or if they bee so cleere and manifest that no man indued with reason can lightly bee ignorant of them, yet the Spirit as it were borrowing them from the Schoole of Nature as seruing to proue things lesse manifest, and to induce a perswasion of somewhat which were in it selfe more hard and darke, vnlesse it should in such sort be cleered, the very applying of them vnto cases particular is not without most singular vse and profit many wayes for mens instruction. Besides, bee they plaine of themselues or obscure, the euidence of Gods owne testimonie added vnto the naturall assent of Reason concerning the certaintie of them, doth not a little comfort and confirme the same. Wherefore in as much as our actions are conuersant about things beset with many circumstances, which cause men of sundry wits to bee also of sundrie iudgements concerning that which ought to bee done: requisite it cannot but seeme the Rule of Diuine Law should herein helpe our imbecillitie, that wee might the more infallibly vnderstand what is good and what euill. The first Principles of the Law of Nature are easie, hard it were to find men ignorant of them: but concerning the

the dutie which Natures Law doth require at the hands of men in a number of things particular, ſo [a] farre hath the naturall vnderſtanding euen of ſundry whole Nations beene darkned, that they haue not diſcerned, no, not groſſe iniquitie to bee ſinne. Againe, being ſo prone as wee are to fawne vpon our ſelues, and to bee ignorant as much as may bee of our owne deformities, without the feeling ſenſe whereof wee are moſt wretched, euen ſo much the more, becauſe not knowing them we cannot as much as deſire to haue them taken away: how ſhould our feſtered ſores be cured, but that God hath deliuered a Law as ſharp as the two-edged Sword, piercing the very cloſeſt and moſt vnſearchable corners of the heart, which the Law of Nature can hardly, humane Lawes by no means poſſible reach vnto? Hereby wee know euen ſecret concupiſcence to be ſinne, and are made fearefull to offend, though it bee but in a wandering cogitation. Finally, of thoſe things which are for direction of all the parts of our life needfull, and not impoſſible to be diſcerned by the Light of Nature it ſelfe, are there not many which few mens naturall capacitie, and ſome which no mans hath beene able to find out? They are, ſaith Saint *Auguſtine*, but a few, and they indued with great ripeneſſe of wit and iudgement, free from all ſuch affaires as might trouble their Meditations, inſtructed in the ſharpeſt and the ſubtileſt points of Learning, who haue, and that very hardly, beene able to find out but onely the immortalitie of the Soule. The reſurrection of the fleſh what man did euer at any time dreame of, hauing not heard it otherwiſe then from the Schoole of Nature? Whereby it appeareth how much wee are bound to yeeld vnto our Creator the Father of all mercy eternall thanks, for that he hath deliuered his Law vnto the World, a Law wherein ſo many things are laid open, cleere, and manifeſt; as a Light which otherwiſe would haue beene buried in darkneſſe, not without the hazard, or rather not with the hazard, but with the certaine loſſe of infinite thouſands of Soules moſt vndoubtedly now ſaued. Wee ſee therefore that our ſoueraigne good is deſired naturally, that God the Author of that naturall deſire had appointed naturall meanes whereby to fulfill it; that man hauing vtterly diſabled his nature vnto thoſe meanes, hath had other reuealed from God, and hath receiued from Heauen a Law to teach him, how that which is deſired naturally, muſt now ſupernaturally be attained; finally, wee ſee that becauſe thoſe later exclude not the former quite and cleane as vnneceſſarie, therefore together with ſuch ſupernaturall duties as could not poſſibly haue beene otherwiſe knowne to the World, the ſame Law that teacheth them, teacheth alſo with them ſuch naturall duties as could not by Light of Nature eaſily haue beene knowne.

13 * In the firſt Age of the World God gaue Lawes vnto our Fathers, and by reaſon of the number of their daies, their memories ſerued in ſtead of Bookes; whereof the manifold imperfections and defects being knowne to God, he mercifully relieued the ſame by often putting them in mind of that whereof it behoued them to be ſpecially mindfull. In which reſpect wee ſee how many times one thing hath beene iterated vnto ſundry euen of the beſt and wiſeſt amongſt them. After that the liues of Men were ſhortned, meanes more durable to preſerue the Lawes of God from obliuion and corruption grew in vſe, not without pre-

[a] Ioſephus *lib. ſecundo contra Appio. Lacademony quomodo nō ſunt ob inhoſpitalitatē reprehendendi, vel ob neglectum nuptiarum? Ellenſes verò & Thebani ob coitum cum maſculis planè impudentem & contra naturam; quē rectè & vtiliter exercere putabant? Cumque hæc omninò perpetrarent, etiam ſuis legibus miſcuere. Vide* Th. 12. quæſt. 49. 4. 5. 6. *Lex naturæ ſic corrupta fuit apud Germanos, vt latrocinium nō reputarent peccatum. Auguſt. aut quiſquis author eſt, lib. de quæſt. nou. & vet. teſta. qui neſciat quid bona vita conueniat, aut ignoret, quia quod ſibi fieri non vult, alijs minimè debeat facere? At verò vbi naturalis lex euanuit oppreſſa conſuetudine delinquendi, tunc oportuit manifeſtari ſcriptis, vt Dei iudicia omnes audirent: non quòd penitus obliterata eſſ, ſed quia maximè eius authoritate carebat, idololatria ſtudebatur; timor Dei in terris non erat, fornicatio operabatur, circa rem proximi auida erat concupiſcentia. Data ergo lex eſt, vt quæ ſciebantur auctoritatem haberent, & quæ latere cuperant, manifeſtarentur.*

* The benefit of hauing Diuine Lawes written.

cise direction from God himselfe. First therefore of *Moses* it is said, that hee *wrote all the words of God*; not by his owne private motion and deuice: for God taketh this act to himselfe, *I haue written*. Furthermore, were not the Prophets following commanded also to doe the like? Vnto the Holy Euangelist Saint *Iohn* how often expresse charge is giuen, *Scribe: write these things?* Concerning the rest of our Lords Disciples, the words of Saint *Augustine* are, *Quicquid ille de suis factis & dictis nos legere voluit, hoc scribendum illis tanquam suis manibus imperauit*. Now although we doe not deny it to bee a matter meerely accidentall vnto the Law of God to bee written; although Writing bee not that which addeth authoritie and strength thereunto: finally, though his Lawes doe require at our hands the same obedience howsoeuer they be deliuered; his prouidence notwithstanding which hath made principall choice of this way to deliuer them, who seeth not what cause we haue to admire and magnifie? The singular benefit that hath growne vnto the World by receiuing the Lawes of God; euen by his owne appointment committed vnto Writing, wee are not able to esteeme as the value thereof deserueth. When the question therefore is, whether wee bee now to seeke for any reuealed Law of God otherwhere then only in the Sacred Scripture, whether wee doe now stand bound in the sight of God to yeeld to Traditions vrged by the Church of Rome the same obedience and reuerence wee doe to his written Law, honouring equally, and adoring both as diuine: our answer is, No. They that so earnestly plead for the authoritie of Tradition, as if nothing were more safely conueyed then that which spreadeth it selfe by report, and descendeth by relation of former Generations vnto the Ages that succeed, are not all of them (surely a miracle it were if they should be) so simple, as thus to perswade themselues; howsoeuer if the simple were so perswaded, they could be content perhaps very well to enioy the benefit, as they account it, of that common errour. What hazard the truth is in when it passeth through the hands of report, how maimed and deformed it becommeth; they are not, they cannot possibly be ignorant. Let them that are indeed of this minde, consider but onely that little of things Diuine, which the * Heathen haue in such sort receiued. How miserable had the state of the Church of God beene long ere this, if wanting the Sacred Scripture, we had no Record of his Lawes but onely the memory of man, receiuing the same by report and relation from his Predecessors? By Scripture it hath in the wisedome of God seemed meet to deliuer vnto the World much but personally expedient to be practised of certaine men; many deepe and profound points of Doctrine, as being the maine originall ground whereupon the Precepts of dutie depend; many Prophesies, the cleere performance whereof might confirme the World in beliefe of things vnseene; many Histories to serue as looking Glasses to behold the mercy, the truth, the righteousnesse of God towards all that faithfully serue, obey and honour him; yea many intire Meditations of Pietie, to be as Patternes and Presidents in cases of like nature; many things needfull for explication, many for application vnto particular occasions, such as the prouidence of God from time to time hath taken to haue the seuerall Bookes of his holy Ordinance written. Be it then that together with the principall necessarie Lawes of God, there are sundrie other things written, whereof wee might haply bee ignorant, and yet bee saued:

What?

Exod. 24. 4. Ose. 8. 12.

Apoc. 1. 11. & 14. 13. Aug. lib. 1. de cons. Euang. cap. vii.

* I meane those historicall matters concerning the ancient state of the first World, the Deluge, the Sonnes of Noah, the children of Israels deliuerance out of Egypt, the life & doings of Moses their Captain, with such like: the certaine truth whereof deliuered in holy Scripture, is of the Heathen which had them onely by report, so intermingled with fabulous vanities, that the most which remaineth in them to bee seene, is the shew of darke and obscure steps, where some part of the truth hath gone.

What? ſhall we hereupon thinke them needleſſe? ſhall we eſteeme them as riotous branches wherewith we ſometimes behold moſt pleaſant Vines ouergrowne? Surely no more then we iudge our hands, or our eies ſuperfluous, or what part ſoeuer, which if our bodies did want, we might notwithſtanding any ſuch defect receiue ſtill the complete being of men. As therfore a complete man is neither deſtitute of any part neceſſary, and hath ſome parts whereof though the want could not depriue him of his eſſence, yet to haue them ſtandeth him in ſingular ſtead in reſpect of the ſpeciall vſes for which they ſerue: in like ſort all thoſe writings which conteine in them the Law of God, all thoſe venerable bookes of Scripture, all thoſe ſacred tomes and volumes of holy Writ, they are with ſuch abſolute perfection framed, that in them there neither wanteth any thing, the lacke whereof might depriue vs of life; nor any thing in ſuch wiſe aboundeth, that as being ſuperfluous, vnfruitfull, and altogether needleſſe, we ſhould thinke it no loſſe or danger at all if we did want it.

14 Although the Scripture of God therefore be ſtored with infinite varietie of matter in all kinds, although it abound with all ſorts of lawes, yet the principall intent of Scripture is to deliuer the lawes of duties ſupernaturall. Oftentimes it hath bene in very ſolemne maner diſputed, whether all things neceſſary vnto ſaluation be neceſſarily ſet downe in the holy Scriptures or no. If we define that neceſſary vnto ſaluation, whereby the way to ſaluation is in any ſort made more plaine, apparent, and eaſie to be knowne; then is there no part of true Philoſophie, no art of account, no kind of ſcience rightly ſo called, but the Scripture muſt conteine it. If onely thoſe things be neceſſary, as ſurely none elſe are, without the knowledge and practice whereof it is not the will and pleaſure of God to make any ordinary graunt of ſaluation; it may be notwithſtanding, and oftentimes hath bene demanded, how the bookes of holy Scripture conteine in them all neceſſary things, when of things neceſſary the very chiefeſt is to knowe what bookes wee are bound to eſteeme holie; which point is confeſt impoſſible for the Scripture it ſelfe to teach. Whereunto wee may anſwere with truth, that there is not in the world any Arte or Science, which propoſing vnto it ſelfe an end (as euery one doth ſome end or other) hath bene therefore thought defectiue, if it haue not deliuered ſimply whatſoeuer is needfull to the ſame end: but all kinds of knowledge haue their certaine bounds and limits; each of them preſuppoſeth many neceſſary things learned in other ſciences and knowne beforehand. He that ſhould take vpon him to teach men how to be eloquent in pleading cauſes, muſt needes deliuer vnto them whatſoeuer precepts are requiſite vnto that end, otherwiſe he doth not the thing which hee taketh vpon him. Seeing then no man can pleade eloquently, vnleſſe he be able firſt to ſpeake, it followeth that abilitie of ſpeech is in this caſe a thing moſt neceſſary. Notwithſtanding euery man would thinke it ridiculous, that he which vndertaketh by writing to inſtruct an Orator, ſhould therefore deliuer all the precepts of Grammar: becauſe his profeſſion is to deliuer precepts neceſſarie vnto eloquent ſpeech, yet ſo, that they which are to receiue them be taught beforehand, ſo much of that which is thereunto neceſſarie as comprehendeth the skill of ſpeaking. In like ſort, albeit Scripture doe profeſſe to conteine in it all things which are neceſſarie vnto ſaluation; yet

The ſufficiency of Scripture vnto the end for which it was inſtituted. *Vtrum cognitio ſupernaturalis neceſſaria viatori, ſit ſufficienter tradita in ſacrâ ſcripturâ?* This queſtion propoſed by *Scotus*, is affirmatiuely concluded.

the meaning cannot be ſimply of all things which are neceſſarie, but all things that are neceſſarie in ſome certaine kind or forme; as all things that are neceſſarie, and either could not at all, or could not eaſily be knowne by the light of naturall diſcourſe; all things which are neceſſarie to be knowne that wee may be ſaued, but knowne with preſuppoſall of knowledge concerning certaine principles, whereof it receaueth vs already perſwaded, and then inſtructeth vs in all the reſidue that are neceſſary. In the number of theſe principles one is the ſacred authority of Scripture. Being therefore perſwaded by other meanes that theſe Scriptures are the Oracles of God, themſelues do then teach vs the reſt, and lay before vs all the duties which God requireth at our hands as neceſſary vnto ſaluation. Further, there hath bene ſome doubt likewiſe, whether *conteining in Scripture* do import expreſſe ſetting downe in plaine tearmes, or elſe *comprehending* in ſuch ſort, that by reaſon we may from thence conclude all things which are neceſſary. Againſt the former of theſe two conſtructions, inſtance hath ſundrie wayes bene giuen. For our beliefe in the Trinity, the Coeternity of the Sonne of God with his Father, the proceeding of the Spirit from the Father and the Sonne, the duty of baptizing infants, theſe, with ſuch other principall points, the neceſſity whereof is by none denied, are notwithſtanding in Scripture no where to be found by expreſſe literall mention, onely deduced they are out of Scripture by collection. This kind of comprehenſion in Scripture being therefore receiued, ſtill there is no doubt how far we are to proceed by collection, before the full and complete meaſure of things neceſſary be made vp. For let vs not thinke that as long as the world doth endure, the wit of man ſhall be able to ſound the bottome of that which may be concluded out of the Scripture; eſpecially if things conteined by collection do ſo far extend, as to draw in whatſoeuer may be at any time out of ſcripture but probably and coniecturally ſurmized. But let neceſſary collection be made requiſite, and we may boldly deny, that of all thoſe things which at this day are with ſo great neceſſitie vrged vpon this Church, vnder the name of reformed Church diſcipline, there is any one which their bookes hitherto haue made manifeſt to bee conteined in the Scripture. Let them, if they can, alleage but one properly belonging to their cauſe, and not common to them and vs, and ſhew the deduction thereof out of Scripture to be neceſſarie. It hath beene alreadie ſhewed, how all things neceſſarie vnto ſaluation in ſuch ſort as before we haue maintained, muſt needs be poſſible for men to know; and that many things are in ſuch ſort neceſſarie, the knowledge whereof is by the light of nature impoſſible to be attained. Whereupon it followeth, that either all fleſh is excluded from poſſibilitie of ſaluation, which to thinke were moſt barbarous; or elſe that God hath by ſupernaturall meanes reuealed the way of life ſo far forth as doth ſuffice. For this cauſe God hath ſo many times and waies ſpoken to the ſonnes of men. Neither hath he by ſpeech onely, but by writing alſo inſtructed and taught his Church. The cauſe of writing hath bene, to the end that things by him reuealed vnto the world, might haue the longer continuance, and the greater certaintie of aſſurance; by how much that which ſtandeth on record, hath in both thoſe reſpects preeminence aboue that which paſſeth from hand to hand, and hath no pennes but the tongues, no booke but the eares of men

to record it. The ſeuerall Bookes of Scripture hauing had each ſome ſeuerall occaſion and particular purpoſe which cauſed them to bee written, the contents thereof are according to the exigence of that ſpeciall end whereunto they are intended. Hereupon it groweth, that euery Booke of holy Scripture doth take out of all kinds of truth, [a] naturall, [b] hiſtoricall, [c] forreine, [d] ſupernaturall, ſo much as the matter handled requireth. Now for as much as there haue beene reaſons alleaged ſufficient to conclude, that all things neceſſarie vnto ſaluation muſt bee made knowne, and that God himſelfe hath therefore reuealed his will, becauſe otherwiſe men could not haue knowne ſo much as is neceſſarie; his ſurceaſing to ſpeake to the world ſince the publiſhing of the Goſpell of Ieſus Chriſt, and the deliuerie of the ſame in writing, is vnto vs a manifeſt token that the way of ſaluation is now ſufficiently opened, and that wee neede no other meanes for our full inſtruction, then God hath alreadie furniſhed vs withall. The maine drift of the whole new Teſtament, is that which Saint *Iohn* ſetteth downe as the purpoſe of his owne Hiſtorie, *Theſe things are written, that yee might beleeue that Ieſus is Chriſt the Sonne of God, and that in beleeuing yee might haue life through his name.* The drift of the olde, that which the Apoſtle mentioneth to *Timothie, The holy Scriptures are able to make thee wiſe vnto ſaluation.* So that the generall ende both of olde and newe is one; the difference betweene them conſiſting in this, that the olde did make wiſe by teaching ſaluation through Chriſt that ſhould come; the newe, by teaching that Chriſt the Sauiour is come, and that Ieſus whom the Iewes did crucifie, and whom God did raiſe againe from the dead, is hee. When the Apoſtle therefore affirmeth vnto *Timothie,* that the olde was able to make him wiſe to ſaluation, it was not his meaning that the olde alone can doe this vnto vs which liue ſithence the publication of the newe. For hee ſpeaketh with preſuppoſall of the doctrine of Chriſt knowne alſo vnto *Timothie*; and therefore firſt it is ſayd, *Continue thou in thoſe things which thou haſt learned and art perſwaded, knowing of whom thou haſt beene taught them.* Againe, thoſe Scriptures hee graunteth were able to make him wiſe to ſaluation; but hee addeth, *through the faith which is in Chriſt.* Wherefore without the doctrine of the new Teſtament, teaching that Chriſt hath wrought the Redemption of the world, which Redemption the olde did foreſhew hee ſhould worke; it is not the former alone which can on our behalfe performe ſo much as the Apoſtle doth auouch, who preſuppoſeth, this when hee magnifieth that ſo highly. And as his words concerning the bookes of ancient Scripture, doe not take place but with preſuppoſall of the Goſpell of Chriſt embraced: ſo our owne words alſo, when wee extoll the complete ſufficiencie of the whole intire body of the Scripture, muſt in like ſort bee vnderſtood with this caution, that the benefite of natures light bee not thought excluded as vnneceſſarie, becauſe the neceſſitie of a Diuiner light is magnified. There is in Scripture therefore no defect, but that any man, what place or calling ſoeuer he hold in the Church of God, may haue thereby the light of his naturall vnderſtanding ſo perfected, that the one being relieued by the other, there can want no part of needfull inſtruction vnto any good worke which God himſelfe requireth, bee it naturall or ſupernaturall, belonging ſimply vn-

to

[a] *Eph.5.29.*
[b] *2.Tim.3.8.*
[c] *Tit.1.12.*
[d] *2.Pet.2.4.*

Iohn 23.31.

2.Tim.3.15.

2.Tim.3.14.

Verſe 15.

to men as men, or vnto men as they are vnited in whatſoeuer kind of ſocietie. It ſufficeth therefore that nature and Scripture doe ſerue in ſuch full ſort, that they both ioyntly, and not ſeuerally either of them, be ſo complete, that vnto euerlaſting felicitie wee neede not the knowledge of any thing more then theſe two may eaſily furniſh our minds with on all ſides: and therefore they which adde traditions as a part of ſupernaturall neceſſarie truth, haue not the truth, but are in errour. For they onely pleade, that whatſoeuer God reuealeth as neceſſary for all Chriſtian men to doe or beleeue, the ſame wee ought to embrace, whether wee haue receiued it by writing or otherwiſe; which no man denieth: when that which they ſhould confirme, who claime ſo great reuerence vnto traditions is, that the ſame traditions are neceſſarily to be acknowledged diuine and holie. For wee doe not reiect them onely becauſe they are not in the Scripture, but becauſe they are neither in Scripture, nor can otherwiſe ſufficiently by any reaſon be proued to be of God. That which is of God, and may be euidently proued to be ſo, we deny not but it hath in his kind, although vnwritten, yet the ſelfeſame force and authoritie with the written lawes of God. It is by ours acknowledged, *that the Apoſtles did in euery Church inſtitute and ordeine ſome rites and cuſtomes ſerning for the ſeemelineſſe of Church regiment, which rites and cuſtomes they haue not committed vnto writing.* Thoſe rites and cuſtomes being knowne to be Apoſtolicall, and hauing the nature of things changeable, were no leſſe to be accounted of in the Church then other things of the like degree, that is to ſay, capable in like ſort of alteration, although ſet downe in the Apoſtles writings. For both being knowne to be Apoſtolicall, it is not the manner of deliuering them vnto the Church, but the Author from whom they proceed, which doth giue them their force and credit.

Whitakerus aduerſus Bellarmin. queſt. 6. cap. 6.

Of lawes poſitiue contained in Scripture: the mutability of certaine of them, and the generall vſe of Scripture.

15 Lawes being impoſed either by each man vpon himſelfe, or by a publique ſocietie vpon the particulars thereof, or by all the nations of men vpon euery ſeuerall ſocietie, or by the Lord himſelfe vpon any or euerie of theſe; there is not amongſt theſe foure kinds any one, but containeth ſundry both naturall and poſitiue lawes. Impoſſible it is but that they ſhould fall into a number of groſſe errors, who onely take ſuch lawes for poſitiue, as haue bene made or inuented of men, and holding this poſition, hold alſo, that all poſitiue and none but poſitiue lawes are mutable. Lawes naturall doe alwayes bind; lawes poſitiue not ſo, but onely after they haue bene expreſly and wittingly impoſed. Lawes poſitiue there are in euery of thoſe kindes before mentioned. As in the firſt kinde the promiſes which we haue paſt vnto men, and the vowes we haue made vnto God; for theſe are lawes which we tye our ſelues vnto, and till we haue ſo tied our ſelues, they bind vs not. Lawes poſitiue in the ſecond kind, are ſuch as the ciuill conſtitutions peculiar vnto each particular common weale. In the third kind the law of Heraldry in warre, is poſitiue: and in the laſt all the Iudicials which God gaue vnto the people of *Iſrael* to obſerue. And although no lawes but poſitiue be mutable, yet all are not mutable which be poſitiue. Poſitiue lawes are either permanent or elſe changeable, according as the matter it ſelfe is concerning which they were firſt made. Whether God or man be the maker of them, alteration they ſo far forth admit,

Poſitiue; and either concerne men ſupernaturally as men, or elſe as parts of a ſupernaturall Societie, which ſocietie wee call the Church. To concerne men as men ſupernaturally, is to concerne them as duties which belong of neceſſitie to all, and yet could not haue beene knowne by any to belong vnto them, vnleſſe God had opened them himſelfe, in as much as they doe not depend vpon any naturall ground at all out of which they may bee deduced, but are appointed of God to ſupply the defect of thoſe naturall wayes of ſalvation, by which wee are not now able to attaine thereunto. The Church being a ſupernaturall ſocietie, doth differ from naturall ſocieties in this; that the perſons vnto whom wee aſſociate our ſelues, in the one are men ſimply conſidered as men; but they to whom wee bee ioyned in the other, are God, Angels, and holy Men. Againe, the Church being both a ſocietie, and a ſocietie ſupernaturall; although as it is a ſocietie, it haue the ſelfe-ſame originall grounds which other politique ſocieties haue, namely, the naturall inclination which all men haue vnto ſociable life, and conſent to ſome certayne bond of aſſociation, which bond is the Law that appointeth what kinde of order they ſhall be aſſociated in: yet vnto the Church, as it is a ſocietie ſupernaturall, this is peculiar, that part of the bond of their aſſociation which belong to the Church of God, muſt be a Law ſupernaturall, which God himſelfe hath reuealed concerning that kinde of worſhip which his people ſhall doe vnto him. The ſubſtance of the ſeruice of God therefore, ſo far-forth as it hath in it any thing more then the Law of reaſon doth teach, may not be inuented of men, as it is amongſt the Heathens; but muſt bee receiued from God himſelfe, as alwayes it hath beene in the Church, ſauing onely when the Church hath beene forgetfull of her duetie. Wherefore to end with a generall Rule concerning all the Lawes which God hath tyed men vnto: thoſe Lawes diuine that belong whether naturally or ſupernaturally, either to men as men, or to men as they liue in politique ſocietie, or to men as they are of that politique ſocietie which is the Church, without any further reſpect had vnto any ſuch variable accident, as the ſtate of men, and of ſocieties of men, and of the Church it ſelfe in this world is ſubiect vnto; all Lawes that ſo belong vnto men, they belong for euer, yea although they be poſitiue Lawes, vnleſſe being Poſitiue God himſelfe which made them alter them. The reaſon is, becauſe the ſubiect or matter of Lawes in generall is thus farre forth conſtant: which matter is that for the ordering whereof Lawes were inſtituted, and being inſtituted are not changeable without cauſe, neither can they haue cauſe of change, when that which gaue them their firſt inſtitution, remayneth for euer one and the ſame. On the other ſide, Lawes that were made for Men or Societies or Churches, in regard of their being ſuch as they doe not alwayes continue, but may perhaps bee cleane otherwiſe awhile after, and ſo may require to bee otherwiſe ordered then before; the Lawes of God himſelfe which are of this nature, no man indued with common ſenſe will euer denie to bee of a different conſtitution from the former, in reſpect of the ones conſtancie, and the mutabilitie of the other. And this doth ſeeme to haue beene the very cauſe why S^t. *Iohn* doth ſo peculiarly terme the doctrine that teacheth ſaluation by Ieſus Chriſt, *Euangelium æternum*, *An eternall Goſpell*; becauſe there can be no reaſon wherefore

Iſa.29. Their feare towards me was taught by the precept of men.

Apoc.14.6.

wherefore the publishing thereof should bee taken away, and any other in stead of it proclaymed, as long as the World doth continue: whereas the whole Law of Rites and Ceremonies, although deliuered with so great solemnitie, is notwithstanding cleane abrogated, in as much as it had but temporarie cause of Gods ordayning it. But that we may at the length conclude this first generall introduction vnto the nature and originall birth, as of all other Lawes, so likewise of those which the sacred Scripture contayneth, concerning the Author whereof, euen Infidels haue confessed, that he can neither erre nor deceiue; albeit about things easie and manifest vnto all men by common sense there needeth no higher consultation, because as a man whose wisedome is in waightie affaires admired, would take it in some disdayne to haue his counsell solemnely asked about a toy, so the meaneneſſe of some thing is such, that to search the Scripture of God for the ordering of them, were to derogate from the reuerend authoritie and dignitie of the Scripture, no lesse then they doe by whom Scriptures are in ordinarie talke very idly applyed vnto vaine and childish trifles: yet better it were to be superstitious, then prophane; to take from thence our direction euen in all things great or small, then to wade through matters of principall waight and moment, without euer caring what the Law of God hath, either for or against our desseignes. Concerning the custome of the very Paynims, thus much *Strabo* witnesseth, * *Men that are ciuill, doe leade their liues after one common Law appointing them what to doe. For that otherwise a multitude should without harmonie among it themselues, concurre in the doing of one thing, (for this is ciuilly to liue) or that they should in any sort menage communitie of life, it is not possible. Now Lawes or Statutes are of two sorts. For they are either receiued from gods, or else from men. And our ancient Predecessors did surely most honor and reuerence that which was from the gods; for which cause consultation with Oracles was a thing very vsuall and frequent in their times.* Did they make so much account of the voyce of their gods, which in truth were no Gods: and shall wee neglect the precious benefite of conference with those Oracles of the true and liuing God, whereof so great store is left to the Church, and whereunto there is so free, so plaine, and so easie accesse for all men? a *By thy Commandements* (this was *Dauids* confession vnto God) *thou hast made me wiser then mine Enemies.* Againe, *I haue had more vnderstanding then all my Teachers, because thy testimonies are my Meditations.* What paynes would not they haue bestowed in the studie of these Bookes, who trauailed Sea and Land to gaine the treasure of some few dayes talke with men, whose wisedome the World did make any reckoning of? b That little which some of the Heathens did chance to heare, concerning such matter as the sacred Scripture plentifully contayneth, they did in wonderfull sort affect; their speeches as oft as they make mention thereof are strange, and such as themselues could not vtter as they did other things, but still acknowledged that their wits which did euery-where else conquer hardneſſe, were with profoundneſſe here ouer-matched. Wherefore seeing that God hath indued vs with sense, to the end that wee might perceiue such things as this present life doth neede, and with reason, left that which sense cannot reach vnto, being both now and also in regard of a future estate hereafter necessarie to bee knowne, should lye obscure: finally, with the heauenly

support

Καιμοὶ δοκεῖ πρεπὸν εἶναι θεὸν ἀπλῶς καὶ ἀληθῆ εἶναι τὸν ἀρχηγὸν, καὶ ἐν τῷ λόγῳ, καὶ ἐν τῷ ἔργῳ, καὶ ἐν αὐτῷ μηδίσασθαι, μήτε ἄλλοτε ἐξαπατᾶν, μήτε καθὰ φαντασίας, μήτε καθὰ λόγους, μήτε καθὰ σημεῖον τοιοῦτον, ἀλλ' ὑπὲρ ὧν ἐστιν, Plato in fine 2. Polit.

* Πολιτικοὶ ὄντες ἀπὸ προσθήκης κοινῆ ζῶσιν. Ἄλλως γὰρ οὐκ οἷόν τε τοὺς πολλοὺς ἐν τι κατὰ ταυτὸ πολιτεύεσθαι μὴ ὁμοφρονοῦντας ἀλλήλοις, ἔστιν δὲ τὰ νομοθετούμενα, ἢ θεῖα ἢ ἀνθρώπινα. Τὰ δὲ παρείληφε τὸ ἀρχαῖον ἕτερα παρὰ θεῶν, ἢ παρὰ ἀνθρώπων. Καὶ δὴ γε ἀρχαῖα τὰ παρὰ τῶν θεῶν ὑπερβάλλον μᾶλλον καὶ διὰ τοῦτο καὶ ὁ χρησμῳδούμενος ὑπὸ τοῖς παλαιοῖς, Strab. Geogr. lib. 16.

a Psal. 119. 98.

b Vide Orphei Carmina.

ſupport of [a] prophetical reuelation, which doth open thoſe hidden myſteries that reaſon could neuer haue beene able to find out, or to haue knowne the neceſſitie of them vnto our euerlaſting good: vſe wee the precious gifts of God vnto his glorie and honour that gaue them, ſeeking by all meanes to know what the will of our God is, what righteous before him, in his ſight what holy, perfect, and good, that we may truely and faithfully doe it.

[a] ὁ γὰρ ὁ τῆς ἀτελείστου, πρὸς τοῦτο ἡ προφητικὴ φύσις, Philo de M. ſ.

16 Thus farre therefore we haue endeuoured in part to open, of what nature and force Lawes are, according vnto their ſeuerall kindes; the Law which God with himſelfe hath eternally ſet downe to follow in his owne workes; the Law which he hath made for his creatures to keepe; the Law of naturall and neceſſary Agents; the Law which Angels in heauen obey; the Law whereunto by the light of Reaſon men finde themſelues bound in that they are men; the Law which they make by compoſition for multitudes and politique Societies of men to be guided by; the Law which belongeth vnto each Nation; the Law that concerneth the fellowſhip of all; and laſtly, the Law which God himſelfe hath ſupernaturally reuealed. It might peraduenture haue beene more popular and more plauſible to vulgar eares, if this firſt diſcourſe had beene ſpent in extolling the force of Lawes, in ſhewing the great neceſſitie of them when they are good, and in aggrauating their offence by whom publique Lawes are iniuriouſly traduced. But for as much as with ſuch kind of matter the paſſions of men are rather ſtirred one way or other, then their knowledge any way ſet forward vnto the tryall of that whereof there is doubt made; I haue therefore turned aſide from that beaten path, and choſen, though a leſſe eaſie, yet a more profitable way in regard of the end we propoſe. Leſt therefore any man ſhould maruaile whereunto all theſe things tend, the drift and purpoſe of all is this, euen to ſhew in what manner as euery good and perfect gift, ſo this very gift of good and perfect Lawes is deriued from the Father of lights; to teach men a reaſon why iuſt and reaſonable Lawes are of ſo great force, of ſo great vſe in the world; and to enforme their mindes with ſome method of reducing the Lawes, whereof there is preſent controuerſie, vnto their firſt originall cauſes, that ſo it may be in euery particular ordinance thereby the better diſcerned, whether the ſame be reaſonable, iuſt and righteous, or no. Is there any thing which can either be thorowly vnderſtood, or ſoundly iudged of, till the very firſt cauſes and principles from which originally it ſpringeth bee made manifeſt? If all parts of knowledge haue beene thought by wiſe men to bee then moſt orderly deliuered and proceeded in, when they are drawne to their firſt originall; ſeeing that our whole queſtion concerneth the qualitie of Eccleſiaſticall Lawes, let it not ſeeme a labour ſuperfluous, that in the entrance thereunto all theſe ſeuerall kinds of Lawes haue been conſidered; in as much as they all concurre as principles, they all haue their forcible operations therein, although not all in like apparent and manifeſt manner. By meanes whereof it commeth to paſſe, that the force which they haue, is not obſerued of many. Eaſier a great deale it is for men by law to be taught what they ought to doe, then inſtructed how to iudge as they ſhould doe of law; the one being a thing which belongeth generally vnto all, the other ſuch as none but the wiſer and more iudicious ſort can performe. Yea the wiſeſt are alwayes touching this point the readieſt to acknow-

A concluſion ſhewing how all this belongeth to the cauſe in queſtion.

Iam. 1. 17.

Ariſt. Phyſ. lib. 1. cap. 1.

Arist. Ethic. 10. τὸ κρίνειν σ'ρ- βῶς, μέγιστον. Intelligit de legum qualitate iudicium.

acknowledge, that ſoundly to iudge of a Law, is the waightieſt thing which any man can take vpon him. But if wee will giue iudgement of the Lawes vnder which we liue, firſt, let that Law eternall be alwayes before our eyes, as being of principall force and moment to breede in religious mindes a dutifull eſtimation of all Lawes, the vſe and benefit whereof we ſee; becauſe there can be no doubt but that Lawes apparantly good, are (as it were) things coppied out of the very Tables of that high euerlaſting Law, euen as the Booke of that Law hath

Prou. 8. 15. ſaid concerning it ſelfe, *By me Kings reigne, and by me Princes decree iuſtice.* Not as if men did behold that Booke, & accordingly frame their Lawes; but becauſe it worketh in them, becauſe it diſcouereth, and (as it were) readeth it ſelfe to the world by them, when the Lawes which they make are righteous. Furthermore, although we perceiue not the goodneſſe of Lawes made; neuertheleſſe, ſith things in themſelues may haue that which wee peraduenture diſcerne not; ſhould not this breed a feare in our hearts, how we ſpeake or iudge in the worſe part concerning that, the vnaduiſed diſgrace whereof may be no meane diſhonor to him, towards whom we profeſſe all ſubmiſſion and awe? Surely, there muſt be very manifeſt iniquitie in Lawes, againſt which we ſhal be able to iuſtifie our contumelious inuectiues. The chiefeſt roote whereof, when we vſe them without cauſe, is ignorance, how Lawes inferior are deriued from that ſupreme or higheſt Law. The firſt that receiue impreſſion frō thence, are naturall agents. The Law of whoſe operations might be haply thought leſſe pertinent, when the queſtion is about Lawes for humane actions, but that in thoſe very actions which moſt ſpiritually and ſupernaturally concerne men, the Rules & Axiomes of naturall operations haue their force. What can be more immediate to our ſaluation, then our perſwaſion concerning the Law of Chriſt towards his Church? What greater aſſurance of loue towards his Church, then the knowledge of that myſticall Vnion whereby the Church is become as neere vnto Chriſt, as any one part of his fleſh is vnto other? That the Church being in ſuch ſort his, he muſt needes protect it; what proofe more ſtrong, then if a manifeſt Law ſo require, which Law it is not poſſible for Chriſt to violate? And what other Law doth the Apoſtle for this alleage, but ſuch as is both common vn-

Ephes. 5. 29. to Chriſt with vs, and vnto vs with other things naturall, *No man hateth his owne fleſh, but doth loue and cheriſh it?* The Axiomes of that Law therefore, whereby naturall Agents are guided, haue their vſe in the morall, yea, euen in the ſpirituall actions of men, and conſequently in all Lawes belonging vnto men howſoeuer. Neither are the Angels themſelues ſo farre ſeuered from vs in their kinde and manner of working, but that betweene the Law of their heauenly operations, and the actions of men in this our ſtate of mortalitie, ſuch correſpondence there is, as maketh it expedient to know in ſome ſort

Apoc. 19. 10. the one, for the others more perfect direction. Would Angels acknowledge themſelues Fellow-ſeruants with the ſonnes of men, but that both hauing one One Lord, there muſt be ſome kinde of Law which is one and the ſame to both, whereunto their obedience being perfecter, is to our weaker both a

1. Pet. 1. 12. Ephes. 3. 10. 1. Tim. 5. 21. patterne and a ſpurre? Or would the Apoſtles, ſpeaking of that which belongeth vnto Saints, as they are linked together in the bond of ſpirituall ſocietie, ſo often make mention how Angels are therewith delighted, if in things publiquely

publikely done by the Church wee are not ſomewhat to reſpect what the Angels of Heauen doe? Yea ſo farre hath the Apoſtle S. *Paul* proceeded, as to ſignifie that euen about the outward orders of the Church which ſerue but for comelineſſe, ſome regard is to bee had of Angels; who beſt like vs when wee are moſt like vnto them in all parts of decent demeanor. So that the Law of Angels wee cannot iudge altogether impertinent vnto the affaires of the Church of God. Our largeneſſe of ſpeech, how men doe find out what things reaſon bindeth them of neceſſitie to obſerue, and what it guideth them to chuſe in things which are left as arbitrary; the care wee haue had to declare the different nature of Lawes which ſeuerally concerne all men, from ſuch as belong vnto men either ciuilly or ſpiritually aſſociated, ſuch as pertain to the fellowſhip which Nations, or which Chriſtian Nations haue amongſt themſelues, and in the laſt place ſuch as concerning euery or any of theſe God himſelfe hath reuealed by his holy Word; all ſerueth but to make manifeſt, that as the actions of men are of ſundry diſtinct kindes, ſo the Lawes thereof muſt accordingly be diſtinguiſhed. There are in men operations ſome naturall, ſome rationall, ſome ſupernaturall, ſome politique, ſome finally Eccleſiaſticall. Which if wee meaſure not each by his owne proper Law, whereas the things themſelues are ſo different; there will be in our vnderſtanding and iudgement of them confuſion. As that firſt errour ſheweth whereon our oppoſites in this cauſe haue grounded themſelues. For as they rightly maintayne, that God muſt bee glorified in all things, and that the actions of men cannot tend vnto his glory, vnleſſe they be framed after his Law: So it is their error, to thinke that the only Law which God hath appointed vnto men in that behalfe is the ſacred Scripture. By that which wee worke naturally, as when we breathe, ſleepe, mooue, wee ſet forth the glory of God as naturall agents doe, albeit wee haue no expreſſe purpoſe to make that our end, nor any aduiſed determination therein to follow a Law, but do that we do (for the moſt part) not as much as thinking thereon. In reaſonable and morall actions another Law taketh place, a Law by the obſeruation whereof we glorifie God in ſuch ſort, as no creature elſe vnder man is able to doe; becauſe other creatures haue not iudgement to examine the quality of that which is done by them, and therefore in that they doe, they neither can accuſe nor approue themſelues. Men doe both, as the Apoſtle teacheth; yea, thoſe men which haue no written Law of God to ſhew what is good or euill, carrie written in their hearts the vniuerſall Law of Mankind, the Law of reaſon, wherby they iudge as by a rule which God hath giuen vnto men for that purpoſe. The Law of Reaſon doth ſomewhat direct men how to honour God as their Creatour, but how to glorifie God in ſuch ſort as is required to the end he may be an euerlaſting Sauiour, this we are taught by diuine Law, which Law both aſcertaineth the truth and ſupplieth vnto vs the want of that other Law. So that in morall actions, diuine Law helpeth exceedingly the Law of reaſon to guide mans life; but in ſupernaturall it alone guideth. Proceede wee further, let vs place man in ſome publike ſocietie with others, whether Ciuill or Spirituall: and in this caſe there is no remedie but we muſt adde yet a further Law. For although euen here likewiſe the Lawes of Nature and reaſon be of neceſſary vſe; yet ſomewhat ouer and beſides them is neceſſary, namely humane and poſitiue Law, together with that Law which is

1. Cor. 11. 10.

Pſal. 148. 7, 8, 9.

Rom. 1. 32.

Rom. 2. 15.

of commerce betweene grand ſocieties, the Law of Nations & of Nations Chriſtian. For which cauſe the Law of God hath likewiſe ſaid, *Let euery ſoule be ſubiect to the higher powers.* The publike power of all ſocieties is aboue euery ſoule contayned in the ſame ſocieties. And the principall vſe of that power is to giue Lawes vnto all that are vnder it, which Lawes in ſuch caſe we muſt obey, vnleſſe there be reaſon ſhewed which may neceſſarily inforce, that the Law of Reaſon or of God doth injoyne the contrary. Becauſe except our owne priuate, and but probable reſolutions, bee by the Law of publike determinations ouer-ruled; we take away all poſſibilitie of ſociable life in the World. A playner Example whereof then our ſelues we cannot haue. How commeth it to paſſe that wee are at this preſent day ſo rent with mutuall contentions, and that the Church is ſo much troubled about the Politie of the Church? No doubt, if men had beene willing to learne how many Lawes their actions in this life are ſubiect vnto, and what the true force of each Law is, all theſe controuerſies might haue dyed the very day they were firſt brought forth. It is both commonly ſaid, and truely, that the beſt men otherwiſe are not alwayes the beſt in regard of ſocietie. The reaſon whereof is, for that the Law of mens actions is one, if they bee reſpected only as men; and another, when they are conſidered as parts of a politike body. Many men there are, then whom nothing is more commendable when they are ſingled. And yet in ſocietie with others, none leſſe fit to anſwere the duties which are looked for at their hands. Yea, I am perſwaded, that of them with whom in this cauſe we ſtrine, there are whoſe betters among men would bee hardly found, if they did not liue amongſt men, but in ſome Wildernesſe by themſelues. The cauſe of which their diſpoſition ſo vnframeable vnto ſocieties wherein they liue, is for that they diſcerne not aright what place and force theſe ſeuerall kindes of Lawes ought to haue in all their actions. Is there queſtion either concerning the Regiment of the Church in generall, or about Conformitie betweene one Church and another, or of Ceremonies, Offices, Powers, Iuriſdiction in our owne Church? Of all theſe things they iudge by that rule which they frame to themſelues with ſome ſhew of probabilitie; and what ſeemeth in that ſort conuenient, the ſame they thinke themſelues bound to practiſe, the ſame by all meanes they labour mightily to vphold; whatſoeuer any Law of man to the contrarie hath determined they weigh it not. Thus by following the Law of priuate reaſon, where the Law of publike ſhould take place, they breede diſturbance. For the better inuring therefore of mens mindes with the true diſtinction of Lawes and of their ſeuerall force, according to the different kind and qualitie of our actions, it ſhall not peraduenture be amiſſe to ſhew in ſome one example how they all take place. To ſeeke no further, let but that be conſidered, then which there is not any thing more familiar vnto vs, our foode. What things are foode, and what are not, wee iudge naturally by ſenſe, neither need we any other Law to be our directer in that behalfe then the ſelfe-ſame which is common vnto vs with beaſts. But when wee come to conſider of food, as of a benefit which God of his bounteous goodneſſe hath prouided for all things liuing; the Law of reaſon doth here require the dutie of thankefulneſſe at our hands, towards him at whoſe hands wee haue it. And leſt appetite in the vſe of foode, ſhould leade vs beyond that which is meete, wee owe in this

Rom. 13. 1.

Πολλοὶ γὰρ ἐν μὲν τοῖς ἀκινήτοις τῇ ἀρετῇ διαφέρειν χρῶνται ἐν δὲ τοῖς πρὸς ἕτερον οὐδαμοῦ εἰσι, Arist. Eth. 5. cap. 3.

Iob 34. 3.

Pſal. 145. 15, 16.

this caſe obedience to that Law of reaſon, which teacheth mediocritie in meates and drinkes. The ſame things Diuine Law teacheth alſo, as at large wee haue ſhewed it doth all parts of morall dutie, whereunto we all of neceſſitie ſtand bound, in regard of the life to come. But of certaine kinds of food the Iewes ſometime had, and wee our ſelues likewiſe haue a Myſticall, religious, and ſupernaturall vſe; they of their Paſchall Lambe and Oblations; wee of our Bread and Wine in the Euchariſt; which vſe none but Diuine Law could inſtitute. Now as we liue in ciuill ſocietie, the ſtate of the Common-wealth wherein we liue, both may and doth require certaine Lawes concerning food; which Lawes, ſauing onely that we are members of the Common-wealth where they are of force, we ſhould not need to reſpect as rules of action, whereas now in their place and kind they muſt be reſpected and obeyed. Yea, the ſelfe-ſame matter is alſo a ſubiect wherein ſometime Eccleſiaſticall Lawes haue place; ſo that vnleſſe wee will be Authours of confuſion in the Church, our priuate diſcretion, which otherwiſe might guide vs a contrary way, muſt here ſubmit it ſelfe to bee that way guided, which the publike iudgement of the Church hath thought better. In which caſe that of *Zonaras* concerning Faſts may bee remembred. *Faſtings are good, but let good things be done in good & conuenient manner. He that tranſgreſſeth in his faſting the orders of the holy Fathers*, the poſitiue Lawes of the Church of Chriſt, muſt bee plainely told *that good things doe loſe the grace of their goodneſſe, when in good ſort they are not performed.* And as here mens priuate phanſies muſt giue place to the higher iudgement of that Church which is in authoritie a Mother ouer them: ſo the very actions of whole Churches haue, in regard of commerce and fellowſhip with other Churches, beene ſubiect to Lawes concerning food, the contrary vnto which Lawes had elſe beene thought more conuenient for them to obſerue; as by that order of abſtinence from ſtrangled and bloud may appeare; an order grounded vpon that fellowſhip which the Churches of the Gentiles had with the Iewes. Thus we ſee how euen one and the ſelfe-ſame thing is vnder diuers conſiderations conueyed through many Lawes, and that to meaſure by any one kind of Law all the actions of men, were to confound the admirable order wherein God hath diſpoſed all Lawes, each as in nature, ſo in degree, diſtinct from other. Wherefore that here wee may briefly end, of Law there can bee no leſſe acknowledged, then that her ſeate is the boſome of God, her voyce the harmony of the World, all things in Heauen and Earth doe her homage, the very leaſt as feeling her care, and the greateſt as not exempted from her power; both Angels and men and creatures of what condition ſoeuer, though each in different ſort and manner, yet all with vniforme conſent, admiring her as the Mother of their peace and ioy.

ἔστι γὰρ καλὸν τὸ νηστεύειν, ἀλλ' ὅταν μὴ καλῶς γίνηται. Zonar. in Can. Apoſt. 66.

Acts 15. 20.

OF THE LAWES OF ECCLESIASTICALL POLITIE.

The second Booke.

Concerning their First Position who vrge Reformation in the Church of England:

Namely, That Scripture is the only rule of all things which in this life may be done by men.

The matter contayned in this second Booke.

1 AN *Answere to their first proofe brought out of Scripture,* Prou.29.
2 *To their second,* 1.Cor.10.31.
3 *To their third,* 1.Tim.4.5.
4 *To their fourth,* Rom.14.23.
5 *To their proofes out of Fathers, who dispute negatively from the authoritie of holy Scripture.*
6 *To their proofe by the Scriptures custome of disputing from Diuine authoritie negatively.*
7 *An examination of their opinion concerning the force of Arguments, taken from humane authoritie, for the ordering of mens actions and perswasions.*
8 *A Declaration what the truth is in this matter.*

AS that which in the title hath beene proposed for the matter whereof wee treate, is only the Ecclesiasticall Law whereby wee are gouerned; So neyther is it my purpose to maintayne any other thing, then that which therein truth and reason shall approoue. For concerning the dealings of men who administer Gouernment, and vnto whom the execution of that Law belongeth; they haue their Iudge who sitteth in Heauen, and before whose Tribunall Seate they are accountable for whatsoeuer abuse or corruption, which (being worthily misliked in this Church) the want eyther of care or of conscience

ence in them hath bred. Wee are no Patrones of thoſe things therefore; the beſt defence whereof is ſpeedie ſuppreſſe and amendment. That which is of God wee defend, to the vttermoſt of that inabilitie which hee hath giuen: that which is otherwiſe, let it wither euen in the roote from whence it hath ſprung. Wherefore all theſe abuſes being ſeuered and ſet apart, which riſe from the corruption of men, and not from the Lawes themſelues: come we to thoſe things which in the verie whole intire forme of our Church-Politie haue bin (as wee perſwade our ſelues) iniuriouſly blamed by them who indeuor to ouerthrow the ſame, and in ſtead thereof to eſtabliſh a much worſe; onely through a ſtrong miſconceit they haue, that the ſame is grounded on diuine authoritie. Now, whether it be that through an earneſt longing deſire to ſee things brought to a peaceable end, I doe but imagine the matters whereof we contend, to be fewer then indeed they are; or elſe for that in truth they are fewer when they come to bee diſcuſt by reaſon, then otherwiſe they ſeeme, when by heate of contention they are deuided into many ſlips, and of euery branch an heape is made: ſurely, as now we haue drawne them together, chooſing out thoſe things which are requiſite to bee ſeuerally all diſcuſt, and omitting ſuch meane ſpecialties as are likely (without any great labour) to fall afterwards of themſelues; I know no cauſe why either the number or the length of theſe Controuerſies ſhould diminiſh our hope of ſeeing them end with concord and loue on all ſides; which of his infinite loue and goodneſſe the Father of all peace and vnitie graunt. Vnto which ſcope that our indeuour may the more directly tend, it ſeemeth fitteſt that firſt thoſe things bee examined, which are as ſeedes from whence the reſt that enſue haue growne. And of ſuch the moſt generall is that, wherewith wee are here to make our entrance; a queſtion not mooued (I thinke) any where in other Churches, and therefore in ours the more likely to bee ſoone (I truſt) determined: the rather for that it hath growne from no other roote, then only a deſire to enlarge the neceſſarie vſe of the Word of God; which deſire hath begotten an errour inlarging it further then (as wee are perſwaded) ſoundneſſe of truth will beare. For whereas God hath left ſundry kindes of Lawes vnto men, and by all thoſe Lawes the actions
T.C.l.1.p.59.60. of men are in ſome ſort directed; they hold that one onely Law, the Scripture, muſt bee the rule to direct in all things, euen ſo *farre as to the taking vp of a Ruſh or Straw.* About which point there ſhould not need any queſtion to grow, and that which is growne might preſently end, if they did yeeld but to theſe two reſtraints: the firſt is, not to extend the actions whereof they ſpeake, ſo low as that inſtance doth import, of taking vp a Straw, but rather keepe themſelues at the leaſt within the compaſſe of morall actions, actions which haue in them Vice or Vertue; The ſecond, not to exact at our handes for euery action the knowledge of ſome place of Scripture out of which wee ſtand bound to deduce it; as by diuers teſtimonies they ſeeke to enforce; but rather as the truth is, ſo to acknowledge, that it ſufficeth if ſuch actions bee framed according to the Law of Reaſon; the generall Axiomes, Rules, and Principles of which Law being ſo frequent in holy Scripture, there is no let but in that regard, euen out of Scripture ſuch duties may bee deduced by ſome kind of conſequence, (as by long circuit of deduction it may bee that euen all truth out of any truth may bee concluded) howbeit no man bound in ſuch ſort to deduce all his actions out of

Scripture, as if either the place be to him vnknowne whereon they may be concluded, or the reference vnto that place not preſently conſidered of, the action ſhall in that reſpect be condemned as vnlawfull. In this we diſſent, and this wee are preſently to examine.

The firſt pretended proofe of the firſt Poſition out of Scripture. *Pro.2.9. T.C.1 p.20.* I ſay that the Word of God contayneth whatſoeuer things can fall into any part of mans life. For ſo *Salomon* ſaith in the ſecond Chapter of the *Prouerbs*, *My Sonne, if thou receiue my words, &c. then thou ſhalt vnderſtand Iuſtice and iudgement, and equitie, and euery good way.*

1 In all parts of knowledge rightly ſo termed, things moſt generall are moſt ſtrong: Thus it muſt be, in as much as the certainty of our perſwaſion touching particulars, dependeth altogether vpon the credit of thoſe generalities out of which they grow. Albeit therefore euery cauſe admit not ſuch infallible euidence of proofe, as leaueth no poſſibility of doubt or ſcruple behind it; yet they who claime the generall aſſent of the whole World vnto that which they teach, and doe not feare to giue very hard and heauy ſentence vpon as many as refuſe to embrace the ſame, muſt haue ſpeciall regard that their firſt foundations and grounds bee more then ſlender probabilities. This whole queſtion which hath beene mooued about the kinde of Church Regiment, wee could not but for our owne reſolutions ſake, endeuour to vnrip and ſift; following therein as neere as we might, the conduct of that iudiciall method which ſerueth beſt for inuention of truth. By meanes whereof hauing found this the head Theoreme of all their Diſcourſes, who pleade for the change of Eccleſiaſticall gouernment in England, namely, *That the Scripture God is in ſuch ſort the rule of humane actions, that ſimply whatſoeuer we do, & are not by it directed thereunto, the ſame is ſin*; we hold it neceſſary that the proofes hereof be weighed: be they of weight ſufficient or otherwiſe, it is not ours to iudge and determine: onely what difficulties there are, which as yet with-hold our aſſent, till wee bee further and better ſatiſfied, I hope, no indifferent amongſt them will ſcorne or refuſe to heare. Firſt, therefore, whereas they alleage *that wiſdome* doth teach men *euery good way*, and haue thereupon inferred, that no way is good in any kind of action, vnleſſe wiſdome do by Scripture leade vnto it: ſee they not plainly how they reſtraine the manifold wayes which wiſdome hath to teach men by, vnto one only way of teaching, which is by Scripture? The bounds of wiſdome are large, and within them much is contained. Wiſdome was *Adams* Inſtructer in Paradiſe: Wiſdome indued the Fathers who liued before the Law, with the knowledge of holy things: by the wiſdome of the Law of God, *Dauid* attained to excell others in vnderſtanding; & *Salomon* likewiſe to excell *Dauid*, by the ſelfe ſame wiſdom of God, teaching him many things beſides the Law. The waies of well-doing are in number euen as many, as are the kinds of voluntary actions: ſo that whatſoeuer we doe in this World and may doe it ill, we ſhew our ſelues therein by well-doing to be wiſe. Now if wiſedome did teach men by Scripture not only all the wayes that are right and good in ſome certaine kind, according to that of *S. *Paul*, cõcerning the vſe of Scripture; but did ſimply without any maner of exception, reſtraint, or diſtinction, teach euery way of doing well, there is no art but ſcripture ſhould teach it, becauſe euery art doth teach the way how to do ſome thing or other well. To teach men therefore wiſdome profeſſeth, and to teach them euery good way: but not euery good

Pſal.119.95.

* 2.Tim.3.16. *The whole Scripture is giuen by inſpiration of God, and is profitable to teach, to improoue, to correct, and to inſtruct in righteouſneſſe, that the Man of God may bee abſolute, being made perfect vnto all good workes.* Hee meaneth all and only thoſe good workes which belong vnto vs as we are men of God, and which vnto ſaluation are neceſſary. Or if we vnderſtand by men of God, Gods Miniſters, there is not required in them an vniuerſall skill of euery good worke or way, but an abilitie to teach whatſoeuer men are bound to doe that they may be ſaued. And with this kinde of knowledge the Scripture ſufficeth to furniſh them as touching matter.

way

way by one way of teaching. Whatſoeuer either men on Earth, or the Angels of Heauen doe know, it is as a drop of that vnemptiable Fountaine of wiſdome; which wiſedome hath diuerſly imparted her treaſures vnto the World. As her wayes are of ſundry kindes, ſo her manner of teaching is not meerely one and the ſame. Some things ſhee openeth by the ſacred Bookes of Scripture; ſome things by the glorious Workes of Nature: with ſome things ſhe inſpireth them from aboue by ſpirituall influence; with ſome things ſhee leadeth and trayneth them onely by wordly experience and practice. We may not ſo in any one ſpeciall kind admire her, that wee diſgrace her in any other; but let all her wayes be according vnto their place and degree adored.

The ſecond proofe out of Scripture. 1. *Cor.* 10 31. *T C.* l. 1. p. 26. S. *Paul* ſayth that whether we eat or drink or whatſoeuer we do, we muſt doe it to the glorie of God. But no man can glorifie God in any thing but by obedience, & there is no obedience but in reſpect of the Commandement and Word of God: Therefore it followeth that the Word of God directeth a man in all his actions.

3 That *all things be done to the glory of God*, the bleſſed Apoſtle (it is true) exhorteth. The glory of God is the admirable excellencie of that vertue diuine, which being made manifeſt, cauſeth Men and Angels to extoll his greatneſſe, and in regard thereof to feare him. By being glorified, it is not meant that hee doth receiue any augmentation of glory at our hands; but his Name wee glorifie, when wee teſtifie our acknowledgement of his glorie. Which albeit wee moſt effectually doe by the vertue of obedience: neuertheleſſe it may bee perhaps a queſtion, whether Saint *Paul* did meane that we ſinne as oft as euer we go about any thing, without an expreſſe intent and purpoſe to obey God therein. He ſaith of himſelfe, *I doe in all things pleaſe all men, ſeeking not mine owne commoditie, but* rather the good *of many, that they may bee ſaued.* Shall it hereupon bee thought, that Saint *Paul* did not moue either hand or foot, but with expreſſe intent euen thereby to further the common ſaluation of men? Wee moue, wee ſleepe, wee take the Cuppe at the hand of our friend, a number of things we oftentimes doe, onely to ſatisfie ſome naturall deſire, without preſent expreſſe and actuall reference vnto any Commandement of God. Vnto his glorie euen theſe things are done which wee naturally performe, and not onely that which morally and ſpiritually wee doe. For by euery effect proceeding from the moſt concealed inſtincts of Nature, his power is made manifeſt. But it doth not therefore follow, that of neceſſitie wee ſhall ſinne, vnleſſe wee expreſly intend this in euery ſuch particular. But bee it a thing which requireth no more then onely our generall preſuppoſed willingneſſe to pleaſe God in all things; or bee it a matter wherein wee cannot ſo glorifie the Name of God as wee ſhould, without an actuall intent to doe him in that particular ſome ſpeciall obedience: yet for any thing there is in this ſentence alleaged to the contrarie, God may be glorified by obedience, and obeyed by performance of his will, and his will bee performed with an actuall intelligent deſire to fulfill that Law which maketh knowne what his will is, although no ſpeciall clauſe or ſentence of Scripture be in euery ſuch action ſet before mens eyes to warrant it. For Scripture is not the onely Law wherby God hath opened his will touching all things that may be done; but there are other kinde of Lawes which notifie the will of God, as in the former Booke hath bin prooued at large: Nor is there any Law of God, whereunto he doth not account our obedience his glory. *Doe therefore all things vnto the glory of God* (ſaith the Apoſtle) *be inoffenſiue both to the Iewes and Grecians, and the Church of God; euen as I pleaſe all men in all things, not ſeeking mine owne commoditie, but manies that they may be ſaued.* In the leaſt thing

thing done diſobediently towardes God, or offenſiuely againſt the good of men whoſe benefit wee ought to ſeeke for as for our owne, wee plainely ſhew that wee doe not acknowledge God to bee ſuch as indeed hee is, and conſequently that we glorifie him not. This the bleſſed Apoſtle teacheth: but doth any Apoſtle teach, that wee cannot glorifie God otherwiſe, then onely in doing what we find that God in Scripture commandeth vs to doe? The Churches diſperſed amongſt the Heathen in the Eaſt part of the World, are by the Apoſtle Saint *Peter* exhorted, to haue their *converſation honeſt amongſt the Gentiles, that they which ſpake euill of them as of euill doers, might by the good workes which they ſhould ſee, glorifie God in the day of viſitation.* As long as that which Chriſtians did was good, and no way ſubiect to iuſt reproofe, their vertuous converſation was a meane to worke the Heathens converſion vnto Chriſt. Seeing therefore this had beene a thing altogether impoſſible, but that Infidels themſelues did diſcerne, in matters of life and converſation, when Beleeuers did well, and when otherwiſe; when they glorified their heauenly Father, and when not: it followeth that ſome things wherein God is glorified, may be ſome other way knowne, then onely by the ſacred Scripture; of which Scripture the Gentiles being vtterly ignorant, did notwithſtanding iudge rightly of the qualitie of Chriſtian mens actions. Moſt certaine it is that nothing but onely ſinne, doth diſhonour God. So that to glorifie him in all things, is to doe nothing whereby the Name of God may bee blaſphemed; nothing whereby the ſaluation of Iew or Grecian or any in the Church of Chriſt may bee let or hindred, nothing whereby his Law is tranſgreſt. But the queſtion is, whether onely Scripture doe ſhew whatſoeuer God is glorified in.

1.Pet.2.12.

Rom.2.24.

1.Cor.10.32. Rom.2.23.

3 And though meates and drinkes be ſaid to bee ſanctified by the Word of God, and by Prayer: yet neyther is this a reaſon ſufficient to prooue, that by Scripture wee muſt of neceſſitie be directed, in euery light and common thing which is incident into any part of mans life. Onely it ſheweth that vnto vs the Word, that is to ſay, the Goſpell of Chriſt, hauing not deliuered any ſuch difference of things cleane and vncleane, as the Law of *Moſes* did vnto the Iewes; there is no cauſe but that we may vſe indifferently all things, as long as we doe not (like Swine) take the benefit of them, without a thankefull acknowledgement of his liberalitie and goodneſſe, by whoſe prouidence they are inioyed: and therefore the Apoſtle gaue warning beforehand to take heed of ſuch as ſhould inioyne to *abſtaine from meates, which God hath created to bee receiued with thankeſgiuing, by them which beleeue and know the Truth. For euery creature of God is good, and nothing to be refuſed, if it bee receiued with thankeſgiuing, becauſe it is ſanctified by the Word of God and Prayer.* The Goſpell, by not making many things vncleane, as the Law did, hath ſanctified thoſe things generally to all, which particularly each man vnto himſelfe muſt ſanctifie by a reuerend and holy vſe: which will hardly be drawne ſo farre, as to ſerue their purpoſe, who haue imagined the Word in ſuch ſort to ſanctifie all things, that neither food can be taſted, nor rayment put on, nor in the World any thing done, but this deed muſt needs be ſinne in them, which doe not firſt know it appointed vnto them by Scripture before they doe it.

The third Scripture proofe. 1.Tim.4.5. And that which S. Paul ſaid of meates and drinkes, that they are ſanctified vnto vs by the word of God, the ſame is to bee vnderſtanded of all things elſe whatſoeuer wee haue the vſe of. T.C.l.1.p.10. 2.Tim.4.

4. But

The fourth Scripture proofe. *Rom.* 14. 23. *T.C.l.* 1. p. 27.

4. But to come vnto that which of all other things in Scripture is moſt ſtood vpon; that place of Saint *Paul* they ſay, is *of all other moſt cleere, where ſpeaking of thoſe things which are called indifferent, in the end hee concludeth, that whatſoeuer is not of faith, is ſinne. But faith is not but in reſpect of the Word of God. Therefore whatſoeuer is not done by the Word of God, is ſinne.* Whereunto we anſwere, that albeit the name of faith being properly and ſtrictly taken, it muſt needs haue reference vnto ſome vttered word, as the obiect of beliefe: nevertheleſſe ſith the ground of credit is the credibilitie of things credited; and things are made credible, eyther by the knowne condition and qualitie of the vtterer, or by the manifeſt likelihood of Truth which they haue in themſelues; hereupon it riſeth, that whatſoeuer wee are perſwaded of, the ſame wee are generally ſaid to beleeue. In which generalitie the obiect of faith may not ſo narrowly bee reſtrained, as if the ſame did extend no further then to the onely Scriptures of God. *Though* (ſaith our Sauiour) *ye beleeue not mee, beleeue my workes; that ye may know and beleeue that the Father is in mee, and I in him. The other Diſciples ſaid vnto* THOMAS, *Wee haue ſeene the Lord,* but his anſwere vnto them was, *Except I ſee in his hands the print of the nailes, and put my finger into them, I will not beleeue.* Can there be any thing more plaine, then that which by theſe two ſentences appeareth, namely, that there may bee a certaine beliefe grounded vpon other aſſurance then Scripture; any thing more cleere, then that wee are ſaid not onely to beleeue the things which we know by anothers relation, but euen whatſoeuer wee are certainely perſwaded of, whether it bee by reaſon, or by ſenſe? For as much therefore as [h] it is granted that Saint *Paul* doth meane nothing elſe by *Faith*, but onely *a full perſwaſion that that which wee doe is well done*; againſt which kinde of faith or perſwaſion as Saint *Paul* doth count it ſinne to enterprize any thing, [i] ſo likewiſe ſome of the very Heathen haue taught, as TVLLY, *that nothing ought to bee done whereof thou doubteſt whether it be right or wrong; whereby it appeareth that euen thoſe which had no knowledge of the Word of God, did ſee much of the equitie of this which the Apoſtle requireth of a Chriſtian man:* I hope wee ſhall not ſeeme altogether vnneceſſarily to doubt of the ſoundneſſe of their opinion, who thinke ſimply that nothing but onely the Word of God, can giue vs aſſurance in any thing we are to do, and reſolue vs that we doe well. For might not the Iewes haue beene fully perſwaded that they did well to thinke (if they had ſo thought) that in Chriſt God the Father was, although the onely ground of this their faith, had beene the wonderfull workes they ſaw him doe? Might not, yea, did not *Thomas* fully in the end perſwade himſelfe, that he did well to thinke that body, which now was rayſed, to be the ſame which had beene crucified? That which gaue *Thomas* this aſſurance was his ſenſe; THOMAS, *becauſe thou haſt ſeene, thou beleeueſt*, ſaith our Sauiour. What Scripture had *Tully* for his aſſurance? Yet I nothing doubt but that they who alleage him, thinke hee did well to ſet downe

Pſal. 19. 8. *Apoc.* 3. 14. 2. *Cor.* 1. 18.

Ioh. 10. 38.

Ioh. 20. 25.

Ioh. 20. 31.

h And if any will ſay, that S. *Paul* meaneth there a full πληροφορίαν and perſwaſion that that which he doth is well done, I graunt it. But from whence can that ſpring but from Faith? how can we perſwade and aſſure our ſelues that we do wel, but whereas we haue the Word of God for our warrant? *T.C.l.* 1. p. 27.

i What alſo that ſome euen of thoſe Heathen men haue taught, that nothing ought to be done, whereof thou doubteſt whether it be right or wrong? Whereby it appeareth, that euen thoſe which had no knowledge of the Word of God, did ſee much of the equitie of this which the Apoſtle requireth of a Chriſtian man: and that the chiefeſt difference is, that where they ſent men for the difference of good & euill to the light of reaſon, in ſuch things the Apoſtle ſendeth them to the Schole of Chriſt in his Word, which only is able through faith to giue them aſſurance & reſolution in their doings. *T.C.l.* 1. p. 60

downe in writing a thing so consonant vnto truth. Finally, we all beleeue that the Scriptures of God are Sacred, and that they haue proceeded from God, our selues we assure that wee doe right well in so beleeuing. We haue for this point a demonstration sound and infallible. But it is not the Word of God which doth or possibly can assure vs, that wee doe well to thinke it his Word. For if any one Booke of Scripture did giue testimonie to all; yet still that Scripture which giueth credit to the rest, would require another Scripture to giue credit vnto it: neyther could we euer come vnto any pause whereon to rest our assurance this way: so that vnlesse besides Scripture there were some thing which might assure vs that we doe well, we could not thinke we doe well, no not in being assured that Scripture is a sacred and holy Rule of well doing. On which determination wee might bee contented to stay our selues without further proceeding herein, but that wee are drawne on into larger speech by reason of their so great earnestnesse, who beate more and more vpon these last alledged words, as being of all other most pregnant. Whereas therefore, they still argue, that *whersoeuer Faith is wanting, there is sinne*, and *in euery action not commanded, Faith is wanting*; Ergo, *in euery action not commanded, there is sinne*: I would demand of them; first, for as much as the nature of things indifferent is neyther to be commanded nor forbidden, but left free and arbitrarie; how there can be any thing indifferent, if for want of faith sinne be committed, when any thing not commanded is done? So that of necessitie they must adde somewhat, and at least wise thus set it downe: In euerie action not commanded of God or permitted with approbation, Faith is wanting, and for want of Faith there is sinne. The next thing we are to enquire is, what those things bee which God permitteth with approbation, and how we may know them to be so permitted. When there are vnto one end sundrie meanes, as for example, for the sustenance of our bodies many kindes of food, many sorts of rayment to cloath our nakednesse, and so in other things of like condition: here the end it selfe being necessarie, but not so any one meane thereunto; necessarie that our bodies should be both fed and clothed, howbeit no one kind of food or rayment necessary; therefore we hold these things free in their owne nature and indifferent. The choice is left to our owne discretion, except a principall bond of some higher duetie remoue the indifferencie that such things haue in themselues. Their indifferencie is remoued, if eyther wee take away our owne libertie, as *Ananias* did, for whom to haue sold or held his possessions it was indifferent, till his solemne Vow and Promise vnto God had strictly bound him one onely way: or if God himselfe haue precisely abridged the same, by restraynyng vs vnto, or by barring vs from some one or more things of many, which otherwise were in themselues altogether indifferent. Many fashions of Priestly attire there were, whereof *Aaron* and his Sonnes might haue had their free choice without sinne, but that God expressely tyed them vnto one. All meats indifferent vnto the Iew, were it not that God by name excepted some, as Swines flesh. Impossible therefore it is we should otherwise thinke, then that what things God doth neyther command nor forbid, the same he permitteth with approbation eyther to be done or left vndone. *All things are lawfull vnto me*, saith the Apostle, speaking as it seemeth, in the person of the Christian Gentile for maintenance of libertie in things indifferent; whereunto his

T.C.l.1.p.58.

Acts 5.

Exod. 39. l. 43. Levit. 11.

1.Cor.6.12.

answere

anſwere is, that neuertheleſſe *All things are not expedient*; in things indifferent there is a choice, they are not alwaies equally expediēt. Now in things although not commanded of God, yet lawfull becauſe they are permitted, the queſtion is, what light ſhall ſhew vs the conueniencie which one hath aboue another. For anſwer, their finall determination is, that *whereas the Heathen did ſend men for the difference of good and euill to the light of reaſon, in ſuch things the Apoſtle ſendeth vs to the Schoole of Chriſt in his Word, which only is able through faith to giue vs aſſurance and reſolution in our doings.* Which word *Only*, is vtterly without poſſibility of euer being proued. For what if it were true concerning things indifferent, that vnleſſe the Word of the Lord had determined of the free vſe of them, there could haue bin no lawful vſe of them at all; which notwithſtanding is vntrue; becauſe it is not the Scriptures ſetting downe ſuch things as indifferent, but their not ſetting downe as neceſſary, that doth make them to be indifferent: yet this to our preſent purpoſe ſerueth nothing at all. Wee inquire not now whether any thing be free to be vſed, which Scripture hath not ſet downe as free: but concerning things knowne and acknowledged to be indifferent, whether particularly in chooſing any one of them before another we ſinne, if any thing but Scripture direct vs in this our choice. When many meates are ſet before me, all are indifferent, none vnlawfull; I take one as moſt conuenient. If Scripture require me ſo to doe, then is not the thing indifferent, becauſe I muſt doe what Scripture requireth. They are all indifferent; I might take any, Scripture doth not require of mee to make any ſpeciall choice of one: I doe notwithſtanding make choice of one, my diſcretion teaching me ſo to doe. A hard caſe, that hereupon I ſhould be iuſtly condemned of ſin. Nor let any man think, that following the iudgement of naturall diſcretion in ſuch caſes, we can haue no aſſurance that we pleaſe God. For to the author and God of our nature, how ſhall any operation proceeding in naturall ſort, be in that reſpect vnacceptable? The nature which himſelfe hath giuen to work by, he cannot but be delighted with, when we exerciſe the ſame any way without Commandement of his to the contrary. My deſire is to make this cauſe ſo manifeſt, that if it were poſſible, no doubt or ſcruple concerning the ſame, might remaine in any mans cogitation. Some truths there are, the veritie whereof time doth alter: as it is now true that Chriſt is riſen from the dead; which thing was not true at ſuch time as Chriſt was liuing on earth, and had not ſuffered. It would be knowne therefore, whether this which they teach concerning the ſinfull ſtaine of all actions not commanded of God, be a truth that doth now appertaine vnto vs only, or a perpetuall truth, in ſuch ſort that from the firſt beginning of the world vnto the laſt conſummation thereof, it neither hath bin, nor can be otherwiſe. I ſee not how they can reſtraine this vnto any particular time, how they can think it true now and not alwaies true, that in euery action not commanded there is for want of faith ſinne. Then let them caſt backe their eies vnto former generations of men, and marke what was done in the prime of the World, *Seth, Enoch, Noah, Sem, Abraham, Iob*, and the reſt that liued before any ſyllable of the Law of God was written, did they not ſinne as much as we doe in euery action not commanded? That which God is vnto vs by his Sacred Word, the ſame he was vnto them by ſuch like meanes as *Eliphaz* in *Iob* deſcribeth. If therefore we ſinne in euery action which the Scripture commandeth vs not, it followeth that they did the like

Iob. 4. 19.

like in all ſuch actions as were not by Reuelation from Heauen exacted at their hands. Vnleſſe God from Heauen did by Viſion ſtill ſhew them what to doe, they might doe nothing, not eate, not drinke, not ſleepe, not mooue. Yea, but euen as in darkeneſſe, candlelight may ſerue to guide mens ſteps, which to vſe in the day were madneſſe; ſo when God had once deliuered his Law in Writing, it may be, they are of opinion, that it muſt needes be ſinne for men to doe any thing, which was not there commanded them to doe, whatſoeuer they might doe before. Let this be graunted, and it ſhall hereupon plainely enſue, either that the light of Scripture once ſhining in the World, all other light of nature is therewith in ſuch ſort drowned, that now wee need it not, neyther may we longer vſe it; or if it ſtand vs in any ſtead, yet as *Ariſtotle* ſpeaketh of men whom Nature hath framed for the ſtate of ſeruitude, ſaying, *They haue no reaſon ſo far forth as to conceiue when others direct them*, but little or none in directing themſelues by themſelues; ſo likewiſe our naturall capacitie and iudgement muſt ſerue vs onely for the right vnderſtanding of that which the Sacred Scripture teacheth. Had the Prophets who ſucceeded *Moſes*, or the bleſſed Apoſtles which followed them, bin ſetled in this perſwaſion, neuer would they haue taken ſo great paines in gathering together naturall Arguments, thereby to teach the faithfull their duties. To vſe vnto them any other motiue then *Scriptum eſt, Thus it is written*, had bin to teach them other grounds of their actions then Scripture; which I grant, they alleage commonly but not onely. Onely Scripture they ſhould haue alleaged, had they bin thus perſwaded, that ſo farre forth we doe ſinne, as we doe any thing otherwiſe directed then by Scripture. Saint *Auguſtine* was reſolute in points of Chriſtianitie to credite none, how godly and learned ſoeuer he were, vnleſſe he confirmed his ſentence by the Scriptures, *or by ſome reaſon not contrarie to them*. Let them therefore with S. *Auguſtine*, reiect and condemne that which is not grounded either on the Scripture, or on ſome reaſon not contrarie to Scripture, & we are readie to giue them our hands in token of friendly conſent with them.

Ariſt. Pol. 1.

Auguſt. Ep. 18.

5. But againſt this it may be obiected, and is, that the Fathers doe nothing more vſually in their Books, then draw arguments from the Scripture negatiuely in reproofe of that which is euil; *Scriptures teach it not, auoid it therfore*; theſe Diſputes with the Fathers are ordinarie, neither is it hard to ſhew that the Prophets themſelues haue ſo reaſoned. Which Arguments being ſound and good, it ſhould ſeeme that it cannot be vnſound or euill to hold ſtill the ſame aſſertion, againſt which hitherto we haue diſputed. For if it ſtand with reaſon thus to argue, Such a thing is not taught vs in Scripture, therefore we may not receiue or allow it: how ſhould it ſeeme vnreaſonable to thinke, that whatſoeuer we may lawfully doe, the Scripture by commanding it muſt make it lawfull? But how far ſuch Arguments doe reach, it ſhall the better appeare by conſidering the matter wherein they haue beene vrged. Firſt therefore, this we conſtantly deny, that of ſo many teſtimonies as they are able to produce for the ſtrength of negatiue arguments, any one doth generally (which is the poynt in queſtion) condemne either all opinions as falſe, or all actions as vnlawfull, which the Scripture teacheth vs not. The moſt that can be collected out of them is onely, that in ſome caſes a negatiue argument taken from Scripture is ſtrong; wherof no man indued with iudgement can doubt. But doth the ſtrength of ſome negatiue Argument

The firſt aſſertion indeuoured to be proued by the vſe of taking arguments negatiuely from the authoritie of Scripture: which kinde of diſputing is vſuall in the Fathers.

prooue this kind of negatiue Argument ſtrong, by force whereof all things are denied which Scripture affirmeth not, or all things which Scripture preſcribeth not, condemned? The queſtion betweene vs is concerning matter of action, what things are lawfull or vnlawfull for men to doe. The ſentences alleaged out of the Fathers, are as peremptorie and as large in euery reſpect for matter of opinion, as of action: which argueth that in truth they neuer meant any otherwiſe to tye the one then the other vnto Scripture, both being thereunto equally tyed, as farre as each is required in the ſame kind of neceſſitie vnto Saluation. If therefore it be not vnlawfull to know, and with full perſwaſion to beleeue, much more then Scripture alone doth teach; if it be againſt all ſenſe and reaſon to condemne the knowledge of ſo many Artes and Sciences as are otherwiſe learned then in Holy Scripture, notwithſtanding the manifeſt ſpeeches of ancient Catholike Fathers which ſeeme to cloſe vp within the boſome thereof all manner good and lawfull knowledge: wherefore ſhould theſe wordes be thought more effectuall, to ſhew that we may not in deeds and practice, then they are to proue that in ſpeculation and knowledge, we ought not to goe any farther then the Scripture? Which Scripture being giuen to teach matters of beliefe no leſſe then of action; the Fathers muſt needes be, and are euen as plaine againſt credit, beſides the relation; as againſt practiſe, without the Iniunction of the Scripture.

Aug. contr. liter. Petil. l. 3. c. 6. Saint *Auguſtine* hath ſaid, *Whether it be queſtion of Chriſt, or whether it be queſtion of his Church, or of what thing ſoeuer the queſtion be; I ſay not if we, but if an Angell from Heauen ſhall tell vs any thing beſide that you haue receiued in the Scripture vnder the Law and Goſpell, let him be accurſed.* In like ſort TERTVLLIAN, *Tertull. de præſcrip. aduerſ.* *We may not giue our ſelues this libertie to bring in any thing of our will, nor chooſe any thing that other men bring in of their will; we haue the Apoſtles themſelues for Authors, which themſelues brought nothing of their owne will, but the diſcipline which they receiued of Chriſt, they deliuered faithfully vnto the people.*

T. C. l. 2. p. 81. *Auguſtine* ſaith, whether it be queſtion of Chriſt, or whether it bee queſtion of his Church, &c. And leſt the Anſwerer ſhould reſtraine the generall ſaying of *Auguſtine* vnto the Doctrine of the Goſpell, ſo that hee would thereby ſhut out the Diſcipline; euen *Tertullian* himſelfe before he was embrued with the Hereſie of *Montanus*, giueth teſtimonie vnto the Diſcipline in theſe words, *We may not giue our ſelues, &c.* In which place the name of diſcipline importeth not as they who alleage it would faine haue it conſtrued; but as any man who noteth the circumſtance of the place, and the occaſion of vttering the words, will eaſily acknowledge; euen the ſelfe-ſame thing it ſignifieth, which the name of Doctrine doth, and as well might the one as the other there haue been vſed. To helpe them farther, doth not S. *Ierome* after the ſelfe-ſame manner diſpute, *We beleeue it not becauſe we reade it not?* Yea, *We ought not ſo much as to know the things which the Booke of the Law containeth not*, ſaith S. *Hilarie.* *Hieron. contra Heluid.* *Hilar. in Pſ. 131*

Shall we hereupon then conclude, that we may not take knowledge of, or giue credit vnto any thing, which ſenſe, or experience, or report, or art doth propoſe, vnleſſe wee finde the ſame in Scripture? No, it is too plaine that ſo farre to extend their ſpeeches, is to wreſt them againſt their true intent and meaning. To vrge any thing vpon the Church, requiring thereunto that Religious aſſent of Chriſtian beliefe, where with the words of the Holy Prophets are receiued; to vrge any thing as part of that ſupernaturall and Celeſtially reuealed Truth which God hath taught, and not to ſhew it in Scripture, this did the ancient Fathers euermore thinke vnlawfull, impious, execrable. And thus as their ſpeeches were meant, ſo by vs they muſt be reſtrained. As for thoſe alleaged words

of

of Cyprian, *The Chriſtian Religion ſhall find, that out of this Scripture Rules of all Doctrines haue ſprung, and that from hence doth ſpring, and hither doth returne whatſoeuer the Eccleſiaſticall Diſcipline doth containe:* ſurely this place would neuer haue beene brought forth in this cauſe, if it had bin but once read ouer in the Author himſelfe, out of whom it is cited. For the words are vttered concerning that one principall commandement of loue, in the honour whereof hee ſpeaketh after this ſort: *Surely this commandement containeth the Law and the Prophets, and in this one Word is the Abridgement of all the Volumes of Scripture: This Nature, and Reaſon, and the authoritie of thy Word, ô Lord, doth proclaime, this we haue heard out of thy mouth, herein the perfection of all Religion doth conſiſt. This is the firſt commandement and the laſt: this being written in the Booke of Life, is (as it were) an euerlaſting leſſon both to Men and Angels. Let Chriſtian Religion reade this one Word, and meditate vpon this Commandement, and out of this Scripture it ſhall find the Rules of all Learning to haue ſprung, and from hence to haue riſen, and hither to returne whatſoeuer the Eccleſiaſticall Diſcipline containeth; and that in all things it is vaine and bootleſſe which Charitie confirmeth not.* Was this a ſentence (trow you) of ſo great force to proue that Scripture is the only rule of all the actions of men? Might they not hereby euen as wel proue, that one Commandement of Scripture is the only rule of all things, and ſo exclude the reſt of the Scripture, as now they doe all meanes beſides Scripture? But thus it fareth, when too much deſire of contradiction cauſeth our ſpeech rather to paſſe by number, then to ſtay for waight. Well, but *Tertullian* doth in this caſe ſpeake yet more plainely: *The Scripture* (ſaith he) *denieth what it noteth not:* which are indeed the words of *Tertullian*. But what? the Scripture reckoneth vp the Kings of Iſrael, and amongſt thoſe Kings *Dauid*: the Scripture reckoneth vp the ſons of *Dauid*, and amongſt thoſe ſonnes *Salomon*. To proue that amongſt the Kings of Iſrael, there was no *Dauid* but only one, no *Salomon* but one in the ſons of *Dauid*, *Tertullians* Argument will fitly proue. For in as much as the Scripture did propoſe to reckon vp all, if there were moe, it would haue named them. In this caſe *the Scripture doth denie the thing it noteth not.* Howbeit I could not but thinke that man to doe mee ſome piece of manifeſt iniury, which would hereby faſten vpon me a generall opinion, as if I did thinke the Scripture to denie the very reigne of King *Henry* the Eight, becauſe it no where noteth that any ſuch King did reigne. *Tertullians* ſpeech is probable concerning ſuch matter as hee there ſpeaketh of. There was, ſaith *Tertullian*, no ſecond *Lamech*, like to him that had two wiues: the Scripture denieth what it noteth not. As therefore it noteth one ſuch to haue bin in that Age of the World; ſo had there beene moe, it would by likelihood as well haue noted many as one. What inferre we now hereupon? *There was no ſecond Lamech; the Scripture denieth what it noteth not.* Were it conſonant vnto reaſon to diuorce theſe two ſentences, the former of which doth ſhew how the later is reſtrained, and not marking the former, to conclude by the later of them, that ſimply whatſoeuer any man at this day doth thinke true, is by the Scripture denied, vnleſſe it be there affirmed to be true? I wonder that a caſe ſo weake and feeble

T.C.lib.1.pag.8. Let him heare what *Cyprian* ſayth: The Chriſtian Religion (ſayth hee) ſhall find, that &c.

Proferet hoc mandatum legem completitur & Prophetas, & in hoc verbo omnium Scripturarum volumina coarctantur. Hoc natura, hoc ratio, hoc Domine, verbi tui clamat authoritas, hoc ex ore tuo audiuimus, hic inuenit conſummationem omnis Religio. Primum eſt hoc mandatum & vltimum; hoc in libro vitæ conſcriptum indeficientem & hominibus & Angelis exhibet lectionem. Legat hoc vnum verbum & in hoc mandato meditetur Chriſtiana Religio, & inueniet ex HAC Scriptura omnium doctrinarum regulas emanaſſe, & hinc naſci & huc reuerti quicquid Eccleſiaſtica continet diſciplina, & in omnibus irritum eſſe & friuolum quicquid ditellio non confirmat.

Tertull. lib. de Monog. *T.C.lib.1.p.81.* And in another place *Tertullian* ſaith that the Scripture denieth that which it noteth not.

hath bin ſo much perſiſted in. But to come vnto thoſe their ſentences, wherein matters of action are more apparantly touched, the name of *Tertul.* is as before, ſo here againe pretended; who writing vnto his wife two Bookes, and exhorting her in the one to liue a widow, in caſe God before her ſhould take him vnto his mercy; and in the other, if ſhe did marry, yet not to ioyne her ſelfe to an Infidel, as in thoſe times ſome Widowes Chriſtian had done for the aduancement of their eſtate in this preſent World, bee vrgeth very earneſtly Saint *Pauls* words, *Onely in the Lord:* whereupon he demandeth of them that thinke they may doe the contrary, what Scripture they can ſhew where God hath diſpenſed & granted licence to doe againſt that which the bleſſed Apoſtle ſo ſtrictly doth inioyne. And becauſe in defence it might perhaps be replyed, ſeeing God doth will that couples which are married when both are Infidels, if either partie chaunce to bee after conuerted vnto Chriſtianitie, this ſhould not make ſeparation betweene them, as long as the vnconuerted was willing to retaine the other on whom the grace of Chriſt had ſhined; wherefore then ſhould that let the making of marriage, which doth not diſſolue marriage being made? after great reaſons ſhewed why God doth in Converts being married, allow continuance with Infidels, and yet diſſallow that the faithfull when they are free ſhould enter into bonds of Wedlocke with ſuch, concludeth in the end concerning thoſe women that ſo marry, *They that pleaſe not the Lord, doe euen thereby offend the Lord, they doe euen thereby throw themſelues into euill*, that is to ſay, while they pleaſe him not by marrying in him, they doe that whereby they incurre his diſpleaſure, they make an offer of themſelues into the ſeruice of that enemy with whoſe ſeruants they linke themſelues in ſo neere a bond. What one ſillable is there in all this, preiudiciall any way to that which we hold? For the words of *Tertullian* as they are by them alleaged, are two waies miſunderſtood; both in the former part, where that is extended generally to *all things* in the neuter gender, which he ſpeaketh in the feminine gender of womens perſons; and in the later, where *receiued with hurt*, is put in ſtead of *wilful incurring that which is euil.* And ſo in ſumme, *Tertullian* doth neither mean nor ſay as is pretended, *Whatſoeuer pleaſeth not the Lord diſpleaſeth him, and with hurt is receiued*; but *Thoſe women that pleaſe not the Lord* by their kind of marrying, *doe euen thereby offend the Lord, they doe euen thereby throw themſelues into euill.* Somewhat more ſhew there is in a ſecond place of *Tertullia*, which notwithſtanding when we haue examined it, will be found as the reſt are. The Roman Emperours cuſtome was at certaine ſolemne times to beſtow on his Souldiers a donatiue; which donatiue they receiued, wearing Garlands vpon their heads. There were in the time of the Emperours *Seuerus* and *Antoninus*, many who being Souldiers, had bin conuerted vnto Chriſt, and notwithſtanding continued ſtill in that Militarie courſe of life. In which number, one man there was amongſt all the reſt, who at ſuch a time comming to

T.C. l.1. p.80. And that in indifferēt things it is not enough that they be not againſt the Word, but that they be according to the Word, it may appeare by other places, where he ſaith, that whatſoeuer pleaſeth not the Lord, diſpleaſeth him, and with hurt is receiued, *Lib.2. ad vxorem.*

Quæ Domino non placent, vtiq; Dominum offendunt, vtiq; malo ſe inferunt.

T.C. l.1. p.81. And to come yet neerer, wher he diſputeth againſt the wearing of Crown or Garland (which is indifferent in it ſelfe) to thoſe which obiecting aſked, where the Scripture ſaith that a man might not weare a Crowne; he anſwereth by asking, where the Scripture ſaith that they may weare? And vnto them replying that it is permitted, which is not forbidden, he anſwereth that it is forbidden which is not permitted. Whereby appeareth, that the argument of the Scriptures negatiuely, holdeth not only in the Doctrine & Eccleſiaſtical diſcipline, but euen in matters arbitrary & variable by the aduice of the church. Where it is not inough that they be not forbidden, valeſſe there be ſome word which doth permit the vſe of them: it is not enough that the Scripture ſpeaketh not againſt them, valeſſe it ſpeake for them; and finally, where it diſpleaſeth the Lord which pleaſeth him not, wee muſt of neceſſitie haue the Word of his mouth to declare his pleaſure.

to the Tribune of the Army to receiue his Donatiue, came but with a Garland in his hand, and not in ſuch ſort as others did. The Tribune offended hereat, demandeth what this great ſingularitie would meane. To whom the Souldier, *Chriſtianus ſum, I am a Chriſtian.* Many there were ſo beſides him, which yee did otherwiſe at that time; whereupon grew a queſtion, whether a Chriſtian Souldier might herein doe as the vnchriſtian did, and weare as they wore. Many of them which were verie ſound in Chriſtian Beliefe, did rather commend the zeale of this man, then approue his action. *Tertullian* was at the ſame time a *Montaniſt*, and an enemie vnto the Church for condemning that prophetical ſpirit, which *Montanus* and his followers did boaſt they had receiued; as if in them Chriſt had performed his laſt promiſe; as if to them he had ſent the Spirit that ſhould be their perfecter and final inſtructer in the myſteries of Chriſtian truth. Which exulceration of minde, made him apt to take all occaſions of contradiction. Wherefore in honour of that action, and to gall their minds who did not ſo much commend it, he wrote his Booke *De corona militis*, not diſſembling the ſtomake wherewith he wrote it. For firſt the man hee commended as one more conſtant then the reſt of his Brethren, *Who preſumed*, ſaith he, *that they might well enough ſerue two Lords.* Afterwards, choler ſomewhat riſing within him, he addeth, *It doth euen remaine that they ſhould alſo deuiſe how to rid themſelues of his Martyrdomes, towards the Propheſies of whoſe Holy Spirit they haue already ſhewed their diſdaine. They mutter that their good and long peace is now in hazard. I doubt not but ſome of them ſend the Scriptures before, truſſe vp bag and baggage, make themſelues in a readineſſe, that they may flie from Citie to Citie. For that is the onely peynt of the Goſpel which they are carefull not to forget. I know euen their Paſtors very well what they are, in peace Lions; Harts in time of trouble and feare.* Now theſe men, ſaith *Tertullian*, *They muſt be anſwered where we doe finde it written in Scripture*, that a Chriſtian man may not weare a Garland. And as mens ſpeeches vttred in heat of diſtempered affection, haue oftentimes much more eagerneſſe then waight; ſo he that ſhall marke the prooſes alleaged, and the anſwers to things obiected in that Booke, will now and then perhaps eſpy the like imbecillitie. Such is that argument whereby they that wore on their heads Garlands, are charged as tranſgreſſors of Natures Law, and guilty of Sacriledge againſt God the Lord of Nature, in as much as Flowers in ſuch ſort worne, can neither be ſmelt nor ſeene well by thoſe that weare them: and God made Flowers ſweet and beautifull, that being ſeene and ſmelt vnto, they might ſo delight. Neither doth *Tertullian* bewray this weakneſſe in ſtriking onely, but alſo in repelling their ſtrokes with whom he contendeth. They aſk, ſaith he, *What Scripture is there which doth teach that we ſhould not be crowned? And what Scripture is there which doth teach that we ſhould? For in requiring on the contrary part the ayde of Scripture, they doe giue ſentence before-hand that their part ought alſo by Scripture to be ayded.* Which anſwer is of no great force. There is no neceſſity, that if I confeſſe I ought not to doe that which the Scripture forbiddeth me, I ſhould thereby acknowledge my ſelfe bound to doe nothing which the Scripture commandeth me not. For many inducements beſides Scripture may leade me to that, which if Scripture be againſt, they all giue place, and are of no value; yet otherwiſe are ſtrong and effectuall to perſwade. Which thing himſelfe well enough vnderſtanding, and being not ignorant that Scripture in many

Tert. de coron. milit.

things doth neither command nor forbid, but vſe ſilence; his reſolution in fine is, that in the Church a number of things are ſtrictly obſerued, whereof no Law of Scripture maketh mention one way or other; that of things once receiued and confirmed by vſe, long vſage is a Law ſufficient; that in ciuill affaires when there is no other Law, cuſtome it ſelfe doth ſtand for Law; that in as much as Law doth ſtand vpon reaſon, to alledge reaſon ſerueth as well as to cite Scripture; that whatſoeuer is reaſonable, the ſame is lawfull whoſoeuer is Author of it; that the authoritie of cuſtome is great; finally, that the cuſtome of Chriſtians was then and had bin a long time not to weare Garlands, and therefore that vndoubtedly they did offend, who preſumed to violate ſuch a cuſtome by not obſeruing that thing: the verie inueterate obſeruation whereof was a Law ſufficient to bind all men to obſerue it, vnleſſe they could ſhew ſome higher Law, ſome Law of Scripture to the contrarie. This preſuppoſed, it may ſtand then verie well with ſtrength and ſoundneſſe of reaſon, euen thus to anſwer; *Whereas they aske what Scripture forbiddeth them to weare a Garland, wee are in this caſe rather to demand what Scripture commandeth them. They cannot here alleage that it is permitted which is not forbidden them: no, that is forbidden them which is not permitted.* For long receiued cuſtome forbidding them to doe as they did, (if ſo be it did forbid them) there was no excuſe in the World to iuſtifie their act, vnleſſe in the Scripture they could ſhew ſome Law that did licence them thus to breake a receiued cuſtome. Now whereas in all the Bookes of *Tertullian* beſides, there is not ſo much found as in that one, to proue not onely that we may doe, but that we ought to doe ſundry things which the Scripture commandeth not; out of that verie Booke theſe ſentences are brought to make vs beleeue that *Tertullian* was of a cleane contrarie minde. We cannot therefore hereupon yeeld, we cannot grant, that hereby is made manifeſt the argument of Scripture negatiue to be of force, not onely in Doctrine and Eccleſiaſticall Diſcipline, but euen in matters arbitrarie. For *Tertullian* doth plainly hold euen in that Booke, that neither the matter which he intreateth of was arbitrary but neceſſary, in as much as the receiued cuſtome of the Church did tie and bind them not to weare Garlands as the Heathens did; yea, and further alſo he reckoneth vp particularly a number of things, whereof he expreſly concludeth, *Harum & aliarum eiuſmodi diſciplinarum ſi legem expoſtules Scripturarum, nullã inuenies*; which is as much as if he had ſaid in expreſſe words, Many things there are which concerne the diſcipline of the Church and the duties of men, which to abrogate and take away, the Scriptures negatiuely vrged may not in any caſe perſwade vs, but they muſt be obſerued, yea although no Scripture be found which requireth any ſuch thing. *Tertullian* therefore vndoubtedly doth not in this Booke ſhew himſelfe to be of the ſame minde with them by whom his name is pretended.

The firſt aſſertion endeuoured to be confirmed by the Scriptures cuſtome of diſputing from Diuine authority negatiuely. 1. Ioh. 2. 5. God is light, and there is in him no darkneſſe at all. Rom. 6. 18. It is impoſſible that God ſhould lye, Numb. 23. 19. God is not as man that he ſhould lye.

6 But ſith the Sacred Scriptures themſelues affoord oftentimes ſuch Arguments as are taken from diuine authority both one way & other, *The Lord hath cõmanded, therfore it muſt be:* And again, in like ſort, *He hath not, therfore it muſt not be*: ſome certainty concerning this point ſeemeth requiſite to be ſet downe. God himſelfe can neither poſſibly erre, nor leade into errour. For this cauſe his teſtimonies, whatſoeuer he affirmeth, are alwaies truth and moſt infallible cer-

tainty. Yea further, becauſe the things that proceed from him are perfect without any maner of defect or maime; it cannot be but that the words of his mouth are abſolute, & lacke nothing which they ſhould haue, for performance of that thing whereunto they tend. Whereupon it followeth, that the end being known whereunto he directeth his ſpeech, the argument negatiuely is euermore ſtrong and forcible, concerning thoſe things that are apparantly requiſit vnto the ſame end. As for example, God intending to ſet downe ſundrie times that which in Angels is moſt excellent, hath not any where ſpoken ſo highly of thē as he hath of our Lord and Saviour Ieſus Chriſt; therefore they are not in dignitie equall vnto him. It is the Apoſtle S. *Pauls* argument. The purpoſe of God was to teach his People, both vnto whom they ſhould offer ſacrifice, and what ſacrifice was to be offered. To burne their ſons in fire vnto *Baal* he did not command them, hee ſpake no ſuch thing, neyther came it into his minde: therefore this they ought not to haue done. Which argument the Prophet *Ieremie* vſeth more then once, as being ſo effectual & ſtrong, that although the thing be reproueth were not only commanded but forbidden them, and that expreſly; yet the Prophet chooſeth rather to charge them with the fault of making a Law vnto themſelues, then the crime of tranſgreſſing a Law which God had made. For when the Lord had once himſelfe preciſely ſet downe a forme of executing that wherein we are to ſerue him, the fault appeareth greater to doe that which we are not, then not to doe that which we are commanded. In this we ſeeme to charge the Law of God with hardneſſe onely, in that with fooliſhneſſe; in this we ſhew our ſelues weake and vnapt to be doers of his Will, in that we take vpon vs to be Controllers of his wiſedome: in this we faile to performe the thing which God ſeeth meete, conuenient, and good; in that we preſume to ſee what is meete and conuenient better then God himſelfe. In thoſe actions therefore, the whole forme whereof God hath of purpoſe ſet downe to be obſerued, we may not otherwiſe doe then exactly, as he hath preſcribed: in ſuch things negatiue Arguments are ſtrong. Againe, with a negatiue argument *Dauid* is preſſed concerning the purpoſe hee had to build a Temple vnto the Lord: *Thus ſaith the Lord, Thou ſhalt not build me an houſe to dwel in. Wherſoeuer I haue walked with all Iſrael, ſpake I one word to any of the Iudges of Iſrael, whom I commanded to feede my people, ſaying, Why haue yee not built me an houſe?* The Iewes vrged with a negatiue argument touching the ayde which they ſought at the hands of the King of Egypt, *Woe to thoſe rebellious children* (ſaith the Lord) *which walke forth to go down into Egypt, and haue not asked counſell at my mouth, to ſtrengthen themſelues with the ſtrength of* PHARAO. Finally, the league of *Ioſhua* with the Gabeonites is likewiſe with a negatiue Argument touched. It

T.c.l.2.48. It is not hard to ſhew that the Prophets haue reaſoned negatiuely. As when in the perſon of the Lord the Prophet ſaith, Whereof I haue not ſpoken. *Ierem.*19.5. and, Which neuer entred into my heart, *Ieremy* 7. 31, 32. and where he condemneth them, becauſe they haue not asked counſell at the mouth of the Lord, *Eſay*, 30. 2. And it may be ſhewed, that the ſame kinde of argument hath beene vſed, in things which are not of the ſubſtance of Saluation or Damnation, and whereof there was no cōmandement to the contrarie (as in the former there was, *Leuit.*18.21.& 20.3. *Deut.* 17.16.) In *Ioſua* the children of Iſrael are charged by the Prophet, that they asked not counſell of the mouth of the Lord, when they entred into couenant with the Gabeonites, *Ioſh.*9.14. And yet that Couenant was not made contrarie vnto any Commandement of God. Moreouer, wee reade that when *Dauid* had taken this counſell to build a Temple vnto the Lord, albeit the Lord had reuealed before in his Word that there ſhould be ſuch a ſtanding place, where the Arke of the Couenant and the ſeruice ſhould haue a certayne abiding, and albeit there was no Word of God which forbad *Dauid* to build the Temple; yet the Lord (with commendation of his good affection & zeale hee had to the aduancement of his glory) concludeth againſt *Dauids* reſolution to build the Tēple, with this reaſon, namely, that he had giuen no cōmandement of this who ſhould build it, *1.Chr.*17.6.

*Leuit.*18.21. & 20.3. *Deut.*28.10.

*1.Chron.*17.6.

Eſay 30.1.

was

Ioſh.9.14. was not as it ſhould be: And why? The Lord gaue them not that aduice: *They ſought not coũſel at the mouth of the Lord.* By the vertue of which examples, if any man ſhould ſuppoſe the force of negatiue argumẽts approued, when they are taken from Scripture in ſuch ſort as wee in this queſtion are preſſed therewith, they greatly deceiue themſelues. For vnto which of all theſe was it ſaide, that they had done amiſſe in purpoſing to doe, or in doing any thing at all which *the Scripture* commanded them not? Our queſtion is, whether all be ſinne which is done without direction by Scripture, and not whether the Iſraelites did at any time amiſſe by following their owne mindes, without asking counſell of God. No, it was that peoples ſingular priuiledge, a fauour which God vouchſafed them aboue the reſt of the world, that in the affaires of their Eſtate, which were not determinable one way or other by the Scripture, himſelfe gaue them extraordinarily direction and counſell, as oft as they ſought it at his hands. Thus God did firſt by ſpeech vnto *Moſes*; after by *Vrim* & *Thummim* vnto Prieſts; laſtly, by dreames and viſions vnto Prophets, from whom in ſuch caſes they were to receiue the anſwer of God. Concerning *Ioſua* therefore, thus ſpake the Lord vnto *Moſes*, ſaying, *He ſhall ſtand before* ELEAZAR *the Prieſt, who ſhall aske counſell for him by the iudgement of* VRIM *before the Lord:* whereof had *Ioſua* been mindfull, the fraud of the Gabeonites could not ſo ſmoothly haue paſt vneſpied till there was no helpe. The Iewes had Prophets to haue reſolued them from the mouth of God himſelfe, whether Egyptian aides ſhould profit them, yea or no: but they thought themſelues wiſe enough, and him vnworthie to be of their counſell. In this reſpect therefore was their reproofe, though ſharpe, yet iuſt, albeit there had beene no charge preciſely giuen them that they ſhould alwaies take heed of Egypt. But as for *Dauid*, to thinke that he did euill in determining to build God a Temple, becauſe there was in Scripture no commaundement that he ſhould build it, were very iniurious: the purpoſe of his hart was religious and godly, the act moſt worthy of honour and renowne; neither could *Nathan* chooſe but admire his vertuous intent, exhort him to goe forward, and beſeech God to proſper him therein. But God ſaw the endleſſe troubles which *Dauid* ſhould be ſubiect vnto during the whole time of his Regiment, and therefore gaue charge to deferre ſo good a worke till the dayes of tranquillitie and peace, wherein it might without interruption be performed. *Dauid* ſuppoſed that it could not ſtand with the duetie which he owed vnto God, to ſet himſelfe in an houſe of Cedar trees, and to behold the Arke of the Lords Couenant vnſetled. This opinion the Lord abateth, by cauſing *Nathan* to ſhew him plainely, that it ſhould be no more imputed vnto him for a fault, then it had beene vnto the Iudges of Iſrael before him, his caſe being the ſame which theirs was, their times not more vnquiet then his, nor more vnfit for ſuch an action. Wherefore concerning the force of negatiue Argumẽts ſo taken from the authoritie of Scripture, as by vs they are denied, there is in all this leſſe then nothing. And touching that which vnto this purpoſe is borrowed from the Controuerſies ſometime handled betweene M^r. *Harding*, and the worthieſt Diuine that Chri-

Num.27.21.

1. *Chron.*17. *T.E.lib.*2 *p.*50. *M.Harding* reprocheth the B. of Salisburie with this kinde of reaſoning: vnto whom the B. anſwereth, The argument of authoritie negatiuely, is taken to be good, whenſoeuer proofe is taken of Gods Word, & is vſed not onely by vs, but alſo by many of the Catholike Fathers. A litle after he ſheweth the reaſon why the argument of authoritie of the Scripture negatiuely is good, namely, for that the Word of God is perfect. In another place vnto *M. Harding*, calling him in the teeth with negatiue argumẽts, he alleageth places out of *Irenæus*, *Chryſoſtome*, *Leo*, which reaſoned negatiuely of the authoritie of the Scriptures. The places which he alleageth be very full and plaine in generalitie, without any ſuch reſtraint as the Anſwerer imagineth, as they are there to be ſeene.

ſtendome

ſtendome hath bred for the ſpace of ſome hundreds of yeares, who beeing brought vp together in one Vniuerſitie, it fell out in them which was ſpoken of two others; * *They learned in the ſame, that which in contrary Campes they did practiſe.* Of theſe two, the one obiecting that with vs Arguments taken from authoritie negatiuely are ouer-common, the Biſhops anſwer hereunto is, that *this kinde of argument is thought to be good, whenſoeuer proofe is taken of Gods Word, and is vſed not onely by vs, but alſo by* S. PAVL, *and by many of the Catholike Fathers.* S. PAVL *ſaith, God ſaid not vnto* ABRAHAM, *In thy ſeedes all the Nations of the earth ſhall be bleſſed, but, In thy ſeede, which is Chriſt, and thereof he thought he made a good argument. Likewiſe, ſaith* ORIGEN, *The bread which the Lord gaue vnto his Diſciples, ſaying vnto them, Take and eat, he deferred not, nor commanded to be reſerued till the next day. Such arguments* ORIGEN *and other learned Fathers thought to ſtand for good, what ſoeuer miſliking* Mr HARDING *hath found in them. This kind of proofe is thought to hold in Gods Commandements, for that they be full and perfect: and God hath ſpecially charged vs, that we ſhould neyther put to them, nor take from them: and therefore it ſeemeth good vnto them that haue learned of Chriſt,* Vnus eſt Magiſter veſter Chriſtus, *and haue heard the voice of God the Father from heauen,* Ipſum audite. *But vnto them that adde to the Word of God what them liſteth, and make Gods will ſubiect vnto their wil, & break Gods Commandements for their owne Traditions ſake, vnto them it ſeemeth not good.* Againe, the Engliſh Apologie alleaging the example of the Greekes, how they haue neither priuate Maſſes, nor mangled Sacraments, nor Purgatories, nor Pardons; it pleaſeth Mr *Harding* to ieſt out the matter, to vſe the helpe of his wits where ſtrength of truth failed him, & to anſwer with ſcoffing at negatiues. The Biſhops defence in this caſe is, *The ancient learned Fathers hauing to deale with politique Heretikes, that in defence of their errors auouched the iudgement of all the old Biſhops and Doctors that had beene before them, and the generall conſent of the Primitiue and whole vniuerſall Church, and that with as good regard of truth, and as faithfull as you doe now; the better to diſcouer the ſhameleſſe boldneſſe, and nakedneſſe of their doctrine, were often-times likewiſe forced to vſe the negatiue, and ſo to driue the ſame Heretikes as we doe you, to proue their affirmatiues; which thing to doe it was neuer poſſible. The auncient Father* IRENAEVS *thus ſtayed himſelfe, as we doe by the negatiue,* Hoc neq; Prophetæ prædicauerunt, neq; Dominus docuit, neq; Apoſtoli tradiderunt; *This thing neither did the Prophets publiſh, nor our Lord teach, nor the Apoſtles deliuer. By a like negatiue* CHRYSOSTOME *ſaith, That tree neither* PAVL *planted, nor* APOLLOS *watered, nor* GOD *increaſed. In like ſort* LEO *ſaith, What needeth it to beliue that thing that neyther the Law hath taught, nor the Prophets haue ſpoken, nor the Goſpel hath preached, nor the Apoſtles haue deliuered? And againe, How are the new deuices brought in that our Fathers neuer knew?* S. AVGVSTINE *hauing reckoned vp a great number of the Biſhops of Rome, by a generall negatiue ſaith thus, In all this order of ſucceſſion of Biſhops, there is not one Biſhop found that was a Donatiſt. Saint* GREGORIE *being himſelfe a Biſhop of Rome, and writing againſt the Title of Vniuerſall Biſhop, ſaith thus, None of all my Predeceſſors euer conſented to vſe this vngodly Title; No Biſhop of Rome euer tooke vpon him this name of Singularitie. By ſuch negatiues, Maiſter* HARDING, *wee reproue the vanitie and noueltie of your Religion; we tell you, none of the Catholike ancient learned Fathers*

* *Vell. Patere. Iugurtha ac Marius ſub eodem Africano militantes, in iiſdem caſtris didicere quæ poſtea in contrarys ſacerent.*

Art. 1. Diuiſ. 29.

Gal. 3.

Orig. in Leuit. Hom. 5.

Matth. 23.

Matth. 17.

Defenſ. par. 5. ed. 15. diuiſ. 1.

Lib. 1. cap. 2.

De incomp. nat. Dei, hom. 3.

Epiſt. 93. c. 12.

Epiſt. 97. cap. 3.

Epiſt. 165.

Lib. 4. Ep. 38.

Fathers eyther Greeke or Latine, euer vſed eyther your priuate Maſſe, or your halfe Communion, or your barbarous vnknowne prayers. PAVL *neuer planted them,* APOLLOS *neuer watered them,* GOD *neuer increaſed them, they are of your ſelues, they are not of God.* In all this there is not a ſyllable which any way croſſeth vs. For concerning arguments negatiue taken from humane authoritie, they are here proued to bee in ſome caſes verie ſtrong and forcible. They are not in our eſtimation idle reproofes, when the Authors of needleſſe innouations are oppoſed with ſuch negatiues, as that of LEO, *How are theſe new deuices brought in which our fathers neuer knew?* when their graue and reuerend Superiors doe reckon vp vnto them, as *Auguſtine* did vnto the *Donatiſts*, large Catalogues of Fathers, wondred at for their wiſdome, pietie, and learning, amongſt whom for ſo many ages before vs, no one did euer ſo thinke of the Churches affaires, as now the world doth begin to be perſwaded; ſurely, by vs they are not taught to take exception hereat, becauſe ſuch arguments are negatiue. Much leſſe when the like are taken from the ſacred authority of Scripture, if the matter it ſelfe doe beare them. For in truth the queſtion is not, whether an argument from Scripture negatiuely may be good, but whether it bee ſo generally good, that in all actions men may vrge it. The Fathers, I grant, doe vſe very generall and large termes, euen as *Hiero* the King did in ſpeaking of ARCHIMEDES, *From henceforward whatſoeuer* ARCHIMEDES *ſpeaketh, it muſt be beleeued.* His meaning was not that *Archimedes* could ſimply in nothing be deceiued, but that hee had in ſuch ſort approued his skil, that he ſeemed worthy of credit for euer after in matters appertayning vnto the ſcience hee was skilfull in. In ſpeaking thus largely it is preſumed, that mens ſpeeches will be taken according to the matter whereof they ſpeake. Let any man therefore that carrieth indifferency of iudgment, peruſe the Biſhops ſpeeches, and conſider well of thoſe negatiues concerning Scripture, which he produceth out of *Irenæus*, *Chryſoſtome*, and *Leo*, which three are choſen from amongſt the reſidue, becauſe the ſentences of the others, (euen as one of theirs alſo) doe make for defence of negatiue arguments taken from humane authority, and not from diuine only. They mention no more reſtraint in the one then in the other: yet I thinke themſelues will not hereby iudge, that the Fathers tooke both to be ſtrong, without reſtraint vnto any ſpeciall kinde of matter, wherein they held ſuch argument forcible. Nor doth the Biſhop either ſay or proue any more, then that an argument in ſome kindes of matter may be good, although taken negatiuely from Scripture.

Their opinion cõcerning the force of Arguments, taken from humane authoritie for the ordering of mens actions or perſwasions.

7 An earneſt deſire to draw all things vnto the determination of bare & naked ſcripture, hath cauſed here much paynes to be taken in abating the eſtimation & credit of man. Which if we labour to maintaine as far as truth & reaſon wil beare, let not any thinke that we trauel about a matter not greatly needefull. For the ſcope of all their pleading againſt mans authoritie is, to ouer-throw ſuch Orders, Lawes, & Conſtitutions in the Church, as depending thereupon, if they ſhould therefore be taken away, would peraduenture leaue neither face nor memorie of Church to continue long in the world, the world eſpecially being ſuch as now it is. That which they haue in this caſe ſpoken,

T.C.l.1.p.95. When the queſtion is of the authority of a man, it holdeth neither affirmatiuely nor negatiuely. The reaſon is, becauſe the infirmitie of man can neither attain to the perfection of any thing whereby he might ſpeak al things that are to be ſpoken of in, neither yet be free frõ error in thoſe things which he ſpeaketh or writeth out. And therefore this argument neither affirmatiuely nor negatiuely cõpelleth the Hearer, but only inducth him to ſome liking or diſliking of that for which it is brought, and is rather for an Orator to perſwade the ſimpler ſort, then for a diſputer to enforce him that is learned.

ken, I would for breuities ſake let paſſe, but that the drift of their ſpeech being ſo dangerous, their words are not to be neglected. Wherefore to ſay that ſimply an Argument taken from mans authority doth hold no way, neither affirmatiuely nor negatiuely, is hard. By a mans authority we here vnderſtād, the force which his word hath for the aſſurance of anothers minde that buildeth vpon it; as the Apoſtle ſomewhat did vpon their report of the houſe of *Cloe*, and the Samaritanes in a matter of farre greater moment vpon the report of a ſimple woman. For ſo it is ſaid in S. *Iohns* Goſpel, *Many of the Samaritanes of that Citie beleeued in him for the ſaying of the woman, which teſtified, He hath told me all things that euer I did.* The ſtrength of mans authority is affirmatiuely ſuch, that the waighties affaires in the world depend thereon. In Iudgement & Iuſtice are not hereupon proceedings grounded? Saith not the Law, that *in the mouth of two or three witneſſes, euery word ſhal be cōfirmed?* This the law of God would not ſay, if there were in a mans teſtimonie no force at all to proue any thing. And if it bee admitted that in matter of fact there is ſome credit to be giuen to the teſtimonie of man, but not in matter of opinion and iudgement; we ſee the contrarie both acknowledged, and vniuerſally practiſed alſo throughout the world. The ſentences of wiſe and expert men were neuer but highly eſteemed. Let the title of a mans right be called in queſtion; are we not bold to relye and build vpon the iudgement of ſuch as are famous for their skill in the laws of this Land? In matter of State, the waight many times of ſome one mans authority is thought reaſon ſufficient, euen to way ouer whole Nations. And this not onely with the ſimpler ſort; but the learneder and wiſer wee are, the more ſuch argument in ſome caſes preuaile with vs. The reaſon why the ſimpler ſort are moued with authoritie, is the conſcience of their owne ignorance; whereby it commeth to paſſe, that hauing learned men in admiration, they rather feare to diſlike them, then know wherefore they ſhould allow and follow their iudgements. Contrariwiſe with them that are skilfull, authoritie is much more ſtrong and forcible; becauſe they only are able to diſcerne how iuſt cauſe there is, why to ſome mens authoritie ſo much ſhould be attributed. For which cauſe the name of *Hippocrates* (no doubt) were more effectuall to perſwade euen ſuch men as *Galen* himſelfe, then to moue a ſilly Empirick. So that the very ſelfe-ſame argument in this kinde, which doth but induce the vulgar ſort to like, may conſtraine the wiſer to yeeld. And therefore not Orators onely with the people, but euen the verie profoundeſt Diſputers in all faculties haue hereby often with the beſt learned preuailed moſt. As for Arguments taken from humane authoritie, and that negatiuely; for example ſake, if we ſhould thinke the aſſembling of the people of God together by the ſound of a Bell, the preſenting of Infants at the holy Font, by ſuch as commonly we cal their Godfathers, or any other the like receiued cuſtome to bee impious, becauſe ſome men of whom we thinke very reuerendly, haue in their bookes and writings no where mentioned or taught that ſuch things ſhould be in the Church; this reaſoning were ſubiect vnto iuſt reproofe, it were but feeble, weake, and vnſound. Notwithſtanding euen negatiuely an argument from humane authoritie may be ſtrong, as namely thus; The Chronicles of England mention no moe then onely ſix Kings bearing the name of *Edward*, ſince the time of the laſt Conqueſt; therfore it cannot be there

1. *Cor.* 1. 11.

Ioh. 4. 35.

Deut. 19. 15. *Matth.* 18. 16.

ſhould

ſhould be more. So that if the queſtion be of the authority of a mans teſtimonie, wee cannot ſimply anouch, eyther that affirmatiuely it doth not any way hold, or that it hath onely force to induce the ſimpler ſort, and not to conſtraine men of vnderſtanding and ripe iudgement to yeeld aſſent, or that negatiuely it hath in it no ſtrength at all. For vnto euery of theſe the contrarie is moſt plaine. Neither doth that which is alleaged concerning the infirmitie of men, ouerthrow or diſproue this. Men are blinded with ignorance and error; many things may eſcape them, and in many things they may be deceiued; yea, thoſe things which they doe know, they may either forget, or vpon ſundrie indirect conſiderations let paſſe, and although themſelues do not erre, yet may they through malice or vanitie, euen of purpoſe deceiue others. Howbeit infinite caſes there are wherin all theſe impediments and lets are ſo manifeſtly excluded, that there is no ſhew or colour whereby any ſuch exception may be taken, but that the teſtimony of man wil ſtand as a ground of infallible aſſurance. That there is a Citie of Rome, that *Pius Quintus* and *Gregorie* the Thirteenth, and others, haue been Popes of Rome, I ſuppoſe we are certainly enough perſwaded. The ground of our perſwaſion, who neuer ſaw the place nor perſons beforenamed, can be nothing but mans teſtimonie. Will any man here notwithſtanding alleage thoſe mentioned humane infirmities as reaſons, why theſe things ſhould be miſtruſted or doubted of? Yea, that which is more, vtterly to infringe the force and ſtrength of mans teſtimonie, were to ſhake the very Fortreſſe of Gods truth. For whatſoeuer we beleeue concerning ſaluation by Chriſt, although the Scripture be therein the ground of our beliefe; yet the authority of man is, if we marke it, the key which openeth the dore of entrance into the knowledge of the Scripture. The Scripture doth not teach vs the things that are of God, vnleſſe we did credit men who haue taught vs that the words of Scripture doe ſignifie thoſe things. Some way therefore, notwithſtãding mans infirmity, yet his authority may enforce aſſent.

T.C.l.1.p.10. Although that kinde of argument of authoritie of men is good, neither in humane nor diuine ſciences: yet it hath ſome ſmall force in humane ſciences, for as much as naturally and in that he is a man, he may come to ſome ripenes of iudgment in thoſe ſciences, which in diuine matters hath no force at all: as of him which naturally, and as he is a man, can no more iudge of them then a blinde man of colours. Yea, ſo farre is it from drawing credit, if it be barely ſpoken without reaſon and teſtimonie of Scripture, that it carrieth alſo a ſuſpition of vntruth whatſoeuer proceedeth from him: which the Apoſtle did well note, when to ſignifie a thing corruptly ſpoken and againſt the truth, he ſaith, that it is ſpoken according to man, *Rom.3.* He ſaith not as a wicked and lying man, but ſimply as a man. And although this corruption be reformed in many, yet for ſo much as in whom the knowledge of the truth is moſt aduanced, there remaineth both ignorance and diſordered affections (whereof either of them turneth him from ſpeaking of the truth:) no mans authoritie, with the Church eſpecially, and thoſe that are called & perſwaded of the authority of the Word of God, can bring any aſſurance vnto the conſcience.

Vpon better aduice and deliberation ſo much is perceiued, and at the length confeſt, that Arguments taken from the authoritie of men, may not onely ſo farre forth as hath beene declared, but further alſo be of ſome force in *humane ſciences*; which force be it neuer ſo ſmall, doth ſhew that they are not vtterly naught. But in *matters diuine* it is ſtill maintayned ſtifly, that they haue no manner force at all. Howbeit the very ſelfe-ſame reaſon, which cauſeth to yeeld that they are of ſome force in the one, will at the length conſtraine alſo to acknowledge, that they are not in the other altogether vnforcible. For if the naturall ſtrength of mans wit may by experience and ſtudie attaine vnto ſuch ripeneſſe in the knowledge of things humane, that men in this reſpect may preſume to build ſomewhat vpon their iudgement; what reaſon haue we to thinke but that euen in matters diuine, the like wits furniſht with neceſſarie helps, exerciſed in Scripture with like

like diligence, and aſſiſted with the grace of Almightie God, may grow vnto ſo much perfection of knowledge, that men ſhall haue iuſt cauſe, when any thing pertinent vnto faith and Religion is doubted of, the more willingly to incline their minds towards that which the ſentence of ſo graue, wiſe and learned in that facultie ſhall iudge moſt ſound. For the controuerſie is of the waight of ſuch mens iudgements. Let it therefore be ſuſpected, let it be taken as groſſe, corrupt, repugnant vnto the truth, whatſoeuer concerning things diuine aboue nature ſhall at any time be ſpoken as out of the mouthes of meere naturall men, which haue not the eyes wherewith heauenly things are diſcerned. For this we contend not. But whom God hath indued with principall gifts to aſpire vnto knowledge by; whoſe exerciſes, labours, and diuine ſtudies he hath ſo bleſt, that the world for their great and rare skill that way, hath them in ſingular admiration; may we reiect euen their iudgement likewiſe, as being vtterly of no moment? For mine owne part I dare not ſo lightly eſteeme of the Church, and of the principall pillars therein. The truth is, that the minde of man deſireth euermore to know the truth according to the moſt infallible certaintie which the nature of things can yeeld. The greateſt aſſurance generally with all men, is that which we haue by plaine aſpect and intuitiue beholding. Where wee cannot attaine vnto this; there what appeareth to be true by ſtrong and inuincible demonſtration, ſuch as wherein it is not by any way poſſible to be deceiued, thereunto the mind doth neceſſarily aſſent, neither is it in the choice thereof to doe otherwiſe. And in caſe theſe both doe faile, then which way greateſt probabilitie leadeth, thither the mind doth euermore incline. Scripture with Chriſtian men being receiued as the word of God; that for which we haue probable, yea that which we haue neceſſarie reaſon for, yea that which we ſee with our eyes, is not thought ſo ſure as that which the Scripture of God teacheth; becauſe we hold that his ſpeech reuealeth there what himſelfe ſeeth, and therefore the ſtrongeſt proofe of all, and the moſt neceſſarily aſſented vnto by vs (which doe thus receiue the Scripture) is the Scripture. Now it is not required nor can be exacted at our hands, that we ſhould yeeld vnto any thing other aſſent, then ſuch as doth anſwer the euidence which is to be had of that wee aſſent vnto. For which cauſe euen in matters diuine, concerning ſome things wee may lawfully doubt and ſuſpend our iudgement, inclining neyther to one ſide or other, as namely touching the time of the fall both of man and Angels; of ſome things we may very well retaine an opinion that they are probable and not vnlikely to be true, as when wee hold that men haue their ſoules rather by creation then propagation, or that the mother of our Lord liued alwayes in the ſtate of Virginitie as well after his birth as before (for of theſe two, the one her virginitie before, is a thing which of neceſſitie we muſt beleeue; the other, her continuance in the ſame ſtate alwaies, hath more likelihood of truth then the contrary;) finally in al things then are our conſciences beſt reſolued, and in moſt agreeable ſort vnto God and nature ſetled, when they are ſo farre perſwaded as theſe grounds of perſwaſion which are to be had will beare. Which thing I doe ſo much the rather ſet downe, for that I ſee how a number of ſoules are, for want of right information in this poynt, oftentimes grieuouſly vexed. When bare and vnbuilded concluſions are put into their minds, they finding not themſelues to haue thereof any great certaintie, imagine that this proceedeth onely from lacke of faith, and that the Spirit of God

doth not worke in them, as it doeth in true beleeuers; by this meanes their hearts are much troubled, they fal into anguiſh & perplexitie: whereas the truth is, that how bold and confident ſoeuer wee may bee in words, when it commeth to the point of triall, ſuch as the euidence is which the truth hath either in it ſelfe or through proofe, ſuch is the hearts aſſent thereunto, neyther can it be ſtronger, being grounded as it ſhould be. I grant that proofe deriued from the authority of mans iudgement, is not able to worke that aſſurance which doth grow by a ſtronger proofe; and therefore although ten thouſand general Councels would ſet downe one & the ſame definitiue ſentence concerning any poynt of religion whatſoeuer, yet one demonſtratiue reaſon alledged, or one manifeſt teſtimony cited from the mouth of God himſelfe to the contrarie, could not chuſe but ouerweigh them all; in as much as for them to haue beene deceyued, it is not impoſſible; it is, that demonſtratiue reaſon or teſtimonie diuine ſhould deceiue. Howbeit in defect of proofe infallible, becauſe the minde doth rather follow probable perſwaſions, then approue the things that haue in them no likelihood of truth at all; ſurely if a queſtion concerning matter of doctrin were propoſed, and on the one ſide no kind of proofe appearing, there ſhould on the other be alledged and ſhewed that ſo a number of the learnedeſt Diuines in the world haue euer thought; although it did not appeare what reaſon or what Scripture led them to be of that iudgement, yet to their very bare iudgement ſome what a reaſonable man would attribute, notwithſtanding the common imbecilities which are incident into our nature. And whereas it is thought, that eſpecially with the Church, and thoſe that are called and perſwaded of the authoritie of the word of God, mans authoritie with them eſpecially ſhould not preuaile; it muſt and doth preuaile euen with them, yea with them eſpecially as far as equitie requireth, and farther we maintaine it not. For men to be tyed and led by authoritie, as it were with a kind of captiuity of iudgement, & though there be reaſon to the cõtrary, not to liſten vnto it, but to follow like beaſtes the firſt in the heard, they know not nor care not whither, this were brutiſh. Againe, that authoritie of men ſhould preuaile with men either againſt or aboue reaſon, is no part of our belief. Companies of learned men be they neuer ſo great and reuerend, are to yeeld vnto reaſon; the waight wherof is no whit preiudiced by the ſimplicity of his perſon which doth allege it, but being found to be ſound and good, the bare opinion of men to the contrary, muſt of neceſſity ſtoope & giue place. *Irenæ'* writing againſt *Marcion*, which held one God author of the old Teſtament, and another of the new; to proue that the Apoſtles preached the ſame God which was known before to the Iewes, he copiouſly alleageth ſundry their Sermons

T.C.l.2.p.21. Of diuers ſentences of the fathers themſelues (whereby ſome haue likened them to brute beaſts without reaſon, which ſuffer themſelues to bee led by the iudgement and authoritie of others, ſome haue preferred the iudgement of one ſimple rude man alleaging reaſon, vnto companies of learned men) I wil cõfet my ſelfe at this time with two or three ſentences. *Irenæus* ſaith, whatſoeuer is to be ſhewed in the Scripture, cannot be ſhewed but out of the Scripures themſelues, *lib.3.cap.12.* *Ierome* ſaith, No man be he neuer ſo holy or eloquent, hath any authority after the Apoſtles, in *Pſal.86.* *Auguſtine* ſaith, that he will beleiue none, how godly and learned ſoeuer he be, vnleſſe he confirm his ſentence by the ſcriptures, or by ſome reaſon not contrary to them, *Epiſt.18.* And in another place, Heare this, the Lord ſaith, heare not this, *Donatus* ſaith, *Rogatus* ſaith, *Viscentius* ſaith, *Hilarius* ſaith, *Ambroſe* ſaith, *Auguſtine* ſaith, but hearken vnto this, the Lord ſaith, *Epiſt.48.* And again, hauing to doe with an Arrian, he affirmeth that neither he ought to bring forth the councel of Nice, nor the other the councel of Arimine, thereby to bring preiudice each to other; neither ought the Arrian to be holden by the authoritie of the one, nor himſelfe by the autority of the other, but by the ſcriptures which are witneſſes proper to neither, but common to both; matter with matter, cauſe with cauſe, reaſon with reaſon ought to be debated, *Contra Maxim. Arian.3.14.ca.* And in another place againſt *Petilian* the Donatiſt, he ſaith, Let not theſe words be heard betweene vs, I ſay, you ſay; let vs heare this, Thus ſaith the Lord. And by and by ſpeaking of the Scriptures he ſaith, There let vs ſeeke the Church, there let vs trie the cauſe. *De vnita. Eccleſ.cap.3.* Hereby it is manifeſt, that the argument of the authority of man affirmatiuely is nothing worth.

mons and ſpeeches vttered concerning that matter, and recorded in Scripture. And leſt any ſhould be wearied with ſuch ſtore of allegations, in the end he concludeth, *While we labour for theſe demonſtrations out of Scripture, and doe ſummarily declare the things which many waies haue bin ſpoken, be contented quietly to heare, and doe not thinke my ſpeech tedious: Quoniã oſtenſiones quæ ſunt in Scripturis non poſſunt oſtendi niſi ex ipſis Scripturis; Becauſe demonſtrations that are in Scripture, may not otherwiſe be ſhewed, then by citing them out of the Scriptures themſelues where they are.* Which words make ſo little vnto the purpoſe, that they ſeeme as it were offended at him which hath called them thus ſolemnely forth to ſay nothing. And cõcerning the verdict of *Ierome*, If no man be he neuer ſo well learned, haue after the Apoſtles any authoritie to publiſh new doctrine as from Heauen, and to require the Worlds aſſent as vnto truth receyued by propheticall reuelation; doth this preiudice the credite of learned mens iudgements in opening that truth, which by being conuerſant in the Apoſtles writings, they haue themſelues from thence learned? Saint *Auguſtine* exhorteth not to heare men; but to hearken what God ſpeaketh. His purpoſe is not (I thinke) that wee ſhould ſtop our eares againſt his owne exhortation, and therefore he cannot meane ſimply that audience ſhould altogether bee denied vnto men; but eyther that if men ſpeake one thing, and God himſelfe teach an other, then he, not they to bee obeyed; or if they both ſpeake the ſame thing, yet then alſo mans ſpeech vnworthie of hearing, not ſimply, but in compariſon of that which proceedeth from the mouth of God. Yea but wee doubt what the will of God is. Are we in this caſe forbidden to heare what men of iudgement thinke it to bee? If not, then this allegation alſo might very well haue beene ſpared. In that ancient ſtrife which was betweene the Catholique Fathers and Arrians, Donatiſts, and others of like peruerſe and froward diſpoſition, as long as to Fathers or Councels alleaged on the one ſide, the like by the contrarie ſide were impoſed, impoſſible it was that euer the queſtion ſhould by this meane grow vnto any iſſue or end. The Scripture they both beleeued; the Scripture they knew could not giue ſentence on both ſides, by Scripture the controuerſie betweene them was ſuch as might be determined. In this caſe what madneſſe was it with ſuch kindes of proofes to nouriſh their contention, when there were ſuch effectuall meanes to end all controuerſie that was between them? Hereby therefore it doth not as yet appeare, that an argument of authoritie of man affirmatiuely is in matters diuine nothing worth. Which opinion being once inſerted into the mindes of the vulgar ſort, what it may grow vnto God knoweth. Thus much wee ſee, it hath alreadie made thouſands ſo headſtrong euen in groſſe and palpable errors, that a man whoſe capacitie will ſcarce ſerue him to vtter fiue wordes in ſenſible manner, bluſheth not in any doubt concerning matter of Scripture to think his own bare *Yea* as good as the *Nay* of all the wiſe, graue and learned iudgements that are in the whole world. Which inſolencie muſt be repreſt, or it will be the very bane of Chriſtian religion. Our Lords Diſciples marking what ſpeech hee vttered vnto them, and at the ſame time calling to minde a common opinion held by the Scribes, betweene which opinion and the wordes of their Maiſter, it ſeemed vnto them that there was ſome contradiction, which they could not

themſelues anſwere with full ſatisfaction of their owne mindes; the doubt they propoſe to our Sauiour, ſaying, *Why then ſay the Scribes that Elias muſt firſt come?* They knew that the Scribes did erre greatly, and that many waies euen in matters of their owne profeſſion. They notwithſtanding thought the iudgement of the verie Scribes in matters diuine to bee of ſome value; ſome probabilitie they thought there was that *Elias* ſhould come, in as much as the Scribes ſaid it. Now no truth can contradict any truth; deſirous therefore they were to be taught, how both might ſtand together; that which they knew could not be falſe, becauſe Chriſt ſpake it; and this which to them did ſeeme true, onely becauſe the Scribes had ſaid it. For the Scripture from whence the Scribes did gather it, was not then in their heads. Wee doe not finde that our Sauiour reproued them of errour, for thinking the iudgement of Scribes to be worth the obiecting, for eſteeming it to be of any moment or value in matters concerning God. We cannot therefore be perſwaded that the will of God is, we ſhould ſo farre reiect the authoritie of men, as to reckon it nothing. No, it may be a queſtion, whether they that vrge vs vnto this be themſelues ſo perſwaded indeed. Men doe ſometimes bewray that by deedes, which to confeſſe they are hardly drawne. Marke then if this bee not generall with all men for the moſt part. When the iudgements of learned men are alledged againſt them; what doe they but either eleuate their credite, or oppoſe vnto them the iudgements of others as learned? Which thing doth argue that all men acknowledge in them ſome force and waight, for which they are loath the cauſe they maintaine ſhould be ſo much weakned as their teſtimonie is auaileable. Againe what reaſon is there why alleaging teſtimonies as proofes, men giue them ſome title of credite, honour and eſtimation whom they alledge, vnleſſe before hand it be ſufficiently knowne who they are; what reaſon hereof but only a common ingrafted perſwaſion, that in ſome men there may be found ſuch qualities as are able to countervaile thoſe exceptions which might bee taken againſt them, and that ſuch mens authority is not lightly to be ſhaken off? Shal I adde further, that the force of arguments drawne from the authority of Scripture it ſelfe, as Scriptures commonly are alledged, ſhall (being ſifted) bee found to depend vpon the ſtrength of this ſo much deſpiſed and debaſed authoritie of man? Surely it doth, and that oftner then we are aware of. For although Scripture be of God, and therefore the proofe which is taken from thence muſt needes be of all other moſt inuincible; yet this ſtrength it hath not, vnleſſe it auouch the ſelfe-ſame thing for which it is brought. If there be either vndeniable apparance that ſo it doth, or reaſon ſuch as cannot deceiue, then Scripture-proofe (no doubt) in ſtrength and value exceedeth all. But for the moſt part, euen ſuch as are readieſt to cite for one thing fiue hundred ſentences of holy Scripture; what warrant haue they, that any one of them doth meane the thing for which it is alledged? Is not their ſureſt ground moſt commonly, eyther ſome probable coniecture of their owne, or the iudgement of others taking thoſe Scriptures as they doe? Which notwithſtanding to meane otherwiſe then they take them, it is not ſtill altogether impoſſible. So that now and then they ground themſelues on humane authoritie, euen when they moſt pretend diuine. Thus it fareth euen cleane throughout the whole controuerſie about that diſcipline

Matth. 17. 10.

which

which is ſo earneſtly vrged and labored for. Scriptures are plentifully alleaged to proue that the whole Chriſtian World for euer ought to embrace it. Hereupon men terme it, *The Diſcipline of God.* Howbeit, examine, ſift and reſolue their alleaged prooſes, till you come to the very roote from whence they ſpring, the heart wherein their ſtrength lyeth; and it ſhall cleerely appeare vnto any man of iudgement, that the moſt which can bee inferred vpon ſuch plentie of Diuine Teſtimonies is onely this, That *ſome things* which they maintaine as farre as *ſome men* can *probably coniecture*, doe *ſeeme* to haue beene out of Scripture *not abſurdly* gathered. Is this a warrant ſufficient for any mans conſcience to build ſuch proceedings vpon, as haue bene and are put in vre for the eſtabliſhment of that cauſe? But to conclude, I would gladly vnderſtand how it commeth to paſſe, that they which ſo peremptorily doe maintaine that Humane authoritie is nothing worth, are in the cauſe which they fauor ſo carefull to haue the common ſort of men perſwaded, that the wiſeſt, the godlieſt, and the beſt Learned in all Chriſtendome are that way given, ſeeing they iudge this to make nothing in the World for them? Againe, how commeth it to paſſe, they cannot abide that Authoritie ſhould be alleaged on the other ſide, if there be no force at all in Authorities on one ſide or other? Wherefore labour they to ſtrip their Aduerſaries of ſuch furniture as doth not helpe? Why take they ſuch needleſſe paines to furniſh alſo their owne cauſe with the like? If it be void and to no purpoſe that the names of men are ſo frequent in their Bookes; what did mooue them to bring them in, or doth to ſuffer them there remaining? Ignorant I am not how this is ſalued, *They doe it but after the truth made manifeſt; firſt, by reaſon or by Scripture, they doe it not but to controule the enemies of truth, who beare themſelues bold vpon humane Authoritie making not for them but againſt them rather.* Which anſweres are nothing. For in what place or vpon what conſideration ſoeuer it bee they doe it, were it in their owne opinion of no force being done, they would vndoubtedly refraine to doe it.

T.C.l.2.11. If at any time it happened vnto *Auguſtine* (as it did againſt the Donatiſts and others) to alleage the authoritie of the Ancient Fathers which had beene before him; yet this was not done before hee had laid a ſure foundation of his cauſe in the Scriptures, and that alſo being prouoked by the Aduerſaries of the truth, who bare themſelues high of ſome Councell, or of ſome man of name that had fauoured that part.

8 But to the end it may more plainly appeare, what wee are to iudge of their ſentences, and of the cauſe it ſelfe wherein they are alleaged; firſt, it may not well be denyed, that all actions of men indued with the vſe of reaſon, are generally either good or euill. For, although it be granted that no action is properly termed good or euill, vnleſſe it be voluntarie; yet this can be no let to our former aſſertion, that all actions of men indued with the vſe of reaſon are generally either good or euill; becauſe euen thoſe things are done voluntarily by vs, which other creatures doe naturally, in as much as wee might ſtay our doing of them if wee would. Beaſts naturally doe take their food and reſt, when it offereth it ſelfe vnto them. If men did ſo too, and could not doe otherwiſe of themſelues; there were no place for any ſuch reproofe as that of our Sauiour Chriſt vnto his Diſciples, *Could yee not watch with mee one houre?* That which is voluntarily performed in things tending to the end, if it bee well done, muſt needes bee done with deliberate conſideration of ſome reaſonable cauſe, wherefore wee rather ſhould doe it then not. Whereupon it ſeemeth, that in ſuch actions onely thoſe are ſaid to bee good or euil, which are capable of deliberation: ſo that many things being hourely done by men, wherein they neede not vſe with themſelues any manner of conſultation at all, it may perhaps hereby ſeeme

A Declaration what the truth is in this matter.

Mat.26.40.

that well or ill doing belongeth onely to our waightier affaires, and to thoſe deedes which are of ſo great importance that they require aduice. But thus to determine were perillous, and peraduenture vnſound alſo. I doe rather incline to thinke, that ſeeing all the vnforced actions of men are voluntarie; and all voluntary actions tending to the end haue choice; and all choice preſuppoſeth the knowledge of ſome cauſe wherefore wee make it: where the reaſonable cauſe of ſuch actions ſo readily offereth it ſelfe, that it needeth not to bee ſought for; in thoſe things though wee doe not deliberate, yet they are of their nature apt to be deliberated on, in regard of the will which may incline either way, and would not any one way bend it ſelfe, if there were not ſome apparent Motiue to lead it. Deliberation actuall wee vſe, when there is doubt what we ſhould incline our wils vnto. Where no doubt is, deliberation is not excluded as impertinent vnto the thing, but as needleſſe in regard of the agent, which ſeeth already what to reſolue vpon. It hath no apparent abſurditie therefore in it to thinke, that all actions of men indued with the vſe of reaſon, are generally either good or euill. Whatſoeuer is good; the ſame is alſo approued of God: and according vnto the ſundry degrees of goodneſſe, the kinds of Diuine approbation are in like ſort multiplyed. Some things are good, yet in ſo meane a degree of goodneſſe, that men are only not diſproued nor diſallowed of God for them. No man hateth his owne fleſh. If ye doe good vnto them that doe ſo to you, the very Publicans themſelues doe as much. They are worſe then Infidels that haue no care to prouide for their owne. In actions of this ſort, the very light of Nature alone may diſcouer that which is ſo farre forth in the ſight of God allowable. Some things in ſuch ſort are allowed, that they bee alſo required as neceſſarie vnto Saluation, by way of direct, immediate and proper neceſſitie finall; ſo that without performance of them we cannot by ordinary courſe bee ſaued, nor by any meanes bee excluded from life obſeruing them. In actions of this kind, our chiefeſt direction is from Scripture, for Nature is no ſufficient Teacher what wee ſhould doe that may attaine vnto life euerlaſting. The vnſufficiencie of the light of Nature, is by the light of Scripture ſo fully and ſo perfectly herein ſupplyed, that further light then this hath added, there doth not need vnto that end. Finally, ſome things although not ſo required of neceſſitie, that to leaue them vndone excludeth from ſaluation, are notwithſtanding of ſo great dignitie and acceptation with God, that moſt ample reward in Heauen is laid vp for them. Hereof we haue no Commandement either in Nature or Scripture which doth exact them at our hands: yet thoſe Motiues there are in both, which draw moſt effectually our mindes vnto them. In this kinde there is not the leaſt action, but it doth ſomewhat make to the acceſſory augmentation of our bliſſe. For which cauſe our Sauiour doth plainely witneſſe, that there ſhould not bee as much as a cup of cold water beſtowed for his ſake without reward. Hereupon dependeth whatſoeuer difference there is betweene the ſtates of Saints in glory: hither we referre whatſoeuer belongeth vnto the higheſt perfection of man by way of ſeruice towards God: hereunto that feruour and firſt loue of Chriſtians did bend it ſelfe, cauſing them to ſell their poſſeſſions, and lay downe the price at the bleſſed Apoſtles feet: hereat S. *Paul* vndoubtedly did ayme, in ſo farre abridging his owne libertie, and exceeding that which the bond of neceſſary and enioyned duty tyed him vnto.

Ephes.5.29.
Mat.5.46.
2.Tim.3.8.
Mat.10.42.
Act.4.37.
2.Theſſ.2.7,9.

Where-

Wherefore ſeeing that in all theſe ſeuerall kinds of actions, there can be nothing poſſibly euill which God approueth; and that he approueth much more then he doth command; and that his very Commandements in ſome kind, as namely, his Precepts comprehended in the Law of Nature, may be otherwiſe knowne then onely by Scripture; and that to doe them, howſoeuer wee know them, muſt needs be acceptable in his ſight: let them, with whom wee haue hitherto diſputed, conſider well, how it can ſtand with reaſon to make this bare mandate of Sacred Scripture the only Rule of all good and euill in the actions of mortall men. The Teſtimonies of God are true, the Teſtimonies of God are perfect, the Teſtimonies of God are al-ſufficient vnto that end for which they were giuen. Therefore accordingly we do receiue them, we do not thinke that in them God hath omitted any thing needfull vnto his purpoſe, & left his intent to be accompliſhed by our deuiſings. What the Scripture purpoſeth, the ſame in all points it doth performe. Howbeit, that here wee ſwerue not in iudgement, one thing eſpecially we muſt obſerue, namely, that the abſolute perfection of Scripture is ſeene by Relation vnto that end whereto it tendeth. And euen hereby it commeth to paſſe, that firſt ſuch as imagine the generall and mayne drift of the body of Sacred Scripture not to be ſo large as it is, nor that God did thereby intend to deliuer, as in truth he doth, a full inſtruction in all things vnto Saluation neceſſary, the knowledge whereof man by nature could not otherwiſe in this life attayne vnto: they are by this very meane induced, either ſtill to looke for new Reuelations from Heauen, or elſe dangerouſly to adde to the Word of God vncertayne Tradition, that ſo the Doctrine of mans Saluation may be complete; which Doctrine wee conſtantly hold in all reſpects without any ſuch thing added to be ſo complete, that wee vtterly refuſe as much as once to acquaint our ſelues with any thing further. Whatſoeuer to make vp the Doctrine of mans Saluation is added as in ſupply of the Scriptures vnſufficiency, we reiect it. Scripture purpoſing this, hath perfectly and fully done it. Againe, the ſcope and purpoſe of God in deliuering the holy Scripture, ſuch as do take more largely then behoueth, they on the contrary ſide racking and ſtretching it further then by him was meant, are drawne into ſundrie as great inconueniences. Theſe pretending the Scriptures perfection, inferre thereupon that in Scripture all things lawfull to be done muſt needs be contayned. Wee count thoſe things perfect which want nothing requiſite for the end whereto they were inſtituted. As therfore God created euery part & particle of man exactly perfect, that is to ſay, in all points ſufficient vnto that vſe for which he appointed it; ſo the Scripture, yea euery ſentence therof is perfect, and wanteth nothing requiſite vnto that purpoſe for which God deliuered the ſame. So that if hereupon we conclude, that becauſe the Scripture is perfect, therfore all things lawful to be done are comprehended in the Scripture; we may euen as wel conclude ſo of euery ſentence, as of the whole ſumme & body thereof, vnleſſe we firſt of all proue that it was the drift, ſcope and purpoſe of Almighty God in holy Scripture, to compriſe al things which man may practiſe. But admit this, and marke, I beſeech you, what would follow. God in deliuering Scripture to his Church, ſhould cleane haue abrogated amongſt them the law of nature; which is an infallible knowledge imprinted in the minds of all the children of men, whereby both generall principles for directing of humane actions

T.C. lib. 2. pag. 6. Where this doctrine is accuſed of bringing men to deſpaire, it hath wrong. For when doubting is the way to deſpaire, againſt which this Doctrine offereth the remedie; it muſt needs be that it bringeth comfort and ioy to the conſcience of man.

are

are comprehended, and conclusions derived from them; vpon which conclusions groweth in particularizing the choice of good and euill in the daily affaires of this life. Admit this, and what shal the Scripture be but a snare and a torment to weake Consciences, filling them with infinite perplexities, scrupulosities, doubts insoluble, and extreme despaires? Not that the Scripture it selfe doth cause any such thing, (for it tendeth to the cleane contrary, and the fruit thereof is absolute assurance and certainty in that it teacheth:) but the necessities of this life urging men to doe that which the light of Nature, common discretion and iudgement of it selfe directeth them vnto; on the other side, this Doctrine resisting them that so to doe were to sinne against their owne soules, and that they put forth their hands to iniquitie, whatsoeuer they goe about and haue not first the sacred Scripture of God for direction: how can it choose but bring the simple a thousand times to their wits end; how can it choose but vex and amaze them? For in euery action of common life to find out some sentence clearly and infallibly setting before our eyes what we ought to doe, (seeme we in Scripture neuer so expert) would trouble vs more then we are aware. In weake and tender minds wee little know what miserie this strict opinion would breed, besides the stops it would make in the whole course of all mens liues and actions. Make all things sin which we doe by direction of Natures light, and by the rule of common discretion without thinking at all vpon Scripture, admit this Position, and Parents shall cause their children to sinne, as oft as they cause them to doe any thing, before they come to yeeres of capacitie and be ripe for Knowledge in the Scripture. Admit this, and it shall not be with Masters, as it was with him in the Gospell; but Seruants being commanded to goe, shall stand still, till they haue their errand warranted vnto them by Scripture. Which as it standeth with Christian dutie in some cases, so in common affaires to require it, were most vnfit. Two opinions therefore there are concerning sufficiency of holy Scripture, each extremely opposite vnto the other, and both repugnant vnto Truth. The Schooles of Rome teach Scripture to be vnsufficient, as if, except Traditions were added, it did not containe all reuealed and supernaturall Truth, which absolutely is necessary for the Children of Men in this life, to know that they may in the next be saued. Others iustly condemning this opinion, grow likewise vnto a dangerous extremitie, as if Scripture did not only containe all things in that kind necessary, but all things simply, and in such sort that to doe any thing according to any other Law, were not onely vnnecessary, but euen opposite vnto Saluation, vnlawfull and sinfull. Whatsoeuer is spoken of God, or things appertaining to God, otherwise then as the Truth is; though it seeme an honour, it is an iniurie. And as incredible prayses giuen vnto men, doe often abate and impaire the credit of their deserued commendation; so we must likewise take great heed, lest in attributing vnto Scripture more then it can haue, the incredibilitie of that, doe cause euen those things which indeed it hath most aboundantly, to be lesse reuerendly esteemed. I therefore leaue it to themselues to consider, whether they haue in this first point or not ouer-shot themselues; which, God doth know, is quickly done, euen when our meaning is most sincere, as I am verily perswaded theirs in this case was.

Luke 7. v. 8.

O F

OF THE LAWES OF ECCLESIASTICALL POLITIE:

The third Booke.

Concerning their second Assertion, that in Scripture *there must be of necessity contained a forme of Church-polity, the Lawes whereof may in no wise be altered.*

The matter contained in this third Booke.

1 WHat the Church is, and in what respects Lawes of Polity are thereunto necessarily required.

2 Whether it be necessary that some particular forme of Church-polity be set downe in Scripture, sith the things that belong particularly to any such forme are not of necessity to salvation.

3 That matters of Church-Polity are different from matters of faith & salvation, & that they themselues so teach which are our reprouers for so teaching.

4 That hereby we take not from Scripture any thing, which thereunto with the soundnesse of truth may be given.

5 Their meaning who first vrged against the Polity of the Church of England, that nothing ought to be established in the Church more then is commanded by the Word of God.

6 How great iniury men by so thinking should offer vnto all the Churches of God.

7 A shift notwithstanding to maintaine it, by interpreting Commanded as though it were meant that greater things only ought to be found set downe in Scripture particularly, & lesser framed by the generall rules of Scripture.

8 Another deuice to defend the same, by expounding Commanded as if it did signifie grounded on Scripture, and were opposed to things found out by light of naturall reason onely.

9 How Lawes for the Polity of the Church may be made by the aduice of men, & how those Lawes being not repugnant to the Word of God are approued in his sight.

10 *That neither Gods being the Author of Lawes, nor yet his committing of them to Scripture, is any reason sufficient to proue that they admit no addition or change.*

11 *Whether Christ must needs intend Lawes vnchangeable altogether, or haue forbidden any where to make any other Law then himselfe did deliuer.*

What the Church is, and in what respect Lawes of Politie are thereunto necessarily required.

ALbeit the substance of those Controuersies whereinto wee haue begun to wade, bee rather of outward things appertaining to the Church of Christ then of any thing wherein the nature and beeing of the Church consisteth: yet because the subiect or matter which this position concerneth, is *A forme of Church-gouernment or Church Politie*; it therefore behoueth vs so farre forth to consider the nature of the Church, as is requisite for mens more cleere and plaine vnderstanding, in what respect Lawes of Politie or Gouernment are necessary thereunto. That Church of Christ which wee properly terme his bodie mysticall, can be but one, neither can that one bee sensibly discerned by any man, in as much as the parts thereof are some in Heauen alreadie with Christ, and the rest that are on Earth (albeit their naturall persons bee visible) wee doe not discerne vnder this propertie whereby they are truely and infallibly of that body. Onely our mindes by intellectuall conceit are able to apprehend, that such a reall bodie there is, a bodie collective, because it containeth an huge multitude; a body mysticall, because the mysterie of their coniunction is removed altogether from sense. What soeuer wee reade in Scripture concerning the endlesse loue and the sauing mercie, which God sheweth towards his Church, the onely proper subiect thereof is this Church. Concerning this flocke it is that our Lord & Sauiour hath promised, *I giue vnto them eternall life, & they shal neuer perish, neither shall any pluck thē out of my hands.* They who are of this society, haue such markes and notes of distinction from all others, as are not obiect vnto our sense; onely vnto God, who seeth their hearts and vnderstandeth all their secret cogitations, vnto him they are cleere and manifest. All men knew *Nathaniel* to be an Israelite. But our Sauiour piercing deeper, giueth further testimonie of him then men could haue done with such certainty as hee did, *Behold indeed an Israelite in whom their is guile.* If wee professe as *Peter* did, that wee loue the Lord, and professe it in the hearing of men; charity is prone to beleeue all things, and therefore charitable men are likely to think we doe so, as long as they see no proofe to the contrary. But that our loue is sound and sincere, that it commeth from a *pure heart & a good conscience and a faith vnfained*, who can pronounce, saue onely the searcher of all mens hearts, who alone intuitiuely doth know in this kind who are his? And as those euerlasting promises of Loue, Mercy, & Blessednesse, belong to the mysticall Church; euen so on the other side when wee reade of any duty which the Church of God is bound vnto, the Church whom this doth concerne is a sensible known company. And this visible Church in like sort is but one, continued from the first beginning of the World to the last end.

Iohn 10.28.

Iohn 1.47.

Iohn 21.15.

1. Tim. 1.5.

Which

Which company being deuided into two moieties, the one before, the other since the comming of Christ: that part which since the comming of Christ, partly hath embraced, and partly shall hereafter embrace the Christian Religion, we terme as by a more proper name the Church of Christ. And therefore the Apostle affirmeth plainly of all men Christian, that be they Iewes or Gentiles, bond or free, they are all incorporated into one company, they all make but [a] *one body*. The vnity of which visible body and Church of Christ, consisteth in that vniformity which all seuerall persons thereunto belonging haue, by reason of that *one Lord*, whose seruants they all professe themselues; that *one Faith*, which they all acknowledge, that *one Baptisme*, wherewith they are all initiated. The visible Church of Iesus Christ therefore one, in outward profession of those things which supernaturally appertaine to the very Essence of Christianitie, and are necessarily required in euery particular Christian man. *Let all the house of Israel know for certainty*, saith *Peter*, *that God hath made him both Lord and Christ*, *euen this Iesus whom ye haue crucified*. Christians therefore they are not, which call not him their Master and Lord. And from hence it came, that first at Antioch, and afterwards throughout the whole World, all that were of the Church visible were called Christians, euen amongst the Heathen: which name vere them was precious and glorious; but in the estimation of the rest of the World, euen Christ Iesus himselfe was [b] execrable, for whose sake all men were so likewise which did acknowledge him to bee their Lord. This himselfe did foresee, and therefore armed his Church, to the end they might sustaine it without discomfort: *All these things they will doe vnto you for my names sake, yet the time shall come, that whosoeuer killeth you will thinke that he doth God good seruice. These things I tell you, that when the houre shall come, yee may then call to mind how I told you before hand of them.* But our naming of Iesus Christ the Lord, is not enough to prooue vs Christians, valesse we also imbrace that faith, which Christ hath published vnto the World. To shew that the Angell of Pergamus continued in Christianitie, behold, how the Spirit of Christ speaketh; *Thou hast confessed my Name, and thou hast not denyed my Faith.* Concerning which Faith, *The rule thereof*, saith Tertullian, *is one alone, immoueable, & no way possible to be bettered or framed anew.* What rule that is he sheweth by rehearsing those few Articles of Christian beliefe. And before *Tertullian*, *Irenæus*; *The Church though scattered euen ouer all the world through the whole World vnto the vttermost borders of the Earth, hath from the Apostles and their Disciples receiued beliefe.* The parts of which beliefe he also reciteth in substance the very same with *Tertullian*, and thereupon inferreth; *That faith the Church being spread farre and wide preserueth, as if one house did containe them, these things it equally embraceth, as though it had euen one soule, one heart and no more; it publisheth, teacheth and deliuereth these things with vniforme consent, as if God had giuen it but one only tongue wherewith to speake. He which amongst the Guides of the Church is best able to speake, vttereth no more then this, and he lesse then this the most simple doth not vtter, when they make profession of their Faith.* Now although wee know the Christian Faith, and allow of it, yet in this respect wee are but entring; entered wee

[a] *Ephes.* 2. 16. That he might reconcile both vnto God in one body. *Eph.* 3. 16. That the Gentiles should be Inheritors also and of the same bodie. *Vide* T. 4. 3. 4. 7. *art.* 3. 1. *Cor.* 12. 13. *Ephes.* 4. 5. *Act.* 2. 36. *John* 13. 13. *Col.* 3. 24. *Col* 4. 1.

[b] 1. *Cor.* 2. 23. *Vide & Tacitum lib. Annal.* 15. *Nec sequentibus modo paucis affuit quin per flagitia inuisos vulgus Christianos appellabat. Auctor nominis eius Christus, qui Tiberio imperante per procuratorem Pontium Pilatum supplicio affectus erat. Repressaque in presens exitiabilis superstitio rursus erumpebat, non modo per Iudæam, originem eius mali, sed per vrbem etiam, quo cuncta undique atrocia aut pudenda confluunt celebranturque.*

John 15. 21. *John* 16. 2, 4.

Apoc. 2. 13. *Tertull. de Virg. vel.*

Iren. lib. 1. *cap.* 3. & 4.

10 are

are not into the visible Church, before our admittance by the dore of Baptisme. Wherefore immediatly vpon the acknowledgement of Christian Faith, the Eunuch (we see) was baptised by *Philip*; *Paul* by *Ananias*, by *Peter* a huge multitude containing three thousand soules; which being once baptised, were reckoned in the number of soules added to the visible Church. As for those vertues that belong vnto morall righteousnesse and honesty of life, we doe not mention them, because they are not proper vnto Christian men, as they are Christian, but doe concerne them, as they are men. True it is, the want of these vertues excludeth from salvation. So doth much more the absence of inward beliefe of heart; so doth despaire and lack of hope; so emptinesse of Christian Loue and Charity. But we speake now of the visible Church, whose Children are signed with this marke, *One Lord, one Faith, one Baptisme*. In whomsoeuer these things are, the Church doth acknowledge them for her Children; them onely she holdeth for Aliens and Strangers, in whom these things are not found. For want of these is it that Saracens, Iewes, & Infidels, are excluded out of the bounds of the Church. Others we may not denie to be of the visible Church, as long as these things are not wanting in them. For apparent it is, that all men are of necessitie either Christians or not Christians. If by externall profession they bee Christians, then are they of the visible Church of Christ. And Christians by externall profession they are all, whose marke of Recognizance hath in it those things which wee haue mentioned, yea although they be impious Idolaters, wicked Heretiques, Persons Excommunicable, yea and cast out for notorious improbitie. Such withall we denie not to be the Imps and limmes of Satan, euen so long as they continue such. Is it then possible that the selfe-same men should belong both to the Synagogue of Satan, and to the Church of Iesus Christ? Vnto that Church which is his Mysticall Body, not possible, because that body consisteth of none but onely true Israelites, true sonnes of *Abraham*, true Seruants & Saints of God. Howbeit of the visible body and Church of Iesus Christ, those may bee and oftentimes are, in respect of the maine parts of their outward profession; who in regard of their inward disposition of mind, yea of external conuersion, yea euen of some parts of their very profession, are most worthily both hatefull in the sight of God himselfe, and in the eyes of the founder parts of the visible Church most execrable. Our Sauiour therefore compareth the Kingdome of heauen to a Net, whereunto all which commeth, neither is nor seemeth fish; his Church he compareth vnto a field, where Tares manifestly knowne and seene by all men doe grow intermingled with good Corne, and euen so shall continue till the finall consummation of the World. God hath had euer, and euer shall haue some Church visible vpon the Earth. When the people of God worshipped the Calfe in the Wildernesse; when they adored the brasen Serpent; when they serued the Gods of Nations; when they bowed their knees to *Baal*, when they burnt Incense and offered Sacrifice vnto Idols; true it is, the wrath of God was most fiercely inflamed against them, their Prophets iustly condemned them, as an adulterous Seed and a wicked Generation of Miscreants, which had forsaken the liuing God, and of him were likewise forsaken, in respect of that singular mercie wherewith he kindly and louing embraceth his faithfull Children. Howbeit retayning the Law of God, and the holy Seale of his Couenant, the sheepe-

Acts 8.38.
Acts 22.16.
Acts 2.41.

Mat. 13.47.
Mat. 13.24.

Exod. 32.
Psal. 106.19,20.
3. *King.* 18.4.
Ier. 11.14.
2. *King.* 22.17.
Esay 57.3.
Esay 1.4.
Esay 60.15.

Ier. 13.11.
1. *King.* 19.18.

of his Viſible Flocke they continued euen in the depth of their Diſobedience and Rebellion. Wherefore not onely *amongſt* them God alwayes had his Church, becauſe he had thouſands which neuer bowed their knees to *Baal*; but whoſe knees were bowed vnto *Baal*, euen they were alſo of the Viſible Church of God. Nor did the Prophet ſo complaine, as if that Church had beene quite and cleane extinguiſhed; but he tooke it as though there had not beene remayning in the World any beſides himſelfe, that carried a true and an vpright heart towards God, with care to ſerue him according to his Holy Will. For lacke of diligent obſeruing the difference, firſt, betweene the Church of God Myſticall and Viſible, then betweene the viſible ſound and corrupted, ſometimes more, ſometimes leſſe; the ouerſights are neyther few nor light that haue beene committed. This deceyueth them, and nothing elſe, who thinke that in the time of the firſt World, the Family of *Noah* did containe all that were of the Viſible Church of God. From hence it grew and from no other cauſe in the World, that the Affricane Biſhops in the Councell of Carthage, knowing how the adminiſtration of Baptiſme belongeth onely to the Church of Chriſt, and ſuppoſing that Heretikes which were apparantly ſeuered from the ſound beleeuing Church, could not poſſibly be of the Church of Ieſus Chriſt; thought it vtterly againſt reaſon, that Baptiſme adminiſtred by men of corrupt beleefe, ſhould be accounted as a Sacrament. And therefore in maintenance of rebaptization, their arguments are built vpon the fore-alledged ground, *That Heretiques are not at all* any part of the Church of Chriſt. *Our Sauiour founded his Church on a Rock, and not vpon hereſie; power of baptizing he gaue to his Apoſtles, vnto Heretiques he gaue it not. Wherefore they that are without the Church, and oppoſe themſelues againſt Chriſt, doe but ſcatter his Sheepe and Flocke; without the Church baptize they cannot.* Againe, *Are Heretiques Chriſtians, or are they not? If they be Chriſtians, wherefore remaine they not in Gods Church? If they be no Chriſtians, how make they Chriſtians? Or to what purpoſe ſhall thoſe words of the Lord ſerue, He which is not with me, is againſt me: and, He which gathereth not with me, ſcattereth? Wherefore euident it is, that vpon miſbegotten children and the brood of Antichriſt, without re-baptization the Holy Ghoſt cannot deſcend.* But none in this caſe ſo earneſt as CYPRIAN; *I know no Baptiſme but one, and that in the Church onely; none without the Church, where he that doth caſt out the Deuill, hath the Deuill: He doth examine about beliefe, whoſe lips and words doe breathe forth a Canker: The faithleſſe doth offer the Articles of Faith, a wicked creature forgiueth wickednes, in the name of Chriſt, Antichriſt ſigneth; he which is curſed of God, bleſſeth, a dead carrion promiſeth life, a man vnpeaceable giueth peace, a Blaſphemer calleth vpon the Name of God, a prophane perſon doth exercise Prieſthood, a Sacrilegious wretch doth prepare the Altar, and in the necke of all theſe that euill alſo commeth, the Euchariſt a very Biſhop of the Deuill doth preſume to conſecrate.* All this was true, but not ſufficient to proue that Heretikes were in no ſort any part of the Viſible Church of Chriſt, and conſequently their Baptiſme no Baptiſme. This opinion therefore was afterwards both cõdemned by a better aduiſed Councell, and alſo reuoked by the chiefeſt of the Authours thereof themſelues. What is it but only the ſelfe-ſame Errour and Miſconceit, wherewith others beeing at this day likewiſe poſſeſt, they aske vs where our Church did lurke, in what Cane of the Earth it ſlept for ſo many hundreds of

Ier.13.11. *1.King.19.18.*

Fortunat. in Concil. Car. Mat.7.24. Mat.16.18. Mat.12.30.

Secundinus in eodem Concil. Mat.12.30.

In Concilio Niceno. Vide Hieronymi lib. Adu. Luciferia.

yeeres together before the birth of *Martin Luther?* As if we were of opinion that *Luther* did erect a new Church of Christ. No, the Church of Christ which was from the beginning, is, and continueth vnto the end. Of which Church all parts haue not beene alwayes equally sincere and sound. In the dayes of *Abia* it plainely appeareth, that *Iuda* was by many degrees more free from pollution then Israel, as that solemne Oration sheweth, wherein hee pleadeth for the one
2. Chron. 13. against the other in this wise: *O* IEROBOAM, *and all Israel, heare you me; Haue yee not driuen away the Priests of the Lord, the Sonnes of* AARON, *and the Leuites, and haue made you Priests like the people of Nations? Whosoeuer commeth to consecrate with a young Bullocke and seuen Rammes, the same may be a Priest of them that are no Gods. But we belong vnto the Lord our God, and haue not forsaken him; and the Priests the Sonnes of* AARON *Minister vnto the Lord euerie morning and euery euening burnt Offerings and sweet Incense, and the Bread is set in order vpon the pure Table, and the Candlestick of Gold with the Lampes thereof to burne euery euening; for we keepe the watch of the Lord our God, but yee haue forsaken him.* In Saint *Pauls* time, the integritie of Rome was famous; Corinth many wayes reproued, they of Galatia much more out of square. In Saint *Iohns* time, Ephesus and Smyrna in farre better state then Thyatira and Pergamus were. Wee hope therefore, that to reforme our selues, if at any time we haue done amisse, is not to seuer our selues from the Church we were of before. In the Church wee were, and we are so still. Other difference betweene our estate before and now, wee know none but onely such as we see in Iuda, which hauing sometime beene Idolatrous, became afterwards more soundly Relig-
Hos. 4. 15. & 17. ous, by renouncing Idolatrie and Superstition. If EPHRAIM *be ioyned vnto Idols*, the counsell of the Prophet is, *Let him alone. If Israel play the Harlot,*
Ier. 3. 11. *let not* IVDA *sinne.* If it seeme euill vnto you, saith *Iosuah*, to serue the Lord, *choose you this day whom you will serue, whether the gods whom your Fathers serued beyond the Flood, or the gods of the Amorites in whose Land ye dwell: but I and mine house will serue the Lord.* The indisposition therefore of the Church of Rome to reforme her selfe, must bee no stay vnto vs from performing our duetie to God; euen as desire of retayning conformitie with them, could be no excuse if wee did not performe that duetie. Notwithstanding so farre as lawfully we may, we haue held, and doe hold fellowship with them. For euen
Rom. 11. 28. as the Apostle doth say of Israel, that they are in one respect enemies, but in another beloued of God: In like sort with Rome wee dare not communicate concerning sundrie her grosse and grieuous abominations; yet touching those maine parts of Christian truth wherein they constantly still persist, wee gladly acknowledge them to bee of the Family of Iesus Christ; and our hearty Prayer vnto God Almightie is, that being coniojned so farre forth with them, they may at the length, (if it be his will) so yeeld to frame and reforme themselues, that no distraction remaine in any thing, but that we all may with one heart and one mouth, glorifie God the Father of our Lord and Sauiour, whose Church we are. As there are which make the Church of Rome vtterly no Church at all, by reason of so many, so grieuous errours in their Doctrines: so we haue them amongst vs, who vnder pretence of imagined corruptions in our Discipline, doe giue euen as hard a iudgement of the Church of England it selfe. But whatsoeuer either the one sort or the other teach, wee must acknowledge euen Here-

tikes

tikes themſelues to bee though a maimed part, yet a part of the Viſible Church. If an Infidel ſhould purſue to death an Heretike profeſſing Chriſtianitie, onely for Chriſtian profeſſion ſake: could wee deny vnto him the honour of Martyrdome? Yet this honour all men know to be proper vnto the Church. Heretikes therfore are not vtterly cut off from the Viſible Church of Chriſt. If the Fathers doe any where, as oftentimes they doe, make the true Viſible Church of Chriſt and Heretical companies oppoſite, they are to be conſtrued as ſeparating Heretikes not altogether from the company of Beleeuers, but from the felloſhip of ſound Beleeuers. For where profeſt vnbeliefe is, there can be no Viſible Church of Chriſt; there may be, where ſound beliefe wanteth. Infidels being cleane without the Church, deny directly and vtterly reiect the very Principles of Chriſtianitie; which Heretickes embrace, and erre onely by miſconſtruction; whereupon their opinions, although repugnant indeede to the Principles of Chriſtian Faith, are notwithſtanding by them held otherwiſe, and maintained as moſt conſonant thereunto. Wherefore being Chriſtians in regard of the generall Truth of Chriſt which they openly profeſſe; yet they are by the Fathers euery where ſpoken of, as men cleane excluded out of the right beleeuing Church, by reaſon of their particular Errours, for which all that are of a ſound beliefe muſt needs condemne them. In this conſideration the anſwer of *Calvin* vnto *Farell*, concerning the Children of Popiſh Parents doth ſeeme crazed; *Whereas*, ſaith he, *you aske our iudgement about a matter, whereof there is doubt amongſt you, whether Miniſters of our order profeſſing the pure Doctrine of the Goſpel, may lawfully admit vnto Baptiſme an Infant whoſe Father is a Stranger vnto our Churches, and whoſe Mother hath fallen from vs vnto the Papacie, ſo that both the Parents are Papiſts; thus we haue thought good to anſwer, namely, that it is an abſurd thing for vs to baptize them which cannot be reckoned members of our body. And ſith Papiſts children are ſuch, we ſee not how it ſhould be lawfull to miniſter Baptiſme vnto them.* Sounder a great deale is the anſwer of the Eccleſiaſticall Colledge of Geneua vnto *Knox*, who hauing ſignified vnto them, that himſelfe did not thinke it lawfull to baptize Baſtards, or the Children of Idolaters (he meaneth Papiſts) or of Perſons Excommunicate, till eyther the Parents had by repentance ſubmitted themſelues vnto the Church, or elſe their children being growne vnto the yeeres of vnderſtanding, ſhould come and ſue for their owne Baptiſme: *For thus thinking*, ſaith he, *I am thought to be ouer ſeuere, and that not onely by them which are Papiſts, but euen in their iudgements alſo who thinke themſelues Maintainers of Truth.* Maſter *Knoxes* ouer-ſight herein they controuled. Their Sentence was, *Whereſoeuer the profeſſion of Chriſtianity hath not vtterly periſhed and beene extinct, Infants are beguiled of their Right, if the common Seale be denied them.* Which concluſion in it ſelfe is ſound, although it ſeemeth the ground is but weake whereupon they build it. For the reaſon which they yeeld of their Sentence is this; *The promiſe which God doth make to the Faithfull concerning their Seede, reacheth vnto a thouſand Generations; it reſteth not onely in the firſt Degree of Deſcent. Infants therefore whoſe great Grandfathers haue beene holy and godly, doe in that reſpect belong to the bodie of the Church, although the Fathers and Grandfathers of whom they deſcend, haue beene Apoſtates: Becauſe the tenure of the grace of God which did adopt them three hundred yeares agoe and more in their Ancient Predeceſſours,* cannot

Calvin. Epiſt. 179

Epiſt. 183.

Epiſt. 285.

cannot with iuſtice be defeated and broken off by their Parents impietie comming betweene. By which reaſon of theirs, although it ſeeme that all the World may be baptized, in as much as no man liuing is a thouſand Deſcents remoued from *Adam* himſelfe; yet wee meane not at this time eyther to vphold or to ouerthrow it: onely their alledged concluſion wee embrace, ſo it bee conſtrued in this ſort, *That for as much as men remaine in the Viſible Church, till they vtterly renounce the profeſſion of Chriſtianitie; we may not deny vnto Infants their right, by withholding from them the publique Signe of Holy Baptiſme, if they be borne where the outward acknowledgement of Chriſtianitie is not cleane gone and extinguiſhed.* For being in ſuch ſort borne, their Parents are within the Church, and therefore their birth doth giue them intereſt and right in Baptiſme. Albeit not euery errour and fault, yet Hereſies and Crimes which are not actually repented of and forſaken, exclude quite and cleane from that Saluation, which belongeth vnto the Myſticall Bodie of Chriſt; yea, they alſo make a Separation from the Viſible ſound Church of Chriſt; altogether from the Viſible Church neyther the one nor the other doth ſeuer. As for the Act of Excommunication, it neither ſhutteth out from the Myſticall, nor cleane from the Viſible, but onely from fellowſhip with the Viſible in Holy Duties. With what congruitie then doth the Church of Rome denie, that her Enemies, whom ſhe holdeth alwaies for Heretikes, doe at all appertaine to the Church of Chriſt; when her owne doe freely grant, that albeit the Pope (as they ſay) cannot teach Hereſie nor propound Errour, hee may notwithſtanding himſelfe worſhip Idols, thinke amiſſe concerning matters of Faith, yea, giue himſelfe vnto Acts Diabolicall, euen being Pope? How exclude they vs from being any part of the Church of Chriſt vnder the colour and pretence of Hereſie, when they cannot but grant it poſſible euen for him to bee as touching his owne perſonall perſwaſion Heretical, who in their opinion not onely is of the Church, but holdeth the chiefeſt place of authoritie ouer the ſame? But of theſe things we are not now to diſpute. That which alreadie wee haue ſet downe, is for our preſent purpoſe ſufficient. By the Church therefore in this queſtion we vnderſtand no other then onely the Viſible Church. For preſeruation of Chriſtianitie there is not any thing more needfull, then that ſuch as are of the Viſible Church, haue mutuall fellowſhip and ſocietie one with another. In which conſideration, as in the main body of the ſea being one, yet within diuers Precincts hath diuers names; ſo the Catholique Church is in like ſort diuided into a number of diſtinct Societies, euery of which is termed a Church within it ſelfe. In this ſenſe the Church is alwaies a viſible ſocietie of men; not an aſſembly, but a ſociety. For although the name of the Church be giuen vnto Chriſtian aſſemblies, although any multitude of Chriſtian men congregated may be termed by the name of a Church; yet aſſemblies properly are rather things that belong to a Church. Men are aſſembled for performance of publike actions; which actions being ended, the aſſembly diſſolueth it ſelfe, and is no longer in being; whereas the Church which was aſſebled, doth no laſſe cõtinue afterwards then before. *Where but three are, and they of the Laity alſo,* ſaith *Tertullian, yet there is a Church,* that is to ſay, a Chriſtian aſſembly. But a Church, as now we are to vnderſtand it, is a ſociety, that is, a number of men belonging vnto ſome Chriſtian fellowſhip, the place and limits whereof are certaine. That wherein they haue communion,

Tertull. ubi ſupr. Vbi tres, eccleſia eſt, licet Laici.

communion, is the publique exerciſe of ſuch duties as thoſe mentioned in the Apoſtles Acts, *Inſtruction, Breaking of Bread,* and *Prayers.* As therefore they that are of the Myſticall Body of Chriſt, haue thoſe inward Graces and Vertues, whereby they differ from all others which are not of the ſame Body; againe, whoſoeuer appertaine to the Viſible Body of the Church, they haue alſo the notes of externall Profeſſion, whereby the World knoweth what they are: after the ſame maanner, euen the ſeuerall Societies of Chriſtian men, vnto euerie of which the name of a Church is giuen, with addition betokening ſeuerally, as the Church of Rome, Corinth, Epheſus, England, and ſo the reſt; muſt bee indued with correſpondent generall properties belonging vnto them, as they are publike Chriſtian Societies. And of ſuch properties common vnto all Societies Chriſtian, it may not bee denyed, that one of the verie chiefeſt is Eccleſiaſticall Politie. Which word I therefore the rather vſe, becauſe the name of Gouernement as commonly men vnderſtand it in ordinary ſpeech, doth not comprize the largeneſſe of that whereunto in this queſtion it is applyed. For when we ſpeake of Gouernement, what doth the greateſt part conceiue thereby, but only the exerciſe of Superioritie peculiar vnto Rulers and Guides of others? To our purpoſe therefore the name of Church-Politie will better ſerue, becauſe it containeth both Gouernement, and alſo whatſoeuer beſides belongeth to the ordering of the Church in publike. Neither is any thing in this degree more neceſſarie then Church-Politie, which is a forme of ordering the publike ſpirituall affaires of the Church of God. *Act.* 2. 47.

2 But wee muſt note, that hee which affirmeth ſpeech to bee neceſſarie amongſt all men throughout the World, doth not thereby import that all men muſt neceſſarily ſpeake one kind of Language. Euen ſo the neceſſitie of Politie, and Regiment in all Churches may bee held, without holding any one certayne forme to bee neceſſary in them all. Nor is it poſſible that any forme of Politie, much leſſe of Politie Eccleſiaſticall, ſhould bee good, vnleſſe God himſelfe bee Author of it. *Thoſe things that are not of God* (ſaith *Tertullian*) *they can haue no other then Gods Aduerſarie for their Author.* Be it whatſoeuer in the Church of God, if it be not of God, we haue it. Of God it muſt be, either as thoſe things ſometimes were, which God ſupernaturally reuealed, and ſo deliuered them vnto *Moſes* for Gouernement of the Common-wealth of Iſrael; or elſe as thoſe things which men find out by helpe of that light, which God hath giuen them vnto that end. The verie Law of Nature it ſelfe, which no man can deny but God hath inſtituted, is not of God, vnleſſe that be of God, whereof God is the Author as well this later way as the former. But for as much as no forme of Church-Politie is thought by them to be lawfull, or to be of God, vnleſſe God be ſo the Author of it, that it be alſo ſet downe in Scripture; they ſhould tell vs plainely, whether their meaning bee, that is muſt bee there ſet downe in whole or in part. For if wholly, let them ſhew what one forme of Politie euer was ſo. Their owne to be ſo taken out of Scripture they will not affirme; neyther denie they that in part, euen this which they ſo much oppugne is alſo from thence taken. Againe, they ſhould tell vs, whether onely that bee taken out of Scripture, which is actually and particularly there ſet downe; or elſe that alſo, which the generall Principles and Rules of Scripture potentially containe. The

Whether it be neceſſarie that ſome particular formes of Church-Policy bee ſet downe in Scripture, ſith the things that belong particularly vnto any ſuch forme, are not of neceſſitie to Saluation.

Tertull. de habitu mul. Humana ſint neceſſe eſt, quæ Dei non ſunt.

Rom. 2. 15.

Lactan. lib. 6. c. 8 Ille legis huius inuentor, diſceptator, latur, &c. 3. de Repub.

one way they cannot as much as pretend, that all the parts of their owne Discipline are in Scripture; and the other way their mouthes are stopped, when they would pleade against all other formes besides their owne; seeing the generall Principles are such, as doe not particularly prescribe any one, but fondly may equally bee consonant vnto the generall Axiomes of the Scripture. But to give them some larger scope, and not to close them vp in these straights: let their allegations be considered, wherewith they earnestly bend themselues against all, which denie it necessarie that any one complete forme of Church-Politie should bee in Scripture. First therefore, whereas it hath beene told them, that matters of Faith, and in general, matters necessary vnto Salvation, are of a different nature from Ceremonies, order, and the kinde of Church-gouernement; that the one are necessarie to bee expressely contayned in the Word of God, or else manifestly collected out of the same, the other not so; that it is necessarie not to receiue the one, vnlesse there bee something in Scripture for them; the other free, if nothing against them may thence bee alledged: although there doe not appeare any iust or reasonable cause to reiect or dislike of this, nevertheless, as it is not easie to speake to the contentation of mindes exulcerated in themselues, but that somewhat there will be alwayes which displeaseth, so herein for two things we are reprooued; the first is *misdistinguishing*, because matters of Discipline and Church-gouernment are (as they say) matters necessarie to Saluation, and of Faith, whereas wee put a difference betwene the one and the other; our second fault is *iniurious dealing* with the Scripture of GOD, as if it contained onely the principall poynts of Religion, some rude and vnfashioned matter of building the Church, but had left out that which belongeth vnto the forme and fashion of it; as if there were in the Scripture no more then onely to couer the Churches nakednesse, and not Chaynes, Bracelets, Rings, Iewels to adorne her; sufficient to quench her thirst, to kill her hunger, but not to minister a more liberall and (as it were) a more delicious and daintie dyet. In which case our Apologie shall not need to be verie long.

Two things misliked, the one, that wee distinguish matters of Discipline or Church-gouernement from matters of Faith and necessarie vnto Salvation; the other, that wee are iniurious to the Scripture of God, in abridging the large and rich contents thereof. Their words are these: You which distinguish betweene these, and say that matters of Faith and necessarie vnto Salvation may not be tolerated in the Church, vnlesse they be expressly contained in the Word of God, or manifestly gathered; but that Ceremonies, Order, Discipline, Gouernment in the Church, may not bee receyued against the Word of God, and consequently may be receyued if there be no word against them, although there bee none for them; you (I say) distinguishing or diuiding after this sort, doe prooue your selfe an euill diuider. As though matters of Discipline and kinde of Gouernement were not matters necessarie to Saluation, and of Faith. It is no smal iniurie which you doe vnto the Word of God to pinne it in so narrow roome, as that it should be able to direct vs but in the principall points of our Religion, or as though the substance of Religion, or some rude and vnfashioned matter of building of the Church were vttered in them, and those things were left out that should pertayne to the forme and fashion of it, or as if there were in the Scriptures onely to couer the Churches nakednesse, and not also Chaynes, and Bracelets and Rings, and other Iewels to adorne her and set her out: or that to conclude, there were sufficient to quench her thirst and kill her hunger, but not to minister vnto her a more liberall, and (as it were) a more delicious and daintie dyet. These things you seeme to say, when you say that matters necessarie to Saluation, and of Faith, are contayned in Scripture, especially, when you oppose these things to Ceremonies, Order, Discipline, and Gouernement, *T. C. lib. 1. pag. 16.*

That matters of Discipline are different from matters of Faith and Saluation, and that they themselues so teach which are our Reprouers.

3 * The mixture of those things by speech, which by nature are diuided, is the Mother of all Error. To take away therefore that error which Confusion breedeth, distinction is requisite. Rightly to distinguish, is by conceit of minde to seuer things different in Nature, and to discerne wherein they differ. So that if we imagine a difference where there is none, because wee distin-

guish

guish where wee should not, it may not bee denyed that wee mis-distinguish. The onely tryall whether we doe so, yea or no, dependeth vpon comparison betweene our conceit and the nature of things conceiued. Touching matters belonging to the Church of CHRIST this wee conceiue, that they are not of one sute. Some things are *meerely* of Faith, which things it doth suffice that wee know and beleeue: some things not onely to bee knowne, but done, because they concerne the Actions of men. Articles about the Trinitie are matters of meere Faith, and must be beleeued. Precepts concerning the workes of Charitie, are matters of action, which to know, vnlesse they be practised, is not enough. This being so cleere to all mens vnderstanding, I somewhat maruaile that they especially should thinke it absurd to oppose *Church-gouernement*, a plaine matter of action, vnto matters of Faith, who know that themselues deuide the Gospell into *Doctrine* and *Discipline*. For if matters of Discipline bee rightly by them distinguished from matters of Doctrine, why not matters of Gouernment by vs as reasonably set against matters of Faith? Doe not they vnder Doctrine comprehend the same which wee intend by matters of Faith? Doe not they vnder Discipline comprize the Regiment of the Church? When they blame that in vs, which themselues follow, they give men great cause to doubt that some other thing then Iudgement doth guide their speech. What the Church of God standeth bound to know or doe, the same in part Nature teacheth. And because Nature can teach them but onely in part, neither so fully, as is requisite for mans saluation; nor so easily, as to make the way plaine & expedite enough, that many may come to the knowledge of it and so be saued; therefore in Scripture hath God both collected the most necessarie things, that the Schoole of Nature teacheth vnto that end; and reuealeth also whatsoeuer we neither could with safetie be ignorant of, nor at all be instructed in but by supernaturall Reuelation from him. So that Scripture containing all things that are in this kind any way needfull for the Church, and the principall of the other sort, this is the next thing wherewith we are charged as with an errour: we teach that whatsoeuer is vnto saluation termed *necessary* by way of excellencie, whatsoeuer it standeth all men vpon to know or doe that they may be saued, whatsoeuer there is whereof it may truly be said, *This not to beleeue is eternall death and damnation*, or, *This euery soule that will liue must duly obserue*, of which sort the Articles of Christian Faith, and the Sacraments of the Church of Christ are; all such things if Scripture did not comprehend, the Church of God should not bee able to measure out the length and breadth of that way wherein for euer shee is to walke; Heretiques and Schismatiques neuer ceasing, some to abridge, some to enlarge, all to peruert and obscure the same. But as for those things that are accessorie hereunto, those things that so belong to the way of Saluation, as to alter them is no otherwise to change that way, then a path is changed by altering onely the vppermost face thereof, which bee it laid with Gravell, or set with Grasse, or paued with Stones, remayneth still the same path; in such things because discretion may

T. C. lib. 1. pag. 1. We offer to shew the Discipline to be a part of the Gospell. And againe, pag. 7 I speake of the Discipline as of a part of the Gospell. If the Discipline be one part of the Gospell, what other part can they allege but Doctrine, to answere in diuision to the Discipline?

may pench the Church whin is conuenient, wee hold not the Church further tyed herein vnto Scripture, then that against Scripture nothing bee admitted in the Church, lest that path which ought alwayes to bee kept euen, doe thereby come to be ouer-growne with Brambles and Thornes. If this bee vnsound, wherein doth the point of vnsoundnesse lye? It is not that wee make some things *necessarie*, some things *accessorie* and appendent onely. For our LORD and SAVIOVR himselfe doth make that difference, by naming Iudgement, and Mercy, and Fidelity, with other things of like nature, *The greater & weighMatth. 23. 23. tier matters of the Law*. Is it then in that wee account *Ceremonies* (wherein wee doe not comprise Sacraments, or any other the like substantiall duties in the exercise of Religion, but onely such externall Rites as are vsually annexed vnto Church actions,) is it an ouer-sight, that wee reckon these things and * matters of Gouernment in the number of things accessorie, not things necessarie in such sort as hath beene declared? Let them which therefore thinke vs blameable, consider well their owne wordes. Doe they not plainely compare the one vnto Garments which couer the bodie of the Church, the other vnto Rings, Bracelets, and Iewels that onely adorne it? the one to that Foode which the Church doth liueby, the other to that which maketh her Dyet liberall, daintie, and more delicious? Is daintie fare a thing necessarie to the sustenance, or to the clothing of the bodie rich Attire? If not, how can they vrge the necessitie of that which themselues resemble by things not necessarie? Or by what construction shall any man liuing bee able to make those comparisons iust, holding that distinction vntrue, which putteth a difference betweene things of externall Regiment in the Church, and things necessarie vnto saluation?

* The Gouernment of the Church of Christ granted by *Master Hooker* to bee thought a matter of great moment, yea one of the substance of Religion. Against Doctor *Bridges*, page 531. If it bee *Master* which was the Author of that Booke.

That wee doe not take from Scripture any thing which may bee therevnto giuen with soundnes of truth. *Arist. Pol. lib. 1. cap. 8. & Plato in Menex. Arist. lib. 3. de Anima, cap. 47.*

4. Now as it can be to Nature no iniurie, that of her we say the same which diligent beholders of her workes haue obserued, namely, that she prouideth for all liuing creatures nourishment which may suffice, that she bringeth forth no kinde of creature whereto shee is wanting in that which is needfull; although we doe not so farre magnifie her exceeding bountie, as to affirme that shee bringeth into the World the sonnes of men adorned with gorgeous attire, or maketh costly buildings to spring vp out of the Earth for them: So I trust that to mention what the Scripture of God leaueth vnto the Churches discretion in some things, is not in any thing to impayre the honour which the Church of God yeeldeth to the sacred Scriptures perfection. Wherein seeing that no more is by vs maintayned, then only that Scripture must needs teach the Church whatsoeuer is in such sort necessary as hath beene set downe; and that it is no more disgrace for Scripture to haue left a number of other things free to bee ordered at the discretion of the Church, then for Nature to haue left it vnto the wit of man to deuise his owne attyre, and not to looke for it as the beasts of the field haue theirs: If neither this can impose, nor any other proofe sufficient bee brought foorth, that wee either will at any time, or euer did affirme the sacred Scripture to comprehend no more then onely those lore necessaries; if wee acknowledge that as well for particular application to speciall occasions,

as

as alſo in other manifold reſpects infinite Treaſures of Wiſedome are ouer and beſides abundantly to be found in the Holy Scripture; yea, that ſcarcely there is any noble part of knowledge, worthy the mind of man, but from thence it may haue ſome direction and light; yea, that although there be no neceſſitie it ſhould of purpoſe preſcribe any one particular forme of Church-Gouernment; yet touching the manner of gouerning in generall, the Precepts that Scripture ſetteth downe are not few, and the Examples many which it propoſeth for all Church-Gouernours, euen in particularities to follow; yea, that thoſe things, finally, which are of principall weight in the very particular forme of Church-Politie, (although not that forme which they imagine, but that which wee againſt them vphold) are in the ſelfe-ſame Scriptures contained: if all this be willingly granted by vs, which are accuſed to pinne the Word of God in ſo narrow roome, as that it ſhould be able to direct vs but in principall points of our Religion, or as though the ſubſtance of Religion or ſome rude or vnfaſhioned matter of building the Church were vttered in them, and thoſe things left out that ſhould pertaine to the forme and faſhion of it; let the cauſe of the accuſed be referred to the Accuſers owne conſcience, and let that iudge whether this accuſation be deſerued where it hath beene layd.

5 But ſo eaſie it is for every man liuing to erre, and ſo hard to wreſt from any mans mouth the plaine acknowledgement of errour, that what hath beene once inconſiderately defended, the ſame is commonly perſiſted in, as long as wit by whetting it ſelfe is able to finde out any ſhift, be it neuer ſo ſleight, whereby to eſcape out of the hands of preſent contradiction. So that it commeth herein to paſſe with men vnaduiſedly falne into errour, as with them whoſe ſtate hath no ground to vphold it, but onely the helpe which by ſubtill conueyance they draw out of caſuall euents ariſing from day to day, till at length they bee cleane ſpent. They which firſt gaue out, that *Nothing ought to be eſtabliſhed in the Church which is not commanded by the Word of God*, thought this Principle plainly warranted by the manifeſt words of the Law; *Ye ſhall put nothing vnto the Word which I command you, neither ſhall ye take ought there-from, that ye may keepe the Commandements of the Lord our God, which I command you.* Wherefore hauing an eye to a number of Rites and Orders in the Church of England, as Marrying with a Ring, Croſſing in the one Sacrament, kneeling at the other, obſeruing of Feſtiuall Dayes more then onely that which is called the *Lords Day*, inioyning Abſtinence at certaine times from ſome kindes of Meate, Churching of Women after Child-birth, Degrees taken by Diuines in Vniuerſities, ſundry Church-offices, Dignities, and Callings, for which they found no Commandement in the holy Scripture, they thought by the one onely ſtroke of that Axioome to haue cut them off. But that which they tooke for an Oracle, being ſifted was repeld. True it is concerning the Word of God, whether it be by miſconſtruction of the ſenſe, or by falſification of the words, wittingly to endeauour that any thing may ſeeme Diuine which is not, or any thing not ſeeme which is, were plainly to abuſe and euen to falſifie Diuine Euidence, which iniurie offered but vnto men is moſt worthily counted hainous. Which point I wiſh they did well obſerue, with whom nothing is more familiar then to plead in theſe Cauſes, *The Law of God, The Word of the Lord*: who notwithſtanding when

Their meaning who firſt did plead againſt the Policie of the Church of England, vrging that, *Nothing ought to bee eſtabliſhed in the Church, which is not commanded by the word of God:* & what Scripture they thought they might ground this Aſſertion vpon. *Deut.4.2. & Deut.12.32.* Whatſoeuer I command you take heed you doe it: thou ſhalt put nothing thereto, nor take ought there-from.

when they come to alleage what Word and what Law they meane, their common ordinarie practice is, to quote by speeches in some historicall Narration or other, and to vrge them as if they were written in most exact forme of Law. What is to adde to the Law of God, if this bee not? When that which the Word of God doth but deliuer historically, wee confter without any warraint as if it were legally meant, and so vrge it further then we can proue that it was intended, doe wee not adde to the Lawes of God, and make them in number seeme more then they are? It standeth vs vpon to be carefull in this case. For the sentence of God is heauie against them, that wittingly shall presume thus to vse the Scripture.

The same assertion wee cannot hold, without doing wrong vnto all Churches.

6 But let that which they doe hereby intend bee granted them; let it once stand as consonant to reason, that because we are forbidden to adde to the Law of God any thing, or to take ought from it, therefore wee may not for matters of the Church make any Law more then is already set downe in Scripture: who seeth not what sentence it shall enforce vs to giue against all Churches in the World, in as much as there is not one, but hath had many things established in it, which though the Scripture did neuer command, yet for vs to condemne were rashnesse. Let the Church of GOD euen in the time of our SAVIOVR CHRIST serue for example vnto all the rest. In their Domesticall Celebration of the Passeouer, which Supper they diuided (as it were) into two courses, what Scripture did giue Commandement that betweene the first and the second, hee that was Chiefe should put off the residue of his Garments, and keeping on his Feast-robe onely, wash the feete of them that were with him? What Scripture did command them neuer to lift vp their hands vnwasht in Prayer vnto God, which custome *Aristæus* (be the credit of the Author more or lesse) sheweth wherefore they did so religiously obserue? What Scripture did command the Iewes euery festiuall day to fast till the sixt houre? The custome both mentioned by *Iosephus* in the Historie of his owne life, and by the words of *Peter* signified. Tedious it were to rip vp all such things, as were in that Church established, yea by Christ himselfe and by his Apostles obserued though not commanded any where in Scripture.

Iohn 13. Cæsarium 1. de quo Mat. 22. 23. ibi de Cæsario nuptiali.

Acts 2.

* A shift to maintain that, Nothing ought to bee established in the Church, which is not commanded in the Word of God: Namely, that Commandements are of two sorts; and that all things lawfull in the Church are commanded, if not by speciall Precepts, yet by generall Rules in the

7 * Well, yet a Glosse there is to colour that paradox and notwithstanding all this, still to make it appeare in shew not to be altogether vnreasonable. And therefore till further reply come, the cause is held by a feeble distinction; that the Commandements of God being either generall or speciall, although there be no expresse word for euery thing in specialtie, yet there are generall Commandements for all things, to the end that euen such cases as are not in Scripture particularly mentioned, might not be left to any to order at their pleasure, onely with caution that nothing bee done against the Word of God: and that for this cause the Apostle hath set downe in Scripture foure generall Rules, requiring such things alone to bee receiued in the Church, as doe best and neerest agree with the same Rules, that so all things in the Church may bee appointed, not onely *not against*, but *by* and *according* to the Word of God. The Rules are these, *Nothing scandalous* or offensiue vnto any, especially vnto the Church of God; *All things* in order and with seemelinesse; *All vnto edification*; finally,

Word. 1. Cor. 10. 31. 1. Cor. 14. 40.

All

All to the glory of God. Of which kind how many might be gathered out of the Scripture, if it were neceſſary to take ſo much paines? Which Rules they that vrge, minding thereby to proove that nothing may bee done in the Church but what Scripture commandeth, muſt needes hold that they tye the Church of Chriſt no otherwiſe, then onely becauſe wee finde them there ſet downe by the finger of the Holy Ghoſt. So that vnleſſe the Apoſtle by writing had deliuered thoſe Rules to the Church, we ſhould by obſerning them haue ſinned, as now by not obſeruing them. In the Church of the Iewes is it not granted, that *the appointment of the houre for daily Sacrifices*; the building of *Synagogues* throughout the Land to heare the Word of God & to pray in, when they came not vp to Ieruſalem, the erecting of *Pulpits & Chaires* to teach in; the order of *Burial*, the *Rites of Marriage*, with ſuch like, being matters appertaining to the Church, yet are not any where preſcribed in the Law, but were by the Churches diſcretion inſtituted? What then ſhall we thinke? Did they hereby adde to the Law, & ſo diſpleaſe God by that which they did? None ſo hardly perſwaded of them. Doth their Law deliuer vnto them the ſelfe-ſame generall rules of the Apoſtles, that framing thereby their Orders, they might in that reſpect cleere themſelues from doing amiſſe? Saint *Paul* would then of likelihood haue cited them out of the Law, which we ſee he doth not. The truth is, they are Rules and Canons of that Law which is written in all mens hearts; the Church had for euer no leſſe then now ſtood bound to obſerue them, whether the Apoſtle had mentioned them or no. Seeing therefore thoſe Canons doe binde as they are Edicts of Nature, which the Iewes obſerning as yet vnwritten, and thereby framing ſuch Church-orders as in their Law were not preſcribed, are notwithſtanding in that reſpect vnculpable; it followeth, that ſundry things may bee lawfully done in the Church, ſo as they bee not done againſt the Scripture, although no Scripture doe command them, but the Church onely following the Light of Reaſon, iudge them to be in diſcretion meete. Secondly, vnto our purpoſe and for the queſtion in hand, whether the Commandements of God in Scripture be generall or ſpeciall, it skilleth not. For if being particularly applyed, they haue in regard of ſuch particulars a force conſtraining vs to take ſome one certaine thing of many, and to leaue the reſt, whereby it would come to paſſe, that any other particular but that one being eſtabliſhed, the generall Rules themſelues in that caſe would be broken; then is it vtterly impoſſible that God ſhould leaue any thing great or ſmall free for the Church to eſtabliſh or not. Thirdly, if ſo be they ſhall grant, as they cannot otherwiſe do, that theſe rules are no ſuch Lawes as require any one particular thing to be done, but ſerue rather to direct the Church in all things which ſhe doth; ſo that free & lawfull it is to deuiſe any Ceremony, to receiue any Order, & to authorize any kind of Regiment, no ſpeciall Commandemen being therby violated; & the ſame being thought ſuch by them to whom the iudgement thereof appertaineth, as that it is not ſcandalous, but decent, tending vnto edification, & ſetting forth the glory of God, that is to ſay, agreeable vnto the generall Rules of the Scripture; this doth them no good in the World for the furtherance of their purpoſe. That which ſhould make for them, muſt proue that men ought not to make Lawes for Church Regiment, but onely keepe thoſe Lawes which in Scripture they find made. The plaine intent

1. Cor. 14. 26. Rom. 14. 5, 7.

1. Cor. 14. 33.

of

of the Booke of Eccleſiaſticall Diſcipline is to ſhew, that men may not deuiſe Lawes of Church-Gouernement; but are bound for euer to vſe and execute only thoſe, which God himſelfe hath alreadie deuiſed and deliuered in the Scripture. The ſelfe-ſame drift the Admonitioners alſo had, in vrging that nothing ought to be done in the Church according vnto any Law of mans deuiſing, but all according to that which God in his Word hath commanded. Which not remembring, they gather out of Scripture generall Rules to be followed in making Lawes; and ſo in effect they plainly grant, that wee our ſelues may lawfully make Lawes for the Church, and are not bound out of Scripture onely to take Lawes alreadie made, as they meant who firſt alledged that Principle whereof we ſpeake. One particular platforme it is which they reſpected, and which they laboured thereby to force vpon all Churches; whereas theſe general rules do not let, but that there may well enough bee ſundry. It is the particular order eſtabliſhed in the Church of England, which thereby they did intend to alter, as beeing not commanded of God; whereas vnto thoſe generall Rules they know, we do not defend that we may hold any thing vnconformable. Obſcure it is not what meaning they had, who firſt gaue out that grand Axiome: and according vnto that meaning, it doth preuaile farre and wide with the Fauourers of that part. Demand of them, wherefore they conforme not themſelues vnto the order of our Church? and in euery particular their anſwere for the moſt part is, *We find no ſuch thing commanded in the Word.* Whereby they plainly require ſome ſpeciall Commandement for that which is exacted at their hands; neither are they content to haue matters of the Church examined by generall Rules and Canons. As therefore in Controuerſies betweene vs and the Church of Rome, that which they practiſe, is many times euen according to the very groſneſſe of that which the vulgar ſort conceiueth; when that which they teach to maintaine it, is ſo nice and ſubtill, that hold can very hardly bee taken thereupon; in which caſes wee ſhould doe the Church of God ſmall benefit, by diſputing with them according vnto the fineſt points of their darke conueyances, and ſuffering that ſenſe of their Doctrine to goe vncontrolled, wherein by the common ſort it is ordinarily receiued and practiſed: So conſidering what diſturbance hath growne in the Church among our ſelues, & how the Authors thereof doe commonly build altogether on this as a ſure foundatiõ, *Nothing ought not to be eſtabliſhed in the Church, which in the Word of God is not commanded*; were it reaſon that we ſhuld ſuffer the ſame to paſſe without controlment, in that currant meaning whereby euery-where it preuaileth, and ſtay till ſome ſtrange conſtruction were made thereof, which no man would lightly haue thought on, but being driuen thereunto for a ſhift?

Another anſwere in defence of the former aſſertion, whereby the meaning thereof is opened in this ſort. All Church-orders muſt be commanded in the Word, that is to ſay, grounded vpon the World, and made according at the leaſt-wiſe vnto the generall Rules of holy Scripture. As for ſuch things as are found out by any Starre or light of Reaſon, and are in that reſpect receiued, ſo they be not againſt the Word of God, all ſuch things it holdeth vnlawfully receiued.

8 The laſt refuge in maintayning this Poſition, is thus to conſter it; *Nothing ought to be eſtabliſhed in the Church, but that which is commanded in the Word of God*; that is to ſay, All Church-orders muſt be *grounded vpon the Word of God*, in ſuch ſort grounded vpon the Word, not that being found out by ſome *Starre or light of Reaſon, or Learning, or other helpe*, they may bee receiued, ſo they bee not againſt the Word of God; but according at leaſt-wiſe vnto the generall Rules of Scripture

ture they muſt be made. Which is in effect as much as to ſay, *Wee know not what to ſay well in defence of this poſition: and therefore leſt wee ſhould ſay it is falſe, there is no remedie but to ſay that in ſome ſence or other it may be true, if wee could tell how.* Firſt that *Scholie* had need of a very fauourable Reader, and a tractable, that ſhould thinke it plaine conſtruction, when to bee *commaunded in the word*, and *grounded vpon the word* are made all one. If when a man may liue in the ſtate of Matrimonie, ſeeking that good thereby which nature principally deſireth, he make rather choyce of a contrary life in regard of S^t. *Paules* iudgement; that which hee doth is manifeſtly *grounded* vpon the Word of God, yet *not commanded* in his Word, becauſe without breach of any commandement he might doe otherwiſe. Secondly, whereas no man in iuſtice and reaſon can be reproued, for thoſe actions which are framed according vnto that knowne will of God, whereby they are to be iudged; and the will of God which we are to iudge our actions by, no ſound Diuine in the world euer denied to be in part made manifeſt euen by light of nature, and not by Scripture alone; if the Church beeing directed by the former of theſe two, (which God hath giuen who gaue the other, that man might in different ſort be guided by them both,) if the Church, I ſay, doe approue and eſtabliſh that which thereby it iudgeth meete, and findeth not repugnant to any word or ſillable of holy Scripture, who ſhall warrant our preſumptuous boldneſſe, controlling herein the Church of Chriſt? But ſo it is, the name of the light of nature is made hatefull with men; *the Starre of reaſon and learning*, and all other ſuch like helpes, beginneth no otherwiſe to be thought of, then if it were an vnluckie Comet, or as if God had ſo accurſed it, that it ſhould neuer ſhine or giue light in things concerning our duetie any way towards him, but bee eſteemed as that *Starre* in the Reuelation called *Wormewood*, which beeing fallen from Heauen, maketh Riuers and Waters in which it falleth, ſo bitter, that men taſting them die thereof. A number there are, who thinke they cannot admire as they ought the power and authoritie of the Word of God, if in things diuine they ſhould attribute any force to mans reaſon. For which cauſe they neuer vſe reaſon ſo willingly as to diſgrace reaſon. Their vſuall and common diſcourſes are vnto this effect: Firſt, *The naturall man perceyueth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are fooliſhneſſe vnto him, neyther can he know them, becauſe they are ſpiritually diſcerned.* Secondly, it is not for nothing that S. *Paul* giueth charge to *beware of Philoſophy*, that is to ſay, ſuch knowledge as men by naturall reaſon attaine vnto. Thirdly, Conſider them that haue from time to time oppoſed themſelues againſt the Goſpel of Chriſt, and moſt troubled the Church with Hereſie. Haue they not alwaies beene great admirers of humane reaſon? Hath their deepe and profound skill in ſecular learning, made them more obedient to the truth, and not armed them rather againſt it? Fourthly, They that feare God will remember how heauie his ſentences are in this caſe; *I will deſtroy the wiſedome of the wiſe, and will caſt away the vnderſtanding of the prudent. Where is the wiſe? Where is the Scribe? Where is the diſputer of this World? Hath not God made the wiſedome of this World fooliſhneſſe? Seeing the World by wiſedome knew not God in the wiſedome of God, it pleaſed God by the fooliſhneſſe of preaching to ſaue Beleeuers.* Fiftly, the Word of God in it ſelfe is abſolute,

Ariſt. polit. 1.

1. Cor. 7.

Apoc. 8. 10.

1. Cor. 2. 14.

Col. 2. 8.

1. Cor. 1. 19.

exact, and perfect. The Worde of God is a two-edged Sword: as for the weapons of naturall reaſon, they are as the armour of *Saul*, rather cumberſome about the ſouldier of Chriſt then needefull. They are not of force to doe that, which the Apoſtles of Chriſt did by the power of the holy Ghoſt, *My*
1.Cor. 2.5. *preaching*, therefore ſaith *Paul, hath not beene in the inticing ſpeech of mans wiſdome, but in plaine evidence of the ſpirit of power; that your faith might not bee in the wiſedome of men, but in the power of God.* Sixtly, if I beleeve the Goſpell, there needeth no reaſoning about it to perſwade mee: If I doe not beleeve, it muſt bee the Spirit of God, and not the reaſon of man that ſhall conuert my heart vnto him. By theſe and the like diſputes an opinion hath ſpread it ſelfe verie farre in the world, as if the way to be ripe in faith, were to be raw in wit and iudgement; as if reaſon were an enemie vnto Religion, childiſh ſimplicitie the mother of ghoſtly and diuine wiſdome. The cauſe why ſuch declamations preuaile ſo greatly, is, for that men ſuffer themſelues in two reſpects to be deluded, one is, that the wiſedome of men being debaſed, eyther in compariſon with that of God, or in regard of ſome ſpecial thing, exceeding the reach and compaſſe thereof, it ſeemeth to them (not marking ſo much) as if ſimply it were condemned: an other, that learning, knowledge, or wiſdome falſly ſo termed, vſurping a name whereof they are not worthie, and being vnder that name controlled, their reproofe is by ſo much the more eaſily miſapplied, & through equiuocation wreſted againſt thoſe things whereunto ſo precious names doe properly and of right belong. This duely obſerued, doth to the former allegations it ſelfe make ſufficient anſwer. Howbeit for all mens plainer and fuller ſa-
1. tisfaction, firſt concerning the inhability of reaſon to ſearch out and to iudge of things diuine; if they be ſuch as thoſe properties of God, and thoſe duties of men towards him, which may be conceiued by attentiue conſideration of heauen and earth: wee know that of meere naturall men, the Apoſtle teſtifieth,
Rom.1.21,31. how they *knew both God, and the Law of God.* Other things of God there bee, which are neither ſo found, nor though they be ſhewed, can euer be approoued without the *ſpeciall* operation of Gods good grace & ſpirit. Of ſuch things ſometime ſpake the Apoſtle S. *Paul*, declaring how Chriſt had called him to be a witneſſe of his death and reſurrection from the dead, according to that which the
Act. 25.19. Prophets and *Moſes* had fore-ſhewed. *Feſtus* a meere naturall man, an Infidel, a Romane, one whoſe eares were vnacquainted with ſuch matter, heard him, but could not reach vnto that whereof he ſpake; the ſuffering and the riſing of
Act.26.24. Chriſt from the dead, he reiecteth as idle ſuperſtitious phanſies, not worth the hearing. The Apoſtle that knew them by the ſpirit, & ſpake of them with power of the Holy Ghoſt, ſeemed in his eyes but learnedly mad. Which example ma-
1.Cor.2.14. keth manifeſt what elſwhere the ſame Apoſtle teacheth, namely that nature hath need of grace, whereunto I hope we are not oppoſite, by holding that grace hath
2. vſe of nature. Secondly, Philoſophy we are warned to take heed of: not that Philoſophy, which is true & ſound knowledge attained by naturall diſcourſe of reaſon; but that Philoſophy which to bolſter hereſie or error, caſteth a fraudulent ſhew of reaſon vpon things which are indeed vnreaſonable, & by that meane as by a ſtratageme ſpoyleth the ſimple which are not able to withſtand ſuch cun-
Col. 2.8. ning. *Take heed leſt any ſpoil you through Philoſophy & vain deceit.* He that exhorteth

teth to beware of an enemies policie, doth not giue counſell to be impolitique; but rather to vſe all prudent foreſight and circumſpection, leſt our ſimplicitie be ouer-reacht by cunning ſleights. The way not to be inueigled by them that are ſo guilefull through skill, is thoroughly to bee inſtructed in that which maketh skilfull againſt guile, and to bee armed with that true and ſincere Philoſophy, which doth teach againſt that deceitfull and vaine, which ſpoyleth. Thirdly, But many great Philoſophers haue beene very vnſound in beliefe. And many ſound in beliefe haue beene alſo great Philoſophers. Could ſecular knowledge, bring the one ſort vnto the loue of Chriſtian faith? Nor Chriſtian faith the other ſort out of loue with ſecular knowledge. The harme that heretiques did, they did it vnto ſuch as were vnable to diſcerne betweene ſound and deceitfull reaſoning; and the remedy againſt it, was euer the skill which the ancient Fathers had to diſcrie and diſcouer ſuch deceit. In ſo much that *Creſconius* the heretique complained greatly of S. *Auguſtine*, as being too full of logicall ſubtilties. Hereſie preuaileth onely by a counterfeit ſhew of reaſon; whereby notwithſtanding it becommeth inuincible, vnleſſe it be cõuicted of fraud by manifeſt remonſtrance, clearely true, and vnable to be withſtood. When therefore the Apoſtle requireth ability to conuict Heretiques, can we thinke he iudgeth it a thing vnlawfull, and not rather needfull to vſe the principall inſtrument of their conuiction, the light of reaſon? It may not be denied but that in the Fathers writings there are ſundry ſharpe inuectiues againſt Heretiques, euen for their very Philoſophicall reaſonings. The cauſe whereof *Tertullian* confeſſeth, not to haue been any diſlike conceiued againſt the kinde of ſuch reaſonings, but the end. *We may* (ſaith he) *euen in matters of God, be made wiſer by reaſons drawne from the publique perſwaſions which are grafted in mens mindes, ſo they be vſed to further the truth, not to bolſter errour; ſo they make with, not againſt that which God hath determined. For there are ſome things euen knowne by nature, as the immortalitie of the ſoule vnto many, our God vnto all. I will therefore my ſelfe alſo vſe the ſentence of ſome ſuch as* Plato, *pronouncing euery ſoule immortall. I my ſelfe too will vſe the ſecret acknowledgement of the communaltie, bearing record of the GOD of Gods. But when I heare men alledge, That which is dead is dead: and, While thou art aliue, be aliue: and, After death an end of all, euen of death it ſelfe: then will I call to mind both that the heart of the people with God is accounted duſt, and that the very wiſdome of the world is pronounced folly. If then an Heretique flie alſo vnto ſuch vicious, popular and ſecular conceits, my anſwer vnto him ſhall be; Thou Heretique auoid the heathen, although in this ye be one, that ye both bely God: yet thou that doſt this vnder the name of Chriſt, differeſt from the heathen, in that thou ſeemeſt to thy ſelfe a Chriſtian. Leaue him therefore his conceits, ſeeing that neither will he learne thine. Why doſt thou, hauing ſight, truſt to a blinde guide, thou which haſt put on Chriſt, take rayment of him that is naked? If the Apoſtle haue armed thee, why doſt thou borrow a ſtrangers ſhield? Let him rather learne of thee to acknowledge, then thou of him to renounce the reſurrection of the fleſh.* In a word, the Catholique Fathers did good vnto all by that knowledge, whereby Heretiques hindering the truth in many, might haue furthered therewith themſelues, but that obſtinately following their owne ambitions or otherwiſe corrupted affections, in ſtead of framing their wills to maintaine that which reaſon taught, they bent their wits to finde how reaſon might ſeeme to teach that which their

3.

Tit. 1. 9. 11.

Tertul. de Reſur. carnis.

wils were set to maintaine. For which cause the Apostle saith of them iustly, Tit. 3. 11. that they are for the most part αὐτοκατάκριτοι, men condemned euen in and of themselues. For though they bee not all perswaded that it is truth which they withstand; yet that to be errour which they vphold, they might vndoubtedly the sooner a great deale attaine to know, but that their studie is more to defend what once they have stood in, then to finde out sincerely and simply what truth they ought to persist in for euer. Fourthly, there is in the world no kinde of 4. knowledge, whereby any part of truth is seene, but we iustly account it precious; yea that principall truth, in comparison whereof all other knowledge is vile, may receive from it some kinde of light. Whether it be that Egyptian and Act. 7. 22. Dan. 1. 17. 1. King. 4. 29, 30 Chaldean wisedome Mathematicall, wherewith *Moses* and *Daniel* were furnished; or that naturall, morall, and ciuill wisdome, wherewith *Salomon* excelled all men; or that rationall and oratoriall wisedome of the Grecians, which Act. 22. 3. the Apostle S. *Paul* brought from *Tarsus*, or that Iudaicall, which he learned in *Ierusalem*, sitting at the feet of *Gamaliel*: to detract from the dignitie thereof, were to iniury euen God himselfe, who being that light which none can approach vnto, hath sent out these lights whereof we are capable, euen as so many sparkles resembling the bright fountaine from which they rise. But there are that beare the title of wise men, and Scribes, and great disputers of the World, and are nothing indeed lesse then what in shew they most appeare. These being wholly addicted vnto their owne wils, vse their wit, their learning, and all the wisdome they haue, to maintaine that which their obstinate heartsare delighted with, esteeming in the frentick errour of their minds, the greatest madnesse in the world to be wisdome, and the highest wisdome foolishnesse. Such were both *Iewes* and *Grecians*, which professed the one sort legall, and the other secular skill, neither indeuring to be taught the mysterie of Christ: vnto the glory of whose most blessed name, who so studie to vse both their reason and all other gifts, as well which nature as which grace hath indued them with; let them neuer doubt but that the same God, who is to destroy and confound vtterly that wisdome falsly so named in others, doth make reckoning of them as of true Mat. 13. 52. Scribes, Scribes by wisdome instructed to the kingdome of heauen, Scribes against that kingdome hardned in a vaine opinion of wisdome which in the end being proued folly, must needes perish; true vnderstanding, knowledge, iudgement and reason, continuing for euermore. Fifthly, vnto the Word of God, be- 5. ing in respect of that end for which God ordained it, perfect, exact, and absolute in it selfe, we do not adde reason as a supplement of any maime or defect therein, but as a necessary instrument, without which wee could not reape by the Scriptures perfection, that fruit and benefit which it yeeldeth. The word of God Heb. 4. 12. is a two-edged sword, but in the hands of reasonable men; and reason is the weapon that slew *Goliah*, if they be as *Dauid* was that vse it. Touching the apostles, he which gaue them ſo aboue such power for miraculous confirmation of that which they taught, indued them also with wisdome from aboue to teach that which they so did confirme. Our Sauior made choyce of 12. simple and vnlearned men, that the greater their lacke of naturall wisdome was, the more admirable that might appeare, which God supernaturally indued them with from heauen. Such therefore as knew the poore & silly estate wherin they had lived, could not but wonder to heare the wisdome of their speech, and be so much the more

attentiue

more attentiue vnto their teaching. They ſtudied for no toung they ſpake with all; of themſelues they were rude, & knew not ſo much as how to premeditate; the Spirit gaue them ſpeech and eloquent vtterance. But becauſe with S. *Paul* it was otherwiſe then with the reſt, in as much as he neuer conuerſed with Chriſt vpon earth as they did; and his education had bin ſcholaſticall altogether, which theirs was not: hereby occaſion was taken by certain Malignants, ſecretly to vndermine his great authority in the Church of Chriſt, as though the Goſpell had bin taught him by others then by Chriſt himſelfe, & as if the cauſe of the *Gentiles* conuerſion and beliefe through his meanes, had bin the learning and skill which he had by being conuerſant in their Bookes, which thing made them ſo willing to heare him, and him ſo able to perſwade them; whereas the reſt of the Apoſtles preuailed becauſe God was with them, and by miracle from Heauen confirmed his Word in their mouthes. They were mightie in *deeds*: As for him, being abſent, his writings had ſome force, in preſence his power not like vnto theirs. In ſumme, concerning his preaching, their very by-word was Ἀλόγου ἐξουθενημένος, *Addle ſpeech, empty talk*. His writings ful of great words, but in the power of miraculous operatiõs, his preſence not like the reſt of the Apoſtles. Hereupon it ariſeth that S. *Paul* was ſo often driuen to make his Apologies. Hereupon it ariſeth, that whatſoeuer time hee had ſpent in the ſtudy of humane learning, he maketh earneſt proteſtation to them of Corinth, that the Goſpell which he had preached amongſt them, did not by other meanes preuaile with them, then with others the ſame Goſpel taught by the reſt of the apoſtles of Chriſt. *My preaching* ſaith he, *hath not bin in the perſwaſiue ſpeeches of humane wiſdom, but in demonſtration of the ſpirit & power, that your faith may not be in the wiſdom of mẽ, but in the power of God*. What is it which the Apoſtle doth here deny? Is it denied that his ſpeech amongſt thẽ had bin *perſwaſiue*? No, for of him the ſacred Hiſtory plainly teſtifieth, that for the ſpace of a yeare & a halfe he ſpake in the Synagogue euery Sabbath, and *perſwaded* both Iewes & Grecians. How then is the ſpeech of men made perſwatiue? Surely there can be but two wayes to bring this to paſſe, the one humane, the other diuine. Either S. *Paul* did *only* by art and naturall induſtry cauſe his own ſpeech to be credited; or elſe God by miracle did authorize it, and ſo bring credit thereunto, as to the ſpeech of the reſt of the Apoſtles. Of which two the former he vtterly denieth. For why? If the preaching of the reſt had bin effectuall by miracle, his *only* by force of his owne learning; ſo great inequality betweene him and the other Apoſtles in this thing, had been enough to ſubuert their Faith. For might they not with reaſon haue thought, that if he were ſent of God as well as they, God would haue furniſhed them and not him, with the power of the Holy Ghoſt? Might not a great part of them being ſimple haply haue feared, leſt their aſſent had bin cunningly gotten vnto his Doctrine, rather through the weakneſſe of their owne wits, then the certainty of that truth which he had taught thẽ? How vnequall had it bin, that all beleuers through the preaching of other Apoſtles, ſhould haue their faith ſtrongly built vpon the euidence of Gods owne miraculous approbation, & they whom he had conuerted, ſhould haue their perſwaſion built onely vpon his skill and wiſedome who perſwaded them? As therefore calling from men may authorize vs to teach, although it could not authorize him to teach as other Apoſtles did: ſo although the wiſdom of man had not bin ſufficiẽt to inable him ſuch a Teacher as the reſt of the Apoſtles

1. Cor. 10. 10.

1. Cor. 2. 4.

Act. 18. v. 4. 11.

ſtles were, vnleſſe Gods miracles had ſtrengthened both the one and the others Doctrine; yet vnto our ability both of teaching and learning the truth of Chriſt, as we are but meere Chriſtian men, it is not a little which the wiſedome of man may adde. Sixtly, yea, what ſoeuer our harts be to God and to his truth, beleeue we, or be we as yet faithleſſe, for our conuerſion or confirmation the force of naturall reaſon is great. The force whereof vnto thoſe effects is nothing without grace. What then? To our purpoſe it is ſufficient, that whoſoeuer doth ſerue, honor and obey God, whoſoeuer beleeueth in him; that man would no more doe this then innocents and infants doe, but for the light of naturall reaſon that ſhineth in him, and maketh him apt to apprehend thoſe things of God, which being by grace diſcouered, are effectuall to perſwade reaſonable minds & none other, that honor, obedience & credit belong aright vnto God. No man commeth vnto God to offer him Sacrifice, to powre out Supplications and Prayers before him, or to doe him any ſeruice, which doth not firſt beleeue him both to be, and to be a rewarder of them who in ſuch ſort ſeeke vnto him. Let men be taught this eyther by reuelation from Heauen, or by inſtruction vpon Earth, by labour, ſtudie and meditation, or by the only ſecret inſpiration of the Holy Ghoſt; what ſoeuer the meane be they know it by, if the knowledge thereof were poſſible without diſcourſe of naturall reaſon, why ſhould none be found capable thereof but only men, nor men till ſuch time as they come vnto ripe & full ability to worke by reaſonable vnderſtanding? The whole drift of the Scripture of God, what is it but only to teach *Theology*? *Theology* what is it, but the ſcience of things diuine? What Science can be attained vnto without the helpe of naturall diſcourſe and reaſon? *Iudge you of that which I ſpeake*, ſaith the Apoſtle. In vaine it were to ſpeak any thing of God, but that by reaſon men are able ſomewhat to iudge of that they heare, and by diſcourſe to diſcerne how conſonant it is to truth. Scripture indeed teacheth things aboue nature, things which our reaſon by it ſelfe could not reach vnto. Yet thoſe things alſo wee beleeue, knowing by reaſon that the Scripture is the Word of God. In the preſence of *Feſtus* a Romane, and of King *Agrippa* a Iew, S. *Paul* omitting the one, who neither knew the Iewes Religion, nor the Bookes whereby they were taught it, ſpeakes vnto the other of things foreſhewed by *Moſes* and the Prophets, & performed in Ieſus Chriſt; intending thereby to proue himſelfe ſo vniuſtly accuſed, that vnleſſe his Iudges did condemne both *Moſes* & the Prophets, him they could not chuſe but acquite, who taught onely that fulfilled, which they ſo long ſince had foretold. His cauſe was eaſie to be diſcerned; what was done, their eies were witneſſes: what *Moſes* & the Prophets did ſpeake, their Bookes could quickly ſhew, it was no hard thing for him to cõpare them, which knew the one, & beleeued the other; *King Agrippa, beleeueſt thou the Prophets? I know thou doſt*. The queſtiõ is, how the books of the Prophets came to be credited of king *Agrippa*. For what with him did authorize the Prophets, the like with vs doth cauſe the reſt of the Scripture of God to bee of credit. Becauſe wee maintaine, that in Scripture wee are taught all things neceſſarie vnto Saluation, hereupon verie childiſhly it is by ſome demanded, what Scripture can teach vs the Sacred Authoritie of the Scripture, vpon the knowledge whereof our whole Faith and Saluation dependeth. As though there were any kind of Science in the World, which leadeth men vnto knowledge, without preſuppoſing a number of things already knowne. No Science

6.

Heb. 11. 6.

1. Cor. 10. 15.

Act. 26. 22.

doth

doth make knowne the firſt Principles whereon it buildeth; but they are alwayes either taken as plaine and manifeſt in themſelues, or as prooued and granted alreadie, ſome former knowledge hauing made them euident. Scripture teacheth all ſupernaturally reuealed truth, without the knowledge whereof Saluation cannot bee attained. The maine Principle whereupon our beliefe of all things therein contained dependeth, is, That the Scriptures are the Oracles of God himſelfe. This in it ſelfe we cannot ſay is euident. For then all men that heare it would acknowledge it in heart, as they doe when they heare that *euery whole is more then any part of that whole*, becauſe this in it ſelfe is euident. The other wee know that all doe not acknowledge when they heare it. There muſt be therefore ſome former knowledge preſuppoſed, which doth herein aſſure the hearts of all Beleeuers. Scripture teacheth vs that ſauing Truth which God hath diſcouered vnto the World by Reuelation: and it preſumeth vs taught otherwiſe that it ſelfe is Diuine and Sacred. The queſtion then beeing by what meanes wee are taught this: ſome anſwere, that to learne it wee haue no other way then onely Tradition: as namely, that ſo we beleeue, becauſe both we from our Predeceſſors, and they from theirs haue ſo receiued. But is this enough? That which all mens experience teacheth them, may not in any wiſe be denyed. And by experience we all know, that the firſt outward Motiue leading men ſo to eſteeme of the Scripture, is the authoritie of Gods Church. For when wee know the whole Church of God hath that opinion of the Scripture, wee iudge it euen at the firſt an impudent thing for any man bred and brought vp in the Church, to be of a contrarie minde without cauſe. Afterwards the more wee beſtow our labour in reading or hearing the Myſteries thereof, the more wee finde that the thing it ſelfe doth anſwere our receiued opinion concerning it. So that the former inducement preuailing ſomewhat with vs before, doth now much more preuaile, when the very thing hath miniſtred farther Reaſon. If Infidels or Atheiſts chance at any time to cal it in queſtion, this giueth vs occaſion to ſift what reaſon there is, whereby the teſtimonie of the Church concerning Scripture, and our owne perſwaſion which Scripture it ſelfe hath confirmed, may bee proued a truth infallible. In which caſe the ancient Fathers being often conſtrained to ſhew, what warrant they had ſo much to relye vpon the Scriptures, endeuoured ſtill to maintaine the authoritie of the Bookes of God, by arguments ſuch as vnbeleeuers themſelues muſt needes thinke reaſonable, if they iudged thereof as they ſhould. Neither is it a thing impoſſible or greatly hard, euen by ſuch kind of proofes ſo to manifeſt and cleere that point, that no man liuing ſhall bee able to deny it, without denying ſome apparant Principle, ſuch as all men acknowledge to be true. Wherefore if I beleeue the Goſpell, yet is reaſon of ſingular vſe, for that it confirmeth me in this my beliefe the more. If I doe not as yet beleeue, neuertheleſſe to bring mee into the number of Beleeuers, except reaſon did ſomewhat helpe, & were an inſtrument which God doth vſe vnto ſuch purpoſes, what ſhould it boot to diſpute with Infidels, or godleſſe perſons for their cõuerſion & perſwaſion in that point? Neither can I thinke that when graue & learned men do ſometime hold, that of this Principle there is no proofe but by the teſtimony of the Spirit, which aſſureth our harts therin, it is their meaning to exclude vtterly all force which any kind of reaſon may haue in that behalfe: but I rather

incline

incline to interpret ſuch their ſpeeches, as if they had more expreſly ſet downe, that other motiues and inducements, be they neuer ſo ſtrong and conſonant vnto reaſon, are notwithſtanding effectuall of themſelues to work faith concerning this Principle, if the ſpeciall grace of the holy Ghoſt concurre not to the inlightning of our mindes. For otherwiſe, I doubt not but men of wiſdome and iudgement wil grant, that the Church in this point eſpecially is furniſhed with reaſon, to ſtop the mouthes of her impious Aduerſaries: and that as it were altogether bootleſſe to alleage againſt them, what the Spirit hath taught vs; ſo likewiſe that euen to our owne ſelues it needeth caution & explication, how the teſtimonie of the Spirit may be diſcerned, by what meanes it may be knowne, leſt men thinke that the Spirit of God doth teſtifie thoſe things which the ſpirit of Error ſuggeſteth. The operations of the ſpirit, eſpecially theſe ordinary which be cõmon vnto all true Chriſtian men, are, as we know, things ſecret & vndiſcernable euen to the very ſoule where they are, becauſe their nature is of another & an higher kind then that they can be by vs perceiued in this life. Wherfore albeit the Spirit leade vs into all truth, and direct vs in all goodneſſe; yet becauſe theſe workings of the Spirit in vs are ſo priuy & ſecret, we therfore ſtand on a plainer ground, when we gather by reaſon from the qualitie of things beleeued or done, that the Spirit of God hath directed vs in both; then if we ſettle our ſelues to beleeue, or to do any certain particular thing, as being moued therto by the Spirit. But of this enough.

To go from the bookes of Scripture to the ſenſe & meaning thereof, becauſe the Sentences which are by the Apoſtles recited out of the *Pſalmes*, to proue the Reſurrection of Ieſus Chriſt, did not proue it, if ſo be the Prophet *Dauid* meant thē of himſelfe; this Expoſition therfore they plainly diſproue, and ſhew by maniſeſt reaſon, that of *Dauid* the words of *Dauid* could not poſſibly be meant. Exclude the vſe of naturall reaſoning about the ſenſe of holy Scripture concerning the Articles of our Faith, & then that the Scripture doth concern the Articles of our Faith, who can aſſure vs? That which by right expoſition buildeth vp Chriſtian Faith, being miſconſtrued breedeth Error: betweene true and falſe conſtruction, the difference, reaſon muſt ſhew. Can Chriſtian men performe that which *Peter* requireth at their hands? is it poſſible they ſhould both beleeue, & be able without the vſe of reaſon, to render a reaſon of their beliefe, a reaſon ſound & ſufficient to anſwere them that demand it, be they of the ſame faith with vs, or enemies thereunto? May we cauſe our faith without reaſon to appeare reaſonable in the eyes of men? This being required euen of Learners in the Schoole of Chriſt, the dutie of their Teachers in bringing them vnto ſuch ripeneſſe, muſt needes bee ſomewhat more, then only to reade the Sentences of Scripture, and then paraphraſtically to ſcholy them, to vary them with ſundry formes of ſpeech, without arguing or diſputing about any thing which they contain. This method of teaching may commend it ſelfe vnto the World by that eaſineſſe & facility which is in it: but a Law or a patterne it is not, as ſome do imagine, for all men to follow that will do good in the Church of Chriſt. Our Lord and Sauiour himſelfe did hope by diſputation to doe ſome good, yea, by diſputation not only of, but againſt the truth, albeit with purpoſe for the truth. That Chriſt ſhould be the ſonne of *Dauid*, was truth; yet againſt this truth our Lord in the Goſpell obiecteth, If Chriſt be the ſonne of *Dauid*, how doth *Dauid* call him Lord? There is as yet no

Acts 13.36. & *cap.* 2. 34.

1. *Pet.* 3. 15.

Mat. 22. 43.

way

way knowne how to diſpute, or to determine of things diſputed, without the vſe of naturall reaſon. If we pleaſe to adde vnto Chriſt their example, who followed him as neere in all things as they could, the Sermon of *Paul* and *Barnabas* ſet downe in the *Acts*, where the people would haue offered vnto them Sacrifice: in that Sermon what is there but onely naturall reaſon to diſproue their act? *O men why do ye theſe things? We are men euen ſubiect to the ſelf-ſame paſſions with you: we preach vnto you to leaue theſe vanities, & to turne to the liuing God, the God that hath not left himſelfe without witneſſe, in that he hath done good to the World, giuing raine and fruitfull ſeaſons, filling our heart with ioy and gladnes.* Neither did they onely vſe reaſon in winning ſuch vnto a Chriſtian Beliefe as were yet thereto vnconuerted, but with beleeuers themſelues they followed the ſelf-ſame courſe. In that great and ſolemne Aſſembly of beleeuing Iewes, how doth *Peter* proue that the Gentiles were partakers of the grace of God as well as they, but by reaſon drawne from thoſe effects, which were apparantly knowne amongſt them? *God which knowes the hearts hath borne them witneſſe in giuing vnto them the Holy Ghoſt as vnto you.* The light therefore which the Starre of naturall Reaſon and Wiſdome caſteth, is too bright to be obſcured by the miſt of a word or two, vttered to diminiſh that opinion which iuſtly hath beene receiued concerning the force and vertue thereof, euen in matters that touch moſt neerely the principall duties of men, and the glory of the eternall God. In all which hitherto hath beene ſpoken touching the force and vſe of mans reaſon in things Diuine, I muſt craue that I be not ſo vnderſtood or conſtrued, as if any ſuch thing by vertue thereof could be done without the ayde and aſſiſtance of Gods moſt bleſſed Spirit. The thing we haue handled according to the queſtion moued about it: which queſtion is, whether the light of Reaſon be ſo pernicious, that in deuiſing Lawes for the Church, men ought not by it to ſearch what may be fit and conuenient. For this cauſe therefore wee haue endeuoured to make it appeare, how in the nature of reaſon it ſelfe there is no impediment, but that the ſelf-ſame Spirit, which reuealeth the things that God hath ſet downe in his Law, may alſo be thought to aide and direct men in finding out by the light of reaſon, what Lawes are expedient to be made for the guiding of his Church, ouer and beſides them that are in Scripture. Herein therefore we agree with thoſe men, by whom humane Lawes are defined to be Ordinances which ſuch as haue lawfull authority giuen them for that purpoſe, doe probably draw from the Lawes of Nature and God, by diſcourſe of reaſon, ayded with the influence of diuine Grace. And for that cauſe it is not ſaid amiſſe touching Eccleſiaſticall Canons, that by *inſtinct of the Holy Ghoſt they haue beene made, and conſecrated by the reuerend acceptation of the World.*

Acts 14.15.

Acts 15.

c. Violaturi. 25. qu. 1.

9 Lawes for the Church are not made as they ſhould be, vnles the makers follow ſuch direction as they ought to be guided by. Wherein that Scripture ſtandeth not the Church of God in any ſtead, or ſeueth nothing at all to direct, but may be let paſſe as needles to be conſulted with, we iudge it prophane, impious, and irreligious to thinke. For although it were in vaine to make Laws which the Scripture hath alreadie made, becauſe what we are alreadie there commanded to doe, on our parts there reſteth nothing but only that it be executed: yet becauſe

How lawes for the regiment of the Church may bee made by the aduice of men, following the light.

ing therein the light of reaſon, & how thoſe Lawes being not repugnant to the word of God are approued both

both in that which we are commanded, it concerneth the duty of the Church by law to prouide, that the looſeneſſe and ſlacknes of men may not cauſe the Commandements of God to be vnexecuted; & a number of things there are for which the Scripture hath not prouided by any law, but left them vnto the carefull diſcretion of the Church; wee are to ſearch how the Church in theſe caſes may be well directed, to make that prouiſion by Lawes which is moſt conuenient & fit. And what is ſo in theſe caſes, partly Scripture, and partly reaſon muſt teach to diſcerne. Scripture comprehending Examples and Lawes, Lawes ſome naturall and ſome poſitiue; examples neither are there for all caſes which require Lawes to be made, and when they are, they can but direct as precedents onely. Naturall Lawes direct in ſuch ſort, that in all things we muſt for euer doe according vnto them; poſitiue ſo, that againſt them in no caſe we may doe any thing, as long as the will of God is that they ſhould remaine in force. Howbeit when Scripture doth yeeld vs preſidents, how farre forth they are to bee followed; when it giueth naturall Lawes, what particular order is thereunto moſt agreeable; when poſitiue, which way to make Lawes vnrepugnant vnto them; yea, though all theſe ſhould want, yet what kind of Ordinances would be moſt for the good of the Church which is aimed at, al this muſt be by reaſon found out. And therfore *To refuſe the conduct of the light of Nature*, ſaith S. *Auguſtine*, *is not fully alone, but accompanyed with Impiety*. The greateſt amongſt the Schoole Diuine ſtudying how to ſet downe by exact definition the nature of an humane Law, (of which nature all the Churches Conſtitutions are) found not which way better to doe it then in theſe wordes: *Out of the Precepts of the law of nature, as out of certain common & vndemonſtrable Principles, mans reaſon doth neceſſarily proceed vnto certaine more particular determinations, which particular determinations being found out according vnto the reaſon of man, they haue the names of humane Lawes, ſo that ſuch other conditions be therein kept as the making of lawes doth require*, that is, if they whoſe authority is thereunto required do eſtabliſh & publiſh them as Lawes. And the truth is, that all our Controuerſie in this cauſe concerning the Orders of the Church, is, what particulars the Church may appoint. That which doth find them out, is the force of mans reaſon. That which doth guide and direct his reaſon, is the firſt generall Law of nature, which law of nature, and the morall Law of Scripture are in the ſubſtance of Law all one. But becauſe there are alſo in Scripture a number of Lawes particular and poſitiue, which being in force may not by any law of man be violated: we are in making lawes to haue therunto an eſpeciall eye. As for example, it might perhaps ſeeme reaſonable vnto the Church of God, following the generall laws concerning the nature of Marriage, to ordaine in particular that Coſen Germans ſhal not marry. Which Law notwithſtanding ought not to be receiued in the Church, if there ſhould be in the Scripture a law particular to the contrary, forbidding vtterly the bonds of Marriage to be ſo far forth abridged. The ſame *Thomas* therfore whoſe definition of humane lawes we mentioned before, doth adde thereunto this caution concerning the rule and canon whereby to make them: *Humane lawes are meaſures* in reſpect of men whoſe actions they muſt direct; howbeit ſuch meaſures

Lumiere naturelle ducatum reſpuere, non modò ſufficere eſt, ſed & impium. Aug. 4. de Trin. c. 6.

Th. Aqui. 1. 2. q. 91. art. 3. Ex præceptis Legis naturalis, quaſi ex quibuſdam principijs communibus & indemonſtrabilibus, neceſſe eſt rationi humanæ procedere ad aliqua magis particularia diſponenda. Et iſtæ particulares diſpoſitiones adinuentæ ſecundùm rationem humanam, dicuntur leges humanæ, obſeruatis aliis conditionibus quæ pertinent ad rationem legis.

2. 2. q. 57. art. 3.

ſures

ſures they are, as haue alſo their higher Rules to be meaſured by, *which rules are two, the Law of God & the Law of Nature.* So that lawes human muſt be made according to the generall lawes of nature, and without contradiction vnto any poſitiue Law in Scripture. Otherwiſe they are ill made. Vnto Lawes thus made and receiued by a whole Church, they which liue within the boſome of that Church muſt not thinke it a matter indifferent either to yeeld or not to yeeld obedience. Is it a ſmall offence to deſpiſe the Church of God? *My Son keepe thy fathers commandement*, ſaith Salomon, *and forget not thy mothers inſtruction, bind them both alwayes about thine heart.* It doth not ſtand with the duty which wee owe to our heauenly Father, that to the Ordinances of our Mother the Church wee ſhould ſhew our ſelues diſobedient. Let vs not ſay wee keepe the Commandements of the one, when we breake the Law of the other: for vnleſſe we obſerue both, we obey neither. And what doth let, but that we may obſerue both, when they are not the one to the other in any ſort repugnant? For of ſuch Lawes only we ſpeak, as being made in forme and manner alreadie declared, can haue in them no contradiction vnto the Lawes of Almighty God. Yea that which is more, the Lawes thus made God himſelfe doth in ſuch ſort authorize, that to deſpiſe them, is to deſpiſe in them him. It is a looſe and licentious opinion which the Anabaptiſts haue embraced, holding that a Chriſtian mans liberty is loſt, and the ſoule which Chriſt hath redeemed vnto himſelfe, iniuriouſly drawn into ſeruitude vnder the yoke of humane power, if any Law be now impoſed beſides the Goſpell of Ieſus Chriſt: in obedience whereunto the Spirit of God, & not the conſtraint of men is to leade vs, according to that of the bleſſed Apoſtle, *Such as are led by the ſpirit of God are the Sons of God*, & not ſuch as liue in thraldome vnto men. Their iudgement is therefore that the Church of Chriſt ſhould admit no Law-makers but the Euangeliſts. The Author of that which cauſeth another thing to be, is Author of that thing alſo which thereby is cauſed. The light of naturall [illegible] and reaſon, is from God; he it is which thereby doth illuminate euery man entring into the World. If there proceed from vs any thing afterwards corrupt and naught, the mother thereof is our own darknes, neither doth it proceed from any ſuch cauſe whereof God is the Author. He is the Author of all that we think or do by vertue of that light which himſelfe hath giuen. And therefore the Lawes which the very Heathens did gather to direct their actions by, ſo farre forth as they proceeeded from the light of Nature, God himſelfe doth acknowledge to haue proceeded euen from himſelfe, and that he was the Writer of them in the Tables of their hearts. How much more then is he the Author of thoſe Lawes which haue beene made by his Saints, endued further with the heauenly grace of his Spirit, and directed as much as might be with ſuch inſtruction as his ſacred Word doth yeeld? Surely if we haue vnto thoſe Lawes that dutifull regard which their dignity doth require, it will not greatly need, that we ſhould be exhorted to liue in obedience vnto them. If they haue God himſelfe for their Author, contempt which is offered vnto them cannot chooſe but redound vnto him. The ſafeſt, and vnto God the moſt acceptable way of framing our liues therefore is, with all Humility, Lowlineſſe and Singleneſſe of heart to ſtudie, which way our willing obedience both vnto God and man may bee yeelded euen to the vtmoſt of that which is due.

1. Cor. 11. 23. Prou. 6. 20.

Rom. 8. 14.

Iohn 1. 9.

Rom. 1. 19. & 2. 15.

To Tou-

That neither Gods being the Author of Lawes, nor his committing them to Scripture, nor the continuance of the end for which they were instituted, is any reason sufficient to proue ting they are vnchangeable.

10 Touching the mutability of Lawes that concerne the Regiment and Policie of the Church, changed they are, when either altogether abrogated, or in part repealed or augmented with farther additions. Wherein we are to note, that this question about the changing of Lawes, concerneth onely such Lawes as are positiue, and doe make that now good or euill by being commanded or forbidden, which otherwise of it selfe were not simply the one or the other. Vnto such laws it is expreslly sometimes added, how long they are to continue in force. If this be no where expreſt, then haue we no light to direct our iudgments concerning the changeablenesse or immutability of them, but by considering the nature and qualitie of such Lawes. The nature of euery Law must bee iudged of by the end for which it was made, and by the aptnesse of things therein prescribed vnto the same end. It may so fall out, that the reason why some Lawes of God were giuen, is neither opened nor possible to be gathered by wit of man. As why God should forbid *Adam* that one tree, there was no way for *Adam* euer to haue certainly vnderstood. And at *Adams* ignorance of this point Sathan tooke aduantage, vrging the more securely a false cause, because the true was vnto *Adam* vnknowne.

Deut. 22. 10. Deut. 22. 11.

Why the Iewes were forbidden to plow their ground with an Oxe and an Asse, why to clothe themselues with mingled attyre of Wool and Linnen, both it was vnto them, and to vs it remaineth obscure. Such Lawes perhaps cannot be abrogated, sauing onely by whom they were made: because the intent of them being knowne vnto none but the Author, he alone can iudge how long it is requisite they should endure. But if the reason why things were instituted may be known, and being knowne doe appeare manifestly to be of perpetuall necessity; then are those things also perpetuall, vnlesse they cease to be effectuall vnto that purpose for which they were at first instituted. Because when a thing doth cease to bee auaileable vnto the end which gaue it being, the continuance of it must then of necessitie appeare superfluous. And of this we cannot bee ignorant, how sometimes that hath done great good, which afterwards when time hath changed the ancient course of things, doth grow to bee eyther very hurtfull, or not so greatly profitable and necessary. If therefore the end for which a Law prouideth be perpetually necessary, & the way whereby it prouideth perpetually also most apt, no doubt but that euery such Law ought for euer to remain vnchangeable. Whether God be the Author of Lawes, by authorizing that power of men whereby they are made, or by deliuering them made immediately from himself, by word only, or in writing also, or howsoeuer; notwithstanding the authority of their maker, the mutability of that end for which they are made, maketh them also changeable. The Law of Ceremonies came from God. *Moses* had commandement to commit it vnto the sacred Records of Scripture, where it continueth euen vnto this very day and houre; in force still as the Iew surmiseth, because God himselfe was Author of it, and for vs to abolish what hee hath established were presumption most intolerable. But (that which they in the blindnes of their obdurate hearts are not able to discerne) sith the end for which that Law was ordained is now fulfilled, past and gone; how should it but cease any longer to be, which hath no longer any cause of being in force as before? *That which necessity of some special time doth cause to be inioyned, bindeth no longer then during that time, but doth afterward become free.* Which thing is also plain, euen by that Law which

Quod pro necessitate temporis statutum est, cessante necessitate debet cessare quod vigebat. 1. q. 2.

which the Apoſtles aſſembled at the councell of Ieruſalem did from thence deliuer vnto the Church of Chriſt; the preface whereof to authorize it, was, *To the Holy Ghoſt and to vs it hath ſeemed good*: which ſtile they did not vſe as matching themſelues in power with the Holy Ghoſt, but as teſtifying the Holy Ghoſt to be the authour, and themſelues but onely vtterers of that decree. This law therefore to haue proceeded from God as the authour thereof, no faithfull man will denie. It was of God, not only becauſe God gaue them the power whereby they might make lawes, but for that it proceeded euen from the holy motion and ſuggeſtion of that ſecret diuine Spirit, whoſe ſentence they did but onely pronounce. Notwithſtanding as the law of ceremonies deliuered vnto the Iewes, ſo this very lawe which the Gentiles receiued from the mouth of the holy Ghoſt, is in like reſpect abrogated by deceaſe of the end for which it was giuen. But ſuch as doe not ſticke at this point, ſuch as grant that what hath beene inſtituted vpon any ſpeciall cauſe, needeth not to be obſerued that cauſe ceaſing, doe notwithſtanding herein faile; they iudge the lawes of God onely by the author and maine end for which they were made, ſo that for vs to change that which he hath eſtabliſhed, they hold it execrable pride and preſumption, if ſo be the end and purpoſe for which God by that meane prouideth be permanent. And vpon this they ground thoſe ample diſputes concerning orders and offices, which being by him appointed for the gouernment of his Church, if it be neceſſary alwayes that the Church of Chriſt be gouerned, then doth the end for which God prouided remaine ſtill; and therefore in thoſe meanes which he by law did eſtabliſh as being fitteſt vnto that end, for vs to alter any thing, is to lift vp our ſelues againſt God, and as it were to countermaund him. Wherein they marke not that lawes are inſtruments to rule by, and that inſtruments are not onely to bee framed according vnto the generall end for which they are prouided, but euen according vnto that very particular which riſeth out of the matter whereon they haue to worke. The end wherefore lawes were made may be permanent, and thoſe lawes nevertheleſſe require ſome alteration, if there be any vnfitneſſe in the meanes which they preſcribe as tending vnto that end and purpoſe. As for example, a law that to bridle theft doth puniſh theeues with a quadruple reſtitution, hath an end which will continue as long as the world it ſelfe continueth. Theft will be alwayes, and will alwayes need to be bridled. But that the meane which this law prouideth for that end, namely, the puniſhment of quadruple reſtitution, that this will be alwaies ſufficient to bridle and reſtraine that kind of enormity, no man can warrant. Inſufficiency of lawes doth ſometimes come by want of iudgement in the makers. Which cauſe cannot fall into any law termed properly and immediately diuine, as it may and doth into humane lawes often. But that which hath beene once moſt ſufficient, may waxe otherwiſe by alteration of time and place; that puniſhment which hath bin ſometimes forcible to bridle ſinne, may grow afterwards too weake and feeble. In a word, we plainly perceiue by the difference of thoſe three lawes which the Iewes receiued at the hands of God, the morall, ceremoniall, and iudiciall, that if the end for which, and the matter according whereunto God maketh his lawes, continue alwayes one and the ſame, his lawes alſo doe the like for which cauſe the morall law cannot be altered: ſecond-

Quod pro neceſſit. Act. 15.

Counterp. p. 8.

ly, that whether the matter wheron lawes are made, continue or continue not, if their end haue once ceaſed, they ceaſe alſo to be of force; as in the law ceremoniall it fareth. Finally, that albeit the end continue, as in that law of theft ſpecified, and in a great part of thoſe ancient Iudicials it doth; yet for as much as there is not in all reſpects the ſame ſubiect or matter remaining for which they were firſt inſtituted, euen this is ſufficient cauſe of change. And therefore lawes, though both ordeined of God himſelfe, and the end for which they were ordained continuing, may notwithſtanding ceaſe, if by alteration of perſons or times they be found vnſufficient to attaine vnto that end. In which reſpect why may we not preſume, that God doth euen call for ſuch change or alteration, as the very condition of things themſelues doth make neceſſary? They which doe therefore pleade the authority of the Law-maker, as an argument wherefore it ſhould not be lawfull to change that which he hath inſtituted, and will haue this the cauſe why all the ordinances of our Sauiour are immutable; they which vrge the wiſedome of God as a proofe, that whatſoeuer lawes he hath made, they ought to ſtand, vnleſſe himſelfe from heauen proclaime them diſanuld, becauſe it is not in man to correct the ordinance of God; may know, if it pleaſe them to take notice thereof, that wee are farre from preſuming to thinke that men can better any thing which God hath done, euen as we are from thinking that men ſhould preſume to vndoe ſome things of men, which God doth know they cannot better. God neuer ordained any thing that could bee bettered. Yet many things hee hath, that hath beene changed, and that for the better. That which ſucceedeth as better now when change is requiſite, had beene worſe, when that which now is changed was inſtituted. Otherwiſe God had not then left this, to chooſe that, neither would now reiect that, to chooſe this, vvere it not for ſome new-growne occaſion, making that which hath beene better worſe. In this caſe therefore men doe not preſume to change Gods ordinance, but they yeeld thereunto, requiring it ſelfe to be changed. Againſt this it is obiected, that to abrogate or innouate the Goſpell of Chriſt, if men or Angels ſhould attempt, it were moſt haynous and curſed ſacriledge. And the Goſpell, as they ſay, containeth not onely doctrine inſtructing men how they ſhould beleeue, but alſo precepts concerning the regiment of the Church. [a] Diſcipline therfore is a part of the Goſpel; and God being the author of the whole Goſpell, as well of diſcipline as of doctrine, it cannot be but that both of them haue a common cauſe. So that as we are to beleeue for euer the articles of Euangelicall doctrine, ſo the precepts of diſcipline, we are in like ſort bound for euer to obſerue. Touching points of doctrine, as for example, the Vnity of God, the Trinity of perſons, Saluation by Chriſt, the Reſurrection of the body, Life euerlaſting, the Iudgement to come, & ſuch like, they haue bin ſince the firſt houre that there was a Church in the world, and till the laſt they muſt be beleeued. But as for matters of regiment, they are for the moſt part of another nature. To make new articles of faith and doctrine, no man thinketh it lawfull; new lawes of gouernment, what Common-wealth or Church is there which maketh not either at one time or another? *The rule of faith*, ſaith Tertullian, *is but one, & that alone immoueable, and impoſſible to bee framed or caſt anew.* The law of outward order and Polity not ſo. There is no reaſon in the world wherefore

a We offer to ſhew the diſcipline to be a part of the Goſpell, and therefore to haue a common cauſe: ſo that in the repulſe of the diſcipline, the Goſpell receiues a check. And againe, I ſpeake of the diſcipline as of a part of the Goſpell, and therefore neither vnder nor aboue the Goſpell, but the Goſpell. *T.C. l.2.p.1.4. Tertul. de veland. Virg. Mari. in 1. Sam. 14.*

wherefore wee ſhould eſteeme it as neceſſarie alwaies to doe, as alwaies to beleeue the ſame things; ſeeing euery man knoweth that the matter of faith is conſtant, the matter contrariwiſe of action daily changeable, eſpecially the matter of action belonging vnto Church-Politie. Neither can I find that men of ſoundeſt iudgement haue any otherwiſe taught, then that articles of belief, and things which all men muſt of neceſſity doe to the end they may be ſaued, are either expreſſly ſet downe in Scripture, or elſe plainly thereby to be gathered. But touching things which belong to diſcipline and outward politie, the Church hath authority to make Canons, lawes, and decrees, euen as we reade that in the Apoſtles times it did. Which kind of lawes (for as much as they are not in themſelues neceſſary to ſaluation) may after they are made be alſo changed as the difference of times or places ſhall require. Yea it is not denied I am ſure by themſelues, that certaine things in diſcipline are of that nature, as they may bee varied by times, places, perſons, and other the like circumſtances. Whereupon I demaund, are thoſe changeable points of diſcipline commanded in the word of God, or no? If they be not commanded, and yet may be receiued in the Church, how can their former poſition ſtand, condemning all things in the Church which in the word are not commanded? If they be commanded, & yet may ſuffer change; how can this later ſtand, affirming all things immutable which are commanded of God? Their diſtinction touching matters of ſubſtance and of circumſtance, though true, will not ſerue. For be they great things, or be they ſmall, if God haue commanded them in the Goſpell, and his commanding them in the Goſpell doe make them vnchangeable, there is no reaſon we ſhould more change the one then we may the other. If the authoritie of the maker doe proue vnchangeableneſſe in the Lawes which God hath made; then muſt all laws which he hath made be neceſſarily for euer permanent, though they be but of circumſtance onely and not of ſubſtance. I therefore conclude, that neyther Gods being authour of lawes for gouernement of his Church, nor his committing them vnto Scripture, is any reaſon ſufficient, wherefore all Churches ſhould for euer be bound to keepe them without change. But of one thing we are here to giue them warning by the way. For wheras in this diſcourſe we haue oftentimes proteſt, that many parts of diſcipline or Church-Politie are deliuered in Scripture, they may perhaps imagine that we are driuen to confeſſe their diſcipline to be deliuered in Scripture, and that hauing no other meanes to auoid it, we are faine to argue for the changeableneſſe of lawes ordained euen by God himſelfe, as if otherwiſe theirs of neceſſitie ſhould take place, and that vnder which we liue be abandoned: There is no remedy therefore but to abate this errour in them, and directly to let them know, that if they fall into any ſuch conceit, they doe but a little flatter their owne cauſe. As for vs, wee thinke in no reſpect ſo highly of it. Our perſwaſion is, that no age euer had knowledge of it but onely ours; that they which defend it, deuiſed it; that neither Chriſt nor his Apoſtls at any time taught it, but the contrary. If therfore we did ſeeke to maintaine that which moſt aduantageth our own cauſe, the very beſt way for vs, and the ſtrongeſt againſt them, were to hold euen as they doe, that in Scripture there muſt needs bee found ſome particular forme of Church-Politie, which God hath inſtituted, and which [a] for that very cauſe belongeth to all

Act. 15.

[a] *Diſciplina eſt chriſtiane Eccleſiæ politia, à Deo eius rectè adminiſtrandæ cauſa conſtituta, ac propterea ex eius verbo petenda, & ob eandem cauſam omnium Eccleſiarum communis & omnium temporum. l. 3. de Eccleſ. Diſcipli. in Analy.*

all Churches, to all times. But with any ſuch partiall eye to reſpect our ſelues and by cunning to make thoſe things ſeeme the trueſt which are the fitteſt to ſerue our purpoſe, is a thing which we neither like nor meane to follow. Wherefore that which we take to be generally true concerning the mutabilitie of lawes, the ſame we haue plainly deliuered; as beeing perſwaded of nothing more then we are of this, that whether it be in matter of ſpeculation or of practiſe, no vntruth can poſſibly auaile the patrone and defender long, and that things moſt truely are likewiſe moſt behouefully ſpoken.

[b] Εἰκαιότερον δὲ ἄλλῃ τῶν λόγων, ἢ μόνον πρὸς τὸ ἀληθὲς χρησιμώτατον ἦναι, ἀλλὰ καὶ πρὸς τὸν βίον σωφρονοῦντα γὰρ ὄντως ἅψεται, ψεύδονται. *Ariſt. Eth.* 10. *cap.* 1.

Whether Chriſt haue forbidden all change of thoſe Lawes which are ſet downe in Scripture.

AT This wee hold and grant for truth, that thoſe verie Lawes which of their owne nature are changeable, bee notwithſtanding vncapable of change, if hee which gaue them, being of authority ſo to do, forbid abſolutely to change them; neither may they admit alteration againſt the will of ſuch a law maker. Albeit therefore we doe not find any cauſe why of right there ſhould be neceſſarily an immutable forme ſet downe in holy Scripture; neuertheleſſe, if indeed there haue beene at any time a Church Politie ſo ſet downe, the change whereof the ſacred Scripture doth forbid, ſurely for men to alter thoſe lawes which God for perpetuity hath eſtabliſhed, were preſumption moſt intollerable. To proone therefore that the will of Chriſt was to eſtabliſh lawes ſo permanent and immutable that in any ſort to alter them cannot but highly offend God, thus they reaſon. Firſt, if *Moſes* being but a ſeruant in the houſe of God, did therein eſtabliſh lawes of gouernment for perpetuity, lawes which they that were of the houſhold might not alter: ſhal we admit into our thoughts, that the Sonne of God hath in prouiding for this his houſhold declared himſelfe leſſe faithfull then *Moſes*? *Moſes* deliuering vnto the Iewes ſuch lawes as were durable, if thoſe bee changeable which Chriſt hath deliuered vnto vs, we are not able to auoyde it, but (that which to thinke were heinous impiety) we of neceſſity muſt confeſſe, euen the Sonne of God himſelfe to haue beene leſſe faithfull then *Moſes*. Which argument ſhall neede no Touch-ſtone to trie it by, but ſome other of the like making. *Moſes* erected in the wildernes a Tabernacle, which was moueable from place to place; *Salomon* a ſumptuous and ſtately Temple, which was not moueable: Therefore *Salomon* was faithfuller then *Moſes*; which no man indued with reaſon will thinke. And yet by this reaſon it doth plainly follow. He that will ſee how faithfull the one or the other was, muſt compare the things which they both did, vnto the charge which God gaue each of them. The Apoſtle in making compariſon betweene our Sauiour and *Moſes*, attributeth faithfulneſſe vnto both, and maketh this difference betweene them; *Moſes in*, but Chriſt *ouer* the houſe of God; *Moſes* in that houſe which was *his by charge* and commiſſion, though to gouerne it, yet to gouerne it *as a ſeruant*; but Chriſt ouer this houſe, as being *his owne intire poſſeſſion*. Our Lord and Sauior doth make proteſtation, *I haue giuen vnto them the words which thou gaueſt me*. Faithfull therefore he was, and concealed not any part of his Fathers will. But did any part of that will require the immutability of lawes concerning Church-Politie? They anſwer, yea. For elſe God ſhould leſſe

Heb. 3. 6. Either that commendation of the Sonne before the ſeruant is a falſe teſtimonie, or the Sonne ordained a permanent gouernement in the Church. If permanent, then not to be changed. What then doe they that hold it may be changed at the Magiſtrates pleaſure, but aduiſe the Magiſtrate by his politique Lawes to proclaime that it is his will, that if there ſhall be a Church within his Dominions, he will minime and deforme the ſame? *M. M. Pag.* 16. Hee that was as faithfull as *Moſes*, had as cleare inſtruction for the gouernement of the Church. But Chriſt was as faithfull as *Moſes*. Ergo. *Demonſt. of Diſc. cap.* 1.

Iohn 17.

fauor

fauour vs then the Iewes. God would not haue their Churches guided by any lawes but his owne. And ſeeing this did ſo continue euen till Chriſt; now to eaſe God of that care, or rather to deprriue the Church of his patronage, what reaſon haue we? Surely none to derogate any thing from the ancient loue which God hath borne to his Church. An Heathen Philoſopher there is, who conſidering how many things beaſts haue which men haue not, how naked in compariſon of them, how impotent, and how much leſſe able wee are to ſhift for our ſelues a long time after we enter into this world, repiningly cõcluded hereupon, that Nature being a carefull mother for them, is towards vs a hard hearted Stepdame. No, we may not meaſure the affection of our gracious God towards his by ſuch differences. For euen herein ſhineth his wiſedome, that though the wayes of his prouidence bee many, yet the end which hee bringeth all at the length vnto, is one and the ſelfe-ſame. But if ſuch kind of reaſoning were good, might we not euen as directly conclude the very ſame concerning lawes of ſecular regiment? Their owne words are theſe. *In the ancient Church of the Iewes, God did command, and Moſes commit vnto writing, all things pertinent as well to the ciuill as to the Eccleſiaſticall ſtate.* God gaue them lawes of ciuill regiment, and would not permit their common-weale to be gouerned by any other lawes then his owne. Doth God leſſe regard our temporall eſtate in this world, or prouide for it worſe then for theirs? To vs notwithſtanding he hath not as to them deliuered any particular forme of temporall regiment, vnleſſe perhaps we thinke, as ſome doe, that the grafting of the Gentiles and their incorporating into Iſrael, doth import that we ought to be ſubiect vnto the rites and lawes of their whole Politie. We ſee then how weake ſuch diſputes are, and how ſmally they make to this purpoſe. That Chriſt did not meane to ſet downe particular poſitiue lawes for all things in ſuch ſort as *Moſes* did, the very different maner of deliuering the lawes of *Moſes* and the lawes of Chriſt doth plainely ſhew. *Moſes* had commandement to gather the ordinances of God together diſtinctly, and orderly to ſet them downe according vnto their ſeuerall kinds, for each publique dutie and office the lawes that belong thereto, as appeareth in the bookes themſelues written of purpoſe for that end. Contrariwiſe the lawes of Chriſt we find rather mentioned by occaſion in the writings of the Apoſtles, then any ſolemne thing directly written to comprehend them in legall ſort. Againe, the poſitiue lawes which *Moſes* gaue, they were giuen for the greateſt part with reſtraint to the land of Iury; Behold, ſaith *Moſes*, *I haue taught you ordinances and lawes as the Lord my God commanded me, that ye ſhould doe euen ſo within the land whither ye goe to poſſeſſe it.* Which lawes and ordinances poſitiue he plainely diſtinguiſheth afterward from the lawes of the two Tables which were morall; *The Lord ſpake vnto you out of the midſt of the fire, ye heard the voice of the words, but ſaw no ſimilitude, onely a voice. Then he declared vnto you his Couenant which he commanded you to doe, the ten Commandements, and wrote them vpon two Tables of ſtone. And the Lord commanded me that ſame time, that I ſhould teach you ordinances and lawes which ye ſhould obſerue in the land whither ye goe to poſſeſſe it.* The ſame difference is againe ſet downe in the next Chapter following. For rehearſall being made of the ten Commandements, it followeth immediately; *Theſe words the Lord ſpake vnto all your multitude in the Mount out of the midſt of the fire, the clouds*

Either God hath left a preſcript forme of Gouernement now, or elſe he is leſſe carefull vnder the new Teſtament then vnder the old. *Demonſt. of Diſc. cap. 1.*

Eccleſiaſt. Diſc. lib. 1.

Rom. 11. 17. Eph. 2. 12, 16.

Deut. 4. 5.

Verſ 12. 13. 14.

Deut. 5. 22.

cloud and the darkneſſe, with a great voice, and added no more, and wrote them vpon two Tables of ſtone, and deliuered them vnto mee. But concerning other
27. lawes, the people giue their conſent to receiue them at the hands of *Moſes*; *Goe thou neerer, and heare all that the Lord our God ſaith, and declare thou vnto vs all that the Lord our God ſaith vnto thee, and we will heare it and doe it.* The
28. peoples alacritie herein God highly commendeth with moſt effectuall and hartie ſpeech; *I haue heard the voice of the words of this people, they haue ſpoken well.*
29. *O that there were ſuch an heart in them to feare me, and to keepe all my Commandements alwaies, that it might goe well with them, and with their Children for euer!* *Goe, ſay vnto them, Returne you to your Tents;*
30. 31. *But ſtand thou here with me, and I will tell thee all the Commaundements and the ordinances and the Laws which thou ſhalt teach them, that they may doe them in the Land which I haue giuen them to poſſeſſe.* From this later kind the former are plainely diſtinguiſhed in many things. They were not both at one time deliuered, neither both after one ſort, nor to one end. The former vttered by the voyce of God himſelfe in the hearing of ſixe hundred thouſand men; the former written with the finger of God; the former termed by the name of a Couenant; the former giuen to be kept without either mention of time how long, or of place where. On the other ſide, the later giuen after, and neyther written by God himſelfe, nor giuen vnto the whole multitude immediately from God, but vnto *Moſes*, and from him to them both by word and writing; the later termed Ceremonies, Iudgements, Ordinances, but no where Couenants; finally, the obſeruation of the later reſtrayned vnto the Land where God would eſtabliſh them to inhabite. The Lawes poſitiue are not framed without regard had to the place and perſons for the which they are made. If therefore Almightie God in framing their Lawes, had an eye vnto the nature of that people, and to the Countrey where they were to dwell; if theſe peculiar and proper conſiderations were reſpected in the making of their Lawes, and muſt bee alſo regarded in the Poſitiue Lawes of all other Nations beſides; then ſeeing that Nations are not all alike, ſurely the giuing of one kinde of Poſitiue Lawes vnto one onely people, without any libertie to alter them, is but a ſlender proofe, and therefore one kind ſhould in like ſort be giuen to ſerue euerlaſtingly for all. But that which moſt of all maketh for the cleering of this point is, that the Iewes who had Lawes ſo particularly determining and ſo fully inſtructing them in all affaires what to doe, were notwithſtanding continually inured with cauſes exorbitant, and ſuch as their lawes had not prouided for. And in this point much more is granted vs then we aske, namely that for one thing which we haue left to the order of the Church, they had twenty which were vndecided by the expreſſe word of God; and that as their ceremonies and Sacraments were multiplied aboue ours, euen ſo grew the number of thoſe caſes which were not determined by any expreſſe word. So that if we may deuiſe one Law, they by this reaſon might deuiſe twentie: and if their deuiſing ſo many were not forbidden, ſhall their example proone vs forbidden to deuiſe as much as one law for the ordering of the Church? Wee might not deuiſe no not one, if their example did proone that our Sauiour hath vtterly forbidden all alteration of his lawes, in as much as there can be no law deuiſed

T.C.l.1.pag.35. Whereas you ſay that they (the Iewes) had nothing, but was determined by the Law, and wee haue many things vndetermined and left to the order of the Church: I will offer for one that you ſhall bring that we haue left to the order of the Church, to ſhew you that they had twenty which were vndecided of by the expreſſe word of God.

deuiſed, but needs it muſt either take away from his, or adde thereunto more or leſſe, and ſo make ſome kinde of alteration. But of this ſo large a grant wee are content not to take aduantage. Men are oftentimes in a ſudden paſſion more liberall, then they would be if they had leiſure to take aduice. And therefore ſo bountifull words of courſe and franke ſpeeches wee are contented to let paſſe, without turning them to aduantage with too much rigour. It may bee they had rather be liſtened vnto, when they commend the Kings of Iſrael which attempted nothing in the gouernment of the Church without the expreſſe Word of God; and when they vrge that God left nothing in his Word vndeſcribed, whether it concerned the Worſhip of God or outward Politie, nothing vnſet downe, and therefore charged them ſtrictly to keepe themſelues vnto that, without any alteration. Howbeit ſeeing it cannot be denyed, but that many things there did belong vnto the courſe of their publike affaires, wherein they had no expreſſe word at all to ſhew preciſely what they ſhould doe; the difference betweene their condition and ours in theſe caſes, will bring ſome light vnto the truth of this preſent controuerſie. Before the fact of the ſonne of *Shelomith*, there was no Law which did appoint any certaine puniſhment for Blaſphemers. That wretched creature being therefore deprehended in that Impiety, was held in Ward, till the minde of the Lord were knowne concerning his caſe. The like practice is alſo mentioned vpon occaſion of a breach of the Sabbath Day. They find a poore ſilly creature gathering ſtickes in the Wilderneſſe, they bring him vnto *Moſes* and *Aaron* and all the Congregation, they lay him in hold, becauſe it was not declared what ſhould be done with him, till God had ſaid vnto *Moſes*, *This man ſhall dye the death*. The Law required to keepe the Sabbath day; but for the breach of the Sabath what puniſhment ſhould be inflicted it did not appoint. Such occaſions as theſe are rare. And for ſuch things as doe fall ſcarce once in many ages of men, it did ſuffice to take ſuch order as was requiſite when they fell. But if the caſe were ſuch as being not alreadie determined by Law, were notwithſtanding likely oftentimes to come into queſtion, it gaue occaſion of adding Lawes that were not before. Thus it fell out in the caſe of thoſe men polluted, and of the Daughters of *Zelophhad*; whoſe cauſes *Moſes* hauing brought before the Lord, receiued Lawes to ſerue for the like in time to come. The Iewes to this end had the Oracle of God, they had the Prophets: And by ſuch meanes God himſelfe inſtructed them from Heauen what to doe, in all things that did greatly concerne their ſtate, and were not already ſet downe in the Law. Shall wee then hereupon argue euen againſt our owne experience and knowledge? Shall we ſeeke to perſwade men, that of neceſſity it is with vs as it was with them, that becauſe God is ours in all reſpects as much as theirs, therefore either no ſuch way of direction hath beene at any time, or if it haue beene, it doth ſtill continue in the Church, or if the ſame doe not continue, that yet it muſt be at the leaſt ſupplyed by ſome ſuch meane as pleaſeth vs to account of equall force? A more durifull and religious way for vs were, to admire the Wiſedome of God, which ſhineth in the beautifull varietie of all things; but moſt in the manifold and yet harmonious diſſimilitude of thoſe wayes, whereby his Church vpon Earth is guided from Age to Age throughout all Generations of men. The Iewes were neceſſarily to continue till the Comming of

T.C. In the table to his ſecond Booke. *T.C.l.2.p.446.* If he wil needs ſeparate the Worſhip of God from the externall Politie; yet as the Lord ſet forth the one, ſo hee left nothing vndeſcribed in the other. *Leuit.24.21.*

Num.15.34.

Num.9. *Num.27.*

Gen.12.12.

of Christ in the flesh, and the gathering of Nations vnto him. So much the promise made vnto *Abraham* did import. So much the Propheſie of *Iacob* at the houre of his death did fore-shew. Vpon the safetie therefore of their very outward state and condition for so long, the after good of the whole World, and the saluation of all did depend. Vnto their so long safety for two things it was necessary to prouide, namely, the preseruation of their state against forreine resistance, and the continuance of their peace within themselues. Touching the one, as they receiued the promise of God to be the rocke of their defence, against which who so did violently rush, should but bruse and batter themselues; so likewise they had his Commandement in all their affaires that way, to seeke direction and counsell from him. Mens consultations are alwayes perillous. And it falleth out many times that after long deliberation, those things are by their wit euen resolued on, which by tryall are found most opposite to publike safetie. It is no impossible thing for States, be they neuer so well established, yet by ouer-sight in some one act or treatie betweene them and their potent opposites, vtterly to cast away themselues for euer. Wherefore lest it should so fall out to them, vpon whom so much did depend; they were not permitted to enter into Warre, nor conclude any league of Peace, nor to wade through any act of moment betweene them and forreine States, vnlesse the Oracle of God or his Prophets were first consulted with. And lest domesticall disturbance should waste them within themselues, because there was nothing vnto this purpose more effectuall, then if the authoritie of their Lawes & Gouernors were such, as none might presume to take exception against it, or to shew disobedience vnto it, without incurring the hatred and detestation of all men that had any sparke of the feare of God; therefore hee gaue them euen their positiue Lawes from Heauen, and as oft as occasion required, chose in like sort Rulers also to leade & gouerne them. Notwithstanding some desperatly impious there were which aduentured to try what harme it could bring vpon them, if they did attempt to be Authours of confusion, and to resist both Gouernors and Lawes. Against such Monsters God maintained his owne by fearefull execution of extraordinarie iudgement vpon them. By which meanes it came to passe, that although they were a people infested and mightily hated of all others throughout the World, although by nature hard-hearted, querulous, wrathfull and impatient of rest and quietnesse, yet was there nothing of force either one way or other to worke the ruine and subuersion of their State, till the time before mentioned was expired. Thus wee see that there was no cause of dissimilitude in these things, betweene that one only people before Christ, & the Kingdomes of the world since. And wheras it is further alleaged, that albeit in *Ciuill matters and things pertayning to this present life, God hath vsed a greater particularitie with them then amongst vs, framing Lawes according to the qualitie of that people and Countrey; yet the leauing of vs at greater libertie in things Ciuill, is so farre from pruning the like libertie in things pertayning to the Kingdome of Heauen, that it rather proues a streighter bond. For euen as when the Lord would haue his fauour more appeare by temporall blessings of this life towards the people vnder the Law then towards vs, he gaue also politick Lawes most exactly, whereby they might both most easily come into, and most stedfastly remayne in possession of those earthly bene-*

Gen.48.10.

T.C.l.1.p.440.

ſits: euen ſo at this time, wherein he would not haue his fauour ſo much eſteemed by thoſe outward commodities, it is required, that as his care in preſcribing Lawes for that purpoſe hath ſomewhat fallen, in leauing them to mens conſultations which may be deceiued; ſo his care for conduct and gouernment of the life to come, ſhould (if it were poſſible) riſe, in leauing leſſe to the order of men then in times paſt. Theſe are but weake and feeble Diſputes for the inference of that concluſion which is intended. For ſauing only in ſuch conſideration as hath beene ſhewed, there is no cauſe wherefore we ſhould thinke God more deſirous to manifeſt his fauour by temporall bleſſings towards them, then towards vs. Godlineſſe had vnto them, and it hath alſo vnto vs, the promiſes both of this life and the life to come. That the care of God hath fallen in earthly things, and therefore ſhould riſe as much in heauenly; that more is left vnto mens conſultations in the one, and therefore leſſe muſt be granted in the other; that God hauing vſed a greater particularity with them then with vs for matters pertayning vnto this life, is to make amends by the more exact deliuery of Lawes for gouernment of the life to come; theſe are propoſitions, whereof if there be any rule, we muſt plainly confeſſe that which truth is, we know it not. God which ſpake vnto them by his Prophets hath vnto vs by his onely begotten Sonne; thoſe Myſteries of grace and ſaluation which were but darkly diſcloſed vnto them, haue vnto vs more clearely ſhined. Such differences betweene them and vs the Apoſtles of Chriſt haue well acquainted vs withall. But as for matter belonging to the outward conduct or gouernment of the Church; ſeeing that euen in ſenſe it is manifeſt, that our Lord and Sauiour hath not by poſitiue Lawes deſcended ſo farre into particularities with vs, as *Moſes* with them; neither doth by extraordinary meanes, Oracles, and Prophets, direct vs, as them he did, in thoſe things which riſing daily by new occaſions, are of neceſſitie to bee prouided for; doth it not hereupon rather follow, that although not to them, yet to vs there ſhould bee freedome and libertie granted to make Lawes? Yea, but the Apoſtle Saint *Paul* doth ſeareſully charge *Timothy*, euen *In the ſight of God who quickeneth all, and of Chriſt Ieſus who witneſſed that famous Confeſſion before Pontius Pilate, to keepe what was commanded him, ſafe and ſound till the appearance of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt.* This doth exclude all libertie of changing the Lawes of Chriſt, whether by abrogation or addition, or howſoeuer. For in *Timothy* the whole Church of Chriſt receiueth charge concerning her dutie. And that charge is to keepe the Apoſtles Commandement: And his Commandement did contayne the Lawes that concerned Church gouernment: And thoſe Lawes he ſtraightly requireth to be obſerued without breach or blame, till the appearance of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt. In Scripture we grant euery one mans leſſon, to be the common inſtruction of all men, ſo farre forth as their caſes are like, and that religiouſly to keepe the Apoſtles Commandements in whatſoeuer they may concerne vs, we all ſtand bound. But touching that Commandement which *Timothy* was charged with, we ſwarue vndoubtedly from the Apoſtles preciſe meaning, if we extend it ſo largely, that the armes thereof ſhall reach vnto all things which were commanded him by the Apoſtle. The very words themſelues doe reſtrayne themſelues vnto ſome one ſpeciall Commandement among many. And therefore it is not ſaid, *Keep the Ordinances, Lawes and Conſtitutions which thou haſt receiued*, but? *vnto that great Commandement, which doth principally concerne thee and thy*

1. *Tim.* 6. 14.

Iohn 18. 37.

Iohn 21.15. *thy calling*; that Commandement which Christ did so often inculcate vnto *Peter*; that Commandement vnto the carefull discharge whereof they of Ephesus are exhorted, *Attend to your selues, and to all the flocke, wherein the Holy Ghost hath* Act. 20.28. *placed you Bishops to feed the Church of God, which he hath purchased by his owne blood*; finally, that Commandement which vnto the same *Timothy* is by the same 2.Tim.4.1. Apostle euen in the same forme and manner afterwards againe vrged, *I charge thee in the sight of God and the Lord Iesus Christ, which will iudge the quicke and dead at his appearance and in his Kingdome, Preach the Word of God.* When *Timothy* was instituted in that Office, then was the credit and trust of this dutie committed vnto his faithfull care. The Doctrine of the Gospell was then giuen 1.Tim.6.20. τὴν παραθήκην. him, *as the precious talent or treasure of Iesus Christ*; then receiued he for performance of this dutie, *the speciall gift of the Holy Ghost*. To keepe this Commandement immaculate and blamelesse, *not to teach the Gospell of Christ without mixture of corrupt and vnsound Doctrine*, such as a number euen in those times intermingle with the Mysteries of Christian Beliefe. *Till the appearance of Christ to keepe it so*, doth not import the time wherein it should be kept, but rather the time whereunto the finall reward for keeping it was reserued: according to 2.Tim.4.7. that of Saint *Paul* concerning himselfe, *I haue kept the faith; for the residue there is layd vp for me a Crowne of Righteousnesse, which the Lord the righteous Iudge shall in that Day render vnto me.* If they that labour in this Harueſt should respect but the present fruite of their painefull trauell, a poore incouragement it were vnto them to continue therein all the dayes of their life. But their reward is great in Heauen; the Crowne of Righteousnesse which shall bee giuen them in that Day is honourable. The fruite of their industry then shall they reape with full contentment and satisfaction, but not till then. Wherein the greatnesse of their reward is abundantly sufficient, to counteruaile the tediousnesse of their expectation. Wherefore till then they that are in labour must rest in hope. O *Timothy*, keepe that which is committed vnto thy charge, that great Commandement which thou hast receiued, keepe, till the appearance of our Lord Iesus Christ. In which sense although wee iudge the Apostles wordes to haue beene vttered; yet hereunto wee doe not require them to yeeld, that thinke any other construction more sound. If therefore it bee reiected, and theirs esteemed more probable, which hold that the last words doe import perpetuall obseruation of the Apostles Commandement imposed necessarily for euer vpon the militant Church of Christ; let them withall consider, that then his Commandement cannot so largely bee taken, to comprehend whatsoeuer the Apostle did command *Timothy*. For themselues doe not all binde the Church vnto some things whereof *Timothy* receiued charge, as namely vnto that Precept concerning the choice of Widdowes. So as they cannot hereby maintayne, that all things positiuely commanded concerning the affaires of the Church, were commanded for perpetuitie. And we doe not deny that certaine things were commanded to bee, though positiue, yet perpetuall in the Church. They should not therefore vrge against vs places that seeme to forbid change, but rather such as set downe some measure of alteration; which measure if we haue exceeded, then might they therewith charge vs iustly: whereas now they themselues both granting, and also vsing liberty to change, cannot in reason dispute absolutely against all change. Christ deliuered no incon-

uenient or vnmeete lawes. Sundry of ours they hold inconuenient. Therefore ſuch lawes they cannot poſſibly hold to be Chriſts. Being not his, they muſt of neceſſity grant them added vnto his. Yet certaine of thoſe very lawes ſo added, they themſelues do not iudge vnlawfull; as they plainly confeſſe, both in matter of preſcript attire, and of rites appertaining to buriall. Their owne proteſtations are, that they plead againſt the inconuenience, not the vnlawfulneſſe of Popiſh apparell; and againſt the inconuenience, not the vnlawfulneſſe of Ceremonies in Buriall. Therefore they hold it a thing not vnlawfull to adde to the Lawes of Ieſus Chriſt; and ſo conſequently they yeeld, that no Law of Chriſt forbiddeth addition vnto Church laws. The iudgement of *Caluin* being alleaged againſt them, to whom of all men they attribute moſt, whereas his words be plaine, that for Ceremonies and external diſcipline, the Church hath power to make lawes; the anſwer which hereunto they make is, that indefinitely the ſpeech is true, and that ſo it was meant by him, namely, that ſome things belonging vnto externall diſcipline and Ceremonies, are in the power and arbitrement of the Church; but neither was it meant, neither is it true generally, that all external diſcipline, and all Ceremonies are left to the order of the Church, in as much as the Sacraments of Baptiſme and the Supper of the Lord are Ceremonies, which yet the Church may not therfore abrogate. Againe, Excommunication is a part of externall diſcipline, which might alſo be caſt away, if all externall diſcipline were arbitrary, and in the choice of the Church. By which their anſwere it doth appeare, that touching the names of Ceremony and externall diſcipline, they gladly would haue vs ſo vnderſtood, as if we did herein conteine a great deale more then we doe. The fault which we find with them is, that they ouermuch abridge the Church of her power in theſe things. Whereupon they recharge vs, as if in theſe things we gaue the Church a liberty which hath no limits or bounds; as if all things which the name of diſcipline conteineth, were at the Churches free choice, ſo that we might either haue Church-gouernours and gouernement, or want them, either reteine or reiect Church cenſures as we liſt. They wonder at vs, as at men which thinke it ſo indifferent what the Church doth in matter of Ceremonies, that it may be feared leſt we iudge the very Sacraments themſelues to be held at the Churches pleaſure. No, the name of Ceremonies we doe not vſe in ſo large a meaning, as to bring Sacraments within the compaſſe and reach therof; although things belonging vnto the outward forme and ſeemely adminiſtration of them, are conteined in that name, euen as wee vſe it. For the name of Ceremonies we vſe as they themſelues doe, when they ſpeake after this ſort: *The Doctrine and diſcipline of the Church, as the waightieſt things, ought eſpecially to be looked vnto, but the Ceremonies alſo, as Mint and Comin, ought not to be neglected.* Beſides, in the matter of externall diſcipline or regiment it

T.C.l.3.p.141. My reaſons do neuer conclude the vnlawfulnes of theſe ceremonies of Burial, but the inconuenience and inexpedience of them *And in the Table*, Of the inconuenience, not of the vnlawfulneſſe of Popiſh apparell and ceremonies in buriall. *T.C.l.1.p.32.* Vpon the indefinite ſpeaking of M. *Calain*, ſaying, ceremonies and externall diſcipline, without adding all or ſome, you goe about ſubtilly to make men beleeue, that Maſter *Calain* had placed the whole externall diſcipline in the power and arbitrement of the Church. For if all externall diſcipline were arbitrarie and in the choiſe of the Church, Excommunication alſo (which is a part of it) might be caſt away, which I thinke you will not ſay. *And in the very next words before*, Where you would giue to vnderſtand that ceremonies and externall diſcipline are not preſcribed particularly by the word of God, and therefore left to the order of the Church: you muſt vnderſtand that all external diſcipline is not left to the order of the Church, being particularly preſcribed in the Scriptures, no more then all ceremonies are left to the order of the Church, as the Sacraments of Baptiſme, and Supper of the Lord.

T.C.l.3.p.171.

it ſelfe, we doe not denie but there are ſome things whereto the Church is bound till the worlds end. So as the queſtion is onely how farre the bounds of the Churches libertie doe reach. We hold that the power which the Church hath lawfully to make lawes and orders for it ſelfe, doth extend vnto ſundry things of Eccleſiaſticall iuriſdiction and ſuch other matters, whereto their opinion is, that the Churches authoritie and power doth not reach. Whereas therefore in diſputing againſt vs about this point, they take their compaſſe a great deale wider then the truth of things can affoord, producing reaſons and arguments by way of generalitie, to proue that Chriſt hath ſet downe all things belonging any way vnto the forme of ordering his Church, and hath abſolutely forbidden change by addition or diminution great or ſmall (for ſo their manner of diſputing is:) we are conſtrained to make our defence, by ſhewing that Chriſt hath not deprived his Church ſo farre of all liberty in making orders and lawes for it ſelfe, and that they themſelues doe not thinke hee hath ſo done. For are they able to ſhew that all particular cuſtomes, rites and orders of reformed Churches, haue beene appointed by Chriſt himſelfe? No, they grant that in matter of circumſtance they alter that which they haue received; but in things of ſubſtance they keepe the lawes of Chriſt without change. If we ſay the ſame in our owne behalfe, (which ſurely wee may doe with a great deale more truth) then muſt they cancell all that hath beene before alleaged, and begin to inquire afreſh, whether we retaine the lawes that Chriſt hath deliuered concerning matters of ſubſtance, yea or no. For our conſtant perſwaſion in this point is as theirs, that we haue no where altered the lawes of Chriſt, further then in ſuch particularities onely, as haue the nature of things changeable according to the difference of times, places, perſons, and other the like circumſtances. Chriſt hath commanded prayers to bee made, Sacraments to bee miniſtred, his Church to be carefully taught and guided. Concerning euery of theſe, ſomewhat Chriſt hath commanded which muſt bee kept till the worlds end. On the contrary ſide, in euery of them ſomewhat there may be added, as the Church ſhall iudge it expedient. So that if they will ſpeake to purpoſe, all which hitherto hath beene diſputed of they muſt giue ouer, and ſtand vpon ſuch particulars onely, as they can ſhew wee haue either added or abrogated otherwiſe then we ought, in the matter of Church-Politie. Whatſoeuer Chriſt hath commanded for euer to be kept in his Church, the ſame wee take not vpon vs to abrogate; and whatſoeuer our lawes haue thereunto added beſides, of ſuch qualitie wee hope it is, as no law of Chriſt doth any where condemne. Wherefore that all may be layd together, and gathered into a narrow roome: 1. Firſt, ſo farre forth as the Church is the myſticall body of Chriſt and his inuiſible Spouſe, it needeth no externall Politie. That very part of the law diuine which teacheth faith and works of righteouſneſſe, is it ſelfe alone ſufficient for the Church of God in that reſpect. But as the Church is a viſible ſocietie and body politique, lawes of Politie it cannot want. 2. Whereas therefore it commeth in the ſecond place to be inquired, what lawes are fitteſt and beſt for the Church; they who firſt embraced that rigorous and ſtrict opinion, which depriueth the Church of liberty to make any kind of law for her ſelfe, inclined (as it ſhould ſeeme) thereunto, for that they imagined all things, which the Church doth without commandement

T. C. li. 1. p. 27. We denie not but certayne things are left to the order of the Church; becauſe they are of the nature of thoſe which are varied by times, places, perſons and other circumſtances, and ſo could not at once be ſet downe and eſtabliſhed for euer.

1.

2.

Eſa. 29. 14. Col. 2. 22.

mandement of holy Scripture, ſubiect to that reproofe which the Scripture it ſelfe vſeth in certaine caſes, when diuine authoritie ought alone to be followed. Hereupon they thought it enough for the cancelling of any kind of order whatſoeuer, to ſay, *The Word of God teacheth it not, it is a deuice of the braine of man, away with it therefore out of the Church.* S. *Auguſtine* was of another minde, who ſpeaking of faſts on the Sonday, ſaith, *That he which would chuſe any that day to faſt on, ſhould giue thereby no ſmall offence to the Church of God, which had receiued a contrarie cuſtome. For in theſe things whereof the Scripture appointeth no certaintie, the vſe of the people of God, or the Ordinances of our Fathers, muſt ſerue for a Law. In which caſe if we diſpute, and condemne one ſort by anothers cuſtome, it will be but matter of endleſſe contention; where, for as much as the labour of reaſoning ſhall hardly beat into mens heads any certaine or neceſſary truth, ſurely it ſtandeth vs vpon to take heed, leſt with the tempeſt of ſtrife, the brightneſſe of charity and loue be darkned.* *Aug. Epiſt. 86.*

If all things muſt bee commanded of God which may be practiſed of his Church, I would know what commandement the *Gileadites* had to erect that Altar which is ſpoken of in the Booke of *Ioſhua*. Did not congruitie of reaſon induce them thereunto, and ſuffice for defence of their fact? *Ioſ. 22.*

I would know what commandement the women of Iſrael had yerely to mourn and lament in the memorie of *Iephtaes* Daughter; what commaundement the *Iewes* had to celebrate their feaſt of *Dedication* neuer ſpoken of in the Law, yet ſolemnized euen by our Sauiour himſelfe; what commaundement finally they had for the Ceremonie of Odors vſed about the bodies of the dead, after which cuſtome notwithſtanding (ſith it was their cuſtome) our Lord was contented that his owne moſt precious bodie ſhould be intombed. Wherefore to reiect all orders of the Church which men haue eſtabliſhed, is to thinke worſe of the Lawes of men in this reſpect, then either the iudgement of wiſe men alloweth, or the Law of God it ſelfe will beare. Howbeit they which had once taken vpon them to condemne all things done in the Church, and not commanded of God to be done, ſaw it was neceſſary for them (continuing in defence of this their opinion) to hold that needes there muſt bee in Scripture ſet downe a complete particular forme of Church-Politie, a forme preſcribing how all the affaires of the Church muſt be ordered, a forme in no reſpect lawfull to be altered by mortall men. For reformation of which ouerſight and error in them, there were that thought it a part of Chriſtian loue and charity to inſtruct them better, and to open vnto them the difference between matters of perpetual neceſſitie to all mens ſaluation, and matters of Eccleſiaſticall Politie: the one both fully and plainly taught in holy Scripture, the other not neceſſary to be in ſuch ſort there preſcribed; the one not capable of any diminution or augmentation at all by men, the other apt to admit both. Hereupon the Authors of the former opinion were preſently ſeconded by other wittier and better learned, who beeing leth that the forme of Church-Politie which they ſought to bring in, ſhould bee otherwiſe then in the higheſt degree accounted of, tooke firſt an exception againſt the difference betweene Church-Politie and matters of neceſſitie to ſaluation; Secondly, againſt the reſtraint of Scripture, which they ſay receiueth iniurie at our hands, when wee teach that it teacheth not as well matters of Politie as of Faith and Saluation. 3. Conſtrained hereby we haue beene therefore, both to maintain that diſtinction, as a thing not only true in it ſelfe, but by them likewiſe 3.

wiſe ſo acknowledged, though vnawares; 4. And to make manifeſt that from Scripture wee offer not to derogate the leaſt thing that truth thereunto doth claime, in as much as by vs it is willingly confeſt, that the Scripture of God is a Store-houſe abounding with ineſtimable Treaſures of wiſdome and knowledge in many kindes, ouer and abone things in this one kinde barely neceſſarie; yea, euen that matters of Eccleſiaſticall Politie are not therein omitted, but taught alſo, albeit not ſo taught as thoſe other things before mentioned. For ſo perfectly are thoſe things taught, that nothing euer can neede to bee added, nothing euer ceaſſe to bee neceſſary: theſe on the contrarie ſide, as beeing of a farre other nature and qualitie, not ſo ſtrictly nor euerlaſtingly commaunded in Scripture, but that vnto the complete forme of Church-Politie much may bee requiſite which the Scripture teacheth not, and much which it hath taught, become vnrequiſite, ſometime becauſe wee need not vſe it, ſometimes alſo becauſe wee cannot. In which reſpect, for mine owne part, although I ſee that certaine Reformed Churches, the Scottiſh eſpecially and French, haue not that which beſt agreeth with the ſacred Scripture, I meane the gouernement that is by Biſhops, in as much as both thoſe Churches are faine vnder a different kinde of regiment, which to remedie it is for the one altogether too late, and to ſoone for the other during their preſent affliction and trouble; this their defect and imperfection I had rather lament in ſuch caſe then exagitate, conſidering that men oftentimes without any fault of their owne, may bee driuen to want that kinde of Politie or Regiment which is beſt; and to content themſelues with that, which eyther the irremediable errour of former times, or the neceſſitie of the preſent hath caſt vpon them; 5. Now, becauſe that Poſition firſt mentioned, which holdeth it neceſſarie that all things which the Church may lawfully doe in her owne Regiment be commanded in holy Scripture, hath by the latter Defendors thereof beene greatly qualified; who, though perceiuing it to be ouer-extreme, are notwithſtanding loth to acknowledge any ouer-ſight therein, and therefore labor what they may to faine it by conſtruction; we haue for the more perſpicuitie deliuered what was thereby meant at the firſt; 6. How iniurious a thing it were vnto all the Churches of God for men to hold it in that meaning; 7. And how vnperfect their interpretations are who ſo much labour to helpe it, either by diuiding Commandements of Scripture into two kindes, and ſo defending that all things muſt be commanded, if not in ſpeciall, yet in generall Precepts; 8. Or by taking it as meant that in caſe the Church doe deuiſe any new Order, ſhe ought therein to follow the direction of Scripture onely, and not any ſtar-light of mans reaſon; 9. Both which euaſions being cut off, we haue in the next place declared after what ſort the Church may lawfully frame to her ſelfe Lawes of Politie, and in what reckoning ſuch Poſitiue Lawes both are with God, and ſhould bee with men; 10. Furthermore, becauſe to abridge the libertie of the Church in this behalfe, it hath beene made a thing very odious, that when God himſelfe hath deuiſed ſome certaine Lawes, & committed them to Sacred Scripture, man by abrogation, addition, or any way, ſhould preſume to alter and change them; it was of neceſſity to be examined, whether the authoritie of God in making, or his care in committing thoſe his Lawes vnto Scripture, be ſufficient arguments to proue that God doth in no caſe allow they ſhould ſuffer any

4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10.

ſuch kind of change. 11. The laſt refuge for proofe that Diuine Lawes of Chriſtian Church-Politie may not bee altered, by extinguiſhment of any olde, or addition of new in that kind, is partly a marueilous ſtrange Diſcourſe, that Chriſt (vnleſſe hee would ſhew himſelfe not ſo faithfull as *Moſes*, or not[a] ſo wiſe as *Lycurgus* and *Solon*) muſt needs haue ſet downe in holy Scripture ſome certaine, complete and vnchangeable forme of Politie; and partly a coloured ſhew of ſome euidence, where change of that ſort of Lawes may ſeeme expreſſely forbidden, although in truth nothing leſſe be done. I might haue added hereunto their more familiar and popular diſputes, as The Church is a Citie, yea the Citie of the great King, and the life of a Citie is Politie: The Church is the houſe of the liuing God: and what houſe can there bee, without ſome order for the gouernment of it? In the royal houſe of a Prince there muſt be Officers for gouernment, ſuch as not any ſeruant in the houſe but the Prince, whoſe the houſe is, ſhall iudge conuenient: So the houſe of God muſt haue orders for the gouernment of it, ſuch as not any of the Houſhold, but God himſelfe hath appointed. It cannot ſtand with the loue and wiſedome of God, to leaue ſuch order vntaken as is neceſſary for the due gouernment of his Church. The numbers, degrees, orders, and attire of *Salomons* ſeruants did ſhew his wiſedome: therefore hee which is greater then *Salomon*, hath not failed to leaue in his houſe ſuch orders for gouernment thereof, as may ſerue to bee as a looking Glaſſe for his prouidence, care, and wiſdome to be ſeene in. That little ſparke of the light of nature which remaineth in vs, may ſerue vs for the affaires of this life. But as in all other matters concerning the Kingdome of Heauen, ſo principally in this which concerneth the very gouernment of that Kingdome, needfull it is wee ſhould be taught of God. As long as men are perſwaded of any order that it is only of men, they preſume of their owne vnderſtanding, and they thinke to deuiſe another not onely as good, but better then that which they haue receiued. By ſeueritie of puniſhment, this preſumption and curioſitie may be reſtrained. But that cannot worke ſuch cheerful obedience as is yeelded, where the Conſcience hath reſpect to God as the Author of Lawes and orders. This was it which countenanced the Lawes of *Moſes*, made concerning outward Politie for the adminiſtration of holy things. The like ſome Law-giuers of the Heathens did pretend, but falſly; yet wiſely diſcerning the vſe of this perſwaſion. For the better obedience ſake therefore it was expedient, that God ſhould be Author of the Politie of his Church. But to what iſſue doth all this come? A man would thinke that they which hold out with ſuch diſcourſes, were of nothing more fully perſwaded then of this, that the Scripture hath ſet downe a complete forme of Church-Politie, vniuerſall, perpetuall, altogether vnchangeable. For ſo it would follow, if the premiſes were ſound and ſtrong to ſuch effect as is pretended. Notwithſtanding, they which haue thus formally maintained argumẽt in defence of the firſt ouerſight, are by the very euidence of truth themſelues conſtrained to make this in effect their concluſion, that the Scripture of God hath many things concerning Church-polity; that of thoſe many, ſome are of greater waight, ſome of leſſe; that what hath bin vrged as touching immutabilitie of Lawes, it extendeth in truth no further then onely to Lawes wherein things of greater moment are preſcribed. Now thoſe things of greater moment, what are they? Forſooth, *Doctors, Paſtors,*

11.

[a] *Niſi Reip. ſuæ ſtatum omnem conſtituerit, magiſtratus ordinarit, ſingulorum munera poteſtatemq́ deſcripſerit, quæ iudicorum foris, ratio habenda, quomodo ciuium ſinienda lites: non ſolum minus Eccleſiæ Chriſtianæ prouidit quàm Moſes olim Iudaicæ, ſed quàm à Lycurgo, Solone, Numa, ciuitatib. ſuis proſpectum ſit.* Lib. de Eccleſiaſt. Diſc.

The defence of godly Minist. against D. Bridges. 133.

ſters, Lay Elders, Elderſhips compounded of theſe three, Synods conſiſting of many Elderſhips, Deacons, Women-church-ſeruants or Widows, free conſent of the people vnto actions of greateſt moment, after they be by Churches or Synods orderly reſolued. All *this forme* of Politie (if yet we may terme that a forme of building, when men haue laid a few rafters together, & thoſe not all of the ſoundeſt neither) but howſoeuer, all *this forme* they conclude is preſcribed in ſuch ſort, that to adde to it any thing as of like importance, (for ſo I thinke they meane) or to abrogate of it any thing at all, is vnlawfull. In which reſolution if they will firmely & conſtantly perſiſt, I ſee not but that concerning the points which hitherto haue beene diſputed of, they muſt agree that they haue moleſted the Church with needleſſe oppoſition; and henceforward, as we ſaid before, betake themſelues wholly vnto the tryall of particulars, whether euery of thoſe things which they eſteeme as principall, be eyther ſo eſteemed of, or at all eſtabliſhed for perpetuitie in holy Scripture; and whether any particular thing in our Church-Politie be receiued other then the Scripture alloweth of, either in greater things or in ſmaller. The matters wherein Church-Politie is conuerſant, are the publike religious duties of the Church, as the adminiſtration of the Word and Sacraments, Prayers, ſpirituall cenſures & the like. To theſe the Church ſtandeth alwaies bound. Lawes of Politie, are Lawes which appoint in what manner theſe duties ſhall be performed. In performance whereof, becauſe al that are of the Church cannot ioyntly and equally worke, the firſt thing in Politie required, is a difference of perſons in the Church, without which difference thoſe functions cannot in orderly ſort be executed. Hereupon we hold, that Gods Clergie are a ſtate which hath bin and will be, as long as there is a Church vpon Earth, neceſſary by the plaine Word of God himſelfe; a ſtate whereunto the reſt of Gods people muſt be ſubiect as touching things that appertaine to their ſoules health. For where Politie is, it cannot but appoint ſome to be Leaders of others, and ſome to be led by others. *If the blind lead the blind, they both periſh.* Luke 6. 39. It is with the Clergie, if their perſons be reſpected, euen as it is with other men; their quality many times far beneath that, which the dignitie of their place requireth. Howbeit, according to the order of Politie, they being the *lights of the World*, Matth. 5. 14. others (though better and wiſer) muſt that way be ſubiect vnto them. Againe, for as much as where the Clergy are any great multitude, order doth neceſſarily require that by degrees they be diſtinguiſhed; wee hold, there haue euer beene, and euer ought to bee in ſuch caſe, at leaſtwiſe two ſorts of Eccleſiaſtical perſons, the one ſubordinate vnto the other, as to the Apoſtles in the beginning, and to the Biſhops alwayes ſince, wee find plainly both in Scripture and in all Eccleſiaſticall Records, other Miniſters of the Word and Sacraments haue bin. Moreouer it cannot enter into any mans conceit to thinke it lawfull, that euery man which liſteth, ſhould take vpon him charge in the Church; and therefore a ſolemne admittance is of ſuch neceſſitie, that without it there can be no Church-Politie. A nũber of particularities there are, which make for the more conuenient being of theſe principal and perpetuall parts in Eccleſiaſticall Politie, but yet are not of ſuch conſtant vſe and neceſſitie in Gods Church. Of this kind are times and places appointed for the exerciſe of Religion; ſpecialties belonging to the publike ſolẽnity of the Word, the Sacraments and Prair; the enlargement or abridgement of Functions miniſteriall depending

pending vpon thoſe two principall before mentioned; to conclude, euen whatſoeuer doth by way of formalitie and circumſtance concerne any publike action of the Church. Now although that which the Scripture hath of things in the former kinde be for euer permanent; yet in the later both much of that which the Scripture teacheth is not alwayes needfull; and much the Church of God ſhall alwayes neede which the Scripture teacheth not. So as the forme of Politie by them ſet downe for perpetuitie, is three wayes faultie. Faultie in omitting ſome things which in Scripture are of that nature, as namely the difference that ought to be of Paſtors, when they grow to any great multitude; faultie in requiring Doctors, Deacons, Widdowes, and ſuch like; as things of perpetuall neceſſitie by the Law of God, which in truth are nothing leſſe; faultie alſo in vrging ſome things by Scripture immutable, as their Lay-Elders, which the Scripture neither maketh immutable nor at all teacheth, for any thing eyther we can as yet find, or they haue hitherto been able to proone. But hereof more in the Bookes that follow. As for thoſe marvellous diſcourſes, whereby they aduenture to argue, that God muſt needs haue done the thing which they imagine was to be done; I muſt confeſſe, I haue often wondred at their exceeding boldneſſe herein. When the queſtion is, whether God haue deliuered in Scripture (as they affirme hee hath) a complete particular immutable forme of Church-Politie; why take they that other both preſumptuous and ſuperfluous labour, to proue he ſhould haue done it: there being no way in this caſe to proue the deed of God, ſauing only by producing that euidence wherein he hath done it? But if there be no ſuch thing apparent vpon record, they doe as if one ſhould demand a Legacy by force and vertue of ſome written Teſtament, wherin there being no ſuch thing ſpecified, he pleadeth that there it muſt needes bee, and bringeth arguments from the loue or good wil, which alwaies the Teſtator bore him; imagining that theſe or the like proofes will conuict a Teſtament to haue that in it, which other men can no where by reading finde. In matters, which concerne the actions of God, the moſt dutifull way on our part is to ſearch what God hath done, and with meekeneſſe to admire that, rather then to diſpute what he in congruitie of reaſon ought to doe. The wayes which hee hath whereby to doe all things for the greateſt good of his Church, are more in number then we can ſearch, other in nature then that we ſhould preſume to determine which of many ſhould be the fitteſt for him to chooſe, till ſuch time as we ſee he hath choſen of many ſome one; which one we then may boldly conclude to bee the fitteſt, becauſe he hath taken it before the reſt. When wee doe otherwiſe, ſurely we exceed our bounds, who and where we are we forget; and therefore needfull it is that our pride in ſuch caſes be controld, and our diſputes beaten backe with thoſe demands of the bleſſed Apoſtle, *How vnſearchable are his iudgements, and his wayes paſt finding out? Who hath knowne the mind of the Lord, or who was his Counſellor?* Rom. 11. 33.

pending vpon the two principall before mentioned, to conclude, euen what-
soeuer doth by way of forme and circumstance concerne any publike action
of the Church. Now although that which the Scripture hath of things in the
former kinde be euer permanent; yet in the latter both much of that which
the Scripture teacheth is not alwayes needfull; and much the Church of God
shall alwayes neede which the Scripture teacheth not. So as the forme of Poli-
tie by them let downe for perpetuitie, is three wayes faulty. Faulty in omit-
ting some things which in Scripture are of that nature as namely the difference
that ought to be of Pastors, when they grow to any great multitude; faulty in
requiring Deacons, Widdowes, and such like, as things of perpetuall
necessitie by the Law of God, which in truth are nothing lesse; faulty also in
urging some things by Scripture immutable, as their Lay-Elders, which the
Scripture neither mencioneth nor at all reacheth, for any thing eyther
we can as yet find, or they have hitherto been able to proove. But hereof more
in the Booke that follow. As for their manifold discourses, whereby they
adventure to argue, that God must needs have done the thing which they im-
pose vpon vs to be done, I must confesse, I have often wondred at their exceeding
confidence herein. When they speake, whether God have delivered in Scrip-
ture (as they affirme he hath) a complete particular immutable forme of
Church Politie, why rate they other both presumptuous and superfluous
labour to proue he should have done it, there being no way in this case to proue
the deed or doing only by producing that sentence wherein he hath vsed
it? If there be no such thing appearing, how should they doe as if one should
demand a Lawyer by what sentence of some written Statute, wherein there
being no such thing specified, he pleadeth that reason must needes be, and
therefore argueth from the iust or good [illegible] always the Statute bore
that meaning? [illegible]
that it, which other men can no where by reading finde. In matters, which
concerne the actions of God, the most we can on our part are to search
what God hath done, and with moderation to admire that, rather then to dil-
pute what he might have done. The wayes which he hath
how to see the truth, because he hath taken it before us. When we doe o-
therwise, surely we exceed our bounds, and where we are we forget
and therefore needfully is that part to be considered and
our adversaries beaten by them out of the pitched

OF THE LAWES OF ECCLESIASTICALL POLITIE:

The fourth Booke.

Concerning their third Assertion, that our Forme of *Church-politie is corrupted with Popish Orders, Rites,* and Ceremonies, banished out of certaine Reformed Churches, whose example therein we ought *to haue followed.*

The matter contained in this fourth Booke.

1 *HOw great vse Ceremonies haue in the Church.*

2 *The first thing they blame in the kind of our Ceremonies, is, that we haue not in them ancient Apostolicall simplicity, but a greater pompe and statelinesse.*

3 *The second, that so many of them are the same which the Church of Rome vseth, and the Reasons which they bring to proue them for that cause blame-worthy.*

4 *How when they goe about to expound what Popish Ceremonies they meane, they contradict their owne Arguments against Popish Ceremonies.*

5 *An Answere to the Argument whereby they would proue, that sith we allow the Customes of our Fathers to be followed, we therefore may not allow such Customes as the Church of Rome hath, because we cannot account of them which are in that Church as of our Fathers.*

6 *To their Allegation, that the course of Gods owne Wisdome doth make against our Conformity with the Church of Rome in such things.*

7 *To the Example of the eldest Church which they bring for the same purpose.*

8 *That it is not our best Polity (as they pretend it is) for establishment of sound Religion, to haue in these things no agreement with the Church of Rome being vnsound.*

9 *That neither the Papists vpbraiding vs as furnished out of their store, nor any hope which in that respect they are said to conceiue, doth make any more against our Ceremonies then the former Allegations haue done.*

10 *The griefe which, they say, godly Brethren conceiue, at such Ceremonies as we haue common with the Church of Rome.*

11 *The*

11 *The third thing for which they reproue a great part of our Ceremonies is, for that as we haue them from the Church of Rome, ſo that Church had them from the Iewes.*

12 *The fourth, for that ſundry of them haue bin (they ſay) abuſed vnto Idolatry, and are by that meane become ſcandalous.*

13 *The fifth, for that we retaine them ſtill, notwithſtanding the Example of certaine Churches reformed before vs, which haue caſt them out.*

14 *A declaration of the proceedings of the Church of England, for the eſtabliſhment of things as they are.*

How great vſe Ceremonies haue in the Church.

SVCH was the ancient ſimplicitie and ſoftneſſe of Spirit, which ſometimes preuailed in the World, that they whoſe words were euen as Oracles amongſt men, ſeemed euer-more loath to giue ſentence againſt any thing publikely receiued in the Church of God, except it were wonderfull apparently euill; for that they did not ſo much incline to that ſeueritie, which delighteth to reproue the leaſt things it ſeeth amiſſe; as to that Charity, which is vnwilling to behold any thing, that dutie bindeth to reproue. The ſtate of this preſent Age, wherein Zeale hath drowned Charitie, and Skill Meekeneſſe, will not now ſuffer any man to marueil, whatſoeuer he ſhall heare reproued, by whomſoeuer. Thoſe Rites and Ceremonies of the Church therefore, which are the ſelfe-ſame now, that they were, when holy and vertuous men maintained them againſt prophane and deriding Aduerſaries, her owne children haue at this day in deriſion. Whether iuſtly or no, it ſhall then appeare, when all things are heard, which they haue to alleage againſt the outward receiued Orders of this Church. Which in as much as themſelues doe compare vnto *Mint and Comin*, granting them to be no part of thoſe things, which in the matter of Politie are weightier, wee hope that for ſmall things their ſtriſe will neither bee earneſt nor long. The ſifting of that, which is obiected againſt the Orders of the Church in particular, doth not belong vnto this place. Heere wee are to diſcuſſe onely thoſe generall exceptions, which haue beene taken at any time againſt them. Firſt therefore, to the end that their nature and vſe, whereunto they ſerue, may plainly appeare, and ſo afterwards their qualitie the better bee diſcerned; wee are to note, that in euery grand or maine publike dutie, which God requireth at the hands of his Church, there is, beſides that matter and forme wherein the eſſence thereof conſiſteth, a certaine outward faſhion, whereby the ſame is in decent ſort adminiſtred. The ſubſtance of all religious actions is deliuered from God himſelfe in few words. For Example ſake in the Sacraments, *Vnto the Element let the Word be added, and they do both make a Sacrament*; ſaith Saint *Auguſtine*. Baptiſme is giuen by the Element of Water, and that preſcripe forme of words, which the Church of Chriſt doth vſe; the Sacrament of the Bodie and Bloud of Chriſt is adminiſtred in the Elements of Bread and Wine, if thoſe myſticall words be added thereunto. But the due and decent forme of adminiſtring thoſe holy Sacraments, doth require a great deale more. The end which

Mat.23.ver.23. The Doctrine and Diſcipline of the Church, as the weightieſt things, ought eſpecially to be looked vnto: but the Ceremonies alſo, as *Mint and Comin*, ought not to be neglected. *T.C.l.3.p.171.*

which is aimed at in ſetting downe the outward forme of all religious actions, is the edification of the Church. Now men are edified, when eyther their vnderſtanding is taught ſomewhat whereof in ſuch actions it behoueth all men to conſider; or when their hearts are moued with any affection ſuteable thereunto, when their minds are in any ſort ſtirred vp vnto that reuerence, deuotion, attention, and due regard, which in thoſe caſes ſeemeth requiſite. Becauſe therefore vnto this purpoſe not onely ſpeech, but ſundry ſenſible meanes beſides haue alwayes beene thought neceſſary, and eſpecially thoſe meanes which being obiect to the eye, the liueliеſt and the moſt apprehenſiue ſenſe of all other, haue in that reſpect ſeemed the fitteſt to make a deepe and ſtrong impreſſion; from hence haue riſen not onely a number of Prayers, Readings, Queſtionings, Exhortings, but euen of viſible ſignes alſo; which being vſed in performance of holy actions, are vndoubtedly moſt effectuall to open ſuch matter, as men when they know, & remember carefully, muſt needs be a great deale the better informed to what effect ſuch duties ſerue. Wee muſt not thinke but that there is ſome ground of reaſon euen in nature, whereby it commeth to paſſe, that no Nation vnder Heauen either doth or euer did ſuffer publike actions which are of waight, whether they be ciuill and temporall, or elſe ſpirituall and ſacred, to paſſe without ſome viſible ſolemnitie; the very ſtrangeneſſe whereof and difference from that which is common, doth cauſe popular eyes to obſerue and to marke the ſame. Words, both becauſe they are common, and doe not ſo ſtrongly mooue the phanſie of man, are for the moſt part but ſleightly heard: and therefore with ſingular wiſedome it hath beene prouided, that the deedes of men which are made in the preſence of Witneſſes, ſhould paſſe not onely with wordes, but alſo with certaine ſenſible actions, the memory whereof is farre more eaſie and durable then the memory of ſpeech can be. The things which ſo long experience of all Ages hath confirmed and made profitable, let not vs preſume to condemne as follies and toyes, becauſe we ſometimes know not the cauſe and reaſon of them. A wit diſpoſed to ſcorne whatſoeuer it doth not conceiue, might aske wherfore *Abraham* ſhould ſay to his ſeruant, *Put thy hand vnder my thigh & ſweare:* was it not ſufficient for his ſeruant to ſhew the Religion of an Oath, by naming the Lord God of Heauen and Earth, vnleſſe that ſtrange Ceremonie were added? In Cõtracts, Bargaines & Conueiances, a mans word is a token ſufficient to expreſſe his wil. *Yet this was the ancient manner in Iſrael concerning redeeming & exchanging to eſtabliſh all things; A man did plucke off his Shoo, and gaue it to his Neighbour; & this was a ſure Witneſſe in Iſrael.* Amongſt the Romans in their making of a Bondman free, was it not wondred wherefore ſo great adoe ſhould be made? The Maſter to preſent his Slaue in ſome Court, to take him by the hand, & not only to ſay in the hearing of the publike Magiſtrate, *I will that this man become free*, but after theſe ſolemne words vttered, to ſtrike him on the cheeke, to turne him round, the haire of his head to bee ſhaued off, the Magiſtrate to touch him thrice with a rod, in the end a cap & a white garment to be giuen him? To what purpoſe al this circumſtance? Amongſt the *Hebrewes* how ſtrange & in outward appearance almoſt againſt reaſon, that he which was minded to make himſelfe a perpetual ſeruant, ſhould not onely teſtifie ſo much in the preſence of the Iudge, but for a viſible token thereof haue alſo his eare bored thorow with a nawle? It were

Gen. 24. 2.

Ruth 4. 7.

Exod. 21. 6.

were an infinite labour to profecute theſe things ſo farre as they might be exemplified both in cioill and religious actions. For in both they haue their neceſſary vſe and force. a *Theſe ſenſible things which Religion hath allowed, are reſemblances framed according to things ſpiritually vnderſtood, whereunto they ſerue as a hand to leade, and a way to direct.* And whereas it may peraduenture be obiected, that to adde to religious duties ſuch rites & ceremonies as are ſignificant, is to inſtitute new Sacraments: ſure I am they will not ſay, that *Numa Pompilius* did ordaine a ſacrament; a ſignificant Ceremonie he did ordaine, in cõmanding the Prieſts b *to execute the worke of their diuine ſeruice with their hands, as farre as to the fingers couered; therby ſignifying that fidelitie muſt be defended, and that mens right hands are the ſacred ſeate thereof.* Againe, we are alſo to put them in minde, that themſelues doe not hold all ſignificant ceremonies for Sacraments; in as much as impoſition of hands they denie to be a Sacrament, & yet they giue thereunto a forcible ſignificatiõ. For concerning it their words are theſe: c *The partie ordained by this Ceremonie, was put in mind of his ſeparation to the worke of the Lord, that remembring himſelf to be taken as it were with the hand of God from amongſt others, this might teach him not to account himſelfe now his owne, nor to doe what himſelfe liſteth; but to conſider that God hath ſet him about a worke, which if he wil diſcharge and accompliſh, he may at the hands of God aſſure himſelfe of reward, and if otherwiſe, of reuenge.* Touching ſignificant Ceremonies, ſome of them are Sacraments, ſome as Sacraments onely. Sacraments are thoſe, which are ſignes and tokens of ſome generall promiſed grace, which alwaies really deſcendeth from God vnto the ſoule that duly receiueth them: other ſignificant tokens are onely as Sacraments, yet no Sacraments. Which is not our diſtinction but theirs. For cõcerning the Apoſtles impoſition of hands, theſe are their own words; *Manuum ſignum hoc & quaſi Sacramentum vſurparunt*; They vſed this ſigne, as it were a Sacrament.

a Dionyſ. p. 121. τὰ μὲν ἀνομοιότατα τῶν ἱερῶν τῶν ὄντων ἀνωτάτω ἀγάλματα ἡγήσατο, τὰ δὲ ἀνόμοια χειραγωγίαν ἔχοντα.

b Liu. l. 1. *Manu ad digitos vſq; ius uti rem diuinam facere; ſignificantes fidem tutandam, ſedendo, eius etiam in dextris ſacratam eſſe.*

c Eccleſ. diſci. fol. 51.

Fol. 25.

2. Concerning rites and ceremonies, there may be fault, either in the kind or in the number & multitude of them. The firſt thing blamed about the kind of ours is, that in many things wee haue departed from the ancient ſimplicity of Chriſt & his Apoſtles, we haue embraced more outward ſtatelineſſe, we haue thoſe orders in the exerciſe of Religion, which they who beſt pleaſed God & ſerued him moſt deuoutly, neuer had. For it is out of doubt, that the firſt ſtate of things was beſt, that in the prime of Chriſtian Religion, faith was ſoundeſt, the Scriptures of God were then beſt vnderſtood by all men, all parts of godlineſſe did then moſt abound: and therefore it muſt needes follow, that cuſtomes, lawes, and ordinances deuiſed ſince, are not ſo good for the Church of Chriſt; but the beſt way is to cut off later inuentions, and to reduce things vnto the ancient ſtate wherein at the firſt they were. Which Rule or Canon we hold to be either vncertaine, or at leaſt wiſe vnſufficient, if not both. For in caſe it be certayne, hard it cannot be for them to ſhew vs, where we ſhall find it ſo exactly ſet downe, that we may ſay without all controuerſie, *Theſe were the orders of the Apoſtles times, theſe wholly and only, neither fewer nor more then theſe.* True it is that many things of this nature be alluded vnto, yea, many things declared, & many things neceſſarily collected out of the Apoſtles writings. But is it neceſſary that all the orders of the Church which were then in vſe, ſhould be contained in their books? Surely, no. For if the tenor of their writings be well obſerued, it ſhall vnto any man eaſily appeare,

The firſt thing they blame in the kind of our ceremonies is, that we haue not in them ancient Apoſtolicall ſimplicitie, but a greater pompe and ſtatelines. *Lib. Eccleſ. diſci.* ✠ T. C. 3. p. 181

appeare, that no more of them are there touched, then were needfull to be ſpoken of ſometimes by one occaſion, and ſometime by another. Will they allow then of any other Records beſides? Well aſſured I am they are far enough from acknowledging that the Church ought to keep any thing as Apoſtolical, which is not found in the Apoſtles writings, in what other Records ſoeuer it be found. And therefore whereas S. *Auguſtine* affirmeth, that thoſe things which the whole Church of Chriſt doth hold, may well be thought to be Apoſtolicall, although they be not found written; this his iudgement they vtterly condemne. I wil not here ſtand in defence of S. *Auguſtines* opiniõ, which is, that ſuch things are indeed Apoſtolical; but yet with this exception, vnleſſe the Decree of ſome generall Councel haue haply cauſed them to be receiued: for of Poſitiue Lawes and orders receiued throughout the whole Chriſtian world, S. *Auguſtine* could imagine no other fountaine ſaue theſe two. But to let paſſe S. *Auguſtin*, they who condemne him herein, muſt needes confeſſe it a very vncertaine thing what the orders of the Church were in the Apoſtles times, ſeeing the Scriptures doe not mention them all, and other Records thereof beſides they vtterly reiect. So that in tying the Church to the orders of the Apoſtles times, they tye it to a maruellous vncertaine rule; vnleſſe they require the obſeruation of no orders but onely thoſe which are knowne to be Apoſtolicall by the Apoſtles owne Writings. But then is not this their rule of ſuch ſufficiẽcy, that we ſhould vſe it as a touchſtone to try the orders of the Church by for euer. Our end ought alwayes to bee the ſame; our wayes and meanes thereunto not ſo. The glory of God and the good of his Church was the thing which the Apoſtles aymed at, and therefore ought to be the marke whereat wee alſo leuell. But ſeeing thoſe rites and orders may bee at one time more, which at another are leſſe auaileable vnto that purpoſe: what reaſon is there in theſe things to vrge the ſtate of our onely age, as a pattern for all to follow? It is not, I am right ſure, their meaning, that we ſhould now aſſemble our people to ſerue God in cloſe and ſecret meetings; or that common Brookes or Riuers ſhould be vſed for places of Baptiſme; or that the Euchariſt ſhould be miniſtred after meat; or that the Cuſtome of Church-feaſting ſhould be renued; or that all kind of ſtanding prouiſion for the Miniſterie ſhould bee vtterly taken away, and their eſtate made againe dependent vpon the voluntary deuotion of men. In theſe things they eaſily perceiue how vnfit that were for the preſent, which was for the firſt Age conuenient enough. The faith, zeale, and godlineſſe of former times is worthily had in honour: but doth this proue that the orders of the Church of Chriſt muſt be ſtill the ſelfe-ſame with theirs, that nothing may be which was not then, or that nothing which then was may lawfully ſince haue ceaſed? They who recall the Church vnto that which was at the firſt, muſt neceſſarily ſet bounds & limits vnto their ſpeeches. If any thing haue beene receyued repugnant vnto that which was firſt deliuered, the firſt things in this caſe muſt ſtand, the laſt giue place vnto them. But where difference is without repugnancie, that which hath beene can be no preiudice to that which is. Let the ſtate of the people of God when they were in the houſe of bondage, and their manner of ſerning God in a ſtrange land, be compared with that which Canaan and Ieruſalem did affoord, and who ſeeth not what huge difference there was between them? In Egypt, it may be, they were right glad to take ſome corner

Tom. 7. de bapt. contra Donatiſt. lib. 5. cap. 23. T.C. l. 1 p. 31.

If this iudgement of Saint *Auguſtine* bee a good iudgement & ſound; then there be ſome things commanded of God, which are not in the Scripture; and therfore there is no ſufficient Doctrine contained in Scripture, whereby we may be ſaued. For all the Commandements of God and of the Apoſtles, are needefull for our ſaluation. *Vid. Epiſt. 118.*

corner of a poore Cottage, and there to serue God vpon their knees, peraduenture couered in dust and straw sometimes. Neither were they therefore the lesse accepted of God; but he was with them in all their afflictions, and at the length by working their admirable deliuerãce, did testifie that they serued him not in vaine. Notwithstanding in the very Desert they are no sooner possest of some little thing of their owne, but a Tabernacle is required at their hands. Being planted in the land of Canaan, and hauing *Dauid* to be their King, when the Lord had giuen him rest from all his enemies, it grieued his religious minde to consider the growth of his owne estate and dignity, the affaires of Religion continuing stil in the former manner: *Behold, now I dwell in an house of Cedar trees, and the Arke of God remaineth still within curtaines.* What hee did purpose, it was the pleasure of God that *Salomon* his sonne should performe, and performe it in manner sutable vnto their present, not their ancient estate and condition. For which cause *Salomon* writeth vnto the King of Tyrus: *The house which I build is great and wonderfull; for great is our God aboue all Gods.* Whereby it cleerely appeareth, that the orders of the Church of God may be acceptable vnto him, as well being framed sutable to the greatnesse and dignitie of later, as when they keep the reuerend simplicitie of ancienter times. Such dissimilitude therefore betweene vs and the Apostles of Christ, in the order of some outward things, is no argument of default.

1. Sam. 7. 2.

2. Chron 2. 5.

Our Orders and Ceremonies blamed, in that so many of them are the same which the Church of Rome vseth. *Rastal. Discipl. fol. 12. T. C. lib. 1. pag. 131.*

3. Yea, but wee haue framed our selues to the customes of the Church of Rome, our Orders and Ceremonies are Papisticall. It is espied that our Churchfounders were not so carefull as in this matter they should haue beene, but contented themselues with such discipline as they took from the Church of Rome. Their error we ought to reforme by abolishing all Popish orders. There must be no communion nor fellowship with Papists, *neither in Doctrine, Ceremonies, nor Gouernment.* It is not enough that we are diuided from the Church of Rome by the single wall of Doctrine, retayning as we doe part of their Ceremonies, and almost their whole Gouernement: but Gouernement or Ceremonies or whatsoeuer it be which is Popish, away with it. This is the thing they require in vs, the vtter relinquishment of all things Popish. Wherein to the end we may answer them according vnto their plaine direct meaning, and not take aduantage of doubtfull speech, whereby controuersies grow alwaies endlesse; their maine Position being this, that *nothing should be placed in the Church but what God in his Word hath cõmanded*, they must of necessity hold all for Popish, which the Church of Rome hath ouer and besides this. By Popish orders, Ceremonies and Gouernement they must therefore meane in euery of these so much, as the Church of Rome hath embraced without commandement of Gods Word: so that whatsoeuer such thing we haue, if the Church of Rome haue it also, it goeth vnder the name of those things that are Popish, yea, although it be lawfull, although agreeable to the Word of God. For so they plainly affirme, saying: *Although the formes & ceremonies which they* (the Church of Rome) *vsed were not vnlawful, & that they contained nothing which is not agreeable to the Word of God; yet notwithstanding neither the Word of God, nor reason, nor the examples of the eldest Churches both Iewish and Christian, do permit vs to vse the same form & ceremonies, being neither cõmanded of God, neither such as there may not as good as they*

T. C. lib. 1. p. 10.

T. C. lib. 1. p. 25.

T. C. lib 1. p. 131.

and

and rather better be eſtabliſhed. The queſtion therefore is, whether we may follow the Church of Rome in thoſe orders, rites and ceremonies, wherein we doe not thinke them blameable, or elſe ought to deuiſe others, and to haue no conformitie with them, no not as much as in theſe things? In this ſenſe and conſtruction therfore as they affirme, ſo we denie, that whatſoeuer is Popiſh we ought to abrogate. Their arguments to proue that generally all Popiſh orders and ceremonies ought to be cleane aboliſhed, are in ſumme theſe: *First, whereas we allow the iudgement of* S^t. Auguſtine, *that touching thoſe things of this kind which are not commanded or forbidden in the Scripture, we are to obſerue the cuſtome of the people of God, and decree of our forefathers: how can we retaine the cuſtomes and conſtitutions of the Papiſts in ſuch things, who were neither the people of God nor our forefathers?* Secondly, *although the formes and ceremonies of the Church of Rome were not vnlawfull, neither did containe any thing which is not agreeable to the word of God, yet neither the word of God, nor the example of the eldeſt Churches of God, nor reaſon do permit vs to vſe the ſame,* they being Heretikes, and ſo neere about vs, *and their orders being neither commanded of God, nor yet ſuch but that as good or rather better may be eſtabliſhed. It is againſt the word of God, to haue conformity with the Church of Rome in ſuch things, as appeareth, in that the wiſdome of God hath thought it a good way to keep his people from infection of Idolatry and ſuperſtition, by ſeuering them from Idolaters in outward ceremonies, and therfore hath forbidden them to doe things which are in themſelues very lawfull to be done. And further, wheras the Lord was careful to ſeuer them by ceremonies from other nations, yet was he not ſo careful to ſeuer them frō any, as from the Egyptians amongſt whom they liued, & frō thoſe nations which were next neighbours vnto thē, becauſe from them was the greateſt feare of infection.* So that following the courſe which the wiſdome of God doth teach, *it were more ſafe for vs to conforme our indifferēt ceremonies to the Turks which are far off, then to the Papiſts which are ſo neere. Touching the example of the eldeſt Churches of God, in one Councel it was decreed, that Chriſtians ſhould not deck their houſes with Bay leaues & green boughs, becauſe the Pagans did vſe ſo to do, & that they ſhould not reſt frō their labors thoſe dayes that the Pagans did, that they ſhould not keepe the firſt day of euery moneth as they did. Another Councel decreed, that Chriſtians ſhould not celebrate feaſts on the birth days of the Martyrs, becauſe it was the maner of the Heathen. O, ſaith* Tertullian, *better is the Religiō of the* Heathen: *for they vſe no ſolemnitie of the Chriſtiās, neither the Lords day, neither the Pentecoſt, and if they knew them, they would haue nothing to doe with them: for they would be afraid leſt they ſhould ſeeme Chriſtians: but we are not afraid to be called Heathen. The ſame* Tertul. *would not haue Chriſtians to ſit after they had praied, becauſe the Idolaters did ſo. Wherby it appeareth, that both of particular men and of Councels, in making or aboliſhing of ceremonies, heed had bin takē, that the Chriſtiās ſhould not be like th' Idolaters, no not in thoſe things which of thēſelues are moſt indifferent to be vſed or not vſed. The ſame conformity is not leſſe oppoſit vnto reaſon, firſt in as much as contraries muſt be cured by their cōtraries, & therfore Popery being Antichriſtianity, is not healed but by eſtabliſhmēt of orders therunto oppoſit. The way to bring a drunken mā to ſobriety, is to carry him as far from exceſſe of drinke as may be. To rectifie a crooked ſticke, we bend it on the contrary ſide, as far as it was at the firſt on that ſide from whence we draw it: and ſo it commeth in the end to a middle betweene both, which is perfect ſtraightneſſe.*

T.C.l.1.p.30.

T.C.l.1.p.131.

T.C.l.1.p.132.

Tom.2.Brent.73

Con. Africa. cap.27.

Lib. de Idolatria. He ſeemeth to mean the feaſt of Eaſter day, celebrated in the memory of our Sauiours reſurrection, and for that cauſe termed the Lords day.

Lib. de Anima.

Vtter vnconformitie thereof with the Church of Rome in theſe things, is the beſt and ſureſt policy which the Church can vſe. While we vſe their Ceremonies, they take occaſion to blaſpheme, ſaying that our Religion cannot ſtand by it ſelfe, vnleſſe it leane vpon the ſtaffe of their Ceremonies. They hereby conceiue great hope of hauing the reſt of their Popery in
T.C.l.3.p.178. *the end; which hope cauſeth them to bee more frozen in their wickednesſe. Neither is it without cauſe that they haue this hope, conſidering that which Maſter* Bvcer *noteth vpon the eighteenth of Saint* Matthew, *that where theſe things haue beene left, Popery hath returned; but on the other part in places which haue beene cleanſed of theſe*
T.C.l.3.p.179. *things, it hath not yet beene ſeene that it hath had any entrance. None make ſuch clamors for theſe Ceremonies, as the Papiſts, and theſe whom they ſuborne; a manifeſt token how much they triumph and ioy in theſe things. They breed griefe of minde in a number that are godly minded, and haue Antichriſtianity in ſuch deteſtation, that their minds*
T.C.l.3.p.180. *are martyred with the very ſight of them in the Church. Such godly brethren we ought not thus to grieue with vnprofitable Ceremonies, yea Ceremonies wherein there is not onely no profit, but alſo danger of great hurt that may grow to the Church by infection, which Papiſh Ceremonies are meanes to breed.* This in effect is the ſumme and ſubſtance of that which they bring by way of oppoſition againſt thoſe orders which we haue common with the Church of Rome, theſe are the reaſons wherewith they would prooue our Ceremonies in that reſpect worthy of blame.

That whereas they who blame vs in this behalfe, when reaſon euicteth that all ſuch Ceremonies are not to bee aboliſhed, make anſwere that when they condemn Popiſh Ceremonies, their meaning is of Ceremonies vnprofitable, or Ceremonies, in ſtead whereof as good or better may bee deuiſed: they cannot hereby get out of the bryers, but contradict and gainſay themſelues; in as much as their vſuall manner is to prooue, that Ceremonies vncommanded in the Church of God, and yet vſed in the Church of Rome, are for *this very cauſe* vnprofitable to vs, and not ſo good as others in their place would be.

4 Before wee anſwere vnto theſe things, wee are to cut off that, whereunto they from whom theſe obiections proceed, doe oftentimes flye for defence and ſuccour, when the force and ſtrength of their Arguments is elided. For the Ceremonies in vſe amongſt vs, being in no other reſpect retayned, ſauing onely for that to retayne them is to our ſeeming good and profitable, yea ſo profitable and ſo good, that if wee had either ſimply taken them cleane away, or elſe remoued them ſo as to place in their ſtead others, we had done worſe: the plaine and direct way againſt vs herein had beene only to prooue, that all ſuch Ceremonies as they require to be aboliſhed, are retayned by vs with the hurt of the Church, or with leſſe benefit then the aboliſhment of them would bring. But for as much as they ſaw how hardly they ſhould bee able to performe this; they tooke a more compendious way, traducing the Ceremonies of our Church vnder the name of being Popiſh. The cauſe why this way ſeemed better vnto them was, for that the name of Popery is more odious then very Paganiſme amongſt diuers of the more ſimple ſort; ſo whatſoeuer they heare named Popiſh, they preſently conceiue deepe hatred againſt it, imagining there can be nothing contayned in that name, but needes it muſt be exceeding deteſtable. The eares of the people they haue therefore filled with ſtrong clamour; *The Church of England is fraught with Popiſh Ceremonies: They that fauour the cauſe of reformation, maintaine nothing but the ſincerities of the Goſpell of* Iesvs Christ: *All ſuch as withſtand them, fight for the Lawes of his ſworne enemy, vphold the filthy relikes of Antichriſt, and are defenders of that which is Popiſh.* Theſe are the notes wherewith are drawne from the hearts of the multitude ſo many ſighes; with theſe tunes their mindes are exaſperated againſt

againſt the lawfull Guides and Gouernours of their ſoules; theſe are the voyces that fill them with general diſcontentment, as though the boſome of that famous Church wherein they liue, were more noyſome then any dungeon. But when the Authours of ſo ſcandalous incantations are examined and called to account, how they can iuſtifie ſuch their dealings; when they are vrged directly to anſwer, whether it bee lawfull for vs to vſe any ſuch Ceremonies as the Church of Rome vſeth, although the ſame be not commanded in the Word of God; being driuen to ſee that the vſe of ſome ſuch Ceremonies muſt of neceſſitie be granted lawfull, they goe about to make vs beleeue that they are iuſt of the ſame opinion, and that they onely thinke ſuch Ceremonies are not to be vſed when they are vnprofitable, or when as good or better may be eſtabliſhed. Which anſwer is both idle in regard of vs, and alſo repugnant to themſelues. It is, in regard of vs, very vaine to make this anſwer, becauſe they know that what Ceremonies we retayne common vnto the Church of Rome, wee therefore retayne them, for that wee iudge them to be profitable, and to be ſuch that others in ſtead of them would be worſe. So that when they ſaw that we ought to abrogate ſuch Romiſh Ceremonies as are vnprofitable, or elſe might haue other more profitable in their ſtead; they trifle and they beat the aire about nothing which toucheth vs, vnleſſe they meane that wee ought to abrogate all Romiſh Ceremonies, which in their iudgement haue either no vſe, or leſſe vſe then ſome other might haue. But then muſt they ſhew ſome commiſſion, whereby they are authorized to ſit as Iudges, and we required to take their iudgement for good in this caſe. Otherwiſe, their ſentences will not be greatly regarded, when they oppoſe their *Mee thinketh*, vnto the Orders of the Church of England: as in the queſtion about Surpleſſes one of them doth; *If we looke to the colour, blacke me thinketh is more decent; if to the forme, a garment down to the foot hath a great deale more comelineſſe in it.* If they thinke that we ought to proue the Ceremonies commodious which wee haue retayned, they doe in this point very greatly deceiue themſelues. For in all right and equitie, that which the Church hath receiued and held ſo long for good, that which publique approbation hath ratified, muſt carry the benefit of preſumption with it to bee accounted meet and conuenient. They which haue ſtood vp as yeſterday to challenge it of defect, muſt proue their challenge. If we being Defendants do anſwer, that the Ceremonies in queſtion are godly, comely, decent, profitable for the Church; their reply is childiſh and vnorderly to ſay, that we demand the thing in queſtion, and ſhew the pouertie of our cauſe, the goodneſſe whereof we are fayne to begge that our Aduerſaries would grant. For on our part this muſt bee the anſwer, which orderly proceeding doth require. The burthen of prouing doth reſt on them. In them it is friuolous to ſay, we ought not to vſe bad Ceremonies of the Church of Rome, and preſume all ſuch bad as it pleaſeth themſelues to diſlike, vnleſſe wee can perſwade them the contrarie. Beſides, they are herein oppoſite alſo to themſelues. For what one thing is ſo common with them, as to vſe the cuſtome of the Church of Rome for an argument to proue, that ſuch and ſuch Ceremonies cannot be good and profitable for vs, in as much as that Church vſeth them? Which vſuall kind of diſputing, ſheweth that they doe not diſallow onely thoſe Romiſh ceremonies which are vnprofitable, but count all vnprofitable which are Romiſh; that is to ſay, which haue been deuiſed by the Church of Rome, or which are vſed

T.C.lib.3.p.171. What an open vntruth is it, that this is one of our principles not to be lawfull to vſe the ſame ceremonies which the Papiſts did: when as I haue both before declared the contrary, and euen here haue expreſly added, that they are not to be vſed when as good or better may be eſtabliſhed.

Eccleſ. diſcipl. fol.100.

T.C.l.3.p.176. As for your often repeating that the ceremonies in queſtion are godly, comely, and decent: it is your old wont of demanding the thing in queſtion, and an vndoubted argument of your extreame pouerty.

T.C.l.3.p.174.

in that Church, and not prescribed in the Word of God. For this is the only limitation which they can vse sutable vnto their other Positions. And therefore the cause which they yeeld, why they hold it lawfull to retayne in *Doctrine* & in *Discipline* some things as good, which yet are common to the Church of Rome, is, for that those good things are perpetuall commandements, in whose place no other can come; but ceremonies are changeable. So that their iudgement in truth is, that whatsoeuer by the word of God is not changeable in the Church of Rome, that Churches vsing is a cause, why reformed Churches ought to change it, and not to thinke it good or profitable. And lest wee seeme to father any thing vpon them more then is properly their owne, let them reade euen their owne words, where they complaine, that *we are thus constreyned to be like vnto the Papists in any their Ceremonies*; yea they vrge that this cause, although it were alone, ought to moue them to whom that belongeth, to doe them away, *for as much as they are their ceremonies*, and that the B. of Salisbury doth iustifie this their complaint. The clause is vntrue which they adde concerning the B. of Salisbury; but the sentence doth shew, that we doe them no wrong in setting downe the state of the question betweene vs thus: Whether we ought to abolish out of the Church of England all such orders, rites, and ceremonies, as are established in the Church of Rome, and are not prescribed in the Word of God. For the affirmatiue whereof we are now to answere such proofes of theirs as haue beene before alleged.

T. C. 3 p. 187. And that this complaint of ours is iust, in that we are thus constrained to bee like vnto the Papists in any their ceremonies; and that this cause only ought to moue them to whom that belongeth, to doe theirs away, for as much as they are their ceremonies: the Reader may further see in the B. of Salisbury, who brings diuers proofes thereof.

That our allowing the customes of our fathers to be followed, is no proofe that we may not allow some customes which the Church of Rome hath, although we do not account of them as of our fathers.

5. Let the Church of Rome be what it will, let them that are of it be the people of God, and our fathers in the Christian faith, or let them be otherwise; hold them for Catholiques, or hold them for Heretiques, it is not a thing either one way or another in this present question greatly materiall. Our conformitie with them in such things as haue bin proposed, is not proued as yet vnlawful by all this. S. *Augustine* hath said, yea, and we haue allowed his saying, *That the customs of the people of God, & the decrees of our forefathers are to be kept, touching those things whereof the Scripture had neither one way nor other giuen vs any charge.* What then? Doth it here therefore follow, that they being neither the people of God, nor our forefathers, are for that cause in nothing to be followed? This consequent were good if so be it were granted, that only the customs of the people of God, and the decrees of our forefathers are in such case to be obserued. But then should no other kind of later laws in the Church be good, which were a grosse absurdity to thinke. S. *Augustines* speech therefore doth import, that where wee haue no diuine precept, if yet we haue the customs of the people of God, or a decree of our forefathers, this is a law and must bee kept. Notwithstanding it is not denyed, but that we lawfully may obserue the positiue constitutions of our owne Churches, although the same were but yesterday made by our selues alone. Nor is there any thing in this to proue, that the Church of England might not by law receiue orders, rites, or customes from the Church of Rome, although they were neither the people of God, nor yet our forefathers. How much lesse when we haue receiued from them nothing but that which they did themselues receiue from such, as we cannot denie to haue bin the people of God, yea such as either we must acknowledge for our owne forefathers, or else disdaine the race of Christ?

6. The

we muſt acknowledge for our owne forefathers, or elſe diſdaine the race of Chriſt?

6 The Rites and Ordes wherein we follow the Church of Rome, are of no other kinde then ſuch as the Church of Geneua it ſelfe doth follow them in. We follow the church of Rome in moe things; yet they in ſome things of the ſame nature about which our preſent controuerſie is: ſo that the difference is not in the kind, but in the number of Rites onely, wherein they and wee doe follow the Church of Rome. The vſe of Wafer-cakes, the cuſtome of Godfathers and Godmothers in Baptiſme, are things not commanded nor forbidden in the Scripture, things which haue bin of old, and are retained in the Church of Rome, euen at this very houre. Is conformitie with Rome in ſuch things a blemiſh vnto the Church of England, and vnto Churches abroade an ornament? Let them, if not for the reuerence they owe vnto this Church, in the bowels whereof they haue receiued I truſt that precious and bleſſed vigor, which ſhall quicken them to eternall life; yet at the leaſtwiſe for the ſingular affection which they doe beare towards others, take heede how they ſtrike, leſt they wound whom they would not. For vndoubtedly it cutteth deeper then they are aware of, when they pleade that euen ſuch Ceremonies of the Church of Rome, as containe in them nothing which is not of it ſelfe agreable to the Word of God, ought neuertheleſſe to bee aboliſhed, and that neither the Word of God, nor reaſon, nor the examples of the eldeſt Churches, doe permit the Church of Rome to bee therein followed. Heretikes they are, and they are our Neighbours. By vs and amongſt vs they leade their liues. But what then? Therefore no Ceremony of theirs lawfull for vs to vſe? We muſt yeeld and will, that none are lawfull, if God himſelfe be a precedent againſt the vſe of any. But how appeareth it that God is ſo? Hereby, they ſay, it doth appeare, in that *God ſeuered his people from the Heathens, but ſpecially from the Egyptians, and ſuch Nations as were neareſt Neighbours vnto them, by forbidding them to doe thoſe things, which were in themſelues very lawfull to be done, yea very profitable ſome and incommodious to be forborne; ſuch things it pleaſed God to forbid them, onely becauſe thoſe Heathens did them, with whom conformitie in the ſame things might haue bred infection. Thus in ſhauing, cutting, apparell wearing, yea in ſundry kinds of meates alſo, Swines fleſh, Conies, and ſuch like, they were forbidden to doe ſo, and ſo, becauſe the Gentiles did ſo. And the end why God forbad them ſuch things was, to ſeuer them, for feare of infection, by a great and an high wall from other Nations, as Saint* PAVL *teacheth.* The cauſe of more carefull ſeparation from the neareſt Nations, was the greatneſſe of danger to be eſpecially by them infected. Now, Papiſts are to vs as thoſe Nations were vnto Iſrael. Therefore if the wiſedome of God bee our guide, we cannot allow conformitie with them, no not in any ſuch indifferent Ceremonie. Our direct anſwer hereunto is, that for any thing here alleaged we may ſtill doubt, whether the Lord in ſuch indifferent Ceremonies as thoſe whereof we diſpute, did frame his people of ſet purpoſe vnto any vtter diſſimilitude, either with Egyptians, or with any other Nation elſe. And if God did not forbid them all ſuch indifferent Ceremonies, then our conformitie with the Church of Rome in ſome ſuch is not hitherto as yet diſproued, although Papiſts were vnto vs as thoſe Heathens were vnto Iſrael. *After the doings of the Land of Egypt, wherein you dwelt, yee ſhall not doe, ſaith the Lord; and after the manner of the Land of Canaan, whither I will bring you, ſhall yee not doe, neither walke in their Ordinances. Doe after my iudge-*

That the courſe which the wiſedome of God doth teach, maketh not againſt our conformitie with the Church of Rome in ſuch things.

T. C. lib. 1. pag. 89. & 1. 1.

Leuit. 18. 3.

Leuit. 19. 27.
Leuit. 19 19.
Deut. 22. 11.
Deut. 14. 7. & Leuit. 11.
Epheſ. 2. 14.

Leuit. 18. 3.

ments, & keepe my ordinances to walke therein: I am the Lord your God. The ſpeech is indefinite, *yee ſhall not be like them:* It is not generall, *yee ſhall not be like them in any thing, or like vnto them in any thing indifferent, or like vnto them in any indifferent Ceremonie of theirs.* Seeing therefore it is not ſet downe how farre the bounds of his ſpeech concerning diſſimilitude ſhould reach, how can any man aſſure vs, that it extendeth farther then to thoſe things only, wherein the Nations there mentioned were idolatrous, or did againſt that which the Law of God commandeth? Nay, doth it not ſeeme a thing very probable, that God doth purpoſely adde, *Doe after my iudgements*, as giuing thereby to vnderſtand that his meaning in the former ſentence was but to bar ſimilitude in ſuch things as were repugnant vnto the Ordinances, Lawes, and Statutes, which he had giuen? Egyptians and Cananites are for example ſake named vnto them, becauſe the cuſtomes of the one they had bin, and of the other they ſhould be beſt acquainted with. But that wherein they might not be like vnto either of them, was ſuch peraduenture as had bin no whit leſſe vnlawfull, although thoſe Nations had neuer bin. So that there is no neceſſitie to thinke that God for feare of infection by reaſon of neereneſſe, forbad them to bee like to the Cananites or the Egyptians, in thoſe things which otherwiſe had bin lawfull enough. For I would know what one thing was in thoſe Nations, and is here forbidden, being indifferent it ſelfe, yet forbidden only becauſe they vſed it. In the Lawes of Iſrael we find it written, *Ye ſhall not cut round the corners of your heads, neither ſhalt thou teare the tufts of thy beard.* Theſe things were vſual amongſt thoſe Nations, and in themſelues they are indifferent. But are they indifferent being vſed as ſignes of immoderate and hopeleſſe lamentation for the dead? In this ſenſe it is that the Law forbiddeth them. For which cauſe the very next words following are, *Ye ſhall not cut your fleſh for the dead, nor make any print of a marke vpon you; I am the Lord.* The like in *Leuiticus*, where ſpeech is of mourning for the dead, *They ſhall not make bald parts vpon their head, nor ſhaue off the lockes of their beard, nor make any cutting in their fleſh.* Againe, in *Deut. Ye are the children of the Lord your God, ye ſhall not cut your ſelues, nor make you baldneſſe betweene your eies for the dead.* What is this but in effect the ſame which the Apoſtle doth more plainely expreſſe, ſaying, *Sorrow not as they doe which haue no hope?* The very light of Nature it ſelfe was able to ſee herein a fault; that which thoſe Nations did vſe, hauing beene alſo in vſe with others, the ancient Roman Lawes doe forbid. That ſhauing therefore and cutting which the Law doth mention, was not a matter in it ſelfe indifferent, and forbidden only becauſe it was in vſe amongſt ſuch Idolaters as were Neighbours to the people of God; but to vſe it had beene a crime, though no other people or Nation vnder heauen ſhould haue done it ſauing only themſelues. As for thoſe Lawes concerning attire, *There ſhall no garment of linnen and woollen come vpon thee*, as alſo thoſe touching foode and diet, wherein *Swines fleſh* together with ſundry other meates are forbidden; the vſe of theſe things had bin indeede of it ſelfe harmeleſſe and indifferent: ſo that hereby it doth appeare, how the Law of God forbad in ſome ſpeciall conſideration, ſuch things as were lawfull enough in themſelues. But yet euen here they likewiſe faile of that they intend. For it doth not appeare that the conſideration in regard whereof the Law forbiddeth theſe things, was becauſe thoſe Nations did vſe them. Likely enough it is that the Cananites vſed to feed as well on Sheeps as on Swines fleſh; and therefore if the forbidding

Leuit.19.27.

Leuit.21.5.

Deut.14.1.

1.Theſ.4.13.

Leuit.19.19. Deut.22.11.

Deut.14.7. Leuit.11.

bidding of the later had no other reaſon then diſſimilitude with that people, they which of their owne heads alleage this for reaſon, can ſhew I thinke ſome reaſon more then we are able to finde, why the former was not alſo forbidden. Might there not bee ſome other myſtery in this prohibition then they thinke of? Yes, ſome other myſterie there was in it by all likelyhood. For what reaſon is there which ſhould but induce, and therefore much leſſe enforce vs to thinke, that care of diſſimilitude betweene the people of God and the Heathen Nations about them, was any more the cauſe of forbidding them to put on garments of ſundry ſtuffe, then of charging them withall not to ſow their fields with Meſline, or that this was any more the cauſe of forbidding them to eate Swines fleſh, then of charging them withall not to eate the fleſh of Eagles, Hawkes, and the like? Wherefore although the Church of Rome were to vs, as to Iſrael the Egyptians and Canaanites were of old; yet doth it not follow that the wiſedome of God without reſpect doth teach vs to erect betweene vs and them a partition wall of difference, in ſuch things indifferent as haue beene hitherto diſputed of.

Leuit. 19. 19. *Deut.* 14. *Leuit.* 11. *Epheſ.* 2. 14.

7 Neither is the example of the eldeſt Churches a whit more auaileable to this purpoſe. Notwithſtanding ſome fault vndoubtedly there is in the very reſemblance of Idolaters. Were it not ſome kinde of blemiſh to bee like vnto Infidels and Heathens, it would not ſo vſually bee obiected, men would not thinke it any aduantage in the cauſes of Religion, to bee able therewith iuſtly to charge their Aduerſaries as they doe. Wherefore to the end that it may a little more plainely appeare, what force this hath, and how farre the ſame extendeth: wee are to note how all men are naturally deſirous, that they may ſeeme neither to iudge, nor to doe amiſſe, becauſe euery error and offence is a ſtaine to the beautie of nature, for which cauſe it bluſheth thereat, but glorieth in the contrarie. From whence ariſeth, that they which diſgrace or depreſſe the credit of others, doe it either in both or in one of theſe. To haue beene in either directed by a weake and vnperfect Rule, argueth imbecillitie and imperfection. Men being either led by reaſon, or by imitation of other mens examples; if their perſons be odious whoſe example we chooſe to follow, as namely, if wee frame our opinions to that which condemned Heretiques thinke, or direct our actions according to that which is practiſed and done by them; it lyes as an heauy preiudice againſt vs, vnleſſe ſomewhat mightier then their bare example, did moue vs to thinke or doe the ſame things with them. Chriſtian men therefore hauing beſides the common light of all men ſo great help of heauenly direction from aboue, together with the Lamps of ſo bright examples as the Church of God doth yeeld, it cannot but worthily ſeeme reprochfull for vs, to leaue both the one and the other, to become Diſciples vnto the moſt hatefull ſort that liue, to doe as they doe, onely becauſe we ſee their example before vs, and haue a delight to follow it. Thus wee may therefore ſafely conclude, that it is not euill ſimply to concurre with the Heathens either in opinion or in action: and that conformity with them is only then a diſgrace, when either wee follow them in that they thinke and doe amiſſe, or follow them generally in that they doe, without other reaſon then only the liking we haue to the paterne of their example: which liking doth intimate a more vniuerſall approbation of them then is allowable. *Fauſtus* the Manichey therefore obiecting againſt the Iewes, that they for-

That the example of the eldeſt Churches is not herein againſt vs.

T. Cl. 1. p. 132. The Councels although they did not obſerue themſelues alwayes in making of decrees this Rule; yet haue kept this conſideration continually in making of their laws, that they would haue the Chriſtians differ from others in their Ceremonies.

forſooke the Idols of the Gentiles, but their Temples, & Oblations, & Altars, and Prieſthoods, and all kinde of miniſterie of holy things, they exerciſed euen as the Gentiles did, yea more ſuperſtitiouſly a great deale; againſt the Catholike Chriſtians likewiſe, that betweene them and the Heathens there was in many things little difference, *From them* (ſaith FAVSTVS) *ye haue learned to hold that one only God is the Author of all, their ſacrifices yee haue turned into feaſts of Charitie, their Idols into Martyrs, whom ye honor with the like religious offices vnto theirs, the Ghoſts of the dead ye appeaſe with wine and delicates, the feſtiuall dayes of the Nations ye celebrate together with them, and of their kind of life ye haue vtterly changed nothing.* S. *Auſtines* defence in behalfe of both is, that touching the matters of action, Iewes and Catholike Chriſtians were free from the Gentiles faultineſſe, euen in thoſe things which were obiected as tokens of their agreement with the Gentiles: and concerning their conſent in opinion, they did not hold the ſame with the Gentils, becauſe Gentils had ſo taught, but becauſe heauen and earth had ſo witneſſed the ſame to be Truth; that neither the one ſort could erre in being fully perſwaded thereof, nor the other but erre in caſe they ſhould not conſent with them. In things of their owne nature indifferent, if either Councels or particular men haue at any time with ſound iudgement miſliked conformitie betweene the Church of God and Infidels, the cauſe thereof hath beene ſomewhat elſe then onely affectation of diſſimilitude. They ſaw it neceſſarie ſo to doe, in reſpect of ſome ſpeciall accident, which the Church being not alwayes ſubiect vnto, hath not ſtill cauſe to doe the like. For example, in the dangerous dayes of triall, wherein there was no way for the Truth of Ieſus Chriſt to triumph ouer Infidelitie, but through the conſtancy of his Saints, whom yet a naturall deſire to ſaue themſelues from the flame, might peraduenture cauſe to ioyne with Pagans in externall cuſtomes, too farre vſing the ſame as a cloke to conceale themſelues in, and a miſt to darken the eyes of Infidels withall: for remedie hereof thoſe Lawes it might be were prouided, which forbad that Chriſtians ſhould decke their houſes with Boughes, as the Pagans did vſe to doe, or reſt thoſe Feſtiuall dayes whereon the Pagans reſted, or celebrate ſuch Feaſts as were, though not Heatheniſh, yet ſuch that the ſimpler ſort of Heathens might be beguiled in ſo thinking them. As for *Tertullians* iudgement, concerning the Rites and Orders of the Church; no man, hauing iudgement, can be ignorant how iuſt exceptions may be taken againſt it. His opinion touching the Catholike Church was as vnindifferent, as touching our Church the opinion of them that fauour this pretended reformation is. Hee iudged all them who did not Montanize, to be but carnally minded, he iudged them ſtill ouer-abiectly to fawne vpon the *Heathens*, and to curry fauour with *Infidels*. Which as the Catholike Church did well prouide that they might not do indeed, ſo *Tertullian* ouer-often through diſcontentment carpeth iniuriouſly at them, as though they did it euen when they were free from ſuch meaning. But if it were ſo, that either the iudgement of thoſe Councels before alleaged, or of *Tertullian* himſelfe againſt the Chriſtians, are in no ſuch conſideration to be vnderſtood as wee haue mentioned; if it were ſo, that men are condemned as well of the one as of the other, onely for vſing the Ceremonies of a Religion *contrary* vnto their owne, and

Tom. 6. cont. Fauſt. Manich. lib. 20. cap. 4.

T. C. l. 1. p. 132. Alſo it was decreed in another Councell, that they ſhould not decke their houſes with Bay leaues and greene Boughs, becauſe the Pagans did vſe ſo; and that they ſhould not reſt from their labour thoſe daies that the Pagans did, that they ſhould not keepe the firſt day of euery moneth as they did.

T. C. l. 3. p. 132. Tertul. ſaith, O ſaith he, better is the Religion of the Heathen: for they vſe no ſolemnity of the Chriſtians, neither the Lords day, neither, &c. but we are not afraid to be called Heathē.

T. C. l. 1. p. 133. But hauing ſhewed this in generall to be the Politie of God firſt, and of his people afterward, to put as much difference as can be commodiouſly betweene the people of God and others which are not, I ſhall not, &c.

and that *this cauſe* is ſuch as ought to preuaile no leſſe with vs then with them; ſhall it not follow, that ſeeing there is ſtill betweene our Religion and Paganiſme the ſelfe-ſame *contrariety*, therefore wee are ſtill no leſſe rebukeable, if we now decke our houſes with Boughes, or ſend New-yeares-gifts vnto our friends, or feaſt on thoſe dayes which the Gentiles then did, or ſit after prayer as they were accuſtomed? For ſo they inferre vpon the premiſes, that as great difference as commodiouſly may bee, there ſhould bee in all outward Ceremonies betweene the people of God, and them which are not his people. Againe, they teach, as hath beene declared, that there is not as great a difference as may bee betweene them, except the one doe auoid whatſoeuer Rites and Ceremonies vncommanded of God the other doth embrace. So that generally they teach, that the very difference of ſpirituall condition it ſelfe betweene the ſeruants of Chriſt and others, requireth ſuch difference in Ceremonies betweene them, although the one bee neuer ſo farre diſioyned in time or place from the other. But in caſe the people of God and *Belial* doe chance to bee neighbours; then as the danger of infection is greater, ſo the ſame difference, they ſay, is thereby made more neceſſary. In this reſpect as the Iewes were ſeuered from the Heathen, ſo moſt eſpecially from the Heathen neareſt them. And in the ſame reſpect wee, which ought to differ howſoeuer from the Church of Rome, are now, they ſay, by reaſon of our neareneſſe more bound to differ from them in Ceremonies then from *Turkes*. A ſtrange kinde of ſpeech vnto Chriſtian eares, and ſuch, as I hope, they themſelues doe acknowledge vnaduiſedly vttered. *We are not ſo much to feare infection from Turks as from Papiſts.* What of that? wee muſt remember that by conforming rather our ſelues in that reſpect to *Turks*, wee ſhould bee ſpreaders of a worſe infection into others, then any wee are likely to draw from Papiſts by our conformitie with them in Ceremonies. If they did hate as *Turks* doe, the Chriſtian; or as Canaanites of old did the Iewiſh Religion euen in groſſe; the circumſtance of locall neareneſſe in them vnto vs, might haply enforce in vs a dutie of greater ſeparation from them, then from thoſe other mentioned. But for as much as Papiſts are ſo much in Chriſt nearer vnto vs then *Turks*, is there any reaſonable man, trow you, but will iudge it meeter that our Ceremonies of Chriſtian Religion ſhould be Popiſh then Turkiſh, or Heathenish? Eſpecially conſidering that wee were not brought to dwell amongſt them (as Iſrael in Canaan) hauing not beene of them. For euen a very part of them wee were. And when God did by his good Spirit put it into our hearts, firſt, to reforme our ſelues, (whence grew our ſeparation) and then by all good meanes to ſeeke alſo their reformation; had wee not onely cut off their corruptions, but alſo eſtranged our ſelues from them in things indifferent; who ſeeth not how greatly preiudiciall this might haue beene to ſo good a cauſe, and what occaſion it had giuen them to thinke (to their greater obduration in euill) that through a froward or wanton deſire of innouation, wee did vnconſtrainedly thoſe things, for which conſcience was pretended? Howſoeuer the caſe doth ſtand, as Iuda had beene rather to chooſe conformitie in things indifferent with Iſrael, when they were neareſt oppoſites, then with the fartheſt remoued Pagans: So wee in like caſe, much rather with Papiſts then with Turks. I might adde further for more full and complete anſwer, ſo much concerning the large oddes betweene

tweene the caſe of the eldeſt Churches in regard of thoſe Heathens, and ours in reſpect of the Church of Rome, that very cauillation it ſelfe ſhould bee ſatisfied, and haue no ſhift to flie vnto.

That it is not our beſt policy for the eſtabliſhment of ſound Religion, to haue in theſe things no agreement with the Church of Rome being vnſound.

8. But that no one thing may detayne vs ouer-long, I returne to their reaſons againſt our conformitie with that Church. That extreme diſſimilitude which they vrge vpon vs, is now commended as our beſt and ſafeſt policie for eſtabliſhment of ſound Religion. The ground of which politique Poſition is, that *Euils muſt be cured by their contraries*; and therefore the cure of the Church, infected with the poyſon of Antichriſtianitie, muſt bee done by that which is thereunto as contrarie as may be. A medled eſtate of the orders of the Goſpell, and the ceremonies of Popery, is not the beſt way to baniſh Popery. We are contrariwiſe of opinion, that he which will perfectly recouer a ſicke, and reſtore a diſeaſed body vnto health, muſt not endeuour ſo much to bring it to a ſtate of ſimple contrariety, as of fit proportion in contrariety vnto thoſe euils which are to be cured. He that will take away extreme heat, by ſetting the body in extremity of cold, ſhall vndoubtedly remoue the diſeaſe, but together with it the diſeaſed too. The firſt thing therefore in skilfull cures, is the knowledge of the part affected; the next is of the euill which doth affect it; the laſt is not only of the kind, but alſo of the meaſure of contrary things whereby to remoue it. They which meaſure Religion by diſlike of the Church of Rome, thinke euery man ſo much the more ſound, by how much he can make the corruptions thereof to ſeeme more large. And therefore ſome there are, namely the Arrians in reformed Churches of Poland, which imagine the Canker to haue eaten ſo farre into the very bones and marrow of the Church of Rome, as if it had not ſo much as a ſound beliefe, no not concerning God himſelfe, but that the very beliefe of the Trinitie were a part of Antichriſtian corruption; and that the wonderfull prouidence of God did bring to paſſe, that the Biſhop of the Sea of Rome ſhould bee famous for his triple crowne; a ſenſible marke whereby the world might know him to bee that myſticall beaſt ſpoken of in the Reuelation, to be that great and notorious Antichriſt in no one reſpect ſo much, as in this that he maintaineth the doctrine of the Trinitiy. Wiſdome therefore and skill is requiſite to know, what parts are ſound in that Church, and what corrupted. Neither is it to all men apparant which complaine of vnſound parts, with what kind of vnſoundnes euery ſuch part is poſſeſſed. They can ſay, that in *Doctrine*, in *Diſcipline*, in *Prayers*, in *Sacraments*, the Church of Rome hath (as it hath in deede) very foule and groſſe corruptions: the nature whereof notwithſtanding becauſe they haue not for the moſt part exact skill and knowledge to diſcerne, they thinke that amiſſe many times which is not, and the falue of reformation they mightily call for; but where and what the ſores are which neede it, as they wote full little, ſo they thinke it not greatly materiall to ſearch. Such mens contentment muſt bee wrought by ſtratageme: the vſuall methode of art is not for them. But with thoſe that profeſſe more then ordinary and common knowledge of good from euill, with them that are able to put a difference betweene things naught, and things indifferent in the Church of Rome, we are yet at controuerſie about the manner of remouing that which is naught: whether it may not be perfectly helpt, vnleſſe that alſo which is indifferent bee cut off with it, ſo farre till no rite or ceremony remaine which

T.C.l.1.p.132. Common reaſon alſo doth teach, that contraries are cured by their contraries. Now Chriſtianity and Antichriſtianity, the Goſpel and Popery, be contraries, and therefore Antichriſtianity muſt be cured, not by it ſelfe, but by that which is (as much as may be) contrary vnto it.

the

the Church of Rome hath, being not found in the Word of God. If we thinke this too extreme, they reply, that to draw men from great exceſſe, it is not amiſſe though wee vſe them vnto ſomewhat leſſe then is competent; and that a crooked ſticke is not ſtraightned, vnleſſe it be bent as farre on the cleane contrary ſide, that ſo it may ſettle it ſelfe at the length in a middle eſtate of euenneſſe betweene both. But how can theſe compariſons ſtand them in any ſtead? When they vrge vs to extreme oppoſition againſt the Church of Rome, doe they meane wee ſhould be drawne vnto it onely for a time, and afterwards returne to a mediocritie? or was it the purpoſe of thoſe reformed Churches, which vtterly aboliſhed all Popiſh Ceremonies, to come in the end backe againe to the middle point of euenneſſe and moderation? Then haue we conceiued amiſſe of their meaning. For we haue alwaies thought their opinion to be, that vtter inconformitie with the Church of Rome was not an extremitie whereunto we ſhould be drawne for a time, but the very mediocritie it ſelfe wherein they meant we ſhould euer continue. Now by theſe compariſons it ſeemeth cleane contrarie, that howſoeuer they haue bent themſelues at firſt to an extreme contrarietie againſt the Romiſh Church, yet therein they will continue no longer, then onely till ſuch time as ſome more moderate courſe for eſtabliſhment of the Church may be concluded. Yea, albeit this were not at the firſt their intent, yet ſurely now there is great cauſe to leade them vnto it. They haue ſeene that experience of the former policy, which may cauſe the authors of it to hang downe their heads. When Germanie had ſtriken off that which appeared corrupt in the doctrine of the Church of Rome, but ſeemed neuertheleſſe in Diſcipline ſtill to retayne therewith very great conformitie: *France*, by that Rule of policy, which hath beene before mentioned, tooke away the Popiſh orders which *Germanie* did retayne. But proceſſe of time hath brought more light into the World; whereby men perceiuing that they of the Religion in *France* haue alſo retayned ſome Orders which were before in the Church of Rome, and are not commanded in the Word of God; there hath ariſen a ſect in *England*, which following ſtill the very ſelfe ſame Rule of policy, ſeeketh to reforme euen the French reformation, and purge out from thence alſo dregs of Poperie. Theſe haue not taken as yet ſuch roote that they are able to eſtabliſh any thing. But if they had, what would ſpring out of their ſtocke, and how farre the vnquiet wit of man might be carryed with rules of ſuch policy, God doth know. The tryall which we haue liued to ſee, may ſomewhat teach vs what poſteritie is to feare. But our Lord, of his infinite mercy, auert whatſoeuer euill our ſwaruings on the one hand or on the other may threaten vnto the ſtate of his Church.

T.C.l.1.p.132. If a man would bring a drunken man to ſobrietie, the beſt and neereſt way is to carry him as far from his exceſſe in drinke as may be: & if a man could not keep a meane, it were better to fault in preſcribing leſſe then he ſhould drinke, then to fault in giuing him more then he ought. As wee ſee to bring a ſticke which is crooked to be ſtraight, we doe not only bow it ſo farre vntill it come to be ſtraight, but we bend it ſo farre vntill we make it to be ſo crooked of the other ſide, as it was before of the firſt ſide, to this end that at the laſt it may ſtand ſtraight, and as it were in the mid-way betweene both the crookes.

9 That the Church of Rome doth hereby take occaſion to blaſpheme, and to ſay our religion is not able to ſtand of it ſelfe, vnleſſe it leane vpon the ſtaffe of their Ceremonies, is not a matter of ſo great moment, that it did need to be ob-

That wee are not to aboliſh our Ceremonies, either becauſe Papiſts vpbraid vs as hauing taken from them, or for that they are ſaid hereby to conceiue, I know not what, great hopes. *T.C.l.1.p.178.* By vſing of theſe Ceremonies, the Papiſts take occaſion to blaſpheme, ſaying, that our Religion cannot ſtand by it ſelfe, vnleſſe it leane vpon the ſtaffe of their Ceremonies.

ieſted,

iected, or doth deſerue to receiue anſwer. The name of blaſphemy in this place, is like the ſhoo of *Hercules* on a childs foot. If the Church of Rome do vſe any ſuch kind of ſilly exprobration, it is no ſuch vgly thing to the eare, that wee ſhould thinke the honor and credit of our religion to receiue therby any great wound. They which hereof make ſo perilous a matter, do ſeeme to imagin, that we haue erected of late a frame of ſome new Religion; the furniture whereof we ſhould not haue borrowed from our enemies, leſt they relieuing vs, might afterwards laugh and gibe at our pouerty: whereas in truth the ceremonies which we haue taken from ſuch as were before vs, are not things that belong to this or that ſect, but they are the ancient rites and cuſtomes of the Church of Chriſt; whereof our ſelues being a part, we haue the ſelfe-ſame intereſt in them which our Fathers before vs had, from whom the ſame are deſcended vnto vs. Againe, in caſe we had beene ſo much beholding priuately vnto them, doth the reputation of one Church ſtand by ſaying vnto another, *I need thee not?* If ſome ſhould be ſo vaine and impotent, as to marre a benefite with reproachfull vpbraiding, where at the leaſt they ſuppoſe themſelues to haue beſtowed ſome good turne; yet ſurely a wiſe bodies part it were not, to put out his fire, becauſe his fond and fooliſh neighbour, from whom he borrowed peraduenture wherewith to kindle it, might haply caſt him therewith in the teeth, ſaying, Were it not for me thou wouldeſt freeze, and not be able to heate thy ſelfe. As for that other argument deriued from the ſecret affection of Papiſts, with whom our conformity in certaine Ceremonies is ſaid to put them in great hope, that their whole Religion in time will haue re-entrance; and therefore none are ſo clamorous amongſt vs for the obſeruation of theſe ceremonies, as Papiſts, and ſuch as Papiſts ſuborne to ſpeake for them: whereby it clearely appeareth how much they reioyce, how much they triumph in theſe things; our anſwere hereunto is ſtill the ſame, that the benefit wee haue by ſuch ceremonies ouerweigheth euen this alſo. No man which is not exceeding partiall can well denie, but that there is moſt iuſt cauſe wherefore we ſhould be offended greatly at the Church of Rome. Notwithſtanding at ſuch times as we are to deliberate for our ſelues, the freer our mindes are from all diſtempered affections, the ſounder and better is our iudgement. When we are in a fretting moode at the Church of Rome, and with that angry diſpoſition enter into any cogitation of the orders and rites of our Church; taking particular ſurney of them, we are ſure to haue alwayes one eye fixed vpon the countenance of our enemies, and according to the blithe or heauy aſpect therof, our other eye ſheweth ſome other ſutable token eyther of diſlike or approbation towards our owne orders. For the rule of our iudgement in ſuch caſe being onely that of *Homer, This is the thing which our enemies would haue*; what they ſeeme contented with, euen for that very cauſe we reiect; and there is nothing but it pleaſeth vs much the better, if we eſpy that it gauleth them. Miſerable were the ſtate and condition of that Church, the waighty affaires whereof ſhould be ordered by thoſe deliberations, wherein ſuch an humour as this were predominant. We haue moſt heartily to thanke God therefore, that they amongſt vs, to whom the firſt conſultations of cauſes of this kind fell, were men which aiming at another marke, namely, the glory of God and the good of this his Church, tooke that which they iudged thereunto

T. C. l. 3. p. 179. To proue the Papiſts triumph and ioy in theſe things, I alleaged further that there are none which make ſuch clamors for theſe ceremonies, as the Papiſts and thoſe which they ſuborne.

ἀκὴν γνώσεται Πηλείων. Il. a.

vnto neceſſarie, not reiecting any good or conuenient thing, onely becauſe the Church of Rome might perhaps like it. If wee haue that which is meete and right, although they be glad, wee are not to enuie them this their ſolace; wee doe not thinke it a dutie of ours, to bee in euery ſuch thing their Tormentors. And whereas it is ſaid, that Poperie for want of this vtter extirpation hath in ſome places taken roote and flouriſhed againe, but hath not beene able to reeſtabliſh it ſelfe in any place, after proviſion made againſt it by vtter euacuation of all Romiſh Ceremonies; and therefore as long as we hold any thing like vnto them, wee put them in ſome more hope, then if all were taken away; as wee denie not but this may bee true, ſo being of two euils to chuſe the leſſe, we hold it better that the friends and fauourers of the Church of Rome, ſhould be in ſome kind of hope to haue a corrupt Religion reſtored, then both wee and they conceiue iuſt feare, leſt vnder colour of rooting out Poperie, the moſt effectual meanes to beare vp the ſtate of Religion, be remoued, and ſo a way made either for Paganiſme, or for extreme Barbaritie to enter. If deſire of weakning the hope of others ſhould turne vs away from the courſe wee haue taken; how much more the care of preuenting our owne feare, with-hold vs from that wee are vrged vnto? Eſpecially ſeeing that our owne feare wee know, but wee are not ſo certayne what hope the Rites and Orders of our Church haue bred in the hearts of others. For it is no ſufficient Argument therefore to ſay, that in maintayning and vrging theſe Ceremonies, none are ſo clamorous as Papiſts, and they whom Papiſts ſuborne; this ſpeech being more hard to iuſtifie then the former, and ſo their proofe more doubtfull then the thing it ſelfe, which they proue. He that were certayne that this is true, muſt haue marked who they be that ſpeake for Ceremonies; he muſt haue noted, who amongſt them doth ſpeake oftneſt, or is moſt earneſt; he muſt haue beene both acquainted thorowly with the Religion of ſuch, and alſo priuy what conferences or compacts are paſſed in ſecret betweene them and others; which kinds of notice are not wont to be vulgar and common. Yet they which alleage this, would haue it taken as a thing that needeth no proofe, a thing which all men know and ſee. And if ſo be it were granted them as true, what gayne they by it? Sundrie of them that be Popiſh, are eager in maintenance of Ceremonies. Is it ſo ſtrange a matter to find a good thing furthered by ill men of a ſiniſter intent and purpoſe, whoſe forwardneſſe is not therfore a bridle to ſuch as fauour the ſame cauſe with a better and ſincerer meaning? They that ſeeke, as they ſay, the remouing of all Popiſh Orders out of the Church, and reckon the ſtate of Biſhops in the number of thoſe orders, do (I doubt not) preſume that the cauſe which they proſecute, is holy. Notwithſtanding it is their owne ingenuous acknowledgement, that euen this very cauſe which they terme ſo often by an excellency, *The Lords cauſe is*, gratiſſima, *moſt acceptable vnto ſome which hope for prey and ſpoile by it, and that our Age hath ſtore of ſuch, and that ſuch are the very Sectaries of* DIONYSIVS *the famous Atheiſt*. Now if hereupon we ſhould vpbraid them with irreligious, as they doe vs with ſuperſtitious fauourers; if we ſhould

7. c. 3. p. 179. Thus they conceiuing hope of hauing the reſt of their Poperie in the end, it cauſeth them to be more frozen in their wickednesſe, &c. For not the cauſe but the occaſion alſo ought to bee taken away, &c. Although let the Reader iudge, whether they haue cauſe giuen to hope, that the taile of Popery yet remayning, they ſhall the eaſilier hale in the whole body after: conſidering alſo that Maſter *Bucer* noteth, that where theſe things haue beene left, there Poperie hath returned: but on the other part, in places which haue beene cleanſed of theſe dregs, it hath not beene ſeene that it hath had any entrance.

Eccleſ. diſc. 94

ſhould follow them in their owne kind of pleading, and ſay, that the moſt clamorous for this pretended reformation, are either Atheiſts, or elſe Proctors ſubborned by Atheiſts; the anſwere which herein they would make vnto vs, let them apply vnto themſelues, and there an end. For they muſt not forbid vs to preſume our cauſe in defence of our Church-orders, to bee as good as theirs againſt them, till the contrarie be made manifeſt to the World.

The griefe which, they ſay, godly Brethren conceiue, in regard of ſuch Ceremonies, as wee haue common with the Church of Rome. *T.C.l.3.p.180.* There bee numbers which haue Antichriſtianize in ſuch deteſtation, that they cannot without griefe of mind behold them. And afterwards, Such godly Brethren are not eaſily to be grieued, which they ſeeme to bee, when they are thus martyred in their minds, for Ceremonies, which (to ſpeake the beſt of them) are vnprofitable.

10 In the meane while ſorry we are, that any good and godly mind ſhould bee grieued with that which is done. But to remedie their griefe, lyeth not ſo much in vs as in themſelues. They doe not wiſh to bee made glad with the hurt of the Church: and to remooue all out of the Church, whereat they ſhew themſelues to be ſorrowfull, would be, as we are perſwaded, hurtfull, if not pernicious thereunto. Till they be able to perſwade the contrarie, they muſt and will, I doubt not, find out ſome other good meane to cheere vp themſelues. Amongſt which meanes the example of *Geneua* may ſerue for one. Haue not they the old Popiſh cuſtome of vſing God-fathers & God-mothers in Baptiſme; the old Popiſh cuſtom of adminiſtring the bleſſed Sacrament of the holy Euchariſt with wafercakes? Theſe things the godly there can digeſt. Wherefore ſhould not the godly here learn to doe the like, both in them and in the reſt of the like nature? Some further meane peraduenture it might be to aſſwage their griefe, if ſo be they did conſider the reuenge they take on them, which haue been, as they interpret it, the Workers of their continuance in ſo great griefe ſo long. For if the maintenance of Ceremonies be a corroſiue to ſuch as oppugne them; vndoubtedly to ſuch as maintayne them, it can be no great pleaſure, when they behold how that which they reuerence, is oppugned. And therefore they that iudge themſelues Martyrs, when they are grieued, ſhould thinke withall what they are when they grieue. For we are ſtill to put them in mind, that the cauſe doth make no difference; for that it muſt be preſumed as good at the leaſt on our part as on theirs, till it be in the end decided, who haue ſtood for truth, and who for error. So that till then the moſt effectuall medicine, and withall the moſt ſound, to eaſe their griefe, muſt not be (in our opinion) the taking away of thoſe things whereat they are grieued, but the altering of that perſwaſion, which they haue concerning the ſame. For this we therefore both pray & labour; the more becauſe we are alſo perſwaded, that it is but conceit in them to thinke, that thoſe Romiſh Ceremonies, whereof we haue hitherto ſpoken, are like leprous clothes, infectious vnto the Church, or like ſoft and gentle poyſons, the venome whereof being inſenſibly pernicious, worketh death, and yet is neuer felt working. Thus they ſay: but becauſe they ſay it onely, and the World hath not as yet had ſo great experience of their arte, in curing the diſeaſes of the Church, that the bare authoritie of their word ſhould perſwade in a cauſe ſo waightie; they may not thinke much if it be required at their hands to ſhew, Firſt, by what meanes ſo deadly infection can grow from ſimilitude betweene vs and the Church of Rome, in theſe things indifferent: Secondly, for that it were infinite, if the Church ſhould prouide againſt euery ſuch euill as may come to paſſe, it is not ſufficient that they

T.C.l.3.p.171. Although the corruptions in them ſtrike not ſtraight to the heart, yet as gentle poyſons they conſume by little and little.

they ſhew poſſibilitie of dangerous euent, vnleſſe there appeare ſome likelihood alſo of the ſame to follow in vs, except we preuent it. Nor is this enough, vnleſſe it be moreouer made plaine, that there is no good and ſufficient way of preuention, but by euacuating cleane, and by emptying the Church of euerie ſuch Rite and Ceremonie, as is preſently called in queſtion. Till this bee done, their good affection towards the ſafetie of the Church is acceptable, but the way they preſcribe vs to preſerue it by, muſt reſt in ſuſpenſe. And leſt hereat they take occaſion to turne vpon vs the ſpeech of the Prophet *Ieremie* vſed againſt Babylon, *Behold we haue done our endeuour to cure* the diſeaſes of Babylon, but ſhe through her wilfulnes doth reſt vncured: let them conſider into what ſtreights the Church might driue it ſelfe, in being guided by this their counſell. Their axiome is, that the ſound beleeuing Church of Ieſus Chriſt, may not bee like Hereticall Churches in any of thoſe indifferent things, which men make choice of, and doe not take by preſcript appointment of the Word of God. In the Word of God, the vſe of Bread is preſcribed, as a thing without which the Euchariſt may not be celebrated: but as for the kind of Bread, it is not denyed to be a thing indifferent. Being indifferent of it ſelfe, wee are by this axiome of theirs to auoid the vſe of vnleauened Bread in their Sacrament, becauſe ſuch Bread the Church of Rome being Hereticall vſeth. But doth not the ſelfe-ſame axiome barre vs euen from leauened Bread alſo, which the Church of the Grecians vſeth; the opinions whereof are in a number of things the ſame, for which we condemne the Church of Rome; and in ſome things erroneous, where the Church of Rome is acknowledged to be ſound; as namely in the Article of the holy Ghoſts proceeding? And leſt heere they ſhould ſay that becauſe the Greeke Church is farther off, and the Church of Rome nearer, wee are in that reſpect rather to vſe that which the Church of Rome vſeth not; let them imagine a reformed Church in the Citie of Venice, where a Greeke Church and a Popiſh both are. And when both theſe are equally neare, let them conſider what the third ſhall doe. Without either leauened or vnleauened Bread, it can haue no Sacrament: the Word of God doth tye it to neither; and their axiome doth exclude it from both. If this conſtraine them, as it muſt, to grant that their axiome is not to take any place, ſaue in thoſe things onely where the Church hath larger ſcope; it reſteth that they ſearch out ſome ſtronger reaſon then they haue as yet alleaged; otherwiſe they conſtraine not vs to thinke that the Church is tyed vnto any ſuch rule or axiome, no not then when ſhe hath the wideſt field to walke in, and the greateſt ſtore of choice.

Ier. 51. 9.

11 Againſt ſuch Ceremonies generally as are the ſame in the Church of England and of Rome, wee ſee what hath beene hitherto alleaged. Albeit therefore we doe not finde the one Churches hauing of ſuch things, to bee ſufficient cauſe why the other ſhould not haue them: neuertheleſſe in caſe it may bee prooued, that amongſt the number of Rites and Orders common vnto both, there are particulars, the vſe whereof is vtterly vnlawfull, in regard of ſome ſpeciall bad and noyſome qualitie; there is no doubt but wee ought to relinquiſh ſuch Rites and Orders, what freedome ſoeuer we haue to retayne the other ſtill. As therefore wee haue heard their generall exception againſt all thoſe things, which being not commanded in the Word of God, were firſt receiued in the Church of Rome, and from thence haue beene deriued into ours, ſo it followeth that now wee proceed

Their exception againſt ſuch Ceremonies as wee haue receiued from the Church of Rome, that Church hauing taken them from the Iewes.

vnto certaine kindes of them, as being excepted against not only for that they are in the Church of Rome, but are besides either Iewish or abused vnto Idolatrie, and so growne scandalous. The Church of Rome they say, being ashamed of the simplicitie of the Gospell, did almost out of all Religions take whatsoeuer had any faire and gorgeous shew, borrowing in that respect from the Iewes sundrie of their abolished Ceremonies. Thus by foolish and ridiculous imitation, all their Massing Furniture almost they tooke from the Law, left hauing an Altar and a Priest, they should want Vestments for their Stage; so that whatsoeuer we haue in common with the Church of Rome, if the same be of this kind we ought to remooue it. *Constantine the Emperour speaking of the keeping of the Feast of Easter, sayth, That it is an vnworthy thing to haue any thing common with that most spitefull company of the Iewes. And a little after he sayth, That it is most absurde and against reason, that the Iewes should vaunt and glory that the Christians could not keepe those things without their Doctrine. And in another place it is said after this sort; It is conuenient so to order the matter, that wee haue nothing common with that Nation. The Councell of Laodicea, which was afterward confirmed by the sixt generall Councell, decreed that the Christians should not take vnleauened Bread of the Iewes, or communicate with their Impietie.*

Theles. disci. fol. 98. And *T.C.l.*3.*p.*181. Many of these Popish Ceremonies fault by reason of the pompe in them; where they should be agreeable to the simplicitie of the Gospel of Christ crucified.

*T.C.l.*1.*p.*132. *Euseb.li.*3.*c.*17. *Socra.* 1.*lib.c.*9. *To.*1.*Concil. Laod.can.*38.

For the easier manifestation of truth in this point, two things there are which must bee considered, namely the causes wherefore the Church should decline from Iewish Ceremonies; and how farre it ought so to doe. One cause is, that the Iewes were the deadliest and spitefullest Enemies of Christianitie that were in the World, and in this respect their Orders so farre forth to be shunned, as wee haue alreadie set downe in handling the matter of Heathenish Ceremonies. For no Enemies being so venemous against Christ as Iewes, they were of all other most odious, and by that meane least to bee vsed as fit Church patternes for imitation. Another cause is the solemne abrogation of the Iewes Ordinances; which Ordinances for vs to resume, were to checke our Lord himselfe which hath disanulled them. But how farre this second cause doth extend, it is not on all sides fully agreed vpon. And touching those things whereunto it reacheth not, although there be small cause wherefore the Church should frame it selfe to the Iewes example, in respect of their persons which are most hatefull; yet God himselfe hauing bin the Author of their Lawes, herein they are (notwithstanding the former consideration) still worthy to bee honoured, and to bee followed aboue others, as much as the state of things will beare. Iewish Ordinances had some things naturall, and of the perpetuitie of those things no man doubteth. That which was positiue, wee likewise know to haue beene by the comming of Christ partly necessary not to be kept, and partly indifferent to bee kept or not. Of the former kind Circumcision and Sacrifice were. For this point *Stephen* was accused, and the Euidence which his accusers brought against him in iudgement was, *This man ceaseth not to speake blasphemous words against this holy place & the Law, for we haue heard him say that this Iesus of Nazaret shall destroy this place, & shall change the Ordinances that Moses gaue vs.* True it is that this Doctrine was then taught, which vnbeleeuers condemning for Blasphemie, did therein commit that which they did condemne. The Apostles notwithstanding from whom *Stephen* had receiued it, did not so teach the abrogation, no not of those things which

Acts 6.13.14.

were

were neceſſarily to ceaſſe, but that euen the Iewes being Chriſtians, might for a time continue in them. And therfore in Ieruſalem the firſt Chriſtian Biſhop not circumciſed was *Marke*, & he not Biſhop till the dayes of *Adrian* the Emperour, after the ouerthrow of Ieruſalem, there hauing beene fifteene Biſhops before him which were all of the circumciſion. The Chriſtian Iewes did think at the firſt not only themſelues, but the Chriſtian Gentiles alſo bound, and that neceſſarily, to obſerue the whole Law. There went forth certain of the Sect of Phariſes which did beleeue, & they comming vnto Antioch, taught that it was neceſſary for the Gentiles to be circumciſed, and to keep the Law of *Moſes*. Wherupon there grew diſſention, *Paul* & *Barnabas* diſputing againſt them. The determination of the Councell held at Ieruſalem concerning this matter, was finally this, *Touching the Gentiles which beleeue, we haue written and determined that they obſerue no ſuch thing.* Their proteſtation by Letters is, *For as much as we haue heard that certaine which departed from vs haue troubled you with words, and cumbred your mindes, ſaying, Yee muſt be circumciſed and keepe the Law; know that we gaue them no ſuch Commandement.* *Paul* therefore continued ſtill teaching the Gentiles, not only that they were not bound to obſerue the Lawes of *Moſes*, but that the obſeruation of thoſe Lawes which were neceſſarily to be abrogated, was in them altogether vnlawfull. In which point his Doctrine was miſ-reported, as though hee had euery where preached this, not only concerning the Gentiles, but alſo touching the Iewes. Wherefore comming vnto *Iames* and the reſt of the Clergie at Ieruſalem, they told him plainly of it, ſaying, *Thou ſeeſt Brother how many thouſand Iewes there are which beleeue, and they are all zealous of the Law. Now they are informed of thee, that thou teacheſt all the Iewes which are amongſt the Gentiles, to forſake Moſes, and ſayeſt that they ought not to circumciſe their Children, neither to liue after the cuſtomes.* And hereupon they gaue him counſell to make it apparant in the eyes of all men, that thoſe flying reports were vntrue, and that himſelfe being a Iew, kept the Law euen as they did. In ſome things therefore wee ſee the Apoſtles did teach, that there ought not to bee conformitie betweene the Chriſtian Iewes and Gentiles. How many things this Law of Inconformitie did comprehend, there is no need we ſhould ſtand to examine. This generall is true, that the Gentiles were not made conformable vnto the Iewes, in that which was neceſſarily to ceaſſe at the comming of Chriſt. Touching things poſitiue which might either ceaſſe or continue as occaſion ſhould require, the Apoſtles tendring the zeal of the Iewes, thought it neceſſary to bind euen the Gentiles for a time to abſtaine as the Iewes did, from things offred vnto Idols, from blood, from ſtrangled. Theſe Decrees were euery where deliuered vnto the Gentiles to be ſtraightly obſerued and kept. In the other matters where the Gentiles were free, and the Iewes in their owne opinion ſtill tyed, the Apoſtles Doctrine vnto the Iew was, *Condemne not the Gentile*; vnto the Gentile, *Deſpiſe not the Iew*: the one ſort they warned to take heed that ſcrupuloſitie did not make them rigorous, in giuing vnadviſed ſentence againſt their Brethren which were free; the other, that they did not become ſcandalous, by abuſing their Liberrie and Freedome to the offence of their weake Brethren which were ſcrupulous. From hence therfore two concluſions there are which may euidently be drawne; the firſt, that whatſoeuer conformitie of Poſitiue Lawes the Apoſtles did bring in betweene the Churches of Iewes & Gentiles, it was in thoſe things onely, which might either ceaſſe or continue a ſhorter or a

Vide Niceph. L. 3 c. 25. & Sulpit. Seuer. p. 149. in Edit. Plant.

Acts 15.

Acts 21. 25.

Acts 15. 24.

Acts 21. 20.

Acts 15. 28.

Acts 16. 4.

Rom. 14. 10.

longer time, as occaſion did moſt require; the ſecond, that they did not impoſe vpon the Churches of the Gentiles, any part of the Iewes Ordinances with bond of neceſſary and perpetuall obſeruation, (as we all both by doctrine and practiſe acknowledge) but only in reſpect of the conueniencie and fitneſſe for the preſent ſtate of the Church as then it ſtood. The words of the Councels decree concerning the Gentiles are, *It ſeemed good to the Holy Ghoſt and to vs, to lay vpon you no more burden, ſauing only thoſe things of neceſſitie, abſtinence from Idoll offerings, from ſtrangled, and bloud, and from fornication.* So that in other things poſitiue which the comming of Chriſt did not neceſſarily extinguiſh, the Gentiles were left altogether free. Neither ought it to ſeeme vnreaſonable, that the Gentiles ſhould neceſſarily bee bound and tyed to Iewiſh Ordinances, ſo farre forth as that Decree importeth. For to the Iew, who knew that their difference from other Nations which were Aliens and Strangers from God, did eſpecially conſiſt in this, that Gods people had poſitiue Ordinances giuen to them of God himſelfe, it ſeemed marueilous hard, that the Chriſtian Gentiles ſhould bee incorporated into the ſame Common-wealth with Gods owne choſen people, and be ſubiect to no part of his Statutes, more then onely the Law of Nature, which Heathens count themſelues bound vnto. It was an opinion conſtantly receiued amongſt the Iewes, that God did deliuer vnto the ſonnes of *Noah* ſeuen Precepts: namely, to liue in ſome forme of Regiment vnder, Firſt, publike Lawes: Secondly, to ſerue and call vpon the Name of God: Thirdly, to ſhunne Idolatry: Fourthly, not to ſuffer effuſion of bloud: Fifthly, to abhorre all vncleane knowledge in the fleſh: Sixtly, to commit no Rapine: Seuenthly, and finally, not to eate of any liuing Creature whereof the bloud was not firſt let out. If therefore the Gentiles would bee exempt from the Law of *Moſes*, yet it might ſeeme hard they ſhould alſo caſt off euen thoſe things poſitiue which were obſerued before *Moſes*, and which were not of the ſame kinde with Lawes that were neceſſarily to ceaſſe. And peraduenture hereupon the Councell ſaw it expedient to determine, that the Gentiles ſhould according vnto the third, the ſeuenth, and the fift of thoſe Precepts, abſtaine from things ſacrificed vnto Idols, from ſtrangled and bloud, and from fornication. The reſt the Gentiles did of their owne accord obſerue, Nature leading them thereunto. And did not Nature alſo teach them to abſtaine from fornication? No doubt it did. Neither can we with reaſon thinke, that as the former two are poſitiue, ſo likewiſe this, being meant as the Apoſtle doth otherwiſe vſually vnderſtand it. But very Mariage within a number of Degrees, beeing not onely by the Law of *Moſes*, but alſo by the Law of the ſonnes of *Noah*, (for ſo they tooke it) an vnlawfull diſcouerie of nakedneſſe; this diſcouerie of nakedneſſe by vnlawfull Marriages, ſuch as *Moſes* in the Law reckoneth vp, I thinke it for mine owne part more probable to haue beene meant in the wordes of that Canon, then fornication according vnto the ſenſe of the Law of Nature. Wordes muſt bee taken according to the matter whereof they are vttered. The Apoſtles command to abſtaine from bloud. Conſtet this according to the Law of Nature, and it will ſeeme that Homicide only is forbidden. But conſtet it in reference to the Law of the Iewes about which the queſtion was, and it ſhall eaſily appeare to haue a cleane other ſenſe, and in any mans iudgement a truer, when wee expound it of eating, and not of ſhedding bloud. So if wee ſpeake of fornication, hee that knoweth no Law but onely the Law of Nature, muſt

Lib. qui Seder Olam inſcribitur

1 ריגין
2 ברכת שם
3 שא
4 שפטים ותרומים
5 גילוי ערוה
6 תגל
7 זאבר מין חי

Heb. 13. 4. 1. Cor. 5. 11. Gal. 5. 19.

Leuit. 18.

needes make thereof a narrower conſtruction, then he which meaſureth the ſame by a Law wherein ſundry kindes euen of coniugall copulation are prohibited as impure, vncleane, vnhoneſt. Saint *Paul* himſelfe doth terme inceſtuous Marriage fornication. If any doe rather thinke that the Chriſtian Gentiles themſelues through the looſe and corrupt cuſtome of thoſe times, tooke ſimple fornication for no ſinne, and were in that reſpect offenſiue vnto beleeuing Iewes which by the Law had beene better taught; our propoſing of another coniecture, is vnto theirs no preiudice. Some things therefore we ſee there were, wherein the Gentiles were forbidden to bee like vnto the Iewes; ſome things wherein they were commanded not to bee vnlike. Againe, ſome things alſo there were, wherein no Law of God did let, but that they might bee either like or vnlike, as occaſion ſhould require. And vnto this purpoſe *Leo* ſaith, *Apoſtolicall Ordinance (beloued) knowing that our Lord Ieſus Chriſt came not into this World to vndoe the Law, hath in ſuch ſort diſtinguiſhed the Myſteries of the Olde Teſtament, that certaine of them it hath choſen out to benefit Euangelicall knowledge withall, and for that purpoſe appointed that thoſe things which before were Iewiſh, might now bee Chriſtian cuſtomes.* The cauſe why the Apoſtles did thus conforme the Chriſtians, as much as might be, according to the patterne of the Iewes, was to reine them in by this meane the more, and to make them cleaue the better. The Church of Chriſt hath had in no one thing ſo many and ſo contrary occaſions of dealing as about Iudaiſme; ſome hauing thought the whole Iewiſh Law wicked and damnable in it ſelfe; ſome not condemning it as the former ſort abſolutely, haue notwithſtanding iudged it either ſooner neceſſary to be abrogated, or further vnlawfull to be obſerued then truth can beare; ſome of ſcrupulous ſimplicitie vrging perpetuall and vniuerſall obſeruation of the Law of *Moſes* neceſſarie, as the Chriſtian Iewes at the firſt in the Apoſtles times; ſome as Heretickes, holding the ſame no leſſe euen after the contrary determination ſet downe by conſent of the Church at Ieruſalem; finally, ſome being herein reſolute through meere infidelitie, and with open profeſt enmitie againſt Chriſt, as vnbeleeuing Iewes. To controule Slanderers of the Law and Prophets, ſuch as Marcionites and Manichees were, the Church in her Lyturgies hath intermingled with Readings out of the New Teſtament, Leſſons taken out of the Law and Prophets; whereunto *Tertullian* alluding, ſaith of the Church of Chriſt, *It intermingleth with Euangelicall and Apoſtolicall Writings, the Law and the Prophets; and from thence it drinketh in that Faith which with Water it ſealeth, clotheth with the Spirit, nouriſheth with the Euchariſt, with Martyrdome ſetteth forward.* They would haue wondered in thoſe times to heare, that any man being not a Fauourer of Hereſie, ſhould terme this by way of diſdaine, *mangling of the Goſpels and Epiſtles.* They which honor the Law as an Image of the Wiſdome of God himſelfe, are notwithſtanding to know that the ſame had an end in Chriſt. But what? Was the Law ſo aboliſhed with Chriſt, that after his Aſcention the Office of Prieſts became immediatly wicked, and the very name hateſull, as importing the exerciſe of an vngodly Function? No, as long as the glory of the Temple continued, and till the time of that finall deſolation was accompliſhed, the very Chriſtian Iewes did continue with their Sacrifices and other parts of legall ſeruice. That very Law therefore which our Sauiour was to aboliſh, did not *ſo ſoone* become vnlawfull to be obſerued as ſome imagine: nor was it afterwards vnlawfull *ſo far*, that the very name of Altar,

1. Cor. 5. 1.

Leo in ieiun. menſ ſept. Ser. 9

Tertull. de præſcript. aduerſ. hæret.

T. C. l. 3. p. 171. What an abuſing alſo is it to affirme, the manging of the Goſpels and Epiſtles to haue beene brought into the Church by godly and learned men? *T. C. l. 1. p. 216.* Seeing that the Office and Function of Prieſts was after our Sauiour Chriſts Aſcenſion naught and vngodly; the name whereby they were called which did exerciſe that vngodly Function, cannot bee otherwiſe taken then in the euill part.

Altar, of Prieſt, of Sacrifice it ſelfe, ſhuld be baniſhed out of the world. For though God do now hate Sacrifice, whether it be Heathenish or Iewiſh, ſo that wee cannot haue the ſame things which they had, but with impietie; yet vnleſſe there be ſome greater let then the onely euacuation of the Law of *Moſes*, the names themſelues may (I hope) be retained without ſinne, in reſpect of that proportion which things eſtabliſhed by our Sauiour haue vnto them, which by him are abrogated. And ſo throughout all the Writings of the ancient Fathers we ſee that the words which were doe continue; the only difference is, that whereas before they had a literall, they now haue a metaphoricall vſe, & are as ſo many notes of remembrance vnto vs, that what they did ſignifie in the letter, is accompliſhed in the truth. And as no man can depriue the Church of this liberty, to vſe names whereunto the Law was accuſtomed; ſo neither are we generally forbidden the vſe of things which the Law hath, though it neither command vs any particularity, as it did the Iewes a number; and the weightieſt which it did command them, are vnto vs in the Goſpell prohibited. Touching ſuch as through ſimplicitie of error did vrge vniuerſall and perpetuall obſeruation of the Law of *Moſes* at the firſt, we haue ſpoken already. Againſt Iewiſh Heretickes and falſe Apoſtles teaching afterwards the ſelfeſame, Saint *Paul* in euery Epiſtle commonly either diſputeth or giueth warning. Iewes that were zealous for the Law, but withall Infidels in reſpect of Chriſtianitie, and to the Name of Ieſus Chriſt moſt ſpitefull Enemies, did while they flouriſhed no leſſe perſecute the Church then Heathens. And after their eſtate was ouerthrowne, they were not that way ſo much to bee feared. Howbeit becauſe they had their Synagogues in euery famous Citie almoſt throughout the World, and by that means great oportunitie to withdraw from the Chriſtian Faith, which to doe they ſpared no labour; this gaue the Church occaſion to make ſundry Lawes againſt them. As in the Councell of Laodicea, *The Feſtiuall Preſents which Iewes or Heretickes vſe to ſend muſt not be receiued, nor Holy-dayes ſolemnized in their company.* Againe, *From the Iewes men ought not to receiue their vnleauened, nor to communicate with their Impieties.* Which Councell was afterwards indeed confirmed by the ſixt generall Councel. But what was the true ſenſe or meaning both of the one and the other? Were Chriſtians here forbidden to communicate in vnleauened Bread, becauſe the Iewes did ſo being Enemies of the Church? He which attentiuely ſhall weigh the words, will ſuſpect that they rather forbid communion with Iewes, then imitation of them: much more, if with theſe two Decrees be compared a third in the Councell of Conſtantinople; *Let no man either of the Clergy or Laity eate the vnleauened of the Iewes, nor enter into any familiarity with them, nor ſend for them in ſickneſſe, nor take Phyſicke at their hands, nor as much as goe into the Bath with them. If any doe otherwiſe, being a Cleargie man, let him bee depoſed; if being a Lay perſon, let Excommunication bee his puniſhment.* If theſe Canons were any Argument, that they which made them did vtterly condemne ſimilitude betweene the Chriſtians and Iewes, in things indifferent appertayning vnto Religion, either becauſe the Iewes were Enemies vnto the Church, or elſe for that their Ceremonies were abrogated; theſe Reaſons had beene as ſtrong and effectuall againſt their keeping the Feaſt of Eaſter on the ſame day the Iewes kept theirs, and not according to the cuſtome of the Weſt Church. For ſo they did from the firſt beginning till *Conſtantines* time. For in theſe two things the Eaſt and Weſt Churches did interchangeably both confront the Iewes, and concurre with them:

Concil. Laod. Can. 37. 38. T. C. l. 1. p. 131.

T. C. l. 3. p. 176.

Concil. Conſtantinop. 6. cap. 11.

them: the Weſt Church vſing vnleauened Bread, as the Iewes in their Paſſeouer did, but differing from them in the day whereon they kept the Feaſt of Eaſter; contrariwiſe the Eaſt Church celebrating the Feaſt of Eaſter on the ſame day with the Iewes, but not vſing the ſame kind of Bread which they did. Now if ſo be the Eaſt Church in vſing leuened Bread had done well, either for that the Iewes were enemies to the Church, or becauſe Iewiſh ceremonies were abrogated, how ſhould we thinke but that *Victor* the Biſhop of Rome (whom all indicious men do in that behalfe diſallow) did well to bee ſo vehement and fierce in drawing them to the like diſſimilitude for the Feaſt of Eaſter? Againe, if the Weſt Churches had in either of thoſe two reſpects affected diſſimilitude with the Iewes in the Feaſt of Eaſter, what reaſon had they to draw the Eaſterne Church herein vnto them, which reaſon did not enforce them to frame themſelues vnto it in the Ceremony of leauened Bread? Difference in Rites ſhould breede no Controuerſie betweene one Church and another: but if Controuerſie bee once bred, it muſt bee ended. The Feaſt of Eaſter being therefore litigious in the dayes of *Conſtantine*, who honored of all other Churches moſt the Church of Rome, which Church was the Mother from whoſe breſts he had drawne that food, which gaue him nouriſhment to eternall life; ſith agreement was neceſſary, and yet impoſſible, vnleſſe the one part were yeelded vnto; his deſire was that of the two the Eaſterne Church ſhould rather yeeld. And to this end he vſeth ſundry perſwaſiue ſpeeches. When *Stephen* the Biſhop of Rome going about to ſhew what the Catholike Church ſhould doe, had alleaged what the Heretikes themſelues did, namely that they receiued ſuch as came vnto them, and offered not to baptiſe them anew: S. *Cyprian* being of a contrary mind to him about the matter at that time in queſtion, which was, *Whether heretikes conuerted ought to be rebaptiſed, yea or no*, anſwered the allegation of Pope *Stephen* with exceeding great ſtomacke, ſaying, [a] *To this degree of wretchedneſſe the Church of God and Spouſe of Chriſt is now come, that her wayes ſhe frameth to the example of Heretikes, that to celebrate the Sacraments which heauenly inſtruction hath deliuered, light it ſelfe doth borrow from darkenes, & Chriſtians doe that which Antichriſts doe.* Now albeit *Conſtantine* haue done that to further a better cauſe, which *Cyprian* did to countenance a worſe, namely, the rebaptization of Heretickes; and haue taken aduantage at the odiouſneſſe of the Iewes, as *Cyprian* of Heretickes, becauſe the Eaſterne Church kept their Feaſt of Eaſter alwayes the fourteenth day of the Moneth as the Iewes did, what day of the weeke ſoeuer it fell; or howſoeuer *Conſtantine* did take occaſion in the handling of that cauſe to ſay, [b] *It is vnworthy to haue any thing common with that ſpitefull Nation of the Iewes*; ſhall euery motiue argument vſed in ſuch kind of conferences, be made a rule for others ſtill to conclude the like by, concerning all things of like nature, when as probable inducements may leade them to the contrary? Let both this and other allegations ſuteable vnto it, ceaſſe to barke any longer idlely againſt that truth, the courſe and paſſage whereof it is not in them to hinder.

a *Cypr. ad Pompei. lib. cont. epiſt. Stephani.*

b *Socr. eccleſiaſt. hiſt. lib. 5. cap. 21. Plerique in Aſia minore antiquitus 14. die menſis, nulla ratione diei Sabbati habita hoc feſtum obſeruarunt. Quod dum faciebant cum aliis qui aliam rationem in eodem feſto agendo ſequebantur, vſq; eò nequaquam diſſenſerunt, quod Victor Epiſcopus Romanus ſupra modum iracundiæ inſtantior tuo, omiſſis Aſiæ qui erant παροικιαις. Irenæus appellati excommunicauerit. Ob quod factum Irenæus Epiſcopus Lugduni in Victorem per epiſtolam, grauiter inuectus eſt. Euſeb. de vita Conſtant. lib. 3. cap. 17. Quid præſtabilius,*

quidue magis eſſe poterit, quàm vt hoc feſtum per quod ſpem immortalitatis nobis oſtentatam habemus, vno modo & ratione apud omnes integrè ſuccreque obſeruetur? At primum omnium indignum plane videbatur, vt ritum & conſuetudinem imitantes Iudæorum, (qui quotiam ſuæ ipſorum manus ſanguine) ſcelere pollauerunt, meritò, vt ſceleſti, cæteris omnibus vitare tenentur) illud feſtum ſanctiſſimum ageremus. In noſtrâ enim ſitum eſt poteſtate, vt illorum more relicto, ceteris ac magis ſacro inſtituto, (quod quidem vſq; à primâ paſſionis die Reſurrectionis) huius feſti celebrationem ad poſterorum ſeculorum memoriam propagamus. Nihil igitur ſit nobis cum Iudæorum [illegible]

Their exception againſt ſuch Ceremonies as haue beene abuſed by the Church of Rome, and are ſaid in that reſpect to bee ſcandalous.

12 But the weightieſt exception, and of all the moſt worthy to bee reſpected, is againſt ſuch kinde of Ceremonies, as haue beene ſo groſſely and ſhamefully abuſed in the Church of Rome, that where they remayne they are ſcandalous, yea they cannot chooſe but be ſtumbling blockes and grieuous cauſes of offence. Concerning this point therefore wee are firſt to note, what properly it is to bee ſcandalous or offenſiue; Secondly, what kinde of Ceremonies are ſuch; and Thirdly when they are neceſſarily for remedie thereof to be taken away, and when not. The common conceipt of the vulgar ſort is, whenſoeuer they ſee any thing which they miſlike and are angry at, to thinke that euery ſuch thing is ſcandalous, and that themſelues in this caſe are the men concerning whome our Sauiour ſpake in ſo fearefull manner, ſaying, *Whoſoeuer ſhall ſcandalize or offend any one of theſe little ones which beleeue in me* [that is, as they conſter it, whoſoeuer ſhall anger the meaneſt and ſimpleſt Artizan which carryeth a good minde, by not remouing out of the Church ſuch Rites and Ceremonies as diſpleaſe him] *better he were drowned in the bottome of the Sea.* But hard were the caſe of the Church of Chriſt if this were to ſcandalize. Men are ſcandalized when they are moued, led, and prouoked vnto ſinne. At good things euill men may take occaſion to doe euill; and ſo Chriſt himſelfe was a Rocke of offence in Iſrael, they taking occaſion at his poore eſtate, and at the ignominie of his Croſſe, to thinke him vnworthy the name of that great and glorious *Meſſias*, whome the Prophets deſcribe in ſuch ample and ſtately termes. But that which wee therefore terme offenſiue, becauſe it inuiteth men to offend, and by a dumbe kind of prouocation incourageth, moueth, or any way leadeth vnto ſinne, muſt of neceſſitie be acknowledged actiuely ſcandalous. Now ſome things are ſo euen by their very eſſence and nature, ſo that whereſoeuer they bee found, they are not, neither can be without this force of prouocation vnto euill; of which kind all examples of ſinne and wickedneſſe are. Thus *Dauid* was ſcandalous in that blondie act, whereby hee cauſed the Enemies of God to bee blaſphemous: thus the whole ſtate of Iſrael was ſcandalous, when their publike diſorders cauſed the Name of God to bee ill ſpoken of amongſt the Nations. It is of this kinde that *Tertullian* meaneth; *Offence or ſcandall, if I be not deceiued*, ſaith he, *is when the example not of a good but of an euill thing, doth ſet men forward vnto ſin. Good things can ſcandalize none ſaue onely euill minds*: good things haue no ſcandalizing nature in them. Yet that which is of it owne nature either good or at leaſt not euill, may by ſome accident become ſcandalous at certaine times, and in certaine places, and to certaine men, the open vſe thereof nenertheleſſe beeing otherwiſe without danger. The very nature of ſome Rites and Ceremonies therefore is ſcandalous, as it was in a number of thoſe which the Manichees did vſe, and is in all ſuch as the Law of God doth forbid. Some are offenſiue only through the agreement of men to vſe them vnto euill, and not elſe; as the moſt of thoſe things indifferent which the Heathens did to the ſeruice of their falſe gods; which another in heart condemning their Idolatry, could not doe with them in ſhew and token of approbation, without being guiltie of ſcandall giuen. Ceremonies of this kinde are eyther deuiſed at the firſt vnto euill; as the Ennomian Heretickes in diſhonour of the bleſſed Trinitie, brought in the laying on of water but once, to croſſe the cuſtome of the Church, which in Baptiſme did it thrice: or elſe hauing

Mat.18.6.

1.Pet.2.8.

2.Sam.12.14. Rom.2.24. Ezech.36.20.

Tertull.lib.de virgin.veland.

uing had a profitable vſe, they are afterwards interpreted & wreſted to the contrary; as thoſe Heretikes which held the Trinitie to be three diſtinct, not perſons, but natures, abuſed the Ceremonie of three times laying on water in Baptiſme, vnto the ſtrengthning of their Hereſie. The element of Water is in Baptiſme neceſſary: once to lay it on or twice is indifferent. For which cauſe *Gregory* making mention thereof, ſaith, *To dine an Infant either thrice or but once in Baptiſme, can be no way a thing reprouable, ſeeing that both in three times waſhing, the Trinitie of perſons: and in one, the vnitie of the God-head may be ſignified.* So that of theſe two Ceremonies, neither being hurtfull in it ſelfe, both may ſerue vnto good purpoſe; yet one was deuiſed, and the other conuerted vnto euill. Now whereas in the Church of Rome, certaine Ceremonies are ſaid to haue beene ſhamefully abuſed vnto euill, as the ceremony of croſſing at Baptiſme, of kneeling at the Euchariſt, of vſing Wafer-cakes, and ſuch like; the queſtion is, whether for remedy of that euill, wherein ſuch Ceremonies haue beene ſcandalous, and perhaps may be ſtil vnto ſome euen amongſt our ſelues, whom the preſence and ſight of them may confirme in that former error whereto they ſerued in times paſt, they are of neceſſity to be remoued. Are theſe or any other Ceremonies we haue common with the Church of Rome, ſcandalous and wicked in their very nature? This no man obiecteth. Are any ſuch, as haue been polluted from their very birth, and inſtituted euen at the firſt vnto that thing which is euill? That which hath beene ordained impiouſly at the firſt, may weare out that impietie in tract of time; and then what doth let, but that the vſe thereof may ſtand without offence? The names of our Moneths and of our Dayes, we are not ignorant from whence they came, and with what diſhonor vnto God they are ſaid to haue beene deuiſed at the firſt. What could be ſpoken againſt any thing more effectuall to ſtirre hatred, then that which ſometime the ancient Fathers in this caſe ſpeake? Yet thoſe very names are at this day in vſe throughout Chriſtendome, without hurt or ſcandall to any. Cleere and manifeſt it is; that things deuiſed by Heretikes, yea deuiſed of a very hereticall purpoſe euen againſt Religion, and at their firſt deuiſing worthy to haue beene withſtood, may in time grow meete to bee kept; as that cuſtome, the Inuenters whereof were the *Eunomian* Heretikes. So that cuſtomes once eſtabliſhed and confirmed by long vſe, being preſently without harme, are not in regard of their corrupt originall to be held ſcandalous. But concerning thoſe our Ceremonies which they reckon for moſt Popiſh, they are not able to auouch that any of them was otherwiſe inſtituted, then vnto good; yea, ſo vſed at the firſt. It followeth then that they all are ſuch, as hauing ſerued to good purpoſe, were afterward conuerted vnto the contrary. And ſith it is not ſo much as obiected againſt vs, that we retayne together with them the euill, wherewith they haue beene infected in the Church of Rome: I would demand who they are whom we ſcandalize, by vſing harmles things vnto that good end for which they were firſt inſtituted. Amongſt our ſelues that agree in the approbation of this kind of good vſe, no man will ſay that one of vs is offenſiue & ſcandalous vnto another.

Epiſt ad Leandrum Hiſp.

Hom. 11. de Paſch. *Idolatria conſtituendo in tantum homines occaeuerat, vt Solis, Lunæ, Martis atque Mercurij, Iouis, Veneris, Saturni, & diuerſi elementorum at Dæmonum appellationibus dies vocitarent, & luci tenebrarum nomen imponerent.* Beda de ratione temp. c. 4. *Octauus dies idem primus eſt, ad quem reditur, indeq; rurſus Hebdomada inchoatur. His nomina à Planetis Gentilitas indidit, habere ſe credentes à Sole Spiritum, à Luna Corpus, à Marte Sanguinem, à Mercurio Ingenium & Linguam, à Ioue Temperantiam, à Venere Voluptatem, à Saturno Tarditatem* Iſid. Hiſp. l. 5. Etymol. c. 30. *Dies dicti à Dijs, quorum nomina Romani quibuſdam ſyderibus conſecrarunt.*

As

As for the fauourers of the Church of Rome, they know how farre wee herein differ & diſſent from them; which thing neither we conceale, and they by their publike writings alſo profeſſe daily how much it grieueth them: ſo that of them there will not many riſe vp againſt vs, as witneſſes vnto the Inditement of ſcandall, whereby we might be condemned and caſt, as hauing ſtrengthned them in that euill wherwith they pollute themſelues in the vſe of the ſame Ceremonies. And concerning ſuch as withſtand the Church of England herein, & hate it becauſe it doth not ſufficiently ſeeme to hate Rome, they (I hope) are far enough from being by this meane drawne to any kind of Popiſh error. The multitude therefore of them vnto whom we are ſcandalous through the vſe of abuſed Ceremonies, is not ſo apparant, that it can iuſtly be ſaid in generall of any one ſort of men or other, we cauſe them to offend. If it be ſo that now or then ſome few are eſpied, who hauing beene accuſtomed heretofore to the Rites and Ceremonies of the Church of Rome, are not ſo ſcowred of their former ruſt, as to forſake their ancient perſwaſion which they haue had, howſoeuer they frame themſelues to outward obedience of Lawes & Orders; becauſe ſuch may miſconſter the meaning of our Ceremonies, and ſo take them as though they were in euery ſort the ſame they haue beene, ſhall this be thought a reaſon ſufficient whereon to conclude, that ſome Law muſt neceſſarily be made to aboliſh al ſuch Ceremonies? They anſwere, that there is no Law of God which doth bind vs to retaine them. And S. *Pauls* rule is, that in thoſe things from which without hurt we may lawfully abſtaine, wee ſhould frame the vſage of our libertie with regard to the weakneſſe and imbecillitie of our brethren. Wherefore vnto them which ſtood vpon their owne defence, ſaying, *All things are lawfull vnto me*, he replyeth, *But all things are not expedient* in regard of others. All things are cleane, al meats are lawfull; but euill vnto that man that eateth offenſiuely. If for thy meates ſake thy brother be grieued, thou walkeſt no longer according to Charitie. Deſtroy not him with thy meate, for whom Chriſt dyed. Diſſolue not for foods ſake the worke of God. Wee that are ſtrong, muſt beare the imbecillitie of the impotent, and not pleaſe our ſelues. It was a weakneſſe in the Chriſtian Iewes, and a mayme of iudgement in them, that they thought the Gentiles polluted by the eating of thoſe meates, which themſelues were afraid to touch, for feare of tranſgreſſing the Law of *Moſes*; yea, hereat their hearts did ſo much riſe, that the Apoſtle had iuſt cauſe to feare, leſt they would rather forſake Chriſtianitie, then endure any fellowſhip with ſuch, as made no conſcience of that which was vnto them abominable. And for this cauſe mention is made of deſtroying the weake by meates, and of diſſoluing the worke of God, which was his Church, a part of the liuing ſtones whereof were beleeuing Iewes. Now thoſe weake brethren before mentioned are ſaid to be as the Iews were, and our Ceremonies which haue been abuſed in the Church of Rome, to be as the ſcandalous meats from which the Gentiles are exhorted to abſtayne in the preſence of Iewes, the feare of auerting them from Chriſtian faith. Therfore as Charity did bind them to refrain from that for their brethrēs ſake, which otherwiſe was lawful enough for them; ſo it bindeth vs for our brethrens ſake likewiſe to aboliſh ſuch Ceremonies, although we might lawfully elſe retaine them. But betweene theſe two caſes there are great odds. For neither are our weake brethren as the Iewes, nor

1. Cor. 6. 12.

Rom. 14.
Rom. 15. 1.

the

the Ceremonies which we vſe as the meates which the Gentiles vſed. The Iewes were knowne to be generally weake in that reſpect; wheras contrariwiſe the imbecillity of ours is not common vnto ſo many, that we can take any ſuch certain notice of them. It is a chance if here and there ſome one be found; and therefore ſeeing we may preſume men commonly otherwiſe, there is no neceſſity that our practice ſhould frame it ſelfe by that which the Apoſtle doth preſcribe to the Gentiles. Againe, their vſe of meates was not like vnto our Ceremonies; that being a matter of priuate action in common life, where euery man was free to order that which himſelfe did; but this a publike conſtitution for the ordering of the Church: and we are not to looke that the Church ſhould change her publike Lawes and Ordinances, made according to that which is iudged ordinarily and commonly fitteſt for the whole, although it chance that for ſome particular men the ſame be found inconuenient, eſpecially when there may be other remedy alſo againſt the ſores of particular inconueniences. In this caſe therfore where any priuate harme doth grow, we are not to reiect inſtruction, as being an vnmeete plaſter to apply vnto it; neither can we ſay that he which appointeth Teachers for Phyſicians in this kind of euill, is as if a man *would ſet one to watch a child all day long leſt he ſhould hurt himſelfe with a knife, whereas by taking away the knife from him, the danger is auoided, and the ſeruice of the man better imployed.* For a knife may be taken away from a childe, without depriuing them of the benefit thereof which haue yeeres and diſcretion to vſe it. But the Ceremonies which children doe abuſe, if we remoue quite and cleane, as it is by ſome required that we ſhould; then are they not taken from children onely, but from others alſo; which is as though becauſe children may perhaps hurt themſelues with kniues, we ſhould conclude, that therfore the vſe of kniues is to be taken quite and cleane euen from men alſo. Thoſe particular Ceremonies which they pretend to be ſo ſcandalous, we ſhall in the next Booke haue occaſion more throughly to ſift, where other things alſo traduced in the publike duties of the Church whereunto each of theſe appertaineth, are together with theſe to be touched, and ſuch reaſons to be examined as haue at any time bin brought eyther againſt the one or the other. In the meane while againſt the conueniencie of curing ſuch euils by inſtruction, ſtrange it is that they ſhould obiect the multitude of other neceſſary matters, wherein Preachers may better beſtow their time, then in giuing men warning not to abuſe Ceremonies; a wonder it is that they ſhould obiect this, which haue ſo many yeeres together troubled the Church with quarrels concerning theſe things, and are euen to this very houre ſo earneſt in them, that if they write or ſpeake publikely but fiue words, one of them is lightly about the dangerous eſtate of the Church of England in reſpect of abuſed Ceremonies. How much happier had it beene for this whole Church, if they which haue rayſed contention therein about the abuſe of Rites and Ceremonies, had conſidered in due time that there is indeed ſtore of matters fitter and better a great deale for Teachers to ſpend time and labour in? It is through their importunate and vehement aſſeuerations, more then through any ſuch experience which wee haue had of our owne, that wee are enforced to thinke it poſſible for one or other now and then, at leaſt-

Vide Harmon. l. 1. tit. 1. §. 28.

T.C. l. 3. p. 178.

T.C. l. 3. p. 177. It is not ſo conuenient that the Miniſter hauing ſo many neceſſary points to beſtow his time in, ſhould be driuen to ſpend it in giuing warning of not abuſing them, of which (although they were vſed to the beſt) there is proſit.

wiſe in the prime of the Reformation of our Church, to haue ſtumbled at ſome kind of Ceremonies. Wherein for as much as we are contented to take this vpon their credit, and to thinke it may be; ſith alſo they further pretend the ſame to be ſo dangerous a ſnare to their ſoules, that are at any time taken therein, they muſt giue our Teachers leaue for the ſauing of thoſe ſoules (bee they neuer ſo few) to intermingle ſometime with other more neceſſary things, admonition concerning theſe not vnneceſſary. Wherein they ſhould in reaſon more eaſily yeeld this leaue, conſidering that hereunto we ſhal not need to vſe the hundreth part of that time, which themſelues thinke very needfull to beſtow in making moſt bitter Inuectiues againſt the Ceremonies of the Church.

Our Ceremonies excepted againſt, for that ſome Churches reformed before ours, haue caſt out thoſe things, which wee, notwithſtanding their example to the contrary, doe retaine ſtill.

13 But to come to the laſt point of all, the Church of England is grieuouſly charged with forgetfulneſſe of her dutie, which dutie had beene to frame her ſelfe vnto the patterne of their example, that went before her in the Worke of Reformation. *For as the Churches of Chriſt ought to be moſt vnlike the Synagogue of Antichriſt in their indifferent Ceremonies; ſo they ought to be moſt like one vnto another, and for preſeruation of vnity to haue as much as poſſible may be all the ſame Ceremonies. And therefore* S. Paul *to eſtabliſh this order in the Church of Corinth, That they ſhould make their gatherings for the Poore vpon the firſt day of the Sabbath (which is our Sunday) alleageth this for a reaſon, that he had ſo ordained in other Churches.* Againe, *as children of one father, and ſeruants of one family, ſo all Churches ſhould not only haue one dyet in that they haue one Word, but alſo weare as it were one Liuery in vſing the ſame Ceremonies.* Thirdly, *this rule did the great Councel of Nice follow, when it ordained, that where certaine at the Feaſt of Pentecoſt did pray kneeling, they ſhould pray ſtanding; the reaſon whereof is added, which is, that one cuſtome ought to be kept throughout all Churches. It is true that the diuerſitie of Ceremonies ought not to cauſe the Churches to diſſent one with another: but yet it maketh moſt to the auoyding of diſſention, that there be amongſt them an vnitie, not onely in Doctrine, but alſo in Ceremonies. And therefore our forme of Seruice is to be amended, not only for that it commeth too neere that of the Papiſts, but alſo becauſe it is ſo different from that of the Reformed Churches.* Being asked to what Churches ours ſhould conforme it ſelfe, & why other Reformed Churches ſhould not as well frame themſelues to ours; their anſwere is, *That if there be any Ceremonies which wee haue better then others, they ought to frame themſelues to vs: if they haue better then wee, then wee ought to frame our ſelues to them: if the Ceremonies be alike commodious, the later Churches ſhould conforme themſelues to the firſt, as the yonger daughter to the elder. For as* S[t]. Paul *in the members, where all other things are equall, noteth it for a marke of honour aboue the reſt, that one is called before another to the Goſpel: ſo is it for the ſame cauſe amongſt the Churches. And in this reſpect he pincheth the Corinths, that not being the firſt which receiued the Goſpel, yet they would haue their ſeuerall manners from other Churches. Moreouer where the Ceremonies are alike commodious, the fewer ought to conforme themſelues vnto the moe. For as much therefore as all the Churches* (ſo farre as they know which plead after this manner) *of our confeſſion in Doctrine, agree in the abrogation of diuers things which wee retaine: our Church ought either to ſhew that they haue done euil, or elſe ſhe is found to be in fault that doth not conforme her ſelfe in that, which ſhe cannot denie to be well abrogated.*

T.C. lib. 1. p. 133.

1. Cor. 16. 1.

Can. 20.

The Canon of that Councell which is here cited, doth prouide againſt kneeling at Prayer on Sundayes, or for fifty dayes after Eaſter on any day, and not at the Feaſt of Pentecoſt onely.

T.C. lib. 1. pag. 182. 183.

Rom. 16. 5. 3.

1. Cor. 14. 37.

In

In this axiome, that preſeruation of peace and vnity amongſt Chriſtian Churches ſhould be by all good meanes procured, we ioyne moſt willingly and gladly with them. Neither deny we, but that to the auoyding of diſſention it auaileth much, that there be amongſt them an vnitie as well in Ceremonies as in Doctrine. The only doubt is about the maner of their vnity, how far Churches are bound to be vniforme in their ceremonies, & what way they ought to take for that purpoſe. Touching the one, the rule which they haue ſet downe is, that in ceremonies indifferent all Churches ought to be one of them vnto another as like as *poſſibly* they may be. Which *poſſibly* we cannot otherwiſe conſter, then that it doth require them to be euen as like as they may be, without breaking any Poſitiue Ordinance of God. For the ceremonies whereof we ſpeake, being matter of Poſitiue Law; they are indifferent, if God haue neither himſelfe commanded nor forbidden them, but left them vnto the Churches diſcretion. So that if as great vniformity be required as is poſſible in theſe things, ſeeing that the law of God forbiddeth not any one of them; it followeth, that from the greateſt vnto the leaſt they muſt be in euerie Chriſtian Church the ſame, except meere impoſſibilitie of ſo hauing it be the hindrance. To vs this opinion ſeemeth ouer-extreme & violent: we rather incline to thinke it a iuſt and reaſonable cauſe for any Church, the ſtate whereof is free and independent, if in theſe things it differ from other Churches, only for that it doth not iudge it ſo fit and expedient to be framed therein by the patterne of their example, as to be otherwiſe framed than they. That of *Gregorie* vnto *Leander* is a charitable ſpeech and a peaceable: *In vna fide nil officit Eccleſiæ ſanctæ conſuetudo diuerſa*; *Where the faith of the holy Church is one, a difference in cuſtomes of the Church doth no harme*. That of S. *Auguſtine* to *Caſſulanus* is ſomewhat particular, and toucheth what kind of ceremonies they are, wherein one Church may varie from the example of another without hurt: *Let the faith of the whole Church, how wide ſoeuer it haue ſpred it ſelfe, be alwaies one, although the vnitie of beliefe be famous for varietie of certaine ordinances, whereby that which is rightly beleeued, ſuffereth no kinde of let or impediment.* CALVIN goeth further, *As concerning rites in particular, let the ſentence of* AVGVSTINE *take place, which leaueth it free vnto all Churches to receiue their owne cuſtome. Yea, ſometime it profiteth and is expedient that there be difference, leſt men ſhould thinke that Religion is tyed to outward ceremonies. Alwaies prouided that there be not any emulation, nor that Churches delighted with nouelty, affect to haue that which others haue not.* They which grant it true that the diuerſity of ceremonies in this kind ought not to cauſe diſſention in Churches, muſt either acknowledge that they grant in effect nothing by theſe words; or if any thing be granted, there muſt as much be yeelded vnto, as we affirme againſt their former ſtrict Aſſertion. For if Churches be vrged by way of duty to take ſuch Ceremonies as they like not of; how can diſſenſion be auoided? will they ſay that there ought to be no diſſentiō, becauſe ſuch as are vrged, ought to like of that wherunto they are vrged? If they ſay this, they ſay iuſt nothing. For how ſhould any Church like to be vrged of dutie, by ſuch as haue no authority or power ouer it, vnto thoſe things which being indifferent, it is not of duty bound vnto them? It is their meaning, that there ought to be no diſſention, becauſe that which Churches are not bound vnto, no man ought by way of duty to vrge vpon them; and if any man doe, he ſtandeth in the ſight both of God & men moſt iuſtly blameable, as a

Reſpon. ad Mediol.

needleſſe Diſturber of the Peace of Gods Church, and an Author of Diſſention? In ſaying this, they both condemne their owne practice, when they preſſe the Church of England with ſo ſtrict a bond of dutie in theſe things, and they ouerthrow the ground of their practice, which is, that there ought to be in all kind of Ceremonies vniformitie, vnleſſe impoſſibilitie hinder it. For proofe whereof it is not enough to alleage what S. *Paul* did about the matter of collections, or what Noble men doe in the Liueries of their Seruants, or what the Councell of Nice did for ſtanding in time of Prayer on certaine dayes: becauſe though S. *Paul* did will them of the Church of Corinth euery man to lay vp ſomewhat by him vpon the Sunday, and to reſerue it in ſtore, till himſelfe did come thither, to ſend it vnto the Church of Ieruſalem for reliefe of the Poore there; ſignifying withall that hee had taken the like order with the Churches of Galatia; yet the reaſon which hee yeeldeth of this order taken both in the one place and the other, ſheweth the leaſt part of his meaning to haue beene that, whereunto his words are writhed. *Concerning collection for the Saints* (hee meaneth them of Ieruſalem) *as I haue giue order to the Church of Galatia, ſo likewiſe doe yee,* (ſaith the Apoſtle) *that is, in euery firſt of the Weeke let each of you lay aſide by himſelfe, and reſerue according to that which God hath bleſſed him with, that when I come, collections be not then to make; and that when I am come, whom you ſhall chooſe, them I may forthwith ſend away by Letters, to carrie your beneficence vnto Ieruſalem.* Out of which words, to conclude the dutie of vniformitie throughout all Churches in all manner of indifferent ceremonies, will be verie hard, and therefore beſt to giue it ouer. But perhaps they are by ſo much the more loth to forſake this argument, for that it hath, though nothing elſe, yet the name of Scripture, to giue it ſome kind of countenance more than the next of Liuerie-coats affordeth them. For neither is it anie mans dutie to cloath all his Children, or all his Seruants with one Weed; nor theirs to cloath themſelues ſo, if it were left to their owne iudgements, as theſe Ceremonies are left of God to the iudgement of the Church. And ſeeing Churches are rather in this caſe like diuers Families, than like diuers Seruants of one Familie; becauſe euerie Church, the State whereof is independent vpon any other, hath authoritie to appoint Orders for it ſelfe in things indifferent; therefore of the two we may rather inferre, that as one Familie is not abridged of libertie to be clothed in Friers Gray, for that another doth weare Clay-Colour; ſo neyther are all Churches bound to the ſelfe-ſame indifferent Ceremonies which it liketh ſundrie to vſe. As for that Canon in the Councell of Nice, let them but reade it and weigh it well. The ancient vſe of the Church throughout all Chriſtendome was, for fiftie dayes after Eaſter (which fiftie dayes were called Pentecoſt, though moſt commonly the laſt day of them which is Whitſunday bee ſo called) in like ſort on all the Sundayes throughout the whole Yeere their manner was to ſtand at Prayer: whereupon their meetings vnto that purpoſe on thoſe dayes, had the name of *Stations* giuen them. Of which cuſtome *Tertullian* ſpeaketh in this wiſe; *It is not with vs thought fit either to faſt on the Lords Day, or to pray kneeling. The ſame immunitie from faſting and kneeling we keepe all the time which is betweene the Feaſts of Eaſter and Pentecoſt.*

T.C.l.1.p.133. And therefore S. *Paul*, to eſtabliſh this order in the Church of Corinth, that they ſhould make their gatherings for the Poore vpon the firſt day of the Sabbath, (which is our Sunday) alleageth this for a reaſon, that he had ſo ordayned in other Churches.

1. Cor. 16. 1.

T.C.l.3.p.133. So that as children of one Father, & ſeruants of one Maſter, he will haue all the Churches not only haue one diet, in that they haue one word, but alſo weare as it were one liuerie in vſing the ſame Ceremonies.

T.C.l.p.133. This rule did the great Councell of Nice follow, &c.

Die Dominico & per omnem Pentecoſten, nec de geniculis adorare, & ieiunium ſoluere, De Cor. Militis.

This

This being therefore an order generally receiued in the Church; when ſome began to bee ſingular and different from all others, and that in a Ceremonie which was then iudged very conuenient for the whole Church euen by the whole, thoſe few excepted which brake out of the common pale; the Councell of Nice thought good to incloſe them againe with the reſt, by a Law made in this ſort: *Becauſe there are certaine which will needs kneele at the time of Prayer on the Lords day, and in the fiftie dayes after Eaſter, the Holy Synode iudging it meet that a conuenient cuſtome be obſerued throughout all Churches, hath decreed, that ſtanding we make our Prayers to the Lord.* Whereby it plainely appeareth, that in things indifferent, what the whole Church doth thinke conuenient for the whole, the ſame if any part doe wilfully violate, it may be reformed and inrayled againe by that generall Authoritie whereunto each particular is ſubiect, and that the Spirit of ſingularitie in a few ought to giue place vnto publike iudgement; this doth cleerely enough appeare: but not that all Chriſtian Churches are bound in euery indifferent Ceremonie to be vniforme; becauſe where the whole hath not tyed the parts vnto one and the ſame thing, they being therein left each to their owne choice, may either doe, as other doe or elſe otherwiſe, without any breach of dutie at all. Concerning thoſe indifferent things, wherein it hath beene heretofore thought good that all Chriſtian Churches ſhould bee vniforme, the way which they now conceiue to bring this to paſſe was then neuer thought on. For till now it hath beene iudged, that ſeeing the Law of God doth not preſcribe all particular Ceremonies which the Church of Chriſt may vſe, and in ſo great variety of them as may be found out, it is not poſſible that the Law of nature and reaſon ſhould direct all Churches vnto the ſame things, each deliberating by it ſelfe what is moſt conuenient: the way to eſtabliſh the ſame things indifferent throughout them all, muſt needs bee the iudgement of ſome iudicial authoritie drawne into one onely ſentence, which may be a rule for euery particular to follow. And becauſe ſuch authoritie ouer all Churches, is too much to be granted vnto any one mortall man; there yet remaineth that which hath beene alwaies followed, as the beſt, the ſafeſt, the moſt ſincere and reaſonable way, namely, the verdict of the whole Church orderly taken, and ſet downe in the aſſembly of ſome generall Councell. But to maintaine that all Chriſtian Churches ought for vnities ſake to be vniforme in all Ceremonies, and their to teach that the way of bringing this to paſſe muſt be by mutual imitation, ſo that where we haue better Ceremonies then others, they ſhal be bound to follow vs, and wee them where theirs are better: how ſhould wee thinke it agreeable and conſonant vnto reaſon? For ſith in things of this nature there is ſuch varietie of particular inducements, whereby one Church may be led to thinke that better, which another Church led by other inducements iudgeth to bee worſe: (For example, the Eaſt Church did think it better to keep Eaſter day after the manner of the Iewes, the Weſt Church better to doe otherwiſe; the Greeke Church iudgeth it worſe to vſe vnleauened bread in the Euchariſt, the Latine Church leauened: one Church eſteemeth it not ſo good to receiue the Euchariſt ſitting as ſtanding, another Church not ſo good ſtanding as ſitting; there being on the one ſide probable Motiues as well as on the other) vnleſſe they adde ſomewhat elſe to define more certainly what Ceremonies ſhall ſtand for beſt, in ſuch ſort

that all Churches in the World ſhall know them to be the beſt, and ſo know them, that there may not remain any queſtion about this point, we are not a whit the neerer for that they haue hitherto ſaid. They themſelues although reſolued in their owne iudgements what Ceremonies are beſt, the foreſeeing that ſuch as they are addicted vnto, be not all ſo cleerly and ſo incomparably beſt, but others there are or may bee at leaſtwiſe when all things are well conſidered as good, knew not which way ſmoothly to rid their hands of this matter, without prouiding ſome more certaine rule to be followed for eſtabliſhment of vniformitie in Ceremonies, when there are diuers kinds of equall goodneſſe; and therefore in this caſe they ſay, that the later Churches and the fewer ſhould conforme themſelues vnto the elder and the moe. Hereupon they conclude, that for as much as all the Reformed Churches (ſo farre as they know) which are of our confeſſion in Doctrine, haue agreed already in the abrogation of diuers things which we retaine: our Church ought eyther to ſhew that they haue done euill, or elſe ſhe is found to be in fault for not conforming her ſelfe to thoſe Churches, in that which ſhe cannot denie to be in them well abrogated. For the authoritie of the firſt Churches, (and thoſe they account to be the firſt in this cauſe which were firſt reformed) they bring the compariſon of yonger Daughters conforming themſelues in attire to the example of their elder Siſters; wherein there is iuſt as much ſtrength of reaſon as in the Liuery Coates before mentioned. S^t. *Paul* they ſay, noteth it for a marke of ſpeciall honour, that *Epænetus* was the firſt man in all Achaia which did imbrace the Chriſtian faith; after the ſame ſort he toucheth it alſo as a ſpeciall preeminence of *Iunias* and *Andronicus*, that in Chriſtianitie they were his Ancients; the Corinthians he pincheth with this demand, *Hath the Word of God gone out from you, or hath it lighted on you alone?* But what of all this? If any man ſhould thinke that alacritie and forwardneſſe in good things doth adde nothing vnto mens commendation; the two former ſpeeches of S^t. *Paul* might lead him to reforme his iudgement. In like ſort to take downe the ſtomacke of proud conceited men, that glory as though they were able to ſet all others to ſchoole, there can be nothing more fit then ſome ſuch words as the Apoſtles third ſentence doth containe; wherein he teacheth the Church of Corinth to know, that there was no ſuch great oddes betweene them and the reſt of their brethren, that they ſhould thinke themſelues to be Gold, and the reſt to be but Copper. He therefore vſeth ſpeech vnto them to this effect: *Men inſtructed in the knowledge of Ieſus Chriſt there both were before you, and are beſides you in the World; ye neyther are the Fountaine from which firſt, nor yet the Riuer into which alone the Word hath flowed.* But although as *Epænetus* was the firſt man in all Achaia, ſo Corinth had beene the firſt Church in the whole World that receiued Chriſt: the Apoſtle doth not ſhew that in any kind of things indifferent whatſoeuer, this ſhould haue made their example a Law vnto all others. Indeed the example of ſundry Churches for approbation of one thing doth ſway much; but yet ſtill as hauing the force of an example onely, and not of a Law. They are effectuall to moue any Church, vnleſſe ſome greater thing doe hinder; but they bind none, no not though they be many; ſauing onely when they are the Maior part of a generall Aſſembly, and then their voyces being moe in number, muſt ouer-ſway their iudgements who are fewer, becauſe in ſuch caſes the greater halfe

T.C.l.1.p.183. If the Ceremonies be alike commodious, the later Churches ſhould conforme themſelues to the firſt, &c. And againe, The fewer ought to conforme themſelues vnto the moe.

Rom.16.5.

1.Cor.14.36.

halfe is the whole. But as they ſtand out ſingle each of them by it ſelfe, their number can purchaſe them no ſuch Authoritie, that the reſt of the Churches being fewer, ſhould be therfore bound to follow them, and to relinquiſh as good Ceremonies as theirs for theirs. Whereas therefore it is concluded out of theſe ſo weake Premiſſes, that the retaining of diuers things in the Church of England, which other reformed Churches haue caſt out, muſt needs argue that we doe not well, vnleſſe wee can ſhew that they haue done ill; what needed this wreſt to draw out from vs an accuſation of forraine Churches? It is not proued as yet, that if they haue done well, our dutie is to follow them, and to forſake our owne courſe, becauſe it differeth from theirs, although indeed it be as well for vs euery way, as theirs for them. And if the proofes alleaged for confirmation hereof had beene ſound, yet ſeeing they lead no further then onely to ſhew, that where we can haue no better Ceremonies, theirs muſt be taken; as they cannot with modeſtie thinke themſelues to haue found out abſolutely the beſt which the wit of men may deuiſe, ſo liking their owne ſomewhat better then other mens, euen becauſe they are their owne, they muſt in equity allow vs to be like vnto them in this affection: which if they doe, they eaſe vs of that vncourteous burden, whereby we are charged either to condemne them, or elſe to follow them. They grant wee need not follow them, if our owne wayes alreadie be better. And if our own be but equal, the Law of common Indulgence alloweth vs to thinke them at the leaſt halfe a thought the better, becauſe they are our owne; which wee may very well doe, and neuer draw any Inditement at all againſt theirs, but thinke commendably euen of them alſo.

T.C.l.3.p.183. Our Church ought eyther to ſhew that they haue done euill, or elſe ſhe is found to be in fault that doth not conforme her ſelfe in that which ſhe cannot deme to be well abrogated.

14 To leaue reformed Churches therefore and their actions for him to iudge of, in whoſe ſight they are as they are, and our deſire is that they may euen in his ſight bee found ſuch, as wee ought to endeuour by all meanes that our owne may likewiſe bee: ſomewhat wee are enforced to ſpeake by way of ſimple Declaration, concerning the proceedings of the Church of England in theſe affaires; to the end that men whoſe mindes are free from thoſe partiall conſtructions, whereby the only name of difference from ſome other Churches is thought cauſe ſufficient to condemne ours, may the better diſcerne whether that wee haue done bee reaſonable, yea or no. The Church of England being to alter her receiued Lawes concerning ſuch Orders, Rites and Ceremonies, as had beene in former times an hinderance vnto Pietie and Religious Seruice of God, was to enter into conſideration firſt, that the change of Lawes, eſpecially concerning matter of Religion, muſt bee warily proceeded in. Lawes, as all other things humane, are many times full of imperfection, and that which is ſuppoſed behoofefull vnto men, prooueth oftentimes moſt pernicious. The wiſedome which is learned by tract of time, findeth the Lawes that haue beene in former Ages eſtabliſht, needfull in later to bee abrogated. Beſides, that which ſometime is expedient, doth not alwayes ſo continue: and the number of needleſſe Lawes vnabroliſht, doth weaken the force of them that are neceſſarie. But true withall it is, that alteration, though it be from worſe to better, hath in it inconueniences and thoſe waighties; vnleſſe it bee in ſuch Lawes as haue beene made vpon ſpeciall occaſions, which occaſions ceaſing, Lawes of that kind doe abrogate themſelues. But when we abrogate a Law as being ill made, the

A Declaration of the proceedings of the Church of England, for eſtabliſhment of things as they are.

the whole cauſe for which it was made ſtill remayning; do we not herein reuoke our very owne deed, and vpbraid our ſelues with folly, yea, all that were makers of it with ouer-ſight and with error? Further, if it be a Law which the cuſtome and continuall practice of many ages or yeeres hath confirmed in the mindes of men, to alter it, muſt needs be troubleſome and ſcandalous. It amazeth them, it cauſeth them to ſtand in doubt, whether any thing be in it ſelfe by nature either good or euill, and not all things rather ſuch as men at this or that time agree to account of them, when they behold euen thoſe things diſproued, diſanulled, reiected, which vſe had made in a manner naturall. What haue we to induce men vnto the willing obedience and obſeruation of Lawes, but the waight of ſo many mens iudgement, as haue with deliberate aduice aſſented thereunto; the waight of that long experience, which the world hath had thereof with conſent and good liking? So that to change any ſuch Law, muſt needs with the common ſort impaire and weaken the force of thoſe grounds, whereby all Lawes are made effectuall. Notwithſtanding, we doe not deny alteration of Lawes to be ſometimes a thing neceſſarie; as when they are vnnaturall, or impious, or otherwiſe hurtfull vnto the publike communitie of men, and againſt that good for which humane ſocieties were inſtituted. When the Apoſtles of our Lord and Sauiour were ordayned to alter the Lawes of Heathenish religion receiued throughout the whole world; choſen I grant they were (*Paul* excepted) the reſt ignorant, poore, ſimple, vn-ſchooled altogether and vnlettered men: howbeit extraordinarily indued with ghoſtly wiſedome from aboue before they euer vndertooke this enterpriſe, yea, their authoritie confirmed by miracle, to the end it might plainely appeare that they were the Lords Ambaſſadors, vnto whoſe Soueraigne power for all fleſh to ſtoope, for all the Kingdomes of the earth to yeeld themſelues willingly conformable in whatſoeuer ſhould be required, it was their duetie. In this caſe therefore their oppoſitions in maintenance of publique ſuperſtition againſt Apoſtolique endeuours, as that they might not condemne the wayes of their ancient Predeceſſors, that they muſt keepe *Religiones traditas*, the rites which from Age to Age had deſcended, that the ceremonies of Religion had beene euer accounted by ſo much holyer as elder; theſe and the like allegations in this caſe were vaine and friuolous. Not to ſtay longer therefore in ſpeech concerning this point, we will conclude, that as the change of ſuch Lawes as haue beene ſpecified is neceſſary, ſo the euidence that they are ſuch muſt be great. If we haue neither voyce from heauen that ſo pronounceth of them; neither ſentence of men grounded vpon ſuch manifeſt and cleere proofe, that they in whoſe hands it is to alter them, may likewiſe infallibly euen in heart and conſcience iudge them ſo; vpon neceſſitie to vrge alteration, is to trouble and diſturbe without neceſſitie. As for arbitrarie alterations, when Lawes in themſelues not ſimply bad or vnmeete are changed for better and more expedient, if the benefit of that which is newly better deuiſed be but ſmall, ſith the cuſtome of eaſineſſe to alter and change is ſo euill, no doubt but to beare a tolerable ſore, is better then to venter on a dangerous remedie. Which being generally thought vpon, as a matter that touched neerely their whole enterpriſe; whereas change was notwithſtanding concluded neceſſarie, in regard of the great hurt which the Church did receiue by a number of things then in

vſe

vſe, whereupon a great deale of that which had bin, was now to be taken away & remoued out of the Church; yet ſith there are diuers waies of abrogating things eſtabliſhed, they ſaw it beſt to cut off preſently ſuch things, as might in that ſort bee extinguiſhed without danger, leauing the reſt to bee aboliſhed by diſuſage through tract of time. And as this was done for the manner of abrogation: ſo touching the ſtint or meaſure thereof, Rites and Ceremonies, and other external things of like nature beeing hurtfull vnto the Church, eyther in reſpect of their qualitie, or in regard of their number; in the former there could be no doubt or difficulty what ſhould be done, their deliberatiō in the later was more hard. And therefore in as much as they did reſolue to remoue only ſuch things of that kind as the Church might beſt ſpare, retayning the reſidue; their whole counſell is in this point vtterly condemned, as hauing eyther proceeded from the blindnes of thoſe times, or from negligence, or from deſire of honour and glory, or from an erronious opinion that ſuch things might bee tolerated for a while, or if it did proceed (as they which would ſeeme moſt fauourable, are content to thinke it poſſible) from a purpoſe *partly the eaſilier to draw Papiſts vnto the Goſpell*, by keeping ſo many orders ſtill the ſame with theirs, *and partly to redeeme peace thereby, the breach whereof they might feare would enſue vpon more thorow alteration*, or howſoeuer it came to paſſe, the thing they did is iudged euill. But ſuch is the lot of all that deale in publike affaires, whether of Church or Common-wealth, that which men liſt to ſurmiſe of their doings being it good or ill, they muſt beforehand patiently arme their minds to indure. Wherefore to let go priuate ſurmiſes, whereby the thing in it ſelfe is not made either better or worſe; if iuſt & allowable reaſons might lead them to do as they did, then are all theſe cenſures fruſtrate. Touching ceremonies harmeles therefore in theſelues, & hurtfull only in reſpect of number: was it amiſſe to decree, that thoſe things which were leaſt needfull & newlieſt come ſhould be the firſt that were taken away; as in the abrogating of a number of Saints daies & of other the like cuſtomes it appeareth they did, till afterwards the forme of Common Prayer being perfited, Articles of ſound Religion & Diſcipline agreed vpon, Catechiſmes framed for the needful inſtruction of youth, Churches purged of things that indeed were burthenſome to the people, or to the ſimple offenſiue and ſcandalous, all was brought at the length vnto that wherein now we ſtand? Or was it amiſſe, that hauing this way eaſed the Church as they thought of ſuperfluity, they wēt on til they had pluckt vp euen thoſe things alſo, which had taken a great deale ſtronger & deeper root; thoſe things which to abrogate without conſtraint of manifeſt harme thereby ariſing, had beene to alter vnneceſſarily (in their iudgements) the ancient receiued cuſtome of the whole Church, the vniuerſall practice of the people of God, and thoſe very decrees of our Fathers, which were not only ſet downe by agreement of generall Councels, but had accordingly bin put in vre, and ſo continued in vſe till that very time preſent? True it is that neither Councels nor cuſtomes, be they neuer ſo ancient and ſo generall, can let the Church from taking away that thing which is hurtfull to be retained. Where things haue beene inſtituted, which being conuenient and good at the firſt, doe afterward in proceſſe of time waxe otherwiſe; we make no doubt but they may be altered, yea though Councels or Cuſtomes generall haue receiued them. And therefore it is but a needles kind

T.C.l.1.p.29. It may wel be, their purpoſe was by that temper of Popiſh Ceremonies with the Goſpell, partly the eaſilier to draw the Papiſts to the Goſpell, &c. partly to redeeme peace thereby.

T.C.l.3.f.33.

T.C.lib.3.p.30. kind of oppoſition which they make who thus diſpute, *If in thoſe things which are not expreſſed in the Scripture, that is to be obſerued of the Church, which is the cuſtome of the people of God & decree of our forefathers; then how can theſe things at any time be varied*, which heretofore haue beene once ordained in ſuch ſort? Whereto we ſay, that things ſo ordayned are to be kept, howbeit not neceſſarily any longer, then till there grow ſome vrgent cauſe to ordaine the contrarie. For there is not any Poſitiue Law of men, whether it be generall or particular, receiued by formall expreſſe conſent, as in Councels; or by ſecret approbation, as in cuſtomes it commeth to paſſe, but the ſame may be taken away if occaſion ſerue. Euen as we all know, that many things kept generally heretofore, are now in like ſort generally vnkept and aboliſhed euery where. Notwithſtanding till ſuch things be aboliſhed, what exception can there be taken againſt the iudge-

Aug.Ep.118. ment of S. *Auguſtine*, who ſaith, that, Of things harmeleſſe whatſoeuer there is, which the whole Church doth obſerue throughout the world, to argue for any mans immunitie from obſeruing the ſame, it were a point of moſt inſolent madnes? And ſurely, odious it muſt needs haue bin for one Chriſtian Church, to aboliſh that which all had receiued and held for the ſpace of many ages, and that without any detriment vnto Religion ſo manifeſt and ſo great, as might in the eyes of vnpartiall men appeare ſufficient to cleere them from all blame of raſh & inconſiderate proceeding, if in feruor of zeale they had remoued ſuch things. Whereas contrariwiſe ſo reaſonable moderation herein vſed, hath freed vs from being deſeruedly ſubiect vnto that bitter kind of obloquy, wherby as the Church of Rome doth vnder the color of loue towards thoſe things which be harmleſſe, maintaine extremely moſt hurtfull corruptions; ſo wee peraduenture might be vpbrayded, that vnder colour of hatred towards thoſe things that are corrupt, we are on the other ſide as extreme, euen againſt moſt harmeleſſe Ordinances. And as they are obſtinate to retaine that, which no man of any conſcience is able well to defend: ſo we might be reckoned fierce and violent, to teare away that, which if our owne mouthes did condemne, our conſciences would ſtorme and repine thereat. The Romans hauing baniſhed *Tarquinius* the Proud, & taken a ſolemne oath that they neuer would permit any man more to reigne, could not herewith content themſelues, or thinke that tyrannie was throughly extinguiſhed, till they had driuen one of their Conſuls to depart the Citie, againſt whom they found not in the world what to obiect, ſauing only that his name was *Tarquine*, and that the Common-wealth could not ſeeme to haue recouered perfect freedome, as long as a man of ſo dangerous a name was left remayning. For the Church of England to haue done the like, in caſting out Papall tyrannie and ſuperſtition, to haue ſhewed greater willingnes of accepting the very Ceremonies of the Turke, Chriſts profeſſed enemy, then of the moſt indifferent things which the Church of Rome approueth: to haue left not ſo much as the names which the Church of Rome doth giue vnto things innocent: to haue eiected whatſoeuer that Church doth make account of, be it neuer ſo harmeleſſe in it ſelfe, and of neuer ſo ancient continuance, without any other crime to charge it with, then onely that it hath beene the hap thereof to be vſed by the Church of Rome, and not to be commanded in the Word of God: this kinde of proceeding might haply haue pleaſed ſome few men, who hauing begunne ſuch a courſe themſelues,

T.C.lib.1.p.131. For indeede it were more ſafe for vs to conforme our indifferent Ceremonies to the Turkes which are far off, then to the Papiſts which are ſo neere.

ſelues muſt needes bee glad to ſee their example followed by vs. But the Almightie which giueth wiſdome, and inſpireth with right vnderſtanding whomſoeuer it pleaſeth him, he foreſeeing that which mans wit had neuer beene able to reach vnto, namely, what Tragedies the attempt of ſo extreme alteration would raiſe in ſome parts of the Chriſtian World, did for the endleſſe good of his Church (as we cannot chuſe but interpret it) vſe the bridle of his prouident reſtrayning hand, to ſtay thoſe eager affections in ſome, and to ſettle their reſolution vpon a courſe more calme and moderate; leſt as in other moſt ample and heretofore moſt flouriſhing Dominions it hath ſince falne out, ſo likewiſe if in ours it had come to paſſe, that the aduerſe part being enraged, and betaking it ſelfe to ſuch practices as men are commonly wont to embrace, when they behold things brought to deſperate extremities, and no hope left to ſee any other end, then onely the vtter oppreſſion and cleane extinguiſhment of one ſide; by this meane Chriſtendome flaming in all parts of greateſt importance at once, they all had wanted that comfort of mutuall reliefe, whereby they are now for the time ſuſtained (and not the leaſt by this our Church which they ſo much impeach) till mutuall combuſtions, bloud-ſheds and waſtes (becauſe no other inducement will ſerue) may enforce them through very faintnes, after the experience of ſo endleſſe miſeries, to enter on all ſides at the length into ſome ſuch conſultation, as may tend to the beſt re-eſtabliſhment of the whole Church of Ieſus Chriſt. To the ſingular good whereof it cannot but ſerue as a profitable direction, to teach men what is moſt likely to proue available, when they ſhall quietly conſider the tryall that hath beene thus long had of both kinds of Reformation, as well this moderate kind which the Church of England hath taken, as that other more extreme and rigorous which certaine Churches elſewhere haue better liked. In the meane while it may be, that ſuſpence of iudgement and exerciſe of charitie were ſafer and ſeemelier for Chriſtian men, then the hote purſuite of theſe Controuerſies, wherein they that are more fervent to diſpute, bee not alwayes the moſt able to determine. But who are on his ſide and who againſt him; our Lord in his good time ſhall reueale. And ſith thus farre we haue proceeded in opening the things that haue beene done, let not the principall doers themſelues be forgotten. When the ruines of the houſe of God (that houſe which conſiſting of religious Soules, is moſt immediatly the precious Temple of the Holy Ghoſt) were become not in his ſight alone, but in the eyes of the whole world ſo exceeding great, that very Superſtition began euen to feele it ſelfe too farre growne: the firſt that with vs made way to repaire the decayes thereof by beheading Superſtition, was King *Henry* the Eight. The Sonne and Succeſſor of which famous King, as we know, was *Edward* the Saint: in whom (for ſo by the euent wee may gather) it pleaſed God Righteous and Iuſt to let England ſee, what a bleſſing ſinne and iniquitie would not ſuffer it to enioy. Howbeit that which the Wiſeman hath ſayd concerning *Enoch* (whoſe dayes were, though many in reſpect of ours, yet ſcarce, as three to nine in compariſon of theirs with whom he lined) the ſame to that admirable Child moſt worthily may be applied, *Though He departed this World ſoone, yet fulfilled He much time.* But what enſued? That worke, which the one in ſuch ſort had begun, and the other ſo farre proceeded in, was in ſhort ſpace ſo ouerthrowne, as if almoſt it had

neuer

neuer beene: till such time as that God, whose property is to shew his mercies then greatest when they are neerest to be vtterly despaired of, caused in the depth of discomfort and darknesse a most glorious Starre to arise, and on her head settled the Crowne, whom himselfe had kept as a Lambe from the slaughter of those bloudy times, that the experience of his goodnes in her owne deliuerance, might cause her mercifull disposition to take so much the more delight in saving others, whom the like necessitie should presse. What in this behalfe hath beene done towards Nations abroad, the parts of Christendome most afflicted can best testifie. That which especially concerneth our selues in the present matter we treat of, is the state of reformed Religion, a thing at Her comming to the Crowne, euen raised as it were by miracle from the dead, a thing which we so little hoped to see, that euen they which beheld it done, scarcely beleeued their owne senses at the first beholding. Yet being then brought to passe, thus many yeeres it hath continued, standing by no other worldly meane but that one onely hand which erected it, that hand, which as no kind of imminent danger could cause at the first to with-hold it selfe, so neither haue the practices so many, so bloudie following since, beene euer able to make weary. Nor can we say in this case so iustly, that *Aaron* and *Hur* the Ecclesiasticall and Ciuill States haue sustained the hand which did lift it selfe to Heauen for them, as that Heauen it selfe hath by this hand sustained them, no aide or helpe hauing thereunto beene ministred for performance of the worke of reformation, other then such kind of helpe or aide as the Angell in the Prophet *Zacharie* speaketh of, saying, *Neither by an Army nor strength, but by my Spirit, saith the Lord of Hosts.* Which grace and fauour of Diuine assistance, hauing not in one thing or two shewed it selfe, nor for some few dayes or yeeres appeared, but in such sort so long continued, our manifold sinnes and transgressions striuing to the contrary; what can wee lesse thereupon conclude, then that God would at leastwise by tract of time teach the World, that the thing which he blesseth, defendeth, keepeth, so strangely, cannot choose but be of him? Wherefore if any refuse to beleeue vs disputing for the veritie of Religion established, let them beleeue God himselfe thus miraculously working for it, and wish life euen for euer and euer vnto that Glorious and Sacred Instrument whereby he worketh.

OF

OF THE LAWES OF ECCLESIASTICAL POLITIE.

The fifth Booke.

By

RICHARD HOOKER.

LONDON
Printed by W. STANSBY.

1622.

OF THE
LAWES
OF
ECCLESIASTICAL
POLITIE

The fifth Booke.

By
Richard Hooker.

LONDON
Printed by W. S[tansby].

1622.

TO THE MOST REVEREND FATHER IN GOD, MY VERY GOOD LORD, THE LORD ARCH-BISHOP OF CANTERBVRY His GRACE, *Primate and* Metropolitane of all ENGLAND.

MOST *Reuerend in Christ, the long continued, and more then ordinary fauour, which hitherto your Grace hath beene pleased to shew towards me, may iustly claime at my hands some thankefull acknowledgement thereof. In which consideration, as also for that I embrace willingly the auncient receiued course, and conueniencie of that Discipline, which teacheth inferiour degrees, and orders in the Church of God, to submit their writings to the same authoritie, from which their allowable dealings whatsoeuer, in such affaires, must receiue approbation, I nothing feare but that your accustomed clemency will take in good worth, the offer of these my simple and meane labours, bestowed for the necessary iustification of lawes heretofore made questionable, because, as I take it, they were not perfectly vnderstood. For surely, I cannot find any great cause of iust complaint, that good lawes haue so much been wanting vnto vs, as we to them. To seeke*

reformation of euill lawes is a commendable endeuor, but for vs the more neceſſary is a ſpeedy redreſſe of our ſelues. We haue on all ſides loſt much of our firſt feruencie towards God; and therefore concerning our owne degenerated waies, we haue reaſon to exhort with S. Gregorie, [illegible],

Greg. Naz. Let vs returne againe vnto that which wee ſometime were: *but touching the exchange of Lawes in practice, with Lawes in deuice, which, they ſay, are better for the ſtate of the Church, if they might take place, the farther we examine them, the greater cauſe we finde to conclude* [illegible], although we continue the ſame we are, the harme is not great. *Theſe feruent reprehenders of things eſtabliſhed by publique authoritie, are alwaies confident and bold ſpirited men. But their confidence for the moſt part riſeth from too much credit giuen to their owne wits, for which cauſe they are ſeldome free from errours. The errours which we ſeeke to reforme in this kind of men, are ſuch as both receiued at your owne hands their firſt wound, and from that time to this preſent, haue beene proceeded in with that moderation, which vſeth by patience to ſuppreſſe boldneſſe, and to make them conquer that ſuffer. Wherein conſidering the nature and kinde of theſe controuerſies, the dangerous ſequels whereunto they were likely to grow, and how many waies wee haue beene thereby taught wiſedome, I may boldly auerre concerning the firſt, that as the waightieſt conflicts the Church hath had, were thoſe which touched the head, the perſon of our Sauiour Chriſt, and the next of importance, thoſe queſtions, which are at this day betweene vs and the Church of Rome, about the actions of the body of the Church of God, ſo theſe which*

haue

haue lastly sprung vp for complements, rites and ceremonies of Church actions, are in truth for the greatest part such silly things, that very easinesse doth make them hard to bee disputed of in serious manner. Which also may seeme to be the cause, why diuers of the Reuerend Prelacie, and other most iudicious men, haue especially bestowed their paines about the matter of iurisdiction. Notwithstanding led by your Graces example, my selfe haue thought it conuenient to wade through the whole cause, following that method, which searcheth the truth by the causes of truth. Now if any maruaile, how a thing in it selfe so weak, could import any great danger, they must consider not so much how small the sparke is that flieth vp, as how apt things about it are to take fire. Bodies politike, being subiect as much at naturall to dissolution, by diuers meanes, there are vndoubtedly more states ouerthrowne through diseases bred within themselues, then through violence from abroad, because our nature is alwaies to cast a doubtfull and a more suspicious eye towards that, our which we know we haue least power; and therefore, the feare of externall dangers, causeth seuerall states to bee the more united; it is to all sorts a kind of bridle, it maketh vertuous minds watchfull, it boldeth contrary disputations in suspence, and it setteth those wits on worke in better things, which could be else imployed in worse; where as the other sute, domesticall broils, for that we think them meete to be ended at all times, are often permitted to continue for ages, till it bee too late to recall them. In the meane while the Common-wealth withereth through vnfruitfulnesse, sores imposthumate, and those with chaine-pot rheume; but farther also

through opposition, arising betweene the vnsound parts and the sound, where each endeuoureth to draw euermore contrary waies, till destruction in the end bring the whole to ruine. To reckon vp how many causes there are by force whereof diuisions may grow in a Common-wealth, is not here necessarie. Such as rise from varietie in matter of Religion, are not onely the farthest spred, because in Religion all men presume themselues interessed alike; but they are also for the most part hotlier prosecuted and pursued then other strifes, for as much as coldnesse, which in other contentions may be thought to proceede from moderation, is not in these so fauourably construed. The part which in this present quarrell striueth against the current and streame of Lawes, was a long while nothing feared, the wisest contented not to call to minde how errours haue their effect, many times not proportioned to the little appearance of reason whereupon they would seeme built, but rather to the seruant affection or fancy which is caried towards them, and proceedeth from other causes. For there are diuers motiues, drawing men to fauour mightily those opinions, wherein their perswasion is at the best weakely seated: and if the passions of the minde be strong, they easily sophisticate the vnderstanding, they make it apt to beleeue vpon very slender warrant, and to imagine infallible truth, where scarce any probable shew appeareth. Thus were those poore seduced creatures perswaded, and thus are they adherents, whom I can neither speake nor thinke of, but with much commiseration and pitie; thus were they trained by subtile meanes first, accounting their owne extraordinary loue in this Discipline, towards

them;

them: from hence they grew to a ſtrong conceit, that God which had moued them to loue his Diſcipline, more then the common ſort of men did, might haue a purpoſe by their meanes to bring a wonderfull work to paſſe, beyond all mens expectation, for the aduancement of the throne of diſcipline by ſome tragicall execution, with the particularities whereof it was not ſafe for their friends to bee made acquainted, of whom they did therefore but couertly demaund what they thought of extraordinary motions of the ſpirit in theſe dayes, and withall requeſt to be commended vnto God by their Prayers, whatſoeuer ſhould be vndertaken by men of God, in meere zeale to his glory, and the good of his diſtreſſed Church. With this vnuſuall and ſtrange courſe they went on forward, till God, in whoſe heauieſt worldly iudgements, I nothing doubt, but that there may lie hidden mercie, gaue them ouer to their owne inuentions, and left them vnlike in the end an example for head-ſtrong and inconſiderate zeale, no leſſe fearefull then Achitophell, for proud and irreligious wiſedome. If a ſparke of errour haue thus farre preuailed, falling euen where the wood was greene, and furtheſt off to all mens thinking, from any inclination vnto furious attempts, muſt not the perill thereof be preuented in men, whoſe minds are of themſelues as dry fewell, apt before-hand vnto tumults, ſeditions and broiles? But by this we ſee in a cauſe of Religion, to how deſperate aduentures men will ſtraine themſelues for reliefe of their owne paine, hauing law & authority againſt them. Furthermore, we may eaſily think, that in ſuch diuiſions, neither part can free it ſelfe from inconueniences, ſuſtained not only through the kind of euils, which vertue on both ſides doth make

with

with vice, during warre betweene truth and errour, but alſo in that there are hereby ſo fit occaſions miniſtred for men to purchaſe to themſelues wel-willers by the colour, vnder which they oftentimes proſecute quarels of ennie or inueterate malice, and eſpecially becauſe contentions were as yet neuer able to preuent two euils, the one a mutuall exchange of vnſeemely and vniuſt diſgraces, offered by men whoſe tongues and paſſions are out of rule, the other, a common hazard of both, to be made a prey by ſuch as ſtudy how to worke vpon all occurrents, with moſt aduantage in priuate. I denie not therfore, but that our Antagoniſts in theſe controuerſies, may peraduenture haue met with ſome, not vnlike to Ischaeius, who mightily bending himſelfe by all meanes againſt the hereſie of Priſcillian, the hatred of which one euill was all the vertue hee had, became ſo wiſe in the end, that euery man carefull of vertuous converſation, ſtudious of Scripture, and giuen vnto any abſtinence in diet, was ſet downe in his Kalender of ſuſpected Priſcillianiſts, for whom it ſhould be expedient to approue their ſoundneſſe of faith by a more licentious and looſe behauiour. Such Proteus and Potions the truth might ſpare. Yet is not their groſſeneſſe ſo intolerable, as the contrary fide, the ſcurrilous and more then Satyricall immodeſtie of Martinisme, the firſt publiſhed libelles whereof, being brought to the hands of a graue, and a very Honourable Knight, with ſuggeſtion giuen, that the Booke would refreſh his ſpirit, hee tooke it, ſaw what the title was, read ouer an vnſauorie ſentence or two, and deliuered backe the Libell, ſaying, I am ſorie you are of that minde to be ſolaced with theſe ſports, and ſorier you haue beene thought the minde af-

Sulp. Seuer. Epi hiſt. Eccl.

fection

fection to bee like your owne. *But as theſe ſores on all hands lie open, ſo the deepeſt wounds of the Church of God haue beene more ſoftly and cloſely giuen. Is being perceiued that the plot of Diſcipline did not onely bend it ſelfe to reforme ceremanies, but ſeeke farther to erect a popular authoritie of Elders, and to take away Epiſcopall iuriſdiction, together with all other ornaments and meanes, whereby any difference or inequalitie is vpheld in the Eccleſiaſticall order, towards this deſtructiue part, they haue found many helping hands, diuers although peraduenture not willing to be yoked with Elderſhips, yet contented (for what intent God doth know) to vphold oppoſition againſt Biſhops, not without greater hurt to the courſe of their whole proceedings in the buſines of God and her Maieſties ſeruice, then otherwiſe much more waighty aduerſaries had been able by their owne power to haue brought to paſſe. Men are naturally better contented to haue their cõmendable actions ſuppreſt, then the contrary much diuulged. And becauſe the wits of the multitude are ſuch, that many things they cannot lay hold on at once, but being poſſeſt with ſome notable either diſlike or liking of any one thing whatſoeuer, ſundry other in the meane time may eſcape them vnperceiued; therefore if men deſirous to haue their vertues noted, doe in this reſpect grieue at the fame of others, whoſe glory obſcureth and darkneth theirs, it cãnot be choſen, but that when the eares of the people are thus continually beaten with exclamations againſt abuſes in the Church, theſe tunes come alwaies moſt acceptable to them, whoſe odious and corrupt dealings in ſecular affaires, both paſſe by that meane the more couertly, and whatſoeuer happen doe alſo the leaſt feele that ſcourge*

of

of vulgar imputation, which notwithstanding they most deserue. All this considered, as behoueth, the sequele of duty on our part is only that, which our Lord and Sauiour requireth, harmlesse discretion, the wisdome of Serpents tempered with the innocent meekues of doues. For this world will teach them wisedome that haue capacitie to apprehend it. Our wisdome in this case must be such, as doth not propose to it selfe ... our owne particular, the partial & immoderate desire wherof poisoneth wheresoeuer it taketh place: but the scope & mark which we are to aime at, is ... the publike and common good of all, for the easier procurement whereof our diligence must search out all helps & furtherances of direction, which Scriptures, counsels, fathers, histories, the lawes & practices of all Churches, the mutuall conference of all mens collections and obseruations may afford, our industrie must euen anatomize euery particle of that body, which we are to vphold sound: & because, be it neuer so true which we teach the world to beliene, yet if once their affections begin to be alienated, a small thing perswadeth them to change their opinions, it behoueth that we vigilantly note and preuent by all meanes those euils, whereby the hearts of men are lost, which euils for the most part being personall, do arme in such sort the aduersaries of God and his Church against vs, that if through our too much neglect and security the same should runne on, soone might we feele our estate brought to those lamentable termes, whereof this hard and heauy sentence was by one of the ancients vttered vpon like occasions, Dolens dico, gemens denuncio, sacerdotium quod apud nos intus cecidit, foris diu stare non poterit. But the gracious prouidence of Almightie God

Leg. Carol. Mag. fo. 421

hath, I truſt, put theſe thornes of contradiction in our ſides, leſt that ſhould ſteale vpon the Church in a ſlumber, which now, I doubt not, but through his aſſiſtance may be turned away from vs, bending thereunto our ſelues with conſtancie, conſtancie in labour to doe all men good, conſtancie in prayer vnto God for all men, her eſpecially, whoſe ſacred power matched with incomparable goodnes of nature, hath hitherto beene Gods moſt happy inſtrument, by him miraculouſly kept for workes of ſo miraculous preſeruation and ſafetie vnto others; that as, By the ſword of God and Gedeon, *was ſometime the cry of the people Iſraell, ſo it might deſeruedly be at this day the ioyfull ſong of innumerable multitudes, yea the Emblem of ſome Eſtates and Dominions in the world, and (which muſt bee eternally confeſt euen with teares of thankefulneſſe) the true inſcription, ſtile or title of all Churches as yet ſtanding within this Realme,* By the goodneſſe of Almightie God and his ſeruant Elizabeth we are. Iud. 7. 20.

That God, who is able to make moralitie immortall, giue her ſuch future continuance as may be no leſſe glorious vnto all proſperitie, then the daies of her regiment paſt haue beene happy vnto our ſelues, and for his moſt deare annoynteds ſake, grant them all proſperitie, whoſe labours, cares, and counſels, vnfainedly are referred to her endleſſe welfare, through his vnſpeakable mercy, vnto whom we all owe euerlaſting praiſe. In which deſire I will here reſt, humbly beſeeching your Grace, to pardon my great boldneſſe, and God to multiply his bleſſings vpon them that feare his name.

Your Graces in all dutie,

Richard Hooker.

OF THE LAWES OF ECCLESIASTICALL POLITIE.

The fifth Booke.

Of their fourth Aſſertion, that touching the ſeuerall publike duties of Chriſtian Religion, there is amongſt vs much *Superſtition retayned in them; and concerning perſons which for* performance of thoſe duties are indued with the power of Eccleſiaſti-call Order, our Lawes and proceedings according thereunto *are many wayes herein alſo corrupted.*

The matter contayned in this fifth Booke.

1 *TRue Religion is the Root of all true Vertues, and the ſtay of all well-ordered Common-wealths.*

2 *The moſt extreme oppoſite to true Religion is affected Atheiſme.*

3 *Of Superſtition and the roote thereof, either miſguided zeale or ignorant feare of diuine Glorie.*

4 *Of the redreſſe of Superſtition in Gods Church, and concerning the queſtion of this Booke.*

5 *Foure generall Propoſitions demanding that which may reaſonably be granted concerning matters of outward forme in the exerciſe of true Religion. And fiftly, Of a Rule, not ſafe, nor reaſonable in theſe caſes.*

6 *The firſt Propoſition touching iudgement, what things are conuenient in the outward publike ordering of Church affaires.*

7 *The ſecond Propoſition.*

8 *The third Propoſition.*

9 *The fourth Propoſition.*

10 *The rule of mens priuate Spirits, not ſafe in theſe caſes to be followed.*

11 *Places for the publike Seruice of God.*

12 *The ſolemnitie of erecting Churches, ordeined, the hallowing and dedicating of them, ſcorned by the Aduerſaries.*

13 *Of the names, whereby we diſtinguiſh our Churches.*

14 *Of the faſhion of our Churches.*

15 The ſumptuouſneſſe of Churches.
16 What holineſſe and vertue we aſcribe to the Church, more then other places.
17 Their pretence that would haue Churches vtterly razed.
18 Of publike teaching, or preaching, and the firſt kind thereof, Catechizing.
19 Of preaching, by reading publickly the Bookes of holy Scripture; and concerning ſuppoſed corruptions in thoſe Tranſlations of Scripture, which we allow to be read; as alſo of the choice which we make in reading.
20 Of preaching by the publike reading of other profitable inſtructions; and concerning Bookes Apocryphall.
21 Of preaching by Sermons, and whether Sermons bee the only ordinarie way of teaching, whereby men are brought to the ſauing knowledge of Gods Truth.
22 What they attribute to Sermons only, and what we to reading alſo.
23 Of Prayer.
24 Of publike Prayer.
25 Of the forme of Common Prayer.
26 Of them, which like not to haue any ſet forme of Common Prayer.
27 Of them, who allowing a ſet forme of Prayer, yet allow not ours.
28 The forme of our Liturgie the worſe the Papiſts, too farre different from that of other Reformed Churches, as they pretend.
29 Attyre belonging to the Seruice of God.
30 Of geſture in praying, and of diuerſe places, choſen to that purpoſe.
31 Eaſineſſe of praying after our forme.
32 The length of our Seruice.
33 In ſtead of ſuch Prayers, as the Primitiue Churches haue vſed, and thoſe that be reformed now a dayes, we haue (they ſay) diuers ſhort cuts, or ſhreddings, rather wiſhes then Prayers.
34 Leſſons intermingled with our Prayers.
35 The number of our Prayers for earthly things, and our oft rehearſing of the Lords Prayer.
36 The peoples ſaying after the Miniſter.
37 Our manner of reading the Pſalmes, otherwiſe then the reſt of the Scripture.
38 Of Muſique with Pſalmes.
39 Of ſinging or ſaying Pſalmes, and other parts of Common Prayer, wherein the people and the Miniſter anſwere one another by courſe.
40 Of Magnificat, Benedictus, and Nunc dimittis.
41 Of the Letanie.
42 Of Athanaſius Creed, and Gloria Patri.
41 Our want of particuler Thankeſgiuing.
44 In ſome things the matter of our Prayer, as they affirme, is vnſound.
45 Which thou hadſt ouercome the ſharpneſſe of death, thou didſt open the Kingdome of Heauen vnto all Beleeuers.
46 Touching Prayer for deliuerance from ſuddaine death.
47 Prayer for thoſe things, which we for our vnworthineſſe dare not aske, God, for the worthineſſe of his Sonne, would vouchſafe to grant.
48 Prayer to be euermore deliuered from all aduerſitie.
49 Prayer that all men may find mercie, and of the will of God, that all men might be ſaued.

X

50 Of

50 *Of the name, the Author, and the force of Sacraments, which force conſiſteth in this, that God hath ordained them as meanes, to make vs partakers of him in Chriſt, and of life through Chriſt.*

51 *That God is in Chriſt by the perſonall incarnation of the Sonne, who is very God.*

52 *The miſinterpretations, which Hereſie hath made, of the manner, how God and Man are vnited in one Chriſt.*

53 *That by the vnion of the one, with the other nature in Chriſt, there groweth neither gaine nor loſſe of eſſentiall properties to either.*

54 *What Chriſt hath obtained according to the fleſh, by the vnion of his his fleſh with Deitie.*

55 *Of the perſonall preſence of Chriſt euery where, and in what ſenſe it may bee granted he is euery where preſent according to the fleſh.*

56 *The vnion or mutuall participation, which is betweene Chriſt and the Church of Chriſt, in this preſent World.*

57 *The neceſſitie of Sacraments vnto the participation of Chriſt.*

58 *The ſubſtance of Baptiſme, the rites or ſolemnities thereunto belonging, & that the ſubſtance thereof being kept, other things in Baptiſme may giue place to neceſſitie.*

59 *The ground in Scripture, whereupon a neceſsity of outward Baptiſme hath bin built.*

60 *What kind of neceſſitie in outward Baptiſme hath bin gathered by the words of our Sauiour Chriſt, and what the true neceſſitie thereof indeed is.*

61 *What things in Baptiſme haue bin diſpenſed with by the Fathers, reſpecting neceſſitie.*

62 *Whether Baptiſme by Women, be true Baptiſme, good, and effectuall, to them that receiue it.*

63 *Of interrogatories in Baptiſme, touching faith, & the purpoſe of a Chriſtian life.*

64 *Interrogatories propoſed vnto Infants in Baptiſme, and anſwered, as in their names by God-fathers.*

65 *Of the Croſſe in Baptiſme.*

66 *Of Confirmation after Baptiſme.*

67 *Of the Sacrament of the body and blood of Chriſt.*

68 *Of faults noted in the forme of adminiſtring that holy Sacrament.*

69 *Of Feſtiuall dayes, and the naturall cauſes of their conuenient Inſtitution.*

70 *The manner of celebrating Feſtiuall Dayes.*

71 *Exceptions againſt our keeping of other Feſtiuall Dayes, beſides the Sabbath.*

72 *Of Dayes appointed, as well for ordinarie as for extraordinary Faſts in the Church of God.*

73 *The celebration of Matrimonie.*

74 *The Churching of Women.*

75 *The Rites of Buriall.*

76 *Of the nature of that Miniſtery, which ſerueth for performance of diuine duties in the Church of God, and how happineſſe, not eternall only, but alſo temporall, doth depend vpon it.*

77 *Of power giuen vnto men, to execute that heauenly office, of the gift of the holy Ghoſt in Ordination, and whether conueniently the power of order may bee ſought or ſued for.*

78 *Of degrees, whereby the power of order is diſtinguiſhed, and concerning the attire of Miniſters.*

79 *Of oblations, foundations, endowments, Tithes, all intended for perpetuitie of Religion, which purpose being chiefly fulfilled by the Clergies certaine & sufficient maintenance, must needs by alienation of Church-livings be made frustrate.*

80 *Of ordinations lawfull without title, and without any popular election precedent, but in no case without regard of due information what their qualitie is that enter into holy Orders.*

81 *Of the Learning that should bee in Ministers, their Residence and the number of their Livings.*

True Religion is the roote of all true vertues, and the stay of all well ordered Common-weales.

HEW there are of so weake capacitie, but publike evils they easily espie; fewer so patient, as not to complaine, when the grievous inconveniences thereof worke sensible smart. Howbeit, to see wherein the harme which they feele consisteth, the seedes from which it sprang, and the method of curing it, belongeth to a skill, the study wherof is so full of toile, and the practice so be set with difficulties, that wary and respective men had rather seeke quietly their owne, and wish that the World may goe well, so it bee not long of them, then, with paine and hazard make themselves aduisers for the common good. Wee which thought it at the very first a signe of cold affection towards the Church of God, to preferre priuate ease before the labour of appeasing publike disturbance, must now of necessitie, referre euents to the gracious prouidence of Almightie God, and, in discharge of our dutie towards him, proceed with the plaine, and vnpartiall defence of a common cause. Wherein our endeauour is not so much to ouerthrow them, with whom we contend, as to yeeld them iust and reasonable causes of those things, which for want of due consideration heretofore, they misconceiued, accusing Lawes for mens ouersights, imputing evils growne through personall defects, vnto that which is not evill, framing vnto some Sores vnholesome Plasters, and applying other some where no Sore is. To make therefore our beginning that which to both parts is most acceptable, *We agree*, that pure and vnstayned Religion ought to bee the highest of all cares appertayning to publike Regiment: as well in regard of that [a] ayde and protection, which they, who faithfully serue God, confesse they receiue at his mercifull hands, as also for the force which Religion hath to qualifie all sorts of men, and to make them in publike affaires the more seruiceable, Governours the apter to rule with conscience, Inferiours for conscience sake the willinger to obey. It is no peculiar conceit, but a matter of sound consequence, that all duties are by so much the better performed, by how much the men are more religious, from whose abilities the same proceed. For if [b] the course of publike affaires cannot in any good sort goe forward without fit Instruments, and that which fitteth them be their vertues, let Policie acknowledge it selfe indebted to Religion, godlinesse being the [c] chiefest top and wel-spring of all true vertues, euen as God is of all good things. So naturall is the vnion of Religion with Iustice, that we may boldly deeme there is neither, where

a Psal. 144. C. Th. lib. 6. tit. 2. *Gaudere & gloriari ex fide semper volumus, scientes magis religionibus quàm officijs & labore corporis vel studijs nostram rempublicam contineri.*

b Ἔστι δ' οὐδὲν ἐν τοῖς πολίταις οὕτω πρᾶξαι ἄριστα τῶν πολιτικῶν ὡς τὸ τοιοῦτον ὑπάρχειν, λέγω δὲ τὸν σπουδαῖον. τὸ δὲ σπουδαῖον εἶναι ἴσως τὸ τὰς ἀρετὰς ἔχειν. *Arist. Magna moral. lib. 1. c. 1.*

c Ἀρχὴ δ' ἁπλῶς τῶν ὄντων θεὸς ἀρετῶν δ' εὐσέβεια. *Philo de decal. præcept.*

where both are not. For how ſhould they be vnfainedly iuſt, whom Religion doth not cauſe to bee ſuch; or they religious, which are not found ſuch by the proofe of their iuſt actions? If they, which imploy their labour and trauaile about the publique adminiſtration of Iuſtice, follow it only as a Trade, with vnquenchable and vnconſcionable thirſt of gaine, being not in heart perſwaded that [d] Iuſtice is Gods owne worke, and themſelues his agents in this buſineſſe, the ſentence of right, Gods owne verdict, and themſelues his Prieſts to deliuer it; formalities of Iuſtice doe but ſerue to ſmother right, and that which was neceſſarily ordayned for the common good, is through ſhameſull abuſe made the cauſe of common miſerie. The ſame Pietie, which maketh them that are in authoritie deſirous to pleaſe and reſemble God by Iuſtice, inflameth every way men of action with zeale to doe good (as farre as their place will permit) vnto all. For [e] that they know, is moſt noble and diuine. Whereby, if no naturall nor caſuall inabilitie croſſe their deſires, they alwayes delighting to iniure themſelues with actions moſt beneficiall to others, cannot but gather great Experience, and through Experience the more Wiſedome, becauſe Conſcience, and the feare of ſwaruing from that which is right, maketh them diligent obſeruers of circumſtances, the looſe regard whereof is the Nurſe of vulgar Folly, no leſſe then *Salomons* attention thereunto was of naturall furtherances the moſt effectuall to make him eminent aboue others. For he [f] gaue good heed, and pierced euery thing to the very ground, and by that meanes became the Author of many Parables. Concerning fortitude, ſith euils great and vnexpected (the true touchſtone of conſtant mindes) doe cauſe oftentimes euen them to thinke vpon diuine Power with [g] fearefulleſt ſuſpicions, which haue bin otherwiſe the moſt ſecure deſpiſers thereof, how ſhould we looke for any conſtant reſolution of mind in ſuch caſes, ſauing onely where vnfained affection to God-ward hath bred the moſt aſſured confidence to be aſſiſted by his hand? For proofe whereof, let but the acts of the ancient Iewes bee indifferently weighed, from whoſe magnanimitie, in cauſes of moſt extreme hazard, thoſe ſtrange and vnwonted reſolutions haue grown, which for all circumſtances, no people vnder the roofe of Heauen did euer hitherto match. And that which did alwayes animate them, was their meere Religion. Without which, if ſo be it were poſſible that all other ornaments of minde might be had in their full perfection, neuertheleſſe the mind that ſhould poſſeſſe them diuorced from Pietie, could be but a ſpectacle of commiſeration; euen as that bodie is, which adorned with ſundry other admirable beauties, wanteth eye-ſight, the chiefeſt grace that Nature hath in that kind to beſtow. They which commend ſo much the felicitie of that innocent World, wherein it is ſaid, that men of their owne accord did embrace fidelitie and honeſtie, not for feare of the Magiſtrate or becauſe reuenge was before their eyes, if at any time they ſhould doe otherwiſe, but that which held the people in awe, was the ſhame of ill doing, the loue of equitie and right it ſelfe, a barre againſt all oppreſſions which greatneſſe of power cauſeth, they which deſcribe vnto vs any ſuch eſtate of happineſſe amongſt men, though they ſpeake not of Religion, doe notwithſtanding declare that which is in truth her onely working. For if Religion did poſſeſſe ſincerely and ſufficiently the hearts of all men, there would

d 2 Chro. 19. 6.

e Ἀγαθὸν μὲν γὰρ ἡ ἰσὶ μόνον, κάλλιον δὲ ἡ διὰτερον ὅτι καὶ ἡδύ. *Arist. Ethic. lib. 1. cap. 12.*

f Eccleſ. 12. 10.

g Wiſd. 17. 13.

would need no other reſtraint from euill. This doth not onely giue life and perfection to all endeuours wherewith it concurreth; but what euent ſoeuer enſue, it breedeth, if not ioy and gladneſſe alwayes, yet alwayes patience, ſatisfaction, and reaſonable contentment of minde. Whereupon it hath beene ſet downe as an axiome of good experience, that all things religiouſly taken in hand, are [a] proſperouſly ended; becauſe whether men in the end haue that which Religion did allow them to deſire, or that which it teacheth them contentedly to ſuffer, [b] they are in neyther euent vnfortunate. But leſt any man ſhould heere conceiue, that it greatly skilleth not of what ſort our Religion be, in as much as Heathens, Turkes, and Infidels, impute to Religion a great part of the ſame effects, which our ſelues aſcribe thereunto, they hauing ours in the ſame deteſtation that we theirs: it ſhall be requiſite to obſerue well, how farre forth there may bee agreement in the effects of different Religions. Firſt, by the bitter ſtrife, which riſeth oftentimes from ſmall differences in this behalfe, and is by ſo much alwayes greater, as the matter is of more importance; wee ſee a generall agreement in the ſecret opinion of men, that euery man ought to imbrace the Religion which is true, and to ſhunne, as hurtfull, whatſoeuer diſſenteth from it, but that moſt, which doth fartheſt diſſent. The generalitie of which perſwaſion argueth, that God hath imprinted it by nature, to the end it might be a ſpurre to our induſtrie, in ſearching and maintayning that Religion, from which as to ſwarue in the leaſt points is Errour, ſo the capitall Enemies thereof God hateth as his deadly Foes, Aliens, and without Repentance, children of endleſſe perdition. Such therefore, touching mans immortall ſtate after this life, are not likely to reape benefit by their Religion, but to looke for the cleane contrarie, in regard of ſo important contrarietie betweene it and the true Religion. Neuertheleſſe, in as much as the Errours of the moſt ſeduced this way haue beene mixed with ſome Truthes, wee are not to maruaile, that although the one did turne to their endleſſe woe and confuſion, yet the other had many notable effects, as touching the Affaires of this preſent life. There were in [c] theſe quarters of the World, ſixteene hundred Yeares agoe, certaine ſpeculatiue men, whoſe authoritie diſpoſed the whole Religion of thoſe Times. By their meanes it became a receiued opinion, that the ſoules of men departing this life, doe flit out of one bodie into ſome other. Which opinion, though falſe, yet entwined with a true, that the ſoules of men doe neuer periſh, abated the feare of death in them which were ſo reſolued, and gaue them courage vnto all Aduentures. The Romans had a vaine Superſtitious cuſtome in moſt of their Enterprizes, to coniecture before-hand of the euent, by certaine tokens which they noted in Birds, or in the intrayles of Beaſts, or by other the like friuolous Diuinations. From whence notwithſtanding as oft as they could receiue any Signe, which they tooke to be fauourable, it gaue them ſuch hope, as if their gods had made them more then halfe a promiſe of proſperous ſucceſſe. Which many times was the greateſt cauſe that they did preuaile, eſpecially being men of their owne naturall inclination, hopefull and ſtrongly conceited, whatſoeuer they tooke in hand. But could their fond Superſtition haue furthered ſo great Attempts, without the mixture of a true perſwaſion,

a Pſal 1.3.

b Τὸ γὰρ ἐς ἀνθρώπους ἀγαθὸν ἢ μοχθηρὸν τάσδε τὰς διαφορὰς τῆς τύχης ἰσχυροποιεῖ φύσει, ἢ ἐκ τῶν ὑπαρχόντων δὲ τὰ πολλὰ πρακτόν. Ariſt. Ethic. l. 1. c. 10.

c Cæſ. de Bell. Gall. lib. 6.

ſion, concerning the vnreſiſtable force of diuine power? Vpon the wilfull violation of oathes, execrable blaſphemies, and like contempts, offered by deriders of Religion, euen vnto falſe gods, fearefull tokens of diuine reuenge haue beene knowne to follow. Which occurrents the deuouter ſort did take for manifeſt arguments, that the gods whom they worſhipped, were of power to reward ſuch as ſought vnto them, and would plague thoſe that feared them not. In this they erred. For (as the [a] *Wiſeman* rightly noteth concerning ſuch) it was not the power of them by whom they ſware, but the vengeance of them that ſinned, which puniſhed the offences of the vngodly. It was their hurt vntruely to attribute ſo great power vnto falſe gods. Yet the right conceit which they had, that to periurie vengeance is due, was not without good effect, as touching the courſe of their liues, who feared the wilfull violation of oathes in that reſpect. And whereas we read ſo many of them ſo much commended, ſome for their milde and mercifull diſpoſition, ſome for their vertuous ſeueritie, ſome for integritie of life, all theſe were the fruits of true and infallible principles deliuered vnto vs in the Word of God, as the axiomes of our Religion, wich being imprinted by the God of Nature in their hearts alſo, and taking better roote in ſome then in moſt others, grew, though not from, yet with and amidſt the heapes of manifold repugnant errours, which errours of corrupt religion had alſo their ſutable effects in the liues of the ſelfe-ſame parties. Without all controuerſie, the purer and perfecter our religion is, the worthier effects it hath in them, who ſtedfaſtly and ſincerely imbrace it, in others not. They that loue the religion which they profeſſe, may haue failed in choiſe, but yet they are ſure to reape what benefit the ſame is able to afford; whereas the beſt and ſoundeſt profeſſed by them that beare it not the like affection, yeeldeth them, retaining it in that ſort, no benefit. *Dauid* was a man after Gods owne heart, ſo termed, becauſe his affection was heartie towards God. Beholding the like diſpoſition in them which liued vnder him, it was his prayer to Almightie God, [b] *O keepe this for euer in the purpoſe and thoughts of the heart of this people.* But when, after that *Dauid* had ended his dayes in peace, they who ſucceeded him in place, for the moſt part followed him not in qualitie, when their Kings (ſome few excepted) to better their worldly eſtate (as they thought) left their owne, and their peoples ghoſtly condition vncared for, by woefull experience they both did learne, that to forſake the true God of heauen, is to fal into all ſuch euils vpon the face of the earth, as men either deſtitute of grace diuine may commit, or vnprotected from aboue indure. Seeing therefore it doth thus appeare, that the ſafetie of all eſtates dependeth vpon Religion; that Religion vnfainedly loued, perfecteth mens abilities vnto all kinds of vertuous ſeruices in the Common-wealth; that mens deſire is in generall to hold no Religion but the true; and that whatſoeuer good effects doe grow out of their Religion, who imbrace in ſtead of the true, a falſe, the rootes thereof are certaine ſparkes of the light of truth intermingled with the darkeneſſe of errour, becauſe no Religion can wholly and onely conſiſts of vntruthes, we haue reaſon to thinke that all true vertues are to honour true Religion as their parent, and all well ordered Common-weales to loue her as their chiefeſt ſtay.

[a] *Wiſd.* 14.13.

[b] 1.Chro.29.17.

2 They

The moſt extreame oppoſite to true religion, is effected Atheiſme.

2 They of whom God is altogether vnapprehended, are but few in number, and for groſſeneſſe of wit ſuch, that they hardly and ſcarcely ſeeme to hold the place of humane being. Theſe we ſhould iudge to bee of all others moſt miſerable, but that a wretcheder ſort there are, on whom, whereas nature hath beſtowed riper capacitie, their euill diſpoſition ſeriouſly goeth about therewith to apprehend God, as being not God. Whereby it commeth to paſſe, that of theſe two ſorts of men, both godleſſe, the one hauing vtterly no knowledge of God, the other ſtudie how to perſwade themſelues that there is no ſuch thing to be knowne. The [a] fountaine and welſpring of which impietie, is a reſolued purpoſe of mind to reape in this world what ſenſuall profit or pleaſure ſoeuer the world yeeldeth, and not to be barred from any whatſoeuer meanes auaileable thereunto. And that that is the very radicall cauſe of their Atheiſme, no man (I thinke) will doubt, which conſidereth what paines they take to deſtroy thoſe principall ſpurres and motiues vnto all vertue, the creation of the World, the prouidence of God, the reſurrection of the Dead, the ioyes of the Kingdome of Heauen, and the endleſſe paines of the wicked, yea aboue all things, the authoritie of the Scripture, becauſe on theſe points it euermore beateth, and the Soules immortalitie, which granted, draweth eaſily after it the reſt, as a voluntarie traine. Is it not wonderfull, that baſe deſires ſhould ſo extinguiſh in men the ſenſe of their owne excellencie, as to make them willing that their ſoules ſhould be like to the ſoules of beaſts, mortall and corruptible with their bodies? Till ſome admirable or vnuſuall accident happen (as it hath in ſome) to worke the beginning of a better alteration in their minds, diſputation about the knowledge of God with ſuch kind of perſons commonly preuaileth little. For how ſhould the brightneſſe of wiſedome ſhine, where the windowes of the ſoule are of [b] very ſet purpoſe cloſed? True Religion hath many things in it, the only mention whereof gaulleth and troubleth their mindes. Being therefore loth, that inquirie into ſuch matters ſhould breed a perſwaſion in the end contrarie vnto that they imbrace, it is their endeuour to baniſh, as much as in them lyeth, quite and cleane from their cogitation whatſoeuer may ſound that way. But it commeth many times to paſſe (which is their torment) that the thing they ſhunne doth follow them, truth, as it were, euen obtruding it ſelfe into their knowledge, and not permitting them to be ſo ignorant as they would be. Whereupon, in as much as the nature of man is vnwilling to continue doing that wherein it ſhall alwayes condemne it ſelfe, they continuing ſtill obſtinate, to follow the courſe which they haue begunne, are driuen to deuiſe all the ſhifts that witte can inuent for the ſmoothering of this light, all that may but with any the leaſt ſhew of poſſibilitie ſtay their mindes from thinking that true, which they heartily wiſh were falſe, but [c] cannot thinke it ſo, without ſome ſcruple and feare of the contrarie. Now becauſe that iudicious learning, for which wee commend moſt worthily the ancient Sages of the world, doth not in this caſe ſerue the turne, theſe trencher-mates (for ſuch the moſt of them be) frame to themſelues a way more pleaſant, a new method they haue of turning things that are ſerious into mockerie, an Art of Contradiction by way of ſcorne, a learning wherewith we

were

a *Wiſd.*2.21. Such things they imagine, and go aſtray, becauſe their owne wickednes hath blinded them. Τὸ γὰρ κακὸν ἀπλῶς οὐθαμοῦ οὐδέποτε ἔστιν. *Ariſt. Ethic.l.6.cap.5.*

b *Suſan.verſ.9.* They turned away their mind, and caſt downe their eyes, that they might no ſee heauen, nor remember iuſt iudgements.

c *Hæc eſt ſumma delicti, nolle agnoſcere quem ignorare non poſſis. Cypr. de Idol. vanit.*

were, b long ſithence forewarned, that the miſerable times whereinto we are fallen ſhould abound. This they ſtudie, this they practiſe, this they grace with a wanton ſuperfluitie of wit, too much inſulting ouer the patience of more vertuouſly diſpoſed minds. For towards theſe ſo forlorne creatures we are (it muſt be confeſſed) too patient. In zeale to the glory of God, Babylon hath exceeded Sion. We want that c decree of *Nabuchodonoſor*; the furie of this wicked brood hath the reines too much at libertie, their tongues walke at large, the ſpit-venome of their poiſoned hearts breaketh out to the annoyance of others, what their vntamed luſt ſuggeſteth, the ſame their licencious mouthes doe euery where ſet abroach. With our contentions their irreligious humour alſo is much ſtrengthened. Nothing pleaſeth them better, then theſe manifold oppoſitions about the matter of Religion, as well for that they haue hereby the more opportunitie to learne on one ſide how another may be oppugned, and ſo to weaken the credit of all vnto themſelues; as alſo becauſe by their hot purſute of lower controuerſies amongſt men profeſſing Religion, and agreeing in the principall foundations thereof, they conceiue hope that about the higher principles themſelues, time will cauſe altercation to grow. For which purpoſe, when they ſee occaſion, they ſticke not ſometime in other mens perſons, yea ſometime, without any vizard at all, directly to trie, what the moſt religious are able to ſay in defence of the higheſt points, whereupon all Religion dependeth. Now for the moſt part it ſo falleth out touching things which generally are receiued, that although in themſelues they be moſt certaine, yet becauſe men preſume them granted of all, we are hardlieſt able to bring ſuch proofe of their certainty, as may ſatiſfie gaine-ſayers, when ſuddenly and beſides expectation they require the ſame at our hands. Which impreparation and vnreadineſſe, when they find in vs, they turne it to the ſoothing vp of themſelues in their curſed phanſie, whereby they would faine beleeue that the heartie deuotion of ſuch, as indeed feare God, is nothing elſe but a kind of harmleſſe errour, bred and confirmed in them by the ſlight of wiſer men. For a politique vſe of Religion they ſee there is, and by it they would alſo gather, that Religion it ſelfe is a meere politique deuice, forged purpoſely to ſerue for that vſe. Men fearing God, are thereby a great deale more effectually, then by poſitiue Lawes reſtrained from doing euill, in as much as theſe Lawes haue no further power, then ouer our outward actions onely, whereas vnto mens d inward cogitations, vnto the priuie intents and motions of their hearts, Religion ſeruеth for a bridle. What more ſauage, wilde, and cruell then man, if he ſee himſelfe able either by fraud to ouer-reach, or by power to ouer-beare, the Lawes whereunto he ſhould be ſubiect? Wherefore in ſo great boldneſſe to offend, it behooueth that the world ſhould be held in awe, not by a vaine ſurmiſe, but a true appehenſion of ſomewhat, which no man may thinke himſelfe able to withſtand. This is the politike vſe of Religion. In which reſpect there are of theſe wiſe malignants ſome, who haue vouchſafed in their marueilous fauorable countenance and ſpeech, very gravely affirming that Religion honored, addeth greatnes, and contemned, bringeth ruine vnto Common-weales, that Princes and States, which will continue, are aboue all things to vphold the reuerend regard of Religion, and to prouide for the ſame by all meanes

b 2. Pet. 3. 2. *ude verſe* 18.

c Dan. 3. 29.

d *Vos ſuaſura admiſſa punitis, apud nos & cogitare peccare eſt; vos conſcientiæ timetis, nos etiam conſcientiam ſolam, ſine qua eſſe non poſſumus. Minut. Fel. in Octau. Summum præſidium regni eſt iuſtitia ob apertos tumultus, & religio ob occultos.* Carda. de Sapient. lib. 3.

meanes in the making of their Lawes. But when they ſhould define what meanes are beſt for that purpoſe, beholde, they extol the wiſdome of Paganiſme, they giue it out as a myſticall precept of great importance, that Princes, and ſuch as are vnder them in moſt authority or credit with the people, ſhould take all occaſions of rare events, and from what cauſe ſoeuer the ſame doe proceed, yet wreſt them to the ſtrengthening of their religion, and not make it nice for ſo good a purpoſe to vſe, if need be, plaine forgeries. Thus while they ſtudie how to bring to paſſe that Religion may ſeeme but a matter made, they loſe themſelues in the very maze of their owne diſcourſes, as if reaſon did purpoſely forſake them, who of purpoſe forſake God the Author thereof. For ſurely a ſtrange kind of madneſſe it is, that thoſe men, who though they be void of pietie, yet, becauſe they haue wit, cannot chuſe but know, that treacherie, guile and deceit are things, which may for a while, but doe not vſe long to goe vneſpied, ſhould teach that the greateſt honour to a State is perpetuitie; and grant, that alterations in the ſeruice of God, for that they impaire the credit of Religion, are therefore perillous in Common-weales, which haue no continuance longer then Religion hath all reuerence done vnto it; and willfull acknowledge (for ſo they doe) that when people began to eſpie the falſhood of Oracles, whereupon all gentilitie was built, their heart were vtterly auerted from it; and notwithſtanding counſell, Princes, in ſober earneſt for the ſtrengthning of their States, to maintaine Religion, and, for the maintenance of Religion not to make choiſe of that which is true, but to authorize that they make choiſe of by thoſe falſe and fraudulent meanes, which in the end muſt needs ouerthrow it. Such are the counſels of men godleſſe, when they would ſhew themſelues politike deuiſers, able to create God in man by Art.

Of ſuperſtition, and the roote thereof, either miſguided zeale, or ignorant feare of diuine glorie.

3 Wherefore to let goe this execrable crue, and to come to extremities on the contrarie hand, two affection there are, the forces whereof, as they beare the greater or leſſer ſway in mans heart, frame accordingly to the ſtampe and character of his Religion, the one zeale, the other feare. Zeale, valeſſe it be rightly guided, when it indeuoureth moſt buſily to pleaſe God, forceth vpon him thoſe vnſeaſonable offices which pleaſe him not. For which cauſe, if they who this way ſwarue, be compared with ſuch ſincere, ſound and diſcreet as *Abraham* was in matter of Religion, the ſeruice of the one, is like vnto flattery, the other like the faithfull ſedulitie of [a] friendſhip. Zeale, except it be ordered aright, when it bendeth it ſelfe vnto conflict with all things either in deed, or but imagined to be oppoſite vnto Religion, vſeth the razor many times with ſuch eagerneſſe, that the very life of religion it ſelfe is thereby hazarded, through hatred of tares the corne in the field of God is pluckt vp. So that zeale needeth both wayes a ſober guide. Feare, on the other ſide, if it haue not the light of true vnderſtanding concerning God, wherewith to be moderated, breedeth likewiſe ſuperſtition. It is therefore dangerous, that in things diuine, we ſhould worke too much vpon the ſpur, either of zeale or feare. Feare is a good ſolicitor to deuotion. Howbeit, ſith feare in this kind doth grow from an apprehenſion of Deitie indued with irreſiſtable power to hurt, and is of all affections (anger excepted) the vnapteſt to admit any conference with reaſon, for which cauſe the [b] *Wiſeman* doth ſay of feare, that it is a betrayer of the forces of reaſonable

a 2. Chron. 20. 7. *Abraham* thy friend.

b Wiſd. 17. 11.

ſonable vnderſtanding, therefore except men know before-hand what manner of ſeruice pleaſeth God, while they are fearefull, they trie all things which ſuncie offereth. Many there are who neuer thinke on God, but when they are in extremitie of feare: and then becauſe, what to thinke, or what to doe they are vncertaine, perplexitie not ſuffering them to be idle, they thinke and doe, as it were in a phrenſie, they know not what. Superſtition neither knoweth the right kind, nor obſerueth the due meaſure of actions belonging to the ſeruice of God, but is alwayes ioyned with a wrong opinion touching things diuine. Superſtition is, when things are either abhorred or obſerued, with a zealous or fearefull, but erronious relation to God. By meanes whereof, the ſuperſtitious doe ſometimes ſerue, though the true God, yet with needleſſe offices, and defraud him of duties neceſſarie, ſometime load others then him with ſuch honours as properly are his. The one their ouerſight, who miſſe in the choiſe of that wherewith; the other theirs, who faile in the election of him towards whom they ſhew deuotion: this the crime of Idolatrie, that the fault of voluntarie, either niceneſſe, or ſuperfluitie in Religion. The Chriſtian world it ſelfe being diuided into two graund parts, it appeareth by the generall view of both, that with matter of Hereſie the Weſt hath beene often and much troubled; but the Eaſt part neuer quiet, till the deluge of miſerie wherein now they are, ouerwhelmed them. The chiefeſt cauſe whereof doth ſeeme to haue lien in the reſtleſſe wits of the Grecians, euermore proud of their owne curious and ſubtile inuentions, which when at any time they had contriued, the great facilitie of their language ſerued them readily to make all things faire and plauſible to mens vnderſtanding. Thoſe graund hereticall impieties therefore, which moſt highly and immediatly touched God and the glorious Trinitie, were all in a manner the monſters of the Eaſt. The Weſt bred fewer a great deale, and thoſe commonly of a lower nature, ſuch as more neerely and directly concerned rather men then God, the Latines being alwaies to capitall hereſies leſſe inclined, yet vnto groſſe ſuperſtition more. Superſtition ſuch as that of the [b] Phariſies was, by whom diuine things in deed were leſſe, becauſe other things were more diuinely eſteemed of then reaſon would; the ſuperſtition that riſeth voluntarily, and by degrees, which are hardly diſcerned, mingleth it ſelfe with the Rites euen of very Diuine Seruice done to the onely true God, muſt be conſidered of, as a creeping and incroching euill; an euill, the firſt beginnings whereof are commonly harmleſſe, ſo that it prooueth onely then to be an euill, when ſome farther accident doth grow vnto it, or it ſelfe come vnto farther growth. For in the Church of God ſometimes it commeth to paſſe, as in ouer battle grounds, the fertile diſpoſition whereof is good; yet becauſe it exceedeth due proportion, it bringeth forth abundantly, through too much rankneſſe, things leſſe profitable, whereby, that which principally it ſhould yeeld, being either preuented in place, or defrauded of nouriſhment, falleth. This (if ſo large a diſcourſe were neceſſarie) might be exemplified euen by heapes of Rites and Cuſtomes, now ſuperſtitious in the greateſt part of the Chriſtian world, which in their firſt originall beginnings, when the ſtrength of vertuous, deuout or charitable affection bloomed them, no man could iuſtly haue condemned as euill.

[b] Mark 7. 9.

4 But

Of the redreſſe of ſuperſtition in Gods Church, and concerning the queſtion of this booke.

But howſoeuer ſuperſtition doe grow, that wherein vnſounder times haue done amiſſe, the better ages inſuing muſt rectifie, as they may. I now come therefore to thoſe accuſations brought againſt vs by pretenders of reformation, the firſt in the ranke whereof is ſuch, that if ſo be the Church of England did at this day therewith as iuſtly deſerue to be touched, as they in this cauſe haue imagined it doth, rather would I exhort all ſorts to ſeeke pardon euen with teares at the hands of God, then meditate words of defence for our doings, to the end that men might thinke fauourably of them. For as the caſe of this world, eſpecially now, doth ſtand, what other ſtay or ſuccour haue we to leane vnto, ſaue the teſtimonie of our conſcience, and the comfort we take in this, that we ſerue the liuing God (as neere as our wits can reach vnto the knowledge thereof) euen according to his owne will, and doe therefore truſt that his mercie ſhall be our ſafegard againſt thoſe inraged powers abroad, which principally in that reſpect are become our enemies? But ſith no man can doe ill with a good conſcience, the conſolation which we herein ſeeme to find, is but a meere deceitfull pleaſing of our ſelues in errour, which at the length muſt needs turne to our greater griefe, if that which we doe to pleaſe God moſt, be for the manifold defects thereof offenſiue vnto him. For ſo it is iudged, our prayers, our Sacraments, our faſts, our times and places of publique meeting together for the worſhip and ſeruice of God, our marriages, our burials, our functions, elections and ordinations Eccleſiaſticall, almoſt whatſoeuer we doe in the exerciſe of our Religion according to Lawes for that purpoſe eſtabliſhed, all things are ſome way or other thought faultie, all things ſtained with ſuperſtition. Now although it may be, the wiſer ſort of men are not greatly mooued hereat, conſidering how ſubiect the very beſt things haue bin alwayes vnto cauill, when wits poſſeſſed either with diſdaine or diſlike thereof, haue ſet them vp as their marke to ſhoot at; ſafe notwithſtanding it were not therefore to neglect the danger which from hence may grow, and that eſpecially in regard of them, who deſiring to ſerue God as they ought, but being not ſo skilfull as in euery point to vnwind themſelues where the ſnares of gloſing ſpeech doe lye to intangle them, are in mind not a little troubled, when they heare ſo bitter inuectiues againſt that which this Church hath taught them to reuerence as holy, to approoue as lawfull, and to obſerue as behoouefull for the exerciſe of Chriſtian dutie. It ſeemeth therefore at the leaſt for their ſakes very meete, that ſuch as blame vs in this behalfe be directly anſwered, and they which follow vs, informed plainely in the reaſons of that we doe. On both ſides the end intended betweene vs, is to haue lawes and ordinances ſuch as may rightly ſerue to aboliſh ſuperſtition, and to eſtabliſh the ſeruice of God with all things thereunto appertaining, in ſome perfect forme. There is an inward [a] reaſonable, and there is a [b] ſolemne outward ſeruiceable worſhip belonging vnto God. Of the former kind are all manner vertuous duties, that each man in reaſon and conſcience to God-ward oweth. Solemne and ſeruiceable worſhip we name for diſtinction ſake, whatſoeuer belongeth to the Church or publique ſocietie of God by way of externall adoration. It is the later of theſe two whereupon our preſent queſtion groweth. Againe, this later being ordered, partly, and as touching principall matters, by none but

a Rom. 12. 1.
b Luke 1. 23.

precepts

Precepts Diuine onely; partly, and as concerning things of inferiour regard, by Ordinances as well humane as diuine: about the ſubſtance of Religion wherein Gods only Law muſt bee kept, there is heere no Controuerſie; the crime now intended againſt vs is that our Lawes haue not ordered thoſe inferiour things as behoueth, and that our cuſtomes are either ſuperſtitious, or otherwiſe amiſſe, whether we reſpect the exerciſe of publike duties in Religion, or the functions of perſons authoriſed thereunto.

5 It is with teachers of Mathematicall Sciences vſuall, for vs in this preſent queſtion neceſſary, to lay downe firſt certaine reaſonable demands, which in moſt particulars following are to ſerue as Principles whereby to worke, and therfore muſt be before-hand conſidered. The men whom we labour to inform in the Truth, perceiue that ſo to proceed is requiſite. For to this end they alſo propoſe touching cuſtomes and rites indifferent their generall axiomes, ſome of them ſubiect vnto iuſt exceptions, and as we thinke, more meete by them to be farther conſidered, then aſſented vnto by vs. As that, *In outward things belonging to the Seruice of God, reformed Churches ought by all meanes to ſhunne conformitie with the Church of Rome*; that, *The firſt reformed ſhould bee a patterne whereunto all that come after ought to conforme themſelues*; that *ſound Religion may not vſe the things, which being not commanded of God, haue beene either deuiſed or abuſed vnto Superſtition.* Theſe and the reſt of the ſame comfort we haue in the Booke going before examined. Other Canons they alleage, and rules not vnworthy of approbation, as *That in all ſuch things the glorie of God and the edification or ghoſtly good of his people muſt be ſought; that nothing ſhould be vndecently or vnorderly done.* But for as much as all the difficultie is in diſcerning what things doe glorifie God, and edifie his Church, what not; when wee ſhould thinke: them decent and fit, when otherwiſe: becauſe theſe rules being too generall, come not neere enough vnto the matter which wee haue in hand; and the former Principles being neerer the purpoſe, are too farre from truth, we muſt propoſe vnto all men certaine petitions incident, and very materiall in cauſes of this nature, ſuch as no man of moderate iudgement hath cauſe to thinke vniuſt or vnreaſonable.

Foure generall Propoſitions, demauding that which may reaſonably be granted concerning matters of outward forme in the exerciſe of true Religion. And fiftly, of a Rule not ſafe nor reaſonable in theſe caſes.

6 The firſt thing therefore which is of force to cauſe approbation with good conſcience towards ſuch cuſtomes or rites, as publikely are eſtabliſhed, is, when there ariſeth from the due conſideration of thoſe cuſtomes and rites in themſelues apparent reaſon, although not alwayes to proue them better, then any other that might poſſibly bee deuiſed, (for who did euer require this in mans Ordinances?) yet competent to ſhew their conueniencie and fitneſſe, in regard of the vſe for which they ſhould ſerue. Now touching the nature of religious Seruices, and the manner of their due performance, thus much generally we know to be moſt cleere, that whereas the greatneſſe and dignitie of all manner actions is meaſured by the worthineſſe of the ſubiect from which they proceed, and of the Obiect whereabout they are conuerſant, wee muſt of neceſſitie in both reſpects acknowledge, that this preſent World affordeth not any thing comparable vnto the publike duties of Religion. For if the beſt things haue the perfecteſt and beſt operation, it will follow, that ſeeing man is the worthyeſt Creature vpon Earth, and euery ſociety of men more worthy then

The firſt Propoſition touching iudgement, what things are conuenient in the outward publike ordering of Church Affaires.

any man, and of ſocieties that moſt excellent which we call the Church; there can bee in this World no worke performed equall to the exerciſe of true Religion, the proper operation of the Church of God. Againe, for as much as Religion worketh vpon him, who in Maieſty and Power is Infinite, as we ought we account not of it, vnleſſe wee eſteeme it euen [a] according to that very height of excellencie which our hearts conceiue, when Diuine ſublimitie it ſelfe is rightly conſidered. In the powers and faculties of our ſoules God requireth the vttermoſt which our vnfayned affection towards him is able to yeeld: So that if we affect him not farre aboue and before all things, our Religion hath not that inward perfection which it ſhould haue, neyther doe wee indeed worſhip him as our God. That which inwardly each man ſhould bee, the Church outwardly ought to teſtifie. And therfore the duties of our Religion which are ſeene, muſt be ſuch as that affection which is vnſeene ought to bee. Signes muſt reſemble the things they ſignifie. If Religion beare the greateſt ſway in our hearts, our outward religious duties muſt ſhew it as farre as the Church hath outward abilitie. Duties of Religion performed by whole Societies of men, ought to haue in them according to our power a ſenſible excellencie, [b] correſpondent to the Maieſtie of him whom wee worſhip. Yea then are the publike duties of Religion beſt ordered, when the Militant Church doth [c] reſemble by ſenſible meanes, as it may in ſuch caſes, that hidden Dignitie and Glorie wherewith the Church Triumphant in Heauen is beautified. Howbeit, euen as the very heate of the Sunne it ſelfe, which is the life of the whole world, was to the people of God in the Deſert a grieuous annoyance, for eaſe whereof his extraordinarie Prouidence ordained a Cloudie Piller to ouer-ſhaddow them: So things of generall vſe and benefit (for in this world what is ſo perfect that no inconuenience doth euer follow it?) may by ſome accident bee incommodious to a few. In which caſe, for ſuch priuate euils remedies there are of like condition, though publike Ordinances wherein the common good is reſpected, be not ſtirred. Let our firſt demand be therefore, that in the externall forme of Religion ſuch things as are apparently, or can bee ſufficiently proued effectuall and generally fit to ſet forward Godlineſſe, either as betokening the greatneſſe of God, or as beſeeming the dignitie of Religion, or as concurring with celeſtiall Impreſſions in the mindes of men may be reuerently thought of; ſome few, rare, caſuall, and tolerable, or otherwiſe curable inconueniences notwithſtanding.

a *Iohn 4.24. Wiſd. 6.10. 1. Chron. 29.17.*

b *2. Chron. 2.5.*

c *Ἐκκλησία δεῖ ὑπάγειν ὑπαρξεις. Ger. περὶ τῶν ὑπερορωμένων. De ſtellatio Domini in Eccleſio eſt, Eccleſia verò eſt imago cœleſtium, Ambr. de interpel. Dan. 1 Facit in terris opera cœlorum. Sidon. Apol. Epiſt. lib. 6.*

The ſecond Propoſition.

7 Neither may we in this caſe lightly eſteeme what hath beene allowed as fit in the iudgement of antiquitie, and by the long continued practice of the whole Church, from which vnneceſſarily to ſwerue, experience hath neuer as yet found it ſafe. For wiſedomes ſake wee reuerence them no leſſe that are yong, or not much leſſe, then if they were ſtricken in yeares. And therefore of ſuch it is rightly ſaid, that their ripeneſſe of vnderſtanding is [d] *gray haire*, and their vertues *olde Age*. But becauſe Wiſdome and Youth are ſeldome ioyned in one, and the ordinary courſe of the World is more according to *Iobs* obſeruation, who giueth men aduice to ſeeke Wiſdome [e] *amongſt the ancient*, and in the *length of dayes* vnderſtanding, therefore if the compariſon do ſtand betweene man and man, which ſhall hearken vnto other, ſith the aged for the moſt

d *Wiſd. 4.9.*

e *Iob 12.12.*

moſt part are beſt experienced, leaſt ſubiect to raſh and vnadviſed paſſions, it hath beene euer iudged reaſonable, that their ſentence in matter of counſell ſhould be better truſted, and more relyed vpon then other mens. The goodneſſe of God hauing furniſhed Man with two chiefe Inſtruments, both neceſſarie for this Life, Hands to execute, and a Mind to deuiſe great things; the one is not profitable, longer then the vigour of Youth doth ſtrengthen it, nor the other greatly till age and experience haue brought it to perfection. In whom therefore time hath not perfect knowledge, ſuch muſt bee contented to follow them in whom it hath. For this cauſe none is more attentiuely heard, then they whoſe ſpeeches are as *Dauids* were, *I haue beene yong, and now am olde, much I haue ſeene and obſerued in the world.* Sharpe and ſubtile diſcourſes of witte procure many times very great applauſe, but being laid in the ballance with that whith the habit of ſound experience plainely deliuereth, they are ouer-weighed. God may indue men extraordinarily with vnderſtanding as it pleaſeth him. But let no man preſuming thereupon neglect the inſtructions, or deſpiſe the ordinances of his elders, ſith he, whoſe gift wiſedome is, hath ſaid, [a] *Aske thy Father, and he will ſhew thee, thine Ancients, & they ſhall tell thee.* It is therefore the voice both of God and Nature, not of learning onely, that eſpecially in matters of action and policie, [b] *The ſentences and iudgements of men experienced, aged and wiſe, yea though they ſpeake without any proofe or demonſtration, are no leſſe to be hearkened vnto, then as being demonſtrations in themſelues, becauſe ſuch mens long obſeruation is as an eye, wherewith they preſently and plainely behold thoſe principles which ſway ouer all actions.* Whereby we are taught both the cauſe wherefore wiſe mens iudgements ſhould bee credited, and the meane how to vſe their iudgements to the increaſe of our owne wiſedome. That which ſheweth them to be wiſe, is the gathering of principles out of their owne particular experiments. And the framing of our particular experiments according to the rule of their principles, ſhall make vs ſuch as they are. If therefore, euen at the firſt, ſo great accounts ſhould be made of wiſe mens counſels touching things that are publikely done, as time ſhall adde thereunto continuance and approbation of ſucceeding ages, their credit and authority muſt needs be greater. They, which doe nothing but that which men of accounte did before them, are, although they doe amiſſe, yet the leſſe faulty, becauſe they are not the authors of harme. And doing well, their actions are freed from preiudice of nouelcie. To the beſt and wiſeſt, whiles they liue, the world is continually a froward oppoſite, a curious obſeruer of their defects and imperfections, their vertues is afterwards as much admired. And for this cauſe, many times that which moſt deſerueth approbation, would hardly be able to find fauour, if they which propoſe it, were not contens to profeſſe themſelues therein ſcholler and followers of the ancient. For the world will not endure to heare that we are wiſer then any haue beene which went before. In which conſideration there is cauſe why we ſhould bee ſlow and vnwilling to change, without very vrgent neceſſitie, the ancient ordinances, rites, and long approued cuſtomes of our venerable predeceſſors. The loue of things ancient doth argue ſtayednes, but lenitie and want of experience maketh apt vnto innouations. That which wiſedome did firſt begin,

a Deut. 32. 7.

b Ariſt. Ethic. cap. 12.

c Παρὰ τῶν ἐν πολλῷ χρόνῳ ἀδόλῳ φύσει, Philo. Παῖδα διαμένοντα τῷ βίῳ τὸν αὐτὸν ταυτοτόπον, Synes. Τὰ ἐκ παλαιῶν ἐπ' ἀγαθοῖς ἀεὶ τετιμημένα δόξαντα, Greg. Naz. in Στιχ. ὁ ἔρως δὲ ἐνεδάλλει τρόπον τὸ τῆς ἀρχαιότητος ἐμοὶ τῇ καινοτομίᾳ.

προτίμησιν ἡ ἀναφαίρετον τῶν πατέρων διεφύλαξαν τὴν παράδοσιν καὶ τὴν τιχοῦσαν ἡ τὸ δίκαιον ταύτην κεκλήρωται τὴν φωνήν. Basil. de Spirit. Sanct. cap. 7.

a ὁ μὲν μικρὸν τῷ ἐν παρεμβαλὼν ὠφέλησε. Arist. Ethic. 2. cap. 9. Medici nulla fere vitia habere solet. Tiraquel. de ind. in reb. exig. cap. 10.

The third proposition.

b ὧν μὲν σφόδρα ἐστὶν ἐπὶ τὰ ἀκριβῆ ἔχειν αἰτιᾶται τύθλον. Plat. p. 35.

T. C. lib. 3. pag. 171.

such hath been with good men long continued, challengeth allowance of them that succeed, although it pleade for it selfe nothing. That which is new, if it promise not much, doth feare condemnation before triall; till triall, no man doth acquite or entitle it, what good soeuer it pretend and promise. So that in things vsuall there are few things knowne to be good, till such time as they grow to be ancient. The vaine pretence of those glorious names, where they could not be with any truth, neither in reason ought to have been so much alleaged, hath wrought such a prejudice against them in the minds of the common sort, as they had vtterly no force at all, whereas (especially for these obseruances which concerne our present question) antiquitie, custome, and consent in the Church of God, making with that which Law doth establish, are themselues most sufficient reasons to vphold the same, vnlesse some notable publique inconuenience inforce the contrarie. For a [a] small thing in the eye of Law is as nothing. We vse therefore bold to make our second petition this, that in things the fitnesse whereof is not of it selfe apparent, nor easie to be made sufficiently manifest vnto all, yet the iudgement of antiquitie concurring with that which is receiued, may induce them to thinke it not vnfit, who are not able to alleage any knowne weighty inconuenience which it hath, or to take any strong exception against.

8 [b] All things cannot be of ancient continuance, which are expedient and needfull for the ordering of spirituall affaires: but the Church being a Bodie which dieth not, hath alwayes power, as occasion requireth, no lesse to ordain that which neuer was, then to ratifie that hath bin before. To prescribe the order of doing truth things, is a peculiar prerogatiue which *Wisdome* hath as Queene or Soueraigne commaunder ouer other vertues. This in euery seuerall maner of actions of common life appertaineth vnto *Wisedome* in publique and politique or ciuile affaires vnto *Truth* wisedome. In like manner, to deuise any certaine forme for the outward administration of publique duties in the seruice of God, or things belonging thereunto, and to finde out the most conuenient for that vse, is a point of wisdome *Ecclesiasticall*. It is not for a man which doth know, or should know what order is, and what peaceable gouernment requireth, to aske, *why we should hang our iudgement vpon the Churches sleeue, & why in matters of Order more then in matters of Doctrine.* The Church hath authoritie to establish that for an order at one time, which at another time it may abolish, and in both do well. But that which in doctrine the Church doth now deliuer rightly as a truth, no man will say that it may hereafter recall, and as rightly auouch the contrary. Lawes touching matter of order are changeable, by the power of the Church; articles concerning doctrine not so. Wee reade often in the writings of Catholike & holy men touching matters of doctrine, *This we beleeue, this we hold, this the Prophets and Euangelists haue declared, this the Apostles haue deliuered, this Martyrs haue sealed with their bloud, and confessed in the midst of torments: so thinke, so write, so the maker of our soules, against this, though an Angell from heauen should preach vnto vs, we would not beleeue.* But did we euer in any of them reade touching matters of meere comelinesse, order, and decencie, neither commaunded nor prohibited by any Prophet, any Euangelist, any Apostle, *although the Church wherein wee liue*

doe ordaine them to be kept, although they be neuer ſo generally obſerued, though all the Churches in the world ſhould command them, though Angels from heauen ſhould require our ſubiection thereunto, I would hold him accurſed that *doth obey?* Be it in matter of the one kind or of the other, what Scripture doth plainly deliuer, to that the firſt place both of credit and obedience is due; the next whereunto is whatſoeuer any man can neceſſarily conclude by force of Reaſon; after theſe the voice of the Church ſucceedeth. That which the Church by her Eccleſiaſticall authoritie ſhall probably thinke and define to bee true or good, muſt in congruitie of reaſon ouer-rule all other inferiour iudgements whatſoeuer. To them which aske why we thus hang our iudgement on the Churches ſleeue, I anſwere with *Salomon*, Becauſe [a] *two are better then one. Yea ſimply* (ſayth [b] *Baſil*) *and vniuerſally, whether it be in workes of Nature, or of voluntarie choice and counſell, I ſee not any thing done as it ſhould bee, if it bee wrought by an agent ſingling it ſelfe from conſorts.* The Iewes haue a ſentence of good aduice, [c] *Take not vpon thee to be a iudge alone, there is no ſole Iudge but one onely; ſay not to others, Receiue my ſentence, when their authority is aboue thine.* The bare conſent of the whole Church ſhould it ſelfe in theſe things ſtop their mouthes, who liuing vnder it, dare preſume to barke againſt it. *There is* (ſaith [d] *Caſsianus*) *no place of audience left for them, by whom obedience is not yeelded to that which all haue agreed vpon.* Might we not thinke it more then wonderfull, that Nature ſhould in all communities appoint a predominant iudgement to ſway and ouer-rule in ſo many things; or that God himſelfe ſhould allow ſo much authoritie and power vnto euery poore Family, for the ordering of all which are in it; and the Citie of the liuing God, which is his Church, bee able neyther to command, nor yet to forbid any thing, which the meaneſt ſhall in that reſpect, and for her ſole authorities ſake, be bound to obey? Wee cannot hide or diſſemble that euill, the grieuous inconuenience whereof wee feele. Our diſlike of them, by whom too much heretofore hath beene attributed vnto the Church, is growne to an errour on the contrary hand, ſo that now from the Church of God too much is detogated. By which remouall of one extremitie with another, the World ſeeking to procure a remedie, hath purchaſed a meere exchange of the euill which before was felt. Suppoſe wee that the ſacred Word of God can at their hands receiue due honour, by whoſe inticement the holy Ordinances of the Church indure euery where open contempt? No, it is not poſſible they ſhould obſerue as they ought the one, who from the other withdraw vnneceſſarily their owne, or their brethrens obedience. Surely the Church of God in this buſineſſe is neither of capacitie, I truſt, ſo weake, nor ſo vnſtrengthned, I know, with authoritie from aboue, but that her Lawes may exact obedience at the hands of her owne children, and enioyne gain-ſayers ſilence, giuing them roundly to vnderſtand, that where our dutie is ſubmiſſion, weake oppoſitions betoken Pride. Wee therefore craue thirdly to haue it granted, that where neither the euidence of any law Diuine, nor the ſtrength of any inuincible Argument otherwiſe found out by the light of Reaſon, nor any notable publike inconuenience doth make againſt that which our owne lawes Eccleſiaſticall haue, although but newly inſtituted, for the ordering of theſe Affaires,

a *Eccleſ.* 4. 9.
b *Baſil. Epiſt.* 69. d. 8. c. *qua contra. Turpis eſt omnis pars vniuerſo ſuo non congruens.*
c *R. Iſmael in Cap. Patr.*
d *Caſſian. de incarn. lib.* 1. *cap.* 6.

the very authoritie of the Church it ſelfe, at the leaſt in ſuch caſes, may giue ſo much credit to her owne Lawes, as to make their ſentence as touching fitneſſe and conueniencie waightier then any bare and naked conceit to the contrarie; eſpecially in them who can owe no leſſe then childlike obedience to her that hath more then Motherly power.

The fourth Propoſition.

9 There are ancient Ordinances, Lawes which on all ſides are allowed to be iuſt and good, yea Diuine and Apoſtolike Conſtitutions, which the Church, it may be, doth not alwayes keepe, nor alwayes iuſtly deſerue blame in that reſpect. For in euils that cannot be remoued, without the manifeſt danger of greater to ſucceed in their roomes, wiſedome, of neceſſitie, muſt giue place to neceſſitie. All it can doe in thoſe caſes, is to deuiſe, how that which muſt bee endured, may bee mitigated, and the inconueniences thereof counteruailed as neere as may be; that when the beſt things are not poſſible, the beſt may bee made of thoſe that are. Nature then, which there is nothing more conſtant, nothing more vniforme in all her wayes, doth notwithſtanding ſtay her hand, yea, and change her courſe, when that which God by creation did commaund, he doth at any time by neceſſitie countermaund. It hath therefore pleaſed him-

Numb.22.28. ſelfe ſometime to vnlooſe the very tongues euen of dumbe creatures, and to teach them to pleade this in their owne defence, leſt the crueltie of man ſhould perſiſt to afflict them for not keeping their wonted courſe, when ſome inuincible impediment hath hindered. If we leaue Nature, and looke into Arte, the Workman hath in his heart a purpoſe, hee carryeth in minde the whole forme which his worke ſhould haue, there wanteth not in him skill and deſire to bring his labour to the beſt effect, only the matter which hee hath to worke on is vnframable. This neceſſitie excuſeth him, ſo that nothing is derogated from his credit, although much of his workes perfection be found wanting. Touching actions of common life, there is not any defence more fauourably heard then theirs, who alleage ſincerely for themſelues, that they did as neceſſitie conſtrayned them. For when the minde is rightly ordered and affected as it ſhould be, in caſe ſome externall impediment croſſing well aduiſed deſires, ſhall potently draw men to leaue what they principally wiſh, and to take a courſe which they would not, if their choice were free; what neceſſitie forceth men

a Neceſſitas quicquid cogit defendit. Senec. contro. lib 9. vnto, the ſame in this caſe it a maintayneth, as long as nothing is committed ſimply in it ſelfe euill, nothing abſolutely ſinfull or wicked, nothing repugnant to that immutable Law, whereby, whatſoeuer is condemned as euill, can neuer any way be made good. The caſting away of things profitable for the ſuſtenance of mans life, is an vnthankfull abuſe of the fruites of Gods good Prouidence towards Mankinde. Which conſideration for all that did not hinder

b Act. 27.38. b Saint Paul from throwing Corne into the Sea, when care of ſauing mens lines made it neceſſary, to loſe that which elſe had beene better ſaued. Neither was this to doe euill, to the end that good might come of it. For of two ſuch euils, being not both euitable, the choice of the leſſe is not euill. And euils muſt bee in our conſtruction iudged inculpable, if there bee no apparent ordinary way to auoyd them, becauſe where counſell and aduice beare rule, of Gods extraordinary power, without extraordinary warrant we cannot preſume. In Ciuill Affaires to declare what ſway neceſſitie hath euer beene accuſtomed to beare,

were

were labour infinite. The lawes of all States and Kingdomes in the world haue ſcarſly of any thing more common vſe. Should then only the Church ſhew it ſelfe inhumane and ſterne, abſolutely vrging a rigorous obſeruation of ſpirituall Ordinances, without relaxation or exception what neceſſitie ſoeuer happen? We know the [c] contrary practice to haue beene commended by him, vpon the warrant of whoſe iudgement, the Church moſt of all delighted with mercifull and moderate courſes, doth the oftner condeſcend vnto like equitie, permitting in caſes of neceſſitie that, which otherwiſe it diſalloweth and forbiddeth. Caſes of neceſſitie being ſometime but vrgent, ſometime extreame, the conſideration of [d] publike vtilitie is by very good aduice iudged at the leaſt equiualent with the eaſier kinde of neceſſitie. Now that which cauſeth numbers to ſtorme againſt ſome neceſſarie tolerations, which they ſhould rather let paſſe with ſilence, conſidering that in Politie as well Eccleſiaſticall as Ciuill, there are and will bee alwayes euils, which no arte of man can cure, breaches and leakes moe then mans wit hath hands to ſtop; that which maketh odious vnto them many things, wherein notwithſtanding the truth is, that very iuſt regard hath beene had of the publike good; that which in a great part of the weightieſt cauſes belonging to this preſent Controuerſie, hath inſnared the iudgements both of ſundry good, and of ſome well learned men, is the maniteſt truth of certaine generall Principles, whereupon the Ordinances that ſerue for vſuall practice in the Church of God are grounded. Which Principles men knowing to be moſt ſound, and that the ordinary practice accordingly framed is good, whatſoeuer is ouer and beſides that ordinarie, the ſame they iudge repugnant to thoſe true Principles. The cauſe of which error is ignorance, what reſtraints and limitations all ſuch Principles haue, in regard of ſo manifold varieties, as the [e] *matter* whereunto they are appliable, doth commonly afford. Theſe varieties are not knowne but by much experience, from whence to draw the true bounds of all Principles, to diſcerne how farre-forth they take effect, to ſee where and why they faile, to apprehend by what degrees and meanes they leade to the practice of things in ſhew, though not indeed repugnant and contrary one to another, requireth more ſharpneſſe of wit, more intricate circuitions of diſcourſe, more induſtrie and depth of iudgement then common abilitie doth yeeld. So that generall rules, till their limits bee fully knowne (eſpecially in matter of publike and Eccleſiaſticall affaires) are, by reaſon of the manifold ſecret exceptions which lye hidden in them, no other to the eye of mans vnderſtanding, then cloudie miſts caſt before the eye of common ſenſe. They that walke in darkneſſe know not whither they goe. And euen as little is their certaintie, whoſe opinions generalities only doe guide. With groſſe and popular capacities, nothing doth more preuayle, then vnlimited generalities, becauſe of their plauſiblenſſe at the firſt ſight; nothing leſſe with men of exact iudgement, becauſe ſuch rules are not ſafe to bee truſted ouer-farre. Generall Lawes are like generall rules of Phyſicke, according whereunto, as no Wiſeman will deſire himſelfe to be cured, if there be ioyned with his diſeaſe ſome ſpeciall accident, in regard whereof there ariſeth in the ſame inſtruction, but without the like accidentall conſiderations, would be to him either hurtfull, or at the leaſt vnprofitable: ſo we muſt not, vnder a colourable commendation of holy

c *Luke 6.4.*

d *Cauſa neceſſitatis & vtilitatis æquiparantur in iure. Ab. Panor. ad c. vt ſuper. nu. 15. de reb. Eccleſ. non alien.*

e Ἔστιν περὶ τὰς πράξεις λόγος ἐν μὲν καθόλου τυπωτέρους ἔσαν, ἐν δ' ἐπὶ μέρους ἀκριβεστέρους· περὶ γὰρ τὰ καθ' ἕκαστα αἱ πράξεις. *Arist. Eth. li. 1. c. 7.*

holy ordinances in the Church, and of reasonable causes whereupon they haue beene grounded for the common good, imagine that all mens cases ought to haue one measure. Not without singular wisedome therefore it hath beene prouided, that as the ordinary course of common affaires is disposed of by generall lawes, so likewise mens rarer incident necessities and vtilities should bee with speciall equitie considered. From hence it is, that so many priuiledges, immunities, exceptions, and dispensations haue beene alwayes with great equitie and reason granted, not to turne the edge of Iustice, or to make void at certaine times, and in certaine men through meere voluntary grace or benevolence, that which continually and vniuersally should bee of force (as some vnderstand it) but in very truth to practise generall lawes according to their right meaning. Wee see in contracts and other dealings which daily passe betweene man and man, that, to the vtter vndoing of some, many things by strictnesse of law may be done, which equitie and honest meaning forbiddeth. Not that the law is vniust, but vnperfect; nor equitie against, but aboue the law; binding mens consciences in things which law cannot reach vnto. Will any man say, that the vertue of priuate equitie is opposite and repugnant to that Law, the silence whereof it supplyeth in all such priuate dealing? No more is publike equitie against the law of publike Affaires, albeit the one permit vnto some in specicall considerations, that which the other agreeably with generall Rules of Iustice doth in generall sort forbid. For sith all good lawes are the voices of right Reason, which is the instrument wherewith God will haue the world guided, and impossible it is that right should withstand right; it must follow that Principles and Rules of Iustice, be they neuer so generally vttered, doe no lesse effectually intend, then if they did plainly expresse an exception of all particulars, wherein their litterall practice might any way preiudice equity; and because it is naturall vnto all men to wish their owne extraordinary benefit, when they thinke they haue reasonable inducements so to doe; and no man can be presumed a competent Iudge what equity doth require in his owne case, the likeliest meane whereby the wit of man can prouide, that hee which vseth the benefit of any speciall benignity aboue the common course of others may inioy it with good conscience, and not against the true purpose of lawes, which in outward shew are contrarie, must needes bee to arme with authoritie some fit both for quality and place to administer that, which in euery such particular shal appeare agreeable with equitie: wherein, as it cannot be denied, but that sometimes the practise of such iurisdiction may swarue through error euen in the very best, and for other respects where lesse integrity is: So the watchfullest obseruers of inconueniences that way growing, and the readiest to vrge them in disgrace of authorized proceedings, doe very well know, that the disposition of these things ruleth not alwaies in the hands of Popes, who liue in no worldly awe or subiection, but is committed to them whom law may at all times bridle, and superior power controll, yet, to them also in such sort, that law it selfe hath set downe to what persons, in what causes, with what circumstances, almost euery seuerall branch of their whole iurisdiction shall be granted, leauing in a manner nothing vnto them, more then onely to deliuer that is already giuen by law. Which maketh it by many degrees lesse reasonable, that vnder pretence of

incon-

inconueniences ſo eaſily ſtopped, if any did grow, and ſo well preuented; that none may, men ſhould be altogether barred of the liberty that law with equity & reaſon graunteth. Theſe things therfore conſidered, we laſtly require, that it may not ſeeme hard, if in caſes of neceſſitie, or for common vtilities ſake, certaine profitable ordinances ſometimes be releaſed, rather then all men alwayes ſtrictly bound to the generall rigor thereof.

10. Now where the word of God leaueth the Church to make choyce of her owne ordinances, if againſt thoſe things which haue beene receiued with great reaſon, or againſt that which the ancient practiſe of the Church hath continued time out of minde, or againſt ſuch ordinances as the power and authoritie of that Church vnder which wee liue hath in it ſelfe deuiſed for the publique good, or againſt the diſcretion of the Church, in mittigating ſometimes with fauourable equitie, that rigour which otherwiſe the literall generalities of Eccleſiaſticall Lawes hath iudged to bee more conuenient and meete, if againſt all this it ſhould be free for men to reproue, to diſgrace, to reiect at their owne libertie what they ſee done and practiſed according to order ſet downe, if in ſo great varietie of wayes, as the wit of man is eaſily able to finde out towards any purpoſe, and in ſo great liking as all men eſpecially haue vnto thoſe inuentions, whereby ſome one ſhall ſeeme to haue beene more inlightned from aboue then many thouſands, the Church did giue euery man licenſe to follow what himſelfe imagineth that *Gods Spirit doth reueale* vnto him, or what hee ſuppoſeth that God is likely to haue reuealed to ſome ſpeciall perſon, whoſe vertues deſerue to be highly eſteemed, what other effect could hereupon enſue, but the vtter confuſion of his Church vnder pretence of being taught, led, and guided by his ſpirit? the gifts and graces whereof doe ſo naturally all tend vnto common peace, that where ſuch ſingularitie is, they whoſe hearts it poſſeſſeth, ought to ſuſpect it the more, in as much as if it did come of God, and ſhould for that cauſe preuaile with others, the ſame God which reuealeth it to them, would alſo giue them power of confirming it vnto others, either with miraculous operation, or with ſtrong and inuincible remonſtrance of ſound reaſon, ſuch as whereby it might appeare that God would indeed haue all mens iudgements giue place vnto it; whereas now the errour and vnſufficiencie of their arguments doth make it on the contrarie ſide againſt them a ſtrong preſumption, that God hath not moued their harts to thinke ſuch things, as he hath not inabled them to proue. And ſo from rules of generall direction it reſteth, that now we deſcend to a more diſtinct explication of particulars, wherein thoſe rules haue their ſpeciall efficacie.

The rule of mens priuate ſpirits not ſafe in theſe caſes to be followed.

11. Solemne duties of publique ſeruice to bee done vnto God, muſt haue their places ſet and prepared in ſuch ſort as beſeemeth actions of that regard. *Adam* euen during the ſpace of his ſmall continuance in Paradiſe, had [a] where to preſent himſelfe before the Lord. *Adams* ſonnes had out of Paradiſe in like ſort [b] whither to bring their ſacrifices. The Patriarks vſed [c] altars, and [d] mountaines and [e] groues to the ſelfe-ſame purpoſe. In the vaſt wildernes when the people of God had themſelues no ſetled habitation, yet a moueable [f] Tabernacle they were commaunded of God to make. The like charge

Places for the publique ſeruice of God.

a Gen. 3. 8.
b Gen. 4. 3.
c Gen. 13. 4.
d 22. 1.
e 21. 33.
f Exod. 26.

charge was giuen them against the time they should come to settle themselues
a Deut.12.5. in the land which had beene promised vnto their fathers, a *Ye shall seeke the*
place which the Lord your God shall chuse. When God had chosen Ierusalem, and
b 2.Chron.3.1. in Ierusalem mount b *Moria*, there to haue his standing habitation made, it
c 2.Chron.6.7. Psal.132.5. was in the chiefest of c *Dauids* desires to haue performed so good a worke. His
griefe was no lesse, that he could not haue the honor to build God a Temple,
then their anger is at this day, who bite asunder their owne tongues with very
wrath, that they haue not as yet the power to pull downe the Temples which
they neuer built, and to leuell them with the ground. It was no meane thing
which hee purposed. To performe a worke so maiesticall and stately was no
d 2.Chro.25.9. small charge. Therefore d hee incited all men vnto bountifull contribution,
and procured towards it with all his power, gold, siluer, brasse, iron, wood,
c 1.Chro.29.3. precious stones in great abundance. Yea moreouer, e *because I haue* (saith *Da-*
uid) *a ioy in the house of my God, I haue of mine owne gold and siluer, besides all that*
I haue prepared for the house of the Sanctuarie, giuen to the house of my God three
thousand talents of gold, euen the gold of Ophir, seuen thousand talents of fined
siluer. After the ouerthrow of this first house of God, a second was in stead
f Ezr.3.12. Agge.2.4. thereof erected, but with so great oddes, that f they wept which had seene
the former, and beheld how much this later came behind it, the beautie
whereof notwithstanding was such, that euen this was also the wonder of the
whole world. Besides which Temple, there were both in other parts of the
Land, and euen in Ierusalem, by processe of time, no small number of Syna-
gogues for men to resort vnto. Our Sauiour himselfe, and after him the A-
postles frequented both the one and the other. The Church of Christ which
was in Ierusalem, and held that profession which had not the publique allow-
ance and countenance of authoritie, could not so long vse the exercise of
g Act.2.19. ☞ 2.1. ☞ 2.46. Christian religion but in g priuate only: So that as Iewes they had accesse to
the Temple and Synagogues, where God was serued after the customs of the
Law; but for that which they did as Christians, they were of necessitie forced
other where to assemble themselues. And as God gaue increase to his Church,
they sought out both there and abroad for that purpose not the fittest (for so
the times would not suffer them to do) but the safest places they could. In pro-
cesse of time somewhiles by sufferance, somewhiles by speciall leaue & fauor,
they beganne to erect to themselues Oratories, not in any sumptuous or state-
ly manner, which neither was possible by reason of the poore estate of the
Church, and had beene perilous in regard of the worlds enuie towards them.
At the length, when it pleased God to raise vp Kings and Emperours fauo-
ring sincerely the Christian truth, that which the Church before either could
not, or durst not doe, was with all alacrity performed. Temples were in all pla-
ces erected. No cost was spared, nothing iudged too deare which that way
should bee spent. The whole world did seeme to exult, that it had occasion
of powring out gifts to so blessed a purpose. That cheerefull deuotion which
h 1.Chron.29. 17,18. *Dauid* this way did exceedingly delight to behold, and h wish that the same in
the Iewish people might be the perpetuall, was then in Christian people euery
where to be seene. Their actions till this day alwayes accustomed to be spoken
of with great honor, are now called openly into question. They and as many

as haue beene followers of their example in that thing; we eſpecially that worſhip God, either in Temples which their hands made, or which other men ſithence haue framed by the like patterne, are in that reſpect charged no leſſe then with the very ſinne of Idolatry. Our Churches in the ſoame of that good Spirit, which diſcerneth ſuch fiery tongues, they terme ſpitefully the Temples of *Baal*, are Idoll Synagogues, abominable Styes.

12 Wherein the firſt thing which mooueth them thus to caſt vp their poyſon, are certaine Solemnities vſuall at the firſt erection of Churches. Now although the ſame ſhould be blame-worthy, yet this Age (thankes bee to God) hath reaſonably well forborne to incurre the danger of any ſuch blame. It cannot bee layd to many mens charge at this day liuing, either that they haue beene ſo curious, as to trouble Biſhops with placing the firſt ſtone in the Churches they built, or ſo ſcrupulous, as after the erection of them, to make any great adoe for their dedication. In which kind notwithſtanding as wee doe neither allow vnmeete, nor purpoſe the ſtiffe defence of any vnneceſſary cuſtome [a] heretofore receiued: So we know no reaſon wherefore Churches ſhould bee the worſe, if at the firſt erecting of them, at the making of them publique, at the time when they are deliuered, as it were, into Gods owne poſſeſſion, and when the vſe whereunto they ſhall euer ſerue is eſtabliſhed, Ceremonies fit to betoken ſuch intents, and to accompany ſuch actions bee vſuall, as [b] in the pureſt times they haue beene. When [c] *Conſtantine* had finiſhed an houſe for the ſeruice of God at Ieruſalem, the dedication he iudged a matter not vnworthy, about the ſolemne performance whereof, the greateſt part of the Biſhops in Chriſtendome ſhould meete together. Which thing they did at the Emperours motion, each moſt willingly ſetting forth that action to their power; ſome with Orations, ſome with Sermons, ſome with the ſacrifice of Prayers vnto God for the peace of the World, for the Churches ſafetie, for the Emperours and his Childrens good. [d] By *Athanaſius* the like is recorded concerning a Biſhop of Alexandria, in a worke of the like deuout Magnificence. So that whether Emperours or Biſhops in thoſe dayes were Church-founders, the ſolemne dedication of Churches they thought not to bee a worke in it ſelfe either vaine, or ſuperſtitious. Can we iudge it a thing ſeemely for any man to goe about the building of an houſe to the God of heauen with no other apparance, than if his end were to reare vp a Kitchin, or a Parlor for his owne vſe? Or when a worke of ſuch nature is finiſhed, remayneth there nothing but preſently to vſe it, and ſo an end? It behooueth that the place where God ſhall be ſerued by the whole Church, bee a publike place, for the auoyding of priuie Conuenticles, which couered with pretence of Religion, may ſerue vnto dangerous practiſes. Yea, although ſuch Aſſemblies be had indeed for Religions ſake, hurtfull neuertheleſſe they may eaſily proue, as well in regard of their fitneſſe to ſerue the turne of Heretiques, and ſuch as priuily will ſooneſt aduenture to inſtill their poyſon into mens minds; as alſo for the occaſion, which thereby is giuen to malicious perſons, both of ſuſpecting & of traducing with more colourable ſhew thoſe actions, which in themſelues being holy, ſhould be ſo ordered, that no man might probably otherwiſe thinke of them. Which conſiderations haue by ſo much the greater weight, for that of theſe inconueniences the Church here-

The ſolemnitie of erecting Churches condemned by *Kar.* pag. 130. The hallowing and dedicating of them ſcorned, pag. 141.

a *Durandus rationale lib. 1. cap. 6. & de conſecra. d. 1. c. tabernaculum. Greg. Mag. lib. 10. Epiſt. 12 & lib. 7. Epiſt. 71. & lib. 8. Epiſt 63.*

b Ἐγκαίνια πρώτους πολλοὺς ἴδομεν, καὶ παλαιοὺς ἴσχυν, μᾶλλον δὲ τὰ πρώτως γινόμενα. Καὶ τῶν μὲν ἄλλων ἀπεῖχε, ἀλλὰ καὶ πολλάκις ἐφέστηκε τῷ ἐναντίῳ περὶ τρισὶν ἢ τέτταρσιν ἡμέραις γινόμενος ἵνα μὴ ἐξέλθῃ τῷ χρόνῳ γένηται τὰ ἐγκαίνια. *Gregor. Nazian. orat.* εἰς τὸν ἅγιον Ἡρῶνα.

c *Vide Euſeb. de vita Conſtant. lib. 4. cap. 41. 43. 44. 45.*

d *Athanaſ. Apolog. ad Conſtantium.*

heretofore had ſo plaine experience, when Chriſtian men were driuen to vſe ſecret meetings, becauſe the libertie of publique places was not graunted them. There are which hold, that the preſence of a Chriſtian multitude, and the duties of Religion performed amongſt them, doe make the place of their Aſſembly publique, euen as the preſence of the King and his retinue maketh any mans houſe a Court. But this I take to be an errour, in as much as the only thing which maketh any place publique, is the publique aſſignement thereof vnto ſuch duties. As for the multitude there aſſembled, or the duties which they performe, it doth not appeare how either ſhould be of force to infuſe any ſuch Prerogatiue. Nor doth the ſolemne dedication of Churches ſerue onely to make them publique, but further alſo to ſurrender vp that right which otherwiſe their Founders might haue in them, and to make God himſelfe their Owner. For which cauſe at the erection and conſecration as well of the [a] Tabernacle, as of the Temple, it pleaſed the Almightie to giue a manifeſt ſigne that he tooke poſſeſſion of both. Finally, [b] it notifieth in ſolemne manner the holy and religious vſe whereunto it is intended ſuch Houſes ſhall bee put. [c] Theſe things the Wiſedome of *Salomon* did not accoune ſuperfluous. Hee knew how eaſily that which was meant ſhould be holy and ſacred, might be drawne from the vſe whereunto it was firſt prouided; hee knew how bolde men are to take euen from God himſelfe; how hardly that Houſe would bee kept from impious prophanation, he knew; and right wiſely therefore endeuoured by ſuch ſolemnities to leaue in the mindes of men that [d] impreſſion, which might ſomewhat reſtrayne their boldneſſe, and nouriſh a reuerend affection towards the Houſe of God. For which cauſe when the firſt Houſe was deſtroyed, and a new in the ſtead thereof erected by the Children of Iſrael after their returne from captiuitie, they kept the [e] dedication euen of this Houſe alſo with ioy. The [f] Argument which our Sauiour vſeth againſt Prophaners of the Temple, he taketh from the vſe whereunto it was with ſolemnitie conſecrated. And as the Prophet *Ieremie* forbiddeth the carrying of [g] burthens on the Sabbath, becauſe that was a ſanctified day: So becauſe the Temple was a place ſanctified, our Lord would not ſuffer, no [h] not the carriage of a Veſſell thorow the Temple. Theſe two Commandements therefore are in the Law conioyned, [i] *Yee ſhall keepe my Sabbaths, and reuerence my Sanctuarie.* Out of thoſe the Apoſtles words, [k] *Haue ye not houſes to eate and drinke?* albeit Temples, ſuch as now, were not then erected for the exerciſe of Chriſtian Religion, [l] it hath beene neuertheleſſe not abſurdly conceiued, that he teacheth what difference ſhould bee made betweene Houſe and Houſe; that what is fit for the dwelling place of God, and what for mans Habitation hee ſheweth; requireth that Chriſtian men at their owne home take common foode, and the Houſe of the Lord none but that foode which is heauenly; hee inſtructeth them, that as in the one place they vſe to refreſh their bodies, ſo they may in the other learne to ſeeke the nouriſhment of their ſoules; and as there they ſuſtaine temporall life, ſo heere they would learne to make prouiſion for eternall. CHRIST could not ſuffer that the Temple ſhould ſerue for a place of Mart, nor the Apoſtle of Chriſt, that the Church ſhould bee made an Inne. When therefore wee ſanctifie or hallow Churches, that which

a *Exod.* 40.34. 1.*Reg.*8.11.
b *Exod.*40.9.
c 1.*Reg.*8.
d *Leuit.*16.2. The place named holy.
e *Ezr.*6.16.
f *Mat.*21.13.
g *Ier.*17.24.
h *Mark.*11.16
i *Leuit.*26.2.
k 1.*Cor.*11.22.
l *Pet. Cluniac.*

which we doe, is onely to teſtifie that we make them places of publike reſort, that we intereſt God himſelfe with them, that we ſeuer them from common vſes. In which action, other ſolemnities then ſuch as are decent and fit for that purpoſe, we appoint none. Indeed we condemne not all as vanities, the like whereof haue beene either deuiſed or vſed haply amongſt Idolaters. For why ſhould conformitie with them in matter of opinion be lawfull, when they thinke that which is true, if in action, when they doe that which is meet, it be not lawfull to be like vnto them? Are we to forſake any true opinion, becauſe Idolaters haue maintained it? Nor to ſhun any requiſite action, onely becauſe we haue in the practiſe thereof beene preuented by Idolaters. It is no impoſſible thing, but that ſometimes they may iudge as rightly what is decent about externall affaires of God, as in greater things what is true. Not therefore whatſoeuer Idolaters haue either thought or done, but let whatſoeuer they haue either thought or done *idolatrouſly, beſo farre forth* abhorred. For of that which is good, euen in euill things, God is Author.

Of the names whereby wee diſtinguiſh our Churches.

13 Touching the names of Angels and Saints, whereby the moſt of our Churches are called; as the cuſtome of ſo naming them is very ancient, ſo neither was the cauſe thereof at the firſt, nor is the vſe and continuance with vs at this preſent hurtfull. That Churches were conſecrated vnto none but the Lord onely, the very generall name it ſelfe doth ſufficiently ſhew, in as much as by plaine grammaticall conſtruction, [a]*Church* doth ſignifie no other thing then *The Lords houſe*. And becauſe the multitude, as of perſons, ſo of things particular, cauſeth variety of proper names to be deuiſed for diſtinctions ſake, founders of *Churches* did herein that which beſt liked their owne conceit at the preſent time; yet each intending, that as oft as thoſe buildings came to be mentioned, the name ſhould put men in minde of ſome memorable thing or perſon. Thus therefore it commeth to paſſe, that all Churches haue had their names, [b] ſome as memorials of peace, ſome of wiſedome, ſome in memorie of the Trinitie it ſelfe; ſome of Chriſt vnder ſundry titles; of the bleſſed Virgin not of a few, many of one Apoſtle, Saint, or Martyr, many of all. In which reſpect their commendable purpoſe being not of euery one vnderſtood, they haue beene in later ages conſtrued, as though they had ſuperſtitiouſly meant, either that thoſe places which were denominated of Angels and Saints, ſhould ſerue for the worſhip of ſo glorious creatures, or elſe thoſe glorified creatures for defence, protection, and patronage of ſuch places. A thing which the Ancients doe vtterly diſclaime. [c] To them ſaith Saint *Auguſtine*, we appoint no Churches, becauſe they are not to vs as Gods. Againe, *The Nations to their gods erected Temples, wee not Temples vnto our Martyrs, as vnto gods, but memorials as vnto dead men, whoſe ſpirits with God are ſtill liuing*. Diuers conſiderations there are, for which Chriſtian Churches might firſt take their names of Saints: as either becauſe by the miniſterie of Saints it pleaſed God there to ſhew ſome rare effect of his power; or elſe in regard of death, which thoſe Saints hauing ſuffered for the teſtimonie of Ieſus Chriſt, did thereby make the places where they dyed venerable; or thirdly, for that it liked good and vertuous men to giue ſuch occaſion of mentioning them often, to the ende that the naming of their perſons might cauſe inquirie to bee made, and meditation to bee had of their vertues.

a From κυριακὴ Κύριε, and by adding letters of aſpiration, *Church*.

b *Vide Socr. lib. 1. cap. 16. Euag. lib. 4. c. 30. Hiſt. Trip. lib. 4. cap. 18.*

c *Vide Aug. lib. 8. de Ciuit. Dei, cap. 27. lib. 22. cap. 10. Epiſt. 49. ad Deogr.*

The duetie which Chriſtian men performed in keeping feſtiuall dedications. S. Baſil termeth λατρίαν τῶ Θεῶ acknowledging the ſame to haue beene withall, τιμὴν τῶν μαρτύρων. *Baſil in Pſal. 114.*

pertues. Wherefore ſeeing that wee cannot iuſtly accuſe it ſuperſtition, to giue vnto Churches thoſe fore-rehearſed names, as memorials either of holy perſons or things, if it bee plaine that their founders did with ſuch meaning name them, ſhall not wee in otherwiſe vſing them, offer them iniurie? Or if it bee obſcure or vncertaine what they meant, yet this conſtruction being more fauourable, charity (I hope) conſenteth no man which ſtandeth doubtfull of their mindes, to leane to the hardeſt and worſt interpretation that their words can carrie. Yea, although it were cleere, that they all (for the error of ſome is manifeſt in this behalfe) had therein a ſuperſtitious intent, wherefore ſhould their fault prejudice vs, who (as all men know) doe vſe but by way of meere diſtinction the names which they of ſuperſtition gaue? In the vſe of thoſe names whereby wee diſtinguiſh both dayes and moneths, are we culpable of ſuperſtition, becauſe they were, who firſt inuented them? The ſigne of *Caſtor* and *Pollux* ſuperſtitiouſly giuen vnto that ſhip wherein the Apoſtle ſailed, polluteth not the Euangeliſts pen, who thereby doth but diſtinguiſh that ſhip from others. If ſo *Daniel* there had beene giuen no other name, but onely *Beliſhazzar*, giuen him in honour of the Babylonian Idoll *Belti*, ſhould their idolatrie, which were authors of that name, cleaue vnto euery man which had ſo tearmed him by way of perſonall difference onely? were it not to ſatisfie the mindes of the ſimpler ſort of men, theſe nice curioſities are not worthie the labour which wee beſtow to anſwere them.

a Act. 28. 11.

b Dan. 4. 5. Vide Scal. de emendat. temp. lib. 6. pag. 377.

Of the faſhion of the Churches.

14 The like vnto this is a fancie, which they haue againſt the faſhion of our Churches, as being framed according to the paterne of the Iewiſh Temple. A fault no leſſe grieuous, if ſo be it were true, then if ſome King ſhould build his manſion houſe by the modell of *Salomons* Palace. So farre-forth as our Churches and their Temple haue one end, what ſhould let, but that they may lawfully haue one forme? The Temple was for ſacrifice, and therefore had roomes to that purpoſe, ſuch as ours haue none. Our Churches are places prouided, that the people might there aſſemble themſelues in due and decent manner, according to their ſeuerall degrees and orders. Which thing being common vnto vs with Iewes, we haue in this reſpect our Churches diuided by certaine partitions, although not ſo many in number as theirs. They had their ſeuerall for Heathen Nations, their ſeuerall for the people of their owne Nation, their ſeuerall for men, their ſeuerall for women, their ſeuerall for the Prieſts, and for the high Prieſt alone their ſeuerall. There being in ours for locall diſtinction betweene the Clergie and the reſt (which yet wee doe not with any great ſtrictneſſe or curioſitie obſerue neyther) but one partition, the cauſe whereof at the firſt (as it ſeemeth) was, that as many as were capable of the holy myſteries, might there aſſemble themſelues, and no other creepe in amongſt them; this is now made a matter ſo hainous, as if our Religion thereby were become plaine Iudaiſme, and as though wee retayned a moſt holy place, whereinto there might not any but the High Prieſt alone enter, according to the cuſtome of the Iewes.

The ſumptuouſneſſe of Churches.

15 Some it highly diſpleaſeth, that ſo great expenſes this way are imployed: *The mother of ſuch magnificence (they thinke) is but only a proud ambitious deſire to be ſpoken of far & wide. Suppoſe we that God himſelfe delighteth to dwel ſumptuouſly,*

truely, or taketh pleaſure in chargeable pompe? No, then was the Lord moſt acceptably ſerued, when his Temples were roomes borrowed within the houſes of poore men. This was ſutable vnto the nakednesſe of Ieſus Chriſt and the ſimplicity of his Goſpell. What thoughts or cogitations they had which were authors of thoſe things, the vſe and benefit whereof hath deſcended vnto our ſelues, as we doe not know, ſo we need not ſearch. It commeth (we grant) many times to paſſe, that the workes of men being the ſame, their drifts and purpoſes therein are diuers. The charge of *Herod* about the Temple of God was ambitious, yet *Salomons* vertuous, *Conſtantines* holy. But howſoeuer their hearts are diſpoſed by whom any ſuch thing is done in the world, ſhall we thinke that it baneth the worke which they leaue behinde them, or taketh away from others the vſe and benefit thereof? Touching God himſelfe, hath hee any where reuealed, that it is his delight to dwell beggerly? and that he taketh no pleaſure to be worſhipped, ſauing onely in poore cottages? Euen then was the Lord as acceptably honoured of his people as euer, when the ſtatelieſt places and things in the whole world were ſought out to adorne his temple. This is moſt [a] ſuteable, decent and fit for the greatneſſe of Ieſus Chriſt, for the ſublimitie of his Goſpell, except wee thinke of Chriſt and his Goſpell as [a] the officers of *Iulian* did. As therefore the ſonne of *Syrach* giueth verdict concerning thoſe things, which God hath wrought, [b] *A man need not ſay this is worſe then that, this more acceptable to God, that leſſe, for in their ſeaſon they are all worthie praiſe:* the like we may alſo conclude, as touching theſe two ſo contrarie waies of prouiding in meaner or in coſtlier ſort for the honour of Almightie God, *A man need not ſay this is worſe then that, this more acceptable to God, that leſſe, for with him they are in their ſeaſon both allowable*, the one, when the ſtate of the Church is poore, the other, when God hath inriched it with plentie. When they, which had ſeene the beautie of the firſt Temple, built by *Salomon* in the dayes of his great proſperitie and peace, beheld how farre it excelled the ſecond, which had not builders of like abilitie, the teares of their grieued eyes the Prophets [c] endeuoured with comforts to wipe away. Whereas if the houſe of God were by ſo much the more perfect, by how much the glorie thereof is leſſe, they ſhould haue done better to reioyce then weep, their Prophets better to reproue then comfort. It being obiected againſt the Church in the times of vniuerſall perſecution, that her ſeruice done to God was not ſolemnly performed in temples fit for the honour of diuine Maieſtie, their moſt conuenient anſwere was, that [d] *The beſt Temples which we can dedicate to God, are our ſanctified ſoules and bodies.* Whereby it plainely appeareth, how the Fathers, when they were vpbraided with that defect, comforted themſelues with the meditation of Gods moſt gracious and mercifull nature, who did not therefore the leſſe accept of their heartie affection and zeale rather, then tooke any great delight, or imagined any high perfection in ſuch their want of externall Ornaments, which when they wanted, the cauſe was their onely lacke of abilitie; abilitie ſeruing, they wanted them not. Before the [e] Emperour *Conſtantines* time, vnder *Seuerus, Gordian, Philip*, and *Gallienus*, the ſtate of Chriſtian affaires being tolerable, the former buildings which were but of meane and ſmall eſtate contented them not, ſpatious and ample Churches they erected throughout euery Citie. No enuie was able to bee

[a] Ἔργον τὸ μὲν γὰρ καλὸν τίμιον. τὸ γὰρ τοιοῦτο ἁρμόττει Δεσπότῃ. Philo Iud. Ariſt. Eth. l. 4. c. 2. τὰ διὰ τίνος καλὰ καὶ τίνος καθῆκοντα.

[b] Felix theſauri imperialis quæſtor ſolicitam ſacrarum vaſorum curam gerens, Eu inquit qualibus vaſis miniſtratur Mariæ filius. Theodoret. hiſt. Eccleſ. lib. 3. cap. 12.

[b] *Eccleſ.* 39. 34.

[c] *Acts* 2. 5. 10.

[d] *Minut. Fel. in Octau.*

[e] *Euſeb. lib. 8. cap. 1.*

their hinderance, no practice of Satan or fraude of men availeable against their proceedings herein, while they continued as yet worthie to feele the ayde of the arme of God extended ouer them for their safetie. These Churches *Diocletian* [a] caused by solemne Edict to bee afterwards ouerthrowne. *Maximinus* with like authoritie giuing leaue to erect them, the hearts of all men were euen wrapt with diuine ioy, to see those places, which tyrannous impietie had layd waste, recouered, as it were, out of mortall calamitie, Churches [b] *reared vp to an height immeasurable, and adorned with farre more beautie in their restauration, then their founders before had giuen them.* Whereby we see how most Christian mindes stood then affected, wee see how ioyfull they were to behold the sumptuous statelinesse of houses built vnto Gods glorie. If we should, ouer and besides this, alleage the care which was had, that all things about the Tabernacle of *Moses* might be as beautifull, gorgeous and rich, as arte could make them, or what trauell and cost was bestowed, that the goodlinesse of the Temple might be a spectacle of admiration to all the world; this they will say was figuratiue, and serued by Gods appointment but for a time, to shadow out the true euerlasting glorie of a more diuine Sanctuarie, whereinto Christ being long sithence entred, it seemeth that all those curious exornations should rather cease. Which thing we also our selues would grant, if the vse thereof had beene meerely and onely mysticall. But sith the Prophet *Dauid* doth mention a naturall conueniencie which such kinde of bounteous expences haue, as well for that we doe thereby giue vnto God a testimonie of our [c] cheerefull affection, which thinketh nothing too deere to bee bestowed about the furniture of his seruice; as also because it serueth to the world for a witnesse of his [d] Almightinesse, whom wee outwardly honor with the chiefest of outward things, as being of all things himselfe incomparably the greatest. Besides, were it not also strange, if God should haue made such store of glorious creatures on earth, and leaue them all to bee consumed in secular vanitie, allowing none but the baser sort to be imployed in his owne seruice? To set forth the [e] Maiestie of Kings his Vicegerents in this world, the most gorgeous and rare treasures which the world hath, are procured. Wee thinke, [f] belike, that he will accept what the meanest of them would disdaine. If there bee great care to build and beautifie these corruptible Sanctuaries, little or none, that the liuing Temples of the holy Ghost, the deerely redeemed soules of the people of God may bee edified; huge expences vpon Timber and Stone, but towards the reliefe of the poore small deuotion; Cost this way infinite, and in the meane while Charitie cold; wee haue in such case iust occasion to make complaint as [g] Saint *Ierome* did, *The walles of the Church there are now contented to builde, and to vnderset it with goodly pillars, the marbles are polished, the roofes shine with gold, the Altar hath precious stones to adorne it: and of Christs Ministers no choice at all.* The same *Ierome* both in that place and [h] elsewhere debaseth with like intent the glorie of such magnificence (a thing whereunto mens affections in those times needed no spurre) thereby to extoll the necessitie sometimes of charitie and almes, sometimes of other the most principall duties belonging vnto Christian men, which duties were neither so highly esteemed as they ought, and being compared with that in question, the directest

a *Euseb lib. 8. cap. 8.*

b *Eusch. lib. 10. cap. 2.*

c *1. Chro. 28. 14.*

d *2. Chron. 2. 5.*

e *Matth. 6. 29.*

f *Malac. 1. 8.*

g *Ad Nepotian. de vita cleric.*

h *Ad Demetr. epist. 22. ad Gaudentium.*

directeſt ſentence wee can giue of them both, as vnto mee it ſeemeth, is this, *God, who requireth the one as neceſſarie, accepteth the other alſo as being an honorable worke.*

16 Our opinion concerning the force and vertue which ſuch places haue, is, I truſt, without any blemiſh or ſtaine of hereſie. Churches receiue, as euery thing elſe, their chiefe perfection from the end whereunto they ſerue. Which end being the publike worſhip of God, they are, in this conſideration, houſes of greater dignitie, then any prouided for meaner purpoſes. For which cauſe they ſeeme after a ſort euen to mourne, as being iniured and defrauded of their right, when places not ſanctified as they are, preuent them *vnneceſſarily* in that preeminence and honour. Whereby alſo it doth come to paſſe, that the ſeruice of God hath not then it ſelfe, *ſuch perfection of grace and comelineſſe*, as when the dignitie of place which it wiſheth for doth concurre. Againe, albeit the true worſhip of God to be God in it ſelfe acceptable, who reſpecteth not ſo much in what place, as with what affection he is ſerued; and therefore *Moſes* in the midſt of the ſea, *Iob* on the dunghill, *Ezechias* in bed, *Ieremie* in mire, *Ionas* in the Whale, *Daniel* in the denne, the Children in the furnace, the Thiefe on the Croſſe, *Peter* and *Paul* in priſon, calling vnto God, were heard, as [a] S. *Baſil* noteth: manifeſt notwithſtanding it is, that the very maieſtie and holineſſe of the place, where God is worſhipped, hath *in regard of vs* great vertue, force and efficacie, for that it ſerueth as a ſenſible helpe to ſtirre vp deuotion, and *in that reſpect*, no doubt, *bettereth* euen our holieſt and beſt actions in this kinde. As therefore wee euery where exhort all men to worſhip God, euen ſo, for performance of this ſeruice by the people of God aſſembled, wee thinke not any place *ſo good* as the Church, neither any exhortation ſo fit as that of *Dauid*, [b] *O worſhip the Lord in the beautie of holineſſe.*

What holines and vertue we aſcribe to the Church, more then other places.

a *Exhort. ad bapt. & paniten.*

b *Pſal.96.9.*

17 For of our Churches thus it becommeth vs to eſteeme, howſoeuer others rapt with the pang of a furious zeale, doe powre out againſt them deuout blaſphemies, crying, [c] *Downe with them, downe with them, euen to the very ground; For to Idolatrie they haue beene abuſed. And the places where Idols haue beene worſhipped, are by* [d] *the Law of God deuote to vtter deſtruction. For execution of which Law, the* [e] *Kings that were Godly, as* Aſa, Iehoſaphat, Ezechia, Ioſia, *deſtroyed all the high places, Altars and Grones, which had beene erected in Iuda and Iſrael. He that ſaid, Thou ſhalt haue no other Gods before my face, hath likewiſe ſaid, Thou ſhalt vtterly deface and deſtroy all theſe Synagogues and places where ſuch Idols haue beene worſhipped. This Law containeth the temporall puniſhment which God hath ſet downe, and will that men execute, for the breach of the other Law. They which ſpare them therefore, doe but reſerue, as the Hypocrite* Saul *did, execrable things, to worſhip God withall.* The truth is, that as no man ſerueth God, and loueth him not; ſo neither can any man ſincerely loue God, and not extremely abhorre that ſinne, which is the higheſt degree of treaſon againſt the ſupreme Guide and Monarch of the whole world, with whoſe diuine authoritie and power it inueſteth others. By meanes whereof the ſtate of Idolaters is two wayes miſerable. Firſt, in that which they worſhip [f] they finde no ſuccour; and ſecondly, at his hands whom they ought to ſerue, there is no other thing to be looked for, but the effects of moſt iuſt diſpleaſure, the [g] withdrawing of grace, [h] dereliction in this world, and in the world to come [i] confuſion.

Their pretenſe that would haue Churches vtterly razed.

c *Pſal.137.7.*

d *Deut.12.2.*

e *2. Cron.17.6. 2.Chron.29. 2.Chron.34.*

f *Iſa.8.21. 45.20. Hoſ.14.4. Iſa.46.24.*

g *Pſal.115.8. & 13. Rom.1.24.*

h *Iudic.6.13.*

i *Apoc.21.8. Iſa.2.21.*

sion. [k] *Paul* and *Barnabas*, when Infidels admiring their vertues, went about to sacrifice vnto them, rent their garments in token of horrour, and as frighted persons, ranne crying thorow the preasse of the people, *O men, wherefore doe yee these things?* They knew the force of that dreadfull [l] curse whereunto Idolatrie maketh subiect. Nor is there cause why the guiltie sustayning the same, should grudge or complaine of iniustice. For whatsoeuer befalleth in that respect, [m] themselues haue made themselues worthie to suffer it. As for those things either *whereon*, or else *wherewith* superstition worketh, polluted they are by such *abuse*, and deprined of that dignitie which their nature delighteth in. For there is nothing which doth not grieue, and as it were, euen loath it selfe, whensoeuer iniquitie causeth it to serue vnto vile purposes. Idolatrie therefore maketh, whatsoeuer it toucheth, the worse. Howbeit, sith creatures which haue no vnderstanding can shew no will; and where no will is, there is no sinne; and only that which sinneth is subiect to *punishment*; which way should any such creature be *punishable* by the law of God? There may bee cause sometimes to *abolish*, or to *extinguish* them. But surely neuer by way of punishment *to the things themselues*. Yea farther, howsoeuer the Law of *Moses* did punish Idolaters, we finde not that God hath appointed for vs any definite or *certaine temporall iudgement*, which the Christian Magistrate *is of necessitie for euer* bound to execute vpon *offenders* in that kind, much lesse vpon *things* that way *abused* as meere *instruments*. For what God did command touching Canaan, the same concerneth not vs any otherwise then only as a fearefull patterne of his iust displeasure and wrath against sinnefull Nations. It teacheth vs how *God thought good* to plague and afflict them. It doth not appoint in what forme and manner *wee ought* to punish the sinne of Idolatrie *in all others*. Vnlesse they will say, that because the Israelites were commanded to make no couenant with the people of that Land, therefore leagues and truces made betweene superstitious persons, and such as serue God aright, are vnlawfull altogether; or because God commanded the Israelites to smite the inhabitants of Canaan, and to roote them out, that therefore reformed Churches are bound to put all others to the edge of the sword. Now whereas [a] *Commandement* was also giuen to destroy all *places* where the Cananites had serued their gods, and not to conuert any of them to the honour of the true God: *this precept had reference vnto a speciall intent* and purpose, which was, that there should be *but one only place* in the whole Land, whereunto the people might bring such offerings, gifts, and sacrifices, as their *Leuiticall* law did require. By which law, seuere charge was giuen them in that respect, not to conuert *those places* to the worship of the liuing God, where Nations before them had serued Idols, [b] *But to seeke the place which the Lord their God should chuse out of all their tribes*. Besides, it is reason wee should likewise consider how great a difference there is betweene their proceedings, who erect a new Common-wealth, which is to haue neither people nor law, neither regiment nor religion the same that was, and theirs, who onely reforme a decayed estate, by reducing it to that perfection from which it hath swarued. In this case wee are to retaine as much, in the other as little of former things as wee may. Sith therefore examples haue not *generally* the force of lawes which all men ought to keepe, but of counsels onely and perswasions not amisse to bee followed

k *Act.14.14.*

l *Deut.28.20.*

m *Ier.2.17.*

a *Deut.12.2.*

b *Deut.12.4,5.*

followed by them whoſe caſe is the like, ſurely where caſes are ſo vnlike as theirs and ours, I ſee not how that which they did, ſhould induce, much leſſe any way enforce vs to the ſame practice, eſpecially conſidering that *groues* and *hill-altars* were, while they did remaine, both dangerous in regard of the ſecret acceſſe, which people ſuperſtitiouſly giuen, might haue alwaies thereunto with eaſe, neither could they remayning ſerue with any fitneſſe vnto better purpoſe: wheras our Temples (their former abuſe being by order of law remooued) are not onely free from ſuch perill, but withall ſo conueniently framed for the people of God to ſerue and honour him therein, that no man beholding them, can chuſe but thinke it exceeding great pittie they ſhould be euer any otherwiſe employed. Yea but the Cattell of *Amalek* (you will ſay) were *fit* for ſacrifice; and this was the very conceit which ſometime deceiued *Saul*. It was ſo. Nor doe I any thing doubt, but that *Saul* vpon this conceit might euen lawfully haue offered to God thoſe reſerued ſpoiles, had not the Lord *in that particular caſe* giuen *ſpeciall charge* to the contrarie. As therefore notwithſtanding the commandement of *Iſrael* to deſtroy Cananites, Idolaters may be conuerted and liue: So the Temples which haue ſerued Idolatrie as inſtruments, may bee ſanctified againe and continue, albeit, to *Iſrael* commandement haue beene giuen, that *they* ſhould deſtroy all Idolatrous places *in their land*; and to the good Kings of *Iſrael* commendation for fulfilling, to the euill for diſobeying the ſame commandement, ſometimes punihment, alwaies ſharpe and ſeuere reproofe hath euen from the Lord himſelfe befallen. Thus much it may ſuffice to haue written in defence of thoſe Chriſtian oratories, the ouerthrow and ruine whereof is deſired, not now by Infidels, Pagans, or Turkes, but by a ſpeciall refined ſect of Chriſtian beleeuers; pretending themſelues exceedingly grieued at our ſolemnities in erecting Churches, at the names which wee ſuffer them to hold, at their forme and faſhion, at the ſtatelineſſe of them and coſtlineſſe, at the opinion which wee haue of them, and at the manifold ſuperſtitious abuſes whereunto they haue beene put.

Of publike teaching, or preaching, and the firſt kinde thereof, Catechiſing.

18 Places of publike reſort being thus prouided for, our repaire thither is eſpecially for mutuall conference, and as it were commerce to bee had betweene God and vs. Becauſe therefore want [a] of the knowledge of God is the cauſe of all iniquitie amongſt men, as contrariwiſe, the very ground of all our happineſſe, and the ſeed of whatſoeuer perfect vertue groweth from vs, is a right opinion touching things diuine, this kinde of knowledge wee may iuſtly ſet downe for the firſt and chiefeſt thing which God imparteth vnto his people, and our dutie of receiuing this at his merciſull hands, For the firſt of thoſe religious offices wherewith we publikely honour him on earth. For the inſtruction therefore of all ſorts of men to eternall life, it is neceſſarie, that the ſacred and ſauing truth of God bee openly publiſhed vnto them. Which open publication of *heauenly myſteries*, is by an excellencie termed *preaching*. For otherwiſe there is not any thing *publikely notified*, but we may in that reſpect, rightly and properly ſay, it is [b] *preached*. So that when the ſchoole of God doth vſe it as *a word of arte*, wee are accordingly to vnderſtand it with reſtraint to

[a] *Contraria ſorte in quibus homines ſibi inuicem opponuntur ſecundum exercitia & deſideria & opiniones omnia [valent] ex ignorantia: ſicut ea ex reuelatione ſub viſu vidi & audiui. Scientia veritatis tollit hominum inimicitiam & odium. Hoc præmiſit ſanctus Theologia Doctor. Habitabit agnus cum lupo. Et aſſignat rationem, Repleta eſt terra ſcientia Domini, Moſes Aegypt. in Mor. Nannuinch. lib. 3. cap. 12.* [b] *Luke 3. 18.*

ſuch

ſuch ſpeciall matter as that ſchoole is accuſtomed to publiſh. Wee finde not in the world any people that hath liued altogether without religion. And yet this dutie of religion, which prouideth that publikely all ſorts of men may be inſtructed in the feare of God, is to the Church of God, and hath beene alwaies ſo peculiar, that none of the Heathens, how [a] curious ſoeuer in ſearching out all kindes of outward Ceremonies like to ours, could euer once ſo much as endeauour to reſemble *herein* the Churches care for the endleſſe good of her Children. Wayes of teaching there haue beene ſundrie alwaies vſuall in Gods Church. For the firſt introduction of youth, to the knowledge of God, [b] the Iewes euen till this day haue their Catechiſmes. With Religion it fareth as with other Sciences, the firſt deliuerie of the elements thereof muſt, for [c] like conſideration, bee framed according to the weake and ſlender capacitie of young beginners: vnto which manner of teaching principles in Chriſtianitie, the Apoſtle in the fifth to the Hebrewes is himſelfe vnderſtood to allude. For this cauſe therefore, as a Decalogue of *Moſes* declareth ſummarily thoſe things which we ought to doe; the Prayer of our Lord whatſoeuer wee ſhould requeſt or deſire: ſo eyther by the [d] Apoſtles, or at the leaſt-wiſe out of their writings, wee haue the ſubſtance of Chriſtian beliefe compendiouſly drawne into few and ſhort articles, to the end that the weakneſſe of no mans wit might either hinder *altogether* the knowledge, or excuſe the vtter ignorance of needfull things. Such as were trayned vp in theſe rudiments, and were ſo made fit to bee afterward by Baptiſme receiued into the Church, the Fathers vſually in their writings doe terme [e] *Hearers*, as hauing no farther communion or fellowſhip with the Church, then onely this, that they were admitted to beare the principles of Chriſtian faith made plaine vnto them. Catechiſing may bee in ſchooles, it may be in priuate families. But when wee make it a kind of Preaching, we meane alwaies the publike performance thereof in the open hearing of men, becauſe things are preached not in that they are taught, but in that they are publiſhed.

a *Vide Tertul. de præſcr. aduerſ. haer.*

b The Iewes Catech. called Lebach, Tob.

c *Incipientibus breuiora ac ſimplicium tradi præcepta magis conuenit. Aut enim difficultate inſtitutionis tam numeroſa ac perplexa deterreri ſolent aut eo tempore quo præcipua alendi ingenii atque indulgentia quadam nutriendi ſunt aſperiorum rerum tractatu attenuantur.* Fab. procem. lib. 1. *Incipientibus nobis exponere iura populi Romani, ita videntur poſſe tradi commodiſſime, ſi primo leui ac ſimplici via poſt deinde diligentiſſima atque exactiſſima interpretatione ſingula tractentur. Alioqui ſi ſtatim ab initio rudem adhuc & infirmum animum ſtudioſi multitudine ac varietate rerum onerauerimus duorum alterum, aut deſertor ſtudiorum afficiemus, aut cum magno labore eius, ſæpe etiam cum diffidentia (quæ plerumque ingentes animos a vera ſpe rerum ad id perducemus ad quod leuiore via ductus, ſine magno labore & ſine vlla diffidentia maturius perduci, potuiſſet.* Inſtitut. Imper. lib. 1. tit. 1. d *Vide Ruff. in Symb.*

e *Tertul. de penitent. An alius eſt tinctus Chriſtus? Alius Audientibus? Audientes optare intinctionem non præſumere oportet.* Cyprian. Epiſt. 17. lib. 3. *Audientibus vigilantia veſtra non deſit.* Rupert. de diuin. offic. lib. 4. cap. 18. *Audiens quiſque regulam fidei Catechumenus dicitur. Catechumenus namque Audiens interpretatur.*

Of Preaching by reading publikely the bookes of holy Scripture; and concerning ſuppoſed vntruths in thoſe tranſlations of ſcripture which we allow to be read; as alſo of the choiſe which we make in reading. Act. 15. 21.

19 *Moſes* and the Prophets, Chriſt and his Apoſtles, were in their times all preachers of Gods truth; ſome by word, ſome by writing, ſome by both. This they did partly as faithfull *witneſſes*, making meere *relation* what God himſelfe had *reuealed* vnto them; and partly as carefull *expounders*, teachers, perſwaders thereof. The Church in like caſe *preacheth* ſtill, firſt publiſhing by way of *teſtimonie* or relation, the truth which from them ſhe hath receiued, euen in ſuch ſort as it was receiued, *written in the ſacred volumes of Scripture*; ſecondly, by way of *explication*, diſcouering the myſteries which lie hid therin. The Church as a witneſſe, preacheth his meere reuealed truth, by *reading* publike the ſacred Scripture. So that a ſecond kind of preaching is the reading of holy Writ. For thus we may the boldlier ſpeake, being ſtrengthened [f] with the example

example of ſo reuerend a Prelate as ſaith, that *Moſes* from the time of ancient generations and ages long ſince paſt, had amongſt the Cities of the very Gentiles them that preached him, *in that* hee was read euery Sabboth day. For ſo of neceſſitie it muſt be meant, in as much as we know, that the Iewes haue alwayes had their weekely readings of the *Law of Moſes*; but that they alwayes had in like manner their weekely *Sermons vpon ſome part of the Law of Moſes*, wee no where finde. Howbeit ſtill we muſt here remember, that the Church, by her publike reading of the Booke of God, preacheth onely *as a witneſſe*. Now the principall thing required in a witneſſe, is fidelitie. Wherefore as wee cannot excuſe that Church, which either through corrupt tranſlations of Scripture, deliuereth in ſtead of diuine ſpeeches, any thing repugnant vnto that which God ſpeaketh; or, through falſified additions, propoſeth that to the people of God as Scripture, which is in truth no Scripture: So the blame, which in both theſe reſpects hath beene layd vpon the Church of England, is ſurely altogether without cauſe. Touching tranſlations of Holy Scripture, albeit wee may not diſallow of their painfull trauailes herein, who ſtrictly haue tyed themſelues to the very originall letter, yet the iudgement of the Church, as we ſee by the practice of all Nations, *Greekes*, *Latines*, *Perſians*, *Syrians*, *Æthiopians*, *Arabians*, hath beene euer, that the fitteſt for publike audience are ſuch, as following a middle courſe betweene the rigor of literall tranſlators, and the libertie of Paraphraſts, doe with greateſt ſhortneſſe and plainneſſe deliuer the meaning of the holy Ghoſt. Which being a labour of ſo great difficultie, the exact performance thereof wee may rather wiſh then looke for. So that, except betweene the *words of tranſlation* and the *minde of Scripture* it ſelfe, there bee *Contradiction*, euery little difference ſhould not ſeeme an intolerable blemiſh neceſſarily to be ſpunged out. Whereas therefore the [a] Prophet *Dauid* in a certaine Pſalme doth ſay concerning *Moſes* and *Aaron*, that they *were* obedient to the word of God, and in the ſelfſame place our allowed tranſlation ſaith, they *were not* obedient; wee are for this cauſe challenged as manifeſt gain-ſayers of Scripture, euen in that which we reade for Scripture vnto the people. But for as much as words are reſemblances of that which the minde of the ſpeaker conceiueth, and conceits are images repreſenting that which is ſpoken of, it followeth that they who will iudge of words, ſhould haue recourſe to the things themſelues from whence they riſe. In ſetting downe that miracle, at the ſight whereof *Peter* fell downe aſtoniſhed before the feet of Ieſus, and cryed, *Depart, Lord, I am a ſinner*, the [b] Euangeliſt Saint *Luke* ſaith, the ſtore of the fiſh which they tooke was ſuch, that the net they tooke it in *brake*, and the ſhips which they loaded therewith ſuncke; [c] Saint *Iohn* recording the like miracle, ſaith, that albeit the fiſhes in number were ſo many, yet the net with ſo great a waight was *not broken*. Suppoſe they had written both of one miracle. Although there be in their words a manifeſt ſhew of iarre; yet none, if wee looke vpon the difference of matter, with regard whereunto they might both haue ſpoken euen of one miracle, the very ſame which they ſpake of diuers, the one intending thereby to ſignifie that the greatneſſe of the burthen exceeded the naturall ability of the inſtruments which they had to beare it; the other, that the weakneſſe thereof was ſupported by a ſupernaturall and miraculous addi-

[a] *Pſal.* 105. 28.

[b] *Luc.* 5. 6. 7.

[c] *Iohn.* 21. 11.

tion

tion of ſtrength. The nets, as touching themſelues *brake*, but through the power of God they *held*. Are not the words of the [a] Prophet *Micheas* touching *Bethleem*, Thou *Bethleem* the leaſt? And doth not the very [b] Euangeliſt tranſlate theſe words, Thou *Bethleem not the leaſt?* the one regarding the quantitie of the place, the other the dignitie. *Micheas* attributeth vnto it ſmalneſſe, in reſpect of circuit; *Matthew* greatneſſe, in regard of honor and eſtimation, by being the natiue ſoyle of our Lord and Sauiour Chriſt. Sith therefore ſpeeches, which gain-ſay one another, muſt of neceſſitie be applied both vnto one and the ſame ſubiect; ſith they muſt alſo the one affirme, the other deny the ſelfe-ſame thing: what neceſſitie of contradiction can there bee betweene the letter of the Prophet *Dauid* and our authorized tranſlation thereof, if he vnderſtanding *Moſes* and *Aaron* doe ſay, *They* were not *diſobedient*; we applying our ſpeech to *Pharao* and the *Ægyptians*, doe ſay of them, *They* were not *obedient?* Or (which the matter it ſelfe will eaſily enough likewiſe ſuffer) if the *Ægyptians* being meant by both, it be ſaid that *they*, in regard of [e] their offer to let goe the people, when they ſaw the fearefull darkneſſe, *diſobeyed not* the word of the Lord; and yet that they *did not obey* his word, in as much as the ſheepe and cattell at the ſelfe-ſame time they withheld. Of both tranſlations the better I willingly acknowledge, that which commeth neerer to the very letter of the originall veritie: yet ſo, that the other may likewiſe ſafely enough be read, without any perill at all of gain-ſaying, as much as the leaſt iot or ſyllable of Gods moſt ſacred and precious truth. Which truth as in this we doe not violate, ſo neither is the ſame gain-ſayed or croſt, no not in thoſe very preambles placed before certaine readings, wherein the ſteps of the Latine Seruice-booke haue bin somewhat too neerly followed. As when we ſay, Chriſt ſpake [d] *to his Diſciples*, that which the Goſpell declareth he ſpake [e] *vnto the Phariſes*. For doth the Goſpell affirme he ſpake to the *Phariſes only?* doth it meane that they, and beſides them, no man elſe was at that time ſpoken vnto by our Sauiour Chriſt? If not, then is there in this diuerſity no contrariety. I ſuppoſe it ſomewhat probable, that S. *Iohn* and S. *Matthew*, which haue recorded thoſe Sermons, heard them, and being hearers, did thinke themſelues as well reſpected as the *Phariſes*, in that which their Lord and Maſter taught, concerning the Paſtorall care he had ouer his own flocke, and his offer of grace made to the whole world, which things are the matter whereof hee treateth in thoſe Sermons. Wherefore as yet there is nothing found, wherein we reade for the word of God that which may bee condemned as repugnant vnto his word. Furthermore ſomewhat they are diſpleaſed, in that we follow not the method of reading, which [f] in their iudgement is moſt commendable, the method vſed in ſome forren Churches, where ſcriptures are read *before* the time of diuine ſeruice, and without either *obiect* or *ſtint appointed* by any *determinate* order. Neuertheleſſe, till ſuch time as they ſhall vouchſafe vs ſome iuſt and ſufficient reaſon to the contrarie, we muſt by their patience, if not allowance, retaine the [g] ancient receiued cuſtome which wee now obſerue. For with vs the reading of Scripture in the Church is a part of our Church Liturgie, a ſpeciall portion of the Seruice which wee doe to God, and not an exerciſe to ſpend the time when one doth waite for anothers comming, till the aſſembly of them that ſhall afterward worſhip him bee complete. Where-

fore

a *Matth.* 5. 2.
b *Matth.* 2. 6.
c *Exod.* 10 24.
d The Goſpell on the ſecond Sunday after Eaſter, and on the twentieth after Trinitie.
e *Iohn* 10. 1. *Matth.* 22. 1.
f *T. C. l.* 2. *p.* 381. Although it be very conuenient which is vſed in ſome Churches, where before preaching time the Church aſſembled hath the Scriptures read; yet neither is this, nor any other order of bare publike reading in the Church neceſſarie. *h. d.*
g *Aug. de Ciuit. Dei lib.* 22. *cap.* 8. *Falſo fingitur ſcripturarum ſint bella diuina ſolennia.* That for ſeuerall times ſeuerall pieces of Scripture were read as parts of the Seruice of the Greek Church, the Fathers thereof in their ſundrie Homilies and other writings doe all teſtifie the like order in the Syrian Churches, is cleare by the very inſcriptions of Chapters throughout their tranſlation of the new Teſtament. See the edition at Vienna, Paris, and Antwerpe.

ſure as the ſeeme of our publike ſeruice is not voluntarie, ſo neither are the parts thereof vncertaine, but they are all ſet downe in ſuch order, and with ſuch choice, as hath in the wiſedome of the Church ſeemed beſt to concurre as well with the ſpeciall occaſions, as with the generall purpoſe which wee haue to glorifie God.

20. Other publike readings there are of bookes and writings not Canonicall, whereby the Church doth alſo preach, or openly make knowne the doctrine of vertuous converſation; whereupon, beſides thoſe things, in regard whereof we are thought to reade the Scriptures of God amiſſe, it is thought amiſſe, that wee reade in our Churches any thing at all beſides the Scriptures. To exclude the reading of any ſuch profitable inſtruction, as the Church hath deuiſed for the better vnderſtanding of Scripture, or for the eaſier training vp of the people in holineſſe and righteouſneſſe of life, they [a] pleade, that God in the Law would haue *nothing* brought into the Temple, neither beſoms, nor fleſh-hookes, nor trumpets, but thoſe onely which were ſanctified; that for the expounding of darker places, we *ought* to follow the Iewes * Politie, who vnder *Antiochus*, where they had not the Commoditie of Sermons, appointed alwaies at their meetings ſomewhat out of the Prophets to bee read together with the Law, and ſo by the one made the other plainer to bee vnderſtood; that before and after our Sauiours comming they neither read *Onkelos* nor *Ionathans* Paraphraſe, though hauing both, but contented themſelues [b] with the reading onely of Scriptures; that if in the Primitiue Church there had beene any thing read beſides the monuments of the Prophets and Apoſtles, [c] *Iuſtin Martyr* and *Origen*, who mention theſe, would haue ſpoken of the other likewiſe; that [d] the moſt ancient and beſt Councels forbid any thing to bee read in Churches ſauing Canonicall Scripture onely; that when [e] other things were afterwards permitted, [f] fault was found with it, it ſucceeded but ill, the Bible it ſelfe was thereby in time quite and cleane thruſt out. Which arguments, if they bee onely brought in token of the Authors good-will and meaning towards the cauſe which they would ſet forward, muſt accordingly bee accepted of by them, who alreadie are perſwaded the ſame way. But if their drift and purpoſe to be perſwade others, it would bee demanded, by what rule the legall *hallowing* of beſomes and fleſh-hookes muſt needes exclude all other readings in the Church ſaue Scripture. Things ſanctified were thereby in ſuch ſort appropriated vnto God, as that they might neuer afterwards againe be made common. For which cauſe, the Lord, to ſigne and marke them as his owne, [g] appointed oyle of holy oyntment, the like whereunto it was not lawfull to make for ordinary and daily vſes. Thus the [h] anoynted of *Aaron* and his ſonnes tyed them to the office of the Prieſt-hood for euer; the anointing not of thoſe ſiluer trumpets (which [i] *Moſes* as well for ſecular as ſacred vſes was commanded to make, not to ſanctifie) but the vnction of the [k] Tabernacle, the table, the lauer, the Altar of God, with all the inſtruments appertaining thereunto, this made them for euer holy vnto him, in whoſe ſeruice they were imployed. But what of this? Doth it hereupon follow, that all things

Of preaching by the publike reading of other profitable inſtructions; and concerning bookes Apocryphall.

[a] *T. C. l.* 1. *pag.* 196. Neither the Homilies nor the Apocrypha are at all to bee read in the Church. Wherein firſt it is good to conſider the order which the Lord kept with his people in times paſt, when hee commanded *Exod.* 30.29. that no veſſell, nor no inſtrument, either beſome or fleſh-hooke, or pan ſhould once come into the Temple, but thoſe onely which were ſanctified and ſet apart for that vſe. And in the booke of Numbers, hee will haue no other trumpets blowne to call the people together, but thoſe onely which were ſet apart for that purpoſe. *Numb.* 10.2.

* *T. C. l.* 1. *p.* 197. Beſides this, the Politie of the Church of God in times paſt is to bee followed, &c.

[b] *Act.* 13.15. *Act.* 15.21.

[c] *Iuſtin, Apol.* 2. *Origen. Hom.* 1. *ſuper Exod. & in Iudic.*

[d] *Concil. Laod. cap.* 59.

[e] *Concil. Veſpaſ.* 2.

[f] *Concil. Colon. par.* 2.

[g] *Exod.* 30.25. 32.

[h] *Exod.* 4.14.

[i] *Numb.* 10.2.

[k] *Exod.* 27.3. & *Ie.* 26.27.28

things now in the Church, from the grounds of the Law, are vaine, which the Lord hath not himselfe precisely authorised? For so [1] those rudiments, they say, doe import. Thus is there nothing holy, which the Church by her authoritie hath appointed, and consequently all politique ordinances that euer were made by Ecclesiasticall power, touching holy things, are prophane, they are vaine. I would faine with them to vnderstand a reason so desperate as to preuent, that for the peoples instruction no kinde of reading is good, but only that which the Iewes deuised vnder *Moses*, although euen that too also misliken. For according to [m] *Elias* the Leuite (out of whom it doth seeme borrowed) the thing which *Esdras* forbad, was the publike reading of the Law, and not *Sermons* vpon the Law. Neither did the Iewes reade a portion of the Prophets, together with the Law, to serue for an interpretation thereof, because Sermons were not permitted them; But in stead of the Law, which they might not reade openly, they read of the Prophets that, which in likenesse of matter came neerest to each section of their Law. Whereupon, when afterwards the libertie of reading the [a] Law was restored, the selfe-same custome [b] as touching the Prophets did continue still. If neither the Iewes haue vsed publikely to reade their Paraphrases, [c] nor the Primitiue Church for a long time any other writings then Scripture, except the cause of their not doing it, were some Law of God, or reason forbidding them to doe that which wee doe, why should the latter ages of the Church bee deprined of the libertie the former had? Are wee bound while the world standeth, to put nothing in practice, but only that which was at the very first? Concerning the Councell of *Laodicea*, as it forbiddeth the reading of those things which are not Canonicall, so it maketh [d] some things not Canonicall which are. Their iudgement in this wee may not, and in that wee need not follow. Wee haue by thus many yeeres experience found, that exceeding great good, not incumbred with any notable inconuenience, hath growne by the custome which we now obserue. As for the harme whereof iudicious men haue complained in former times; it came not of this, that other things were read besides the Scripture, but that so euill choise was made. With vs there is neuer any time bestowed in diuine Seruice, without the reading of a great part of the holy Scripture, which wee account a thing most necessarie. Wee dare not admit any such forme of Liturgie, as either appointeth no Scripture at all, or very little to be read in the Church. And therefore the thrusting of the Bible out of the House of God, is rather there to bee feared, where men esteeme it a matter [e] so indifferent, whether the same bee by solemne appointment read publiquely, or not read, the bare text excepted, which the Preacher happily chuseth out to expound. But let vs heere consider what the practice of our Fathers before vs hath beene, and how farre foorth the same may bee followed. Wee finde, that in ancient times there was publiquely read first the [f] Scripture, as namely, some thing out of the Bookes of the [g] Prophets of God, which were of old, something out of

1 T.C.l.1. p.197. The Lord would by these rudiments and paedagogie teach, that he would haue nothing brought into the Church, but that which hee had appointed.

m *Elias Thesb. in verbo Ezras.*

a *Act.* 15.21.

b *Act.* 13.15.

c T.C.l.1. p.197. This practice continued still in the Churches of God after the Apostles times, as may appeare by the second Apologie of *Iustin Martyr, Idem pag.* 98. It was decreed in the Councell of Laodicea, that nothing should be read in the Church but the Canonicall bookes of the old and new Testament. Afterwards, as corruptions grew in the Church, the reading of Homilies and of Martyrs liues was permitted. But besides the euill successe thereof, that vse and custome was controld, as may appeare by the Councell of Colon, albeit otherwise Popish. The bringing in of Homilies & Martyr liues, hath thrust the Bible cleane out of the Church, or into a corner.

d The Apocalips. e T.C.l.1. p.181. It is vntrue, that *simple reading* is necessarie in the Church. A number of Churches which haue no such order of simple reading, cannot be in this point charged with breach of Gods Commandement, which they might be if simple reading were necessarie. [By simple reading, he meaneth the custome of bare reading mere, then the Preacher at the same time expoundeth vnto the people]

f *Commune ad diuinarum literarum commemorationem.* Tertul. Apolog. p.692. g *Iudaeorum historiarum libri tradiți sunt ab Apostolis legendi in Ecclesijs.* Orig. in Ios. Hom. 15.

the

[a] the Apoſtles writings; and laſtly out of the holy [b] Euangeliſts, ſome things which touched the perſon of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt himſelfe. The cauſe of their reading firſt the old Teſtament, then the new, and alwaies ſomewhat out of both, it moſt likely to haue beene that which *Iuſtin Martyr* and *S. Auguſtine* obſerue, in comparing the two Teſtaments. [c] *The Apoſtles* (ſaith the one) *haue taught vs as they themſelues did learne, firſt the precepts of the Law, and then the Goſpels. For what elſe is the Law, but the Goſpel foreſhewed? What other the Goſpel then the Law fulfilled?* In like ſort the other, [d] *What the old Teſtament hath, the very ſame the new containeth, but that which lieth there as vnder a ſhadow, is here brought forth into the open Sunne. Things there prefigured, are heere performed.* Againe, *In the old Teſtament there is a cloſe comprehenſion of the new, in the new an open diſcouerie of the old.* To bee ſhort, the method of their publike readings eyther purpoſely did tend, or at the leaſtwiſe doth fitly ſerue, [e] *That from ſmaller things the minde of the hearers may go forward to the knowledge of greater, and by degrees climbe vp from the loweſt to the higheſt things.* Now beſides the Scripture, the bookes which they called *Eccleſiaſticall*, were thought not vnworthy ſometimes to bee brought into publike audience, and with that name they entituled the Bookes which we terme *Apocryphall*. Vnder the ſelfe-ſame name they alſo compriſed certaine, no otherwiſe annexed vnto the new, then the former to the old Teſtament, as a booke of *Hermes*, Epiſtles of *Clemens*, and the like. According therefore to the Phraſe of Antiquitie, theſe we may terme *the new*, and the other the *old Eccleſiaſticall* bookes or writings. For we being directed by a ſentence (I ſuppoſe) of Saint *Ierome*, who ſaith, that [f] *All writings not Canonicall are Apocryphall*, vſe not now the title *Apocryphall*, as the reſt of the Fathers ordinarily haue done, whoſe cuſtome is ſo to name for the moſt part onely, ſuch as might not publikely bee read or diuulged. *Ruffinus* therefore hauing rehearſed the ſelfe-ſame bookes of Canonicall Scripture, which with vs are held to be alone Canonicall, addeth immediatly by way of caution, [g] *We muſt know that other bookes there are alſo, which our forefathers haue vſed to name not Canonicall, but Eccleſiaſticall bookes, as the booke of* Wiſedome, Eccleſiaſticus, Tobie, Iudith, *the* Maccabees *in the old Teſtament; in the new, the booke of* Hermes, *and ſuch others. All which bookes and writings they willed to be read in Churches, but not to be alleaged, as if their authoritie did binde vs to build vpon them our faith. Other writings they named Apocryphall, which they would not haue read in Churches. Theſe things deliuered vnto vs from the Fathers, we haue in this place thought good to ſet downe.* So farre *Ruffinus*. He which conſidereth notwithſtanding what ſtore of falſe and forged writings, dangerous vnto Chriſtian beliefe, and yet bearing [h] glorious inſcriptions, began ſoone vpon the Apoſtles times to be admitted into the Church, and to be honoured as if they had beene indeed Apoſtolike, ſhall eaſily perceiue what cauſe the Prouinciall Synod of [i] *Laodicea* might haue, *anno* to prevent, eſpecially the danger of bookes made newly Eccleſiaſticall, and for feare of the fraud of Heretikes, to prouide, that ſuch publike readings might bee altogether taken out of Canonicall Scripture. Which ordi-

[a] Πόθεν καὶ πῶς ἐλθὼν ὁ ἄγγελος μετέβαινεν ἀπὸ τὸ κατὰ συμβολὴν, ἐπὶ τὰς ἐξηγήσεις καὶ τὸ ἀναγινωσκόμενον ἐκ τῶν προφητῶν ἐκλαβεῖν τὸν προφητικὸν τόπον. *Iuſtin. Apol. 2. pag. 161.* Factum eſt vt iſta die Dominica Prophetica lectione tam teſta, ante altare adſtante, qui teſtaretur S. Paulli præſentis, beatiſſimus Antiſtes *Ambroſius, &c. Sulpit. Seuer. lib. 3. de vita S. Mart.*

[b] *Vide Concil. Vaſe. 2. habitum an. Dom. 442. & Concil. 2. pag. 10. Item Synod. Land. cap. 16. Cypr. lib. 2. epiſt. 5. & lib. 4. epiſt. 5. Ambroſ. lib. 1. Offic. cap. 23. & Epiſt. 33. & lib. de Helia atque ieiunio, cap. 8.*

[c] *Iuſt. quæſt. 101.*

[d] *Auguſt. Quæſt. 33. in Numer.*

[e] *Vid. Strab. de rebus Eccleſiaſt. cap. 22.*

[f] *Hieron. in Prolog. Galeat.*

[g] *Ruffinus in Symbol. Apoſt. apud Cypr.*

[h] *Vide Coteſ. in Dodrat. Pp. Conſtit. 2. p. 482.*

[i] *Circa An. Dom. 366.*

nance reſpecting, but that abuſe that grew through the intermingling of leſſons humane with ſacred, at ſuch time as the one both affected the credit, and vſurped the name of the other (as by the Canon of [a] a latter Councell prouiding remedie for the ſelfe ſame euill, and yet allowing the old Eccleſiaſticall Bookes to be read, it doth more plainly and cleerely appeare) neyther can be conſtrued, nor ſhould be vrged vtterly to prejudice our vſe of thoſe olde Eccleſiaſticall writings; much leſſe of Homilies, which were a third kind of readings vſuall in former times, a moſt commendable inſtitution as well then [b] to ſupply the caſuall, as now the neceſſarie defect of Sermons. In the heate of generall perſecution whereunto Chriſtian beleefe was ſubiect, vpon the firſt promulgation thereof throughout the World, is much confirmed the courage and conſtancie of weaker mindes, when publique relation was made vnto them, after what manner God had beene glorified through the ſufferings of Martyrs, famous amongſt them for holineſſe during life, and at the time of their death admirable in all mens eyes, through miraculous euidence of grace diuine aſſiſting them from aboue. For which cauſe the vertues of ſome being thought expedient to bee annually had in remembrance aboue the reſt, this brought in [c] a fourth kind of publique reading, whereby the liues of ſuch Saints and Martyrs had at the time of their yearely memorials ſolemne recognition in the Church of God. The fond imitation of which laudable cuſtome being in latter ages reſumed, when there was neyther the like cauſe to doe as the Fathers before had done; nor any care, conſcience, or wit in ſuch as vndertooke to performe that worke, ſome braineleſſe men haue by great labour and trauaile brought to paſſe, that the Church is now aſhamed of nothing more then of Saints. If therefore Pope [d] *Gelaſius* did ſo long ſithence ſee thoſe defects of iudgement euen then, for which the reading of the acts of Martyrs ſhould bee and was at that time forborne in the Church of *Rome*; wee are not to maruaile, that afterwards Legends being growne in a manner to bee nothing elſe but heapes of friuolous and ſcandalous vanities, they haue beene euen with diſdaine throwne out, the [e] very neſts which bred them abhorring them. We are not therefore to except only Scripture, and to make confuſedly all the reſidue of one ſute, as if they, who abolith Legends, could not without incongruitie retaine in the Church either Homilies, or thoſe olde *Eccleſiaſticall Bookes*: Which Bookes in caſe my ſelfe did thinke, as ſome others doe, ſafer and better to be left publikely vnread; neuertheleſſe as in other things of like nature, euen ſo in this, [f] my priuate iudgement I ſhould be loth to oppoſe againſt the force of their reuerend authority, who rather conſidering the diuine excellency of ſome things in all, and of all things in certaine of thoſe *Apocrypha* which we publikely read, haue thought it better to let them ſtand as a fit or marginall border vnto the old Teſtament, and, though with diuine, yet as humane compoſitions to grant at the leaſt vnto certaine of them publike audience in the houſe of God. For in as much as the due eſtimation of heauenly truth dependeth wholly vpon the knowne and approued authority of thoſe famous Oracles of God, it greatly behoueth the Church to haue alwaies moſt eſpeciall care, leſt through confuſed mixture at any time humane vſurpe the roome and title of diuine writings. Wherefore albeit for the

peoples

a Concil. Carthag. 3. 47. 47. Præter ſcripturas Canonicas nihil in Eccleſia legatur ſub nomine diuinarum ſcripturarum. Circa an. D. 401

b Concil. Vaſen. 2. habitum, an. Dom. 444. 16. Concil. 2. p. 19. Si prohibet aliqua infirmitate prohibente per ſeipſum non poterit præd. cere, paſſionum patrum homilia à Diſcentibus recitentur.

c Concil. Carthag. 3. can. 13. & Greg. Turon. de gloria mart. ca. 86. & Hadrian. epiſt. & Carol. Magn.

d Gelaſ. circa an. Dom. 492. in Concil. 2. p. 461.

e Concil. Colonien. celebrat. an. Dom. 1536. part. 2. cap. 6. Melch. Can. locor. theol. lib. 11. Vin. de trad. diſc. lib. 5.

f In errorum barathrum facilè currunt, qui conceptas proprias patrum definitionibus anteponunt. c. Vnderlig. de in Extra.

peoples more plaine inſtruction (as the ancient vſe hath beene) wee reade in our Churches certaine Bookes beſides the Scripture, yet as the Scripture wee reade them not. All men know our profeſſed opinion touching the difference whereby we ſeuer them from the Scripture. And if any where it be ſuſpected that ſome one or other will haply miſtake a thing ſo manifeſt in euery mans eye, there is no let, but that as often as thoſe Bookes are read, and need ſo requireth, the ſtile of their difference may expreſſely be mentioned, to barre euen all poſſibilitie of error. It being then known, that we hold not the Apocrypha for ſacred (as we do the holy Scripture) but for humane compoſitions, the ſubiect whereof are ſundry diuine matters; let there be reaſon ſhewed, why to reade any part of them publiquely, it ſhould be vnlawful or hurtfull vnto the Church of God. I heare it ſaid, that [b] *in many things* in them are very *friuolous*, & vnworthy of publique audience, yea, many contrary, *plainly contrary to the holy Scripture*. Which hitherto is neyther ſufficiently proued by him who ſayth it, and if the proofes thereof were ſtrong, yet the very allegation it ſelfe is weake. Let vs therefore ſuppoſe (for I will not demaund to what purpoſe it is, that againſt our cuſtome of reading Bookes not Canonicall, they bring exceptions of matter in thoſe Bookes which we neuer vſe to reade) ſuppoſe (I ſay) that what faults ſoeuer they haue obſerued throughout the paſſages of all thoſe Bookes, the ſame in euery reſpect were ſuch as neither could be conſtrued, nor ought to be cenſured otherwiſe, then euen as themſelues pretend: Yet as men, through too much haſte, oftentimes forget the errand whereabout they ſhould goe; ſo here it appeareth, that an eager deſire to rake together whatſoeuer might preiudice or any way hinder the credit of Apocryphall Bookes, hath cauſed the Collectors Penne ſo to runne as it were on wheeles, that the mind which ſhould guide it, had no leyſure to thinke, whether that which might haply ſerue to withhold from giuing them the authoritie which belongeth vnto ſacred Scripture, and to cut them off from the Canon, would as effectually ſerue to ſhut them altogether out of the Church, and to withdraw from graunting vnto them that publique vſe, wherein they are onely held as profitable for inſtruction. Is it not acknowledged, that thoſe Bookes are [c] *Holy*, that they are *Eccleſiaſticall* and *Sacred*, that to terme them *Diuine*, as being for their excellency next vnto them which are properly ſo termed, is no way to honor them aboue deſert; yea, euen that the whole Church of Chriſt, as well *at the firſt* as *ſithence*, hath moſt worthily approued their fitneſſe, for the publique information of life and manners: Is not thus much I ſay acknowledged, and that by them, who notwithſtanding receiue not the ſame for *any part of Canonicall Scripture*, by them who deny not but that they are *faultie*, by them who are readie enough to giue inſtances, wherein they ſeeme to containe matter *ſcarce agreeable with holy Scripture*? So little doth ſuch their ſuppoſed faultineſſe in moderate mens iudgement inforce the remouall of them out of the Houſe of God, that ſtill they are iudged to retayne worthily thoſe very Titles of Commendation; then which, there cannot greater be giuen to Writings, the Authors whereof are Men. As in truth, if the Scripture it ſelfe, aſcribing to the perſons of men righteouſneſſe in regard of their manifold vertues, may not rightly be conſtrued, as though it did thereby cleare them and make them quite free from all faults, no reaſon wee ſhould

a *Hieron. præfa. ad libros Salom. Aug. de prad. Sanct. li. c. 14. Præfat. gloſſ. ord. & Lyr. ad prol. Hieron. in Tob.*

b T.C. *lib. 2. pag. 400. 401.*

c *Harm. Confeſ. Sect. 1. Belg. con. art. 6. Lubert. de princip. Chriſt. doctr. lib. 1. c. 5.*

iudge it absurd to commend their writings as reuerend, holie, and sound, wherein there are so many singular perfections, onely for that the exquisite wits of some few peraduenture are able dispersedly here and there to find now a word and then a sentence, which may be more probably suspected then easily cleared of error by vs which haue but coniecturall knowledge of their meaning. Against immodest Inuectiues therefore whereby they are charged as being fraught with [a] *outragious lyes*, we doubt not but their more allowable censure will preuaile, who without so passionate termes of disgrace, doe note a difference great enough betweene Apocrypha all and other Writings, a difference such as [b] *Iosephus* and *Epiphanius* obserue: the one declaring, that amongst the Iewes, Bookes written after the dayes of *Artaxerxes*, were not of equall credit with them which had gone before, in as much as the Iewes sithence that time had not the like exact succession of Prophets; the [c] other acknowledging that they are *profitable*, although denying them to be *diuine*, in such construction and sense as the Scripture it selfe is so termed. With what intent they were first published, those words of the [d] Nephew of *Iesus* doe plainely enough signifie, *After that my grandfather* Iesus *had giuen himselfe to the reading of the* Law *and the* Prophets, *and* other Bookes of our Fathers, *and had* gotten therein *sufficient iudgement, he* purposed *also to write something* pertaining to Learning and Wisdome, *to the intent*, that they which were desirous to learne, *and would giue themselues to these things*, might profit *much more in liuing according to the Law*. Their end in writing, and ours in reading them, is the same. The Bookes of *Iudith*, *Toby*, *Baruch*, *Wisdome*, and *Ecclesiasticus*, we reade, as seruing most vnto that end. The rest we leaue vnto men in priuate. Neyther can it be reasonably thought, because vpon certain solemne occasions, some Lessons are chosen out of those Bookes, and of Scripture it selfe some Chapters not appointed to be read at all, that we thereby doe offer disgrace to the Word of God, or lift vp the Writings of men aboue it. For in such choice we do not thinke, but that *fitnesse* of speech may be more respected then *worthinesse*. If in that which we vse to read, there happen by the way any Clause, Sentence, or Speech, that soundeth towards error, should the mixture of a little drosse constraine the Church to deprine her selfe of so much Gold, rather then learne how by art and iudgement to make separation of the one from the other? To this effect very fitly, from the counsell that S. *Ierome* giueth *Læta*, of taking heed *how* she read the *Apocrypha*, as also by the helpe of other learned mens iudgements deliuered in like case, we may take direction. But surely, the arguments that should bind vs not to reade them, or any part of them publiquely at all, must be stronger then as yet we haue heard any.

Of preaching by Sermons, and whether Sermons be the onely ordinarie way of Teaching, whereby men are brought to the sauing knowledge of Gods Truth.

21 We maruaile the lesse that our reading of Bookes not Canonicall is so much impugned, when so little is attributed vnto the reading of Canonicall Scripture it selfe, that now it hath growne to be a question, whether the *Word of God* be any *ordinary meane* to saue the Soules of men, in that it is eyther priuately studyed, or publiquely read, and so made knowne, or else onely as the same is *preached*, that is to say, *explaned by liuely voice*, & *applyed* to the peoples vse, *as the speaker in his wisedome* thinketh meete. For this alone is it which they vse to call *Preaching*. The publique reading of the *Apocrypha* they condemne altogethe

a The Libell of *Stapleton. Schoolp. art.* 34.

b *Iosiph. cont. App. lib.* 1.

c *Epiph. in Ancyrot.* χρήσιμοι μὲν εἰσὶ καὶ ἀφέλιμοι ἁγίαι δὲ οὐκ εἰσὶν αἱ βίβλοι αὗται ἀλλ' ἐν ἁγίῳ μέσῳ ἐν κειμένοις.

d *Præf. ad lib. Eccles.*

altogether as a thing offensiue vnto all; the *bare reading in the sight* of whatsoeuer, yea euen of Scriptures themselues, they mislike; as a thing vnfruitfull to doe men good, which we are perswaded may grow by it. Our desire is in this present controuersie, as in the rest, not to be carried vp and downe with the waues of vncertaine argument, but rather positiuely to leade on the minde of the simpler sort *by plaine and easie degrees*, till the very nature of the thing it selfe doe make manifest what is truth. First therefore, because whatsoeuer is spoken concerning the efficacie or necessitie of *Gods Word*, the same they eye and restraine onely vnto *Sermons*, howbeit not Sermons read neither (for such they also abhorre in the Church) but Sermons without booke, Sermons which spend their life in their birth, and may haue publique audience but once: for this cause, to auoid ambiguities, wherewith they often intangle themselues, not marking what doth agree to the Word of God in it selfe, and what in regard of outward accidents which may befall it, we are to know that the Word of God is his heauenly Truth, touching matters of eternall life reuealed & vttered vnto Men, vnto Prophets and Apostles by immediate diuine inspiration, from them to vs by their Bookes and Writings. We therefore haue no *Word of God* but the Scripture. Apostolique Sermons were vnto such as heard them, his Word, euen as properly as to vs their Writings are. Howbeit not so our own Sermons, the composition which our discourse of Wit doth gather and minister out of the Word of God. For which cause, in this present question we are, when we name the *Word of God*, alwayes to meane the *Scripture only*. The end of the Word of God is *to saue*, and therefore we terme it *the Word of Life*. The way for all men to be saued is by the knowledge of that truth which the Word hath taught. And sith eternall Life is a thing of it selfe communicable vnto all, it behoueth that the Word of God, the necessary meane thereunto, be so likewise. Wherefore the Word of Life hath been alwayes a treasure, though precious, yet easie, as well to attaine, as to find; least any man desirous of life should perish through the difficultie of the way. To this end the Word of God no otherwise serueth, then only in the nature of a doctrinall instrument. It saueth, because it maketh *wise to saluation*. Wherefore the ignorant it saueth not; they which liue by the Word, must know it. And being it selfe the instrument which God hath purposely framed, thereby to worke the knowledge of saluation in the hearts of men, what cause is there wherefore it should not of it selfe be acknowledged a most apt and a likely meane, to leaue an *apprehension* of things diuine in our vnderstanding, & in the *mind an assent* thereunto? For touching the one, sith God, who knoweth and discloseth best the rich treasures of his owne wisdome, hath by deliuering his Word, made choise of the Scriptures, as the most effectuall meanes, whereby those Treasures might be imparted vnto the World, it followeth, that to make vnderstanding the Scripture must needs be euen of it selfe intended as a full and perfect discouerie, sufficient to imprint in vs the liuely character of all things necessarily required for the attainement of eternall Life. And concerning our assent to the mysteries of heauenly Truth, seeing that the Word of God, for the Authors sake, hath credit with all that confesse it (as we all doe) to be his Word, euery Proposition of holy Scripture, euery Sentence being to vs a Principle; if the Principles of all kindes of Knowledge else haue

2. Tim. 3. 15.

that vertue in themselues, whereby they are able to procure our assent vnto such conclusions, as the industrie of right discourse doth gather from them, we haue no reason to thinke the Principles of that Truth, which conducteth vnto mans euerlasting happinesse, lesse forcible then any other, when we know that of all other they are for their certaintie the most infallible. But as euery thing of price, so this doth require trauaile. We bring not the knowledge of God with vs into the World. And the lesse our owne opportunitie or ability is that way, the more wee neede the helpe of other mens Iudgements, to be our direction herein. Nor doth any man ouer beleeue, into whom the doctrine of beleefe is not instilled by instruction, some way receiued at the first from others. Whereby whatsoeuer fit meanes there are to notifie the mysteries of the Word of God, whether publiquely (which wee call *Preaching*) or in priuate howsoeuer, the Word by *euery such meane* euen *ordinarily* doth saue, and not onely by being deliuered vnto men in Sermons. *Sermons* are not *the only preaching* which doth saue Soules. For concerning the vse and sense of this Word *Preaching*, which they shut vp in so close a prison, although more then enough haue alreadie beene spoken, to redeeme the libertie thereof, yet because they insist so much, and so proudly insult thereon, we must a little inure their eares with hearing, how others whom they more regard, are in this case accustomed to vse the selfe-same language with vs, whose manner of speech they deride. [a] *Iustin Martyr* doubteth not to tell the Grecians, that euen in certaine of their *Writings* the very Iudgement to come is preached; nor the [b] Councell of Vasen to insinuate, that Presbyters, absent through infirmitie from their Churches, might be sayd to preach by those Deputies, who in their stead did but reade *Homilies*; nor the [c] Councell of Toledo, to call the vsuall publique reading of the *Gospels* in the Church, preachings; nor [d] others, long before these our dayes to write, that by him who but readeth a *Lesson* in the solemne Assemblie as part of Diuine Seruice, the very Office of Preaching is so far-forth executed. Such kind of speeches were then familiar, those phrases seemed not to them absurd, they would haue marueled to heare the [e] outcryes which we doe, because we think, that the Apostles *in writing*, & others *in reading* to the Church those Bookes which the Apostles wrote, are neyther rightly nor vnfitly sayd to *preach*. For although mens *Tongues* and their *Pennes* differ, yet to one and the selfe *same* generall, if not particular *effect*, they may both serue. It is no good argument, S. *Paul* could not *write with his Tongue*, therfore neither could he *preach with his Penne*. For preaching is a generall end whereunto writing and speaking doe both serue. Men speake not with the instruments of *writing*, neither write with the instruments of speech, & yet things *recorded* with the one, and *vttered* with the other, may be [f] *preached* well enough with both. By their patience therfore be it spoken, the Apostles preached as well when they wrote as when they spake the Gospell of Christ, and our vsuall *publique reading* of the Word of God for the peoples instruction, *is preaching*. Nor about words would we euer contend, were not their purpose in so restraining the same, iniurious to Gods most sacred Word and Spirit. It is on both sides confest, that the Word of God outwardly administred (his [g] Spirit inwardly concurring therewith) conuerteth, edifieth, and saueth Soules. Now whereas the externall admi-

a *Parænet. ad Græc. pag.* 17.
b *Concil Vasen.* 2. *ca.* 2.
c *Concil. Tol.* 4. *ca.* 18.
d *Raynt. de Diuin. Offic. lib.* 1. *cap.* 12, 13. *Isidor. de Eccles. Offic. lib.* 1. *ca.* 16.
e The Libell of *Schools. art.* 11. T. C. *lib.* 2. *pag.* 188.
f S. *Paule* writing is no more preaching, then his penne or his hand is his Tongue: seeing they cannot be the same, which cannot bee made by the same Instruments.
g *Euangelium manus & scriptiones. Rainol. de Rom. Eccles. Idololat. præf. ad Co. Essex.*
h *Iohn* 6. 45. *Matth.* 16. 17. 2. *Cor.* 4. 6. 1. *Cor.* 12. 3. *Act.* 16. 14.

administration of his Word is as well by reading barely the Scripture, as by explaining the same when Sermons thereon be made, in the one they deny, that the finger of God hath *ordinarily* certaine *principall operations*, which we most faithfully hold and beleeue that it hath in both.

22. So worthy a part of Diuine Seruice we should greatly wrong, if we did not esteeme Preaching as the blessed Ordinance of God, Sermons as Keyes to the Kingdome of Heauen, as Wings to the Soule, as Spurres to the good Affections of Men, vnto the sound and healthy as Foode, as Physicke vnto diseased minds. Wherefore how highly soeuer it may please them with words of truth to extoll Sermons, they shall not herein offend vs. We seeke not to derogate from any thing which they can iustly alleadge, but our desire is to vphold the iust estimation of that, from which it seemeth vnto vs they derogate more than becommeth them. That which offendeth vs, is, first the great disgrace which they offer vnto *our Calling* of bare reading the Word of God, and to his gracious Spirit, the *principall* vertue whereof thereby manifesting it selfe, for the endlesse good of mens Soules, euen the vertue which it hath to *conuert*, to *edifie*, to *saue* Soules; this they mightily striue to obscure: and secondly, the falshe whereunto they maintaine their opinion of Sermons, whereunto while they labour to appropriate the *saueing* power of the holy Ghost, they separate from all *apparent* hope of life and saluation thousands whom the goodnesse of Almighty God doth not exclude. Touching therefore the vse of Scripture, euen in that it is openly read, and the inestimable good which the Church of God by that very meane hath reaped; there was, yea may very well thinke, some cause, which moued the Apostle S. *Paul* to *a* require, that those things which any one Churches affaires gaue particular occasion to write, might for the instruction of all be published, and that by *reading*. 23. When the very hauing of the Bookes of God was a matter of no small charge and difficultie, in as much as they could not be had other wise then only in written Copies, it was the necessitie not of preaching things agreeable with the Word, but of reading the Word it selfe at large to the people, which caused Churches throughout the World to haue publique care, that the sacred Oracles of God being procured by common charge, might with great sedulitie be kept both intire and sincere. If then wee admire the prouidence of God in the same continuance of Scripture, notwithstanding the violent endeuors of Infidels to abolish, and the fraudulent of Heretiques alwayes to deprave the same, shal we set light by that custome of reading, from whence so precious a benefit hath growne? 24. The voice and testimonie of the Church acknowledging Scripture to be the Law of the liuing God, is for the truth and certaintie thereof no meane euidence. For if with reason we may presume vpon things which a few mens depositions doe testifie, suppose wee that the mindes of men are not both at their first accesse to the Schoole of Christ exceedingly moued, yea and for euer afterwards also confirmed much, when they consider the maine consent of all the Churches in the whole World witnessing the sacred authoritie of Scriptures, euer sithence the first publication thereof, euen till this present day and houre? And that they all haue alwayes so testified, I see not how we should possibly with a proofe more palpable, then this manifest reputed and euery-where

What they attribute to Sermons onely, and what we to Reading also.

a 1. *Thess.* 5. 27. *Colos.* 4. 16.

continued

continued custome of reading them publiquely as the Scriptures. The reading therefore of the Word of God, as the ſame hath ever been, in ordinarie direct, in the plaineſt evidence we have of the Churches eſtate and welfare, ſhewes that it is his Word. 3. A further commoditie this Cuſtome hath, which in its firſt riſe the very *ſimpleſt* and *rudeſt* have with ſuch infallible *Axiomes* and *Precepts* of ſacred Truth, delivered even in the *Gary Letter* of the Law of God, as might ſerve them for *Rules* whereby to judge the better *edifying* of Sermons and inſtructions which they heare. For which end and purpoſe, I ſee not how the Scripture could be poſſibly made familiar to the baſe, unleſſe ſometimes ſhould be read in the peoples hearing, ere by a Sermon it be opened. For whereas in a manner the whole Booke of God is by reading every yeare publiſhed, a ſmall part thereof, in compariſon of the whole, may hold very well the ordinarie Interpreter of Scripture occupied many times. 4. Be ſides, wherefore ſhould any man thinke, but that reading it ſelfe is one of the *ordinarie* meanes, whereby it pleaſeth God of his gracious goodneſſe to inſtill that *ſaving* Truth, which being *but ſo* received, is neither bitter to the *ſoule* nor *ſowre* to the *belly*? Thus much therefore we aſcribe to the reading of the *Word* of God, as the truth is in our Church. And becauſe it were odious, if they ſhould altogether deſpiſe that ſame, they could that reading may *ſet forward*, but not begin the work of ſalvation; that *Faith* may be *nouriſhed* therewith, but not bred; that therein moſt attention to the Scriptures, and their ſpecial ſanctification at the miniſtrie of God hath like efficacie, both being of power to *edify* and *build* the ſoule of the hearer without Sermons; that if any *ſalvage* by reading alone, we are to account it a miracle, no *extraordinary* worke of God. Wherein that which they grunte, would gladly accept to their behoofe, and without perſwaſion they would acquaint how little cauſe they have to *dote* that whereas yet they grant not, that Scripture is neceſſarie, that when the Books of the Law of God had been for long time miſſing, and *Ioſias* after ſearch, the King, which heard it but onely read, rent his cloathes, & with teares exclaimed, *Great is the wrath of the Lord upon us, becauſe our Fathers have not kept the Word, to do after all things which are written in this Booke*. This doth argue, that by hearing (for of Sermons at that time there is no mention) true repentance may be wrought in the hearts of ſuch as feare God, and yet incurre his diſpleaſure, the deſerved effect whereof is eternall death. So that their repentance (although it be not their firſt entrance) is not withſtanding the firſt ſtep of their reentrance into life, and may be in them wrought by the Word onely read vnto them. Beſides, it ſeemeth that God would have no man ſtand in doubt, but that the reading of Scripture is effectuall; as well *to lay* men *the firſt foundation*, as to adde degrees of further perfection in the feare of God. And therefore the Law ſaith, Thou ſhalt *read* this Law before all Iſrael, that men, women, and *children* may heare, yea, that even their children, which as yet *do not know* it, may heare it, and by hearing it learne, may *learne to feare* the Lord. Our Lord and Saviour was in this of opinion, that they which would not be drawne to amendment of life by the exhortations which *Moſes* and the Prophets have given, concerning the miſeries that follow ſinners after death, were not likely to be perſwaded by other meanes, although God from the very dead ſhould have raiſed them up Preachers. Many heare

a *Deut.* 6. 9.
Iſa. 8. 16.

b T.C. lib. 2. pag. 376, 377, 391.
c Pag. 378.
d Pag. 383.

e 2. *Chro.* 34. 28.

2. *Chro.* 34. 3.

f *Deut.* 31. 13.

g *Luke* 16. 29.

heare the Bookes of God, and beleeue them not. Howbeit, their vnbeleefe in that caſe we may not impute vnto any weakneſſe or vnſufficiency in the meane which is vſed towards them, but to the wilfull bent of their obſtinate hearts againſt it. With minds obdurate nothing preuaileth. As well they that preach, as they that reade vnto ſuch, ſhall ſtill haue cauſe to complaine with the Prophets which were of old, *Who will giue credit vnto our Teaching?* But with whom ordinarie meanes will preuayle, ſurely the power of the Word of God, euen without the helpe of Interpreters in *Gods Church*, worketh mightily, not vnto their confirmation alone which are conuerted, but alſo to their conuerſion which are not. It ſhall not boote them who derogate from reading, to excuſe it, when they ſee no other remedy, as if their intent were onely to deny, that *Aliens* and ſtrangers from the Family of God are wonne, or that beleefe doth vſe to be wrought at the firſt in *them*, without Sermons. For they know it is our cuſtome of ſimple reading, *not for conuerſion of Infidels* eſtranged from the Houſe of God, but for *inſtruction of men baptized*, bred and brought vp *in the* Boſome of the Church, which they deſpile as a thing vneffectuall to ſaue *ſuch* Soules. In *ſuch* they imagine that God hath no ordinarie meane to worke Faith without Sermons. The reaſon, why no man can attayne beleefe by the bare contemplation of Heauen and Earth, is, for that they neyther are ſufficient to giue vs as much as the leaſt ſparke of Light concerning the very principall Myſteries of our Faith; and whatſoeuer we may learne by them, the ſame we can onely attaine to know, according to the manner of naturall Sciences, which meere diſcourſe of Wit and Reaſon findeth out, whereas the things which wee properly beleeue, be onely ſuch, as are receiued vpon the credit of Diuine Teſtimonie. Seeing therefore, that he which conſidereth the creatures of God, findeth therein both theſe defects, and neyther the one nor the other in Scriptures, becauſe he that readeth vnto vs the Scriptures, deliuereth all the Myſteries of Faith, and not any thing amongſt them all more then the mouth of the Lord doth warrant: it followeth in thoſe two reſpects, that our conſideration of Creatures and attention vnto Scriptures are not in themſelues, and without Sermons, things of like diſabilitie to *breede* or *beget* Faith. Small cauſe alſo there is, why any man ſhould greatly wonder as at an extraordinarie worke, if without Sermons, Reading be found to effect thus much. For I would know by ſome ſpeciall inſtance, what one Article of Chriſtian Faith, or what dutie required neceſſarily vnto all mens ſaluation there is, which the very reading of the Word of God is not *apt* to notifie. Effects are miraculous and ſtrange, when they grow by vnlikely meanes. But did we euer heare it accounted for a wonder, that he which doth reade, ſhould beleeue and liue according to the will of Almighty God? [a] Reading doth conuey to the mind that Truth, without addition or diminution, which Scripture hath deriued from the holy Ghoſt. And the end of all Scripture is the ſame which [b] *S. Iohn* propoſeth in the writing of that moſt Diuine Goſpell, namely, *Faith*, and through Faith, *Saluation*. Yea, all Scripture is to this effect [c] *in it ſelfe* auaileable, as they which wrote it were perſwaded; vnleſſe wee ſuppoſe, that the Euangeliſt, or others, in ſpeaking of their owne intent to inſtruct and to ſaue by writing, had a ſecret conceit which they neuer opened vnto any, a conceit that no man

a *Acts 24.14.*

b *Iohn 20.31.*

c *Prou. 1.2, 3, 4. Rom. 1.16. 2. Tim. 3.15.*

in

in the World should euer be that way the better for any Sentence by them written, till such time as the same might chance to be preached vpon, or alleged at the least in a Sermon. Otherwise, if he which writeth, doe that which is forceable in it selfe, how should he which readeth, be thought to do that which in it selfe is of no force to worke beliefe, and to saue beleeuers? Now, although we haue very iust cause to stand in some iealousie and feare, left by thus ouervaluing their Sermons, they make the price and estimation of Scripture, otherwise notified, to fall: neuertheless, so impatient they are, that being but requested to let vs know what causes they leane for mens incouragement to attend to the reading of the Scripture, if Sermons only be the power of God to saue euery one which beleeueth; that which we mooue for our better learning and instructions sake, turneth vnto anger and choler in them, they grow altogether out of quietnesse with it, they answer fumingly, that they are *ashamed to defile their Pennes with making answere to such idle questions*: yet in this their moode they cast forth somewhat, wherewith vnder paine of greater displeasure wee must rest contented. They tell vs, the profit of reading is singular, in that it serueth for a preparatiue vnto Sermons; it helpeth prettily towards the nourishment of Faith, which Sermons haue once ingendred; it is some stay to his minde which readeth the Scripture, when hee findeth the same things there which are taught in Sermons, and thereby perceiueth how God doth concurre in opinion with the Preacher; besides, it keepeth Sermons in memorie, and doth in that respect, although not feed the Soule of man, yet helpe the retentiue force of that stomack of the minde, which receiueth ghostly foode at the Preachers hand. But the principall cause of *writing* the Gospell was, *that it might be preached* vpon or interpreted by publique Ministers, apt & authorised thereunto. Is it credible, that a superstitious conceit (for it is no better) concerning Sermons, should in such sort both darken their eyes, and yet sharpen their wits withall, that the onely true and weightie cause why Scripture was written, the cause which in Scripture is so often mentioned, the cause which all men haue euer till this present day acknowledged, this they should cleane exclude, as being no cause at all, and loade vs with so great store of strange concealed causes, which did neuer see light till now? In which number the rest must needs be of moment, when the very chiefest cause of committing the sacred Word of God vnto Bookes, is surmized to haue beene, left the Preacher should want a Text whereupon to scholie. Men of Learning hold it for a slip in iudgement, when offer is made to demonstrate that as proper to one thing, which reason findeth common vnto moe. Whereas therefore they take from all kinds of teaching that which they attribute to Sermons, it had been their part to yeeld directly some strong reason, why betweene *Sermons alone* and *Faith* there should be *ordinarily* that coherence which causes haue with their vsuall effects, why a Christian mans beliefe should so naturally grow from Sermons, and not possibly from any other kinde of teaching. In beliefe there being but these two operations, *Apprehension* and *Assent*, doe onely Sermons cause beliefe, in that no other way is able to explaine the mysteries of God, that the mind may rightly apprehend or conceiue them as behoueth? Wee all know, that many things are beleeued, although they be intricate, obscure, and darke, although they exceede

a T. C. lib. 2. pag. 376.

ceed the reach and capacitie of our wits, yea although in this world they be no way poſſible to bee vnderſtood. Many things beleeued are likewiſe ſo plaine, that euery common perſon may therein bee vnto himſelfe a ſufficient expounder. Finally, to explaine euen thoſe things which need and admit explication; many other vſuall wayes there are beſides Sermons. Therefore Sermons are not the only ordinary meanes whereby we *firſt* come to *apprehend* the myſteries of God. Is it in regard then of Sermons only, that apprehending the Goſpell of Chriſt wee yeeld thereunto our vnfained aſſent as to a thing infallible true? They which rightly conſider after what ſort the heart of man hereunto is framed, muſt of neceſſitie acknowledge, that who ſo aſſenteth to the words of eternall life, doth it in regard of his *authoritie* whoſe words they are. This is in mans conuerſion vnto God τὸ εἶναι ἀρχὴ τῆς εὐθυμίας, the firſt ſtep whereat his race towards Heauen beginneth. Vnleſſe therefore, cleane contrary to our owne experience, wee ſhall thinke it a miracle if any man acknowledge the diuine authoritie of the Scripture, till ſome Sermon haue perſwaded him thereunto, and that otherwiſe neyther conuerſation in the boſome of the Church, nor religious education, nor the reading of learned mens bookes, nor information receiued by conference, nor whatſoeuer paine and diligence in hearing, ſtudying, meditating day and night on the law, is ſo farre bleſt of God as to worke this effect in any man, how would they haue vs to grant, that faith doth not come but only by *hearing Sermons?* [a] Faine they would haue vs to beleeue the Apoſtle Saint *Paul* himſelfe to bee the Author of this their paradox, only becauſe he ſaid, that it pleaſeth God by the [b] *fooliſhneſs of preaching*, to ſaue them which beleeue; and againe, [c] *How ſhall they call on him in whom they haue not beleeued? How ſhall they beleeue in him of whom they haue not heard? How ſhall they heare without a Preacher? How ſhall men preach except they be ſent?* To anſwere therefore both allegations at once, the very ſubſtance of that they containe is in few but this. Life and ſaluation God will haue *offered vnto all*; his will is that *Gentiles* ſhould be ſaued as well as *Iewes*. Saluation belongeth vnto none but ſuch *as call vpon the name of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt*. Which *Nations as yet vnconuerted* neyther doe *nor poſſibly can doe till they beleeue*. What they are to beleeue, impoſſible it is they ſhould know till they *heare it*. Their hearing requireth *our preaching* vnto them. [d] *Tertullian*, to draw euen *Painimes* themſelues vnto Chriſtian beleefe, willeth *the Bookes* of the olde Teſtament to be *ſearched*, which were at that time in *Ptolomeis* Library. And men did not lift to trauell ſo farre, though it were for their endleſſe good, hee addeth, that in *Rome* and other places the *Iewes* had Synagogues, whereunto euery one which would might reſort, that this kind of libertie they purchaſed by payment of a ſtanding tribute, that there they did openly [e] *read* the Scriptures; and whoſoeuer *will heare* (ſayth *Tertullian*) *hee ſhall find God, whoſoeuer will ſtudy to know, ſhall be alſo faine to beleeue*. But ſith there is no likelihood that euer voluntarily they will ſeeke inſtruction at our hands, it remaineth that vnleſſe we will ſuffer them to periſh, ſaluation it ſelfe muſt ſeeke them, it behoueth GOD to *ſend* them Preachers as hee did *his elect Apoſtles* throughout the World. There is [f] *knowledge* which GOD hath alwayes reuealed vnto them in the *workes of nature*. This they honor and eſteeme highly as profound *wiſedome*; howbeit this wiſedome faileth

a T.C. *lib.* 2. *pag.* 375.
b 1. *Cor.* 1. 21.
c *Rom.* 10. 14.
d *Apologet. cap.* 18. *in fine.*
e This they did in a tongue which to all learned man amongſt the Heathens, and to a great part of the ſimpleſt was familiarly knowne: as appeareth by a ſupplication offered vnto the Emperour *Iuſtinian*, wherein the Iewes make requeſt that it might be lawfull for them to reade the Greeke tranſlation of the 70. Interpreters in their Synagogues, as their cuſtome before had beene, *Authent.* 146. *coll.* 10. *incipit Aequum ſanc.*

ueth them not. That which muſt ſaue beleeuers, is *the knowledge of the croſſe of Chriſt, the only ſubiect of all our preaching*. And in their eyes what doth this ſeeme as yet but *folly?* It pleaſeth God by the *fooliſhneſſe of preaching* to ſaue. Theſe words declare how admirable force thoſe Myſteries haue, which the world doth deride as follies, they ſhew that the *fooliſhnes of the Croſſe of Chriſt* is the *wiſdome of true beleeuers*, they concerne the *obiect* of our faith, the [a] *matter preached of* and beleeued in by Chriſtian men. This we know that the Grecians or Gentiles did account fooliſhneſſe, but that they euer did thinke it a *fond* or vnlikely *way* to ſeek mens conuerſion by *Sermons*, we haue not heard. Manifeſt therefore it is, that the Apoſtles applying the name of *fooliſhneſſe* in ſuch ſort as they did, muſt needes, by the *fooliſhneſſe of preaching*, meane the Doctrine of Chriſt, which wee learne that we may be ſaued, but that Sermons are the only manner of teaching, whereby it pleaſeth our Lord to ſaue, hee could not meane. In like ſort, where the ſame Apoſtle proueth, that as well the *ſending of the Apoſtles*, as their preaching *to the Gentiles*, was neceſſary, dare we affirme it was euer his meaning, that vnto their Saluation, who euen from their tender Infancie neuer knew any other Faith or Religion then only Chriſtian, *no kind of teaching* can be auaileable, *ſauing that* which was ſo needfull for the firſt vniuerſall conuerſion of Gentiles hating Chriſtianity; neither the *ſending* of any ſort allowable in the one caſe, except onely of ſuch as had beene in the other alſo moſt fit and worthy Inſtruments? *Beliefe in all ſorts* doth come by harkning and *attending to the Word of Life*. Which Word ſometime propoſeth and preacheth it ſelfe to the hearer, ſometime they deliuer it, whom priuately Zeale and Pietie moueth to be Inſtructors of others by conference; ſometime of them it is taught, whom the Church hath called to the publike, eyther reading thereof, or interpreting. All theſe tend vnto one effect, neyther doth that which Saint *Paul* or other Apoſtles teach, concerning the neceſſitie of *ſuch teaching* as theirs was, or of *ſending ſuch* as they were, for *that purpoſe vnto the Gentiles*, preiudice the efficacie of *any other way* of publike inſtruction, or inforce the vtter diſabilitie of any other mens Vocation thought requiſite in this Church for the ſauing of ſoules, where meanes more effectuall are wanting. Their only proper and direct proofe of the thing in queſtion had beene to ſhew, in what ſort, and how farre mans ſaluation doth neceſſarily depend vpon the knowledge of the Word of God; what conditions, properties, and qualities there are, whereby Sermons are diſtinguiſhed from other kindes of adminiſtring the Word vnto that purpoſe; and what ſpeciall propertie or qualitie that is, which being no where found but in Sermons, maketh them effectuall to ſaue ſoules, and leaueth all other Doctrinall meanes beſides deſtitute of vitall efficacie. Theſe pertinent Inſtructions, whereby they might ſatisfie vs, and obtayne the cauſe it ſelfe for which they contend, theſe things which onely would ſerue they leaue, (and which needeth not) ſometime they trouble themſelues with fretting at the ignorance of ſuch as withſtand them in their Opinion; ſometime they [b] fall vpon their poore Brethren which can but reade, and againſt *them* they are bitterly eloquent. If wee alleage what the Scriptures themſelues doe vſually ſpeake for the ſauing force of the Word of God, not with reſtraint to any one certaine kinde of deliuerie, but howſoeuer the ſame ſhall chance to bee made knowne, yet

[a] The Apoſtle vſeth the word κήρυγμα and not κήρυξιν.

[b] T. C. lib. 2. pag. 173. This ſtyle of Readers. The Biſhops more then beggerly Preſents. Thoſe Raſcall Miniſters.

yet by one triche or other they alwaies [a] reſtraine it vnto Sermons. Our Lord and Sauior hath ſaid, [b] *Search the Scriptures, in them ye thinke to haue eternall life.* But they tell vs, hee ſpake to the Iewes, which Iewes before *had heard his Sermons*; and that peraduenture it was his minde they ſhould ſearce, not by reading, nor by hearing them read, but by attending, whenſoeuer the Scriptures ſhould happen to bee alledged in Sermons. Furthermore, hauing receiued Apoſtolique doctrine, [c] the Apoſtle Saint *Paul* hath taught vs to eſteeme the ſame as the ſupreame Rule, whereby all other doctrines muſt for euer bee examined. Yea, but in as much as the Apoſtle doth there ſpeake of *that hee had preached*, hee *ſlatly maketh* (as they ſtrangely affirme) *his preachings* or Sermons *the Rule*, whereby to examine all. And then, I beſeech you, what Rule haue we thereby to iudge or examine any? For, if Sermons muſt be our rule, becauſe the Apoſtles Sermons were ſo to their hearers; then, ſith we are not as they were, hearers of the Apoſtles Sermons, it reſteth that either the Sermons which we heare ſhould be our rule, or (that being abſurd) there will (which yet hath greater abſurditie) no rule at all be remaining for triall, what doctrines now are corrupt, what conſonant with heauenly truth. Againe, let [d] the ſame Apoſtle acknowledge all Scripture profitable to teach, to improue, to correct, to inſtruct in righteouſnes. Still notwithſtanding we erre, if hereby we preſume to gather, that Scripture read, will auaile vnto any one of all theſe vſes; they teach vs the meaning of the words to be, that ſo much the Scripture can doe, if the Miniſter that way apply it in his Sermons, otherwiſe not. Finally, they neuer heare ſentence which mentioneth the Word or Scripture, but forth-with their gloſes vpon it are, the Word preached, the Scripture explained or deliuered vnto vs in Sermons. Sermons they euermore vnderſtand to be that Word of God, which alone hath vitall operation, the dangerous ſequele of which conſtruction I wiſh they did more attentiuely waigh. For ſith, ſpeech is the very image, whereby the minde and ſoule of the ſpeaker conueyeth it ſelfe into the boſome of him which heareth, we cannot chooſe but ſee great reaſon, wherefore the Word that proceedeth from God, who is himſelfe very truth and life, ſhould be (as the Apoſtle to the [e] *Hebrewes* noteth) liuely and mighty in operation, ſharper then any two-edged ſword. Now, if in this and the like places we did conceiue, that our owne Sermons are that ſtrong & forcible Word, ſhould we not hereby impart euen the moſt peculiar glorie of the Word of God, vnto that which is not his word? For, touching our ſermons, that which giueth them their very being, is the wit of man, and therefore they often-times accordingly taſte too much of that ouer-corrupt fountaine from which they come. In our ſpeech of moſt holy things, our moſt fraile affections many times are bewraied. Wherefore, when we read or recite the Scripture, we then deliuer to the people properly the Word of God. As for our Sermons, be they neuer ſo ſound & perfect, his Word they are not, as the Sermons of the Prophets were; no, they are but ambiguouſly termed his Word, becauſe his Word is commonly the ſubiect whereof they treat, and muſt be the rule whereby they are framed. Notwithſtanding, by theſe and the like ſhifts they deriue vnto Sermons alone, whatſoeuer is generally ſpoken concerning the Word. Againe, what ſeemeth to haue beene vttered concerning Sermons, and their efficacie or neceſſitie, *in regard of*

a *T.C.l.2.p.37.*
b *Ioh.5.39.*
c *Gal.1.9.*
d *1.Tim.3.16.*
e *Heb.4.12.*

diuine matter, & must consequently be verified in sundry other kinds of teaching, if *the matter* be the same in all, their vse is to fasten euery such speech vnto that one only manner of teaching, which is by Sermons, that still Sermons may be all in all. [a] Thus, because *Salomon* declareth that the people decay or *perish* for want of knowledge, where [b] no *prophecying* at all is; they gather that the hope of life and saluation is cut off, where Preachers are not which *prophesie by Sermons*, how many soeuer they be in number that reade daily the Word of God, and deliuer, though in other sort, the selfe same matter which Sermons doe. The people which haue no way to come to the knowledge of God, no *prophecying*, no teaching, perish. But that they should of necessitie perish, where any one way of knowledge lacketh, is more then the words of *Salomon* import. [c] Another vsuall point of their arte in this present question, is to make very large and plentifull discourses, how Christ is by sermons [d] lifted vp *higher*, and made more [e] apparent to the eye of Faith; how the [f] sauour of the Word is more sweet being brayed, and more able to nourish being diuided by preaching, then by only reading proposed; how Sermons are the keyes of the Kingdome of heauen, and doe open the Scriptures, which being but read, remaine *in comparison* still clasped; how God [g] giueth richer increase of grace to the ground, that is planted and watered by preaching, then by bare and simple reading. Out of which premises declaring how attainement vnto life is easier where Sermons are, they conclude an [h] *impossibilitie* thereof where Sermons are not. *Alcibiades* the Sophister hath many arguments, to proue that voluntary and extemporall farre excelleth premeditated speech: The like whereunto and in part the same are brought by them, who commend Sermons, as being (which all men, I thinke, will acknowledge) of sundrie [i] peculiar and proper vertues; such as no other way of teaching besides hath. Aptnesse to follow particular occasions presently growing, to put life into words by countenance, voice and gesture, to preuaile mightily in the fundamine affections of men, this Sermons may challenge. Wherein notwithstanding so eminent properties whereof lessons are happily destitute, yet lessons being free from some inconueniences, whereunto Sermons are more subiect, they may in this respect no lesse take, then in other they must giue the hand which betokeneth preeminence. For there is nothing which is not some way exceld, euen by that which is doth excell. Sermons therefore and lessons may each excell other in some respects, without any preiudice vnto either, as touching that vitall force which they both haue in the worke of our saluation. To which effect when we haue endeuoured as much as in vs doth lye, to find out the strongest causes, wherefore they should imagine that reading is it selfe so vnauaileable, the most wee can learne at their hands, is, that Sermons are [k] *the ordinance of God*, the Scriptures *darke*, and the labour of reading *vaine*. First, therefore as we know that God doth ayde with his grace, and by his speciall prouidence euer-more blesse with happy successe those things which himselfe appointeth, so his Church, we perswade our selues, he hath not in such sort giuen ouer to a reprobate sence, that whatsoeuer it deuiseth for the good of the soules of men, the same he doth still secunde and make fruitfull. Or if hee alwaies did defeat the ordinances of his Church, [l] is not reading the ordinance of God? Wherefore then should we

thinke

a T.C. lib.2. pag.381.
b Prou. 29.18.
c T.C. lib.2. pag.379.
d 2.Cor.2.16.
e 2.Tim.2.15.
f Matth.16.19.
g 1.Cor.3.6.
h T.C. lib.2. pag.380. No saluation to bee looked for, where no Preaching is.
i T.C. lib.2. pag.395.
k T.C. lib.2. pag.396.
l Deut.31.13.

thinke that the force of his ſecret grace is accuſtomed to bleſſe the labour of diuiding his Word, according vnto each mans priuate diſcretion in publike Sermons, and to with-draw it ſelfe from concurring with the publike deliuerie thereof, by ſuch ſelected portions of Scripture, as the whole Church hath ſolemnely appointed to be read for the peoples good, either by ordinarie courſe, or otherwiſe, according to the exigence of ſpeciall occaſions? Reading (ſaith [a] *Iſidore*) is to the hearers no ſmall edifying. To them whoſe [b] delight and meditation is in the Law, ſeeing that happineſſe and bliſſe belongeth, it is not in vs to deny them the benefit of heauenly grace. And I hope we may preſume, that a rare thing it is not in the Church of God, euen for that very Word which is read to be both preſently their [c] ioy, and afterwards their ſtudie that heare it. [d] S. *Auguſtine* ſpeaking of deuout men, noteth, how they daily frequented the Church, how attentiue eare they gaue vnto the Leſſons & Chapters read, how carefull they were to remember the ſame, and to muſe thereupon by themſelues. [e] S. *Cyprian* obſerueth, that reading was not without effect in the hearts of men. Their ioy and alacritie was to him an argument, that there is in this Ordinance a bleſſing, ſuch as ordinarily doth accompanie the adminiſtration of the Word of Life. It were much if there ſhould be ſuch a difference betweene the hearing of Sermons preached & of Leſſons read in the Church, that he which preſenteth himſelfe at the one, and maketh his Prayer with the Prophet [f] *Dauid*, *Teach me, O Lord, the way of thy Statutes; direct me in the path of thy Commandements*, might haue the ground of vſuall experience wherupon to build his hope of preuailing with God, and obtayning the grace he ſeeketh; they contrariwiſe not ſo, who craue the like aſſiſtance of his Spirit, when they giue eare to the reading of the other. In this therefore, preaching and reading are equall, that both are approoued as his Ordinances both aſſiſted with his grace. And if his grace doe aſſiſt them both to the nouriſhment of Faith already bred, we cannot, without ſome very manifeſt cauſe yeelded, imagine that in breeding or begetting Faith, his grace doth cleaue to the one, and vtterly forſake the other. Touching [g] *hardnes*, which is the ſecond pretended impediment, as againſt Homilies, being plaine & popular inſtructions, it is no bar, ſo neither doth it infringe the efficacie, no not of Scriptures, although but read. The force of reading, how ſmall ſoeuer they would haue it, muſt of neceſſitie be granted ſufficient to notifie that which is plaine or eaſie to bee vnderſtood. And of things neceſſary to all mens ſaluation, wee haue beene hitherto accuſtomed to hold (eſpecially ſithence the publiſhing of the Goſpell of Ieſus Chriſt, whereby the ſimpleſt hauing now a Key vnto knowledge, which the [h] *Eunuch* in the *Acts* did want, our children may of themſelues by reading vnderſtand that, which hee without an Interpreter could not) they are in Scripture plaine and eaſie to bee vnderſtood. As for thoſe things which at the firſt are obſcure and daily, when memorie hath laid them vp for a time, iudgement afterwards growing explaneth them. Scripture therefore is not *ſo hard*, but that the *only reading* thereof may giue life vnto willing hearers. The eaſie performance of which holy labour, is in like ſort a very cold obiection, to preiudice the vertue thereof. For what though an *Infidell*, yea, though *a child* may be able to reade; there is no doubt, but the meaneſt and worſt amongſt the people vnder the

[a] *De Eccleſ. offic. lib. 1. cap. 10*
[b] *Pſal. 1. 2.*
[c] *Pſal. 119. 16*
[d] *Aug. in Pſ. 68*
[e] *Cyprian. lib. 2. Epiſt. 5. Lector perſonat verba ſublimia, Euangelium Chriſti lego, à fratribus conſpicitur, cum gaudio fraternitatis auditur.*
[f] *Pſ. 119. 33, 35.*
[g] *T. 1. 2. 383, 384, 392.*
[h] *Acts 8. 31.*

Law, had been as able as the Priests themselues were to offer Sacrifice. Did this make Sacrifice of no effect vnto that purpose for which it was instituted? In Religion some duties are not cõmended so much by the hardnesse of their execution, as by the worthinesse and dignitie of that acceptation wherein they are held with God. We admire the goodnesse of God in nature, when we consider how he hath prouided, that things most needfull to preserue this life, should be most prompt and easie for all liuing creatures to come by. Is it not as euident a signe of his wonderfull prouidence ouer vs, when that food of eternall life, vpon the *vtter want* wherof our endlesse death and destruction necessarily ensueth, is prepared and alwayes set in such a readinesse, that those very meanes then which nothing is more easie may suffice to procure the same? Surely, if we perish, it is not the lacke of Scribes and learned Expounders that can bee our iust excuse. The Word which saueth our soules is neere vs, we need for knowledge but [a] to reade and liue. The man which readeth the Word of God, the Word it selfe doth pronounce blessed, if hee also obserue the same. Now all these things being well considered, it shall bee no intricate matter for any man to iudge with indifferencie on which part the good of the Church is most conueniently sought; whether on ours, whose opinion is such as hath beene shewed, or else on [b] theirs, who leauing no ordinary way of saluation for them vnto whom the Word of God is but only read, doe seldome name them but with great disdayne and contempt who execute that seruice in the Church of Christ. By meanes whereof it hath come to passe, that Churches, which cannot enioy the benefit of vsuall Preaching, are iudged, as it were euen forsaken of God, forlorne, and without either hope or comfort: Contrariwise, those places which euery day for the most part are at Sermons as the flowing Sea, doe both by their emptinesse at times of reading, and by other apparent tokens shew to the voice of the liuing God, this way sounding in the eares of men a great deale lesse reuerence then were meete. But if no other euill were knowne to grow thereby, who can choose but thinke them cruell which doe beare them so boldly teach, that [c] if God (as to him there is nothing impossible) doe happily saue any such as continue where they haue all other meanes of instruction, but are not taught by continuall preaching, yet this is miraculous, and more then the fitnesse of so poore instruments can giue any man cause to hope for, that [d] Sacraments are not effectuall to saluation, except men be instructed by *preaching before* they be made partakers of them; yea, that both [e] Sacraments and Prayers also, where Sermons are not, *Do not only not feed, but are ordinarily to further condemnation?* What mans hart doth not rise at the mention of these things? It is true that the weaknesse of our wits and the dulnesse of our affections doe make vs for the most part, euen as our Lords own Disciples were for a certaine time, hard and slow to beleeue what is written. For helpe whereof expositions and exhortations are needfull, & that in the most effectuall manner. The principall Churches throughout the Land, and no small part of the rest being in this respect by the goodnesse of God so abundantly prouided for, they which want the like furtherance vnto knowledge, wherewith it were greatly to be desired that they also did abound, are yet, we hope, not left in so extreme destitution, that iustly any man should thinke the ordinarie meanes

a *Apoc.1.3.*

b *T.C.l.4.363. Pag.373.*

c *Pag.364.375. 380.383.384.*

d *Pag.391.*

e *Pag.364.*

of

of eternall life taken from them, becauſe their teaching is in publique for the moſt part but by reading. For which cauſe amongſt whom there are not thoſe helps that others haue to ſet them forward in the way of life, ſuch to diſ-hearten with fearefull ſentences, as though their ſaluation could hardly be hoped for, is not in our vnderſtanding ſo conſonant with Chriſtian Charitie. Wee holde it ſafer a great deale and better to giue them [a] incouragement; to put them in minde that it is not the deepneſſe of their knowledge, but the [b] ſinglenеſſe of their beliefe which God accepteth; that they which [c] hunger and thirſt after righteouſneſſe, ſhall bee ſatisfied; that no [d] imbecillitie of meanes can preiudice the truth of the promiſe of God herein; that the weaker their helpes are, the more their neede is to ſharpen the edge of their owne [e] induſtrie; and that [f] painefulneſſe by ſeeble meanes ſhall bee able to gaine that, which in the plentie of more forcible inſtruments is through ſlouth and negligence loſt. As for the men, with whome we haue thus farre taken paines to conferre, about the force of the Word of God, either read by it ſelfe, or opened in Sermons; their ſpeeches concerning both the one and the other are in truth ſuch, as might giue vs very iuſt cauſe to thinke, that the reckoning is not great which they make of either. For howſoeuer they haue beene driuen to deuiſe ſome odde kindes of blind vſes, whereunto they may anſwere that reading doth ſerue, yet the reading of the Word of God in publique more then their Preachers bare text, who will not iudge that they deeme needleſſe, when if wee chance at any time to terme it neceſſarie, as being a thing which God himſelfe did inſtitute amongſt the Iewes for purpoſes that touch as well vs as them; a thing which the Apoſtles commend vnder the old, and ordaine vnder the New Teſtament; a thing whereof the Church of God hath euer ſithence the firſt beginning reaped ſingular commoditie; a thing which without exceeding great detriment no Church can omit? they onely are the men that euer were heard of, by whom this hath beene croſt and gainſaid, they onely the men which haue giuen their peremptory ſentence to the contrary, [g] *It is vntrue that ſimple reading is neceſſary in the Church.* And why vntrue? *Becauſe although it be very conuenient which is vſed in ſome Churches, where before preaching time the Church aſſembled hath the Scriptures read in ſuch order, that the whole Canon thereof is often times in one yeare runne thorough: yet a number of Churches which haue no ſuch order of ſimple reading, cannot be in this point charged with breach of Gods commandement, which they might be if ſimple reading were neceſſary.* A poore, a cold and an hungrie cauill. Shall wee therefore to pleaſe them change the word *Neceſſary*, and ſay that it hath beene a commendable order, a cuſtome very expedient, or an ordinance moſt profitable (whereby they know right well that wee meane exceedingly behoofull) to read the Word of God at large in the Church, whether it bee as our manner is, or as theirs is whom they preferre before vs? It is not this that will content or ſatisfie their minde. They haue againſt it a marueilous deepe & profound axiome, [h] that *Two things of one and the ſame end cannot but very improperly be ſaid moſt profitable.* And therefore if preaching be moſt *profitable* to moue ſaluation, then is not reading; if reading bee, then preaching is not. Are they reſolued then at the leaſtwiſe, if preaching bee the onely ordinary meane whereby it pleaſeth

a *Eccleſ.* 51. 26.27. *Matth.* 11.30.
b 1.*Tim.* 1.5. *Rom.* 14.1. 1.*Theſſ.* 1.10.
c *Matth.* 5.6.
d *Phil.* 1.6. 1.*Pet.* 5.10. *Matth.* 3.9.
e 1.*Theſſ.* 2.18. *Hebr.* 10.34. *Iude verſ.* 20. 1.*Pet.* 4.10.
f *Luke* 11.31.

g *T.C. lib.* 2. *pag.* 381.

h *T.C. lib.* 2. *pag.* 372.

God to saue our soules, what kind of preaching it is which doth saue? Vnderstand they how or in what respect there is that force and vertue in preaching? We haue reason wherefore to make these demaunds, for that although their pennes run all vpon *Preaching* and *Sermons*, yet when themselues doe practise that whereof they write, they change their Dialect, and those words they shunne, as if there were in them some secret sting. It is not their phrase to say they *preach*, or to giue to their owne instructions and exhortations the name of Sermons; the paine they take themselues in this kinde is either *opening* or Lecturing, or Reading, or Exercising, but in no case *preaching*. [a] And in this present question they also warily protest that what they ascribe to the vertue of preaching, they still meane it of good preaching: Now one of them saith that a good Sermon [b] must expound and apply a large portion of the Text of Scripture at one time. Another giueth vs to vnderstand, that sound preaching [c] *is not to doe as one did at London, who spent most of his time in inuectiues against good men, and told his audience how the Magistrate should haue an eye to such as troubled the peace of the Church.* The [d] best of them hold it for no good preaching, *when a man endeuoureth to make a glorious shew of eloquence and learning, rather then to apply himselfe to the capacitie of the simple.* But let them shape vs out a good Preacher by what patterne soeuer pleaseth them best, let them exclude and inclose whom they will with their definitions, we are not desirous to enter into any contention with them about this, or to abate the conceit they haue of their owne waies, so that, when once wee are agreed what Sermons shall currantly passe for good, wee may at the length vnderstand from them what that is in a good Sermon which doth make it the Word of life vnto such as heare. If substance of matter, euidence of things, strength and validitie of arguments and proofes, or if any other vertue else which words and sentences may containe, of all this what is there in the best Sermons being vttered, which they lose by being read? But they vtterly denie that the reading either of Scriptures, or Homilies and Sermons can euer by the ordinarie grace of God saue any soule. So that although wee had all the Sermons word for word which *Iames*, *Paul*, *Peter*, and the rest of the Apostles made, some one of which Sermons was of power to conuert thousands of the hearers vnto Christian faith; yea although wee had all the instructions, exhortations, consolations which came from the gracious lips of our Lord Iesus Christ himselfe, and should reade them ten thousand times ouer, to faith and saluation, no man could thereby hope to attaine. Whereupon it must of necessitie follow, that the vigor and vitall efficacie of Sermons doth grow from certaine accidents which are not in them but in their Maker; his vertue, his gesture, his countenance, his zeale, the motion of his bodie, and the inflection of his voice who first vttereth them as his owne, is that which giueth them the forme, the nature, the very essence of instruments auailable to eternall life. If they like neither that nor this, what remaineth but that their finall conclusion bee, *Sermons wee know are the onely ordinary meanes to saluation, but why or how wee cannot tell?* Wherefore to end this tedious controuersie, wherein the too great importunitie of our ouer-eager Aduersaries hath constrayned vs much longer to dwell, then the barrennesse of so poore a taske could haue seemed

a *T.C.lib.2. pag. 385.*

b *Complaint of the commissaries.*

c *Dod. Sermo. Painter. pag. 21.*

d *T.C.lib.2. pag. 385.*

ſeemed at the firſt likely either to require or to admit, if they which without partialities and paſſions are accuſtomed to weigh all things, and accordingly to giue their ſentence, ſhall here ſit downe to receiue our Audit, and to caſt vp the whole reckoning on both ſides, the ſumme which truth amounteth vnto will appeare to bee but this, that as medicines prouided of nature, and applied by arte for the benefit of bodily health, take effect ſometime vnder and ſometime aboue the naturall proportion of their vertue, according as the minde and fancie of the patient doth more or leſſe concurre with them: So whether we barely reade vnto men the Scriptures of God; or by Homilies concerning matter of beliefe and converſation ſeeke to lay before them the duties which they owe vnto God and man; whether wee deliuer them Bookes to reade and conſider of in priuate at their owne beſt leaſure, or call them to the hearing of Sermons publiquely in the houſe of God; albeit euery of theſe and the like vnto theſe meanes doe truely and daily effect that in the hearts of men, for which they are each and all meant, yet the operation which they haue in common being moſt ſenſible and moſt generally noted in one kinde aboue the reſt, that one hath in ſome mens opinions drowned altogether the reſt, and iniuriouſly brought to paſſe that they haue beene thought not leſſe effectuall then the other, but without the other vneffectuall to ſaue ſoules. Whereas the cauſe why Sermons only are obſerued to preuaile ſo much while all meanes elſe ſeeme to ſleepe and doe nothing, is in truth but that ſingular affection and attention which the people ſheweth euery where nothing towards the one, and their cold diſpoſition to the other, the reaſon hereof being partly the arte which our Aduerſaries vſe for the credit of their Sermons to bring men out of conceit with all other teaching beſides; partly a cuſtome which men haue to let thoſe things careleſly paſſe by their eares which they haue oftentimes heard before, or know they may heare againe whenſoeuer it pleaſeth themſelues; partly, the ſpeciall aduantages which Sermons naturally haue to procure attention, both in that they come alwaies new, and becauſe by the hearer it is ſtill preſumed that if they bee let ſlip for the preſent, what good ſoeuer they conteine is loſt, and that without all hope of recouery. This is the true cauſe of odds betweene Sermons and other kindes of wholſome inſtruction. As for the difference which hath beene hitherto ſo much defended on the contrarie ſide, making Sermons the onely ordinary meanes vnto faith and eternall life, ſith this hath neither euidence of truth, nor proofe ſufficient to giue it warrant, a cauſe of ſuch qualitie may with farre better grace and conueniencie aske that pardon which common humanitie doth eaſily grant, then claime in challenging manner that aſſent which is as vnwilling when reaſon guideth it to be yeelded where it is not, as withheld where it is apparantly due. All which no withſtanding, as wee could greatly wiſh that the rigor of this their opinion were alayed and mitigated, ſo becauſe we hold it the part of religious ingenuitie to honour vertue in whomſoeuer; therefore it is our moſt hearty deſire, and ſhall bee alwaies our prayer vnto Almightie God, that in the ſelfe ſame feruent zeale wherewith they ſeeme to effect the good of the Soules of men, and to thirſt after nothing more then that all men might by all meanes be directed in the way

of

of life, both they and wee may constantly persist to the worlds end. For in this wee are not their aduersaries, though they in the other hitherto haue beene ours.

Of Prayer. 23 Betweene the Throne of God in heauen, and his Church vpon earth heere militant, if it be so that Angels haue their continuall intercourse, where should we finde the same more verified then in those two ghostly exercises, the one *Doctrine*, the other *Prayer*? For what is the assembling of the Church to learne, but the receiuing of Angels descended from aboue? What to pray, but the sending of Angels vpward? His heauenly inspirations and our holy desires are as so many Angels of entercourse and commerce betweene God and vs. As teaching bringeth vs to know that God is our supreme truth; so prayer testifieth that we acknowledge him our soueraigne good. Besides, sith one God as the most high all inferiour causes in the world are dependant, and the higher any cause is, the more it coueteth to impart vertue vnto things beneath it, how should any kinde of seruice wee doe or can doe, finde greater acceptance then Prayer, which sheweth our concurrence with him, in desiring that wherewith his verie nature doth most delight? Is not the name of Prayer vsuall to signifie euen all the seruice that euer we doe vnto God? And that for no other cause, as I suppose, but to shew that there is in religion no acceptable dutie which deuout inuocation of the name of God doth not either presuppose or inferre. Prayers are those [a] calues of mens lips, those most gracious and sweete [b] odours, those rich presents and gifts, which being [c] carried vp into heauen, doe best testifie our dutifull affection, and are, for the purchasing of all fauour at the hands of God, the most vndoubted meanes we can vse. On others what more easily, and yet what more fruitfully bestowed then our Prayers? If we giue counsell, they are the simpler onely that neede it; if almes, the poorer onely are relieued; but by Prayer we doe good to all. And whereas euery other duty besides is but to shew it selfe as time and opportunitie require, for this [d] all times are conuenient: when we are not able to doe any other thing for mens behoofe, when through maliciousnesse or vnkindnesse they vouchsafe not to accept any other good at our hands, Prayer is that which wee alwaies haue in our power to bestow, and they neuer in theirs to refuse. Wherefore God forbid, saith [e] *Samuel*, speaking vnto a most vnthankfull people, a people weary of the benefite of his most vertuous gouernment ouer them, God forbid that I should sin against the Lord, and cease to pray for you. It is the first thing wherewith a righteous life beginneth, and the last wherewith it doth end. The knowledge is small which we haue on earth concerning things that are done in heauen. Notwithstanding thus much we know euen of Saints in heauen that they pray. And therefore Prayer being a worke common to the Church as well triumphant as militant, a worke common vnto men with Angels, what should wee thinke, but that so much of our time is celestiall and diuine as we spend in the exercise of Prayer? For which cause wee see that the most comfortable [f] visitations, which God hath sent men from aboue, haue taken especially the times of Prayer as their most naturall opportunities.

a *Ose* 14.3.
b *Reue.* 5.8.
c *Acts* 10.4.
d *Rom.* 1.9. 1.*Thes.* 5.17. *Luke* 18.1.
e 1.*Sam.* 12.23
f *Dan.* 9.20. *Acts* 10.13.

Of publique Prayer. 24 This holy and religious dutie of seruice towards God concerneth vs

one

one way in that we are men, and another way in that we are ioyned as parts to that viſible myſticall bodie which is his Church. As men, we are at our own choice, both for time, and place, and forme, according to the exigence of our owne occaſions in priuate: But the ſeruice, which we do as members of a publique bodie, is publique, and for that cauſe muſt needs be accompted by ſo much worthier then the other, as a whole ſocietie of ſuch condition exceedeth the worth of any one. In which conſideration vnto Chriſtian aſſemblies, there are [b] moſt ſpeciall promiſes made. [c] Saint *Paul*, though likely to preuaile with God as much as one, did notwithſtanding thinke it much more, both for Gods glorie and his owne good, if prayers might bee made and thankes yeelded in his behalfe by a number of men. The [d] Prince and People of Niniueh aſſembling themſelues as a mayne armie of Suppliants, it was not in the power of God to withſtand them. I ſpeake no otherwiſe concerning the force of publique Prayer in the Church of God, then before me [e] *Tertullian* hath done, *We come by troups to the place of Aſſembly, that being banded as it were together, we may be ſupplicants enough to beſiege God with our prayers. Theſe forces are vnto him acceptable.* When we publikely make our prayers it cannot be but that we doe it with much more comfort then in priuate, for that the things we aske publikely are approoued as needfull and good in the iudgement of all, we heare them ſought for and deſired with common conſent. Againe, thus much helpe and furtherance is more yeelded, in that if ſo be our zeale and deuotion to God-ward be ſlacke, [f] the alacritie and feruor of others ſerueth as a preſent ſpurre. [g] *For euen prayer it ſelfe* (ſaith Saint *Baſil*) *when it hath not the conſort of many voyces to ſtrengthen it, is not it ſelfe.* Finally, the good which we doe by publique prayer is more then in priuate can be done, for that beſides the benefit which is here, is no leſſe procured to our ſelues, the whole Church is much bettered by our good example, and conſequently whereas ſecret neglect of our dutie in this kind is but only our owne hurt, one mans contempt of the common Prayer of the Church of God may be and oftentimes is moſt hurtfull vnto many. In which conſiderations the [h] Prophet *David* ſo often voweth vnto God the ſacrifice of praiſe and thankſgiuing in the Congregation; ſo earneſtly exhorteth others to ſing prayſes vnto the Lord in his Courts, in his Sanctuarie, before the memoriall of his Holineſſe, and ſo much complaineth of his owne vncomfortable exile, wherein although he ſuſtained many moſt grieuous indignities, and indured the want of ſundrie both pleaſures and honors both before inioyed, yea as if [i] this one were his onely griefe and the reſt not felt, his ſpeeches are all of the heauenly benefit of publique aſſemblies, and the happineſſe of ſuch as had free acceſſe thereunto.

25 A great part of the cauſe, wherefore religious minds are ſo inflamed with the loue of publique deuotion, is that vertue, force and efficacie, which by experience they find that the very forme and reuerend ſolemnitie of Common Prayer duly ordered hath, to helpe that imbecillitie and weakneſſe in vs, by meanes whereof we are otherwiſe of our ſelues the leſſe apt to performe vnto God ſo heauenly a ſeruice, with ſuch affection of heart, and diſpoſition in the powers of our ſoules as is requiſite. To this end therefore all things hereunto appertayning, haue beene euer thought conuenient to be done with the moſt

Of the forme of Common Prayer.

a *Pſal.* 55. 18. *Dan.* 9. 3. *Act.* 10. 9.
b *Matt.* 18. 20.
c 2. *Cor.* 1. 11.
d *Ionah* 4. 11.
e *Apolog.* 1. 39. *Ambroſ. lib. de Pœn. Multi ſimilis dum congregantur inimicus ſitis magni, & malorum proces impoſſibile eſt euertiri.*
f *Pſal.* 122. 1.
g Καὶ ἡ εὐχὴ ἡ πρὸς ἑαυτὴν μὴ ἔχουσα τὴν συμφωνίαν τῶν πολλῶν ἀσθενὴς ἐστιν.
h *Pſal.* 26. 12. 34. 18. *Pſal.* 30. 4. 96. &c.
i *Pſal.* 27. 4. 42. 4. 84. 1.

moſt ſolemnitie and maieſtie that the wiſeſt could deuiſe. It is not with publique as with priuate Prayer. In this [a] rather ſecreſie is commanded then outward ſhew, whereas that being the publique act of a whole ſocietie, requireth accordingly more care to be had of externall appearance. The very aſſembling of men therefore vnto this ſeruice hath beene euer ſolemne. And concerning the place of aſſembly, although it ſerue for other vſes as well as this, yet ſeeing that our Lord himſelfe hath to this as to the chiefeſt of all other plainly ſanctified his own Temple, by intituling it [b] *the houſe of Prayer*, what preeminence of dignitie ſoeuer hath beene either by the ordinance, or through the ſpeciall fauour and prouidence of God annexed vnto his Sanctuarie, the principall cauſe thereof muſt needs be in regard of *Common Prayer*. For the honour and furtherance whereof, if it be as the grauеſt of the [c] ancient Fathers ſeriouſly were perſwaded, and doe oftentimes plainely teach, affirming that the houſe of Prair is a Court, beautified with the preſence of celeſtial powers, that there we ſtand, we pray, we ſound forth Hymnes vnto God, hauing his Angels intermingled as our Aſſociates; and that with reference hereunto [d] the Apoſtle doth require ſo great care to be had of decencie for the Angels ſake; how can we come to the houſe of Prayer, and not be mooued with the [e] very glory of the place it ſelfe, ſo to frame our affections praying, as doth beſt beſeeme them, whoſe ſutes the Almightie doth there ſit to heare, and his Angels attend to further? When this was ingrafted in the minds of men, there needed no penall Statutes to draw them vnto publique Prayer. The warning ſound was no ſooner heard, but the [f] Churches were preſently filled, the pauements couered with bodies proſtrate, and waſht with their teares of deuout ioy. And as the place of publique Prayer is a circumſtance in the outward ſhoute thereof, which hath moment to helpe deuotion, ſo the perſon much more with whom the people of God doe ioyne themſelues in this action, as with him that ſtandeth and ſpeaketh in the preſence of God for them. The authoritie of his place, the feruour of his zeale, the pietie and grauitie of his whole behauiour, muſt needs exceedingly both grace and ſet forward the ſeruice he doth. The authoritie of his calling is a furtherance, becauſe if God haue ſo farre reconciled him into fauour, as to impoſe vpon him by the hands of men that office of bleſſing the people in his name, and making interceſſion to him in their, which office he hath ſanctified with his owne moſt gracious [g] promiſe, and ratified that promiſe by manifeſt actuall performance thereof, when [h] others before in like place haue done the ſame, is not his very ordination a ſcale, as it were to vs, that the ſelfe ſame diuine loue which hath choſen the inſtrument to worke with, will by that inſtrument effect the thing whereto he ordained it, in bleſſing his people, & accepting the Prayers which his ſeruant offereth vp vnto God for them? It was in this reſpect a comfortable title which the ancients vſed to giue vnto Gods Miniſters, terming them vſually [i] *Gods moſt beloued*, which were ordained to procure by their Prayers his loue and fauour towards all. Againe, if there be not zeale and feruencie in him which propoſeth for the reſt thoſe ſutes and ſupplications, which they by their ioyfull acclamations muſt ratifie; if he praiſe not God with all his might; if he powre not out his ſoule in prayer; if he take not their cauſes to heart, or ſpeake not as

ſion

Moſes

a *Matt. 6. 5, 6.*

b *Matt. 21. 13.*

c *Chryſ. Hom. 15. ad Hebr. & 24. in Act.*

d *1. Cor. 11. 10.*

e *Pſal. 96. 6.* Power and beautie are in his Sanctuarie.

f *Ad domum ſanctam Dominicæ currimus, atque vbique ſeruamus, maxime cum ſic in genere ſupplicamus.* Saluian de Prou. l. 7

g *Num. 6. 23.*

h *2. Chr. 30. 27.*

i *Conſt. Lib. 1. Cit. 3 de Epiſc. & Cler. 43. & 44. ſect.*

Moses, *Daniel*, and *Ezra*, did for their people? how should there bee but in them frozen coldnesse, when his affections become benummed from whom theirs should take fire? Vertue and godlinesse of life are required at the hands of the Minister of God, no only in that hee is to teach and instruct the people, who for the most part are rather led away by the ill example, then directed aright by the wholsome instruction of them, whose life swarueth from the rule of their owne doctrine; but also much more in regard of this other part of his function; whether wee respect the weakenesse of the people, apt to lothe and abhor the *Sanctuary*, when they which performe the seruice thereof are such as the sonnes of *Heli* were; or else consider the [a] inclination of God himselfe, who requireth the lifting vp of pure hands in prayer, and hath giuen the world plainely to vnderstand, that the wicked, although they crie, shall not bee heard. They are no fit Supplicants to seeke his mercy in the behalfe of others, whose owne vnrepented sinnes prouoke his iust indignation. [b] Let thy Priests therefore, O Lord, be euermore clothed with righteousnesse, that thy Saints may thereby with more deuotion reioyce and sing. But of all helps for due performance of this seruice, the greatest is that very set and standing order it selfe, which framed with common aduise, hath both for matter and forme prescribed whatsoeuer is herein publikely done. No doubt, from God it hath proceeded, and by vs it must be acknowledged a worke of his singular care and prouidence, that the Church hath euer-more held a prescript forme of Common Prayer, although not in all things euery-where the same, yet for the most part retayning still the same analogie. So that if the Liturgies of all ancient Churches throughout the world bee compared amongst themselues, it may be easily perceiued they had all one originall mold, and that the publike Prayers of the people of God in Churches throughly settled, did neuer vse to be voluntarie Dictates, proceeding from any mans extemporall wit. To him which considereth the grieuous & scandalous inconueniences, whereunto they make themselues daily subiect, with whom any blind and secret corner is iudged a fit house of Common Prayer; the manifold confusions which they fall into, where euery mans priuate spirit and gift (as they terme it) is the only Bishop that ordayneth him to this ministerie; the irkesome deformities whereby through endlesse and senseless effusions of indigested prayers, they oftentimes disgrace in most vnsufferable manner, the worthiest part of Christian dutie towards God, who herein are subiect to no certaine order, but pray both what and how they list, to him, I say, which waieth duly all these things, the reasons cannot be obscure, why God doth in publique Prayer so much respect the [c] solemnitie of places where, [d] the authoritie and calling of persons by whom, and the [e] precise appointment euen with what wordes or sentences his name should be called on amongst his people.

a 1. *Tim.* 2. 8. *Iohn* 9. 31. *Ierem.* 11. 11. *Ezech.* 8. 18.

b *Psal.* 132. 9.

c 2. *Chro.* 6. 20. d *Iosh.* 2. 17. e 2. *Chro.* 29. 36

Of them which like not to haue any set forme of Common Prayer.

26 No man hath hitherto beene so impious, as plainely and directly to condemne Prayer. The best stratageme that Sathan hath, who knoweth his Kingdome to be no one way more shaken, then by the publique deuout Prayers of Gods Church, is by traducing the forme and manner of them, to bring them into contempt, and so to shake the force of all mens deuotion towards them. From this, and from no other forge, hath proceeded a strange conceit, that

that to ſerue God with any ſet forme of common Prayer, is ſuperſtitious. As
a *Num.6.23.* though a God himſelfe did not frame to his Prieſts the very ſpeech, wherewith they were charged to bleſſe the people; or as if our Lord, euen of purpoſe to preuent this fancie of extemporall and voluntarie prayers, had not left vs of his owne framing one, which might both remaine as a part of the Church Lyturgie, and ſerue as a patterne whereby to frame all other prayers with efficacie, yet without ſuperfluitie of words. If prayers were no otherwiſe accepted of God, then being conceiued alwaies new, according to the exigence of preſent occaſions; if it be right to iudge him by our owne bellies, and to imagine that he doth lothe to haue the ſelfe-ſame ſupplications often iterated, euen as we doe to be euery day fed without alteration or change of dyet; if prayers bee actions which ought to waſte away themſelues in the making; if being made to remaine that they may be reſumed and vſed againe as prayers, they bee but inſtruments of ſuperſtition; ſurely, wee cannot excuſe *Moſes*, who gaue ſuch occaſion of ſcandall to the world, by not being contented to praiſe the name of Almightie God, according to the vſuall naked ſimplicitie of Gods Spirit, for that admirable victorie giuen them againſt *Pharao*, vnleſſe ſo dangerous a precedent were left for the caſting of prayers into certaine poeticall molds, and for the framing of prayers which might be repeated often, although they neuer had againe the ſame occaſions which brought them forth at the firſt. For that very Hymne of *Moſes* grew afterwards to be a part of the ordinarie Iewiſh Lyturgie; nor only that, but ſundrie other ſithence inuented. Their bookes of common Prayer contayned partly Hymnes taken out of the holy Scripture, partly Benedictions, Thankeſgiuings, Supplications, penned by ſuch as haue beene, from time to time, the Gouernors of that Synagogue. Theſe they ſorted into their ſeuerall times and places, ſome to begin the ſeruice of God with, and ſome to end, ſome to goe before, and ſome to follow, and ſome to be interlaced betweene the diuine readings of the Law and Prophets. Vnto their cuſtome of finiſhing the Paſſeouer with certaine Pſalmes, there is not any thing more probable, then that the holy Euangeliſt doth euidently allude, ſaying, That after the cup deliuered by our Sauiour vnto his Apoſtles, b *they ſung*, and went forth to the Mount of Olines. As the Iewes had their ſongs of *Moſes*, and *Dauid*, and the reſt, ſo the Church of Chriſt from the very beginning hath both vſed the ſame, and beſides them other alſo of like nature, the ſong of the Virgin *Mary*, the ſong of *Zachary*, the ſong of *Simeon*, ſuch Hymnes as the Apoſtle doth often ſpeake of, ſaying, c *I will pray and ſing with the Spirit*. Againe, d *In Pſalmes, Hymnes, and Songs, making melodie vnto the Lord, and that heartily*. Hymnes and Pſalmes are ſuch kindes of prayer as are not wont to bee conceiued vpon a ſuddaine; but are framed by Meditation before hand, or elſe by propheticall illumination are inſpired, as at that time it appeareth they were, when God by extraordinarie gifts of the Spirit, inabled men to all parts of ſeruice neceſſarie for the edifying of his Church.

b *Mat.26.30.* ὑμνήσαντες, hauing ſung the Pſalmes which were vſuall at that feaſt, thoſe Pſalmes which the Iewes call the great *Hallelujia*, beginning at the 113. and continuing to the end of the 118. See *Paul. Burgenſis in Pſ.112. addit.1.* and *Scalig. de emendat. tempo.*

c *1.Cor.14.15.*

d *Epheſ.5.19.*

Of them who allowing a ſet forme of Prayer, yet allow not ours.

27 Now, albeit the admonitioners did ſeeme at the firſt to allow no preſcript forme of prayer at all, but thought it the beſt that their Miniſter ſhould alwaies be left at libertie to pray, as his owne diſcretion did ſerue, yet becauſe this opinion vpon better aduice they afterwards retracted, their defendor and

his

his Aſſociates haue ſithence propoſed to the World a forme, ſuch as themſelues like, and to ſhew their diſlike of ours, haue taken againſt it thoſe exceptions, which, whoſoeuer doth meaſure by number, muſt needs be greatly out of loue with a thing that hath ſo many faults; whoſoeuer by waight, cannot chooſe but eſteeme very highly of that, wherein the wit of ſo ſcrupulous Aduerſaries hath not hitherto obſerued any defect which themſelues can ſeriouſly thinke to be of moment. Groſſe Errours and manifeſt Impietie they grant we haue taken away. Yet * many things in it they ſay are amiſſe, many inſtances they giue of things in our Common Prayer, not agreeable as they pretend with the Word of God. It hath in their eye too great affinitie with the forme of the Church of Rome; it differeth too much from that which Churches elſewhere reformed allow and obſerue; or Attyre diſgraceth it; it is not orderly read nor geſtured as beſeemeth; it requireth nothing to bee done which a Childe may not lawfully doe; it hath a number of ſhort cuts or ſhreddings, which may be better called wiſhes then Prayers; it intermingleth Prayings & Readings in ſuch manner, as if Supplicants ſhould vſe in propoſing their Sutes vnto morrall Princes, all the World would iudge them madde; it is too long, and by that meane abridgeth preaching; it appointeth the people to ſay after the Miniſter; it ſpendeth time in ſinging and in reading the *Pſalmes* by courſe, from ſide to ſide; it vſeth the Lords Prayer too oft, the Songs of *Magnificat*, *Benedictus*, and *Nunc dimittis* it might very well ſpare; it hath the *Letanie*, the Creed of *Athanaſius*, and *Gloria Patri*, which are ſuperfluous; it craueth earthly things too much, for deliuerance from thoſe euils againſt which wee pray, it giueth no thankes, ſome things it asketh vnſeaſonably when they need not to be prayed for, as deliuerance from Thunder and Tempeſt when no danger is nigh; ſome in too abiect and diffident manner, as that God would giue vs that which wee for our vnworthineſſe dare not aske; ſome which ought not to be deſired, as the deliuerance from ſuddaine death, riddance from all aduerſitie, and the extent of ſauing mercie towards all men. Theſe and ſuch like are the imperfections, whereby our forme of Common Prayer is thought to ſwerue from the Word of God. A great fauourer of that part, but yet (his errour that way excepted) a learned, a painfull, a right vertuous and a good man did not feare ſometime to vndertake, againſt Popiſh Detractors, the generall maintenance and defence of our whole Church-ſeruice, as hauing in it nothing repugnant to the Word of God. And euen they which would file away moſt from the largeneſſe of that offer, doe notwithſtanding in more ſparing termes acknowledge little leſſe. For when thoſe oppoſite iudgements which neuer are wont to conſter things doubtfull to the better, thoſe very tongues which are alwaies prone to aggrauate whatſoeuer hath but the leaſt ſhew whereby it may be ſuſpected to ſauour of, or to ſound towards any euill, doe by their owne voluntary ſentence clearely free vs from *groſſe Errours*, and from *manifeſt Impietie* herein; who would not iudge vs to be diſcharged of all blame, which are confeſt to haue no great fault, euen by their very word and teſtimonie, in whoſe eyes no fault of ours hath euer hitherto beene accuſtomed to ſeeme ſmall. Neuertheleſſe, what they ſeeme to offer vs with the one hand, the ſame with the

* T.C.l.1.p.131 Afterwards pa. 135. Whereas M. Doctor affirmeth that there can bee nothing ſhewed in the whole Booke wich is not agreeable vnto the Word of God: I am very loth &c. Notwithſtanding, my dutie of defending the truth, and loue which I haue firſt towards God, & then towards my Country, conſtrayneth me being thus prouoked, to ſpeake a few words more particularly of the forme of Prayer, that when the blemiſhes thereof doe appeare, it may pleaſe the Queenes Maieſtie, and her Honourable Councell with thoſe of the Parliament, &c.

other they pull backe againe. They grant we erre not in palpable manner, wee are not openly and notoriously impious, yet Errors we haue, which the sharpe insight of their wisest men doe espye, there is hidden impietie, which the profounder sort are able enough to disclose. Their skilfull eares perceiue certayne harsh and vnpleasant discords in the sound of our Common Prayer, such as the Rules of Diuine Harmony, such as the Lawes of God cannot beare.

The forme of our Liturgie too neere the Papists, too farre different from that of other reformed Churches, as they pretend.

28 Touching our Conformitie with the Church of Rome, as also of the difference betweene some Reformed Churches and ours, that which generally hath beene already answered, may serue for answere to that exception, which in these two respects they take particularly against the forme of our Common Prayer. To say, that in nothing they may be followed, which are of the Church of Rome, were violent and extreme. Some things they doe, in that they are men, in that they are wise men, and Christian men somethings, somethings in that they are misse-led and blinded with Error. As farre as they follow Reason and Truth, wee feare not to tread the selfe-same steps wherein they haue gone, and to be their followers. Where Rome keepeth that which is ancienter and better; others whom we much more affect leauing it for newer, and changing it for worse, we had rather follow the perfections of them whom wee like not, then in defects resemble them whom wee loue. For although they professe they agree with vs touching [a] *a prescript forme of Prayer to be vsed in the Church*, yet in that very forme which they say, is [b] *agreeable to Gods Word, and the vse of Reformed Churches*, they haue by speciall protestation declared, that their meaning is not it shall bee prescribed as a thing whereunto they will tye their Minister. *It shall not* (they say) *be necessary for the Minister daily to repeat all these things before mentioned, but beginning with* some like *confession, to proceed to the Sermon, which ended, he* either *vseth the Prayer for all States before mentioned*, or prayeth as the Spirit of God shall moue his heart. Herein therefore we hold it much better with the Church of Rome to appoint a Prescript forme which euery man shall bee bound to obserue, then with them to set downe a kind of direction, a forme for men to vse if they list, or otherwise to change as pleaseth themselues. Furthermore, the Church of Rome hath rightly also considered, that publike Prayer is a dutie intyre in it selfe, a dutie requisite to be performed, much oftner then Sermons can possibly bee made. For which cause, as they, so we haue likewise a publike forme how to serue God both Morning and Euening, whether Sermons may bee had or no. On the contrary side, their forme of reformed Prayer sheweth only what shall be done [c] *vpon the dayes appointed for the preaching of the Word*; with what words the Minister shall beginne, [d] *when the houre appointed for Sermon is come*; what shall be said or sung before Sermon, and what after. So that according to this forme of theirs, it must stand for a Rule, *No Sermon, no Seruice.* Which ouersight, occasioned the French spitefully to terme Religion in that sort exercised, a meere Preach. Sundry other more particular defects there are, which I willingly forbeare to rehearse, in consideration whereof, we cannot be induced to preferre their Reformed forme of Prayer before our owne, what Church soeuer we resemble therein.

a T.C.l.1.p.135
b A Booke of the forme of Common Prayer tendered to the Parliament, pag. 46

c Page 22.
d 24.

29 The

29 The Attyre which the Miniſter of God is by order to vſe at times of Diuine Seruice, being but a matter of meere formalitie, yet ſuch as for comelineſſe ſake hath hitherto been iudged by the wiſer ſort of men not vnneceſſary to concurre with other ſenſible notes, betokening the different kind or qualitie of perſons and actions whereto it is tyed, as we thinke not our ſelues the holier, becauſe wee vſe it, ſo neyther ſhould they with whom no ſuch thing is in vſe, thinke vs therefore vnholy, becauſe we ſubmit our ſelues vnto that, which in a matter ſo indifferent the wiſdome of authortie and Law haue thought comely. To ſolemne actions of Royaltie and Iuſtice, their ſutable Ornaments are a beautie. Are they only in Religion a ſtayne? [a] *Diuine Religion*, ſaith Saint *Ierome* (he ſpeaketh of the Prieſtly Attyre of the Law) *hath one kind of habit wherein to miniſter before the Lord, another for ordinary vſes belonging vnto cõmon life.* PELAGIVS hauing carped at the curious neatneſſe of mens apparell in thoſe dayes, and through the ſowreneſſe of his diſpoſition ſpoken ſomewhat too hardly thereof, affirming that [b] *the glory of Clothes and Ornaments was a thing contrary to God & godlines*; S. *Ierome*, whoſe cuſtome is not to pardon ouer-eaſily his Aduerſaries, if any where they chance to trip, preſſeth him as thereby making al ſorts of men in the world *Gods enemies. Is it enmity with God* (ſaith he) *if I weare my Coat ſomewhat handſome?* If a Biſhop, a Prieſt, Deacon; and the reſt of the Eccleſiaſticall Order *come to adminiſter the vſuall Sacrifice in a*[c] *white Garment*, are they hereby Gods Aduerſaries? *Clarkes, Monks, Widowes, Virgins, take heed, it is dangerous for you to be otherwiſe ſeen then in foule & ragged clothes. Not to ſpeak any thing of Secular men, which are proclaymed to haue war with God as oft as euer they put on precious & ſhining Clothes.* By which words of *Ierome* we may take it at the leaſt for a probable collection, that his meaning was to draw *Pelagius* into hatred, as condemning by ſo general a ſpeech euen the neatneſſe of that very Garment it ſelfe, wherein the Clergie did then vſe to adminiſter publikely the holy Sacrament of Chriſts moſt bleſſed Bodie and Bloud. For that they did then vſe ſome ſuch Ornament, the words of [d] *Chryſoſtome* giue plaine teſtimonie, who ſpeaking to the Clergie of *Antioch*, telleth them that if they did ſuffer notorious Malefactors to come to the Table of our Lord, and not put them by, it would be as heauily reuenged vpon them, as if themſelues had ſhed his bloud, that for this purpoſe God hath called them to the roomes which they held in the Church of Chriſt, that this they ſhould reckon was *their dignity, this their ſafetie, this their whole Crowne & glory*; and therfore this they ſhould carefully intend, and not when the Sacrament is adminiſtred, imagine themſelues called only *to walke vp and downe in a white & ſhining Garment*. Now, whereas theſe ſpeeches of IEROME *and* CHRYSOSTOME doe ſeeme plainly to allude vnto ſuch Miniſteriall Garments as were then in vſe, to this they anſwere, that by *Ierome* nothing can bee gathered, but only that the Miniſters came to Church in handſome holiday apparell, and that him ſelfe did not thinke them bound by the Law of God to goe like Slouens; but the Weed which wee meane hee defendeth not; that [e] *Chryſoſtome* meaneth indeed the ſame which wee defend, but ſeemeth rather to reprehend then to allow it as we doe. Which anſwere wringeth out of *Ierome* and *Chryſoſtome* that which their words will not gladly yeeld. They both ſpeake of the ſame perſons, namely, the Clergie; and of their Weed at the ſame time when they adminiſter the

Attire belonging to the Seruice of God. T.C. l.1.p.71. We thinke the Surplice eſpecially vnmeete for a Miniſter of the Go pell to weare *pa.*75. It is eaſily ſeen by *Salmon*, *Eccleſ.*8.9. that to weare a white Garment was greatly eſteemed in the Eaſt parts, and was ordinary to thoſe that were in any eſtimation, as blacke with vs, and therefore was no ſeuerall Apparell for the Miniſters to execute their Miniſtery in.

a *Hier.*44. *Ezech.*

b *Hier. aduer. Pela. lib.*1.*ca.*9.

c T.C. *li.*1 *p.*77. By a white garment, is meant a comely Apparell, and not ſlouenly.

d *Chryſoſt. ad popul. Antioch. To.*5. *Serm.*60.

e T.C *li.*1.*p.*75. It is true, *Chryſoſtome* maketh mention of a white garmẽt, but not in cõmendation of it, but rather to the contrary: for he ſheweth that the dignitie of their Miniſterie was in taking heed that none vnmeet were admitted to the Lords Supper, not in going about the Church with a white Garment.

bleſſed Sacrament; and of the ſelfe-ſame kind of Weed, a white Garment, ſo farre as we haue wit to conceiue; and for any thing wee are able to ſee, their manner of ſpeech is not ſuch as doth argue either the thing it ſelfe to be different whereof they ſpeake, or their iudgements concerning it different; although the one do only maintaine it againſt *Pelagius*, as a thing not therefore vnlawful, becauſe it was faire or handſome, and the other make it a matter of ſmall commendation in it ſelfe, if they which weare it, do nothing elſe but ayre the Robes which their place requireth. The honeſty, dignity, and eſtimation of white apparell in the Eaſterne part of the World, is a token of greater fitneſſe for this Sacred vſe, wherein it were not conuenient that any thing baſely thought of ſhould be ſuffered. Notwithſtanding, I am not bent to ſtand ſtiffely vpon theſe probabilities, that in *Ieromes* and *Chryſoſtomes* time any ſuch Attyre was made ſeuerall to this purpoſe. Yet ſurely the words of *Salomon* are very impertinent to proue it an Ornament, therefore not ſeuerall for the Miniſters to execute their Miniſterie in, becauſe men of credit and eſtimation wore their ordinarie apparell white. For we know that when *Salomon* wrote thoſe words, the ſeuerall Apparell for the Miniſters of the Law, to execute their Miniſterie in was
a Eccleſ.45.7. ſuch. The[a] Wiſeman which feared God from his heart, and honoured the Seruice that was done vnto him, could not mention ſo much as the Garments of holineſſe, but with effectuall ſignification of moſt ſingular reuerence and loue. Were it not better that the loue which men beare to God, ſhould make the leaſt things that are imployed in his Seruice amiable, then that their ouerſcrupulous diſlike of ſo meane a thing as a Veſtment, ſhould from the very Seruice of God withdraw their hearts and affections? I terme it rather a meane thing, a thing not much to be reſpected, becauſe euen they ſo account now of it, whoſe firſt Diſputations againſt it were ſuch, as if Religion had ſcarcely any
b T.C.l.1.p.72. thing of greater waight. Their[b] allegations were then, that *if a man were aſſured to gaine a thouſand by doing that which may offend any one Brother, or be vnto him a cauſe of falling, he ought not to doe it; that this Popiſh apparell, the Surplice eſpecially hath bin by Papiſts abominably abuſed; that it hath bin a mark and very Sacrament of abomination, that remayning, it ſerueth as a Monument of Idolatry*, and not onely edifieth not, but as a dangerous and ſcandalous Ceremonie,
71. 77. 72. doth exceeding much harme *to them of whoſe good we are commanded to haue*
T.C.l.1.p.103. Lib.1.p.73. *regard; that it cauſeth men to periſh & make ſhipwrack of conſcience*, for ſo themſelues profeſſe they meane, when they ſay the weake are offended herewith, that it *hardeneth Papiſts, hindereth the weake from profiting in the knowledge of the Goſpell, grieueth godly mindes, and giueth them occaſion to thinke hardly of*
Page 73. *their Miniſters*; that if the *Magiſtrate may command, or the Church appoint*
Page 76. Lib.1.p.103. Rites *and* Ceremonies, *yet ſeeing our abſtinence from things in their owne nature indifferent, if the weake Brother ſhould bee offended, is flat Commandement of the Holy Ghoſt, which no Authoritie either of Church or Commonwealth can make voyd*, therefore neyther may the one nor the other lawfully
Lib.1.p.76. Page 81. *ordayne this* Ceremonie, *which hath great incommoditie and no profit, great offence and no edifying*; that by the Law it ſhould haue beene burnt and conſumed with fire as a thing infected with Leproſie; that the Example of *Ezechas*, beating to powder the Brazen Serpent, and of *Paul* abrogating thoſe abuſed Feaſts of Charity, *inforceth vpon vs the duty of aboliſhing altogether* a thing

which

which hath beene and is ſo offenſiue; Finally, that God by his Prophet hath gi- Page 78.
ueo *an expreſſe Commandement*, which in this caſe toucheth vs, no leſſe then of
old it did the Iewes, [a] *Ye ſhall pollute the couering of the Images of Siluer, and the* a Eſay 30. 22.
rich Ornament of your Images of Gold, and caſt them away as a ſtained ragge, thou
ſhalt ſay vnto it, Get thee hence. Theſe and ſuch like were their firſt Diſcourſes,
touching the Churches Attyre, which with vs for the moſt part is vſuall in pub-
like Prayer; our Eccleſiaſticall Lawes ſo appointing, as well becauſe it hath bin
of reaſonable continuance, and by ſpeciall choiſe was taken out of the number
of thoſe holy Garments, which (ouer and beſides their myſticall reuerence) ſer-
ued for [b] couelineſſe [c] vnder the Law, and is in the number of thoſe Cere- b Exod. 28. 2.
monies, which may with choice and diſcretion bee vſed to that purpoſe in the c Exod. 39. 27.
Church of Chriſt; as alſo for that it ſuteth ſo fitly with the lightſome affecti-
on of [d] ioy, wherein God delighteth when his Saints praiſe him; and ſo d Pſal. 149. 2.
liuely reſembleth the glorie of his Saints in Heauen, together with the beau- Apoc. 19. 6.
tie wherein Angels haue appeared vnto men, that they which are to appeare Marke 16. 5.
for men in the preſence of God, as Angels, if they were left to their owne choice,
and would chooſe, could any not eaſily deuiſe a Garment of more decencie for
ſuch a Seruice. As for thoſe fore-rehearſed vehement allegations againſt it, ſhall
wee giue them credit, when the verie Authors from whom they come, confeſſe
they beleeue not their owne ſayings? For when once they beganne to perceiue
how many, both of them in the two Vniuerſities, and of others, who abroad
hauing Eccleſiaſticall charge, doe fauour mightily their cauſe, and by all
meanes ſet it forward, might by perſiſting in the extremitie of that opinion
hazard greatly their owne eſtates, and ſo weaken that part, which their places
doe now giue them much opportunitie to ſtrengthen, they asked counſell as it
ſeemeth from ſome abroad, who wiſely conſidered, that the bodie is of farre
more worth then the rayment. Whereupon for feare of dangerous incon-
ueniences, it hath beene thought good to adde, [e] *that ſometimes authoritie* e T. C. lib. 1.
muſt and may with good conſcience bee obeyed, euen where Commandement is not pag. 74. &c.
giuen vpon good ground; that *the dutie of preaching is one of the abſolute Com-* Lib. 2. p. 250.
mandements of God, and therefore ought not to bee forſaken, for the bare inconue- Index. l. 3. c. 8. §. 3. pa. 162. p. 163.
nience of a thing which in the owne nature is indifferent; that *one of the foulеſt*
ſpots in the Surplice, is the offence which it giueth in occaſioning the weak to fall, and
the wicked to be confirmed in their wickedneſſe, yet hereby there is no vnlawful-
neſſe prooued, but *onely an inconueniencie*, that ſuch things ſhould be eſtabliſhed,
howbeit no ſuch inconueniencie neither, as may not bee borne with; that
when God doth flat command vs to abſtaine, from things in their owne Na-
ture indifferent, if they offend our weake brethren, his meaning is not wee
ſhould obey his Commandement heerein, vnleſſe wee may doe it, *and not leaue* Lib. 3. p. 263.
vndone that which the Lord hath abſolutely commanded. Alwayes prouided, that
whoſoeuer will inioy the benefit of this Diſpenſation, to weare a ſcandalous
Badge of Idolatrie, rather then forſake his Paſtorall charge, doe (*as occaſion ſer-*
ueth) *teach* neuertheleſſe ſtill *the incommoditie of the thing it ſelfe, admoniſh the* Page 263.
weake Brethren, that they be not, and pray vnto God ſo to ſtrengthen them that they
may not be offended thereat. So that whereas before, they which had authoritie to
inſtitute Rites and Ceremonies, were denied to haue power to inſtitute this, it is

now confeſt that this they may alſo *lawfully*, but not ſo conueniently appoint; they did well before, and as they ought, who had it in vtter deteſtation and hatred as a thing abominable, they now doe well, which thinke it may bee both borne and vſed with a verie good conſcience; before, bee which by wearing it were ſure to winne thouſands vnto Chriſt, ought not to doe it if there were but one which might bee offended; now, though it bee with the offence of thouſands, yet it may bee done rather then that ſhould be giuen ouer, whereby notwithſtanding wee are not certaine wee ſhall gaine one; the Examples of *Ezechias* and of *Paul*, the charge which was giuen to the Iewes by *Eſay*, the ſtrict Apoſtolicall prohibition of things indifferent, whenſoeuer they may bee ſcandalous, were before ſo forcible Lawes againſt our Eccleſiaſticall Attyre, as neither Church nor Common-wealth could poſſibly make void, which now one of farre leſſe authoritie, then either hath found how to fruſtrate by diſpenſing with the breach of inferiour Commandements, to the end that the greater may be kept. But it booteth them not, thus to ſoder vp a broken Cauſe, whereof their firſt and laſt Diſcourſes will fall aſunder doe what they can. Let them ingeniouſly confeſſe that their Inuectiues were too bitter, their Arguments too weake, the matter not ſo dangerous as they did imagine. If thoſe alledged teſtimonies of Scripture did indeed concerne the matter to ſuch effect as was pretended, that which they ſhould inferre were vnlawfulneſſe, becauſe they were cited as Prohibitions of that thing which indeed they concerne. If they prooue not our Attyre vnlawfull, becauſe in truth they concerne it not, it followeth that they prooue not any thing againſt it, and conſequently, not ſo much as vncomelineſſe or inconueniencie. Vnleſſe therefore they bee able throughly to reſolue themſelues, that there is no one Sentence in all the Scriptures of God, which doth controule the wearing of it in ſuch manner, and to ſuch purpoſe as the Church of *England* alloweth; vnleſſe they can fully reſt and ſettle their minds in this moſt ſound perſwaſion, that they are not to make themſelues the onely competent Iudges of decencie in theſe caſes, and to deſpiſe the ſolemne iudgement of the whole Church, preferring before it their owne conceit, grounded onely vpon vncertaine ſuſpitions and feares, whereof if they were at the firſt ſome probable cauſe, when things were but raw and tender, yet now very tract of time hath it ſelfe worne that out alſo; vnleſſe, I ſay, thus reſolued in mind they hold their Paſtorall charge with the comfort of a good Conſcience, no way grudging at that which they doe, or doing that which they thinke themſelues bound of dutie to reproue, how ſhould it poſſibly helpe or further them in their courſe, to take ſuch occaſions as they ſay

" are requiſite to be taken, and in penſiue manner to tell their Audience, *Brethren,*
" *our hearts deſire it, that wee might inioy the full libertie of the Goſpel, as in other*
" *Reformed Churches they doe elſe-where, vpon whome the heauie hand of Au-*
" *thoritie hath impoſed no grieuous burthen. But ſuch is the miſerie of theſe our daies,*
" *that ſo great happineſſe we cannot looke to attaine vnto. Were it ſo, that the equitie*
" *of the Law of* MOSES *could preuaile; or the zeale of* EZECHIAS *be found in*
" *the hearts of thoſe Guides and Gouernours vnder whom we liue; or the voyce of Gods*
" *owne Prophets be duely heard; or the Example of the Apoſtles of* CHRIST *bee*
" *followed, yea or their Precepts bee anſwered with full and perfect obedience, theſe*

ab-

abhominable ragges, polluted garments, markes and Sacraments of Idolatrie, which Power as you ſee conſtrayneth vs to weare, and conſcience to abhorre, had long ere this day beene remooued both out of ſight, and out of memorie. But as now things ſtand, behold, to what narrowe ſtraights wee are driuen; On the one ſide wee feare the words of our Sauiour Chriſt, Woe be to them by whom ſcandall and offence commeth: on the other ſide, as the Apoſtles ſpeach, we cannot but quake and tremble, if I preach not the Goſpell, woe be vnto me. Beeing thus hardly beſet, we ſee not any other remedie but to hazzard your ſoules the one way, that we may the other way endeauour to ſaue them. Touching the offence of the weake therefore, wee muſt aduenture it. If they periſh, they periſh. Our Paſtorall charge is Gods abſolute commandement. Rather then that ſhall bee taken from vs, wee are reſolued to take this filth, and to put it on, although wee iudge it to bee ſo vnfit and inconuenient, that as oft as euer wee pray or preach ſo arrayed before you, wee doe as much as in vs lieth, to caſt away your ſoules that are weake-minded, and to bring you vnto endleſſe perdition. But wee beſeech you brethren haue care of your owne ſafetie, take heede to your ſteppes, that yee be not taken in thoſe ſnares which wee lay before you. And our prayer in your behalfe to Almightie God is, that the poyſon which we offer you, may neuer haue the power to doe you harme. Aduice and counſell is beſt ſought for at their hands, which either haue no part at all in the cauſe whereof they inſtruct, or elſe are ſo farre ingaged, that themſelues are to beare the greateſt aduenture in the ſucceſſe of their owne counſels. The one of which two conſiderations maketh men the leſſe reſpectiue, and the other the more circumſpect. Thoſe good and learned men which gaue the firſt direction to this courſe, had reaſon to wiſh that their owne proceedings at home, might bee fauoured abroad alſo, and that the good affection of ſuch as inclined towards them might be kept aliue. But if themſelues had gone vnder thoſe ſailes which they require to be hoiſed vp, if they had beene themſelues to execute their owne Theorie in this Church, I doubt not but eaſily they would haue ſeene being neerer at hand, that the way was not good which they tooke of aduiſing men, firſt, to weare the apparell, that thereby they might bee free to continue their preaching, and then, of requiring them ſo to preach as they might be ſure they could not continue, except they imagine that Lawes which permit them not to doe as they would, will endure them to ſpeake as they liſt, euen againſt that which themſelues doe by conſtraint of Lawes; they would haue eaſily ſeene that our people being accuſtomed to thinke euermore that thing euill which is publikely vnder any pretence reproued, and the men themſelues worſe which reproue it and vſe it too, it ſhould bee to little purpoſe for them to ſalue the wound, by making proteſtations in diſgrace of their owne actions, with plaine acknowledgement that they are ſcandalous, or by vſing faire intreatie with the weake Brethren; they would eaſily haue ſeene how with vs it cannot bee indured, to heare a man openly profeſſe that hee putteth fire to his Neighbours houſe, but yet ſo halloweth the ſame with prayer that he hopeth it ſhall not burne. It had beene therefore perhaps ſafer and better for ours to haue obſerued [a] Saint *Baſils* aduice, both in this and in all things of like nature. *Let him which approoueth not his Gouernours ordinances either plainely (but priuately alwayes) ſhew his diſlike if he haue ſtrong and inuincible reaſon*

[a] *Baſil. Aſcet. reſponſ. ad interr. 47.*

reaſon againſt them, according to the true will and meaning of Scripture, or elſe let him quietly with ſilence doe that which is inioyned. Obedience with profeſt vnwillingneſſe to obey, is no better then manifeſt diſobedience.

Of geſture in praying, and of different places choſen to that purpoſe.

30 Hauing thus diſputed, whether the Surplice be a fit garment to be vſed in the ſeruice of God, the next queſtion whereinto we are drawne, is, whether it be a thing allowable or no, that the Miniſter ſhould ſay ſeruice in the Chancell, or turne his face at any time from the people, or before ſeruice ended, remooue from the place where it was begunne? By them which trouble vs with theſe doubts, we would more willingly be reſolued of a greater doubt, whether it be not a kind of taking Gods name in vaine, to debaſe Religion with ſuch friuolous diſputes, a ſinne to beſtow time and labour about them? Things of ſo meane regard and qualitie, although neceſſarie to be ordered, are notwithſtanding very vnſauorie when they come to be diſputed of; becauſe diſputation preſuppoſeth ſome difficultie in the matter which is argued, whereas in things of this nature they muſt be either very ſimple or very forward, who need to be taught by diſputation what is meet. When we make profeſſion of our Faith, we ſtand; when wee acknowledge our ſinnes, or ſeeke vnto God for fauour, wee fall downe, becauſe the geſture of conſtancie becommeth vs beſt in the one, in the other the behauiour of humilitie. Some parts of our Lyturgie conſiſt in the reading of the Word of God, and the proclayming of his Law, that the people may thereby learne what their duties are towards him; ſome conſiſt in words of praiſe and thankſgiuing, whereby wee acknowledge vnto God what his bleſſings are towards vs; ſome are ſuch, as albeit they ſerue to ſingular good purpoſe, euen when there is no Communion adminiſtred; neuertheleſſe, being deuiſed at the firſt for that purpoſe, are at the Table of the Lord for that cauſe alſo commonly read; ſome are vttered as from the people, ſome as with them vnto God, ſome as from God vnto them, all as before his ſight, whom we feare, and whoſe preſence to offend with any the leaſt vnſeemelineſſe, wee would be ſurely as loth as they, who moſt reprehend or deride that wee doe. [a] Now, becauſe the Goſpels which are weekely read, doe all hiſtorically declare ſomething which our Lord Ieſus Chriſt himſelfe either ſpake, did, or ſuffered in his owne perſon, it hath beene the cuſtome of Chriſtian men then eſpecially in token of the greater reuerence to ſtand, to vtter certaine words of acclamation, and at the name of Ieſus to bow. Which harmeleſſe Ceremonies, as there is *no man conſtrained to vſe*, ſo wee know no reaſon wherefore any man ſhould yet imagine it an vnſufferable euill. It ſheweth a reuerend [b] regard to the Sonne of God aboue other Meſſengers, although ſpeaking as from God alſo. And againſt Infidels, Iewes, Arrians, who derogate from the honour of Ieſus Chriſt, ſuch ceremonies are moſt profitable. [c] As for any erroneous *eſtimation*, aduancing the Sonne *aboue the Father and the holy Ghoſt*, ſeeing that the truth of his equalitie with them, is a myſterie ſo hard for the wits of mortall men to riſe vnto, of all Hereſies, that which may giue him ſuperioritie aboue them, is leaſt to bee feared. But to let goe this as a matter ſcarce worth the ſpeaking of, wheras if fault be in theſe things any where iuſtly found, Law hath referred the whole diſpoſition & redreſſe thereof to the Ordinarie of the place; [d] they which elſewhere complaine, that diſgrace and *iniurie* is offred euen to the meaneſt Pariſh-Miniſter, when the Magiſtrate appoin-

T.C.l.1.p.134.

a T.C.l.1.p.103.

b Mark 11.6.

c T.C.l.3.p.215.

d T.C.l.1.p.74.

teth

pointeth him what to weare, and leaueth not ſo ſmall a matter as that to his owne diſcretion, being preſumed a man diſcreete and truſted with the care of the peoples ſoules, doe [a] thinke the graueſt Prelates in the Land no competent Iudges, to diſcerne and appoint where it is fit for the Miniſter to ſtand, or which way conuenient to looke praying. From their Ordinarie therefore they appeale to themſelues, finding great fault that wee neither reforme the thing againſt the which they haue ſo long ſithence giuen ſentence, nor yet make anſwer vnto that they bring, which is, that [b] Saint *Luke* declaring, how PETER *ſtood vp in the midſt of his Diſciples*, did thereby deliuer an [c] *vnchangeable* rule, that *whatſoeuer* is done in the Church, *ought to be done* in the midſt of the Church, and therefore not Baptiſme to bee adminiſtred in one place, Marriage ſolemnized in another, the Supper of the Lord receiued in a third, in a fourth Sermons, in a fift Prayers to be made; that the cuſtome which we vſe is Leuiticall, abſurd, and ſuch as hindreth the vnderſtanding of the people; that if it be meet for the Miniſter, at ſome time to looke towards the people, if the bodie of the Church be a fit place for ſome part of Diuine Seruice, it muſt needs follow that whenſoeuer his face is turned any other way, or any thing done any other-where, it hath abſurditie. *All theſe reaſons*, they ſay, haue beene brought, and were hitherto neuer anſwered; beſide a number of merriments and ieſts vnanſwered likewiſe, wherewith they haue pleaſantly mooued much laughter at our manner of ſeruing God. Such is their euill hap to play vpon dull-ſpirited men. Wee are ſtill perſwaded that a bare denyall, is anſwere ſufficient to things which meere fancie obiecteth; and that the beſt Apologie to words of ſcorne and petulancie, is *Iſaacks* Apologie to his brother *Iſmael*, the Apologie which patience and ſilence maketh. Our anſwer therefore to their reaſons, is no; to their ſcoffes, nothing.

a *T.C.l.*1 *p.*134. *Lib.*3. *pag.*187.

b *Acts* 1.15.

c *T.C.l.*1. *p.*114. *Lib.*3. *pag.*187.

31 When they obiect that our Booke requireth [d] nothing to bee done, which a child may not doe as *lawfully and as well as that man wherewith the Booke contenteth it ſelfe*, is it their meaning that the Seruice of God ought to be a matter of great difficultie, a labour which requireth great learning and deepe skill, or elſe that the Booke containing it, ſhould teach what men are fit to attend vpon it, and forbid either men vnlearned or children to be admitted thereunto? In ſetting downe the forme of Common Prayer, there was no need that the Booke ſhould mention either the learning of a fit, or the vnfitneſſe of an ignorant Miniſter, more then that he which deſcribeth the manner how to pitch a field, ſhould ſpeake of moderation and ſobrietie in diet. And concerning the dutie it ſelfe, although the hardneſſe thereof bee not ſuch as needeth ſuch Art, yet ſurely they ſeeme to bee verie farre carryed beſides themſelues, to whom the dignitie of publique Prayer doth not diſcouer ſomewhat more fitneſſe in men of grauitie and ripe diſcretion, then in children of *ten yeeres of age*, for the decent diſcharge and performance of that office. It cannot bee that they who ſpeake thus, ſhould thus iudge. At the boord and in priuate it verie well becommeth childrens innocencie to pray, and their elders to ſay, *Amen*. Which being a part of their vertuous education, ſerueth greatly both to nouriſh in them the feare of God, and to put vs in continuall remembrance of that powerfull grace, which openeth the mouthes of Infants to ſound his praiſe. But publique

Eaſineſſe of praying after our forme.

d *T.C.l.*1. *p.*133. & *lib.*3. *p.*184. Another fault in the whole Seruice or Liturgie of *England*, is, for that it maintaineth an vnpreaching Miniſterie, in requiring nothing to bee done by the Miniſter, which a child of ten yeeres old can not doe as well, and as lawfully as that man, wherewith the Booke contenteth it ſelfe.

publike Prayer, the ſeruice of God in the ſolemne aſſembly of Saints, is a worke though eaſie, yet withall ſo waightie and of ſuch reſpect, that the great facilitie thereof is but a ſlender argument to prooue it may bee as well and as lawfully committed to children as to men of yeeres, howſoeuer their abilitie of learning be but only to doe that in decent order wherewith the Booke contenteth it ſelfe. The Booke requireth but orderly reading. As in truth, what ſhould any preſcript forme of Prayer framed to the Miniſters hand, require, but onely ſo to be read as behoooueth? We know that there are in the world certaine voluntarie ouer-ſeers of all Bookes, whoſe cenſure in this reſpect would fall as ſharpe on vs as it hath done on many others, if deliuering but a forme of Prayer, wee ſhould either expreſſe or include any thing, more then doth properly concerne Prayer. The Miniſters greatneſſe or meaneneſſe of knowledge to doe other things, his aptneſſe or inſufficiencie otherwiſe then by reading to inſtruct the Flocke, ſtandeth in this place as a ſtranger, with whom our forme of Common Prayer hath nothing to doe. Wherein their exception againſt eaſineſſe, as if that did nouriſh ignorance, proceedeth altogether of a needleſſe iealouſie. I haue often heard it inquired of by many, how it might bee brought to paſſe, that the Church ſhould euery-where haue able Preachers to inſtruct the people; what impediments there are to hinder it, and which were the ſpeedieſt way to remoone them. In which conſultations the multitude of Pariſhes, the paucitie of Schooles, the manifold diſcouragements which are offered vnto mens inclinations that way, the penurie of the Eccleſiaſticall eſtate, the irrecouerable loſſe of ſo many Liuings of principall value, cleane taken away from the Church long ſithence by being appropriated, the daily bruzes that ſpirituall promotions vſe to take by often failing, the want of ſomewhat in certaine ſtatutes which concerne the ſtate of the Church, the too great facilitie of many Biſhops, the ſtonie hardneſſe of too many Patrones hearts not touched with any feeling in this caſe: ſuch things oftentimes are debated, and much thought vpon by them that enter into any diſcourſe concerning any defect of knowledge in the Clergie. But whoſoeuer bee found guiltie, the Communion Booke hath ſurely deſerued leaſt to be called in queſtion for this fault. If all the Clergie were as learned as themſelues are that moſt complaine of ignorance in others, yet our Booke of Prayer might remaine the ſame; and remaining the ſame it is, I ſee not how it can be a let vnto any mans skill in preaching. Which thing we acknowledge to be Gods good gift, howbeit no ſuch neceſſarie element, that euerie act of Religion ſhould bee thought imperfect and lame, wherein there is not ſomewhat exacted that none can diſcharge but an able Preacher.

The length of our ſeruice. a T.C.l.1.p.133. & l.3.p.184.

32 Two faults there are, which our Lord and Saviour himſelfe eſpecially reprooued in prayer; the one, when oſtentation did cauſe it to be open; the other, when ſuperſtition made it long. As therefore prayers the one way are faultie, not whenſoeuer they bee openly made, but when hypocriſie is the cauſe of open praying: ſo the length of prayer is likewiſe a fault, howbeit not ſimply, but where errour and ſuperſtition cauſeth more then conuenient repetition or continuation of ſpeech to bee vſed. It is not as ſome doe imagine (ſaith a Saint *Auguſtine*) that long praying is that fault of much ſpeaking in prayer which

a *Aug. Ep.* 121.

which our Sauiour did reprooue; for then would not hee himſelfe in prayer haue continued a whole nights. Vſe in prayer no vaine ſuperfluitie of words as the Heathens doe, for they imagine that their much ſpeaking wil cauſe them to bee heard: whereas in truth the thing which God doth regard is, how vertuous their minds are, and not how copious their tongues in prayer; how well they thinke, and not how long they talke who come to preſent their ſupplications before him. Notwithſtanding for as much as in publike prayer wee are not onely to conſider what is needfull in reſpect of God, but there is alſo in men that which wee muſt regard; wee ſomewhat the rather incline to length, leſt ouer-quicke diſpatch of a dutie ſo important, ſhould giue the world occaſion to deeme, that the thing it ſelfe is but little accounted of, wherein but little time is beſtowed. Length therefore is a thing which the grauitie and waight of ſuch actions doth require. Beſides, this benefit alſo it hath, that they whom earneſt lets and impediments doe often hinder from being partakers of the whole, haue yet through the length of Diuine Seruice, opportunitie left them, at the leaſt for acceſſe vnto ſome reaſonable part thereof. Againe, it ſhould bee conſidered, how it doth come to paſſe that wee are ſo long. For if that verie ſeruice of God in the Iewiſh Synagogues, which our Lord did approoue and ſanctifie with the preſence of his owne perſon, had ſo large portion of the Law and the Prophets, together with ſo many Prayers and Pſalmes read day by day, as equall in a manner the length of ours, and yet in that reſpect was neuer thought to deſerue blame, is it now an offence that the like meaſure of time is beſtowed in the like manner? Peraduenture the Church hath not now the leiſure which it had then, or elſe thoſe things whereupon ſo much time was then well ſpent, haue ſithence that loſt their dignitie and worth. If the reading of the Law, the Prophets and Pſalmes bee a part of the Seruice of God, as needfull vnder Chriſt as before, and the adding of the New Teſtament, as profitable as the Ordaining of the Old to bee read; if therewith in ſtead of Iewiſh prayer it bee alſo for the good of the Church to annexe that varietie which b the Apoſtle doth commend; ſeeing that the time which wee ſpend is no more then the orderly performance of theſe things neceſſarily required, why are wee thought to exceed in length? Words, bee they neuer ſo few, are too many when they benefit not the Hearer. But hee which ſpeaketh no more then edifieth, is vndeſeruedly reprehended for much ſpeaking. That as c *the Deuill vnder colour of long prayer draue preaching out of the Church* heretofore, *ſo we in appointing ſo long prayers and reading, whereby the leſſe can be ſpent in preaching, maintaine an vnpreaching Miniſterie*, is neither aduiſedly nor truely ſpoken. They proone long prayer, and yet acknowledge it to bee in it ſelfe a thing commendable. For ſo it muſt needs be, if the Deuill haue vſed it as a colour to hide his malicious practices. When malice would worke that which is euill, and in working auoid the ſuſpicion of an euill intent, the colour wherewith it ouercaſteth it ſelfe, is alwaies a faire and plauſible pretence of ſeeking to further that which is good. So that if we both retaine that good which Sathan hath pretended to ſeeke, and auoid the euill which his purpoſe was to effect, haue wee not better preuented his malice, then if as hee hath vnder colour of long prayer, driuen preaching out of the Church, ſo we ſhould take the quarrel of

a Luke 6. 12.

b 1. Tim. 2. 1.

c T.C. 3. p. 184.

of Sermons in hand, and reuenge their cauſe by requitall, thruſting Prayer in a manner out of doores vnder colour of long preaching? In caſe our Prayers being made at their full length, did neceſſarily inforce Sermons to be the ſhorter, yet neither were this to vphold and maintaine an *vnpreaching* Miniſtrie, vnleſſe we will ſay that thoſe ancient Fathers, *Chryſoſtome*, *Auguſtine*, *Leo*, and the reſt, whoſe Homilies in that conſideration were ſhorter for the moſt part then our Sermons are, did then not preach when their ſpeeches were not long. The neceſſitie of ſhortneſſe cauſeth men to cut off impertinent diſcourſes, and to comprize much matter in few words. But neither did it maintaine inabilitie, nor at all preuent opportunitie of preaching, as long as a competent time is granted for that purpoſe. *An houre and a halfe* is, they ſay, in reformed Churches *ordinarily* thought reaſonable, for *their whole Liturgie or Seruice*. Doe we then continue as [a] *Ezra* did in reading the Law from morning till midday? [b] or as the Apoſtle Saint *Paul* did in prayer and preaching, till men through wearineſſe be taken vp dead at our feet? The huge length whereof they make ſuch complaint, is but this, that if our whole forme of Prayer be read, and beſides an houre allowed for a Sermon, wee ſpend ordinarily in both more time then they doe by halfe an houre. Which halfe houre being ſuch a matter, as the *age of ſome, and infirmitie of other ſome are not able to beare*; if we haue any ſenſe of the *common imbecillitie*, if any care to preſerue mens wits from being broken with the verie *bent of ſo long attention*, if any loue or deſire to preuide that things moſt holy be not with hazzard of mens ſoules abhord and lothed, this halfe houres tediouſneſſe muſt bee remedied, and that onely by cutting off the greateſt part of our Common Prayer. For no other remedie will ſerue to helpe ſo dangerous an inconuenience.

a Nehem. 8. 3.
b Act. 20. 9.

In ſtead of ſuch Prayers as the Primitiue Churches haue vſed, and thoſe that be reformed now vſe, we haue (they ſay) liuers ſhort cuts or ſhreddings, rather wiſhes then prayers. T. C. l. 1. p. 138. & l. 3. p. 210, 211.

33 The Brethren in Egypt (ſaith Saint *Auguſtine*, *Epiſt.* 121) are reported to haue many prayers, but euerie of them verie ſhort, as if they were Darts throwne out with a kind of ſuddaine quickneſſe, leſt that vigilant and erect attention of mind, which in prayer is verie neceſſarie, ſhould bee waſted or dulled through continuance, if their prayers were few and long. But that which Saint *Auguſtine* doth allow, they condemne. Thoſe prayers whereunto deuout mindes haue added a piercing kinde of breuitie, as well in that reſpect which we haue alreadie mentioned, as alſo thereby the better to expreſſe that quicke and ſpeedie expedition, wherewith ardent affections, the verie wings of prayer, are delighted to preſent our ſuites in heauen, euen ſooner then our tongues can deuiſe to vtter them; they in their mood, of contradiction ſpare not openly to deride, and that with ſo baſe termes as doe verie ill beſeeme men of their grauitie. Such ſpeeches are ſcandalous, they ſauour not of God in him that vſeth them, and vnto vertuouſly-diſpoſed mindes they are grieuous corroſiues. Our caſe were miſerable, if that wherewith wee moſt indeuour to pleaſe God, were in his ſight ſo vile and deſpicable, as mens diſdainefull ſpeech would make it.

Leſſons intermingled with our Prayers.

34 Againe, for as much as effectuall prayer is ioyned with a vehement intention of the inferiour powers of the ſoule, which cannot therein long continue without paine, it hath beene therefore thought good ſo by turnes to interpoſe ſtill ſomewhat for the higher part of the mind, the vnderſtanding to worke

worke vpon, that both being kept in continuall exerciſe with varietie, neyther might feele any great wearineſſe, and yet each be a ſpurre to other. For Prayer kindleth our deſire to behold God by ſpeculation; and the minde delighted with that contemplatiue ſight of God, taketh euery-where new inflammations to pray, the riches of the Myſteries of heauenly Wiſedome continually ſtirring vp in vs correſpondent deſires towards them. So that he which prayeth in due ſort, is thereby made the more attentiue to heare, and he which heareth, the more earneſt to pray, for the time which wee beſtow as well in the one as the other. But for what cauſe ſoeuer we doe it, this intermingling of Leſſons with Prayers is * in their taſte a thing as vnſauourie, and as vnſeemely in their ſight, as if the like ſhould be done in Sutes and Supplications before ſome mightie Prince of the World. Our ſpeech to worldly Superiors we frame in ſuch ſort as ſerueth beſt to informe and perſwade the mindes of them, who otherwiſe neyther could nor would greatly regard our neceſſities: Whereas, becauſe wee know that God is indeed a King, but *a great* King, who vnderſtandeth all things before-hand which no other King beſides doth, a King which needeth not to bee informed what wee lacke, a King readier to grant then wee to make our requeſts, therefore in Prayer wee doe not ſo much reſpect what Precepts Arte deliuereth touching the method of perſwaſiue vtterance in the preſence of great men, as what doth moſt auayle to our own edification in pietie and godly zeale. If they on the contrary ſide doe thinke that the ſame rules of decencie which ſerue for things done vnto terrene Powers, ſhould vniuerſally decide what is fit in the ſeruice of God, if it be their meaning to hold it for a maxime, that the Church muſt deliuer her publike Supplications vnto God in no other forme of ſpeech then ſuch as were decent, if ſute ſhould bee made to the great Turke, or ſome other Monarch, let them apply their owne rule vnto their own forme of Common Prayer. Suppoſe that the people of a whole Towne with ſome choſen man before them did continually twice or thrice in a Week reſort to their King, and euery time they come, firſt acknowledge themſelues guiltie of rebellions and treaſons, then ſing a Song, after that explaine ſome Statute of the Land to the Standers by, and therein ſpend at the leaſt an houre, this done, turne themſelues againe to the King, and for euery ſort of his Subiects crane ſomewhat of him, at the length ſing him another Song, and ſo take their leaue. Might not the King well thinke, that eyther they knew not what they would haue, or elſe that they were diſtracted in mind, or ſome other ſuch like cauſe of the diſorder of their ſupplication? This forme of ſuing vnto Kings were abſurd. This forme of praying vnto God they allow. When God was ſerued with Legall Sacrifices, ſuch was the miſerable and wretched diſpoſition of ſome mens minds, that the beſt of euery thing they had being culled out for themſelues, if there were in their Flockes any poore ſtarued or diſeaſed thing not worth the keeping, they thought it good enough for the Altar of God, pretending (as wiſe Hypocrites doe when they rob God to inrich themſelues) that the fatneſſe of

* We haue no ſuch formes in the Scripture as that we ſhould pray in two or three lines, and then after hauing read awhile ſome other thing, come and pray as much more, and ſo the 20. or 30. time, with pauſes betweene. If a man ſhould come to a Prince, and hauing verie many things to demand, after hee had demanded one thing, would ſtay a long time, and then demand another, and ſo the third, the Prince might well thinke that eyther hee came to ſuite before he knew what he had need of, or that hee had forgotten ſome piece of his Sute, or that hee were diſtracted in his vnderſtanding, or ſome other ſuch like cauſe of the diſorder of his Supplication. *T.C.l.1.p.138.* This kind of reaſon the Prophet in the matter of Sacrifices doth vſe, *T.C.l.3.p.220.*

Calues doth benefit him nothing, so vs the best things are most profitable, to him all as one if the minde of the Offerer bee good, which is the only thing bee respecteth. In reproofe of which their deuout fraud, the Prophet *Malachie* alleg-eth, that gifts are offered vnto God not as [a] supplies of his want indeed, but yet as testimonies of that affection wherewith we acknowledge and honour his greatnesse. For which cause, sith the greater they are whom wee honour, the more regard wee haue to the qualitie and choice of those presents which we bring them for honours sake, it must needs follow, that if wee dare not disgrace our worldly Superiors with offring vnto them such refuse as we bring vnto God himselfe, we shew plainely that our acknowledgement of his Greatnesse is but fained, in heart wee feare him not so much as we dread them. [b] *If yee offer the Blind for Sacrifice, it is not euil. Offer it now vnto thy Prince. Will he be content or accept thy person, saith the Lord of Hostes? Cursed be the Deceiuer which hath in his Flocke a Male, and hauing made a Vow, sacrificeth vnto the Lord a corrupt thing: For I am a great King, saith the Lord of Hostes.* Should we hereupon frame a Rule, that what forme of speech or behauiour soeuer is fit for Suters in a Princes Court, the same and no other beseemeth vs in our Prayers to Almightie God?

a Μὴν τιμᾷ τὰ δῶρα, τὸ παρ' ἐκείνου τίμιον. Καὶ γὰρ τὸ δῶρον ἐστὶ λέγεσθαι δεῖται καὶ τιμῆς ἕνεκεν Διὸ καὶ ἐκ φιλοχρημοσύνης καὶ ἐκ φιλότιμου ἐξετάζεται αὐτόν. Ἁμαρτάνουσι γὰρ ἐν τοῖς δεῖσθαι. Καὶ γὰρ τίμια ἐστιν οὗ ἐξετάζει ἐκ φιλοχρημοσύνης, ἐκ τιμὴν ἔχει οὗ ἐκ φιλότιμου. Arist. Rhet. lib. 1. cap 5.

b Mala. 1, 14.

The number of our Prayers for earthly things, and our oft rehearsing of the Lords Prayer.

35 But in vaine we labour to perswade them that any thing can take away the rediousnesse of Prayer, except it be brought to the very same both measure and forme which themselues assigne. Whatsoeuer therefore our Liturgie hath more then theirs vnder one deuised pretence or other they cut it off. Wee haue of Prayers for earthly things in their opinion too great a number; so oft to rehearse the Lords Prayer in so small a time, is as they thinke a losse of time; the peoples praying after the Minister, they say, both wasteth time, and also maketh an vnpleasant sound; the *Psalmes* they would not haue to be made (as they are) a part of our Common Prayer, not to be sung or said by turns, nor such Musick to be vsed with them; those Euangelicall *Hymnes* they allow not to stand in our Liturgie; the *Letanie*, the *Creed of Athanasius*, the Sentence of Glorie, wherewith we vse to conclude *Psalmes*, these things they cancell, as hauing beene instituted in regard of occasions peculiar to the times of olde, and as being therefore now superfluous. Touching Prayers for things earthly, wee ought not to thinke that the Church hath set downe so many of them without cause. They peraduenture, which find this fault, are of the same affection with *Salomon*, so that if God should offer to grant them whatsoeuer they aske, they would neither craue riches, nor length of dayes, nor yet victorie ouer their Enemies, but only an vnderstanding heart, for which cause themselues hauing Eagles wings, are offended to see others flie so neere the ground. But the tender kindnesse of the Church of God it very well beseemeth, to helpe the weaker sort

I can make no Geometricall and exact measure, but verily I beleeue there shall bee found more then a third part of the Prayers, which are not *Psalmes* and Texts of Scripture, spent in praying for, and praying against the commodities and incommodities of this life, which is contrary to all the Arguments or Contents of the Prayers of the Church set downe in the Scripture, and especially of our Sauiour Christs Prayer, by the which ours ought to bee directed. *T. C. li. 1. p. 136.* What a reason is this, we must repeat the Lords Prayer oftentimes, therefore oftentimes in halfe an houre, and one in the neck of another? Our Sauiour Christ doth not there giue a prescript forme of Prayer whereunto bee bindeth vs: but giueth vs a Rule and Squire to frame all our Prayers by. I know it is necessary to pray, and pray often. I know also that in a few words it is impossible for any man to frame so pithy a Prayer, and I confesse that the Church doth well in concluding their Prayers with the Lords Prayer: but I stand vpon this, that there is no necessitie layd vpon vs to vse these very words and no more. *T. C. li. 1. p. 121.*

ſort which are by ſo great oddes moe in number, although ſome few of the perfecter and ſtronger may bee therewith for a time diſpleaſed. Ignorant wee are not, that of ſuch as reſorted to our Sauiour Chriſt being preſent on earth, there came not any vnto him with better ſucceſſe for the benefit of their ſoules euerlaſting happineſſe, then they whoſe bodily neceſſities gaue them the firſt occaſion to ſeeke reliefe, where they ſaw willingnes and abilitie of doing euery way good vnto all. The graces of the Spirit are much more precious then worldly benefits; our ghoſtly euils of greater importance then any harme which the bodie feeleth. Therefore our deſires to Heauen ward ſhould both in meaſure and number no leſſe exceed, then their glorious Obiect doth euery way excell in value. Theſe things are true and plaine in the eye of a perfect Iudgement. But yet it muſt be withall conſidered, that the greateſt part of the World are they which be fartheſt from perfection. Such being better able by ſenſe to diſcerne the wants of this preſent life, then by ſpirituall capacitie to apprehend things aboue ſenſe, which tend to their happines in the World to come, are in that reſpect the more apt to apply their mindes euen with heartie affection and zeale at the leaſt vnto thoſe branches of publike Prayer, wherein their owne particular is moued. And by this meane there ſtealeth vpon them a double benefit; firſt, becauſe that good affection, which things of ſmaller account haue once ſet on worke, is by ſo much the more eaſily rayſed higher; and ſecondly, in that the very cuſtome of ſeeking ſo particular ayde and reliefe at the hands of God, doth by a ſecret contradiction withdraw them from indeuouring to help themſelues by thoſe wicked ſhifts, which they know can neuer haue his allowance, whoſe aſſiſtance their Prayer ſeeketh. Theſe multiplyed Petitions of worldly things in Prayer haue therefore, beſides their direct vſe, a Seruice whereby the Church vnder-hand, through a kind of heauenly fraud, taketh therewith the ſoules of men as with certaine bayts. If then their calculation be true (for ſo they reckon) that a full third of our Prayers be allotted vnto earthly benefits, for which our Sauiour in his platforme hath appointed but one Petition amongſt ſeuen, the difference is without any great diſagreement; wee reſpecting what men are, and doing that which is meet in regard of the common imperfection; our Lord contrariwiſe propoſing the moſt abſolute proportion that can bee in mens deſires, the very higheſt marke whereat wee are able to ayme. For which cauſe alſo our cuſtome is both to place it * in the front of our Prayers as a Guide, and to adde it in the end of ſome principall limmes or parts, as a complement which fully perfecteth whatſoeuer may bee defective in the reſt. Twice we rehearſe it ordinarily, and oftner as occaſion requireth more ſolemnitie or length in the forme of Diuine Seruice, not miſtruſting, till theſe new curioſities ſprang vp, that euer any man would thinke our labour herein miſſe-ſpent, the time waſtfully conſumed, & the office it ſelfe made worſe, by ſo repeating that which otherwiſe would more hardly bee made familiar to the ſimpler ſort, for the good of whoſe ſoules there is not in Chriſtian Religion any thing of like continuall vſe and force throughout euery houre and moment of their whole liues. I meane not only becauſe Praier, but becauſe this very Praier is of ſuch efficacie and neceſſitie: For that our Sauiour did but ſet men a bare Example how to contriue or deuiſe Prayers of their owne, and no way binde them

* *Præmiſſa legitima & ordinaria oratione quid fundamento, accidentium eius eſt deſideriorum, hoc eſt ſuperſtruendi extrinſecus petitiones.* Tertul. de Orat.

a *Luke* 11.1

them to vſe this, is no doubt an Error, a *Iohn* the *Baptiſts* Diſciples, which had beene alwayes brought vp in the boſome of Gods Church from the time of their firſt Infancie, till they come to the Schoole of *Iohn*, were not ſo brutiſh, that they could be ignorant how to call vpon the Name of God, but of their Maſter they had receiued a forme of Prayer amongſt themſelues, which forme none did vſe ſauing his Diſciples, ſo that by it as by a marke of ſpeciall difference they were knowne from others. And of this the Apoſtles hauing taken notice, they requeſt that as *Iohn* had taught his, ſo Chriſt would likewiſe teach them to pray. *Tertullian* and Saint *Auguſtine* doe for that cauſe terme it, *Orationem legitimam*, the Praier which Chriſts own Law hath tied his Church to vſe in the ſame preſcript forme of words wherewith he himſelfe did deliuer it, and therefore what part of the World ſoeuer wee fall into, if Chriſtian Religion haue beene there receiued, the ordinary vſe of this very Prayer hath with equall continuance accompanyed the ſame, as one of the principall and moſt materiall duties of honor done to Ieſus Chriſt. *Seeing* b *that we haue* (ſaith Saint CYPRIAN) *an Aduocate with the Father for our ſinnes, when we that haue ſinned come to ſeeke for pardon, let vs alleage vnto God the words which our Aduocate hath taught. For ſith his promiſe is our plaine warrant, that in his Name what wee aske we ſhall receiue, muſt we not needs much the rather obteyne that for which we ſue, if not only his Name doe countenance, but alſo his ſpeech preſent our requeſts?* Though men ſhould ſpeake with the tongues of Angels, yet words ſo pleaſing to the eares of God, as thoſe which the Sonne of God himſelfe hath compoſed, were not poſſible for men to frame. He therefore which made vs to liue, hath alſo taught vs to pray, to the end that ſpeaking vnto the Father in the Sonnes owne preſcript forme without ſcholy or gloſſe of ours, wee may bee ſure that we vtter nothing which God will eyther diſallow or deny. Other Prayers we vſe many beſides this, and this oftner then any other, although not tyed ſo to doe by any Commandement of Scripture, yet mooued with ſuch conſiderations as haue beene before ſet downe: the cauſeleſſe diſlike whereof which others haue conceiued, is no ſufficient reaſon for vs, as much as once to forbeare in any place: a thing which vttered with true deuotion and zeale of heart, affordeth to God himſelfe that glorie, that ayde to the weakeſt ſort of men, to the moſt perfect, that ſolid comfort which is vnſpeakeable.

b *Cypr. in Orat. Dom.*

The peoples ſaying after the Miniſter. Another fault is that all the people are appointed in diuers places to ſay after the Miniſter, whereby not only the time is vnprofitably waſted, and a confuſed noyſe of the people one ſpeaking after another cauſed, but an Opinion bred in their heads that thoſe onely bee their Prayers which they pronounce with their owne mouthes after the Miniſter, otherwiſe then the order which is left to the Church doth beare, 1. *Cor.* 14. 16. and otherwiſe then *Iuſtin Martyr* ſheweth the cuſtome of the Churches to haue beene in his time. *T. C. lib.* 1. *pag.* 139. and *lib.* 3. *page* 212, 213.

36 With our Lords Prayer they would find no fault, ſo that they might perſwade vs to vſe it before or after Sermons onely (becauſe ſo their manner is) and not (as all Chriſtian people haue beene of old accuſtomed) inſert it ſo often into the Liturgie. But the peoples cuſtome to repeate any thing after the Miniſter, they vtterly miſlike. Twice wee appoint that the wordes which the Miniſter firſt pronounceth, the whole Congregation ſhall repeat after him. As firſt in the publike Confeſſion of ſinnes, and againe in rehearſall of our Lords Prayer, preſently after the bleſſed Sacrament of his Bodie and Blood receiued. A thing no way offenſiue, no way vnfit or vnſeemely to bee done, although

though it had beene ſo appointed oftner then with vs it is. But ſurely with ſo good reaſon it ſtandeth in thoſe two places, that otherwiſe to order it were not in all reſpects ſo well. Could there be any thing deuiſed better, then that wee all at our firſt acceſſe vnto God by Prayer, ſhould acknowledge meekely our ſinnes, and that not only in heart but with tongue, all which are preſent being made eare-witneſſes, euen of euery mans diſtinct and deliberate aſſent vnto each particular branch of a common Indictment drawne againſt our ſelues? How were it poſſible, that the Church ſhould any way elſe with ſuch eaſe and certaintie prouide, that none of her Children may as *Adam* diſſemble that wretchednes, the penitent confeſſion whereof is ſo neceſſary a Preamble, eſpecially to Common Prayer? In like manner, if the Church did euer deuiſe a thing fit and conuenient, what more then this, that when together wee haue all receiued thoſe heauenly Myſteries wherein Chriſt imparteth himſelfe vnto vs, and giueth viſible teſtificacion of our bleſſed Communion with him, wee ſhould in hatred of all Hereſies, Factions and Schiſmes, the Paſtor as a Leader, the people as willing followers of him ſtep by ſtep, declare openly our ſelues vnited as Brethren in one, [a] by offering vp with all our hearts and tongues that moſt effectuall Supplication, wherein bee vnto whom we offer it, hath himſelfe not only comprehend all our neceſſities, but in ſuch ſort alſo framed euery Petition, as might moſt naturally ſerue for many, and doth though not alwayes require, yet alwayes import a multitude of ſpeakers together? For which cauſe Communicants haue euer vſed it, and we at that time by the forme of our very vtterance doe ſhew we vſe it, yea, euery word and ſyllable of it as Communicants. In the reſt we obſerue that cuſtome whereunto • Saint *Paul* alludeth, and whereof the Fathers of the Church in their Writings make often mention, to ſhew indefinitely what was done, but not vniuerſally to binde for euer all Prayers vnto one onely faſhion of vtterance. The reaſons which we haue alleaged, induce vs to thinke it ſtill *a good worke*, which they in their penſiue care for the well beſtowing of time account *waſte*. As for vnpleaſantneſſe of ſound if it happen, the good of mens Soules doth eyther deceiue our eares that wee note it not, or arme them with patience to indure it. We are not ſo nice as to caſt away a ſharpe Knife, becauſe the edge of it may ſometimes grate. And ſuch ſubtle opinions as few but Vtopians are likely to fall into, wee in this Clymate doe not greatly feare.

[a] Τὸ γὰρ τῶν ἐχθρῶν διῃρῆσθαι δυνάμεως μεῖζον ἑνὸς πλάσαντος πρὸς ὅλην τὴν συνοδίαν. Baſil. Præf. in Pſal.

• 1. Cor. 14. 16.

37 The complaint which they make about *Pſalmes* and *Hymnes*, might as well be ouer-paſt without any Anſwere, as it is without any cauſe brought forth. But our deſire is to content them if it may bee, and to yeeld them a iuſt reaſon euen of the leaſt things wherein vndeſeruedly they haue but as much as dreamed or ſuſpected that wee doe amiſſe. They ſeeme ſometimes ſo to ſpeake, as if it greatly offended them, that ſuch *Hymnes* and *Pſalmes* as are Scripture, ſhould in Common Prayer bee otherwiſe vſed then the reſt of the Scripture is woont; ſometime diſpleaſed they are at the artificiall Muſicke which wee adde vnto *Pſalmes* of this kinde or of any nature elſe; ſometime the plaineſt and the moſt intelligible rehearſall of them yet they ſauour not, becauſe it is done by Interlocution, and with a mutuall returne of Sentences from ſide to ſide. They are not ignorant what difference there is betweene

Our manner of reading the *Pſalmes* otherwiſe then the reſt of the Scripture. They haue alwaies the ſame profit to bee ſtudied in, to bee read and preached vpon which other Scriptures haue, and this aboue the reſt, that they are to bee ſung.

other parts of Scripture and *Pſalmes*. The choice and flower of all things profitable in other Bookes, the *Pſalmes* doe both more briefly contayne, and more mouingly alſo expreſſe, by reaſon of that Poeticall forme wherewith they are written. The ancient, when they ſpeake of the Booke of *Pſalmes*, vſe to fall into large Diſcourſes, ſhewing how this part aboue the reſt doth of purpoſe ſet forth and celebrate all the conſiderations and operations which belong to God, it magnifieth the holy meditations and actions of diuine men, it is of things heauenly an vniuerſall declaration, working in them, whoſe hearts God inſpireth with the due conſideration thereof, an habit or diſpoſition of minde whereby they are made fit Veſſels both for receit and for delyuery of whatſoeuer ſpirituall perfection. What is there neceſſary for man to know which the *Pſalmes* are not able to teach? They are to beginners an eaſie & familiar Introduction, a mighty augmentation of all Vertue and Knowledge in ſuch as are entred before, a ſtrong confirmation to the moſt perfect amongſt others. Heroicall Magnanimitie, exquite Iuſtice, graue Moderation, exact Wiſdome, Repentance vnfayned, vnwearied Patience, the Myſteries of God, the Sufferings of Chriſt, the Terrors of Wrath, the Comforts of Grace, the Workes of Prouidence ouer this World, and the promiſed Ioyes of that World which is to come, all good neceſſarily to be eyther knowne or done or had, this one Celeſtiall Fountayne yeeldeth. Let there be any griefe or diſeaſe incident to the ſoule of man, any wound or ſickneſſe named, for which there is not in this Treaſure-houſe a preſent comfortable remedie at all times readie to be found. Hereof it is that wee couet to make the *Pſalmes* eſpecially familiar vnto all. This is the verie cauſe why wee iterate the *Pſalmes* oftner then any other part of Scripture beſides, the cauſe wherefore we inure the people together with their Miniſter, and not the Miniſter alone to reade them as other parts of Scripture bee doth.

But to make daily Prayers of them hand-ouer-head, or otherwiſe then the preſent eſtate wherein we bee, doth agree with the matter contained in them is an abuſing of them.

T. C. l. 3. p. 206. * ὑπερπλησμὸν τῶν πανταχοῦ ὑμνολογίων. Dionyſ. Hierar. Eccleſ. c. 3.

Of Muſicke with *Pſalmes*.

38 Touching Muſicall Harmonie, whether by Inſtrument or by Voyce, it being but of high and low in ſounds a due proportionable diſpoſition, ſuch notwithſtanding is the force thereof, and ſo pleaſing effects it hath in that very part of man which is moſt diuine, that ſome haue beene thereby induced to thinke that the Soule it ſelfe by nature is, or hath in it harmony. A thing which delighteth all Ages and beſeemeth all States; a thing as ſeaſonable in griefe as in ioy; as decent being added vnto actions of greateſt waight and ſolemnitie, as being vſed when men moſt ſequeſter themſelues from action. The reaſon hereof is an admirable facilitie which Muſicke hath to expreſſe and repreſent to the mind, more inwardly than any other ſenſible meane, the very ſtanding, riſing and falling, the very ſteps and inflections euery way, the turnes and varieties of all paſſions whereunto the minde is ſubiect: yea, ſo to imitate them, that whether it reſemble vnto vs the ſame ſtate wherein our mindes alreadie are, or a cleane contrarie, we are not more contentedly by the one confirmed, then changed and led away by the other. In Harmony the very Image and Character euen of Vertue and Vice is perceiued, the mind delighted with their Reſemblances, and brought, by hauing them often iterated, into a loue of the things themſelues. For which cauſe there is nothing more contagious and peſtilent then ſome kindes of Harmonie; then ſome nothing more ſtrong and

and potent vnto good. And that there is ſuch a difference of one kind from another, we need no proofe but our owne experience, in as much as wee are at the hearing of ſome more inclined vnto ſorrow and heauineſſe; of ſome, more mollified and ſoftned in mind; one kind apter to ſtay and ſettle vs, another to moouc and ſtirre our affections; there is that draweth to a maruelous graue and ſober mediocritie, there is alſo that carryeth as it were into exſtaſies, filling the mind with an heauenly ioy, and for the time in a manner, ſeuering it from the bodie. So that although we lay altogether aſide the conſideration of Dittie or Matter, the verie harmonie of ſounds being framed in due ſort, and carryed from the eare to the ſpirituall faculties of our ſoules, is by a native puiſſance and efficacie greatly auaileable to bring to a perfect temper whatſoeuer is there troubled, apt as well to quicken the ſpirits, as to allay that which is too eager, ſouereigne againſt melancholy and deſpaire, forcible to draw forth teares of deuotion, if the mind bee ſuch as can yeeld them, able both to moouc and to moderate all affections. The Prophet *Dauid* hauing therefore ſingular knowledge not in Poetrie alone but in Muſique alſo, iudged them both to be things moſt neceſſarie for the houſe of God, left behind him to that purpoſe a number of diuinely indited Poemes, and was farther the Author of adding vnto Poetrie melodie in publique prayer, melodie both vocall and inſtrumentall for the rayſing vp of mens hearts, and the ſweetning of their affections towards God. In which conſiderations the Church of Chriſt doth likewiſe at this preſent day retaine it as an ornament to Gods ſeruice, and an helpe to our owne deuotion. They which vnder pretence of the Law Ceremoniall abrogated, require the abrogation of inſtrumentall Muſique, approouing neuertheleſſe the vſe of vocall melodie to remaine, muſt ſhew ſome reaſon wherefore the one ſhould be thought a Legall Ceremonie and not the other. In Church-Muſique curioſitie and oſtentation of Art, wanton, or light, or vnſuteable harmonie, ſuch as only pleaſeth the eare, and doth not naturally ſerue to the verie kind and degree of thoſe impreſſions which the matter that goeth with it leaueth, or is apt to leaue in mens minds, doth rather blemiſh and diſgrace that wee doe, then adde either beautie or furtherance vnto it. On the other ſide, theſe faults preuented, the force and efficacie of the thing it ſelfe, when it drowneth not vtterly, but fitly ſuteth with matter altogether ſounding to the praiſe of God, is in truth moſt admirable, and doth much edifie if not the vnderſtanding, becauſe it teacheth not, yet ſurely the affection, becauſe therein it worketh much. They muſt haue hearts verie drie and tough, from whom the melodie of Pſalmes doth not ſometime draw that wherein a mind religiouſly affected delighteth. Be it as *Rabanus Maurus* obſerueth, that at the firſt the Church in this exerciſe was more ſimple and plaine then we are, that their ſinging was little more then onely a melodious kind of pronunciation, that the cuſtome which wee now vſe was not inſtituted ſo much for their cauſe which are ſpirituall, as to the end that into groſſer and beaſtlier minds whom bare words doe not eaſily moouc, the ſweetneſſe of melodie might make ſome entrance for good things. S. *Baſil* himſelfe acknowledging as much, did not thinke that from ſuch inuentions the leaſt iot of eſtimation and credit thereby ſhould bee derogated:

* For

a Εοικε γαρ ὁ ἁγιος τῶν ἀνθρωπων τὸ πολυτροπον ἐν τῇ πρὸς ἀρετὴν ἐπιτηδειοτητι ἐκ τῆς ἀνθρωπινης ἀσθενειας ἐπιγνους, καὶ τὸ ἀμελες τῆς ἐπ' αὐτῇ σπουδῆς ἐκ τῆς ἐπιμελειας τῶν ἡδεων, ἐπενοησε τοῖς ἀνθρωποις τὸ ἐκ τῆς μελῳδιας τερπνὸν ἐπιμιξας τοῖς μυστικοῖς θεωρημασι, ἵνα τὸ μὲν ἡδυ τῆς ᾠδῆς ὑπουργοῦν τῇ ὠφελειᾳ τοῖς ἀσθενεστερον διακειμενοις ὑπεισδυ τῇ ψυχῇ, καὶ ἐν τῷ δοκειν ἁδειν μανθανωσιν ἃ συμφερει. Ἐκ τουτου τοιγαρουν τοῖς μὲν ἀτελεστερον ἔτι διακειμενοις ἡ τῶν ψαλμῶν ᾠδὴ διδασκαλος γινεται, ἵνα δι' ἡδονῆς τινος ἀπαθοῦς ἐπ' ὠφελειαν ἑλκωνται· τοῖς δὲ ἤδη τι προκοψασι τῇ ἐπιμελειᾳ τῆς ἀληθειας τὰ ὠφελιμα ἐκμανθανουσιν. Ὃ δὲ τῶν ἐφεξῆς ἔστιν ἐν ἀνδρασιν ἡμῖν ἢ ἄδειν ἐμοὶ δοκεῖ ἢ τὸ μανιαν μανθανειν μεγαφυσιον, *Basil. in Psal.*

a *For (saith he) whereas the holy Spirit saw that mankinde is vnto vertue hardly drawne, and that righteousnes is the lesse accounted of, by reason of the proneneſſe of our affections to that which delighteth, it pleased the wisedome of the same Spirit to borrow from melody that pleasure, which mingled with heauenly mysteries, causeth the smoothneſſe & softneſſe of that which toucheth the eare, to conuey as it were by stealth the treasure of good things into mans mind. To this purpose were those harmonious tunes of Psalmes deuised for vs, that they which are either in yeares but young, or touching perfection of vertue as yet not growne to ripeneſſe, might, when they thinke they sing, learne. O the wise conceits of that heauenly teacher, which hath by his skill found out a way, that doing those things wherein wee delight, wee may also learne that whereby we profit!*

Of singing or saying Psalmes and other parts of common Prayer, wherein the People and Minister answer one another by course.

39 And if the Prophet *Dauid* did thinke that the very meeting of men together, & their accompanying one another to the house of God, should make the bond of their loue insoluble, and tye them in a league of inuiolable amitie, *Psa.* 54. 14. how much more may we iudge it reasonable to hope, that the like effects may grow in each of the people towards other, in them all towards their Pastor, and in their Pastor towards euerie of them; betweene whom their daily and interchangeably passe in the hearing of God himselfe, and in the prefence of his holy Angels, ſo many heauenly Acclamations, Exultations, Pronocations, Petitions, Songs of comfort, Psalmes of praise and thanksgiuing, in al which particulars, as when the Pastor maketh their suites, and they with one voyce testifie a generall assent thereunto; or when hee ioyfully beginneth, and they with like alacritie follow, diuiding between them the sentences wherwith they strine, which shall most shew his owne, and stir vp others zeale to the glorie of that God whose name they magnifie; or when he propoſeth vnto God their neceſſities, & they their owne requests for reliefe in euery of them; or when he lifteth vp his voice like a trumpet, to proclaime vnto them the Lawes of God, they adioyning, though not as *Israel* did, by way of generalitie a cheerful promiſe, b *All that the Lord hath commanded we will doe*, yet that which God doth no leſſe approue, that which sinoreth more of meekeneſſe, that which testifieth rather a feeling knowledge of our common imbecillitie, vnto the seuerall branches therof, seuerally, lowly, & humble requests for grace at the merciful hands of God, to perform the thing which is commanded; or when they wish reciprocally each others ghostly happines; or when he by exhortation raiſeth them vp, & they by profeſſion of their readineſſe declare, he speaketh not in vaine vnto them; these interlocutorie formes of speech what are they elſe but most effectuall, partly testifications, and partly inflammations of all pietie? When and how this custome of singing by course came vp in the Church, it is not certainly known. c *Socrates* maketh *Ignatius* the Bishop

For the singing of Psalmes by course, and side after side, although it be verie ancient, yet it is not commendable, and so much the more to be suſpected, for that the Deuill hath gone about to get it so great authoritie, partly by deriuing it from *Ignatius* time, and partly in making the world beleeue that this came from heauen, and that the Angels were heard to sing after this sort. Which as it is a meere fable, so is it confuted by Historiographers, whereof some ascribe the beginning of this to *Damasus*, some other vnto *Flauianus* and *Diodorus*. T. C. lib. 1. pag. 103.

b Exod. 19. 8. 24. 3. Deut. 5. 27, 28. 17. Iosh. 24. 16.

c Socrat. Hist. Eccles. l. 6. c. 8.

Biſhop of Antioch in Syria the firſt beginner thereof, euen vnder the Apoſtles themſelues. But againſt *Socrates* they ſet the authoritie of [a] *Theodoret*, who draweth the originall of it from Antioch as *Socrates* doth; howbeit aſcribing the inuention to others, *Flauian*, and *Diodore*, men which conſtantly ſtood in defence of the Apoſtolike Faith, againſt the Biſhop of that Church, *Leontius*, a fauourer of the Arrians. Againſt both *Socrates* and *Theodoret*, [b] *Platina* is brought as a witneſſe, to teſtifie that *Damaſus* Biſhop of Rome began it in his time. Of the Latine Church it may be true which *Platina* ſaith. And therefore the eldeſt of that Church which maketh any mention thereof, is [c] Saint *Ambroſe*, Biſhop of Millan at the ſame time when *Damaſus* was of Rome. Amongſt the Grecians [d] Saint *Baſil* hauing brought it into his Church before they of Neoceſarea vſed it, *Sabellius* the Heretike and *Marcellus* tooke occaſion thereat to incenſe the Churches againſt him, as being an author of new deuices in the ſeruice of God. Whereupon, to auoid the opinion of nouelrie and ſingularitie, hee alledgeth for that which himſelfe did, the example of the Churches of Egypt, Libya, Thebes, Paleſtina, Tharabians, Phenicians, Syrians, Meſopotamians, and in a manner all that reuerenced the cuſtome of ſinging of Pſalmes together. If the Syrians had it then before *Baſil*, Antioch the Mother-Church of thoſe parts muſt needs haue vſed it before *Baſil*, and conſequently before *Damaſus*. The queſtion is then how long before, and whether ſo long that *Ignatius*, or as ancient as *Ignatius*, may bee probably thought the firſt Inuenters. *Ignatius* in *Traianes* dayes ſuffered Martyrdome. And [e] of the Churches in Pontus and Bithynia to *Traiane* the Emperor his owne Vicegerent there affirmeth, that the onely crime hee knew of them, was, they vſed to meete together at a certaine day, and to praiſe Chriſt with Hymnes as a God, *ſecum inuicem*, one to another amongſt themſelues. Which for any thing we know to the contrarie, might be the ſelfe-ſame forme which *Philo Iudæus* expreſſeth, declaring how the Eſſence were accuſtomed with Hymnes and Pſalmes to honour God, ſometime all exalting their voyces together in one, and ſometime one part anſwering another, wherein, as hee thought, they ſwarued not much from the patterne of *Moſes* and [f] *Miriam*. Whether *Ignatius* did at any tiſſe heare the Angels praiſing God after that ſort, or no, what matter is it? If *Ignatius* did not, yet one which muſt be with vs of greater authoritie, did [g] *I ſaw the Lord* (ſaith the Prophet *Eſay*) *on an high Throne, the Seraphims ſtood vpon it*, one cryed to another, *ſaying, Holy, Holy, Holy, Lord God of Hoſts, the whole world is full of his glory*. But whoſoeuer were the Author, whatſoeuer the Time, whenceſoeuer the Example of beginning this cuſtome in the Church of Chriſt, ſith we are wont to ſuſpect things onely before triall, and afterwards either to approue them as good, or if we find them euill, accordingly to iudge of them, their counſell muſt needs ſeeme verie vnſeaſonable, who aduiſe men now to ſuſpect that wherewith the world hath had by their owne account twelue hundreth yeeres acquaintance and vpwards, enough to take away ſuſpicion and iealouſie. Men know by this time if euer they will know, whether it be good or euill which hath been ſo long retayned. As for the Deuill, which way it ſhould greatly benefit him to haue this manner of ſinging Pſalmes accounted an inuention of *Ignatius*, or an imitation

a *Theod. lib. 2. cap. 24.*

b *Plat. in vita Damaſ.*

c *Bene mari pleruſque comparatur Eccleſia, quæ primo ingredientis populi agmine totis veſtibulis undas vomit; deinde in oratione totius plebis tanquã undæ reſluentibus ſtridet, tum reſponſorijs Pſalmorum, cantu virorum, mulierum, virginum, paruulorumque confuſum vndarum fragor reſultat.* Hexam. l. 2. c. 5.

d *Baſil Epiſt. 63.*

e *Plin. ſecund. Epiſt.*

f *Exod. 15. 1. 21.*

g *Eſay 6. 3.*

imitation of the Angels of heauen wee doe not well vnderſtand. But wee very well ſee in them who thus plead, a wonderfull celeritie of diſcourſe. For perceiuing at the firſt but onely ſome cauſe of ſuſpicion, and feare leſt it ſhould be euill, they are preſently in one and the ſelfe-ſame breath reſolued, that [a] *what beginning ſoeuer it had, there is no poſſibilitie it ſhould be good.* The potent arguments which did thus ſuddainely breake in vpon them and ouercome them are the firſt, that it is not vnlawfull for the people all ioyntly to praiſe God in ſinging of Pſalmes: ſecondly, that they are not any-where forbidden by the Law of God to ſing euerie Verſe of the whole Pſalme, both with heart and voice quite and cleane throughout: thirdly, that it cannot be vnderſtood what is ſung after our manner. Of which three, for as much as lawfulneſſe to ſing one way, proueth not another way inconuenient, the former two are true allegations, but they lacke ſtrength to accompliſh their deſire; the third ſo ſtrong that it might perſwade, if the truth thereof were not doubtfull. And ſhall this inforce vs to baniſh a thing which all Chriſtian Churches in the world haue receiued; a thing which ſo many ages haue held; a thing which the moſt approued Councels and Lawes haue ſo oftentimes ratified; a thing which was neuer found to haue any inconuenience in it; a thing which alwayes heretofore the beſt men and wiſeſt Gouernours of Gods people did thinke they could neuer commend enough; a thing which as *Baſil* was perſwaded, did both ſtrengthen the Meditation of thoſe holy words which were vttered in that ſort, and ſerue alſo to make attentiue, and to raiſe vp the hearts of men; a thing whereunto Gods people of old did reſort with hope and thirſt, that thereby eſpecially their ſoules might be edified; a thing which filleth the mind with comfort and heauenly delight, ſtirreth vp flagrant deſires and affections correſpondent vnto that which the words containe, allayeth all kind of baſe and earthly cogitations, baniſheth and driueth away thoſe euill ſecret ſuggeſtions which our inuiſible Enemie is alwayes apt to miniſter, watreth the heart to the end it may fructifie, maketh the vertuous in trouble full of magnanimitie and courage, ſerueth as a moſt approoued remedie againſt all dolefull and heauie accidents which befall men in this preſent life; to conclude, ſo fitly accordeth with the Apoſtles own exhortation, [b] *Speake to your ſelues in Pſalmes and Hymnes, and ſpirituall Songs, making melodie, and ſinging to the Lord in your hearts*, that ſurely there is more cauſe to feare leſt the want thereof be a mayme, then the vſe a blemiſh to the ſeruice of God? It is not our meaning, that what we attribute vnto the Pſalmes, ſhould be thought to depend altogether on that onely forme of ſinging or reading them by courſe, as with vs the manner is; but the end of our ſpeech is to ſhew, that becauſe the Fathers of the Church, with whom the ſelfe-ſame cuſtome was ſo many Ages agoe in vſe, haue vttered all theſe things concerning the fruit which the Church of God did then reape, obſeruing that and no other forme, it may bee iuſtly auouched that wee our ſelues retaining it, and beſides it alſo the other more newly and not vnfruitfully deuiſed,

[a] From whence ſoeuer it came, it cannot be good, conſidering that when it is granted that all the People may praiſe God (as it is in ſinging of Pſalmes) then this ought not to be reſtrained vnto a few; and where it is lawfull both with heart and voice to ſing the whole Pſalme, there it is not meet that they ſhould ſing but the one halfe with their heart and voyce, and the other with their heart onely. For where they may both with heart and voice ſing, there the heart is not enough. Therfore beſides the incommoditie which commeth this way, in that being toſſed after this ſort, men cannot vnderſtand what it is ſung, thoſe other two inconueniences come of this ſo meane of ſinging, and therefore it is baniſhed in all reformed Churches. *T. C lib. 1. pag. 103.*

[b] *Ephes. 5. 19.*

deuiſed, doe neither want that good which the latter inuention can affoord, nor loſe any thing of that for which the Ancient ſo oft and ſo highly commend the former. Let nouelrie therefore in this giue ouer endleſſe contradictions, and let ancient cuſtome preuaile.

40 We haue alreadie giuen cauſe ſufficient for the great conueniencie and vſe of reading the Pſalmes oftner then other Scriptures. Of reading or ſinging likewiſe *Magnificat*, *Benedictus*, and *Nunc dimittis*, oftner then the reſt of the Pſalmes, the cauſes are no whit leſſe reaſonable, ſo that if the one may verie well monethly, the other may as well euen daily be iterated. They are Songs which concerne vs ſo much more then the Songs of *Dauid*, as the Goſpel toucheth vs more then the Law, the New Teſtament then the Old. And if the Pſalmes for the excellencie of their vſe, deſerue to be oftner repeated then they are, but that the multitude of them permitteth not any oftner repetition, what diſorder is it if theſe few Euangelicall Hymnes which are in no reſpect leſſe worthy, and may bee by reaſon of their paucitie imprinted with much more eaſe in all mens memories, be for that cauſe euerie day reheatſed? In our owne behalfe it is conuenient and orderly enough, that both they and we make day by day prayers and ſupplications the very ſame; why not as fit and conuenient to magnifie the name of God day by day with certaine the verie ſelfe-ſame Pſalmes of praiſe and thankſgiuing? Either let them not allow the one, or elſe ceaſe to reproue the other. For the ancient receiued vſe of intermingling Hymnes and Pſalmes with diuine readings, enough hath beene written. And if any may fitly ſerue vnto that purpoſe, how ſhould it better haue beene deuiſed, then that a competent number of the Old being firſt read, theſe of the New ſhould ſucceed in the place where now they are ſet? In which place notwithſtanding there is ioyned with *Benedictus* the hundreth Pſalme; with *Magnificat*, the ninetie eight; the ſixtie ſeuenth with *Nunc dimittis*, and in euerie of them the choice left free for the Miniſter to vſe indifferently the one or the other. Seeing therefore they pretend no quarrell at other Pſalmes, which are in like manner appointed alſo to bee daily read, why doe theſe ſo much offend and diſpleaſe their taſte? They are the firſt gratulations wherewith our Lord and Sauiour was ioyfully receiued at his entrance into the World, by ſuch as in their hearts, armes, and verie bowels imbraced him; being propheticall diſcoueries of Chriſt alreadie preſent, whoſe future comming the other Pſalmes did but fore-ſignifie; they are againſt the obſtinate incredulitie of the Iewes, the moſt luculent teſtimonies that Chriſtian Religion hath; yea the onely ſacred Hymnes they are that Chriſtianitie hath peculiar vnto it ſelfe, the other being Songs too of praiſe and thankſgiuing, but Songs wherewith as wee ſerue God, ſo the Iew likewiſe. And whereas they tell vs theſe Songs were fit for that purpoſe, when *Simeon* and *Zacharie*, and the bleſſed *Virgin* vttered them, but cannot ſo bee to vs which haue not receiued like benefit; ſhould they not remember how expreſſely *Ezechias* amongſt many other good things is commended for this alſo, * that the praiſes of God were through his appointment daily ſet forth, by vſing in publique diuine Seruice the Songs of *Dauid* and *Aſaph* vnto that verie end? Either there wanted wiſe men to giue *Ezechias* aduice, & to informe him of that which in his caſe was as true as it is in

Of *Magnificat*, *Benedictus*, and *Nunc dimittis*.

These thankſgiuings were made by occaſion of certain particular benefits, and are no more to bee vſed for ordinarie prayers, then the *Aue Maria*. So that both for this cauſe and the other before alleaged of the Pſalmes, it is not conuenient to make ordinary prayers of them. T.C.l. 3. p. 208.

* 2. Chron. 29. 30.

in ours, namely, that without ſome inconuenience and diſorder hee could not appoint thoſe Pſalmes to bee vſed as ordinary Prayers, ſeeing that although they were Songs of thankſgiuing, ſuch as *Dauid* and *Aſaph* had ſpeciall occaſion to vſe, yet not ſo the whole Church and People afterwards whom like occaſions did not befall: or elſe *Ezechias* was perſwaded as we are, that the prayſes of God in the mouthes of his Saincts, are not ſo reſtrained to their owne particular, but that others may both conueniently and fruitfully vſe them; firſt, becauſe the myſticall communion of all faithfull men is ſuch as maketh euerie one to be intereſſed in thoſe precious bleſſings, which any one of them receiueth at Gods hands: ſecondly, becauſe when any thing is ſpoken to extoll the goodneſſe of God whoſe mercie indureth for euer, albeit the verie particular occaſion whereupon it riſeth doe come no more, yet the Fountaine continuing the ſame, and yeelding other new effects which are but onely in ſome ſort proportionable, a ſmall reſemblance betweene the benefits which we and others haue receiued, may ſerue to make the ſame words of praiſe and thankſgiuing fit, though not equally in all circumſtances fit for both, a cleere demonſtration whereof wee haue in all the ancient Fathers Commentaries and Meditations vpon the Pſalmes: laſt of all, becauſe euen when there is not as much as the ſhew of any reſemblance, neuertheleſſe by often vſing their words in ſuch manner, our minds are daily more and more inured with their affections.

Of the Leanie.

41 The publike eſtate of the Church of God amongſt the Iewes hath had many rare and extraordinarie occurrents, which alſo were occaſions of ſundrie [a] open ſolemnities & offices, wherby the people did with general cõſent make ſhew of correſpondent affection towards God. The like duties appeare vſuall in the ancient Church of Chriſt, by that which [b] *Tertullian* ſpeaketh of Chriſtian women matching themſelues with Infidels. *She cannot content the Lord with performance of his diſcipline, that hath at her ſide a vaſſal whom Satan hath made his vice-agent to croſſe whatſoeuer the faithfull ſhould doe. If her preſence be required at the time of Statiõ or ſtanding prayer, he chargeth her at no time but that to bee with him in his bathes; if a faſting day come, he hath on that day a banquet to make; if there be cauſe for the Church to goe forth in ſolemne Proceſsion, his whole family haue ſuch buſineſſe come vpon them that no one can be ſpared.* Theſe *Proceſsions*, as it ſeemeth, were firſt begun for the interring of holy Martyrs, and the viſiting of thoſe places where they were intombed. Which thing the name it ſelfe applyed by [c] Heathens vnto the office of exequies, and partly the ſpeeches of ſome of the ancient

Wee pray for the auoiding of thoſe dangers which are nothing neere vs, as from Lightning and Thundring in the midſt of Winter, from Storme and Tempeſt when the weather is moſt faire and the Seas moſt calme. It is true that vpon ſome vrgent calamitie a prayer may and ought to be framed, which may beg either the commoditie for want whereof the Church is in diſtreſſe, or the turning away of that miſchiefe which either approacheth or is alreadie vpon it: but to make thoſe prayers which are for the preſent time and danger, ordinarie and daily prayers, I cannot hitherto ſee any, either Scripture or example of the Primitiue Church. And here for the ſimples ſake I will ſet downe after what ſort this abuſe crept into the Church. There was one *Mamertus* Biſhop of Vienna, which in the time of great earth-quakes, which were in France, inſtituted certaine ſupplications, which the Grecians, and we of them, call the Letanie, which concerned that matter: there is no doubt, but as other diſcommodities roſe in other Countries, they likewiſe had prayers accordingly. Now Pope Gregorie either made himſelfe, or gathered the ſupplications that were made againſt the calamities of euery Country, and made of them a great Letanie or Supplication, as *Platina* calleth it, and gaue it to be vſed in all Churches: which thing albeit all Churches might doe for the time, in reſpect of the eaſe of the calamitie which the Churches ſuffered, yet there is no cauſe why it ſhould be perpetuall that was ordained but for a time, and why all Lands ſhould pray to be deliuered from the inconmodities that ſome Land hath beene troubled with. *T. C. lib. 1. pag. 137.* a *Exod* 15. 20. *1 Sam.* 18. 20. *2. Sam. 6. 2. 1. Chron. 13. 5. 2. Chron. 20. 3. Ioel 2. 15.* b *Tertull. l. 2. ad Vxor.* c *Tertul. Apol.*

ancient delivered concerning Christian processions, partly also the very drosse which superstition thereunto added, I meane, the custome of invocating Saints in processions heretofore vsuall, doe strongly insinuate. And as things intended to one purpose are by vse easily converted to more, it grew that superstitions with this solemnitie for the appeasing of Gods wrath, and the auerting of publique euils, were of the Greeke Church termed [a] *Litanies*, *Rogations* of the Latine. To the people of *Vienne*, [b] *Mamercus* being their Bishop about foure yeeres after Christ) there befell many things, the sodainnesse and strangenesse whereof so amazed the hearts of all men, that the Citie they began to forsake as a place which heauen did threaten with imminent ruine. It seemed not the person of so graue a Prelate to bee either vtterly without counsell as the rest were, or in a common perplexitie so shew himselfe alone secure. Wherefore as many as remayned, be earnestly exhorteth to prevent portended calamities, vsing those vertuous and holy meanes wherewith others in like case haue preuailed with God. To which purpose hee perfecteth the *Rogations* or *Litanies* before in vse, and addeth vnto them that which the present necessitie required. Their good successe mooued [c] *Sidonius* Bishop of *Auernis* to vse the same so corrected *Rogations* at such time as hee and his people were after afflicted with famine, and besieged with potent aduersaries. For till the empric name of the Empire came to be settled in *Charles* the great, the fall of the Romane huge dominion concurring with other vniuersall euils, caused those times to be dayes of much affliction and trouble throughout the world. So that *Rogations* or *Litanies* were then the very strength, stay and comfort of Gods Church. Wherupon in the yeere fiue hundred and six it was by the [e] Councill of *Aurelia* decreed, that the whole Church should bestow yeerely at the feast of Pentecost three dayes in that kind of processionarie seruice. About halfe an hundred yeeres after, to the end that the Latine Churches which all obserued this custome, might not varie in the order and forme of those great *Litanies* which were so solemnely euery where exercised, it was thought conuenient by *Gregorie* the first and the best of that name, to draw the flower of them all into one. But this iron began at the length to gather rust. Which thing the [f] *Synod* of *Colen* saw, and in part redrest within that Prouince, neither denying the necessarie vse for which such *Litanies* serue, wherein Gods clemencie and mercie is desired by publique suites, to the end that plagues, destructions, calamities, famines, warres, and all other the like aduersities which for our manifold sinnes wee haue alwaies cause to feare, may be turned away from vs and prevented through his grace; nor yet dissembling the great abuse whereunto as sundrie other things, so this had growne by meanes improbitie and malice, to whom that which was deuised for the appeasing of Gods displeasure, gaue opportunitie of committing things which iustly kindled his wrath. For remedie whereof it was then thought better, that these and all other supplications or processions should be no where vsed but only within the walles of the house of God, the place sanctified vnto prayer. And by vs not onely such inconueniences being remedied, but also whatsoeuer was otherwise amisse in forme or matter, it now remaineth a worke, the absolute perfection whereof bewrayeth with errour or somewhat worse, them whom in all parts it doth not satisfie.

a Sidon. Epist. 11. ad Euseb. Martyres tibi quærantur in cubicu'o tuo. Nunquam causa doctrinæ procedendi & semper quando necesse est progressus fit.

b Socrat. lib. 6. cap. 8. Sozom. lib. 8. cap. 8. Theod. lib. 16. lib. 30. Lib. 3. cap. 10. Nouel. 68. 51.

c Basil. Epist. 63. Niceph. lib. 14. cap. 3. Cedren. in Theodos.

d Sidon. lib. 7. Epist. 1.

e Concil. an. 511.

f Concil. an. 1535.

As therefore Letanies haue beene of longer continuance then that we can shoulde make either *Gregories* or *Mamercus* the authour of them, so they are of more permanent vse, then that now the Church should thinke it needeth them not. What dangers at any time are imminent, what euils hang ouer our heads, God doth know and not we. We find by daily experience, that those calamities may be neerer his hand, readiest to breake in sodainely vpon vs, which we in regard of times or circumstances may imagine to be furthest off. Or if they doe not indeed approch, yet such miseries as being present all men are apt to bewaile with teares, the wise by their prayers should rather preuent. Finally if wee for our selues had a priuiledge of immunitie, doth not true Christian Charitie require that whatsoeuer any part of the world, yea any one of all our brethren elsewhere doth either suffer or feare, the same we accoūt as our own burthen? What one petition is there found in the whole *Letanie*, whereof we shall euer be able at any time to spit that we must fining needeth the grace or benefit therein craued at Gods hande? I am not able to expresse how much it doth grieue mee, that things of principall excellencie should bee thus bitten at, by men whom God hath indeed with grace hath of wit and learning for better purposes.

Of *Athanasius* Creede, and *Gloria Patri*.

a *Irenæus, l. 1. c. 3.*

b *Tertul. de præscript. hæret. & aduers. Prax.*

c The like may be said of the *Gloria patri* and the *Athanasian* Creede. It was first brought into the Church, to the end that men thereby should vnder an open profession in the Church of the Diuinitie of the Sonne of God against the detestable opinion of *Arrius* & his disciples, wherewith at that time marueilously swarmed almost the whole Christendom. Now that it hath pleased the Lord to quench that fire, there is no such cause why those things should bee vsed in the Church, as the last why they should be so often repeated. Which [illegible] in

42. We haue from the Apostles of our Lord Iesus Christ receiued that briefe Confession of faith, which hath beene alwaies a badge of the Church, a marke whereby to discerne Christian men from Infidels and Iewes. a *The faith receiued from the Apostles and their Disciples* (saith *Irenæus*) *the Church though dispersed through out the world, doth notwithstanding keepe as safe as if it dwelt within the walls of some one house, and as vniformely beleeue, as if it had but one only heart and soule, and as consonantly it preacheth, teacheth, and deliuereth, as if but one mouth did speake for all. As one Sunne shineth to the whole world, so there is no faith but this one published, the brightnesse whereof must daily shine all that come to the knowledge of the truth.* b *This rule* (saith *Tertullian*) *Christ did institute, the strictnes and current of this rule haue wee seene yeares, it hath continued as long as the very preaching of the Gospell.* c Vnder *Constantine* the Emperour, about three hundred yeares and vpward after Christ, *Arrius* a Priest in the Church of *Alexandria*, a subtile witted and a marueilous faire spoken man, but discontented that one should be placed before him in honour, whose superiour hee thought himselfe in deserts, because through enuy and stomache prone vnto contradiction, and bold as breach as the length that heresie wherein the deitie of our Lord Iesus Christ consysted, but not opened in the former Creed, the coequalitie and consubstantiall of the Sonne with the Father was denied. Being for this impiety deposed of his place by the Bishop of the same Church, the punishment which should haue reformed him, did but increase his obstinacie, and giue him occasion of labouring with greater carnestnesse elsewhere, to intangle vnwarie minds with the snares of his damnable opinion. *Arrius* in short time had won to himselfe a number both of followers and of great defenders, whereupon much disquietnesse on all sides ensued. The Emperour, to reduce the Church of Christ vnto the vnitie of sound belief, when other meanes, whereof triall was first made, tooke no effect, gathered that famous assemblie of 318. Bishops

in the Councell of *Nice*, where beſides order taken for many things which ſeemed to neede redreſſe, there was with common conſent for the ſetling of all mens mindes, that other Confeſſion of faith ſet downe which wee call the Nicene Creede, whereunto the Arrians themſelues which were preſent ſubſcribed alſo: not that they meant ſincerely, and indeed to forſake their errour, but onely to eſcape depriuation and exile which they ſaw they could not auoide, openly perſiſting in their former opinions when the greater part had concluded againſt them, and that with the Emperours royall aſſent. Reſeruing therefore themſelues vnto future oportunities, and knowing that it would not boote them to ſtirre againe in a matter ſo compoſed, vnleſſe they could draw the Emperour firſt, and by his meanes the chiefeſt Biſhops vnto their part, till *Conſtantines* death and ſomewhat after they alwaies profeſſed loue and zeale to the Nicene faith, yet ceaſed not in the meane while to ſtrengthen that part which in heart they fauored, and to infeſt by all meanes vnder colour of other quarrels their greateſt aduerſaries in this cauſe: amongſt them *Athanaſius* eſpecially, whom by the ſpace of 46. yeeres, from the time of his conſecration to ſucceede *Alexander* Arch-biſhop in the Church of *Alexandria*, till the laſt houre of his life in this world, they neuer ſuffered to inioy the comfort of a peaceable day. The heart of *Conſtantine* ſtolne from him. *Conſtantius Conſtantines* ſucceſſor, his ſcourge and torment by all the wayes that malice armed with ſouereigne authoritie could deuiſe and vſe. Vnder *Iulian* no reſt giuen him. And in the dayes of *Valentinian* as little. Crimes there were laid to his charge many, the leaſt whereof being iuſt had bereaued him of eſtimation and credite with men while the world ſtandeth. His Iudges euermore the ſelfeſame men by whom his accuſers were ſuborned. Yet the iſſue alwaies on their part ſhame; on his, triumph. Thoſe Biſhops and Prelates, who ſhould haue accompted his cauſe theirs, and could not many of them but with bleeding hearts and with watred cheekes behold a perſon of ſo great place and woorth conſtrayned to indure ſo foule indignities, were ſure by bewraying their affection towards him, to bring vpon themſelues thoſe moleſtations, whereby if they would not be drawne to ſeeme his aduerſaries, yet others ſhould be taught how vnſafe it was to continue his friends. Whereupon it came to paſſe in the end, that (very few excepted) all became ſubiect to the ſway of time; other oddes there was none amongſt them, ſauing onely that ſome fell ſooner away, ſome later from the ſoundneſſe of beliefe; ſome were leaders in the hoſt of impietie, and the reſt as common ſouldiours, either yeelding through feare, or brought vnder with penurie, or by flatterie inſnared, or elſe beguiled through ſimplicitie, which is the faireſt excuſe that well may be made for them. Yea (that which all men did wonder at) *Oſius* the ancienteſt Biſhop that Chriſtendome then had, the moſt forward in defence of the Catholique cauſe, and of the contrarie part moſt feared, that very *Oſius* with whoſe hand the Nicene Creed it ſelfe was ſet downe and framed for the whole Chriſtian world to ſubſcribe vnto, ſo farre yeelded in the end, as euen with the ſame hand to ratifie the Arrians confeſſion, a thing which they neither hoped to ſee, nor the other part euer feared, till with amazement they ſaw it done. Both were perſwaded, that although there had beene for

Oſius no way but either preſently ſubſcribe or die, his anſwer and choiſe would
a 2. *Mac.* 6. 24. haue beene the ſame that a *Eleazars* was, *It doth not become our age to diſſemble, whereby many young perſons might thinke, that* b OSIVS *an hundred yeres old and vpward, were now gone to another Religion, and ſo through mine hypocriſie [for a little time of tranſitorie life] they might be deceiued by mee, and I procure malediction and reproch to my old age. For though I were now deliuered from the torments of men, yet could I not eſcape the hand of the Almightie, neither aliue nor dead.* But ſuch was the ſtreame of thoſe times, that all men gaue place vnto it, which wee cannot but impute partly to their owne ouerſight. For at the firſt the Emperour was theirs, the determination of the Councell of Nice was for them, they had the *Arrians* hands to that Councell. So great aduantages are neuer changed ſo farre to the contrarie, but by great errour. It plainely appeareth that the firſt thing which weakened them, was their ſecuritie. Such as they knew were in heart ſtill affected towards *Arrianiſme*, they ſuffered by continuall neereneſſe to poſſeſſe the mindes of the greateſt about the Emperour, which themſelues might haue done with very good acceptation, and neglected it. In *Conſtantines* life-time to haue ſettled *Conſtantius*, the ſame way had beene a dutie of good ſeruice towards God, a meane of peace and great quietneſſe to the Church of Chriſt, a labour eaſie, and how likely wee make coniecture, when after that ſo much paine was taken to inſtruct and ſtrengthen him in the contrarie courſe, after that ſo much was done by himſelfe to the furtherance of hereſie, yet being touched in the end voluntarily with remorſe, nothing more grieued him then the memorie of former proceedings in the cauſe of Religion, and that which hee now foreſaw in *Iulian*, the next Phyſician into whoſe hands the bodie that was thus diſtempered muſt fall. Howbeit this wee may ſomewhat excuſe, in as much as euery mans particular care to his owne charge was ſuch, as gaue them no leaſure to heede what others practiſed in Princes Courts. But of the two Synods of Arimine and Seleucia, what ſhould wee thinke? *Conſtantius* by the *Arrians* ſuggeſtion had deuiſed to aſſemble all the Biſhops of the whole world about this controuerſie, but in two ſeuerall places, the Biſhops of the Weſt at Arimine in Italie, the Eaſterne at Seleucia the ſame time. Amongſt them of the Eaſt there was no ſtop, they agreed without any great adoe, gaue their ſentence againſt hereſie, excommunicated ſome chiefe maintainers thereof, and ſent the Emperour word what was done. They had at Arimine about foure hundreth which held the truth, ſcarce of the aduerſe part foureſcore, but theſe obſtinate, and the other wearie of contending with them: whereupon by both it was reſolued to ſend to the Emperour ſuch as might informe him of the cauſe, and declare what hindered their peaceable agreement. There are choſen c for the Catholique ſide ſuch men as had in them nothing to be noted but boldneſſe, neither grauitie, nor learning, nor wiſedome. The *Arrians* for the credite of their faction take the eldeſt, the beſt experienced, the moſt warie and the longeſt practiſed *Veterans* they had amongſt them. The Emperour coniecturing of the reſt on either part by the qualitie of them whom hee ſaw, ſent them ſpeedily away, and with them a certaine Confeſſion of

b *Maior centonario, Sulpit. Seuer. hiſt. lib. 2.*

c *Ex parte noſtra leguntur omnes ſodali ſenes, parum diſerti & parum cauti. At Arriana autem miſſi fuerunt callidi, & iuuenis valentes veteres perfidiæ imbui, qui apud regem facile ſuperiores exiterunt.* Sulpit. lib. 2.

faith

faith ambiguouſly and ſubtilly drawne by the *Arrians*, whereunto vnleſſe they all ſubſcribed, they ſhould in no caſe bee ſuffered to depart from the place where they were. At the length it was perceiued, that there had not beene in the Catholiques either at Arimine, or at Seleucia ſo much foreſight, as to prouide that true intelligence might paſſe betweene them what was done. Vpon the aduantage of which errour, their aduerſaries abuſing each with perſwaſion that other had yeelded, ſurprized both. The Emperour the more deſirous and glad of ſuch euents, for that, beſides all other things wherein they hindred themſelues, the gall and bitterneſſe of certaine mens writings, who ſpared him little for honours ſake, made him for their ſakes the leſſe inclinable to that truth, which hee himſelfe ſhould haue honoured and loued. Onely in *Athanaſius* there was nothing obſerued throughout the courſe of that long tragedie, other then ſuch as very wel became a wiſeman to doe, and a righteous to ſuffer. So that this was the plaine condition of thoſe times, the whole world againſt *Athanaſius*, and *Athanaſius* againſt it; halfe an hundred of yeeres ſpent in doubtfull tryall which of the two in the end would preuaile, the ſide which had all, or elſe the part which had no friend but God and death, the one a defender of his innocencie, the other a finiſher of all his troubles. Now although theſe contentions were cauſe of much euill, yet ſome good the Church hath reaped by them, in that they occaſioned the learned and ſound in faith to explaine ſuch things as hereſie went about to depraue. And in this reſpect the Creed of *Athanaſius* firſt exhibited vnto *Iulius* Biſhop of *Rome*, and afterwards (as we may probably gather) ſent to the Emperor *Iouinian*, for his more full information concerning that truth which *Arrianiſme* ſo mightily did impugne, was both in the Eaſt and the Weſt Churches accepted as a treaſure of inеſtimable price, [b] by as many as had not giuē vp euen the very ghoſt of belief. Then was the Creed of *Athanaſius* written, howbeit not then ſo expedient to be publikely vſed as now in the Church of God, becauſe while the heat of diuiſion laſteth, truth it ſelfe induring oppoſition, doth not ſo quietly and currantly paſſe throughout all mens hands, neither can bee of that accompt which afterwards it hath, when the world once perceiueth the vertue thereof not only in it ſelfe, but alſo by the conqueſt which God hath giuē it ouer hereſie. That which hereſie did by ſiniſter interpretations goe about to peruert in the firſt and moſt ancient Apoſtolike Creed, the ſame being by ſingular dexteritie and plainneſſe cleered from thoſe hereticall corruptions, partly by this Creed of *Athanaſius*, written about the yeere three hundred and forty, and partly by [c] that other ſet downe in the Synod of *Conſtantinople* forty yeeres after, comprehending together with the *Nicene* Creed an addition of other articles which the *Nicene* Creed omitted, becauſe the controuerſie then in hand needed no mention to be made of them; theſe Catholique declarations of our beliefe deliuered by them which were ſo much neerer then wee are vnto the firſt publication thereof, and continuing needfull for all men at all times to know; theſe Confeſſions as teſtimonies of our continuance in the ſame faith to this preſent day, wee rather vſe then any other gloſſe or paraphraſe deuiſed by our ſelues, which though it were to the ſame effect, notwithſtanding could not bee of the like authoritie and credit. For that of [d] *Hillary* vnto S. *Auguſtine* hath beene euer, and is like-

Eiuſdemque conſcriptæ ab improbis fidei traditæ vitio fallentibus inuolutum quæ Catholicam diſciplinam perſicientem loquerentur. Ibid.

b Ταῦτα μοι δοκεῖτε διὰ πάντων τὴν ὁμολογίαν εἶναι τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν, ἃς ἵνα μόνας ἴσον βλασφημεῖσθαι. Greg. Naz. de Athan.

c That Creed which in the booke of common Prayer followeth immediatly after the reading of the Goſpell.

d *Hilar. Arelat. Epiſt. ad Auguſt.*

ly to be alwaies true, *Your moſt religious wiſdome knoweth how great their number is in the Church of God, whom the very authoritie of mens names doth keepe in that opinion which they hold alreadie, or draw vnto that which they haue not before held.* Touching the Hymne of *Glorie*, our vſuall concluſion to Pſalmes, the [a] glory of all things is that wherein their higheſt perfection doth conſiſt: and the glorie of God that diuine excellencie whereby hee is eminent aboue all things, his omnipotent, infinite, and eternall being, [b] which Angels and glorified Saints doe intuitiuely behold, wee on earth apprehend principally by faith, in part alſo by that kinde of knowledge which groweth from experience of thoſe effects, the greatneſſe whereof exceedeth the powers and abilities of all creatures both in heauen and earth. God is [c] glorified when ſuch his excellencie aboue all things is with due admiration acknowledged. Which dutifull acknowledgement of Gods excellencie by occaſion of ſpeciall effects, being the very proper ſubiect and almoſt the onely matter purpoſely treated of in all Pſalmes, if that ioyfull Hymne of Glorie haue any vſe in the Church of God, whoſe name wee therewith extoll and magnifie, can wee place it more fitly then where now it ſerueth as a gloze or concluſion to Pſalmes? Neyther is the forme thereof newly or vnneceſſarily inuented. *Wee muſt* (ſayth [d] Saint *Baſil*) *as wee haue receiued euen ſo baptize, and as wee baptize euen ſo beleeue, and as wee beleeue euen ſo giue glorie.* Baptizing wee vſe the name of the Father, of the Sonne, and of the holy Ghoſt; Confeſſing the Chriſtian faith wee declare our beliefe in the Father, and in the Sonne, and in the holy Ghoſt; aſcribing glorie vnto God, we giue it to the Father, and to the Sonne, and to the holy Ghoſt. It is ἀνθύπεξη τῆ ὑγιῆ φρονήματος, *the token of a true and ſound vnderſtanding* for matter of doctrine about the Trinitie, when in miniſtring Baptiſme, and making confeſſion, and giuing glorie, there is a coniunction of all three, and no one of the three ſeuered from the other two. Againſt the *Arrians* affirming the Father to bee greater then the Sonne in honour, excellencie, dignitie, maieſtie, this forme and manner of glorifying God was not at that time firſt begunne, but receiued long before, and alleaged at that time as an argument for the truth. [e] *If* (ſayth *Fœbadius*) *there bee that inequalitie which they affirme, then doe wee euery day blaſpheme God, when in thankſginings and offerings of ſacrifice wee acknowledge thoſe things common to the Father and the Sonne.* The *Arrians* therefore, for that they perceiued how this did preiudice their cauſe, altered the Hymne of Glorie, whereupon enſued in the Church of *Antioch* about the yeere 349. that iarre which [f] *Theodoret* and *Sozomen* mention. *In their Quires while they prayſed God together as the manner was, at the end of the Pſalmes which they ſung, it appeared what opinion euery man held, for as much as they glorified ſome the Father*, And *the Sonne*, And *the holy Ghoſt*, *ſome the Father* By *the Sonne* In *the Spirit*; *the one ſort thereby declaring themſelues to embrace the Sonnes equalitie with the Father, as the Councell of Nice had defined, the other ſort againſt the Councell of Nice his inequalitie.* LEONTIVS *their* Biſhop, although an enemie to the better part, yet warie and ſubtle, as in a manner all the heads of the *Arrians* faction were, could at no time bee plainely heard to vſe either forme, perhaps leſt his open contradiction of them whom hee fa-

[a] 1. Cor. 15. 40. Exod. 33. 18. Hebr. 1. 3.
[b] Matth. 18. 13.
[c] Ioſ. 7. 19. Pſal. 22. 23.
[d] Baſil. Epiſt. 78
[e] Fabad. lib. contr. Arrian.
[f] Theod. lib. 2. cap. 24. Sozomen. lib. 4. cap. 19.

uoured not might make them the more eager, and by that meane the leſſe apt to bee priuately wonne; or peraduenture for that though hee ioyned in opinion with that ſort of *Arrians*, who denyed the Sonne to bee equall with the Father, yet from them hee diſſented, which thought the Father and the Sonne not onely vnequall, but vnlike, as *Aetius* did vpon a friuolous and falſe ſurmiſe, that becauſe the Apoſtle hath ſayd, [a] *one God of whom, one Lord by whom,* [b] *one Spirit in whom*, his different manner of ſpeech doth argue a different nature and being in them of whom he ſpeaketh: out of which blinde collection, it ſeemeth that this their new deuiſed forme did firſt ſpring. But in truth euen that very forme which the *Arrians* did then vſe (ſauing that they choſe it to ſerue as their ſpeciall marke of recogniſance, and gaue it ſecretly within themſelues a ſiniſter conſtruction) hath not otherwiſe as much as the ſhew of any thing which ſoundeth towards impietie. For albeit if wee reſpect Gods glorie within it ſelfe, it be the equall right and poſſeſſion of all three, and that without any oddes, any difference, yet touching his manifeſtation thereof vnto vs by continuall effects, and our perpetuall acknowledgement thereof vnto him likewiſe by vertuous offices, doth not euery tongue both wayes confeſſe, that the brightneſſe of his glorie hath ſpred it ſelfe through-out the world *By* the Miniſterie of his onely begotten Sonne, and is *In* the manifold graces of the Spirit euery way maruellous; againe, that whatſoeuer wee doe to his glorie, it is done *In* the power of the holy Ghoſt, and made acceptable *By* the merite and mediation of Ieſus Chriſt? So that glorie to the Father *And* the Sonne, or glorie to the Father *By* the Sonne, ſauing onely where euill mindes doe abuſe and peruert moſt holy things, are not elſe the voyces of errour and ſchiſme, but of ſound and ſincere Religion. It hath beene the cuſtome of the Church of Chriſt to end ſometimes prayers, and Sermons alwayes, with words of glorie, wherein, as long as the bleſſed Trinitie had due honour, and till *Arrianiſme* had made it a matter of great ſharpneſſe and ſubtiltie of wit to bee a ſound beleeuing Chriſtian, men were not curious what ſyllables or particles of ſpeech they vſed. Vpon which confidence and truſt notwithſtanding, when Saint *Baſil* began to practiſe the like indifferencie, and to conclude publique prayers, glorifying ſometime the Father with the Sonne and the holy Ghoſt, ſometime the Father by the Sonne in the Spirit, whereas long cuſtome had enured them vnto the former kinde alone, by meanes whereof the later was new and ſtrange in their eares, this needleſſe experiment brought afterwards vpon him a neceſſarie labour of excuſing himſelfe to his friends, and maintayning his owne act againſt them, who becauſe the light of his candle too much drowned theirs, were glad to lay hold on ſo colourable matter, and exceeding forward to traduce him as an authour of ſuſpitious innouation. How hath the world forſaken that courſe which it ſometime held? How are the iudgements, hearts and affections of men altered? May we not wonder that a man of *S. Baſils* authoritie and qualitie an Arch-prelate in the houſe of God, ſhould haue his name farre and wide cald in queſtion, and be driuen to his painefull apologies, to write in his owne defence whole volumes, and yet hardly to obtaine with all his endeuour a pardon, the crime layd againſt him being but onely a change of ſome one or two ſyllables in their vſuall Church-liturgie? It was

[a] 1. *Cor.* 8. 6.
[b] 1. *Cor.* 12. 3. 4. 13.

thought

thought in him an vnpardonable offence to alter any thing; in vs as intolerable, that wee ſuffer any thing to remaine vnaltered. The very Creed of *Athanaſius* and that ſacred Hymne of glorie, then which nothing doth ſound more heauenly in the eares of faithfull men, are now reckoned as ſuperfluities, which wee muſt in any caſe pare away, leſt wee cloy God with too much ſeruice. Is there in that confeſſion of faith any thing which doth not at all times edifie and inſtruct the attentiue hearer? Or is our faith in the bleſſed Trinitie a matter needleſſe to be ſo oftentimes mentioned and opened in the principall part of that dutie which wee owe to God, our publique prayer? Hath the Church of Chriſt from the firſt beginning, by a ſecret vniuerſall inſtinct of Gods good Spirit, alwaies tied it ſelfe to end neither Sermon nor almoſt any ſpeach of moment which hath concerned matters of God, without ſome ſpeciall words of honor and glorie to that Trinitie which we all adore; and is the like concluſion of Pſalmes become now at the length an eye-ſore or a gauling to their eares that heare it? Thoſe flames of *Arrianiſme* they ſay are quenched, which were the cauſe why the Church deuiſed in ſuch ſort to confeſſe and praiſe the glorious Deitie of the Sonne of God. Seeing therefore the ſore is whole, why retaine wee as yet the plaiſter? When the cauſe why any thing was ordained doth once ceaſe, the thing it ſelfe ſhould ceaſe with it, that the Church beeing eaſed of vnprofitable labours, needfull offices may the better bee attended. For the doing of things vnneceſſarie, is many times the cauſe why the moſt neceſſarie are not done. But in this caſe ſo to reaſon will not ſerue their turnes. For firſt the ground whereupon they build, is not certainly their owne, but with ſpeciall limitations. Few things are ſo reſtrayned to any one end or purpoſe, that the ſame being extinct they ſhould forthwith vtterly become fruſtrate. Wiſedome may haue framed one and the ſame thing to ſerue commodiouſly for diuers ends, and of thoſe ends any one bee ſufficient cauſe for continuance, though the reſt haue ceaſed, euen as the tongue, which nature hath giuen vs for an inſtrument of ſpeech is not idle in dumbe perſons, becauſe it alſo ſerueth for taſte. Againe, if time haue worne out, or any other meane altogether taken away what was firſt intended, vſes not thought vpon before may afterwards ſpring vp, and be reaſonable cauſes of retayning that which other conſiderations did formerly procure to be inſtituted. And it commeth ſometime to paſſe, that a thing vnneceſſarie in it ſelfe as touching the whole direct purpoſe whereto it was meant or can bee applied, doth notwithſtanding appeare conuenient to be ſtill held euen without vſe, leſt by reaſon of that coherence which it hath with ſomewhat moſt neceſſarie, the remooueall of the one ſhould indamage the other, and therefore men which haue cleane loſt the poſſibilitie of ſight, keepe ſtill their eyes nenertheleſſe in the place where nature ſet them. As for theſe two branches whereof our queſtion groweth, *Arrianiſme* was indeed ſome occaſion of the one, but a cauſe of neyther, much leſſe the onely intire cauſe of both. For albeit conflict with *Arrians* brought forth the occaſion of writing that Creed, which long after was made a part of the Church-liturgie, as Hymnes and ſentences of glorie were a part thereof before; yet cauſe ſufficient there is why both ſhould remaine in vſe, the one as a moſt diuine explication of the chiefeſt articles of our Chriſtian

Chriſtian beliefe, the other as an heauenly acclamation of ioyfull applauſe to his praiſes in whom wee beleeue, neither the one nor the other vnworthy to be heard ſounding as they are in the Church of Chriſt, whether Arrianiſme liue or die. Againſt which poyſon likewiſe if we thinke that the Church at this day needeth not thoſe ancient preſeruatiues, which ages before vs were ſo glad to vſe, we deceiue our ſelues greatly. The weedes of hereſie being growne vnto ſuch ripeneſſe as that was, doe euen in the verie cutting downe ſcatter oftentimes thoſe ſeedes which for a while lie vnſeene and buried in the earth, but afterward freſhly ſpring vp againe no leſſe pernicious then at the firſt. Which thing they very well know, and I doubt not will eaſily confeſſe, who liue to their great, both toile and griefe, where the blaſphemies of *Arrians*, *Samoſatenians*, *Tritheits*, *Eutychians*, and *Macedonians* are renewed by them, who to hatch their hereſie, haue choſen thoſe Churches as fitteſt neſts where *Athanaſius* Creed is not heard; by them I ſay renued, who following the courſe of extreme reformation, were wont in the pride of their owne proceedings to glorie, that whereas *Luther* did but blow away the rooſe, and *Zwinglius* batter but the walles of Popiſh ſuperſtition, the laſt and hardeſt worke of all remained, which was, to raze vp the very ground and foundation of Poperie, that doctrine concerning the deitie of Chriſt, which *Satanaſius* (for ſo it pleaſed thoſe impious forſaken miſcreants to ſpeake) hath in this memorable Creed explaned. So manifeſtly true is that which one of the [a] ancients hath concerning Arrianiſme, *Mortuis autoribus huius veneni, ſcelerata tamen eorum doctrina non moritur*, the authours of this venome being dead and gone, their wicked doctrine notwithſtanding continueth.

[a] *Fabar. contra Arr.*

43 Amongſt the heapes of theſe exceſſes and ſuperfluities there is eſpied the want of a principall part of dutie, *There are no thankſgiuings for the benefits for which there are petitions* in our Booke of Prayer. This they haue thought a point materiall to be obiected. Neither may wee take it in euill part to bee admoniſhed what ſpeciall duties of thankfulneſſe we owe to that mercifull God, for whoſe vnſpeakeable graces the onely requitall which wee are able to make, is a true, heartie, and ſincere acknowledgement, how precious we eſteeme ſuch benefits receiued, and how infinite in goodneſſe the Authour from whom they come. But that to euery petition we make for things needfull there ſhould be ſome anſwerable ſentence of thankes prouided particularly to follow ſuch requeſts obteined, either it is not a matter ſo requiſite as they pretend; or if it bee, wherefore haue they not then in ſuch order framed their owne Booke of Common Prayer? Why hath our Lord and Sauiour taught vs a forme of prayer conteyning ſo many petitions of thoſe things which we want, and not deliuered in like ſort as many ſeuerall formes of thankſgiuing, to ſerue when any thing we pray for is granted? What anſwere ſoeuer they can reaſonably make vnto theſe demands, the ſame ſhall diſcouer vnto them how cauſeleſſe a cenſure it is, that there are not in our Booke thankſgiuings for all the benefits for which there are petitions. For concerning the bleſſings of God, whether they tend vnto this life or the life to come, there is great

Our want of particular thankſgiuing. As ſuch prayers are needful whereby wee beggerly leaſe from our diſtreſſes, ſo there ought to be as neceſſary prayers of thankſgiuing, when we haue receiued thoſe things at the Lords hand which we asked. *T.C. lib. 1. pag.* 138. I doe not ſimply require a ſolemne and expreſſe thankſgiuing for ſuch benefits, but onely vpon a ſuppoſition, which is, that if it be expedient that there ſhould bee expreſſe prayers againſt ſo many of their earthly miſeries, that then alſo it is meet that vpon the deliuerance there ſhould bee an expreſſe thankſgiuing. *T.C. li. 3. p.* 209.

great cauſe why we ſhould delight more in giuing thankes, then in making requeſts for them, in as much as the one hath penſiuenesſe and feare, the other alwaies ioy annexed: the one belongeth vnto them that ſeeke, the other vnto them that haue found happineſſe; they that pray doe but yet ſowe, they that giue thankes declare they haue reaped. Howbeit, becauſe there are ſo many graces whereof wee ſtand in continuall need, graces for which wee may not ceaſe daily and hourely to ſue, graces which are in beſtowing alwaies, but neuer come to be fully had in this preſent life, and therefore when all things here haue an end, endleſſe thankes muſt haue their beginning in a ſtate which bringeth the full and finall ſatisfaction of all ſuch perpetuall deſires; againe, becauſe our common neceſſities, and the lacke which wee all haue, as well of ghoſtly as of earthly ſauours is in each kinde ſo eaſily knowne, but the gifts of God according to thoſe degrees and times which hee in his ſecret wiſedome ſeeth meete, are ſo diuerſly beſtowed, that it ſeldome appeareth what all receiue, what all ſtand in need of it ſeldome lieth hid, wee are not to marueil though the Church doe oftner concurre in ſuits then in thankes vnto God for particular benefits. Nevertheleſſe, leſt God ſhould bee any way vnglorified, the greateſt part of our daily ſeruice they know conſiſteth according to [a] the bleſſed Apoſtles owne preciſe rule, in much varietie of Pſalmes and Hymnes, for no other purpoſe, but only that out of ſo plentifull a treaſure there might be for euery mans heart to chuſe out his owne ſacrifice, and to offer vnto God by particular ſecret inſtinct, what fitteth beſt the often occaſions which any ſeuerall either partie or congregation may ſeeme to haue. They that would cleane take from vs therefore the daily vſe of the very beſt meanes we haue to magnifie and praiſe the name of Almightie God for his rich bleſſings, they that complaine of our reading and ſinging ſo many Pſalmes for ſo good an end, they I ſay that finde fault with our ſtore, ſhould of all men be leaſt willing to reproue our ſcarcitie of thankſgiuings. But becauſe peraduenture they ſee it is not either *generally* fit or poſſible that Churches ſhould frame thankſgiuings anſwerable to each petition, they ſhorten ſomewhat the reynes of their cenſure, there are no formes of thankſgiuing they ſay for releaſe of thoſe *common calamities*, from which wee haue petitions to be deliuered. *There are prayers ſet forth to be ſaid in the common calamities and vniuerſall ſcourges of the Realme, as plague, famine, &c. And indeed ſo it ought to be by the word of God. But as ſuch prayers are needfull*, whereby we beg releaſe from our diſtreſſes, ſo there ought to be as neceſſarie prayers of thankſgiuing, when we haue receiued thoſe things at the Lords hand which we asked in our prayers. As oft therefore as any publique or vniuerſall ſcourge is remooued, as oft as wee are deliuered from thoſe either imminent or preſent calamities, againſt the ſtorme and tempeſt whereof wee all inſtantly craued ſauour from aboue, let it bee a queſtion what wee ſhould render vnto God for his bleſſings vniuerſally, ſenſibly, and extraordinarily beſtowed. A prayer of three or foure lines inſerted into ſome part of our Church-liturgie? No, wee are not perſwaded that when God doth in trouble inioyne vs the dutie of inuocation, and promiſe vs the benefit of deliuerance, and profeſſe that the thing he expecteth after at our hands is to glorifie him as our mighty and only Sauiour, the Church can diſcharge in manner conuenient

The default of the booke, for that there are no formes of thank giuing for the releaſe from thoſe common calamities from which we haue petitions to be deliuered. T.C. lib. 3. p. 208.

[a] Eph. 5. 19. Coloſ. 3. 16.

T.C. lib. 1. p. 138.

a

a worke of so great importance by fore-ordeyning some short Collect wherein briefly to mention them. Our custome therefore when soeuer so great occasions are incident, is by publike authoritie to appoint throughout all Churches set and solemne formes as well of supplication as of thanksgiving, the preparations and intended complements whereof may stirre vp the minds of men in much more effectuall sort, then if only there should be added to the Books of prayer that which they require. But we are in thinking that they require any such matter. For albeit their words to our vnderstanding be very plaine, that in our Booke *there are prayers set forth* to bee sayd when *common calamities* are felt, as *plague, famine*, and such like; against, that *indeed so it ought to be by the word of God*; that likewise *there ought to be as necessarie prayers of thanksgiving when we haue received those things*; finally, that the want of such formes of thanksgiving for the release from those common calamities from which wee haue petitions to be deliuered, is the *defaults of the Books* of Common-prayer: yet all this they meane but only by *way of supposition if expresse prayers* against so many earthly miseries were conuenient, *that then* in deed as many expresse and particular thanksgivings should be likewise necessarie. Seeing therefore we know that they hold the one superfluous, they would not haue it so vnderstood as though their minds were that any such addition to the Booke is needfull, whatsoeuer they say for arguments sake concerning this pretended defect. The truth is they were in and out, no way sufficiently grounded, no way resolued what to thinke, speake or write, more then onely that because they haue taken it vpon them, they must (no remedie now) be opposite.

In some things the matter of our Prayer, as they affirme, vnsound.

44 The last supposed fault concerneth some few things, the very matter whereof is thought to be much amisse. In a song of praise to our Lord Iesus Christ wee haue these words, *When thou hadst ouercome the sharpnesse of death, thou didst open the Kingdome of heauen to all beleeuers.* Which maketh some shew of giuing countenance to their errour, who thinke that the faithfull which departed this life before the comming of Christ, were neuer till then made partakers of ioy, but remayned all in that place which they terme the *Lake of the Fathers*. In our *Liturgie* request is made that wee may be preserued from sodaine death. This seemeth friuolous, because the Godly should alwaies bee prepared to die. Request is made that God would giue those things which we for our vnworthinesse dare not aske. This they say, *carrieth with it the note of Popish seruile feare, and sauoureth not of that confidence and reuerent familiaritie that the children of God haue through Christ with their heauenly Father.* Request is made that we may euermore be defended from all aduersitie. For this *there is no promise in Scripture*, and therefore *it is no prayer of faith, or of that which we can assure our selues that we shall obtaine it.* Finally, request is made that God would haue mercie vpon all men. This is impossible, because some are the vessels of wrath, to whom God will neuer extend his mercie.

When thou hadst ouercome the sharpnesse of death, thou didst open the kingdome of heauen vnto all beleeuers.

45 As Christ hath purchased that heauenly Kingdome, the last perfection whereof *in glorie is the life to come*, grace in this life a preparation thereunto; so the same he hath *opened* to the world in such sort, that whereas none can possibly without him attaine saluation, *by him all that beleeue* are saued. Now whatsoeuer hee did or suffered, the end thereof was to open the doores of the Kingdome of heauen which our iniquities had *shut vp*. But because by *ascending*

after

after that the sharpnesse of death was overcome, he took as his very lawfull possession of glorie, and the rest thereof all those mansions, which he himself before pointed unto his Apostles, saying: *I go to prepare a place for you*, and againe, *whom thou hast given me, O Father, I will that where I am, they be also with me, that they may behold my glorie which thou hast given me.* Whereby it appeareth that even as Christ, after he had risen, did not forthwith enter into the Kingdome of heaven, so the rest that with him and by him all beleevers might conjecture in what case the Fathers rested which were dead before him, did not hastily either one way or other determine. All we can rightly gather it, that as touching their soules what degree of joy or happinesse soever injoyed God to bestow upon them, he *affirmed* which succeeded *prevented* them, and their concerning the bodie that needs must be our duty, but after this. Authorities against whom S. *Irenæus* writeth, alledged greatly those words of *Matthew* concerning *Joseph* and the mother of our Saviour Christ, *He knew her not till she had brought forth her first borne*, thereby gathering against the honour of the blessed Virgin, that a thing denyed with such circumstance, doth import an opposite affirmation when once the circumstance is expired: after the selfe same manner it fareth by a weake Collection, for hereas we say that *when* Christ had overcome the sharpnesse of death, he then opened the Kingdome of heaven to all beleevers, a thing in such sort affirmed with circumstance were taken as importing an opposite denyall before that circumstance be accomplished, and consequently, that because when the sharpnesse of death was overcome, he then opened heaven *as well to believing Gentiles as Jewes*, heaven till then was no receptacle to the soules of either. Wherefore be the Spirits of the just and righteous before Christs truly or falsly thought excluded out of heavenly joy, by that which was in the words alledged before doe attribute to Christs ascention, there is to no such opinion, nor to the ſ favourers thereof any countenance at all given. We cannot better interpret the meaning of these words then Pope *Leo* himselfe expoundeth them, whose speech concerning our Lords ascension may serve in stead of a marginall glosse. *Christs exaltation is our promotion, and whither the glorie of the head is already gone before, thither the hope of the bodie also is called. For in this day we have not only the possession of Paradise assured unto us, but in Christ we have entred the highest of the heavens.* His opening the Kingdome of heaven and his entrance thereunto was not onely to his owne, but for the benefit of all beleevers.

Touching prayers for deliverance from sodaine death.

46. Our good or evill estate after death dependeth most upon the qualitie of our lives. Yet somewhat there is why a vertuous minde should rather wish to depart this world with a kinde of orderable dissolution, then to be sodainely cut off in a moment; rather to be taken then snatched away from the face of the earth. Death is that which all men suffer, but not all men with one minde, neither all alike in one manner. For being of necessitie a thing common, it is it through the manifold perfuasions, dispositions and occasions of men, with equal defares both of paine and discomfort lessened by some, by others doubled. So that absolutely we cannot discommend, we cannot absolutely approove either willingnesse to live or forwardnesse to die. And concerning the waies of death, albeit the choise thereof be only in the hands of him alone both power over all flesh, and unto whose appointment we ought with patience

a *Joh.* 14.2.
b *Joh.* 17.24.
c *Hieron. aduer. Helu. Anglicr.* 24.
d *Lyra upon Gen.* 19. *Theo.* 3.4 32.
e *Leo Ser.* 1. *de Ascens.*

tience, meekely to ſubmit our ſelues (for to be agents voluntarily in our owne deſtruction, is againſt both God and nature) yet there is no doubt but in ſo great varietie, our deſires will and may lawfully preferre one kind before another. Is there any man of worth and vertue, although not inſtructed in the Schoole of Chriſt, or euer taught what the ſoundneſſe of Religion meaneth, that had not rather end the dayes of this tranſitorie life as *Cyrus* in *Xenophon*, or in *Plato Socrates* are deſcribed, then to ſinke downe with them of whom [a] *Eliha* hath ſaid *Memento morientur*, there is ſcarce an inſtant betweene their flouriſhing and their not being? But let vs which know what it is to dye as *Abſalon* or *Ananias* and *Saphira* dyed, let vs beg of God that when the houre of our reſt is come, the patternes of our diſſolution may be [b] *Iacob*, *Moſes*, *Ioſua*, *Dauid*, who leiſureably ending their liues in peace, prayed for the mercies of God to come vpon their Poſteritie; repleniſhed the hearts of the neereſt vnto them with wordes of memorable Conſolation; ſtrengthened men in the feare of God, gaue them wholeſome Inſtructions of life, and confirmed them in true Religion, in ſumme, taught the World no leſſe vertuouſly how to dye, then they had done before how to liue. To ſuch as iudge things according to the ſenſe of naturall men and aſcend no higher, ſuddainneſſe becauſe it ſhorteneth their griefe ſhould in reaſon bee moſt acceptable. That which cauſeth bitterneſſe in death, is the languiſhing attendance and expectation thereof ere it come. And therefore Tyrants vſe what Art they can to increaſe the ſlowneſſe of death. Quicke riddance out of life is often both requeſted and beſtowed as a benefit. Commonly therefore it is for vertuous conſiderations, that Wiſedome ſo farre preuaileth with men as to make them deſirous of ſlow and deliberate death againſt the ſtreame of their ſenſuall inclination, content to indure the longer griefe and bodily paine, that the Soule may haue time to call it ſelfe to a iuſt accompt of all things paſt, by meanes whereof Repentance is perfected, there is wherein to exerciſe patience, the ioyes of the Kingdome of Heauen haue leiſure to preſent themſelues, the pleaſures of ſinne and this Worlds Vanities are cenſured with vncorrupt iudgement, Charitie is free to make aduiſed choice of the ſoyle wherein her laſt Seed may moſt fruitfully bee beſtowed, the minde is at libertie to haue due regard of that diſpoſition of worldly things which it can neuer afterwards alter, and becauſe [c] the neerer wee draw vnto God, the more wee are oftentimes inlightened with the ſhining beames of his glorious preſence as beeing then euen almoſt in ſight, a leiſurable departure may in that caſe bring forth for the good of ſuch as are preſent, that which ſhall cauſe them for euer after from the bottome of their hearts to pray, *O let vs dye the death of the righteous, and let our laſt end be like theirs.* All which benefits and oportunities are by ſuddaine death preuented. And beſides, for as much as death howſoeuer is a generall effect of the wrath of God againſt ſinne, and the ſuddaineneſſe thereof a thing which happeneth but to few, the World in this reſpect feareth it the more as being ſubiect to doubtfull conſtructions, which as no man willingly would incurre, ſo they whoſe happie eſtate after life is of all mens the moſt certaine, ſhould eſpecially wiſh that no ſuch accident in their death may giue vncharitable mindes occaſion of raſh, ſiniſter, and ſuſpicious verdicts,

a *Iob.* 34. 20.

b *Heb.* 11. 21. *Deut.* 33. *Ioſh.* 24. 1. *Reg.* 2.

c *Cypr. de mortal.*

whereunto they are ouer-prone, ſo that whether euill men or good be reſpected, whether wee regard our ſelues or others, to be preſerued from ſuddayne death is a bleſſing of God. And our Prayer againſt it importeth a two-fold deſire, firſt, that death when it commeth may giue vs ſome conuenient reſpite, or ſecondly, if that be denyed vs of God, yet we may haue wiſedome to prouide alwayes before-hand, that thoſe euils ouertake vs not, which death vnexpected doth vſe to bring vpon careleſſe men, and that although it bee ſuddayne in it ſelfe, neuertheleſſe in regard of our prepared mindes it may not be ſuddayne.

Prayer that thoſe things which wee for our vnworthyneſſe dare not aſke, God for the worthyneſſe of his Sonne would vouchſafe to grant. This requeſt carryeth with it ſtill the note of the Popiſh ſeruile feare, and ſauoureth not of that confidence and reuerent familiaritie that the Children of God haue through Chriſt with their heauenly Father. T. C. *lib.* 1. *page* 136.

47 But is it credible that the very acknowledgement of our owne vnworthineſſe to obtayne, and in that reſpect our profeſſed fearefulneſſe to aske any thing otherwiſe then onely for his ſake to whom GOD can deny nothing, that this ſhould be noted for a Popiſh Errour, that this ſhould be termed baſeneſſe, abiection of mind, or *ſeruilitie*, is it credible? That which wee for our vnworthyneſſe are afraid to craue, our Prayer is, that God for the worthyneſſe of his Sonne would notwithſtanding vouchſafe to grant. May it pleaſe them to ſhew vs which of theſe words it is that carryeth the note of Popiſh and ſeruile feare? In reference to other Creatures of this inferior World mans worth and excellencie is admired. Compared with God, the trueſt Inſcription wherewith we can circle ſo baſe a Coyne is that of DAVID, [a] *Vniuerſa vanitas eſt omnis homo*, whoſoeuer hath the name of a mortall man, there is in him whatſoeuer the name of vanitie doth comprehend. And therefore what we ſay of our owne *vnworthineſſe*, there is no doubt but Truth wil ratifie. Alleaged in Prayer it both becommeth and behoueth Saints. For as humility is in Suters a decent vertue, ſo the teſtification thereof by ſuch effectuall acknowledgements not onely [b] argueth a ſound apprehenſion of his ſupereminent Glory and Maieſty before whom we ſtand, but putteth alſo into his hands a kind of pledge or bond for ſecuritie againſt our vnthankefulneſſe, the verie naturall Roote whereof is alwayes eyther Ignorance, Diſſimulation, or Pride; Ignorance, when we know not the Author from whom our good commeth; Diſſimulation, when our hands are more open then our eyes vpon that we receiue; Pride, when we thinke our ſelues *worthie* of that which meere grace and vndeſerued mercie beſtoweth. In Prayer therefore to abate ſo vaine imaginations with the *true conceit of vnworthineſſe*, is rather to preuent then commit a fault. It being no Error thus to thinke, no fault thus to ſpeake of our ſelues when we pray, is it a fault that the conſideration of our vnworthineſſe maketh vs *fearefull* to open our mouthes by way of Suite? While *Iob* had proſperitie and liued in honour, men feared him for his authorities ſake, and in token of their feare when they ſaw him they [c] *hid themſelues*. Betweene *Elihu* and the reſt of *Iobs* Familiars the greateſt diſparitie was but in yeeres. And he, though riper then they in iudgement, doing them reuerence in regard of age, ſtood long [d] *doubtfull*, and very loth to aduenture vpon ſpeech in his Elders hearing. If ſo ſmall inequalitie betweene man and man make their modeſtie a commendable vertue, who reſpecting ſuperiors *as ſuperiors*, can neither ſpeak

a *Pſal.* 39. 5.

b Μειονεκτοῦσι γὰρ τῆς ἰδίας παρὰ πάντα σφίσι δόξαις μεμιγμένον ἢ τῆς τοῦ θεοῦ παρὰ πάντα ὑπερβολῆς, *Philo. de ſacrif. Abel. & Cain.*

c *Iob* 29. 8. Amongſt the parts of honor *Ariſtotle* reckoneth πρωτοκαθεδρίας and ἀκροάσεις, *Rhet. l.* 2. *c.* 5 & *Iob* 32. 6.

d *Iob* 32. 6.

nor

nor ſtand before them without feare: that the Publican approcheth not more boldly to God; that when Chriſt in mercie draweth neere to *Peter*, hee in humilitie and feare craueth diſtance; that being to ſtand, to ſpeake, to ſue in the preſence of ſo great Maieſtie wee are afraid, let no man blame vs. [a] In which conſideration notwithſtanding, becauſe to flye altogether from God, to deſpaire that creatures vnworthy ſhall be able to obtaine any thing at his hands, and vnder that pretence to ſurceaſe from Prayers as bootleſſe or fruitleſſe offices, were to him no leſſe iniurious then pernicious to our owne ſoules, euen that which we tremble to doe we doe, we aske thoſe things which we dare not aske. The knowledge of our owne vnworthineſſe is not without beliefe in the merits of Chriſt. With that true feare which the one cauſeth there is coupled true boldneſſe, and encouragement drawne from the other. The very ſilence which our vnworthineſſe putteth vs vnto, doth it ſelfe make requeſt for vs, and that in the confidence of his grace. Looking inward wee are ſtricken dumbe, looking vpward wee ſpeake and preuayle. O happie mixture wherein things contrary doe ſo qualifie and correct the one the danger of the others exceſſe, that neyther boldneſſe can make vs preſume as long as we are kept vnder with the ſenſe of our owne wretchedneſſe; nor, while we truſt in the mercie of God through Chriſt Ieſus, feare be able to tyrannize ouer vs! As therefore our feare excludeth not that [b] boldneſſe which becommeth Saints; ſo if their *familiaritie* with God doe not ſauour of this feare, it draweth too neere that irreuerend confidence wherewith true Humilitie can neuer ſtand.

a The Publican did indeed not lift vp his eyes: So that if by his Example wee ſhould lay wee dare aske nothing, we ought alſo to aske nothing otherwiſe in ſtead of teaching true humilitie, we open a Schoole to hypocriſie, which the Lord deteſteth. T.C.l.3.p.203.

b *Rom.5.2,8,15 Heb.10.19.*

48 Touching continuall deliuerance in the World from all aduerſitie, their conceit is, that we ought not to aske it of God by Prayer, for as much as in Scripture there is no promiſe that wee ſhall bee euermore free from vexations, calamities and troubles. Mindes religiouſly affected are woont in euery thing of waight and moment which they doe or ſee, to examine according vnto rules of Pietie what dependencie it hath on God, what reference to themſelues, what coherence with any of thoſe duties whereunto all things in the World ſhould leade, and accordingly they frame the inward diſpoſition of their mindes ſometime to admire God, ſometimes to bleſſe him and giue him thankes, ſometime to exult in his loue, ſometime to implore his mercie. All which different eleuations of ſpirit vnto God are contayned in the name of Prayer. Euery good and holy deſire though it lacke the forme, hath notwithſtanding in it ſelfe the ſubſtance, and with him the force of a Prayer, who regardeth the very moanings, groanes and ſighes of the heart of man. Petitionarie Prayer belongeth only to ſuch as are in themſelues impotent, and ſtand in need of reliefe from others. Wee thereby declare vnto God what our owne deſire is that hee by his power ſhould effect. It preſuppoſeth therefore in vs firſt the want of that which we pray for; ſecondly, a feeling of that want; thirdly, an earneſt willingneſſe of minde to bee eaſed therein; fourthly, a declaration of this our deſire in the ſight of God, not as if he ſhould be otherwiſe ignorant of our neceſſities, but becauſe we this way ſhew that wee honour him as our God, and are verily perſwaded that no good thing can come to paſſe which hee by his Omnipotent power effecteth not. Now becauſe there is no mans Prayer acceptable, whoſe perſon is odious, neyther any mans perſon gracious without

Prayer to be euermore deliuered from all aduerſitie. For as much as there is no promiſe in the Scripture that we ſhould be free from all aduerſitie, and that euermore it ſeemeth that this Prayer might haue bin better conceiued being no Prayer of Faith, or of the which wee can aſſure our ſelues that wee ſhal obtaine it. T.C.l.1.p.136.

faith, it is of neceſſitie required that they which pray doe beleeue. The Prayers which our Lord and Sauiour made were for his owne worthineſſe accepted; ours God accepteth not but with this condition, if they be ioyned with a beliefe in Chriſt. The Prayers of the iuſt are accepted alwayes, but not alwayes thoſe things granted for which they pray. For in Prayer if faith and aſſurance to obtayne were both one and the ſame thing, ſeeing that the effect of not obtayning is a plaine teſtimonie that they which prayed were not ſure they ſhould obtayne, it would follow that their Prayer being without certaintie of the euent, was alſo made vnto God without faith, and conſequently that God abhorred it. Which to thinke of ſo many Prayers of Saints as we find haue fayled in particular requeſts how abſurd were it? His faithfull people haue this comfort, that whatſoeuer they rightly aske, the ſame no doubt, but they ſhall receiue, ſo farre as may ſtand with the glorie of God, and their owne euerlaſting good, vnto either of which two it is no vertuous mans purpoſe to ſeeke or deſire to obtayne any thing preiudiciall, and therefore that clauſe which our Lord and Sauiour in the Prayer of his Agonie did expreſſe, we in petitions of like nature doe alwayes imply, *Pater, ſi poſſibile eſt*, if it may ſtand with thy will and pleaſure. Or if not, but that there be ſecret impediments and cauſes in regard whereof the thing we pray for is denyed vs, yet the Prayer it ſelfe which we make is a pleaſing Sacrifice to God, who both accepteth and rewardeth it ſome other way. So that ſinners in very truth are denyed when they [b] ſeeme to preuayle in their Supplications, becauſe it is not for their ſakes or to their good that their Sutes take place; the faithfull contrariwiſe, becauſe it is for their good oftentimes that their Petitions doe not take place, preuayle euen then when they moſt [c] ſeeme denyed. *Our Lord God in anger hath granted ſome impatient mens requeſts, as on the other ſide the Apoſtles ſute he hath of fauour and mercie not granted*, ſayth S. *Auguſtine*. To thinke we may pray vnto God for nothing but what he hath promiſed in holy Scripture we ſhall obtayne, is perhaps an error. For of Prayer there are two vſes. It ſerueth as a meane to procure thoſe things which God hath promiſed to grant when wee aske; and it ſerueth as a meane to expreſſe our lawfull deſires alſo towards that, which whether wee ſhall haue or no wee know not till we ſee the euent. Things in themſelue vnholy or vnſeemely wee may not aske; wee may whatſoeuer being not forbidden, either Nature or Grace ſhall reaſonably moue vs to wiſh as importing the good of men, albeit God himſelfe haue no where by promiſe aſſured vs of that particular which our Prayer craueth. To pray for that which is in it ſelfe and of it owne nature apparently a thing impoſſible, were not conuenient. Wherefore though men doe without offence wiſh daily that the affaires which with euill ſucceſſe are paſt might haue fallen out much better, yet to pray that they may haue beene any other then they are, this beeing a manifeſt impoſſibilitie in it ſelfe, the Rules of Religion doe not permit. Whereas contrariwiſe when things of their owne nature contingent and mutable are by the ſecret determination of God appointed one way, though wee the other way make our Prayers, and conſequently aske thoſe things of God which are *by this ſuppoſition* impoſſible, we notwithſtanding doe not hereby in Prayer tranſgreſſe our lawfull bounds. That Chriſt, as the only begotten Sonne of God, hauing

a *Oratio quæ non fit per Chriſtum, non ſolum non poteſt deum placatum, ſed etiam ipſa fit peccatum.* Aug. ep. 121. in Pſal. 108.

b *Num.* 11. 33. 1. *Sam.* 8. 7. *Iob* 1 12. & 2. 6. *Luke* 8. 52.

c 2. *Cor.* 12. 7. 8. *Aug. Epiſt.* 121. *ad probam vidauæ.*

hauing no Superior, and therefore owing honour vnto none, neither ſtanding in any need, ſhould eyther giue thankes, or make petition vnto God, were moſt abſurd. As man what could beſeeme him better, whether wee reſpect his affection to God-ward, or his owne neceſſitie, or his charitie and loue towards men? Some things hee knew ſhould come to paſſe and notwithſtanding prayed for them, becauſe he alſo knew that the neceſſarie meanes to effect them, were his Prayers. As in the Pſalme it is ſayd, [a] *Aske of me, and I will giue thee the Heathen for thine Inheritance, and the ends of the Earth for thy poſſeſſion.* Wherefore that which heere God promiſeth his Sonne, the ſame in the 17. of *Iohn* hee prayeth for, [b] *Father, the houre is now come, glorifie thy Sonne, that thy Sonne alſo may glorifie thee, according as thou haſt giuen him power ouer all fleſh.* But had Chriſt the like promiſe concerning the effect of euery particular for which hee prayed? That which was not effected could not be promiſed. And wee know in [c] what ſort he prayed for remouall of that bitter cup, which cup he taſted notwithſtanding his Prayer. To ſhift off this Example they anſwere firſt that [d] *as other children of God, ſo Chriſt had a promiſe of deliuerance,* as farre *as the glorie of God in the accompliſhment of his vocation would ſuffer.* And if we our ſelues haue not alſo in that ſort the promiſe of God to be euermore deliuered from all aduerſitie, what meaneth the Sacred Scripture to ſpeake in ſo large termes, *Bee obedient, and the Lord thy God will make thee plenteous in* [e] *euery worke of thy hand, in the fruit of thy body, and in the fruit of thy Cattell, and in the fruit of the Land for thy wealth.* Againe, *Keepe his Lawes, and thou ſhalt be bleſt aboue all people, the Lord ſhall take from thee* [f] *all infirmities.* The man whoſe delight is in the Law of God, [g] *whatſoeuer he doth it ſhall proſper.* For the vngodly there are *great plagues* remayning; but whoſoeuer putteth his truſt in the Lord, mercie imbraceth him [h] *on euery ſide.* Not onely that mercie which keepeth from being ouerlayd or oppreſt, but mercie which ſaueth from being *touched* with grieuous miſeries, mercie which turneth away the courſe of [i] *the great water-flouds,* and permitteth them not to *come neere*. Neuertheleſſe, becauſe the Prayer of Chriſt did concerne but one calamitie, they are ſtill bold to deny the lawfulneſſe of our Prayer for deliuerance out of all, yea, though wee pray with the ſame exception that he did, *If ſuch deliuerance may ſtand with the pleaſure of Almighty God and not otherwiſe*. For they haue ſecondly found out a Rule that Prayer ought onely to be made for deliuerance [k] *from this or that particular aduerſitie, whereof we know not but vpon the euent what the pleaſure of God is.* Which quite ouerthroweth that other principle wherein they require vnto euery Prayer which is of Faith an aſſurance to obtayne the thing we pray for. At the firſt to pray againſt all aduerſitie was vnlawfull, becauſe wee cannot aſſure our ſelues that this will be granted. Now wee haue licence to pray againſt any particular aduerſitie, and the reaſon giuen, becauſe wee know not but vpon the euent what God will doe. If wee know not what God will doe, it followeth that for any aſſurance wee haue, hee may doe otherwiſe then wee pray, and we may faithfully pray for that which wee cannot aſſuredly preſume that God will grant. Seeing therefore neyther of theſe two Anſweres will ſerue the turne, they haue a third, which is, that to pray in ſuch ſort is but idly miſſe-ſpent labour, becauſe God hath alreadie reuealed his Will touching this

a *Pſal.* 2. 8.

b *Iohn* 17. 1, 2.

c *Matth.* 26. 39. *Marke* 14. 36. *Luke* 22. 42.

d Neyther did our Sauiour Chriſt pray without promiſe: for as other the Children of God to whoſe condition hee had humbled himſelfe haue, ſo had he a promiſe of deliuerance, ſo farre as the glorie of God in that accompliſhment of his vocation would ſuffer. *T. C. lib.* 3. *p.* 200.

e *Deut.* 30. 9.

f *Deut.* 7. 15.

g *Pſal.* 1. 4.

h *Pſal.* 31. 11.

i 7.

k *T. C. lib.* 3. *page* 201.

l We ought not to deſire to be freed from all aduerſitie if it bee his will, conſidering that he hath alreadie declared his will therein, *T. C. lib.* 3. *p.* 201.

this requeſt, and wee know that the ſute we make is denyed before we make it. Which neyther is true, and if it were, was Chriſt ignorant what God had determined touching thoſe things which himſelfe ſhould ſuffer? To ſay [a] *hee knew not what waight of ſufferances his heauenly father had meaſured vnto him*, is ſomwhat hard, harder that although *he knew them*, notwithſtanding for the preſent time they were *forgotten, through the force of thoſe vnſpeakeable pangs which he then was in.* The one againſt the plaine expreſſe words of the holy Euangeliſt, [b] *He knew all things that ſhould come vpon him*; the other leſſe credible, if any thing may bee of leſſe credit then what the Scripture it ſelfe gayneſayeth. Doth any of them which wrote his ſufferings, make report that memorie fayled them? Is there in his wordes and ſpeeches any ſigne of defect that way? Did not himſelfe declare before whatſoeuer was to happen in the courſe of that whole Tragedie? Can we gather by any thing after taken from his owne mouth eyther in the place of publique iudgement, or vpon the Altar of the Croſſe, that through the bruſing of his Bodie, ſome part of the treaſures of his ſoule were ſcattered and ſlipt from him? If that which was perfect both before and after did faile at this only middle inſtant, there muſt appeare ſome manifeſt cauſe how it came to paſſe. True it is, that the pangs of his heauineſſe and griefe were *vnſpeakeable*: and as true, that becauſe the minds of the afflicted doe neuer thinke they haue fully conceiued the waight or meaſure of their owne woe, they vſe their affection as a whetſtone both to wit and memory, theſe as nurces doe feed griefe, ſo that the weaker his conceit had bin touching that which hee was to ſuffer, the more it muſt needs in that houre haue helped to the mitigation of his anguiſh. But his anguiſh wee ſee was then at the very higheſt whereunto it could poſſibly riſe; which argueth his deepe apprehenſion euen to the laſt drop of the gaule which that Cup contayned, and of euery circumſtance wherein there was any force to augment heauineſſe, but aboue all things, the reſolute determination of God, and his owne vnchangeable purpoſe which hee at that time could not forget. To what intent then was his Prayer which plainly teſtifieth ſo great willingneſſe to auoyd death? Will, whether it bee in God or man, belongeth to the Eſſence or nature of both. The nature therefore of God being one, there are not in God diuers wils, although the God-head be in diuers perſons, becauſe the power of willing is a naturall not a perſonall proprietie. Contrariwiſe, the perſon of our Sauiour Chriſt being but one, there are in him two wils, becauſe two natures, the nature of God, and the nature of man, which both doe imply this facultie and power. So that in Chriſt there is a diuine and there is an humane will, otherwiſe hee were not both God and man. Hereupon the Church hath of old condemned Monothelites as Heretiques, for holding that Chriſt had but one will. The workes and operations of our Sauiours humane will were all ſubiect to the will of God, and framed according to his Law, [c] *I deſired to do thy will, O God, and thy Law is within mine heart.* Now as mans will, ſo the will of Chriſt hath two ſeuerall kinds of operation, the one naturall or neceſſarie, whereby it deſireth ſimply whatſoeuer is good in it ſelfe, and ſhunneth as generally all things which hurt; the other deliberate, when wee therefore imbrace things as good, becauſe the eye of vnderſtanding iudgeth them good to that end which we ſimply deſire. Thus in

a *T.C.lib.3. page 401.*

b *Iohn 18.4.*

c *Pſal.40.8.*

it

it ſelfe we deſire health, phyſicke onely for healths ſake. And in this ſort ſpeciall reaſon oftentimes cauſeth the will by choiſe to preferre one good thing before another, to leaue one for anothers ſake, to forgoe meaner for the attainement of higher deſires, which our Sauiour likewiſe did. Theſe different inclinations of the will conſidered, the reaſon is eaſie how in Chriſt there might grow deſires ſeeming, but being not indeed oppoſite either the one of them vnto the other, or either of them to the will of God. For let the manner of his ſpeech be weighed, [a] *My ſoule is now troubled, and what ſhould I ſay? Father, ſaue me out of this houre. But yet for this very cauſe am I come into this houre.* His purpoſe herein was moſt effectually to propoſe to the view of the whole world two contrarie obiects, the like whereunto in force and efficacie were neuer preſented in that manner to any but onely to the Soule of Chriſt. There was preſented before his eyes in that fearefull houre on the one ſide Gods heauie indignation and wrath towards mankind as yet vnappeaſed, death as yet in full ſtrength, hell as yet neuer maſtered by any that came within the confines and bounds thereof, ſomewhat alſo peraduenture more then is either poſſible or needfull for the wit of man to find out, finally himſelfe fleſh and bloud * left alone to enter into conflict with all theſe; on the other ſide, a world to be ſaued by One, a pacification of wrath through the dignity of that ſacrifice which ſhould be offred, a conqueſt ouer death through the power of that Deity which would not ſuffer the Tabernacle thereof to ſee corruption, and an vtter diſappointment of all the forces of infernall powers, through the puritie of that ſoule which they ſhould haue in their hands and not bee able to touch. Let no man maruaile that in this caſe the ſoule of Chriſt was much *troubled*. For what could ſuch apprehenſions breed but (as their nature is) inexplicable paſſions of mind, deſires abhorring what they imbrace, and imbracing what they abhorre? In which agonie *how ſhould the tongue go about to expreſſe* what the ſoule indured? When the griefes of *Iob* were exceeding great, his words accordingly to open them were many; howbeit, ſtill vnto his ſeeming they were vndiſcouered, [b] *Though my talke* (ſaith Iob) *be this day in bitterneſſe, yet my plague is greater then my groning.* But heere to what purpoſe ſhould words ſerue, when nature hath more to declare then grones and ſtrong cryes, more then ſtreames of bloudie ſweates, more then his doubled and tripled prayers can expreſſe, who thriſe putting forth his hand to receiue that cup, beſides which there was no other cauſe of his comming into the world, he thriſe pulleth it backe a gaine, and as often euen with teares of bloud craueth, *If it be poſſible, O Father, Or if not, euen what thine owne good pleaſure is*, for whoſe ſake the paſſion that hath in it a bitter and bloudie conflict euen with wrath and death and hell is moſt welcome. Whereas therefore wee find in God a will reſolued that Chriſt ſhall ſuffer; and in the humane will of Chriſt two actuall deſires, the one auoyding, and the other accepting death; is that deſire which firſt declareth it ſelfe by prayer, againſt that wherewith he concludeth prayer, or either of them againſt his mind to whom prayer in this caſe ſeeketh? We may iudge of theſe diuerſities in the will, by the like in the vnderſtanding. For as the intellectuall part doth not croſſe it ſelfe, by conceiuing man to be iuſt and vniuſt, when it meaneth not the ſame man, nor by imagining the ſame man learned and vnlearned,

[a] Iohn 12.27.

* *Matth. 27.46. Non potuit diuinitas humanitatem, & ſecundum aliquid deſeruiſſe, & ſecundum aliquid non deſeruiſſe? Subtraxit protectionem, ſed non ſeparauit vnionem. Sic ergo dereliquit vt non adiuuaret, ſed non dereliquit vt recederet. Sic ergo humanitas a diuinitate in paſſione dereliſta eſt. Quam tamen mortem quia non pro ſua iniquitate, ſed pro noſtra redemptione ſuſtinuit, quare ſit derelictam qui vit, non quaſi aduerſus Deum de pœna mu murans, ſed nobis innocentiam ſuam in pœna demonſtrans. Hug. de Sacra. li. 2. par. 1. c. 10. Deus meus, vt quid dereliquiſti me? Vox eſt nec ignorantiæ, nec diffidentiæ, nec querelæ, ſed admirationis tantum, quæ alijs inueſtigande cauſ. ardorem & diligentiam acuat.*

[b] Iob 23. 2.

learned, if learned in one skill, and in another kind of learning vnskilfull, because the parts of euerie true opposition doe alwayes both concerne the same subiect, and haue reference to the same thing, sith otherwise they are but in shew opposite and not in truth: So the will about one and the same thing may in contrarie respects haue contrarie inclinations, and that without contrarietie. The minister of iustice may for publique example to others, vertuously will the execution of that partie, whose pardon another for consanguinities sake as vertuously may desire. Consider death in it selfe, and nature teacheth Christ to shun it; Consider death as a meane to procure the saluation of the world, and mercie worketh in Christ all [a] willingnesse of mind towards it. Therefore in these two desires there can be no repugnant opposition. Againe, compare them with the will of God, and if any opposition be, it must be onely betweene his appointment of Christs death, and the former desire which wisheth deliuerance from death. But neither is this desire opposite to the will of God. The will of God was that Christ should suffer the paines of death. Not so his will, as if the torment of innocencie did in it selfe please and delight God, but such was his will, in regard of the end whereunto it was necessarie that Christ should suffer. The death of Christ in it selfe therefore God willeth not, which to the end we might thereby obtaine life he both alloweth and appointeth. In like manner the Sonne of man indureth willingly to that purpose those grieuous paines, which simply not to haue shunned had bin against nature, and by consequent against God. I take it therefore to be an error, that Christ either knew not what himselfe was to suffer, or else had forgotten the things he knew. The roote of which errour was an ouer-restrained consideration of prayer, as though it had no other lawfull vse but onely to serue for a chosen meane, whereby the will resolueth to seeke that which the vnderstanding certainely knoweth it shall obtaine: whereas prayers in truth both ours are, and his were, as well sometime a presentation of meere desires, as a meane of procuring desired effects at the hands of God. We are therefore taught by this example, that the presence of dolorous and dreadfull obiects euen in minds most perfect, may as cloudes ouer-cast all sensible ioy; that no assurance touching future victories can make present conflicts so sweet and easie, but nature will shun and shrinke from them, nature will desire ease and deliuerance from oppressiue burthens; that the contrarie determination of God is oftentimes against the effect of this desire, yet not against the affection it selfe, because it is naturally in vs; that in such case our prayers cannot serue vs as meanes to obtaine the thing wee desire; that notwithstanding they are vnto God most acceptable sacrifices, because they testifie we desire nothing but at his hands, and our desires we submit with contentment to be ouerruled by his will, and in generall they are not repugnant vnto the naturall will of God, which wisheth to the workes of his owne hands, in that they are his owne handie-worke, all happinesse, although perhaps for some speciall cause in our owne particular, a contrarie determination haue seemed more conuenient; finally, that thus to propose our desires which cannot take such effect as wee specifie, shall notwithstanding otherwise procure vs his heauenly grace, euen as this verie prayer of Christ obtained [b] Angels to be sent him as comforters in his agonie. And according to this

a Esa. 53. 10. Iohn 10. 15.

b Luke 22. 43.

this example wee are not afraid to preſent vnto God our prayers for thoſe things, which that hee will performe vnto vs wee haue no ſure not certaine knowledge. [a] Saint *Pauls* prayer for the Church of Corinth was that they might not doe any euill; although hee knew that no man liueth which ſinneth not, although he knew that in this life we alwayes muſt pray, [b] *Forgiue vs our ſinnes.* It is our frailtie that in many things we all doe amiſſe, but a vertue that we would doe amiſſe in nothing, and a teſtimonie of that vertue, when we pray that what occaſion of ſinne ſoeuer doe offer it ſelfe, wee may be ſtrengthened from aboue to withſtand it. They pray in vaine to haue ſinne pardoned which ſeeke not alſo to preuent ſinne by prayer, euen euery particular ſinne by prayer againſt all ſinne, except men can name ſome tranſgreſſion wherewith wee ought to haue truce. For in verie deed although wee cannot be free from all ſinne collectiuely in ſuch ſort that no part thereof ſhall be found inherent in vs, yet diſtributiuely at the leaſt all great and grieuous actuall offences, as they offer themſelues one by one, both may and ought to bee by all meanes auoyded. So that in this ſenſe to bee preſerued from all ſinne is not impoſſible. Finally, concerning deliuerance it ſelfe from all aduerſitie, wee vſe not to ſay men are in aduerſitie whenſoeuer they feele any ſmall hinderance of their welfare in this world, but when ſome notable affliction or croſſe, ſome great calamitie or trouble befalleth them. Tribulation hath in it diuers circumſtances, the mind ſundrie faculties to apprehend them: It offereth ſometime it ſelfe to the lower powers of the ſoule as a moſt vnpleaſant ſpectacle to the higher, ſometimes as drawing after it a traine of dangerous inconueniences, ſometime as bringing with it remedies for the curing of ſundrie euils, as Gods inſtrument of reuenge and furie ſometime, ſometime as a rod of his iuſt yet moderate ire and diſpleaſure, ſometime as matter for them that ſpitefully hate vs to exerciſe their poyſoned malice, ſometime as a furnace of tryall for vertue to ſhew it ſelfe, and through conflict to obtaine glorie. Which different contemplations of aduerſitie doe worke for the moſt part their anſwerable effects. Aduerſitie either apprehended by ſenſe as a thing offenſiue and grieuous to nature; or by reaſon conceiued as a ſnare, an occaſion of many mens falling from God, a ſequell of Gods indignation and wrath, a thing which Satan deſireth, and would be glad to behold; tribulation thus conſidered being preſent cauſeth ſorrow, and being imminent breedeth feare. For moderation of which two affections growing from the very naturall bitterneſſe and gall of aduerſitie, [c] the Scripture much alleageth contrarie fruits, which affliction likewiſe hath whenſoeuer it falleth on them that are tractable, the grace of Gods holy Spirit concurring therewith. But when the Apoſtle Saint *Paul* teacheth, that [d] euery one which will liue godly in Chriſt Ieſus muſt ſuffer perſecution, and by many tribulations wee muſt enter into the kingdome of heauen, becauſe in a forreſt of many woolues, ſheepe cannot chooſe but feede in continuall danger of life; or when [e] Saint *Iames* exhorteth to account it a matter of exceeding ioy when we fall into diuers temptations, becauſe by the triall of faith patience is brought forth; was it ſuppoſe wee their meaning to fruſtrate our Lords admonition, *Pray that yee enter not into temptation?* when himſelfe pronounceth them bleſſed that ſhould for his name ſake bee ſubiect

a 2. Cor. 13. 7.

b We may not pray in this life to be free from all ſinne, becauſe we muſt alwayes pray, Forgiue vs our ſinnes. *T. C. lib. 3. pa. 200.*

c *Pſal. 119. 71.*

d 2. *Tim.* 3. 12. To pray againſt perſecution is contrarie to that word which ſaith, that euerie one which will liue godly in Chriſt Ieſu, muſt ſuffer perſecution. *T. C. li. 3. pa. 104.*

e *Iames* 1. 2.

to all kinds of ignominie and opprobrious malediction, was it his purpose that no man should euer pray with DAVID, [a] *Lord, remoue from me shame and contempt?* In those tribulations, saith [b] S. AVGVSTINE, *which may hurt as well as profit, we must say with the Apostle, What we should aske as we ought, we know not, yet because they are tough, because they are grieuous, because the sense of our weakenesse slieth them, we pray according to the generall desire of the will of man, that God would turne them away from vs, owing in the meane while this deuotion to the Lord our God, that if he remoue them not, yet we doe not therefore imagine our selues in his sight despised, but rather with godly sufferance of euils, expect greater good at his mercifull hands. For thus is vertue in weakenesse perfected.* To the the flesh (as the Apostle himselfe granteth) all affliction is naturally grieuous. Therefore nature which causeth to feare, teacheth to pray against all aduersity. Prosperitie in regard of our corrupt inclination to abuse the blessings of Almightie God, doth prooue for the most part a thing dangerous to the soules of men. Verie ease it selfe is [c] death to the wicked, and the prosperitie of fooles slayeth them; their table is a snare, and their felicitie their vtter ouerthrow. Few men there are which long prosper and sinne not. Howbeit euen as these ill effects, although they be verie vsuall and common, are no barre to the heartie prayers, wherby most vertuous minds wish peace & prosperity alwayes where they loue, because they consider that this in it selfe is a thing naturally desired: so because all aduersitie is in it selfe against nature, what should hinder to pray against it, although the prouidence of God turne it often vnto the great good of many men? Such prayers of the Church to be deliuered from all aduersitie, are no more repugnant to any reasonable disposition of mens mindes towards death, much lesse to that blessed patience and meeke contentment which Saints by heauenly inspiration haue to indure, what crosse or calamitie soeuer it pleaseth God to lay vpon them, then our Lord and Sauiours own prayer before his passion was repugnant vnto his most gracious resolution to dye for the sinnes of the whole world.

Psal. 119. 22. [a] *August. epist.* 121. *ad.* 14.

[c] *Prou.* 1. 32.

Prayer that all men may find mercie, and of the wil of God that all men might be saued.

49 In praying for deliuerance from all aduersitie, we seeke that which nature doth wish to it selfe; but by intreating for mercie towards all, we declare that affection wherewith Christian Charitie thirsteth after the good of the whole world, wee discharge that dut e which [d] the Apostle himselfe doth impose on the Church of Christ as a *commendable* office, a sacrifice *acceptable* in Gods sight, a seruice according to his heart, whose *desire* is to haue all men saued, a worke most suteable with his purpose, who gaue himselfe to be the price of redemption *for all*, and a forcible meane to *procure the conuersion* of all such as are not yet acquainted with the mysteries of that truth which must saue their soules. Against it there is but the bare shew of this one impediment, that all mens saluation, and many mens eternall condemnation or death, are things the one repugnant to the other, that both cannot be brought to passe; that we know there are vessels of wrath to whom God will neuer extend mercie, and therefore that wittingly wee aske an impossible thing to bee had. The truth is, that as life and death, mercie and wrath are matters of meere vnderstanding or knowledge, all mens saluation and some mens endlesse perdition are things so opposite, that whosoeuer doth affirme the one, must necessarily

[d] 1. *Tim.* 2. 3.

ſarily deny the other, God himſelfe cannot effect both, or determine that both ſhall be. There is in the knowledge both of God and man this certainty, that life and death haue diuided betweene them the whole bodie of mankind. What portion either of the two hath, God himſelfe knoweth; for vs he hath left no ſufficient meanes to comprehend, and for that cauſe neither giuen any leaue to ſearch in particular who are infallibly the heires of the kingdome of God, who caſt-awayes. Howbeit concerning the ſtate of all men with whom we liue (for onely of them our prayers are meant) we may till the worlds end, *for the preſent*, alwayes preſume, that *as farre as in vs there is power to diſcerne* what others are, and as farre as any dutie of ours dependeth vpon the notice of their condition in reſpect of God, the ſafeſt axiomes for charitie to reſt it ſelfe vpon are theſe, *He which beleeueth already, is*; and *He which beleeueth not as yet, may be the child of God.* [a] It becommeth not vs *during life altogether to condemne any man, ſeeing that* (for any thing we know) *there is hope of euery mans forgiueneſſe, the poſſibilitie of whoſe repentance is not yet cut off by death.* And therefore Charitie which [b] *hopeth all things*, prayeth alſo for all men. Wherefore to let go perſonall knowledge touching veſſels of wrath and mercie, what they are inwardly in the ſight of God it skilleth not, for vs there is cauſe ſufficient in all men, whereupon to ground our prayers vnto God in their behalfe. For whatſoeuer the mind of man apprehendeth as good, the will of charitie and loue is to haue it inlarged in the verie vttermoſt extent, that all may inioy it to whom it can any way adde perfection. Becauſe therefore the farther a good thing doth reach, the nobler and worthier wee reckon it, our prayers for all mens good no leſſe then for our owne, the Apoſtle with verie fit termes commendeth as being πολλὴν, a worke commendable for the largeneſſe of the affection from whence it ſpringeth, euen as theirs, [c] which haue requeſted at Gods hands the ſaluation of many with the loſſe of their owne ſoules, drowning as it were and ouerwhelming themſelues in the abundance of their loue towards others, is propoſed as being in regard of the rareneſſe of ſuch affections ὑπερπολλὴν, more then excellent. But this extraordinarie height of deſire after other mens ſaluation is no common marke. The other is a dutie which belongeth vnto all and preuaileth with God daily. For as it is in it ſelfe good, ſo God accepteth and taketh it in verie good part at the hands of faithfull men. Our prayers for all men doe include both them that ſhall find mercie, and them alſo that ſhall find none. For them that ſhall, no man will doubt but our prayers are both accepted and granted. Touching them for whom we craue that mercie which is not to be obtained, let vs not thinke that [d] our Sauiour did miſinſtruct his Diſciples, willing them to pray for the peace euen of ſuch as ſhould be vncapable of ſo great a bleſſing; or that the prayers of the [e] Prophet *Ieremy* offended God, becauſe the anſwer of God was a reſolute denyall of fauour to them for whom ſupplication was made. And if any man doubt how God ſhould accept ſuch prayers in caſe they be oppoſite to his will, or not grant them if they be according vnto that which himſelfe willeth, our anſwer is, that ſuch ſuites God accepteth in that they are conformable vnto his *generall inclination*, which is that all men might be ſaued, yet alwayes he granteth them not, for as much as there is in God ſometimes a more priuate *occaſioned will* which

a *Sidon. Apol. lib. 6. Epiſt.*

b 1. *Cor.* 14. 7.

c *Rom.* 9. 3. & 10. 1.

d *Matth.* 10. 11. 12.

e *Ier.* 15. 1.

which determineth the contrarie. So that the other being the rule of our actions and not this, our requests for things opposite to this will of God are not therefore the lesse gracious in his sight. There is no doubt but we ought in all things to frame our wills to the will of God, and that otherwise in whatsoeuer we doe we sinne. For of our selues being so apt to erre, the only way which we haue to streighten our paths, is by following the rule of his will, whose foote-steps naturally are right. If the eye, the hand, or the foote doe that which the will commandeth, though they serue as instruments to sinne, yet is sinne the commanders fault and not theirs, because nature hath absolutely and without exception made them subiects to the will of man which is Lord ouer them. As the bodie is subiect to the will of man, so mans will to the will of God; for so it behoueth that the better should guide and command the worse. But because the subiection of the bodie to the will is by naturall necessitie, the subiection of the will vnto God voluntarie, we therefore stand in need of direction after what sort our wills and desires may be rightly conformed to his. Which is not done by willing alwayes the selfe-same thing that God intendeth. For it may chance that his purpose is sometime the speedie death of them, whose long continuance in life if we should not wish we were vnnaturall. When the obiect or matter therefore of our desires is (as in this case) a thing both good of it selfe and not forbidden of God; when the end for which we desire it is vertuous & apparantly most holy; when the root from which our affection towards it proceedeth is Charitie; pietie that which wee doe in declaring our desire by prayer; yea ouer and besides all this, sith we know that to pray for all men liuing is but to shew the same affection which towards euerie of them our Lord Iesus Christ hath borne, who knowing onely as God who are his, did [a] as man taste death for the good of all men, surely so that will of God which ought to bee and is the knowne rule of all our actions, wee doe not herein oppose our selues, although his secret determination happily be against vs, which if we did vnderstand as wee doe not, yet to rest contented with that which God will haue done, is as much as hee requireth at the hands of men. And concerning our selues what we earnestly craue in this case, the same, as all things else that are of like condition, wee meekely submit vnto his most gracious will and pleasure. Finally, as we haue cause sufficient why to thinke the practice of our Church allowable in this behalfe, so neither is ours the first which hath beene of that mind. For to end with the words [b] of *Prosper*, *This law of supplication for all men* (saith he) *the deuout zeale of all Priests and of all faithfull men doth hold with such full agreement, that there is not any part of all the world where Christian people do not vse to pray in the same manner. The Church euery where maketh prayers vnto God not onely for Saints and such as alreadie in Christ are regenerate, but for all Infidels and enemies of the crosse of Iesus Christ, for all Idolaters, for all that persecute Christ in his followers, for Iewes to whose blindnes the light of the Gospel doth not yet shine, for Heretiques and Schismatiques, who from the vnitie of faith and charity are estranged. And for such what doth the Church aske of God but this, that leaning their errors they may be conuerted vnto him, that faith & charity may be giuen him, and that out of the darknes of ignorance they may come to the knowledge of his truth? Which because they cannot themselues do in their owne behalfe, as long*

[a] *Proptereà mihi contrarietatis erat, si Christus homo secundum affectum pietatis quam in humanitate sua assumpserat aliquid vellet, quod tamen secundum voluntatem diuinam, in qua cum patre omnia disponebat futurum non esse prescieret, quia & hæc ad veram humanitatem pertineret, vt pietatem moueretur, & hoc ad veram diuinitatem vt à sua dispositione non moueretur.* Aug. de quæst. Euang. volum. 6. q. 4. inter opera Ambros.

[b] *Prosp. de vocat. Gen. lib. 1. ca. 4. inter opera Ambros.*

as long as the ſway of euill cuſtome ouer-beareth them, and the thraldome of Satan deteineth them bound, neither are they able to breake thorow thoſe errours wherein they are ſo determinately ſetled, that they pay vnto ſalſitie the wholeſumme of whatſoeuer loue is owing vnto Gods Truth, our Lord mercifull and iuſt requireth to haue all men prayed for, that when we behold innumerable multitudes drawne vp from the depth of ſo bottomleſſe euils, we may not doubt but (in part) God hath done the thing we requeſted, nor deſpayre, but that being thankefull for them towards whom already he hath ſhewed mercy, the reſt which are not as yet inlightened, ſhall before they paſſe out of life be made partakers of the like grace. Or if the grace of him which ſaueth [for ſo we ſee it falleth out] ouer-paſſe ſome, ſo that the Prayer of the Church for them be not receiued, that we may leane to the hidden Iudgements of Righteouſneſſe, and acknowledge that in this ſecret there is a Gulfe, which while we liue we ſhall neuer ſound.

Inſtruction and Prayer, whereof wee haue hitherto ſpoken, are duties which ſerue as Elements, Parts or Principles to the reſt that follow, in which number the Sacraments of the Church are chiefe. The Church is to vs that very Mother of our new Birth, in whoſe bowels we are all bred, at whoſe breſts we receiue nouriſhment. As many therefore as are apparently to our iudgement borne of God, they haue the Seed of Regeneration by the Miniſterie of the Church, which vſeth to that end and purpoſe not only the Word, but the Sacraments, both hauing generatiue force and vertue. As oft as we mention a Sacrament properly vnderſtood (for in the Writings of the ancient Fathers all Articles which are peculiar to Chriſtian Faith, all duties of Religion containing that which ſenſe or naturall reaſon cannot of it ſelfe diſcerne, are moſt commonly named Sacraments) our reſtraint of the Word to ſome few principall diuine Ceremonies, importeth in euery ſuch Ceremonie two things, the ſubſtance of the Ceremonie it ſelfe which is viſible, and beſides that ſomewhat elſe more ſecret, in reference whereunto we conceiue that Ceremonie to be a Sacrament. For we all admire and honour the holy Sacraments, not reſpecting ſo much the ſeruice which we doe vnto God in receiuing them, as the dignitie of that ſacred and ſecret gift which we thereby receiue from God. Seeing that Sacraments therefore conſiſt altogether in relation to ſome ſuch gift or grace ſupernaturall, as onely God can beſtow, how ſhould any but the Church adminiſter thoſe Ceremonies as Sacraments, which are not thought to bee Sacraments by any but by the Church? There is in Sacraments to be obſerued their force and their forme of adminiſtration. Vpon their force their neceſſitie dependeth. So that how they are neceſſary wee cannot diſcerne, till wee ſee how effectuall they are. When Sacraments are ſaid to bee viſible Signes of inuiſible Grace, we thereby conceiue how grace is indeed the very end for which theſe heauenly Myſteries were inſtituted, and beſides ſundry other properties obſerued in them, the matter wherof they conſiſt, is ſuch as ſignifieth, figureth, and repreſenteth their end. But ſtill their efficacie reſteth obſcure to our vnderſtanding, except we ſearch ſomewhat more diſtinctly what grace in particular, that is, whereunto they are referred, and what manner of operation they haue towards it. The vſe of Sacraments is but onely in this life, yet ſo, that here they concerne a farre better life then this, and are for that cauſe accompanied with

Of the name, the Author, and the force of Sacraments, which force conſiſteth in this, that God hath ordayned them as meanes to make vs partakers of him in Chriſt, and of life through Chriſt. * Gal. 4. 26. Ioh. 3. 5.

grace which worketh Salvation. Sacraments are the powerfull Instruments of God to eternall life. For as our naturall life consisteth in the vnion of the bodie with the Soule; so our life supernaturall in the vnion of the Soule with God. And for as much as there is no vnion of God with man, without that [a] meane betweene both which is both, it seemeth requisite that wee first consider how God is in Christ, then how Christ is in vs, and how the Sacraments doe serue to make vs partakers of Christ. In other things we may be more briefe, but the weight of these requireth largenesse.

[a] *Oportebat Deum carnem fieri vt in semetipso concordiam consubularet Patrem atq; filium, dum vtrumque*

per ista se conuertisse figuram, & Deum patrem hominis, & hominem Dei reperiatur. Tertull. de Trinit.

That God is in Christ by the personall Incarnation of the Sonne who is very God.

51 The Lord our God is but one God. In which indiuisible vnitie notwithstanding we adore the Father as being altogether of himselfe, we glorifie that Consubstantiall Word which is the Sonne, wee bleſſe and magnifie that Coessentiall Spirit eternally proceeding from both, which is the Holy Ghost. Seeing therefore the Father is of none, the Sonne is of the Father, and the Spirit is of both, they are by these their seuerall properties really distinguishable each from other. For the substance of God with this propertie *to be of none*, doth make the person of the Father; the very selfe-same substance in number with this propertie *to be of the Father*, maketh the person of the Sonne; the same substance hauing added vnto it the propertie of *proceeding from the other two*, maketh the person of the Holy Ghost. So that in euery person there is implyed both the substance of God which is one, and also that propertie which causeth the same person really and truely to differ from the other two. Euery [b] person hath his owne subsistence which no other besides hath, although there be others besides that are of the same substance. As no man but *Peter* can bee the person which *Peter* is, yet *Paul* hath the selfe-same Nature which *Peter*. Againe Angels haue euery of them the nature of pure and inuisible Spirits, but euery Angell is not that Angell which appeared in a Dreame to *Ioseph*. Now when God became man, lest wee should erre in applying this to the person of the Father, or of the Spirit, Saint *Peters* Confession vnto Christ was, Thou art the [c] *Sonne* of the Liuing God, and Saint *Iohns* Exposition thereof was made plaine, and that it is the [d] *Word* which was made flesh. [e] *The Father and the Holy Ghost* (saith DAMASCEN) *haue no communion with the Incarnation of the Word, otherwise then onely by approbation and assent.* Notwithstanding, for as much as the Word and Deitie are one subiect, we must beware we exclude not the Nature of God from incarnation, and so make the Sonne of God incarnate not to be very God. For vndoubtedly euen [f] the Nature of God it selfe in the onely person of the Sonne is incarnate, and hath taken to it selfe flesh. Wherefore incarnation may neither be granted to any person but onely one, nor yet denied to that nature which is common vnto all three. Concerning the cause of which incomprehensible Mystery, for as much as it seemeth a thing vnconsonant, that the World should honour any other as the Sauiour, but him whom it honoureth as the Creatour

[b] Ἕκαστον ὑποστατικὸν ἰδίωμα ἔχει κατὰ τοὺς ἀγίους πατέρας, τὸ ἰδιάζον γνωρισμὸν, τὸ κοινὸν οὐσιῶδες. Καὶ γάρ ἐστι τὸ εἶναι ἕνα τινὰ πρεσβύτην ἴδιον μὲ ἰωσὴφ οὐσιῶδες. Καὶ ἰωσὴφ καὶ ἕνα τῶν ἀγγέλων οὐκ ὑφεστῶτα, ἀλλὰ ἐν τοῖς ὑποκειμένοις ἀγγέλοις, τὸ δὲ κοινὸν μεῖζον τῆς ἴδιας ζωῆς ἔχειν ἐγκρατὲς καὶ τὸ καθ' ἕκαστον ἀνυφεστῶς. Damasc. de Orthod. fide lib. 3. cap. 6.

[c] *Matt.* 16. 16.

[d] *Iohn* 1. 14.

Ignat. Epist. ad Magnes. Ὅτε ἐστὶν αὐτῷ λόγῳ ἰδίῳ καὶ ἀνάρθρῳ. Οὐ γὰρ ἐπὶ καλεῖ ἐνάρθρως καὶ ἀπρονύμως ἀλλὰ ἀπροσώπως ἀπλῶς γινώσκει. [e] Καὶ αὐτὸν λόγον σαρκωθέντα ἢ πατέρα ἢ τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον οὐ κοινωνεῖν τῷ λόγῳ, εἰ μὴ κατ' εὐδοκίαν καὶ βούλησιν. Damasc.

[f] *In illo diuinitatis est vnigeniti filio participem in vitali actu esse, vt & nos participes eius immortalitatis essemus.* Aug. Epist. 57.

of

of the World, and in the Wiſedome of God it hath not beene thought conuenient to admit any way of ſauing man but by man himſelfe, though nothing ſhould be ſpoken of the loue and mercie of God towards man, which this way are become ſuch a ſpectacle, as neither men nor Angels can behold without a kinde of heauenly aſtoniſhment, wee may hereby perceiue there is cauſe ſufficient why diuine Nature ſhould aſſume Humane, that ſo [a] God might bee in Chriſt reconciling to himſelfe the World. And if ſome cauſe be likewiſe required, why rather to this end and purpoſe the Sonne, then either the Father or the Holy Ghoſt ſhould be made man, could wee which are borne the children of wrath, be adopted the Sonnes of God through grace, any other then the naturall Sonne of God being Mediatour betweene God and vs? It [b] became therefore him by whom all things are, to bee the way of Saluation to all, that the inſtitution and reſtitution of the World might bee both wrought by one hand. The Worlds Saluation was without the Incarnation of the Sonne of God, a thing impoſſible, not ſimply impoſſible, but impoſſible, it being preſuppoſed that the will of God was no otherwiſe to haue it ſaued then by the death of his owne Sonne. Wherefore taking to himſelfe our fleſh, and by his Incarnation making it his owne fleſh, hee had now of his owne, although from vs, what to offer vnto God for vs. And as Chriſt tooke Manhood, that by it hee might be capable of death whereunto he humbled himſelfe, ſo becauſe Manhood is the proper ſubiect of compaſſion and feeling pittie, which maketh the Scepter of Chriſts Regencie euen in the Kingdome of Heauen amiable, hee which without our Nature could not on Earth ſuffer for the ſinnes of the World, doth now alſo [c] by meanes thereof both make interceſſion to God for ſinners, and exerciſe dominion ouer all men with a true, a naturall, and a ſenſible touch of mercie.

a 2. Cor. 5. 19.

b Heb. 2. 10.

c Heb. 7. 25.

52 It is not in mans abilitie either to expreſſe perfectly, or conceiue the manner how this was brought to paſſe. But the ſtrength of our Faith is tryed by thoſe things wherein our wits and capacities are not ſtrong. Howbeit becauſe this Diuine Myſterie is more true then plaine, diuers hauing framed the ſame to their owne conceits and fancies, are found in their expoſitions thereof more plaine then true: In ſo much that by the ſpace of fiue hundred yeeres after Chriſt, the Church was almoſt troubled with nothing elſe, ſauing only with care and trauaile to preſerue this Article from the ſiniſter conſtruction of Heretikes. Whoſe firſt miſſe when the light of the [d] *Nicen* Councell had diſpeld, it was not long ere *Macedonius* transferred vnto Gods moſt holy Spirit the ſame blaſphemie, wherewith *Arrius* had alreadie diſhonoured his coeternally begotten Sonne; not long ere *Apollinarius* began to [e] paire away from Chriſts humanity. In refutation of which impieties when the Fathers of the Church *Athanaſius*, *Baſil*, and the two *Gregories*, had by their painfull trauailes ſufficiently cleered the truth, no leſſe for the Deitie of the holy Ghoſt, then for the complete humanitie of Chriſt, there followed hereupon a finall concluſion, whereby thoſe controuerſies, as alſo the reſt which *Paulus Samoſatenus*, *Sabellius*, *Photinus*, *Aëtius*, *Eunomius*, together with the whole ſwarme of peſtilent *Diuiſors*, had from time to time ſtirred vp ſithence the Councell of *Nice*, were both priuately firſt at Rome in a ſmaller Synode, and

The miſinterpretations which Hereſie hath made of the manner how God and man are vnited in one Chriſt.

d Anno D. 325.

e Μακεδόνιος ... ἀνθρωπότητος ... τὸ ἅγιον πνεῦμα ... ἀνθρώπου ... Suid.

a An. Do. 381.

then [a] at Constantinople in a generall famous Assembly brought to a peaceable and quiet end, seuenscore Bishops and tenne agreeing in that Confession which by them set downe, remayneth at this present houre, a part of our Church-Liturgie, a Memoriall of their fidelitie and zeale, a soueraigne preseruatiue of Gods people from the venemous infection of Heresie. Thus in Christ the veritie of God, and the complete substance of man, were with full agreement established throughout the World, till such time as the Heresie of *Nestorius* brocched it selfe, [b] *dividing Christ into two persons, the Son of God, and the Son of man, the one a person begotten of God before all Worlds, the other also a person borne of the Virgin* MARY, *and in speciall fauour chosen to be made intyre to the Son of God aboue all men, so that whosoeuer will honour God, must together honour Christ, with whose person God hath vouchsafed to ioyne himselfe in so high a degree of gracious respect and fauour.* But that the selfe-same person which verily is man, should properly be God also, and that, by reason not of two persons linked in amitie, but of two natures, Humane and Diuine, coniojned in one and the same person, the God of glory may be said as well to haue suffered death, as to haue raised the dead from their graues, the Son of man as well to haue made as to haue redeemed the World, *Nestorius* in no case would admit. That which deceiued him, was want of heed to the first beginning of that admirable combination of God with man. The Word, saith S. *Iohn*, was made flesh and dwelt [c] *in vs.* The Euangelist vseth the plurall number, Men for Manhood, [d] for the nature whereof we consist, euen as the Apostle denying the Assumption of *Angelicall nature*, saith likewise in the plurall number, he tooke not [d] *Angels* but the seed of *Abraham*. It pleased not the Word or Wisdome of God to take to it selfe some one person amongst men, for then should that one haue beene aduanced which was assumed and no more, but Wisedome, to the end She might saue many, built her House of that *nature* which is common vnto all, She made not *that or that man* her Habitation, but dwelt *in vs*. The Seedes of Herbes and Plants at the first are not in act, but in possibilitie that which they afterwards grow to be. If the Sonne of God had taken to him selfe a man now made and alreadie perfected, it would of necessitie follow that there are in Christ two persons, the one assuming and the other assumed, whereas the Sonne of God did not assume a mans person vnto his owne, but a mans nature to his owne person, and therefore tooke *seuen*, the seed of *Abraham*, the very first originall Element of our nature, [e] before it was come to haue any personall Humane subsistence. The flesh and the coniunction of the flesh with God beginne both at one instant; his making and taking to him selfe our flesh was but one act, so that in Christ there is no personall subsistence but one, and that from euerlasting. By taking only the nature of man, hee still continueth one person, and changeth but the manner of his subsisting, which was before in the meere glory of the Sonne of God, and is now in the habit of one flesh. For as much therefore as Christ hath no personall subsistence but one whereby wee acknowledge him to haue beene eternally the Sonne of God, wee must of necessitie apply to the *person* of the Sonne of God, euen that which is spoken of Christ according to his Humane nature. For Example, according to the flesh hee was borne of the Virgin *Mary* baptized of *Iohn* in the River Iordan, *by Pilate* adiudged

b Οὐκ ὀνομάζω δύο υἱοὺς ἐμολογεῖ μεθ' ἡμῶν, Cyril. Epist. ad Eulog. Οὐκ ἀλλοτρίαν ἕνωσιν τῷ λόγῳ τῷ θεῷ πρὸς ἄνθρωπον, ἀλλὰ θεὸν ὑποστάσεως λόγῳ ἡ θεότης. Εἰ δὲ ἡ ἀνθρωπότης ἡ θεὸν ἀνομάζει τὸν χριστὸν ἀλλ' οὐκ ὅτι ὁ θεὸς, ἀλλὰ τῇ ἑνώσει ἡ τῆ θεότητος ἐκοινώνησε καὶ τὰ τοιαῦτα ἀλλήλοις ἀφίησιν διὰ τὴν ἕνωσιν, Leont. de Sect.

c *Iohn* 1.14.

d Heb. 2.16.

e Ἡ ἀνθρώπινη φύσις ἐν ὑποστάσει τῇ τοῦ λόγου Theod. Dial. Ἀτρεπτος.

adiudged to dye, and executed by the Iewes. We cannot say properly that the Virgin bore, or *Iohn* did baptize, or *Pilate* condemne, or the Iewes crucifie the nature of man, because these all are personall Attributes, his person is the subiect which receiueth them, his nature, that which maketh his person capable or apt to receiue. If euer I should say that the person of a man in our Sauiour Christ was the subiect of these things, this were plainely to intrap our selues in the very snare of the *Nestorian* Heresie, betweene whom and the Church of God there was no difference, saying onely that *Nestorius* imagined in Christ as well a personall Humane subsistance as a Diuine, the Church acknowledging a substance both Diuine and Humane, but no other personall subsistence then Diuine; because the Sonne of God tooke not to himselfe a mans person, but the nature onely of a man. Christ is a person both Diuine and Humane, howbeit not therefore two persons in one, neither both these in one sense, but a person Diuine, because hee is *personally* the Sonne of God, Humane, because *he hath* really *the nature* of the children of men. In Christ therefore God and Man, *there is* (saith [a] PASCHASIVS) *a two-fold substance, not a two-fold person, because one person extinguisheth not another, wherein one nature is not in another become extinct.* For the personall being which the Sonne of God alreadie had, suffered not the substance to bee personall which hee tooke, although together with the nature which he had, the nature also which hee tooke continueth. Whereupon it followeth against *Nestorius*, that no person was borne of the Virgin but the Sonne of God, no person but the Sonne of God baptized, the Sonne of God condemned, the Sonne of God and no other person crucified, which one onely point of Christian Beliefe, *the infinite worth of the Sonne of God*, is the very ground of all things beleeued concerning life and saluation, by that which Christ either did or suffered as man in our behalfe. But for as much as Saint *Cyril*, the chiefest of those two hundred Bishops assembled in the [b] Councell of Ephesus where the Heresie of *Nestorius* was condemned, had in his Writings against the Arrians auouched, that *the Word or Wisedome* of God hath *but one nature*, which is eternall, and whereunto hee assumed flesh (for the Arrians were of opinion, that besides Gods owne eternall Wisedome, there is a Wisedome which God created before all things, to the end hee might thereby create all things else, and that this created Wisedome was the Word which tooke flesh.) Againe, for as much as the same *Cyril* had giuen instance in the bodie and the soule of man, no farther then onely to enforce by example against *Nestorius*, that a visible and an inuisible, a mortall and an immortall substance may vnited make *one person*, the wordes of *Cyril* were in processe of time so taken, as though it had beene his drift to teach, that euen as in vs the bodie and the soule, so in Christ, God and man make but *one nature*. Of which errour, fiue hundred and thirtie Fathers in the [c] Councell of Chalcedon condemned *Eutyches*. For as *Nestorius* teaching rightly that God and man are distinct Natures, did thereupon mis-inferre that in Christ those natures can by no coniunction make one person; so *Eutyches* of sound beliefe, as touching their true personall copulation became vnsound, by denying the difference which still continueth betweene the one and the other nature. We must therefore

[a] Paschasius de Spiritu Sanct.

[b] An. D. 431.

[c] An. D. 451.

keepe warily a middle course, shunning both the distinction of persons wherein *Nestorius* went awry, and also this later confusion of natures which deceiued *Eutyches*. These natures from the moment of their first combination haue beene and are for euer inseparable. For euen when his soule forsooke the Tabernacle of his Body, his Deitie forsooke neither Body nor Soule. If it had, then could we not truely hold either that the person of Christ was buried, or that the person of Christ did raise vp it selfe from the dead. For the Body separated from the Word, can in no true sense be termed the person of Christ; nor is it true, to say that the Sonne of God in raising vp that Body did raise vp himselfe, if the Body were not both with him and of him, euen during the time it lay in the Sepulchre. The like is also to be said of the Soule, otherwise wee are plainly and inexcusably *Nestorians*. The very person of Christ therefore for euer one and the selfe-same, was only touching bodily substance concluded within the Graue, his Soule onely from thence seuered, diuinly personall vnion, his Deitie still vnseparably ioyned with both.

a Κεχώρισται γὰρ τοῦτο τοῦ σώματος ἔλεγε. τὸν δὲλόγον φύσιν ἀμεταβλήτον καὶ τὸν αὐτὸν καὶ τοῦ τάφου. Theodor. Dial. Amoibic.

This by the vnion of the one with the other nature in Christ, there groweth neyther gaine nor losse of essentiall properties to either.

53 The sequell of which coniunction of natures in the person of Christ, is no abolishment of naturall properties appertayning to either substance, no transition or transmigration thereof out of one substance into another, finally, no such mutuall infusion as really causeth the same naturall operations or properties to be made common vnto both substances; but whatsoeuer is naturall to Deitie, the same remayneth in Christ vncommunicated vnto his Manhood, & whatsoeuer naturall to Manhood, his Deitie thereof is vncapable. The true properties and operations of his Deitie are, to know that which is not possible for *created natures* to comprehend: to bee simply the highest cause of all things, the well-spring of immortality & life, to haue neither end nor beginning of dayes: to be euery-where present, and inclosed no where, to be subiect to no alteration nor passion; to produce of it selfe those effects which cannot proceed but from infinite Maiestie and power. The true properties and operations of his Manhood are such, as b *Irenæus* reckoneth vp, *If Christ* (saith hee) *had not taken flesh from the very earth, he would not haue coueted those earthly nourishments wherewith bodies which be taken from thence are fed. This was the nature which felt hunger after long fasting, was desirous of rest after trauaile, testified compassion and loue by teares, groned in heauinesse, and with extremitie of griefe euen melted away it selfe into bloudie sweates.* To Christ wee ascribe both working of Wonders and suffering of paines, wee vse concerning him, speeches as well of Humiltie as of Diuine Glory, but the one we apply vnto that nature which he tooke of the Virgine *Mary*, the other to that which was in the beginning. We may not therefore imagine that the properties of the weaker nature haue vanished with the presence of the more glorious, and haue bin therein swallowed vp as in a Gulfe. We dare not in this point giue eare to them, who ouer-boldly affirme, that c *The nature which Christ took weak & feeble from vs by being mingled with deity, became the same which deity is, that the assumption of our substance vnto his, was like the blending of a drop of vineger with the huge Ocean, wherin although it continue still, yet not with those properties which seuered it hath, because sithence the instant of their coniunction, all distinction & difference of the one from the other is extinct, & whatsoeuer we can now conceiue of the Son of God, is nothing*

b Ταῦτα οὖν ἐξ ἀνθρώπου σαρκὸς τὰ τοιαῦτα γὰρ ἐπιδέχεται τὰ ἐκ γῆς ἐμψυόμενα. Irenæus lib. 3. aduers. hæres.

Christ did all these, ἀνθρωπικῶς τοῦ ἀνθρωπείου πάθους. Greg. Nazian. orat. 2. de filio. τοὺς μὲν ταπεινοὺς λόγους τῇ ἐκ Μαρίας ἀνθρωπότητι, τοὺς δὲ ὑψηλοτέρους τῇ θεότητι ἀφορίζων. Theodor. Dial. ἀσύγχυτ.

c Greg. Nyss. Epist. ad Theophil. Alexandr.

elſe but meere Deity, which words are ſo plaine & direct for *Eutyches*, that I ſtand in doubt they are not his whole name they carry. Sure I am, they are farre from truth, and muſt of neceſſitie giue place to the better aduiſed ſentences of other men. *He which in himſelfe was appointed* (ſaith HILARIE) *a Mediator to ſaue his Church, and for performance of that my ſtery of meditation betweene God and Man, is become God & Man, doth now, being but one, conſiſt of both thoſe natures vnited, neither hath he through the vnion of both incurred the damage or loſſe of either, leſt by being borne a Man, we ſhould thinke he hath giuen ouer to be God, or that becauſe he continueth God, therefore he cannot be Man alſo, whereas the true beliefe which maketh a man happy, proclaimeth iointly God and Man, confeſſeth the Word and Fleſh together.* CYRIL more plainely, *b His two natures haue knit themſelues the one to the other, and are in that vnion reuniſſe as vncapable of confuſion as of diſtraction. Their coherence hath not taken away the difference betweene them. Fleſh is not become God, but doth ſtill continue fleſh, although it be now the fleſh of God. Yea, of each ſubſtance* (ſaith c LEO) *the proprities are all preſerued and kept ſafe.* Theſe two natures are as cauſes and originall grounds of all things which Chriſt hath done. Wherefore ſome things he doth as God, becauſe his Deitie alone is the well-ſpring from which they flow; ſome things as Man, becauſe they iſſue from his meere humane nature; ſome things ioyndly as both God and Man, becauſe both natures concurre as principles thereunto. For albeit the properties of each nature do cleaue onely to that nature whereof they are properties, and therefore Chriſt cannot *naturally be* as God, the ſame which he *naturally is* as Man, yet both natures may very well concurre vnto *one effect*, and Chriſt in that reſpect be truely ſaid to *worke* both as God and as Man, one and the ſelfe ſame thing. Let vs therefore ſet it downe for a rule or principle ſo neceſſary, as nothing more to the plaine deciding of all doubts and queſtions about the vnion of natures in Chriſt, that of both natures there is a *cooperation* often, an *aſſociation* alwayes, but neuer any mutuall *participation*, whereby the properties of the one are infuſed into the other. Which rule muſt ſerue for the better vnderſtanding of that which d *Damaſcene* hath touching groſſe and circularie ſpeeches, wherein there are attributed to God ſuch things as belong to Manhood, and to Man ſuch as properly concerne the Deitie of Chriſt Ieſus, the cauſe whereof is the *aſſociation* of natures in one ſubiect. A kind of mutuall commutation there is, whereby thoſe concrete names, *God*, and *Man*, when we ſpeake of *Chriſt*, doe take interchangeably one anothers roome, ſo that for truth of ſpeech it skilleth not whether we ſay, that the Sonne of God hath created the world, and the Sonne of man by his death hath ſaued it, or elſe that the Sonne of man did create, and the Sonne of God die to ſaue the world. Howbeit, as oft as we attribute to God what the Man-hood of Chriſt claimeth, or to man what his Deitie hath right vnto, we vnderſtand by the name of God, and the name of Man, neither the one nor the other nature, but the whole perſon of Chriſt in whom both natures are. When the Apoſtle ſhith of the Iewes, that they crucified the Lord of glorie, and when the Sonne of Man, being on earth, affirmeth, that the Sonne of Man was in heauen at the ſame inſtant, there is in theſe two ſpeeches that mutuall circulation before mentioned. In the one there is attributed to God, or the e Lord of glorie, death, whereof diuine nature is not capable; in the other

a *Hilar. de Trin. lib. 9.*

b *Cyrr. Epiſt. ad Neſt.*

c *Salua proprietate vtriuſque naturæ, ſuſcepta eſt à miſeratione humilitas, à virtute infirmitas, ab æternitate mortalitas.* Leo Epiſt. ad Flauian.

d Οὐ γὰρ ἴσον ἐστὶ τὸ τρόπους τῆς ἀνθρωπότητος ἐκφῆναι μόνους τὸ ἴδιον, καὶ τὸ τῆς θεότητος ἀνυπέρβλητον, καὶ τὸ ἐν ἀμφοτέροις συμπαθὲς, Damaſc. de Orthod. fid. lib. 3. c. 4. *Verum eſt duarum in Chriſto naturarum, alterius ſuas alteris proprietates imperite enunciando videlicet, idque non in abſtracto ſed in concreto ſolum, diuinas hominis non humanitati, humanas non Deitati ſed Deo tribui. Cuius hæc eſt ratio, quia cum ſuppoſitum prædicationis ſit eiuſmodi vt ſy nonymi nomen in ſe contineat, ſiue ab vna, ſiue ab vtraque natura ſit impoſitum, ad totum nomen illud referri.*

e *1 Cor. 2. 8.*

other vbiquitie vnto [a] Man, which humane nature admiteth not. Therefore by the Lord of glorie we muſt needs vnderſtand the whole perſon of Chriſt, who being Lord of glory, was indeed crucified, but not in that nature for which he is termed the Lord of glory. In like maner, by the Sonne of Man the whole perſon of Chriſt muſt neceſſarily be meant, who being man vpon earth, filled heauen with his glorious preſence, but not according to that nature for which the title of man is giuen him. Without this caution the Fathers, whoſe beliefe was ſincere and their meaning moſt ſound, ſhall ſeeme in their writings one to deny what another conſtantly doth affirme. *Theodoret* diſputeth with great earneſtneſſe, that *God* cannot be ſaid to ſuffer. But he thereby meaneth Chriſts *diuine nature* againſt [b] *Apollinarius*, which held euen Deitie it ſelfe paſſible. *Cyril* on the other ſide againſt *Neſtorius* as much commendeth, that whoſoeuer will deny *very God* to haue ſuffered death, doth forſake the faith. Which notwithſtanding to hold, were hereſie, if the name of God in this aſſertion did not import as it doth the perſon of Chriſt, who being verily God, ſuffered death, but in the fleſh, and not in that ſubſtance for which the name of God is giuen him.

a *Iohn* 3. 13.

b Sworlus τὸ ἰδιάζον τῆς θεότητος affirmat. Theodoret. Greg. Nyſſ. de ſect. Apollinar. Epiſt. ad Flauia.

What Chriſt hath obtained according to the fleſh, by the vnion of his Fleſh with Deitie.

34 If then both natures doe remaine with their properties in Chriſt thus diſtinct as hath beene ſhewed, we are for our better vnderſtanding what either nature receiueth from other, to note, that Chriſt is by three degrees a receiuer, firſt, in that he is the Sonne of God: ſecondly, in that his humane nature hath had the honour of vnion with Deitie beſtowed vpon it: thirdly, in that by meanes thereof ſundrie eminent graces haue flowed as effects from Deitie into that nature which is coupled with it. On Chriſt therefore there is beſtowed the gift of eternall Generation, the gift of vnion, and the gift of vnction. By the gift of eternall Generation Chriſt hath receiued of the Father one and in number the [c] ſelfe-ſame ſubſtance, which the Father hath of himſelfe vnreceiued from any other. For euery [d] *beginning is a Father* vnto that which commeth of it; and euery *off-ſpring is a Sonne* vnto that out of which it groweth. Seeing therefore the Father alone is [e] originally that Deitie which Chriſt [f] originally is not (for Chriſt is God [g] by being of God, light [h] by iſſuing out of light) it followeth [i] hereupon, that whatſoeuer Chriſt hath [k] common vnto him with his heauenly Father, the ſame of neceſſitie muſt be *giuen* him, but naturally and [l] eternally giuen, not beſtowed by way of benefite and fauour, as the other gifts both are. And therefore [m] where the Fathers giue it out for a rule, that whatſoeuer Chriſt is ſaid in Scripture to haue

c *Vtriuſq; Dei non poteſt non eſſe ex quo profiſcatur natura. Nec quia filius quibus Deus ſubſiſtit, ea non eſſe de quibus ex Deo Deus ſubſiſtat.* Hilar. de Trinit. lib. 5. *Eam ſit gloria, ſimilitudinis, virtutis, regni, ſacramenti hoc quod pater eſt, omnia habeat hoc ipſum filius dicitur filius eſſe, ſed patre exiſtente filius non habet ex aquitate habere.* Ruffin. in Symb. Apoſt. c. 9. *Filium dicendo non dicimus, ſed de ſubſtantia patris natum à patre conſecratum profitemur.* Tertull. contra Prax. d *Ibid.* c. 12. *Pater hominum dei vel omnium conditor, Pachym. in Dionyſ. de Cœl. Hierar. cap. 1. Pater eſt principium totius diuinitatis quia ipſe à nullo eſt. Nam enim habet de quo prædicat, ſed ab eo & filius eſt genitus, & Spiritus ſanctus procedit.* Aug. de Trin. l. 4. c. 20. *Hinc Chriſtus deitatis loco nomen habet, patris vſurpat, quia pater nomen eſt originis & auctoritatis.* f *Pater tota ſubſtantia eſt, filius vero derivatio totius & propagatio.* Tertul. contra Prax. g *Quod enim Deus eſt, ex Deo eſt.* Hilar. de Trin. lib. 5. *Nihil niſi natum habet filius.* Hilar. lib. 4. h Ἀπόρροια φωτὸς. Heb. 1. 3. Ἔστι δύναμις τοῦ θεοῦ ἀπορροὴ τῆς τοῦ παντοκράτορος δόξης εἰλικρινής. Sap. 7. 25, 26. i *Nihil in ſe diuerſum aut diſſimile habet natus de genitore.* Hilar. de Synod. aduerſ. Arri. *In Trinitate aliud neque aliud, non aliud atque aliud.* Vincent. Lyr. c. 19. k *Vbi autem aliquid non eſt de & naturaliter æternum eſt: quia filius naturaliter habet quidquid habet de patre & ab æterno habere æterna nascentia eſt.* Hilar. de Trin. lib. 12. *Sicut natiuitatem profitetur filius ſine initio genitus eſt: ita Spiritus ſanctus profitetur ſine initio procedit.* Aug. de Trin. lib. 5. cap. 15. l Ὅσα ἔχει ὁ γεννήσας ὑπὲρ ἐκείνου ἐστὶ καὶ ὁ γεννηθείς. Ἃ δὲ ἐκεῖνος ἔχει ἀγέννητα, ταῦτα καὶ ὁ γεννηθεὶς ἔχει ἀγέννητα, ἀλλὰ γεννητῶς. Theodoret. fol. 40. & ex Gregor. Nazian. Orat. 2. de fil. fol. 22.

haue *receiued*, the ſame wee ought to apply onely to the Man-hood of Chriſt: their Aſſertion is true of all things which Chriſt hath receiued *by grace*, but to that which he hath receiued of the Father by eternall natiuitie or birth, it reacheth not. Touching vnion of Deitie with Man-hood, it is by grace, becauſe there can be no greater grace ſhewed towards man, then that God ſhould vouchſafe to vnite to mans nature the Perſon of his onely begotten Sonne. Becauſe the Father [a] loueth the Sonne as Man, he hath by vniting Deitie with Man-hood, *giuen* all things into his hands. It hath [b] *pleaſed* the Father that in him all fulneſſe ſhould dwell. The name which he hath aboue all names is [c] *giuen* him. As the Father hath life in himſelfe, the Sonne in himſelfe hath life alſo by the [d] *gift* of the Father. The gift whereby God hath made Chriſt a Fountaine of life, is, that [e] *coniunction of the nature of God with the nature of Man*, in the perſon of Chriſt, [f] *which gift* (ſaith Chriſt to the Woman of Samaria) if thou didſt know, and in *that reſpect* vnderſtand *who it is*, which asketh water of thee, thou wouldeſt aske of him, that he might giue thee liuing Water. The vnion therefore of the Fleſh with Deitie, is to *that fleſh* a gift of principall grace and fauour. For by vertue of this grace, Man is really made God, a creature is exalted aboue the dignitie of all creatures, and hath all creatures elſe vnder it. This admirable vnion of God with Man, can inforce in that higher nature [g] no alteration, becauſe vnto God there is nothing more naturall then not to bee ſubiect to any change. Neither is it a thing impoſſible, that the Word being made Fleſh, ſhould be that which it was not before, as touching the manner of ſubſiſtence, and yet continue in all qualities or properties of nature the ſame it was, becauſe the Incarnation of the Sonne of God conſiſteth *meerely in the vnion* of Natures, which vnion doth adde perfection to the Weaker, to the Nobler no alteration at all. If therefore it be demanded what the perſon of the Sonne of God hath attayned by aſſuming Man-hood, ſurely, the whole ſumme of all is this, to be as we are truely, really, and naturally man, by meanes whereof he is made capable of meaner offices, then otherwiſe his perſon could haue admitted, the onely gaine he thereby purchaſed for himſelfe, was to be capable of loſſe and detriment for the good of others. But may it rightly be ſaid concerning the Incarnation of Ieſus Chriſt, that as our nature hath in no reſpect changed his, ſo from his to ours as little alteration hath inſued? The very cauſe of his taking vpon him our nature, was to change it, to better the qualitie, and to aduance the condition thereof, although in no ſort to aboliſh the ſubſtance which he tooke, nor to infuſe into it the naturall forces and properties of his Deitie. As therefore we haue ſhewed how the Sonne of God by his Incarnation hath changed the manner of that perſonall ſubſiſtence which before was ſolitarie, and is now in the aſſociation of fleſh, no alteration thereby accruing to the nature of God; ſo neither are the *properties of mans nature*, in the perſon of Chriſt, by force and vertue of the ſame coniunction ſo much altered, as not to ſtay within thoſe limits which our ſubſtance is bordered withall; nor the *ſtate and qualitie* of our ſubſtance ſo vnaltered, but that there are in it many glorious effects proceeding from ſo neere copulation with Deitie. God from vs can receiue nothing, we by him

a *Iohn* 3. 35.
b *Ephes.* 1. 5.
c *Phil.* 2.
d *Iohn* 5. 26.
e 1. *Iohn* 5. 20. Hic eſt verus Deus, & vita æterna.
f *Iohn* 4. 10.
g
Theod. Dial. Αγρωστος. Particulam ſibi tuis ſui Deo nullam eſſe. Tertul. de Carn. Chriſt. Leo de Natiu. Ser. 8. Nihil ſibi abſtulit.
Phil. In formam ſerui transfiſſa non eſt natura ſua. Deo Hilar. de Trin. lib. 12.

him haue obtained much. For albeit the naturall properties of Deitie bee not communicable to mans nature, the ſupernaturall gifts, graces, and effects thereof are. The honour which our fleſh hath by being the fleſh of the Sonne of God, is in many reſpects great. If we reſpect but that which is common vnto vs with him, the glory prouided for him and his in the Kingdome of heauen, his Right and Title thereunto euen in that he is man, differeth from other mens, becauſe he is that man of whom God is himſelfe a part. We haue right to the ſame inheritance with Chriſt, but not the ſame right which he hath, his being ſuch as we cannot reach, and ours ſuch as he cannot ſtoupe vnto. Furthermore, to be the Way, the Truth, and the Life; to be the Wiſedome, Righteouſneſſe, Sanctification, Reſurrection; to be the Peace of the whole world, the Hope of the righteous, the Heire of all things; to be that ſupreme Head whereunto all power both in heauen and in earth is giuen; theſe are not honours common vnto Chriſt with other men, they are Titles aboue the dignitie and worth of any which were but a meere man, yet true of Chriſt euen in that he is man, but Man with whom Deitie is perſonally ioyned, and vnto whom it hath added thoſe excellencies which make him more then worthy thereof. Finally, ſith God hath deified our nature, though not by turning it into himſelfe, yet by making it his owne inſeparable habitation, we cannot now conceiue how God ſhould without man either [a] exercise diuine power, or receiue the glorie of diuine praiſe. For Man is in [b] both an aſſociate of Deitie. But to come to the grace of *vnction*, did the parts of our nature the Soule and Body of Chriſt receiue by the influence of Deitie, where-with they were matcht, no abilitie of operation, no vertue or qualitie aboue nature? Surely, as the ſword which is made fierie, doth not onely cut by reaſon of the ſharpneſſe which ſimply it hath, but alſo burne by meanes of that heate which it hath from fire; ſo there is no doubt, but the Deitie of Chriſt hath inabled that nature which it tooke of man, to doe more then man in this world hath power to comprehend, for as much as (the bare eſſentiall properties of Deitie excepted) he hath imparted vnto it all things, he hath repleniſht it with all ſuch perfections as the ſame is any way apt to receiue, [c] at the leaſt, according to the exigence of that œconomie or ſeruice, for which it pleaſed him in loue and mercie to be made man. For as the parts, degrees, and offices of that myſticall adminiſtration did require, which he voluntarily vndertooke, the beames of Deitie did in operation alwayes accordingly either [d] reſtraine or inlarge themſelues. From hence we may ſomewhat coniecture, how the powers of that Soule are illuminated which being ſo inward vnto God, cannot chooſe but be priuie vnto all things which God worketh, and muſt therfore of neceſſitie be indued with knowledge ſo farre forth [e] vniuerſall, though not with infinite knowledge peculiar to Deitie it ſelfe. The Soule of Chriſt that ſaw in this life the face of God, was here, through ſo viſible preſence of Deitie, filled with all manner [f] graces and vertues in that vnmatchable degree of perfection, for which of him we read it written, that God with the Oile of gladneſſe anointed [g] him [h] aboue his [i] fellowes. And as God hath in Chriſt vnſpeakeably glorified the Nobler, ſo likewiſe

[a] Μετέχειν ἀνθρωπίνης τῆς θεϊκῆς ἰσχύος, Theod.
[b] ἡ πρὸς τὸν θεὸν ἑνότης τὴν ἀνθρωπίνην φύσιν εἰς τιμὴν ἀνήγαγε, καὶ τὸν ἐξ ἡμῶν ἀνάρχως ἐν τῷ πατρὶ ὑπάρχοντα, οὐκ ἂν τὸν ἐνοίκησιν ἐφ' ἑαυτὸν ἀνθρωπον εἰς τὸ ἴδιον ἀπελαλήκοτες διὰ τῆς ἐνώσεως. Greg. Nyſſ. Apud Theod. Ἀφ' ἧς φύσεως τῶν εἰς λαβὴν ἀναγκαίων ἐφοδίων ἐνδεὴς οὐδεὶς ἐστιν ἀρετῆς ἢ ἐξουσίας, Chry. in Pſal. 41.
[c] Luc. 2. 17. Ἀλλ' ὅσον ἐπιδέχεται τὸ λόγος τῆς οἰκονομίας καὶ συγκαταβάσεως, συγκαταβαίνει καὶ τῆς ἀνθρωπίνης ἐν τῷ σπαργάνῳ καὶ φάτνῃ καὶ ἀσθενείᾳ καὶ χρείαις καὶ δεήσεσι καὶ ἱκετηρίαις. Theodoret. & Iren. lib. 3. adverſ. hæreſ. Matth. 27. 46.
[d] Col. 2. 3.
[e] Iſa. 11. 2.
[f] Iſa. 61. 1. Luc. 4. 18. Act. 4. 27. [h] Heb. 1. 9. [i] 2. Cor. 1. 21. 1. Ioh. 2. 20, 27.

likewiſe the meaner part of our nature, the very bodily ſubſtance of man. Where alſo that muſt againe be remembred which we noted before, concerning degrees of the influence of Deitie proportionable vnto his owne purpoſes, intents and counſels. For in this reſpect his body which by naturall condition was corruptible, wanted the gift of euerlaſting immunitie from death, paſſion, and diſſolution, till God which gaue it to be ſlaine for ſinne, had for righteouſneſſe ſake reſtored it to life with certaintie of endleſſe continuance. Yea, in this reſpect the very glorified Body of Chriſt retained in it the skarres and markes of former mortalitie. But ſhall we ſay, that in heauen his glorious Body by vertue of the ſame cauſe, hath now power to preſent it ſelfe in all places, and to be euery where at once preſent? We nothing doubt, but God hath many wayes aboue the reach of our capacities exalted that Body which it hath pleaſed him to make his owne, that Body wherewith he hath ſaued the world, that Body which hath beene and is the roote of eternall Life, the Inſtrument wherewith Deitie worketh, the Sacrifice which taketh away ſinne, the Price which hath ranſomed Soules from death, the Leader of the whole Army of bodies that ſhall riſe againe. For though it had a beginning from vs, yet God hath giuen it vitall efficacie, heauen hath indowed it with celeſtiall power, that vertue it hath from aboue, in regard whereof all the Angels of heauen adore it. Notwithſtanding, [b] a Body ſtill it continueth, a Body conſubſtantiall with our bodies, a Body of the ſame both nature and meaſure which it had on earth. To gather therefore into one ſumme all that hitherto hath beene ſpoken touching this point, there are but foure things which concurre to make complete the whole ſtate of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt; his Deitie, his Manhood, the coniunction of both, and the diſtinction of the one from the other being ioyned in one. Foure principall Hereſies there are which haue in thoſe things withſtood the truth; *Arrians*, by bending themſelues againſt the Deitie of Chriſt; *Apollinarians*, by maiming and miſinterpreting that which belongeth to his humane nature; *Neſtorians*, by rending Chriſt aſunder, and diuiding him into two perſons; the followers of *Eutiches*, by confounding in his perſon thoſe natures which they ſhould diſtinguiſh. Againſt theſe there haue beene foure moſt famous ancient generall Councells, the Councell of *Nice* to define againſt *Arrians*, againſt *Apollinarians* the Councell of *Conſtantinople*, the Councell of *Epheſus* againſt *Neſtorians*, againſt *Eutichians* the *Calcedon* Councell. In foure words, ἀτρέπτως, τελείως, ἀδιαιρέτως, ἀσυγχύτως, *truely*, *perfectly*, *indiuiſibly*, *diſtinctly*, the firſt apply to his being God, and the ſecond to his being Man, the third to his being of both One, and the fourth to his ſtill continuing in that One both, we may fully by way of abridgement comprize whatſoeuer antiquitie hath at large handled, either in declaration of Chriſtian beliefe, or in refutation of the foreſaid hereſies. Within the compaſſe of which foure heads, I may truely affirme, that all Hereſies which touch but the perſon of Ieſus Chriſt, whether they haue riſen in theſe later dayes, or in any Age heretofore, may be with great facilitie brought to confine themſelues. We conclude therefore, that to ſaue the World, it was of neceſſitie the Sonne of God ſhould bee thus incarnate, and that God ſhould ſo bee in Chriſt as hath beene declared.

a Iohn 20. 27.

b Μετὰ τὴν ἀνάστασιν ὁ Δεσπότης μὲν ἦν ὁ αὐτὸς, ἐδείκνυτο δὲ καὶ ἐσθίων, καὶ ἅπτεσθαι παρεῖχε τοῖς μαθηταῖς, σώματος ἦν ἴδιον τὸ ἀναστὰν τὸν ἐκ νεκρῶν. Theod. lib. 5.

55 Hauing

Of the perſonall preſence of Chriſt euery-where, and in what ſenſe it may be granted he is euery-where preſent according to the fleſh.

55 Having thus farre proceeded in ſpeech concerning the perſon of Ieſus Chriſt, his two natures, their coniunction, that which he either is or doth in reſpect of both, and that which the one receiueth from the other; ſith God in Chriſt is generally the medicine which doth cure the world, and Chriſt in vs is that receit of the ſame medicine, whereby we are euery one particularly cured; in as much as Chriſts Incarnation and Paſſion can be auailable to no mans good which is not made partaker of Chriſt, neither can we participate him without his preſence, we are briefly to conſider how Chriſt is preſent, to the end it might thereby better appeare how we are made partakers of Chriſt both other wiſe and in the Sacraments themſelues. All things are in ſuch ſort diuided into finite and infinite, that no one ſubſtance, eſſence, or qualitie, can be poſſibly capable of both. The world and all things in the world are finited, all effects that proceed from them, all the powers and abilities whereby they worke, whatſoeuer they doe, whatſoeuer they may, and whatſoeuer they are, is limited. Which limitation of each creature is both the perfection and alſo the preſeruation thereof. Meaſure is that which perfecteth all things, becauſe euery thing is for ſome end, neither can that thing be auailable to any end which is not proportionable thereunto, and to proportion as well exceſſes as defects, are oppoſite. Againe, for as much as nothing doth periſh but onely through exceſſe or defect of that, the due proportioned meaſure whereof deſtroyes perfection, it followeth that meaſure is likewiſe the preſeruation of all things. Out of which premiſes we may conclude, not only that nothing created can poſſibly be valimited, or can receiue any ſuch accident, qualitie, or propertie, as may really make it infinite (for then ſhould it ceaſe to be a creature) but alſo that euery creatures limitation is according to his owne kind, and therefore as oft as we note in them any thing aboue their kind, it argueth that the ſame is not properly theirs, but groweth in them from a cauſe more powerfull then they are. Such as the ſubſtance of each thing is, ſuch is alſo the preſence thereof. Impoſſible it is that God ſhould withdraw his preſence from any thing, becauſe the very ſubſtance of God is infinite. Hee filleth heauen and earth, although hee take vp no roome in either, becauſe his ſubſtance is immateriall, pure, and of vs in this world ſo incomprehenſible, that albeit [a] no part of vs be euer abſent from him, who is preſent whole vnto euerie particular thing, yet his preſence with vs wee no way diſcerne further then onely that God is preſent, which partly by reaſon, and more perfectly by Faith we know to be firme and certaine. Seeing therefore that preſence euery-where is the ſequele of an infinite and incomprehenſible ſubſtance, (for what can be euery-where, but that which can no where be comprehended?) to inquire whether Chriſt be euery-where, is to inquire of a naturall propertie, a propertie that cleaueth to the Deitie of Chriſt. Which Deitie being common vnto him with none, but only the Father and the Holy Ghoſt, it followeth that nothing of Chriſt which is limited, that nothing created, that neither the Soule nor the Body of Chriſt, and conſequently, not Chriſt as man, or Chriſt according to his humane nature, can poſſibly be euery where preſent, becauſe thoſe phraſes of limitation and reſtraint doe either point out the principall ſubiect whereunto euery ſuch attribute adhereth,

or

a Pſal.139.7,8. Ieremi.23.24.

b Ideo Deus vbique eſſe dicitur, quia nulli parti rerum abſens eſt; ideo totus quia non parti rerum partem ſui preſentem præbet, ſed alteri parti, alteram partem, ſed non ſibi omni creaturæ totus vniuerſitati creaturæ, verum etiam cuilibet parti eius totus pariter adeſt. Auguſt. Epiſt. 57.

or elſe they intimate the radicall cauſe out of which it groweth. For Example, when wee ſay that Chriſt as man, or according to his humane nature ſuffered death, we ſhew what nature was the proper ſubiect of mortalitie; when wee ſay that as God, or according to his Deitie he conquered death, we declare his Deitie to haue beene the cauſe, by force and vertue whereof hee rayſed himſelfe from the Graue. But neither is the Manhood of Chriſt that ſubiect whereunto vniuerſall preſence agreeth, neither is it the cauſe originall by force whereof his Perſon is inabled to be euery-where preſent. Wherefore Chriſt is eſſencially preſent with all things, in that hee is very God, but not preſent with all things as man, becauſe Manhood and the parts thereof can neither bee the cauſe nor the true ſubiect of ſuch preſence. Notwithſtanding, ſomewhat more plainely to ſhew a true immediate reaſon wherefore the Manhood of Chriſt can neither be euery-where preſent, nor cauſe the perſon of Chriſt ſo to be, we acknowledge that of Saint *Auguſtine* concerning Chriſt moſt true, [a] *in that hee is perſonally the Word, he created all things, in that hee is naturally man, he himſelfe is created of God*, and it doth not appeare that any one creature hath power to be preſent with all creatures. Whereupon, neuertheleſſe it will not follow that Chriſt cannot therefore bee thus preſent, becauſe hee is himſelfe a creature, for as much as onely infinite preſence is that which cannot poſſibly ſtand with the eſſence or being of any creature, as for preſence with all things that are, ſith the whole race, maſſe, and body of them is finite, Chriſt by being a *creature*, is not *in that reſpect* excluded from poſſibilitie of preſence with them. That which excludeth him therfore as man from ſo great largeneſs of preſence, is only the being *man*, a creature *of this particular kinde*, whereunto the God of Nature hath ſet thoſe bounds of reſtraint and limitation, beyond which to attribute vnto it any thing more then a creature *of that ſort* can admit, were to giue it another nature, to make it a creature of ſome other kinde then in truth it is. Furthermore if Chriſt in that he is man be euery-where preſent, ſeeing this commeth not by the nature of Manhood it ſelfe, there is no other way how it ſhould grow but either by the grace of vnion with Deitie, or by the grace of vnction receiued from Deitie. It hath beene alreadie ſufficiently prooued, that by force of vnion the properties of both natures are imparted *to the perſon onely* in whom they are, and not what belongeth to the one nature really conueyed or tranſlated into the other; it hath beene likewiſe prooued, that natures vnited in Chriſt continue the very ſame which they are where they are not vnited. And concerning the grace of vnction, wherein are contayned the gifts and vertues which Chriſt as man hath aboue men, they make him really and habitually a man more excellent then we are, they take not from him the nature and ſubſtance that wee haue, they cauſe not his ſoule nor bodie to bee of another kinde then ours is. Supernall endowments are an aduancement, they are no extinguiſhment of that nature whereto they are giuen. The ſubſtance of the body of Chriſt hath no preſence, neither can haue but onely ſcituall. It was not therfore euery-where ſeen, nor did it euery-where ſuffer death, euery-where it could not be intombed, it is not euery-where now being exalted into heauen. There is no proofe in the world ſtrong to inforce that Chriſt had a glorious bodie, but by the true and naturall properties of his bodie [illegible] among which properties,

[a] *Quod ad verbum attinet, Creator eſt; quod ad hominem creatura eſt* Aug. Epiſt. 17. *Deus qui ſemper eſt & ſemper erat, ſit creatura.* Leo de Natiu. *Multi timore trepidant ne Chriſtum eſſe creaturam dicere completlantur. Nos proclamamus non eſſe periculum dicere Chriſtum eſſe creaturam.* Hieron. in Epiſt. ad Epheſ. 3.

ties definite or locall preſence is chiefe, [a] *How is it true of Chriſt* (ſaith *Tertullian*) *that he dyed, was buried, and roſe againe, if Chriſt had not that very fleſh, the nature whereof is capable of theſe things, fleſh mingled with blood, ſupported with bones, woouen with ſinewes, imbrodered with veines?* If his Maieſticall Body haue now any ſuch new propertie, by force whereof it may euery-where really euen in ſubſtance preſent it ſelfe, or may at once be in many places, then hath the Maieſtie of his eſtate extinguiſhed the veritie of his nature. [b] *Make thou no doubt or queſtion of it* (ſaith S. *Auguſtine*) *but that the man Chriſt Ieſus is now in that very place from whence he ſhall come in the ſame forme and ſubſtance of fleſh, which hee carried thither, and from which he hath not taken nature, but giuen thereunto immortality. According to that forme he ſpreadeth not out himſelfe into all places. For it behoueth vs to take great heed, leſt while we goe about to maintaine the glorious Deity of him which is man, wee leaue him not the true bodily ſubſtance of a man.* According to S. *Auguſtines* opinion therefore that Maieſticall body which wee make to be euery-where preſent, doth thereby ceaſe to haue the ſubſtance of a true bodie. To conclude, we hold it in regard of the fore-alleaged proofes a moſt infallible Truth, that Chriſt as man is not euery-where preſent. There are which thinke it as infallibly true, that Chriſt is euery-where preſent as man, which peraduenture in ſome ſenſe may be well enough granted. His humane ſubſtance in it ſelfe is naturally abſent from the earth, his ſoule and bodie not on earth, but in heauen only. Yet becauſe this ſubſtance is inſeparably ioyned to that perſonall word which by his very diuine eſſence is preſent with all things, the nature which cannot haue in it ſelfe vniuerſal preſence, hath it *after a ſort* by being *no where ſeuered* from that which euery-where is preſent. For in as much as that infinite word is not diuiſible into parts, it could not in part, but muſt needs bee wholy incarnate, and conſequently whereſoeuer the word is, is hath with it Manhood, elſe ſhould the word be in part or ſomewhere God only, and not man, which is impoſſible. For the *perſon of Chriſt is whole*, perfect God and perfect man whereſoeuer, although the parts of his Man-hood being finite, and his Deity infinite, we cannot ſay that the *whole of Chriſt* is ſimply euery-where, as we may ſay that his Deity is, & that his perſon is by force of Deity. For *ſomewhat of the perſon* of Chriſt is not euery-where in that ſort, namely his manhood, the *only coniunction* whereof with Deity is extended as far as Deity, the actuall *poſition* reſtrayned and tyed to vncertaine place, yet preſence *by way of coniunction* is in ſome ſort preſence. Againe, as the manhood of Chriſt may after a ſort bee euery-where ſayd to bee preſent, becauſe that Perſon is euery-where preſent, from whoſe diuine ſubſtance Manhood no where is ſeuered: ſo the ſame Vniuerſalitie of preſence may likewiſe ſeeme in another reſpect applyable thereunto, namely; by *cooperation* with Deitie, and that *in all things*. The light created of God in the beginning did firſt by it ſelfe illuminate the World, but after that the Sunne and Moone were created, the World ſithence hath *by them* alwaies enioyed the ſame. And that Deity of Chriſt which before our Lords incarnation wrought all things without man, doth now worke nothing wherein the nature which it hath aſſumed is either abſent from it or idle. Chriſt as man hath [c] all power both in Heauen and Earth giuen him. He hath as man, not as God only, [d] ſupreme dominion ouer quicke and dead, for ſo much his aſcenſion into

[a] *Tertul. de car. Chriſt.*

[b] *Aug. Epiſt. 57*

[c] *Mat. 28.*

[d] *Rom. 14. 2.*

into Heauen and his ſeſſion at the right hand of God doe import. The Son of God which did firſt humble himſelfe by taking our fleſh vpon him, deſcended afterwards much lower, and became according to the fleſh obedient ſo far as to ſuffer death euen the death of the croſſe for all men, becauſe ſuch was his Fathers will. The former was an humiliation of deitie, the later an humiliation of Manhood, [a] for which cauſe followed vpon the later an exaltation of that which was humbled, for with power he created the World, but reſtored it by obedience. In which obedience as according to his Manhood he had glorified God on Earth, ſo God hath glorified in Heauen that nature which yeelded him obedience, and hath giuen vnto Chriſt euen in that he is man ſuch fulneſſe of power ouer the whole World, that he which before fulfilled in the ſtate of humilitie and patience whatſoeuer God did require, doth now [b] raigne in glorie till the time that all things be reſtored. Hee which came downe from Heauen, and deſcended into the loweſt parts of the Earth, is aſcended far aboue all Heauens, that ſitting at the right hand of God, hee might from thence fill all things with the gracious and happy fruits of his ſauing preſence. Aſcenſion into Heauen, is a plaine locall tranſlation of Chriſt according to his Manhood from the lower to the higher parts of the World. Seſſion at the right hand of God, is the actuall exerciſe of that Regencie and Dominion wherein the Manhood of Chriſt is ioyned and matched with the Deity of the Sonne of God. Not that his Manhood was before without the poſſeſſion of the ſame power, but becauſe the full vſe thereof was ſuſpended, till that humilitie which had bin before as a vaile to hide and conceale maieſtie were laid aſide. [c] After his riſing againe from the dead then did God ſet him at his right hand in heauenly places farre aboue all principalitie and power, and might, and domination, and euery name that is named not in this World only but alſo in that which is to come, and hath [d] put all things vnder his feet, & hath appointed him ouer all the head to the Church which is his body, the fulneſſe of him that filleth all in all. The [e] ſcepter of which ſpirituall Regiment ouer vs in this preſent World is at the length to bee yeelded vp into the hands of the Father which gaue it, that is to ſay, the vſe and exerciſe therof ſhall ceaſe, there being no longer on Earth any militant Church to gouerne. This gouernment therefore he exerciſeth both as God and as man; as God by eſſentiall preſence with all things; as man, by cooperation with that which eſſentially is preſent. Touching the manner how he worketh as man in all things, the principall powers of the ſoule of man are the will and vnderſtanding, the one of which two in Chriſt aſſenteth vnto all things, & from the other nothing which Deitie doth worke is hid, ſo that by knowledge and aſſent the ſoule of Chriſt is preſent with all things which the deity of Chriſt worketh. And euen the body of Chriſt it ſelfe, although the definite limitation thereof be moſt ſenſible, doth notwithſtanding admit in ſome ſort a kind of infinite and vnlimited preſence likewiſe. For his body being a part of that nature, which whole nature is preſently ioyned vnto deitie whereſoeuer deitie is, it followeth that his bodily ſubſtance hath euery-where a preſence of true coniunction with Deitie. And for as much as it is by vertue of that coniunction made the bodie of the Sonne of God, by whom alſo it was made a Sacrifice for the ſinne of the whole world, this giueth it a *preſence of force & efficacie* throughout al generations of

a *Phil.2.9. Heb 2.9. Reuel.5.12.*

b *Luke 21.27. Acts 1.11. Epheſ.4.9.*

c *Epheſ.1.2.*

d *Pſal.8.6. Heb.2.8.*

e *1.Cor.15.*

men. Albeit therefore nothing be *actually* infinite *in ſubſtance*, but God onely in that he is God, neuertheleſſe as euery number is infinite by poſſibilitie of addition, and euery line by poſſibilitie of extenſion infinite, ſo there is no ſtint which can be ſet to the value or merit of the ſacrificed Body of Chriſt, it hath no meaſured certainty of limits, bounds of efficacie vnto life it knoweth none, but is alſo it ſelfe infinite in *poſſibility of application*. Which things indifferently euery way conſidered, that gracious promiſe of our Lord and Sauiour Ieſus Chriſt concerning preſence with his to the very end of the World, I ſee no cauſe but that we may well and ſafely interpret he doth performe both as God by eſſentiall preſence of Deitie, and as man in that order, ſenſe and meaning which hath beene ſhewed.

The vnion or mutuall participation which is betweene Chriſt and the Church of Chriſt in this preſent World.

56 We haue hitherto ſpoken of the perſon and of the preſence of Chriſt. Participation is that mutuall inward hold which Chriſt hath of vs, and wee of him, in ſuch ſort that each poſſeſſeth other by way of ſpeciall intereſt, propertie, and inherent copulation. For plainer explication whereof, wee may from that which hath beene before ſufficiently proued, aſſume to our purpoſe theſe two Principles, that *euery original cauſe imparteth it ſelfe vnto thoſe things which come of it, and whatſoeuer taketh being from any other, the ſame is after a ſort in that which giueth it being*. It followeth hereupon, that the Sonne of God being light of light, muſt needs bee alſo light [a] in light. The perſons of the Godhead, by reaſon of the vnitie of their ſubſtance, doe as neceſſarily remayne one within another, as they are of neceſſitie to bee diſtinguiſhed one from another, becauſe two are the iſſue of one, and one the offspring of the other two, onely of three one not growing out of any other. And ſith they all are but one God in number, one indiuiſible Eſſence or ſubſtance, their diſtinction cannot poſſibly admit Separation. For how ſhould that ſubſiſt *ſolitarily* by it ſelfe which hath no ſubſtance, but *indiuidually* the very ſame whereby others ſubſiſt with it; ſeeing that the Multiplication of ſubſtances *in particular* is neceſſarily required to make thoſe things ſubſiſt a-part, which haue the ſelfe-ſame generall Nature, and the perſons of that Trinitie are not three particular ſubſtances to whom one *generall* Nature is common, but three that ſubſiſt by one ſubſtance, *which in it ſelfe is particular*, yet they all three haue it, and their ſeuerall wayes of hauing it are that which maketh their perſonall diſtinction? The Father therefore is in the Sonne, and the Sonne in him, they both in the Spirit, and the Spirit in both them. So that the Fathers firſt Offſpring which is the Sonne, remayneth eternally in the Father; the Father eternally alſo in the Sonne, no way ſeuered or diuided by reaſon of the ſole and ſingle vnitie of their ſubſtance. The Sonne in the Father as light in that light, out of which it floweth without ſeparation; the Father in the Sonne as light in that light which cauſeth and leaueth not. And becauſe in this reſpect his eternall being is of the Father, which eternall being is his life, therefore hee by the Father liueth. Againe, ſith all things doe accordingly loue their Offſpring as themſelues are more or leſſe contayned in it, he which is thus the onely begotten, muſt needs bee in this degree the onely Beloued of the Father. Hee therefore which is in the Father by eternall deriuation of being and life from him, muſt needes bee

[a] In the boſome of the Father. 1. Iohn 1 18. *Ecce dico alium eſſe patrem & alium, filium; non diuiſione alium, ſed diſtinctione.* Tertul. Cont. Prax. *Nec in unum, quæ plurium deſinit incorporea generatio, nec in diuiſionem cadit, vbi qui naſcitur nequaquam à generante ſeparatur.* Ruſin. in Symbol.

bee in him through an eternall affection of loue. His Incarnation cauſeth him alſo as man to bee now in the Father, and the Father to bee in him. For in that hee is man, he receiueth Life from the Father as from the Fountaine of that euerliuing Deitie, which in the perſon of the Word hath combined it ſelfe with Manhood, and doth thereunto impart ſuch life as to no other Creature beſides him is communicated. In which conſideration likewiſe the [a] loue of the Father to wards him is more then it can bee toward any other, neyther can any attaine vnto that perfection of loue which he beareth towards his heauenly Father. Wherefore God is not ſo in any, nor any ſo in God as Chriſt, whether we conſider him as the perſonall Word of God, or as the naturall Sonne of man. All other things that are of God haue God in them and he them in himſelfe likewiſe. Yet becauſe their ſubſtance and his wholy differeth, their coheirence and communion either with him or amongſt themſelues is in no ſort like vnto that before mentioned. God hath his influence into the very Eſſence of all things, without which influence of Deity ſupporting them, their vtter annihilation could not chooſe but follow. Of him all things haue both receiued their firſt being and their continuance to be that which they are. All things are therefore partakers of God, they are his Off-ſpring, his influences in them, and the perſonall Wiſedome of God is for that very cauſe ſaid to excell in nimbleneſſe or agilitie, to [b] pearce into all intellectuall, pure and ſubtile ſpirits, to goe through all, and to reach vnto euery thing which is. Otherwiſe, how ſhould the ſame Wiſdome be that which ſupporteth, [c] beareth vp, and ſuſtayneth all? Whatſoeuer God doth worke, the hands of all three Perſons are ioyntly and equally in it, according to *the order of that connexion* whereby they each depend vpon other. And therefore albeit in that reſpect the Father be firſt, the Sonne next, the Spirit laſt and conſequently neereſt vnto euery effect which groweth from all three: nertheleſſe, they all being of one eſſence, are likewiſe all of one efficacie. Dare any man, vnleſſe hee bee ignorant altogether how inſeparable the Perſons of the Trinitie are, perſwade himſelfe that euery of them may haue their ſole and ſeuerall Poſſeſſions, or that [d] wee being not partakers of all, can haue fellowſhip with any one? The Father as Goodneſſe, the Sonne as Wiſedome, the Holy Ghoſt as Power, doe all concurre in euery particular, outwardly iſſuing from that one onely glorious Deitie which they all are. For that which mooueth God to worke is Goodneſſe, and that which ordereth his Worke is Wiſedome, and that which perfecteth his Worke is Power. All things which God in their times and ſeaſons hath brought forth, were eternally and before all times in God, as a worke vnbegun in the Artificer which afterward bringeth it vnto effect. Therefore whatſoeuer wee doe behold now in this preſent World, it was inwrapped within the bowels of diuine Mercie, written in the Booke of eternall Wiſedome, and held in the hands of Omnipotent Power, the firſt foundation of the World being as yet vnlayd. So that all things which God hath made are in that reſpect the [e] Off-ſpring of God, they are in him as effects in their higheſt cauſe, euen likewiſe actually in them, the aſſiſtance and influence of his Deitie is their life. Let heereunto ſauing efficacie bee added, and it bringeth forth a ſpe-

a 1 Ioh. 3. 1. d Ioh. 3. 34, 35. 5. 20. 10. 17. 14. 21. 23.
b Sap. 7. 23.
c Heb. 1. 3.
d Ioh. 14. 23.
e Act. 17. 28, 29. Ioh. 1. 4. 10. Iſay 40. 26.

ciall offspring amongst men, containing them to whom God hath himselfe given the gracious and amiable name of [a] Sonnes. Wee are by nature the Sonnes of *Adam*. When God created *Adam* hee created vs, and as many as are defended from *Adam*, haue in themselues the Roote out of which they spring. The Sonnes of God wee neither are all nor any one of vs otherwise then onely by grace and fauour. The Sonnes of God haue Gods owne naturall Sonne as a [b] second *Adam* from Heauen, whose Race and Progenie they are by Spirituall and Heauenly Birth. God therefore louing eternally his Sonne, hee must needs eternally [c] in him haue loued and preferred before all others them which are spiritually sithence descended and sprung out of him. These were in God as in their Seuiour, and not as in their Creator onely. It was the purpose of his *sauing* Goodnes, his *sauing* Wisdome, and his *sauing* Power which inclineth it selfe towards them. They which thus were in God eternally by their intended admission to life, haue by vocation or adoption God actually now in them, as the Artificer is in the Worke which his hand doth presently frame. Life as all other gifts and benefits groweth originally from the Father, and commeth not to vs but [d] by the Sonne, not by the Sonne to any of vs in particular but [e] through the Spirit. For this cause the Apostle wisheth to the Church of Corinth [e] the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, and the loue of God, and the fellowship of the Holy Ghost. Which three Saint *Peter* comprehendeth in one, [f] the *participation of diuine Nature*. Wee are therefore in God through Christ eternally according to that intent and purpose, whereby we were chosen to be made his in this present World before the World it selfe was made, wee are in God through the knowledge which is had of vs, and the loue which is borne towards vs from euerlasting. But in God wee actually are no longer then onely from the time of our actuall Adoption into the bodie of his true Church, into the fellowship of his Children. For his Church hee knoweth and loueth, so that they which are in the Church, are thereby knowne to bee in him. Our being in Christ by Eternall fore-knowledge, saueth vs not without our actuall and reall Adoption into the fellowship of his Saints in this present World. For in him we actually are by our actuall [g] incorporation into that societie which hath him for their head, and doth make together with him one bodie, (hee and they in that respect hauing [h] one name) for which cause by vertue of this Mysticall coniunction, wee are of him and in him, euen [i] as though our very flesh and bones should bee made continuate with his. Wee are in Christ, because hee [k] knoweth and loueth vs euen as parts of himselfe. No man actually is in him but they [l] in whom hee actually is. For he which hath not the Sonne of God, hath not life: [m] I am the Vine, and you are the branches: He which abideth in mee, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit, but the branch seuered from the Vine withereth. We are therefore adopted Sonnes of God to Eternall Life by participation of the onely begotten Sonne of God, whose Life is in the [n] Wel-spring and cause of ours. It is too cold an interpretation, whereby some men expound our being in Christ to import nothing else, but onely that the selfe-same Nature which maketh vs to bee men, is in him, and maketh him man as wee are.

For

a 1.Iohn 3.1.
b 1.Cor.15.47.
c Ephes.1.4.
d 1.Iohn 15.11.
e Rom.8.10.
e 2.Cor.13.13.
f 2.Pet.1.4.
g Col.2.10.
h 1.Cor.12.12.
i Ephes.5.30.
k Iohn 15.9.
l 1.Iohn 15.12.
m Iohn 5.5,6.
n Iohn 14.19. Ephes.5.23.

For what man in the world is there which hath not ſo farre-forth communion with Ieſus Chriſt? It is not this that can ſuſtaine the weight of ſuch ſentences as ſpeake of the myſterie of our [a] coherence with Ieſus Chriſt. The Church is in Chriſt as *Eue* was in *Adam*. Yea by grace we are euerie of vs in Chriſt and in his Church, as by nature we are in thoſe our firſt Parents. God made *Eue* of the rib of *Adam*. And his Church he fetcheth out of the very fleſh, the very wounded and bleeding ſide of the Sonne of man. His body crucified and his blood ſhed for the life of the world, are the true Element of that heauenly being, which maketh vs [b] ſuch as himſelfe is of whom we come. For which cauſe the words of *Adam* mam be fitly the words of Chriſt concerning his Church, *Fleſh of my fleſh, and bone of my bones*, a true nature extract out of mine owne body. So that in him euen according to his Man-hood, wee according to our heauenly being are as branches in that roote out of which they grow. To [c] all things he is life, and to men light *as the Sonne of God*; to the Church both life and light, [d] eternall by being made the Sonne of man for vs, and by being in vs a Sauiour, whether we reſpect him as God, or as man. *Adam* is in vs as an originall cauſe of our nature, and of that corruption of nature which cauſeth death, Chriſt as the [e] cauſe originall of reſtauration to life; The perſon of *Adam* is not in vs but his nature, and the corruption of his nature deriueth into all men by propagation, Chriſt hauing *Adams* nature as we haue, but incorrupt, deriueth not nature but incorruption, and that immediately from his owne perſon into all that belong vnto him. As therefore we are really partakers of the body of ſinne and death receiued from *Adam*, ſo except wee bee truely partakers of Chriſt, and as really poſſeſſed of his Spirit, all wee ſpeake of eternall life is but a dreame. That which [f] quickneth vs, is the Spirit of the ſecond *Adam*, and his fleſh that wherewith he quickeneth. That which in him made our nature vncorrupt, was the vnion of his Deitie with our nature. And in that reſpect the ſentence of death and condemnation, which onely taketh hold vpon ſinfull fleſh, could no way poſſibly extend vnto him. This cauſed his voluntarie death for others to preuaile with God, and to haue the force of an expiatorie ſacrifice. The bloud of Chriſt, as the Apoſtle witneſſeth, doth therefore take away ſinne, becauſe [g] *through the eternall Spirit hee offereth himſelfe vnto God without ſpot*. That which ſanctified our nature in Chriſt, that which made it a ſacrifice anaileable to take away ſinne, is the ſame which quickeneth it, raiſed it out of the graue after death, and exalted it vnto glorie. Seeing therefore that Chriſt is in vs as a quickning Spirit, the firſt degree of Communion with Chriſt muſt needes conſiſt in the participation of his Spirit, which *Cyprian* in that reſpect well termeth [h] *germaniſſimam ſocietatem*, the higheſt and and trueſt ſocietie that can be betweene man and him which is both God and man in one. Theſe things [i] Saint *Cyrill* duely conſidering, reproueth their ſpeeches, which taught that onely the Deitie of Chriſt is the Vine whereupon we by faith doe depend as branches, and that neither his fleſh nor our bodies are compriſed in this reſemblance. For doth any may doubt but that euen from the fleſh of Chriſt our verie bodies doe receiue that life which ſhall make them glorious at the latter

a *Iohn 14. 19. Iohn 15. 4.*
b *1. Cor. 15. 48.*
c *Iohn 1.*
d *Iohn 6. 55.*
e *Heb. 5. 9.*
f *1. Cor. 15. 45. 22.*
g *Heb 9. 14.*
h *Cypr. de cœna Dom. cap. 6.*
i *Cyril. in Iohn lib. 10. cap. 13.*

latter day, and for which they are already accounted parts of his blessed body? Our corruptible bodies could never liue the life they shall liue, were it not that here they are ioyned with his body which is incorruptible, and that his is in ours as a cause of immortalitie, a cause by remouing through the death and merit of his owne flesh that which hindred the life of ours. Christ is therefore both as God and as Man, that true Vine whereof we both spiritually and corporally are branches. The mixture of his bodily substance with ours is a thing which the ancient [a] Fathers disclaime. Yet the mixture of his flesh with ours they [b] speake of, to signifie what our very bodies through mysticall coniunction receiue from that vitall efficacie which we know to be in his, & from bodily mixtures they borrow diuers [c] similitudes rather to declare the truth, then the manner of coherence betweene his sacred and the sanctified bodies of Saints. Thus much no Christian man will deny, that when Christ sanctified his owne flesh, giuing as God, and taking as man the Holy Ghost, he did not this for himselfe only, but for our sakes, that the grace of sanctification and life which was first receiued in him, might passe from him to his whole race as malediction came from *Adam* vnto all mankind. Howbeit, because the worke of his Spirit to those effects is in vs preuented by sinne and death possessing vs before, it is of necessitie that as well our present sanctification vnto newnesse of life, as the future restauration of our bodies should presuppose a participation of the grace, efficacie, merit or vertue of his bodie and bloud, without which foundation first laid there is no place for those other operations of the Spirit of Christ to insue. So that Christ imparteth plainely himselfe by degrees. It pleaseth him in mercie to account himselfe incomplete and maimed [d] without vs. But most assured we are that wee all receiue of his fulnesse, because hee is in vs as a mouing and working cause, from which many blessed effects are really found to insue, and that in sundry both kindes and degrees; all tending to eternall happinesse. It must be confest that of Christ, working as a Creator, and a gouernour of the world by prouidence, all are partakers, not all partakers of that grace wherby he inhabiteth in whom he saueth. Againe, as he dwelleth not by grace in all, so neither doth he equally worke in all them in whom he dwelleth. [e] *Whence is it* (saith Saint *Augustine*) *that some be holier then others are, but because God doth dwel in some more plentifully then in others?* And because the diuine substance of Christ is equally in all, his humane substance equally distant from all, it appeareth that the participation of Christ wherein there are many degrees and differences, must needes consist in such effects as being deriued from both natures of Christ really into vs, are made our owne, and wee by hauing them in vs, are truely said to haue him from whom they come, Christ also more or lesse to inhabit and impart himselfe as the graces are fewer or more, greater or smaller, which really flow into vs from Christ. Christ is whole with the whole Church, and whole with euery part of the Church, as touching his person which can no way diuide it selfe,

a *Nobis quippe & ipsius coniunctio non miscet personas nec vnit substantias, sed affectus coniecit & confudit voluntatis.* Cypr. de coen. Dom.

b *Quomodo dicunt carnem in corruptionem deuenire & non percipere vitam, quæ à corpore Domini & sanguine alitur?* Iren. lib. 4. aduers. hæres. cap. 34.

c *Vnde confirmandum est non solum verbo siue auxilio efficacem Christum in nobis esse, verum etiam participatione naturali (id est reali & vera) quemadmodum si quis igni liquefactam ceram alij ceræ similiter liquefactæ ita misceret vt vnum quid ex vtriusque fluxum videatur, sic communicatione carnis & sanguinis Christi ipse in nobis est & nos in ipso.* Cyrill in Ioh. lib. 10. cap. 13.

d Ephes. 1. 23. *Ecclesia complementum eius qui implet omnia in omnibus.* τὸ πλήρωμα τοῦ τὰ πάντα ἐν πᾶσι πληρουμένου.

e *Aug. Epist. 57.*

ſelfe, or be poſſeſt by degrees and portions. But the participation of Chriſt importeth, beſides the preſence of Chriſts perſon, and beſides the myſticall copulation thereof with the parts and members of his whole Church, a true actuall influence of grace whereby the [a] life which we liue according to godlines is his, and from him we receiue thoſe perfections wherein our eternall happines conſiſteth. Thus we participate Chriſt partly by imputation, as when [b] thoſe things which he did and ſuffered for vs are imputed vnto vs for righteouſneſſe, partly by habituall & reall infuſion, as when grace is inwardly beſtowed while we are on earth, & afterwards more fully both our ſoules and bodies made like vnto his in glorie. The firſt thing of his ſo infuſed in to our hearts in this life is the [c] Spirit of Chriſt, whereupon becauſe the reſt of what kinde ſo euer doe all both neceſſarily depend and infallibly alſo inſue, therefore the Apoſtles terme it ſometimes [d] the ſeed of God, ſometime the [e] pledge of our heauenly inheritance, ſometime the [f] hanſell or earneſt of that which is to come. From hence it is, that they which belong to the myſticall bodie of our Sauiour Chriſt, and bee in number as the ſtarres of heauen, diuided ſucceſſiuely by reaſon of their mortall condition into many generations, are notwithſtanding coupled [g] euery one to Chriſt their head, and [h] all vnto euery particular perſon amongſt themſelues, in as much as the ſame Spirit, which anointed the bleſſed ſoule of our Sauior Chriſt, doth ſo formalize, vnite, and actuate his whole race, as if both he & they were ſo many limmes compacted into one bodie, by being quickned all with one and the ſame ſoule. That wherein we are partakers of Ieſus Chriſt by imputation, agreeth equally vnto all that haue it. For it conſiſteth in ſuch acts and deeds of his, as could not haue longer continuance then while they were in doing, nor at that very time belong vnto any other but to him from whom they come, and therefore how men either then, or before or ſithence ſhould be made partakers of them, there can be no way imagined, but onely by imputation. Againe, a deed muſt either not be imputed to any, but reſt altogether in him whoſe it is, or if at all it be imputed, they which haue it by imputation, muſt haue it ſuch as it is whole. So that degrees being neither in the perſonal preſence of Chriſt, nor in the participation of thoſe effects which are ours by imputation only, it reſteth that we wholy apply them to the participation of Chriſts infuſed grace, although euen in this kinde alſo the firſt beginning of life, the ſeede of God, the firſt fruits of Chriſts Spirit be without latitude. For we haue hereby onely the being of the Sonnes of God, in which number how farre ſoeuer one may ſeeme to excell another, yet touching this that all are ſonnes, they are all equals, ſome happily better ſonnes then the reſt are, but none any more a ſonne then another. Thus therefore wee ſee how the Father is in the Sonne, and the the Sonne in the Father, how they both are in all things, and all things in them, what communion Chriſt hath with his Church and euery member thereof, is in him by originall deriuation, and he perſonally in them by way of myſticall aſſociation wrought through the gift of the holy Ghoſt, which they that are his, receiue from him, and together with the ſame, what benefit ſoeuer the vitall force of his bodie and bloud may yeeld, yea by ſteps and degrees they receiue the complete meaſure of all ſuch diuine grace, as doth ſanctifie & ſaue throughout, till the day of their finall exaltation to a ſtate of fellowſhip in glorie with him,

a *Ga.* 2. 20.
b *Eſa.* 53. 5. *Eph.* 1. 7.
c *Rom.* 8. 9. *Gal.* 4. 6.
d 1. *Ioh.* 3. 9.
e *Eph.* 1. 14.
f *Rom.* 8. 23.
g 1. *Cor.* 12. 27. *Epheſ.* 4. 15.
h *Rom.* 12. 5. *Epheſ.* 4. 25.

him whoſe partakers they are now in thoſe things that tend to glory. As for any mixture of the ſubſtance of his fleſh with ours, the participation which we haue of Chriſt includeth no ſuch kind of groſſe ſurmize.

The neceſſitie of Sacraments vnto the participation of Chriſt.

57 It greatly offendeth, that ſome, when they labour to ſhew the vſe of the holy Sacraments, aſſigne vnto them no end but onely *to teach* the mind, by other ſenſes, that which the Word doth teach by hearing. Whereupon, how eaſily neglect and careleſſe regard of ſo heauenly myſteries may follow, we ſee in part by ſome experience had of thoſe men with whom that opinion is moſt ſtrong. For where the Word of God may be heard, which teacheth with much more expedition and more full explication any thing we haue to learne, if all the benefits we reape by Sacraments be inſtruction, they which at all times haue oportunitie of vſing the better meanes to that purpoſe, will ſurely hold the worſe in leſſe eſtimation. And vnto Infants which are not capable of inſtruction, who would not thinke a meere ſuperfluitie that any Sacrament is adminiſtred, if to adminiſter the Sacraments be but to teach receiuers what God doth for them? There is of Sacraments therefore vndoubtedly ſome other more excellent and heauenly vſe. Sacraments, by reaſon of their mixt nature, are more diuerſly interpreted and diſputed of then any other part of Religion beſides, for that in ſo great ſtore of properties belonging to the ſelfe-ſame thing, as euery mans wit hath taken hold of ſome eſpeciall conſideration aboue the reſt, ſo they haue accordingly ſeemed one to croſſe another as touching their ſeuerall opinions about the neceſſitie of Sacraments, whereas in truth their diſagreement is not great. For let reſpect be had to the duties which euery communicant doth vndertake, and we may well determine concerning the vſe of Sacraments, that they ſerue as bonds of obedience to God, ſtrict obligations to the mutuall exerciſe of Chriſtian charitie, prouocations to godlineſſe, preſeruations from ſinne, memorials of the principall benefits of Chriſt; reſpect the time of their inſtitution, and it thereby appeareth that God hath annexed them for euer vnto the New Teſtament, as other Rites were before with the Old; regard the weaknes which is in vs, and they are warrants for the more ſecuritie of our beliefe; compare the receiuers of them with ſuch as receiue them not, and Sacraments are markes of diſtinction to ſeparate Gods owne from ſtrangers, ſo that in all theſe reſpects they are found to be moſt neceſſary. But their chiefeſt force and vertue conſiſteth not herein ſo much, as in that they are heauenly Ceremonies, which God hath ſanctified and ordained to be adminiſtred in his Church, firſt, as markes whereby to know when God doth impart the vitall or ſauing grace of Chriſt vnto all that are capable thereof, and ſecondly, as meanes conditionall which God requireth in them vnto whom he imparteth grace. For ſith God in himſelfe is inuiſible, and cannot by vs be diſcerned working, therefore when it ſeemeth good in the eyes of his heauenly wiſedome, that men for ſome ſpecial inſtant and purpoſe ſhould take notice of his glorious preſence, he giueth them ſome plaine and ſenſible token wherby to know what they cannot ſee. For *Moſes* to ſee God and liue was impoſſible, yet [a] *Moſes* by fire knew where the glory of God extraordinarily was preſent. The [b] Angel, by whom God indued the waters of the Poole called *Bethesda* with ſupernatural vertue to heale, was not ſeene of any, yet the time of the Angels preſence knowne by the troubled

a Exod. 3. 2.
b Iohn 5. 4.

troubled motions of the waters themſelues. The Apoſtles [a] by fierie tongues which they ſaw, were admoniſhed when the Spirit, which they could not behold, was vpon them. In like manner it is with vs. Chriſt and his holy Spirit with all their bleſſed effects, though entring into the ſoule of man we are not able to apprehend or expreſſe how, doe notwithſtanding giue notice of the times when they vſe to make their exceſſe, becauſe it pleaſeth Almightie God to communicate by ſenſible meanes thoſe bleſſings which are incomprehenſible. Seeing therfore that grace is a conſequent of Sacraments, a thing which accompanieth them as their end, a benefit which he hath receiued from God himſelfe the author of Sacraments, and not from any other naturall or ſupernatural qualitie in them, it may be hereby both vnderſtood that Sacraments are neceſſary, and that the manner of their neceſſitie to life ſupernaturall is not in all reſpects as food vnto naturall life, becauſe they containe *in themſelues* no vitall force or efficacie, they are phyſicall but *morall inſtruments* of ſaluation, duties of ſeruice and worſhip, which vnleſſe we performe as the author of grace requireth, they are vnprofitable. For all receiue not the grace of God which receiue the Sacrament of his grace. Neither is it *ordinarily* his will to beſtow the grace of Sacraments on any, but by the Sacraments; which grace alſo they that receiue by Sacraments or with Sacrament, receiue it from him and not from them. For of Sacraments the very ſame is true which *Salomons* wiſdome obſerueth in the brazen Serpent: [b] *He that turneth towards it, was not healed by the thing he ſaw, but by thee, the Sauiour of all.* This is therefore the neceſſitie of Sacraments. That ſauing grace which Chriſt originally is, or hath for the generally good of his whole Church, by Sacraments be ſeuerally deriueth into euery member therof. Sacraments ſerue as the inſtruments of God to that end and purpoſe, morall inſtruments the vſe whereof is in our hands the effect in his; for the vſe we haue his expreſſe commandement, for the effect his conditionall promiſe; ſo that without our obedience to the one, there is of the other no apparant aſſurance, as contrariwiſe where the ſignes and Sacraments of his grace are not either through contempt vnreceiued, or receiued with contempt, we are not to doubt but that they really giue what they promiſe, and are what they ſignifie. For we take not baptiſme nor the Euchariſt for bare *reſemblances* or memorials of things abſent, neither for *naked ſignes* and teſtimonies aſſuring vs of grace receiued before, but (as they are indeed and in verity) for meanes effectuall, whereby God, when we take the Sacraments, deliuereth into our hands that grace auailable vnto eternal life, which grace the Sacraments [c] repreſent or ſignifie. There haue growne in the doctrine concerning Sacraments many difficulties, for want of diſtinct explication what kind or degree of grace doth belong vnto each Sacrament. For by this it hath come to paſſe, that the true immediate cauſe why Baptiſme, and why the Supper of our Lord is neceſſary, few doe rightly and diſtinctly conſider. It cannot be denied, but ſundry the ſame effects and benefits which grow vnto men by the one Sacrament, may rightly be attributed vnto the other. Yet then doth baptiſme challenge to it ſelfe but the inchoation of thoſe graces, the confirmation whereof dependeth on myſteries inſuing. We receiue Chriſt Ieſus in baptiſme once as the firſt beginner, in the Euchariſt often, as being by continuall degrees the finiſher of our life. By baptiſme therefore

we

a *Acts* 2. 3.

b Wiſd. 16. 17. *Spiritus Sanctus munus ad gratiam impleri myſtery. Ambr. in Luc. cap. 4. Sanctificatio elementis ſit ſeruus, non propria ipſorum natura probat, ſed virtutis diuinæ gratiam operatur. Cyprian de Chrism.*

c *Dum humanum humanis inſtitutis redditur, ſyrma ad eiuſdem ſignificationem per ſpecies viſibiles adhibetur, vt ſecundum exercitium & intuitum reparetur. In ipſa vaſis ſpecie virtus experimentum medicinæ. Hugo de Sacram. l. 1. ca. 3. Si ergo vaſa ſunt ſpiritualis gratiæ ſacramenta, non ex ſuo ſanant, quia vaſa ægrotum non curant, ſed medicina. Idem li. 1. ca. 4.*

we receiue Christ Iesus, and from him that saning grace which is proper vnto baptisme. By the other Sacrament we receiue him also, imparting therein himselfe and that grace which the Eucharist properly bestoweth. So that each Sacrament hauing both that which is generall or common, and that also which is peculiar vnto it selfe, we may hereby gather that the participation of Christ, which properly belongeth to any one Sacrament, is not otherwise to be obtained but by the Sacrament whereunto it is proper.

The substance of Baptisme; the rites or solemnities thereunto belonging; and that the substance thereof being kept, other things in Baptisme may giue place to necessitie.

58 Now euen as the soule doth organize the body, and giue vnto euery member thereof that substance, quantity & shape which nature seeth most expedient, so the inward grace of Sacraments may teach what serueth best for their outward forme, a thing in no part of Christian Religion, much lesse here to be neglected. Grace intended by Sacraments was a cause of the choise, and is a reason of the fitnesse of the Elements themselues. Furthermore, seeing that the grace which here we receiue, doth no way depend vpon the natural force of that which we presently behold, it was of necessitie that words of expresse declaration taken from the very mouth of our Lord himselfe should be added vnto visible Elements, that the one might infallibly teach what the other do most assuredly bring to passe. In writing and speaking of the blessed Sacrament, we [a] vse for the most part vnder the name of their *substance*, not only to comprise that whereof they outwardly and sensibly consist, but also the secret grace which they signifie and exhibit. This is the reason wherefore commonly in [b] definitions, whether they be framed larger to augment, or stricter to abridge the number of Sacraments, we find grace expressly mentioned as their true essentiall forme, Elements as the matter whereunto that forme doth adioyne it selfe. But if that be separated which is secret, and that considered alone which is seene, be of necessity it must in al those speeches that make distinction of sacraments from sacramental grace, the name of a sacrament in such speeches can imply no more then what the *outward substance* thereof doth comprehend. And to make complete the outward substance of a sacrament, there is required an outward forme, which forme sacramental Elements receiue from sacramentall words. Hereupon it groweth that many [c] times there are three things said to make vp the substance of a Sacrament, namely, the grace which is thereby offered, the Element which shadoweth or signifieth grace, and the Word which expresseth what is done by the Element. So that whether we consider the outward by it selfe alone, or both the outward and inward substance of any Sacraments, there are in the one respect but two essentiall parts, and in the other but three that concure to giue Sacraments their full being. Furthermore, because definitions are to expresse but the most immediate and neerest parts of nature, whereas other principles further off, although not specified in defining, are notwithstanding in nature implyed and presupposed, we must note that in as much as Sacraments are actions religious and mysticall, which nature they haue not vnlesse they proceed from a serious meaning; and what euery mans pri-

uate

a *Eucharistia duobus ex rebus constat, terrena & cœlesti.* Iren. aduers. hæres. l. 4. c. 34.

Arcanum verum symbolum unum nullis signis, sed signis unum & rebus unum. Hilar. confess. prior. fid. 2.

b *Sacramentum est quod ita sub tegumento aliquid continet, ut ipsum per se intelligatur.* Isidor. Etymol. lib. 6. *Sacramentum est per quod sub tegumento rerum visibilium diuina virtus salutem secretius operatur.* Greg. mag. *Sacramentum est signum significans efficaciter effectum Dei gratuitum.* Occ. sent. lib. 4. d. 1. *Sacramentum proprie non est quod ad aliquid ostendendum factum est, sed tantum id quod factum est ad significandum.* Th. 1. a. q. 101. a. 1. & q. 101. a. 5. *Sacramentum est signum passionis Christi, id est effectus eius in nobis, & memoriale eorum quæ videmus ad nos iuuandum, & prognosticum futuræ gloriæ.* Th. 3. q. 60. 3. *Sacramenta sunt signa & symbola visibilia rerum inuisibilium & inuisibilium, per quæ, sic per medias Dei virtutis spiritus salutis in nobis agit.* Conf. Belg. Art. 33. Idem Rom. confess. ca. 13. *Sacramenta constant verbo, signo & re.* Confess. Helvet. prob. cap. 19. *verbum significans.*

uate minde is, as we cannot know, ſo neither are we bound to examine: therefore alwayes in theſe caſes the knowne intent of the Church generally doth ſuffice, & where the contrarie is not [a] manifeſt, we may preſume that he which outwardly doth the worke, hath inwardly the purpoſe of the Church of God. Concerning all other Orders, Rites, Prayers, Leſſons, Sermons, Actions, and their Circumſtances whatſoeuer, they are to the outward ſubſtance of Baptiſme but things acceſſorie, which the wiſedome of the Church of Chriſt is to order according to the exigence of that which is principal. Againe, conſidering that ſuch Ordinances haue beene made to adorne the Sacrament, [b] not the Sacrament to depend on them; ſeeing alſo that they are not of the ſubſtance of Baptiſme, and that Baptiſme is farre more neceſſarie then any ſuch incident Rite or Solemnitie ordayned for the better adminiſtration thereof, [c] if the caſe bee ſuch as permitteth not Baptiſme to haue the decent Complements of Baptiſme, better it were to inioy the body without his Furniture, then to wait for this, till the oportunitie of that *without* which we deſire it be loſt. Which Premiſes ſtanding, it ſeemeth to haue beene no abſurd collection, that in caſes of neceſſitie which will not ſuffer delay till Baptiſme bee adminiſtred, with vſual ſolemnities (to ſpeake the leaſt) it may be tolerably giuen without them, rather then any man without it ſhould be ſuffred to depart this life.

[a] *Si aliud Miniſtri agere intendant, puta ſacris illudere myſteriis, vel aliud quod Eccleſia non conſentiat, nihil agitur. Sine fide enim ſpiritualis poteſtas exerceri quidem poteſt ſine Eccleſiæ intentione non poteſt.* Lancel. inſt. iur. Can. lib. 1. tit. 2. §. hoc tamen.

[b] *Acceſſorium non regulat principale, ſed ab eo regulatur*, 4°. De regul. iur. in Sext. l. 1. ff. quod iuſſu. [c] *Etſi ritibus fatile mutandum eſt ex ſolennibus, tamen vbi equitas cuiuscunq; poſcit ſubueniendum eſt.* Lib. 1. tit. de reg. iur.

59 They which denie that any ſuch caſe of neceſſitie can fall, in regard wherof the Church ſhould tolerate Baptiſme, without the decent Rites & Solemnities thereunto belonging, pretend that ſuch tolerations haue riſen from a falſe Interpretation, which *certaine men* haue made of the Scripture, grounding a neceſſitie of external Baptiſme vpon the words of our Sauiour Chriſt. *Vnleſſe a man be borne againe of Water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the Kingdom of Heauen.* For, by *Water and the Spirit*, wee are in that place to vnderſtand (as they imagine) no more then if the Spirit alone had beene mentioned, and Water not ſpoken of. Which they thinke is plaine, becauſe elſewhere it is not improbable, that *the holy Ghoſt and Fire*, doe but ſignifie the Holy Ghoſt in operation reſembling fire. Whereupon they conclude, that ſeeing Fire in one place may bee, therefore Water in another place is but a Meraphor, Spirit, the interpretation thereof, and ſo the words doe onely meane, that vnleſſe a man bee borne againe of the Spirit, hee cannot enter into the Kingdome of Heauen. I hold it for a moſt infallible rule in Expoſitions of Sacred Scripture, that where a literall conſtruction will ſtand, the fartheſt from the Letter is commonly the worſt. There is nothing more dangerous then this licentious and deluding Arte, which changeth the meaning of words, as Alchymie doth or would doe the ſubſtance of Metals, maketh of any thing what it liſteth, and bringeth in the end all Truth to nothing. Or howſoeuer, ſuch voluntarie exerciſe of wit might be borne with otherwiſe, yet in places which vſually ſerue, as this doth, concerning Regeneration by water & the

The ground in Scripture, whereupon a neceſſitie of outward Baptiſme hath beene built.

T. C. l. 1. p. 143. Priuate Baptiſme firſt to be vpon a falſe interpretation of the place of Saint *Iohn 3. 5. Vnleſſe a man be borne againe of water and of the Spirit*: and where ech tayne doe interpret the word *water* for the materiall and elementall Water, when as our Sauiour Chriſt vſeth Water there by a borrowed ſpeech, for the Spirit of God, the effect whereof it ſhadoweth out. For euen as in another place, *Matthew 3. 11.* by Fire and the Spirit, hee meaneth nothing but the Spirit of God, which purgeth and purifieth as the fire doth: So in this place by Water and the Spirit, hee meaneth nothing elſe but the Spirit of God which cleanſeth the filth of ſinne, and cooleth the broyling heate of an vnquiet Conſcience, as Water waſheth the thing which is foule, and quencheth the heate of the fire.

Holy Ghoſt, to be alleaged for grounds and principles, leſſe is permitted. To hide the generall conſent of Antiquitie agreeing in the literall interpretation, they cunningly affirme, that *certaine* haue taken thoſe words as meant of materiall water, when they know, that of all the Ancient there is not one to be named, that euer did otherwiſe either expound or alleage the place, then as implying externall Baptiſme. Shall that which hath alwaies [a] receiued this and no other conſtruction, be now diſguiſed with a toy of nouelrie? Muſt we needs at the only ſhew of Criticall conceit without any more deliberation, vtterly condemne them of errour, which will not admit that fire in the words of *Iohn*, is quenched with the Name of the Holy Ghoſt, or with the name of the Spirit, water dryed vp in the words of Chriſt? When the letter of the Law hath two things plainely and expreſly ſpecified, *Water*, and the *Spirit*; Water as a dutie required on our parts, the Spirit as a gift which God beſtoweth; there is danger in preſuming ſo to interpret it, as if the clauſe which concerneth our ſelues were more then needeth. We may by ſuch rare expoſitions attaine perhaps in the end to be thought wittie, but with ill aduice. Finally, if at [b] the time, when that Baptiſme which was meant by *Iohn*, came to be really and truly performed by Chriſt himſelfe, we find the Apoſtles that had beene, as we are, before baptized, new baptized with the Holy Ghoſt, and in this their later Baptiſme as wel a [c] viſible deſcent of fire, as a ſecret miraculous infuſion of the Spirit; if on vs be accompliſh likewiſe the heauenly worke of our new birth, not with the Spirit alone, but with Water thereunto adioyned, ſith the faithfulleſt Expounders of his words are his owne deeds, let that which his hand hath manifeſtly wrought, declare what his ſpeech did doubtfully vtter.

a *Minimè ſunt mutanda quæ inter, retatione temporis ſemper habita ſunt.* D. lib. 1. tit. 2. lib. 13.

b *Acts* 1. 3. *Iohn* baptized with Water, but you ſhall within few dayes bee baptized with the Holy Ghoſt.

c *Acts* 2. 3.

60 To this they adde, that as wee erre by following a wrong conſtruction of the place before alleaged, ſo our ſecond ouerſight is, that wee thereupon inferre a neceſſitie ouer-rigorous and extreme. The true neceſſitie of Baptiſme, a few Propoſitions conſidered will ſoone decide. All things which either are knowne [d] *Cauſes*, or ſet *Meanes*, whereby any great good is vſually procured, or men deliuered from grieuous euill, the ſame wee muſt needs confeſſe neceſſarie. And if *Regeneration* were not in this very ſenſe a thing neceſſarie to eternall life, would Chriſt himſelfe haue taught *Nicodemus* that to ſee the Kingdome of God is [e] impoſſible, ſauing onely for thoſe men which are borne from aboue? His words following in the next ſentence, are a proofe ſufficient, that to our Regeneration *his Spirit* is no leſſe [f] neceſſarie, then Regeneration it ſelfe neceſſarie vnto life. Thirdly, vnleſſe as the Spirit is a neceſſarie inward cauſe, ſo *Water* were a neceſſarie outward meane to our Regeneration, what conſtruction ſhould wee giue vnto thoſe words wherein we are ſaid to be new borne, and that ἐξ ὕδατος, euen

What kind of neceſſitie in outward Baptiſme hath beene gathered by the words of our Sauiour Chriſt, and what the true neceſſitie thereof indeed is. *T.C. lib.* 1. *p.* 143. Secondly, this errour [of priuate Baptiſme] came by a falſe and vnneceſſarie concluſion drawne of that place. For although the Scripture ſhould ſay, that none can bee ſaued but thoſe which haue the Spirit of God, and are baptized with materiall and elementall Water, yet ought it to bee vnderſtood of thoſe which can conueniently and orderly be brought to Baptiſme, as the Scripture, ſaying that who ſo doth not beleeue the Goſpell is condemned alreadie, *Ioh.* 3. 18. meaneth this ſentence of thoſe which can heare the Goſpell, and haue diſcretion to vnderſtand it when they heare it, and cannot here ſhut vnder this condemnation, either thoſe that be borne deafe, and ſo remayne, or little Infants, or naturall Fooles, that haue no wit to conceiue what is preached.

d Ἀναγκαῖον λέγεται ἢ ἄνευ τοῦ μὴ ἐνδέχεται ζῆν οἷς γίγνεται τὸ : ἢ ὧν ἄνευ τὸ ἀγαθὸν μὴ ἐνδέχεται ἢ εἶναι ἢ γίνεσθαι, ἢ τι κακὸν ἀφελεῖν, ἢ κωλῦσαι. *Neceſſarium ſi dicitur ſine quo vt coniunctè fieripoſſit vt vinatur: & res ſine quibus peri nequit vt bonum aut ſit aut fiat, vel malum aliquod amoueatur, aut non adſit,* Ariſt. Metaph. 5. cap. 5.

e *Iohn* 3. 5.

f 5.

euen of *Water?* Why are wee taught that [m] with water God doth purifie and cleanſe his Church? Wherefore doe the Apoſtles of Chriſt terme baptiſme [n] a bath of Regeneraion? What purpoſe had they in giuing men aduice to receiue outward Baptiſme, and in perſwading them it did auaile [o] to remiſſion of ſinnes? If outward Baptiſme were a cauſe in it ſelfe poſſeſſed of that power either naturall or ſupernaturall, without the preſent operation whereof no ſuch effect could poſſibly grow, it muſt then follow, that ſeeing effects doe neuer preuent the neceſſarie cauſes out of which they ſpring, no man could euer receiue grace before Baptiſme: which being apparently both knowne and alſo confeſt to be otherwiſe in many particulars, although in the reſt we make not Baptiſme a cauſe of grace, yet the grace which is giuen them with their [p] Baptiſme, doth ſo farre-forth depend on the very outward Sacrament, that God will haue it imbraced not onely as a ſigne or token what wee receiue, but alſo as an inſtrument or meane whereby wee receiue grace, becauſe Baptiſme is a Sacrament which God hath inſtituted in his Church, to the end that they which receiue the ſame, might thereby bee [q] incorporated into Chriſt, and ſo through his moſt precious Merit obtayne as well that ſauing grace of imputation which taketh away [r] all former guiltines, as alſo that [s] infuſed Diuine vertue of the Holy Ghoſt, which giueth to the powers of the Soule their firſt diſpoſition towards future newneſſe of life. There are that eleuate too much the ordinary and immediate meanes of life, relying wholly vpon the bare conceit of that eternall Election, which notwithſtanding includeth a ſubordination of meanes, without which we are not actually brought to inioy what God ſecretly did intend, & therefore to build vpon Gods Election, if wee keepe not our ſelues to the wayes which hee hath appointed for men to walke in, is but a ſelfe-deceiuing vanitie. When the Apoſtle ſaw men called to the participation of Ieſus Chriſt, after the Goſpell of God embraced and the Sacrament of life receiued, he feareth not [t] then to put them in the number of Elect Saints, hee [u] then accounteth them deliuered from death, and cleane purged from all ſinne. Till then, notwithſtanding their preordination vnto life which none could know of ſauing God, what were they in the Apoſtles owne [x] account, but children of wrath as well as others, plaine Aliens, altogether without hope, ſtrangers vtterly without God in this preſent world? So that by Sacraments and other ſenſible tokens of grace, we may boldly gather that he, whoſe mercy vouchſafeth now to beſtow the meanes, hath alſo long ſithence intended vs that whereunto they lead. But let vs neuer thinke it ſafe to preſume of our owne laſt end, by bare coniecturall collections of his intent and purpoſe, the meanes fayling that ſhould come betweene. Predeſtination bringeth

m *Ephes.* 5. 26.
n *Tit.* 3. 5.
o *Act.* 2. 38.
p *Fideles ſalutem ex iſtis elementis non quærunt, etiamſi in iſtis quærunt. Non enim iſta tribuunt quod per iſta tribuitur.* Hugo de Sacram. lib. 1. cap. 3.
q *Suſceptus à Chriſto Chriſtumq; ſuſcipiens non idem ſit poſt lauacrum qui ante baptiſmum fuit, ſed corpus regenerati ſit caro crucifixi.* Leo. Serm. 4. de Paſ. Dom.
r *Caro abluitur vt anima emaculetur.* Tert. de carn. reſur.
s *Homo per aquam baptiſmi licet à foris idem eſſe videatur intus tamen alter efficitur, cum peccato natus ſine peccato renaſcitur, prioribus periit, ſuccedentibus proficit, deterioribus exuitur, in melioris incrementa proficit, perſona tingitur & natura mutatur.* Euſeb. Emiſ. de Epiphan. homil. 3. Τριοὶν γάρτοι ἡμῖν οἱ δι᾽ ὑδατος λογοι, τὸν ἐκ σώματος, τὸν ἐκ βαπτίσματος, τὸν ἐξ ἀναστάσεως. Αὐτὰ μὲν ἀ τῆ βαπτίσματος χάριτι ἡ συγχώρησις καὶ ἀπολύσεως καλλωπισμὸν εἰς πάντας, τὰς δὲ τῆ καθ᾽ ἑαυτὸν ἀμαρτίας κάθαρσιν ἔχουσα. Greg. Homil. de ſanct. bapt. *Vnde genitalis auxilio ſuperioris eius labe deterſa in expiatum pectus ac purum deſuper ſe lumen infundit.* Cyp. ſp. ad Donat. Οὐ μόνον τῶν σωμάτων ἀκαθαρσίαν ἀπορρίπτει τὸν ἄρτιον, ἀλλ᾽ καὶ τὸν ἐνοικοῦντα τῶν ἐναντίων ἐπιβουλῶν ἀγκαθῶν, καὶ τῆ ἀγνοίαν διακόπτει καὶ τῆς ἀπατεώνος καθίσεως κοινωνὸς, καὶ τῆς τῆ σπέρματος βορᾶς τὸν μετανοίαν χαρίζεται, Theodoret. Epito. diuin. dogmat. *Baptiſari eſt purgari à ſordibus peccatorum, & donari varia Dei gratia ad vitam nouam & innocentem,* Confeſſ. Heluet. cap. 20.
t *Ephes.* 1. 11.
u 5. 8.
x 2, 3. 12.

bringeth not to life, without the grace of externall [a] vocation, wherein our Baptiſme is implyed. For as we are not naturally men without birth, ſo neither are we Chriſtian men in the eye of the Church of God but by new birth, nor according to the manifeſt ordinarie courſe of Diuine Diſpenſation new borne, but by that Baptiſme which both declareth and maketh vs Chriſtians. In which reſpect we iuſtly hold it to be the doore of our actuall entrance into Gods houſe, the firſt apparent [b] beginning of life, a ſeale perhaps to the [c] grace of *Election* before receiued, but to our Sanctification, here a ſtep that hath not any before it. There were of the old *Valentinian* Heretikes ſome, which had knowledge in ſuch admiration, that to it they aſcribed all, and ſo deſpiſed the Sacraments of Chriſt, pretending that as ignorance had made vs ſubiect to all miſerie, ſo the full Redemption of the inward man, and the worke of our Reſtauration, muſt needs belong vnto [d] *Knowledge onely*. They draw very neere vnto this errour, who fixing wholly their minds on the knowne neceſſitie of Faith, [e] imagine that nothing but Faith is neceſſarie for the attaynement of all Grace. Yet is it a branch of Beliefe that Sacraments are in their place no leſſe required then Beliefe it ſelfe. For when our Lord and Sauiour promiſeth eternall Life, is it any otherwiſe then as hee promiſed reſtitution of health vnto *Naaman* the Syrian, namely, with this condition, [f] *Waſh and be cleane?* or as to them which were ſtung of Serpents, health by [g] beholding the brazen Serpent? If Chriſt himſelfe which giueth Saluation doe [h] require Baptiſme, it is not for vs that looke for ſaluation, to ſound and examine him whether vnbaptized men may be ſaued, but ſeriouſly to [i] doe that which is required, and religiouſly to feare the danger which may grow by the want thereof. Had Chriſt only declared his will to haue all men baptized, and not acquainted vs with any cauſe why Baptiſme is neceſſarie, our ignorance in the reaſon of that he inioyneth, might perhaps haue hindred ſomewhat the forwardnes of our obedience thereunto: whereas now being taught, that Baptiſme is neceſſarie to take away ſinne, how haue we the feare of God in our hearts, if care of deliuering mens Soules from ſinne, doe not moue vs to vſe all meanes for their Baptiſme? [k] *Pelagius* which denyed vtterly the guilt of originall ſinne, and *in that reſpect* the neceſſitie of Baptiſme, did notwithſtanding both baptize Infants, and acknowledge their Baptiſme neceſſarie for *entrance into the Kingdome of God*. Now the Law of Chriſt, which in theſe conſiderations maketh Baptiſme neceſſarie, muſt bee conſtrued and vnderſtood according to rules of [l] naturall equitie. Which rules if they themſelues did not follow in expounding the Law of God, would they neuer be able to proue that [m] the Scripture in ſaying. *Who ſo beleeueth not the Goſpell of Chriſt, is condemned already, meaneth this ſentence of thoſe which can heare the Goſpell, and haue diſcretion when they heare to vnderſtand it, neither ought it to be applyed vnto Infants, Deafe men and fooles?* That which teacheth them thus to interpret the Law of Chriſt, is naturall equitie. And (becauſe equitie ſo teacheth) it is on all parts gladly conſeſt

a *Rom.* 8. 30.

b Ἀρχὴν ζωῆς τὸ βαπτισμα. Baſil. de Sp. S. c. 10.

c *T. C. l.* 1. *p.* 134. Hee which is not a Chriſtian before he come to receiue Baptiſme, cannot bee made a Chriſtian by Baptiſme; which is onely the ſeale of the grace of God before receiued.

d *Iren. contra Hæreſ. l.* 1. *c.* 18.

e *Hic ſceleſtiſſimi illi prouocant queſtiones. Adeo dicunt baptiſmus nõ eſt neceſſarius quibus fide ſatis eſt.* Tert. de baptiſ. *Huic nulla proderit fides, qui cum poſſit non percipit Sacramentum.* Bern. Epiſt. 70. ad Hugon.

f 2. *Reg.* 5. 14.

g *Num.* 21. 8.

h *Marc.* 16. 16.

i *Inſtitutio Sacramentorum quantum ad Deum authorem diſpenſationis eſt, quantum vero ad hominem obedientem neceſſitatis. Quoniam in poteſtate Dei eſt præter iſta hominem ſaluare, ſed in poteſtate hominis non eſt, ſine iſtis ad ſalutem peruenire.* Hug. de Sacram. l. 1. c. 9.

k Pelagius *aſſerere erepta impietate præſumit non propter vitam, ſed propter regnum cœlorum baptiſmum paruulis conferendum,* Euſeb. Emiſſ. Hom. 5. de Paſch.

l *Benigniùs leges interpretatidæ ſunt, quò voluntas eorum conſeruetur.* L. Benign. D. de legib. & Senatuſc.

m *T. C. l.* 1. *p.* 143.

that

that *there may bee in diuers caſes* life by vertue of inward Baptiſme, euen where outward is not found. So that if any queſtion bee made, it is but about the bounds and limits of this poſſibilitie. For example, to thinke that a man whoſe Baptiſme the Crowne of Martyrdome preuenteth, doth loſe in that caſe, the happineſſe which ſo many thouſands enioy, that onely haue had the grace to beleeue, and not the honour to ſeale the teſtimonie thereof with death, were almoſt barbarous. Againe, [n] when ſome certaine opinatiue men in Saint *Bernards* time beganne priuately to hold that, becauſe our Lord hath ſaid, *Vnleſſe a man be borne againe of water*, therefore life, without either actuall Baptiſme *or Martyrdome* in ſtead of Baptiſme, cannot *poſſibly* bee obtained at the hands of God: *Bernard* conſidering that the ſame equitie which had mooued them to thinke the neceſſitie of Baptiſme no barre againſt the happie eſtate of vnbaptized Martyrs, is as forcible for the warrant of their Saluation, in whom, although there bee not the ſufferings of Holy Martyrs, there are the vertues which ſanctified thoſe ſufferings and made them precious in Gods ſight, profeſſed himſelfe an enemie to that ſeueritie and ſtrictneſſe which admitteth no exception but of Martyrs onely. For, ſaith hee, if a man deſirous of Baptiſme bee ſodainely cut off by death, in whom there wanted neither ſound Faith, deuout Hope, nor ſincere Charitie (God be mercifull vnto me, and pardon me if I erre) but verily of ſuch a ones Saluation, in whom there is no other defect beſides his faultleſſe lacke of Baptiſme, deſpaire I cannot, nor induce my mind to thinke his Faith voide, his Hope confounded, and his Charity ſalue to nothing, onely becauſe hee hath not that which not contempt but impoſſibilitie withholdeth. *Tell me I beſeech you* (ſaith Anſelme) *what there is in any of vs more then to will, and to ſeeke for our own good. Thy Seruant VOLVNTARIAS, O Lord, did both.* (For *Valentinian* the Emperor dyed before his purpoſe to receiue Baptiſme could take effect.) *And is it poſſible that he which had purpoſely thy Spirit giuen him to deſire grace, ſhould not receiue thy grace which that Spirit did deſire? Doth it moue you that the outward accuſtomed ſolemnities were not done? As though Conuerts that ſuffer Martyrdome before Baptiſme, did thereby forfeit their right to the crowne of eternall glorie in the Kingdome of Heauen. If the blood of Martyrs in that caſe be their Baptiſme, ſurely a religious deſire of Baptiſme ſtandeth him in the ſame ſtead.* It hath beene therefore conſtantly held as well touching other Beleeuers as Martyrs, that Baptiſme taken away by neceſſity, is ſupplied by deſire of Baptiſme, becauſe with [o] equitie this opinion doth beſt ſtand. Touching infants which die vnbaptized, ſith they neither haue the Sacrament it ſelfe, nor any ſenſe or conceit thereof, the iudgement of many hath gone hard againſt them. But yet ſeeing grace is not abſolutely tied vnto Sacraments, and beſides ſuch is the lenitie of God, that vnto things altogether impoſſible he bindeth no man, but where wee cannot doe what is inioyned vs, accepteth our will to doe in ſtead of the deede it ſelfe; Againe, for as much as there is in their Chriſtian Parents and in the Church of God, a preſumed deſire that the Sacrament of Baptiſme might be giuen them, yea a purpoſe alſo that it ſhall be giuen, remorſe of equitie hath mooued diuers of the [p] Schoole-diuines in theſe conſiderations ingenuouſly to grant, that God all-mercifull to ſuch as are not in themſelues able to deſire Baptiſme, imputeth the ſecret deſire that Others

n Bern. Epiſt. 77. ad Hugon.

o Qui ad tolerandum omnem pro Dei gloria iniuriam ſimul dicauit animum in Martyrium mihi videtur iuſtiſſe. Summi ergo meriti eſt ſimul & ſine ſanguine martyrium, in quo ideo vt diuina vocatio principaliter obtinet paſſionis & ſanctæ perſeuerantiæ deſiderat facultatem, per tulit tamen cum Ba the Gothi pati. Ioſeph. Vita impet. Arcad.

p Gerſ. Serm. de Natuit. Beatæ Mariæ. Caietan. in 3. Tho. q. 68. art. 2 & 2. Biel in 4. Senten. d. 4. q. 2. Tilman. Segeberg. de ſacr. c. 2 Eliſius Neapol. in Chp. adnerſ. herеſ. c. de bapti.

thers haue in their behalfe, and accepteth the same as theirs rather then casteth away their Soules for that which no man is able to helpe. And of the will of God to impart his grace vnto Infants without Baptisme; in that case the verie circumstance of their naturall birth may serue as a iust Argument, whereupon it is not to bee misliked that men in charitable presumption doe gather a great likelyhood of their Saluation, to whom the benefite of Christian parentage being giuen, the rest that should follow is presumed by some such casualtie as man hath himselfe no power to auoid. For, we are plainely taught of God, That the Seede of faithfull Parentage is holy from the verie birth. Which albeit we may not so vnderstand, as if the Children of Beleeuing Parents were without sinne, or grace from baptized Parents deriued by Propagation, or God by Couenant and Promise tyed to saue any in theere regard of their Parents Beleefe: yet seeing that to all Professors of the name of Christ, this preeminence aboue Infidels is freely giuen, the fruite of their bodies bringeth into the World with it a present interest and right to those meanes wherewith the Ordinance of Christ is, that his Church shall bee sanctified, it is not to be thought that hee which as it were from Heauen hath nominated and designed them vnto holinesse by speciall priuiledge of their verie birth, will himselfe deprive them of Regeneration and inward grace, onely because necessitie depriueth them of outward Sacraments. In which case, it were the part of Charitie to hope, and to make men rather partiall then cruell Iudges, if wee had not those faire apparancies which heere we haue. Wherefore a necessitie there is of receiuing, and a necessitie of administring the Sacrament of Baptisme; the one peraduenture not so absolute as some haue thought, but out of all peraduenture the other more straighte and narrow, then that the Church which is by Office a Mother vnto such as craueat her hands the Sacred Mysterie of their new Birth, should repell them, and see them dye vnsatisfied of these their Ghostly Desires, rather then giue them their bodies Rites, with omission of those things that serue but onely for the more conuenient and orderly Administration thereof. For as on the one side we grant that those sentences of Holie Scripture which make Sacraments most necessary to eternall life, are no preiudice to their Saluation that want them by some inculpable necessitie, and without any fault of their owne; so it ought in reason to bee likewise acknowledged, that for as much as our Lord himselfe maketh Baptisme necessarie, necessarie whether wee respect the good receiued by Baptisme, or the Testimonie thereby yeelded vnto God of that humilitie and meeke obedience, which reposing wholly it selfe on the absolute authority of his Commandement, and on the truth of his Heauenly Promise, doubteth not but from Creatures despicable in their owne condition and substance to obtaine grace of inestimable value, or rather not from them but from him, yet by them as by his appointed meanes, howsoeuer hee by the secret wayes of his owne incomprehensible mercie may be thought to saue without Baptisme, this cleereth not the Church from guiltinesse of bloud, if through her superfluous scrupulositie, lets and impediments of lesse regard should cause a grace of so great moment to bee with-held, wherein our mercilesse nicitnesse may bee our owne harme, although not theirs towards whom wee shew it;

m 1. Cor. 7. 14.

and

and we for the hardnesse of our hearts may perish, albeit they through Gods vnspeakeable mercie doe liue. God which did not afflict that innocent, whose Circumcision *Moses* had ouer-long deferred, tooke reuenge vpon * *Moses* himselfe for the iniurie, which was done through so great neglect, giuing vs thereby to vnderstand, that they whom Gods owne mercie saueth without vs, are on our parts notwithstanding, and as much as in vs lyeth, euen destroyed, when vnder vnsufficient presences, wee defraude them of such ordinarie outward helpes as wee should exhibit. Wee haue for Baptisme no day set as the Iewes had for Circumcision, neither haue wee by the Law of God, but onely by the Churches discretion, a place thereunto appointed. Baptisme therefore, euen in the meaning of the Law of Christ, belongeth vnto Infants capable thereof, from the * verie instant of their birth. Which if they haue not howsoeuer, rather then lose it by being put off, because the time, the place, or some such like circumstance, doth not solemnely enough concurre, the Church as much as in her lyeth, wilfully casteth away their soules.

* Exod. 4, 24.

* *In omnibus obligationibus in quibus dies non ponitur, præsentis dicitur esse*, lib. 14. D. de Reg. Iur.

61 The Ancient it may bee were too seuere, and made the necessitie of Baptisme more absolute then reason would, as touching Infants. But will any man say that they, notwithstanding their too much rigour heerein, did not in that respect sustaine and tolerate defects of locall or of personall solemnities, belonging to the Sacrament of Baptisme? The Apostles themselues did neither vse nor appoint for baptisme any certaine time. The Church for generall baptisme heeretofore made choise of two chiefe dayes in the yeere, the feast of Easter, and the feast of Pentecost. Which custome, when certaine Churches in Sicily beganne to violate without cause, they were by *b Leo* Bishop of Rome aduised, rather to conforme themselues to the rest of the World in things so reasonable, then to offend mens mindes through needlesse singularitie: howbeit, alwayes prouiding that neuertheless in apparent perill of death, danger of siege, freights af persecution, feare of shipwracke, and the like exigents, no respect of times should cause this singular defence of true safety to bee denied vnto any. This of *Leo* did but confirme that sentence which *c Victor* had many yeares before giuen, extending the same exception as well vnto *places* as times. That which Saint *Augustine* speaketh of women, hasting to bring their children to the Church when they saw danger, is a weake proofe, that *when necessity did not leaue them so much time*, it was not then permitted them neither to make a Church of their owne house. Which answer dischargeth likewise their example of a sicke Iew, caried in bed to the place of Baptisme, and not baptized at home in priuat. The cause why such kinde of baptisme barred men afterwards from entring into holy orders, the reason wherefore it was obiected against *Nouatain*, in what respect

What things in Baptisme haue been dispenced with by the Fathers, respecting necessity.

a T. C. lib. 3. pag. 219. The Authors themselues of that error, that they cannot be saued which are not baptized, did neuer seeke no remedie of the mischiefe in Women or priuate Baptisme. T. C. *lib.* 3. *pag.* 219. What plaine testimonie can there bee, then that of *Augustine*, which speaketh the vse of the Church to haue beene, to come to the Church with their children in danger of death, and that when some had opinion, that their children could not be saued if they were not baptized, Conc. lib. 1 Parm. lib. 2. cap. 13. I would also know of him what hee will answer to that, which is noted of a Christian Iew desperately sicke of the palsie, that he was with his bed carried to the place of Baptisme, Sacr. lib. 7. Cap. 4. What will hee answere to this, That those which were baptized in their beddes, were thereby made vnapt to haue any place amongst the Clergie [as they call them] doth it not argue a note of infamie in those, which had procured that Baptisme should bee ministred in priuate houses? Euseb. Lib. 6. Cap. 43. What vnto the Emperours decree, which vpon authoritie of the ancient Lawes, and of the Apostles, forbiddeth that the holie things should bee administred in any priuate mans house? Iust. Nouel. 57. b Leo Epist. 4. ad Epis. Sicil. c Vict. Epist. ad Theod. Imperat. in Pontif. Damas.

reſpect and how farre-forth it did diſable, may be gathered by the twelfth Canon ſet downe in the Councell of Neocæſarea, after this manner. *A man which hath beene baptized in ſickneſſe, is not after to bee ordained Prieſt.* For it may be thought, *that ſuch doe rather at that time, becauſe they ſee no other remedy, then of a voluntary minde, lay hold on the Chriſtian faith, vnleſſe their true and ſincere meaning be made afterwards the more manifeſt, or elſe the ſcarſity of others inforce the Church to admit them.* They bring in *Iuſtinians* imperiall Conſtitution, but to what purpoſe, ſeeing it only forbiddeth men to haue the myſteries of God adminiſtred in their priuate Chappels, leſt vnder that pretence hereſiks ſhould do ſecretly thoſe things which were vnlawfull? In which conſideration he therfore commandeth, that if they would vſe thoſe priuate Oratories otherwiſe then onely for their priuate Prayers, the Biſhop ſhould appoint them a Clarke, whom they might entertaine for that purpoſe. This is plaine by later Conſtitutions, made in the time of L. 2 or[a] *It was thought good* (ſaith the Emperour) *in their iudgement which haue gone before, that in priuate Chappels none ſhould celebrate the holy Communion, but Prieſts belonging vnto greater Churches. Which order they took as it ſeemeth for the cuſtodie of Religion, leſt men ſhould ſecretly receiue from heretikes, in ſtead of the food the haue of their ſoules, pollution in place of expiation.* [b] Againe, *Whereas a ſacred Canon of the firſt reuerend Synode requireth Baptiſme, as others haue likewiſe the holy Sacrifices and Myſteries, to be celebrated only in Temples hallowed for publike vſe, and not in priuate Oratories; which ſtrict decrees appeare to haue him made heretofore in regard of Heretikes, which entred cloſely into ſuch mens houſes as fauoured their opinions, whom, vnder colour of performing with them ſuch religious Offices, they drew from the ſoundnes of true Religion: now that peruerſe opinions through the grace of Almighty God are extinct & gon: the cauſe of former reſtraints being taken away, we ſee no reaſon but that priuat Oratories may hencefoorwardmore haue that liberty, which to haue granted them heretofore, had not him ſeſe.* In ſum, all theſe things alledged are nothing, nor will it euer be proued while the world doth continue, but that the practice of the Church in caſes of extreme neceſſity, hath made for priuate Baptiſme alwaies more then againſt it. Yea, *Baptiſme by any man in the caſe of neceſſity*, was the [c] voice of the whole world heretofore. Neither is *Tertullian*, *Epiphanius*, *Auguſtine*, or any other of the ancient againſt it. The boldnes of ſuch as pretending *Teclaes* example, tooke openly vpon them both Baptiſme, and all other publique functions of Prieſt-hood, *Tertullian* ſeuerely controlleth, ſaying: [d] *To giue Baptiſme is the right the Biſhops right. After him it belongeth vnto Prieſts and Deacons; but not to them without authority from him receiued. For ſo the honor of the Church reſpecteth, which being kept, preſerueth peace. Were it not in this reſpect, the Laity might doe the ſame, all ſorts might giue them as all ſorts receiue.* But becauſe Emulation is the mother of Schiſmes, *Let it content them* (which are of the order of Laymen) *to do it in neceſſity, when the ſtate of time, or place, or perſon thereunto compelleth. For then is their boldneſſe priuiledged that helpe, when the circumſtance of other mens dangers craueth it.* What hee granteth generally to Lay perſons of the houſe of God, the ſame wee cannot ſuppoſe hee denyeth to any ſort or ſexe contained vnder that name, vnleſſe himſelfe did reſtraine the limites of his owne ſpeech, eſpecially ſeeing that *Tertullians* rule of interpretation

is

a *Leo Conſt. 4.*
b *Idem Conſt. 25*
c *J. C. lib. 1. pag. 145.* To allow of Womens baptizing, is not only contrarie to the learned Writers now, but alſo contrary to all learned Antiquity, & contrarie to the practiſe of the Church whilſt there was any tollerable eſtate. *Tertull. de Virgin. velandis & lib. de Baptiſ.* *Epiphan. lib. 1. & lib. 2. cont. Marcos.* *S. Auguſtine*, although he ſeeme to allow of a Lay mans Baptiſme in time of neceſſity, *Cont. Epiſt. Parmen. lib. 2. c. 13.* yet there he mentioneth not Womens Baptiſme. And in the fourth Councell of Carthage, *cap. 89.* it is ſimply without exception decreed, that a woman ought not to baptize.
d *Tertull. de Baptiſ.*

is [a] elſewhere, *Specialties are ſignified vnder that which is generall, becauſe they are therein comprehended.* Al which *Tertullian* doth [b] denie, is, that women may be called to beare, or publikely take vpon them to execute Offices of Eccleſiaſticall order, whereof none but men are capable. As for *Epiphanius*, he ſtriketh on the very ſelfe-ſame Anuill with *Tertullian*. And in neceſſitie if S. *Auguſtine* allow as much vnto Lay-men as *Tertullian* doth, his *not mentioning* of women, is but a ſlender proofe that his meaning was to exclude women. Finally, the Councell of Carthage likewiſe, although it make no expreſſe ſubmiſſion, may bee very well preſumed, willing to ſtoupe as other Poſitiue ordinances doe, to the countermands of neceſſitie. Iudge therefore what the ancient would haue thought, if in their dayes it had beene heard which is publiſhed in ours, [c] that becauſe, *The ſubſtance of the Sacrament doth chiefly depend on the inſtitution of God, which is the forme, and as it were the life of the Sacrament*, therefore firſt, *if the whole inſtitution be not kept, it is no Sacrament*; and ſecondly, if Baptiſme be priuate his inſtitution is broken, in as much as *according to the orders which he hath ſet for Baptiſme, it ſhould be done in the Congregation*, from whoſe ordinance in this point *we ought not to ſwarue, although we know that Infants ſhould be aſſuredly damned without Baptiſme.* O ſir, you that would ſpurn thus at ſuch, as in caſe of ſo dreadfull extremitie ſhould lie proſtrate before your feet, you that would turne away your face from them at the houre of their moſt neede, you that would damme vp your eares, and harden your hearts as Iron, againſt the vnreſiſtable cryes of Supplicants, calling vpon you for mercy with termes of ſuch inuocation, as that moſt dreadful perplexitie might miniſter, if God by miracle did open the mouthes of Infants, to expreſſe their ſuppoſed neceſſitie, ſhould firſt imagine your ſelfe in their caſe, and them in yours. This done, let their ſupplications proceed out of your mouth, and your anſwere out of theirs. Would you then contentedly heare, *My Sonne, the Rites and Solemnities of Baptiſme muſt be kept, we may not doe* [d] *ill that good may come of it, neither are ſoules to be deliuered from eternall death and condemnation, by breaking orders which Chriſt hath ſet*, would you in their caſe your ſelfe be ſhaken off with theſe anſweres, and not rather imbrace incloſed with both your armes a ſentence, which now is no Goſpell vnto you, [e] *I will haue mercy and not ſacrifice?* To acknowledge Chriſts inſtitution the ground of both Sacraments, I ſuppoſe, no Chriſtian man will refuſe: for it giueth them their very nature, it appointeth the matter whereof they conſiſt, the forme of their adminiſtration it teacheth, and it bleſſeth them with that grace vvhereby to vs they are both pledges and inſtruments of life. Neuertheleſſe, ſeeing Chriſts inſtitution contayneth, beſides that vvhich maketh complete the Eſſence or Nature, other things that onely are parts as it vvere of the furniture of Sacraments, the difference betweene theſe two muſt vnfold that vvhich the generall termes of indefinite ſpeech would confound. If the place appointed for Baptiſme be a part of Chriſts inſtitution, it is but his inſtitution as *ſacrifice*, Baptiſme his inſtitution as *mercy*, in this caſe. He which requireth both Mercy and Sacrifice, reiecteth his owne inſtitution of Sacrifice, vvhere the offering of ſacrifice

a *Subiectum eſt generall ſpeciali. In ipſo ſignificatur, quia in ipſo cõtinetur*, Tert. de velan. Virg. *Poſito genere ſupponitur ſpecies*, Azo. in l. 2. c. de Tranſact.

b *Non permittitur mulieri in Eccleſia loqui, ſed nec docere, nec tingere, nec offerre, nec vllius virilis muneris nedum Sacerdotalis officij ſortem ſibi vendicare*, Tertul. de veland. Vir.

c *T.C.l.1.p.144.* The ſubſtance of the Sacrament dependeth chiefly of the inſtitution and Word of God, which is the forme, and as it were the life of the Sacrament, *T.C.lib.1.p.144.* Although part of the inſtitution be obſerued, yet if the whole inſtitution be not, it is no Sacrament, *T.C.lib.1.p.146.* The orders which God hath ſet, are, that it ſhould be done in the Congregation and by the Miniſter, *T.C lib.1.p.146* And I will further ſay, that although that the Infants which die with out Baptiſme ſhould be aſſuredly damned, (which is moſt falſe) yet

ought not the orders which God hath ſet in his Church, be broken after this ſort. d *Noſtro peccato alterius ſaluti conſulere non debemus*, Aug. lib. cont. Menda. c.17. e *Matth.9.13.*

vvould

would hinder mercy from being ſhewed. Externall circumſtances euen in the
a *Matth.*23.23. holieſt and higheſt actions, are but the[a] *leſſer things of the Law*, whereunto thoſe actions themſelues being compared are *the greater*; and therefore as the greater are of ſuch importance that they *muſt be done*, ſo in that extremitie before ſuppoſed, if our account of the leſſer which are *not to be omitted*, ſhould cauſe omiſſion of that which is more to bee accounted of, were not this our ſtrict obedience to Chriſts inſtitution touching *Mint and Commin*, a diſobedience to his inſtitution concerning loue? But ſith no inſtitution of Chriſt hath ſo ſtrictly tyed Baptiſme to publique Aſſemblies, as it hath done all men vnto Baptiſme, away with theſe mercileſſe and bloudie ſentences, let them neuer bee found ſtanding in the bookes and writings of a Chriſtian man, they ſauour not of Chriſt, nor of his moſt gracious and meeke Spirit, but vnder colour of exact obedience, they nouriſh crueltie and hardneſſe of heart.

Whether Baptiſme by Women be true Baptiſme, good and effectuall to them that receiue it.

62 To leaue priuate Baptiſme therefore, and to come vnto Baptiſme by women, which [b] they ſay, is no more a Sacrament, then any other ordinarie waſhing or bathing of a mans body; the reaſon whereupon they ground their opinion herein is ſuch, as making Baptiſme by Women void, becauſe Women are no Miniſters in the Church of God, muſt needes generally annihilate the Baptiſme of all vnto whom their conceit ſhall apply this exception, whether it be in regard of ſexe, of qualitie, of inſufficiencie, or whatſoeuer. For if want of Calling doe fruſtrate Baptiſme, they that baptize without Calling do nothing, bee they Women or Men. To make Women Teachers in the houſe of God,
c 1.Tim.2.12. were a groſſe abſurditie, ſeeing the Apoſtle hath ſaid, [c] *I permit not a Woman to*
d 1.Cor.14.34. *teach*: And againe, [d] *Let your Women in Churches be ſilent*. Thoſe extraordinarie gifts of ſpeaking with tongues and prophecying, which God at that time did not onely beſtow vpon Men, but on Women alſo, made it the harder to hold them confined with priuate bounds. Whereupon the Apoſtles ordinance was neceſſarie againſt Womens publique admiſſion to teach. And becauſe when Law hath begun ſome one thing or other well, it giueth good occaſion either to draw by iudicious expoſition out of the very Law it ſelfe, or to annexe to the Law by authoritie and iuriſdiction things of like conueniencie,
e *Clem. Conſt. Apoſtol. lib.2. cap.9.* therefore [e] *Clement* extendeth this Apoſtolike Conſtitution to Baptiſme. For (ſaith he) *If we haue denyed them leaue to teach, how ſhould any man diſſence with nature, and make them Miniſters of holy things, ſeeing this vnskilfulneſſe is a part of the Grecians impietie, which for the ſeruice of women goddeſſes, haue women Prieſts?* I ſomewhat marueil, that men which would not willingly be thought to ſpeake or write, but with good conſcience, dare hereupon openly auouch
ff *C.L.1.p.144.* *Clement* for a [f] witneſſe, that *as when the Church began not onely to decline, but to fall away from the ſinceritie of Religion, it borrowed a number of other prophanations of the Heathens, ſo it borrowed this, and would needes haue women Prieſts as the Heathens had, and that this was one occaſion of bringing Baptiſme by Women into the Church of God.* Is it not plaine in their owne eyes, that firſt by an euidence which forbiddeth Women to bee Miniſters of Baptiſme,

b *T.C. lib.1. pag.144.* On this point, whether hee bee a Miniſter or no, dependeth not onely the dignitie, but alſo the being of the Sacrament. So that I take the Baptiſme of Women to bee no more the holy Sacrament of Baptiſme, then any other daily or ordinarie waſhing of the child.

they

they endeuour to ſhew how Women were admitted vnto that function in the waine and declination of Chriſtian pietie: Secondly, that by an euidence reiecting the Heathens, and condemning them of impietie, they would proone ſuch affection towards Heathens, as ordereth the affaires of the Church by the patterne of their example: and thirdly, that out of an euidence which nameth the Heathens, as being in ſome part a reaſon why the Church had no Women Prieſts, they gather, the Heathens to haue beene one of the firſt occaſions why it had? So that throughout euery branch of this teſtimonie their iſſue is, *Yea*, and their euidence directly, *No*. But to womens Baptiſme in priuate by occaſion of vrgent neceſſitie, the reaſons that onely concerne ordinarie Baptiſme in publike are no iuſt preiudice, neither can we by force thereof diſproue the practice of thoſe Churches, which (neceſſitie requiring) allow Baptiſme in priuate to be adminiſtred by Women. Wee may not from Lawes that prohibit any thing with reſtraint, conclude abſolute and vnlimited prohibitions: Although wee denie not but they which vtterly forbid ſuch Baptiſme, may haue perhaps wherewith to iuſtifie their orders againſt it. For, euen things lawfull are [a] well prohibited, when there is feare leſt they make the way too vnlawfull more eaſie. And it may bee, the libertie of Baptiſme by Women at ſuch times, doth ſometimes embolden the raſher ſort to doe it where no ſuch neceſſitie is. But whether of permiſſion beſides Law, or in preſumption againſt Law they doe it, is it thereby altogether fruſtrate, void, and as though it were neuer giuen? They which haue not at the firſt their right Baptiſme, muſt of neceſſitie bee rebaptized, becauſe the Law of Chriſt tyeth all men to receiue Baptiſme. Iteration of Baptiſme once giuen hath beene alwayes thought a manifeſt contempt of that auncient Apoſtolique Aphoriſme, [b] *One Lord, one Faith, one Baptiſme*, Baptiſme not onely one in as much as it hath euery-where the ſame ſubſtance, and offereth vnto all men the ſame grace, but one alſo for that it ought not to bee receiued by any one man aboue once. Wee ſerue that Lord which is but one, becauſe no other can bee ioyned with him: wee embrace that Faith which is but one, becauſe it admitteth no innouation: that Baptiſme wee receiue which is but one, becauſe it cannot be receiued often. For how ſhould we practiſe iteration of Baptiſme, and yet teach that wee are by Baptiſme borne anew, that by Baptiſme wee are admitted into the heauenly ſocietie of Saints, that thoſe things bee really and effectually done by Baptiſme, which are no more poſſible to bee often done, [c] then a man can naturally bee often borne, or ciuilly bee often adopted into any ones ſtocke and family? This alſo is the cauſe why they that preſent vs vnto Baptiſme, are inſtiled for euer after our Parents in God, and the reaſon why there wee receiue new names, in token that by Baptiſme wee are made new creatures. As Chriſt hath therefore died and riſen from the dead but once, ſo the Sacrament which both extinguiſheth in him our former ſinne, and beginneth in vs a new condition of life, is by one onely actuall adminiſtration for euer auaileable, according to that in the Nicene Creede, *I beleeue one baptiſme for remiſſion of ſinnes*. And becauſe ſecond Baptiſme was euer [d] abhord in the Church of God as a kind of inceſtuous birth, they that iterate Baptiſme, are driuen vnder ſome pretence or other to make the former Baptiſme void. *Tertullian*

a *Licita prohibentur, ne ſi permitterentur, eorum occaſione perueniatur ad illicita. L. neque tam quam* Iuſt. de Authentic. tut. l. Officium. D. de rei vind.

b *Ephes.* 4. 5.

c *Vna eſt natiuitas de terra, alia de cælo; vna de carne, alia de Spiritu; vna de æternitate, alia de mortalitate: vna de maſculo & fœmina, alia de Deo & Eccleſia. Sed ipſæ duæ ſingulares ſunt. Quomodo enim vterum non poteſt repeti, ſic nec baptiſmus iterari*, Proſp. Senten. 331. *Eia fratres lætitiam genitalis fœtus ad laticem conſolate, vt ſemper vobis æqua feſtiuitas, hoc ante omnia ſcientes, quia hanc nec effunderetis nec rurſus haurire*, Zeno. Initiat. ad font.

d *Auguſt. de Baptiſ. cont. Don. Lib. 4. c. 14.*

a Tertull. de Baptiſm.
b Cypr. Epiſt. 72.

a *Tertullian* the firſt that propoſed to the Church, b *Agrippinus* the firſt in the Church that accepted, and againſt the vſe of the Church *Nouatian* the firſt that publikely began to practiſe rebaptization, did it therefore vpon theſe two grounds, a true perſwalion that Baptiſme is neceſſarie, and a falſe, that the Baptiſme which others adminiſtred was no Baptiſme. *Nouatianus* his conceit was, that none can adminiſter true Baptiſme but the true Church of IESVS CHRIST, that he and his followers alone were the Church, and for the reſt he accounted them wicked and prophane perſons, ſuch as by Baptiſme could cleanſe no man, vnleſſe they firſt did purifie themſelues, and reforme the faults wherewith hee charged them. At which time c S. *Cyprian* with the greateſt part of African Biſhops, becauſe they likewiſe thought that none but only the true Church of God can baptize, and were of nothing more certainely perſwaded, then that Heretikes are as rotten branches cut off from the life and body of the true Church, gathered hereby that the Church of God both may with good conſideration, and ought to reuerſe that Baptiſme which is giuen by Heretikes. Theſe held and practiſed their owne opinion, yet with great proteſtations often made that they neither loued a whit the leſſe, nor thought in any reſpect the worſe of them that were of a contrarie minde. In requitall of which ingenious moderation, the reſt that withſtood them, did it in peaceable ſort with very good regard had of them as of men in error, but not in hereſie. The Biſhop of Rome againſt their nouelties, vp-held as beſeemed him, the ancient and true Apoſtolike Cuſtomes, till they which vnaduiſedly before had erred, became in a manner all d reconciled friends vnto Truth, and ſaw that Hereſie in the Miniſters of Baptiſme, could no way euacuate the force thereof; e ſuch Hereſie alone excepted, as by reaſon of vnſoundneſſe in the higheſt Articles of Chriſtian Faith, preſumed to change, and by changing to mayme the ſubſtance, the forme of Baptiſme. In which reſpect the Church did neither ſimply diſanull, nor abſolutely ratifie Baptiſme by Heretikes. For the Baptiſme which Nouatianiſts gaue, ſtood firme, whereas they whom f Samoſatenians had baptized, were rebaptized. It was likewiſe ordered in the g Councell of Arles, that if any Arrian did reconcile himſelfe to the Church, they ſhould admit him without new baptiſme, vnleſſe by examination they found him not baptized in the name of the Trinitie. *Dionyſius* Biſhop of Alexandria h maketh report, how there liued vnder him a man of good reputation, and of very ancient continuance in that Church, who being preſent at the Rites of Baptiſme, and obſeruing with better conſideration then euer before what was there done, came, and with weeping ſubmiſſion craued of his Biſhop not to denie him Baptiſme, the due of all which profeſſe Chriſt, ſeeing it had beene ſo long ſithence his euill hap to bee deceiued by the fraud of Heretikes, and at their hands (which till now hee neuer throughly and duely weighed) to take a Baptiſme full fraught with blaſphemous impieties, a Baptiſme in nothing like vnto that

c Euſeb. lib 7. cap. 1, 2, 3. Cypr. Epiſt. 70, 71, 72, 73, 74, 75, 76.

d *Illi ipſi Epiſcopi qui rebaptizandos Hæreticos cum Cypriano ſtatuerant, ad antiquam conſuetudinem reuoluti nouum miſere decretum.* Hieron. cont. Lucifer. *Vide & Auguſt. cont. Creſcon. lib. 3. cap. 2, 3. & Epiſt. 48.*

e *Dixiſti fieri non poſſe vt in falſo baptiſmate inquinatus abluat, immundus emundet, ſupplantator erigat, perditus liberet, reus veniam tribuat, damnatus abſoluat. Bene hæc omnia poterunt ad ſolos hæreticos pertinere, qui falſum ſunt ſymbolum, dum alter dixerit duos Deos, cum Deus unus ſit, alter Patrem vult in perſona Filij confoſi, alter carnem ſubdiens Filio Dei per quam Deo reconciliatus eſt mundus: & cæteri huiuſmodi, qui à Samaritis Catholicis alieni noſcuntur.* Optat. lib. 1.

f Synod. Nicæ. cap. 19.
g Synod. 1. Arelat. cap. 8.

h Euſeb. Eccleſ. Hiſt. lib. 7. cap. 8.

that which the true Church of Chriſt vſeth. The Biſhop greatly mooued thereat, yet darſt not aduenture to rebaptize, but did the beſt hee could to put him in good comfort, vſing much perſwaſion with him not to trouble himſelfe with things that were paſt and gone, not after ſo long continuance in the fellowſhip of Gods people, to call now in queſtion his firſt entrance. The poore man that ſaw himſelfe in this ſort anſwered but not ſatisfied, ſpent afterwards his life in continuall perplexitie, whereof the Biſhop remayned fearefull to giue releaſe: perhaps too fearefull, if the Baptiſme were ſuch as his owne Declaration importeth. For that the ſubſtance thereof was rotten at the very firſt, is neuer by tract of time able to recouer ſoundneſſe. And where true Baptiſme was not before giuen, the caſe of rebaptization is cleere. But by this it appeareth that Baptiſme is not void in regard of Hereſie, and therefore much leſſe through any *other morall* defect in the Miniſter thereof. Vnder which ſecond pretenſe, Donatiſts notwithſtanding tooke vpon them to make fruſtrate the Churches Baptiſme, and themſelues to rebaptize their owne fry. For whereas ſome fortie yeares after the Martyrdome of bleſſed *Cyprian*, the Emperour *Dioclefian* began to * perſecute the Church of Chriſt, and for the ſpeedier abolliſhment of their Religion, to burne vp their ſacred Bookes, there were in the Church it ſelfe *Traditors*, content to deliuer vp the Bookes of God by compoſition, to the end their owne liues might bee ſpared. Which men growing thereby odious to the reſt, whoſe conſtancie was greater, it fortuned that after, when one *Cæcilian* was ordained Biſhop in the Church of Carthage, whom others endeuoured in vaine to defeate by excepting againſt him as a *Traditor*, they whoſe accuſations could not preuaile, deſperately ioyned themſelues in one, and made a Biſhop of their owne crue, accounting from that day forward their faction the onely true and ſincere Church. The firſt Biſhop on that part was *Maiorinus*, whoſe Succeſſour *Donatus* being the firſt that wrote in defence of their Schiſme, the Birdes that were hatched before by others haue their names from him. Arrians and Donatiſts beganne both about one time. Which Hereſies according to the different ſtrength of their owne ſinewes, wrought as hope of ſucceſſe led them, the one with the choiceſt wits, the other with the multitude ſo farre, that after long and troubleſome experience, the perfecteſt view men could take of both was hardly able to induce any certaine determinate reſolution, whether Errour may doe more by the curious ſubtletie of ſharpe Diſcourſe, or elſe by the meere appearance of zeale and deuout affection, the later of which two aides, gaue Donatiſts beyond all mens expectation, as great a ſway as euer any Schiſme or Hereſie had within that reach of the Chriſtian World where it bred and grew: the rather perhaps becauſe the Church which neither greatly feared them, and beſides had neceſſarie cauſe to bend it ſelfe againſt others that aymed directly at a farre higher marke the Deity of Chriſt, was contented to let Donatiſts haue theirs forth by the ſpace of threeſcore yeares and aboue, euen from tenne yeeres before *Conſtantine*, till the time that b *Optatus* Biſhop of Mileuis publiſhed his Bookes againſt *Parmenian*. During which terme and the ſpace of that Schiſmes continuance afterwards, they had, beſides many other Secular and worldly meanes to helpe them forward, theſe ſpeciall aduantages. Firſt, the very occaſion of

* *circa an.* 300.

b *circa an.* 370

their breach with the Church of God, a iuſt hatred and diſlike of *Traditors* ſeemed plauſible; they eaſily perſwaded their hearers that ſuch men could not bee holy as held cõmunion & fellowſhip with them that betray Religion. Againe, when to dazle the eyes of the ſimple, and to proone that it can bee no Church which is not holy, they had in ſhew and ſound of words the glorious pretenſe of the Creed Apoſtolike, *I beleeue the holy Catholike Church*, wee need not thinke it any ſtrange thing that with the multitude they gained credit. And auouching that ſuch as are not of the true Church can adminiſter no true Baptiſme, they had for this point whole Volumes of *S. Cyprians* owne writing, together with the iudgement of diuers African Synods, whoſe ſentence was the ſame with his. Whereupon, the Fathers were likewiſe in defence of their iuſt cauſe very greatly preiudiced, both for that they could not inforce the docile meus communion with a Church confeſt to be in many things blame-worthy; vnleſſe they ſhould oftentimes ſeeme to ſpeake as halfe defendors of the faults themſelues, or at the leaſt not ſo vehement accuſers thereof as their aduerſaries; and to withſtand iteration of Baptiſme, the other branch of the Donatiſts Hereſie was impoſſible, without manifeſt and profeſt reiection of *Cyprian*, whom the World vniuerſally did in his life time admire as the greateſt amongſt Prelates, & now honor as the loweſt in the Kingdome of Heauen. So true we find it by experience of all Ages in the Church of God, that the Teachers errour is the peoples tryall, harder and heauier by ſo much to beare, as he is in worth and regard greater that miſperſwadeth them. Although there was oddes betweene *Cyprians* cauſe and theirs, he differing from others of founder vnderſtanding in that point, but not diuiding himſelfe from the body of the Church by Schiſme, as did the Donatiſts. For which cauſe, [a] ſaith VINCENTIVS, *Of one and the ſame opinion we iudge (which may ſeeme ſtrange) the Authors Catholike, & the followers Heretical; we acquit the Maſters, and condemne the Schollers; they are heires of heauen which haue written thoſe Bookes, the defenders whereof are trodden downe to the pit of hel.* The inuectiues of Catholike Writers therefore againſt thẽ are ſharpe; the words of [b] Imperiall Edicts by *Honorius* & *Theodoſius* made to bridle them very bitter, the puniſhments ſeuere in reuenge of their folly. Howbeit for feare (as wee may coniecture) leſt much ſhould bee derogated from the Baptiſme of the Church, and Baptiſme by Donatiſts be more eſteemed of then was meete, if on the one ſide that which Heretikes had done ill ſhould ſtand as good, on the other ſide that be reuerſed which the Catholike Church had well and religiouſly done, diuers better minded then aduiſed men, thought it fitteſt to meete with this inconuenience, by rebaptizing Donatiſts as well as they rebaptized Catholikes. For ſtay whereof, the [c] ſame Emperours ſaw it meet to giue their Lawe a double edge, whereby it might equally on both ſides cut off not only Heretikes which rebaptized whom they could peruert, but alſo Catholike and Chriſtian Prieſts which did the like vnto ſuch as before had taken Baptiſme at the hands of Heretikes, and were afterwards reconciled to the Church of God. Donatiſts were therefore in proceſſe of time, though with much adoe, wearied, and at the length worne out by the conſtancie of that Truth which teacheth, that euill Miniſters of good things are as Torches, a light to others, a waſte to none but themſelues onely, and that the fouleneſſe of their hands can

neither

a *Vincent. Liuin. aduerſ. hæreſ.* c. 11.

b *Vide C. Theo. lib. 16. tit. 6. l. Aduerſus & l. Nullus circa an.* 405.

c *Siquis C. Ne. ſtemb. baptiſ. circa an.* 413.

neither any whit impaire the vertue, nor ſtaine the glorie of the Myſteries of Chriſt. Now that which was done amiſſe by vertuous and good men, as *Cyprian* carryed aſide with hatred againſt Hereſie, and was ſecondly followed by Donatiſts, whom Enuie and Rancor couered with ſhew of Godlines, made obſtinate to cancell whatſoeuer the Church did in the Sacrament of Baptiſme, hath of later dayes, in another reſpect, farre different from both the former, beene brought freſhly againe into practice. For the Anabaptiſt rebaptizeth, becauſe, in his eſtimation the Baptiſme of the Church is fruſtrate, for that we giue it vnto Infants which haue not Faith, whereas, according vnto Chriſts Inſtitution as they conceiue it, true Baptiſme ſhould alwayes preſuppoſe actuall Beliefe in Receiuers, and is otherwiſe no Baptiſme. Of theſe three Errours, there is not any but hath beene able at the leaſt to alleage in defence of it ſelfe many faire probabilities. Notwithſtanding, ſith the Church of God hath hitherto alwayes conſtantly maintained, that to rebaptize them which are knowne to haue receiued true Baptiſme is vnlawfull; that if Baptiſme ſeriouſly be adminiſtred in the ſame Element, and with the ſame forme of words which Chriſts Inſtitution teacheth, there is no other defect in the World that can make it fruſtrate, or deprriue it of the nature of a true Sacrament; and laſtly, that Baptiſme is onely then to be read miniſtred, when the firſt deliuerie thereof is void, in regard of the fore-alleaged imperfections and no other, ſhall wee now in the caſe of Baptiſme, which hauing both for matter and forme the ſubſtance of Chriſts Inſtitution, is by a fourth ſort of men voided, for the onely defect of Eccleſiaſticall authoritie in the Miniſter, thinke it enough that they blow away the force thereof with the bare ſtrength of their very breath, by ſaying, *We take ſuch Baptiſme to be no more the Sacrament of Baptiſme, then any other ordinarie bathing to be a Sacrament?* * It behoueth generally all ſorts of men to keepe themſelues within the limits of their owne vocation. And ſeeing God, from whom mens ſeuerall degrees and preeminences doe proceed, hath appointed them in his Church, at whoſe hands his pleaſure is that wee ſhould receiue both Baptiſme and all other publike medicinable helpes of ſoule, perhappes thereby the more to ſettle our hearts in the loue of our ghoſtly Superiors, they haue ſmall cauſe to hope that with him their voluntarie ſeruices will be accepted, who thruſt themſelues into Functions, eyther aboue their capacitie or beſides their place, and ouer-boldly intermeddle with duties, whereof no charge was euer giuen them. They that in any thing exceed the compaſſe of their owne order, doe as much as in them lyeth to diſſolue that Order which is the harmonie of Gods Church. Suppoſe therefore, that in theſe and the like conſiderations the Law did vtterly prohibit Baptiſme to bee adminiſtred by any other then perſons thereunto ſolemnely conſecrated; what neceſſitie ſoeuer happen. Are not * many things firme being done, although in part done otherwiſe then Poſitiue rigor and ſtrictneſſe did require? Nature as much as is poſſible inclineth vnto validities and preſeruations Diſſolutions and Nullities of things done are not onely not fauoured, but hated, when either vrged without cauſe, or extended beyond their reach: if therefore at any time it come to paſſe, that in teaching publikely or priuately in deliuering this Bleſſed Sacrament of Regeneration ſome vnſanctified hand, contrarie to Chriſts ſuppoſed

* *Num.* 16.10. *Leuit.*10.1. 1.*Sam.*13.11. 2.*Sam.*6.6. 2.*Chr.*26.16. *Heb.*5.4.

* *Seq.*306. *Lugdunenſis è ex literis Decretal. de matrim. cõtract. Damaſ. Burchar. reg.*109. *Prohibita fieri ſi facta non tenent. In prohibitionibus autem ciuiles fauſtus arabiles contrarium obtinet.*

Ordinance, do intrude it ſelfe to execute that, whereupon the Lawes of God & his Church haue deputed others, which of theſe two opinions ſeemeth more agreeable with Equitie, ours that diſallow what is done amiſſe, yet make not the force of the Word and Sacraments, much leſſe their nature and very ſubſtance to depend on the Miniſters authoritie and calling, or elſe [m] theirs which defeate, diſanull, and annihilate both, in reſpect of that one onely perſonall defect, there being not any Law of God which ſaith, that if the Miniſter bee incompetent, his Word ſhall be no Word, his Baptiſme no Baptiſme? He which teacheth and is not ſent, loſeth the reward, but yet retayneth the name of a Teacher; his vſurped actions haue in him the ſame nature which they haue in others, although they yeeld him not the ſame comfort. And if theſe two caſes be peeres, the caſe of Doctrine and the caſe of Baptiſme both alike, ſith no defect in their vocation that teach the Truth, is able to take away the benefit thereof from him which heareth, wherefore ſhould the want of a lawfull calling in them that baptize, make Baptiſme to bee vaine? They [n] graunt that the matter and the forme in Sacraments are the onely parts of ſubſtance, and that if theſe two bee retayned, albeit other things beſides bee vſed which are inconuenient, the Sacrament notwithſtanding is adminiſtred but not ſincerely. Why perſiſt they not in this opinion? when by theſe faire ſpeeches they haue put vs in hope of agreement, wherefore ſup they vp their words againe, interlacing ſuch friuolous Interpretations and Gloſes as diſgrace their Sentence? What ſhould moue them, hauing named the *matter* and the *forme* of the Sacrament, to giue vs preſently warning, that they meane by *the forme* of the Sacrament *the inſtitution*, which expoſition darkeneth whatſoeuer was before plaine? For whereas in common vnderſtanding, that *forme*, which added to the Element doth make a Sacrament, and is of the outward ſubſtance thereof, containeth onely the words of vſuall application, they ſet it downe (leſt common Dictionaries ſhould deceiue vs) that *the forme* doth ſignifie in their Language *the inſtitution*, which inſtitution in truth comprehendeth both forme and matter. Such are their fumbling ſhifts to incloſe the Miniſters vocation within the compaſſe of ſome eſſentiall part of the Sacrament. A thing that can neuer ſtand with ſound and ſincere conſtruction. For what if the [p] Miniſter bee *no circumſtance, but a ſubordinate efficient cauſe in the* worke of Baptiſme? What if the Miniſters vocation be a matter [q] *of perpetual neceſſity, and not a Ceremonie variable as times & occaſions require? What if his calling be a principal part of the Inſtitution of Chriſt?* Doth it therefore follow that the Miniſters authoritie is [r] *of the ſubſtance of the Sacrament*, and as incident into the nature thereof as the matter and the forme it ſelfe, yea, more incident? For whereas in caſe of neceſſitie the greateſt amongſt them profeſſeth the change of the Element of Water lawfull, and others which like not ſo well this opinion, could bee better content that voluntarily the *words* of Chriſts Inſtitution were altered, and

m T.C.l.1.p.144 As S. *Paul* ſaith that a man cannot preach which is not ſent, *Rom.* 10.15. no not although hee ſpeake the words of the Scripture & interpret them: So I cannot ſee how a man can baptize vnleſſe he be ſent to that end, although hee powre water & rehearſe the words which are to bee rehearſed in the Miniſterie of Baptiſme.

n T.C.l.1.p.165. If eyther the matter of the Sacrament, or the forme of it, which is the Inſtitution [which things are onely ſubſtantiall parts] were wanting, there ſhould then haue bin no Sacrament at al miniſted. But they being retained & yet other things vſed which are not conuenient, the Sacrament is miniſtred, but not ſincerely.

o T.C.l.3.p.117.

p T.C.l.3.p.121.

q T.C.l.3.p.135. The Miniſter is of the ſubſtance of the Sacrament, conſidering that it is a principall part of Chriſts Inſtitution. *Bez. Epiſt.* 2. *Deſit aqua, & tamen baptiſmus alicuius differri cum edificatione non poſſit nec debeat, ego certè quouis alio liquore non minus rite quàm aqua baptiſcrim*, r T.C.l.3.p.138. Shew me why the breach of the Inſtitution in the forme ſhould make the Sacrament vnauayleable, and not the breach of this part [which concerneth the Miniſter.] *T.C. ibid.* Howſoeuer ſome learned and godly giue ſome libertie in the change of the Elemenes of the holy Sacrament, yet I doe not ſee how that can ſtand. *Idem* p.137. I would rather iudge him baptized into the Name of Chriſt without adding the Father and the Holy Ghoſt when the Element of Water is added, then when the other words being duly kept, ſome other liquor is vſed.

men

men baptized in *the Name of Chriſt*, without either mention made of the Father or of the Holy Ghoſt, neuertheleſſe, in denying that Baptiſme adminiſtred by priuat perſons, ought to be reckoned of as a Sacrament, they both agree. It may therefore pleaſe them both to conſider, that Baptiſme is an action in part Morall, in part Eccleſiaſticall, and in part Myſticall: Morall, as being a duty which men performe towards God; Eccleſiaſticall, in that it belongeth vnto Gods Church as a publike durie; finally Myſticall, if wee reſpect what God doth thereby intend to worke. The greateſt Moral perfection of Baptiſme conſiſteth in mens deuout obedience to the Law of God, which Law requireth both the outward act or thing done, and alſo that Religious affection which God doth ſo much regard, that *without it whatſoeuer we doe is hatefull in his ſight*, who therefore is ſaid to reſpect *Aduerbes* more then *Verbes*, becauſe the end of his Law in appointing what we ſhall doe is our owne perfection, which perfection conſiſteth chiefely in the vertuous diſpoſition of the minde, and approoueth it ſelfe to him not by *doing*, but by doing *well*. Wherein appeareth alſo the difference betweene Humane and Diuine Lawes, the one of which two are content with *opus operatum*, the other require *opus operantis*, the one doe but claime the deed, the other eſpecially the minde. So that according to Lawes which principally reſpect the heart of men, workes of Religion being not religiouſly performed, cannot morally be perfect. Baptiſme as an Eccleſiaſticall worke, is for the manner of performance ordered by diuers Eccleſiaſticall Lawes, prouiding that as the Sacrament it ſelfe is a gift of no meane worth, ſo the Miniſterie thereof might in all circumſtances appeare to bee a Function of no ſmall regard. All that belongeth to the Myſticall perfection of Baptiſme outwardly, is the Element the Word, and the ſerious application of both vnto him which receiueth both, whereunto if wee adde that ſecret reference which this action hath to life and remiſſion of ſinnes, by vertue of Chriſts owne compact ſolemnely made with his Church, to accompliſh fully the Sacrament of Baptiſme, there is not any thing more required. Now put the queſtion whether Baptiſme adminiſtred to Infants without any Spirituall calling, bee vnto them both a true Sacrament and an effectuall inſtrument of grace, or elſe an act of no more account then the ordinarie Waſhings are. The ſumme of all that can be ſaid to defeat ſuch Baptiſme is, that thoſe things which haue no being can worke nothing, and that Baptiſme without the power of Ordination, is as a iudgement without ſufficient Iuriſdiction, void, fruſtrate, and of no effect. But to this we anſwere, that the fruit of Baptiſme dependeth onely vpon the Couenant which God hath made; that God by Couenant requireth in the elder ſort, Faith and Baptiſme, in Children the Sacrament of Baptiſme alone, whereunto hee hath alſo giuen them right by ſpeciall priuiledge of birth, within the boſome of the holy Church; that Infants therefore, which haue receiued Baptiſme complete, as touching the Myſticall perfection thereof, are by vertue of his owne Couenant and promiſe cleanſed from all ſinne, for as much as all other Lawes concerning that which in Baptiſme is either Morall or Eccleſiaſticall, doe bind the Church which giueth Baptiſme, and not the Infant which receiueth it of the Church. So that if any thing beetherein amiſſe, the harme which groweth by violation of holy Ordinances, muſt alwaie-

ther reſt where the bonds of ſuch Ordinances hold. For that in actions of this Nature it ſeeth not as in Iuriſdictions may ſomwhat appeare by the very opinion which men haue of them. The nullitie of that which a Iudge doth by way of authoritie without authoritie, is knowne to all men, and agreed vpon with full conſent of the whole World, euery man receiueth it as a generall Edict of Nature, whereas the nullitie of Baptiſme in regard of the like defect, is only a few mens new vngrounded and as yet vnapproued imagination. Which difference of generalitie in mens perſwaſions on the one ſide, and their paucitie whoſe conceit leadeth them the other way, hath riſen from a difference eaſie to obſerue in the things themſelues. The exerciſe of vnauthorized Iuriſdiction is a grieuance vnto them that are vnder it, whereas they that without authoritie preſume to baptize, offer nothing but that which to all men is good and acceptable. Sacraments are food and the Miniſters thereof as Parents or as Nurſes, at whoſe hands when there is neceſſitie but no poſſibilitie of receiuing it, if that which they are not preſent to doe in right of their Office, be of pittie and compaſſion done by others, ſhall this be thought to turne Celeſtiall Bread into grauell, or the medicine of ſoules into poyſon? Iuriſdiction is a yoke which Law hath impoſed on the neckes of men in ſuch ſort, that they muſt indure it for the good of others, how contrary ſoeuer it bee to their owne particular appetites and inclinations, Iuriſdiction bridleth men againſt their wils, that which a Iudge doth preuayle by vertue of his very power; and therefore not without great reaſon, except the Law haue giuen him authoritie, whatſoeuer hee doth, vaniſheth. Baptiſme on the other ſide being a fauour which it pleaſeth God to beſtow a benefit of ſoule to vs that receiue it, and a grace which they that deliuer are but meere Veſſels, either appointed by others or offered of their owne accord to this ſeruice; of which two if they be the one, it is but their own honour, their owne offence to be the other; can it poſſibly ſtand with [a] equitie and right, that the faultines of their preſumption in giuing Baptiſme ſhould bee able to preiudice vs, who by taking Baptiſme haue no way offended? I know there are many ſentences found in the Bookes and Writings of the ancient Fathers, to proone both Eccleſiaſticall and alſo Morall defects in the Miniſter of Baptiſme, a barre to the heauenly benefit thereof. Which ſentences we alwaies ſo vnderſtand, as [b] *Auguſtine* vnderſtood in a caſe of like nature the words of *Cyprian*. When Infants baptized were after their Parents reuolt carryed by the in armes to the ſhewes of Idols, thoſe wretched creatures, as S. *Cyprian* thought, were not only their owne ruine but their childrens alſo; *Their children*, whom this their Apoſtaſie profaned, *did loſe what Chriſtian Baptiſme had giuen the being newly borne*. They loſt (ſaith S. *Auguſtine*) the grace of Baptiſme, *if we conſider to what their Parents impietie did tend*, although the mercie of God preſerued them, & will alſo in that dreadful day of account giue them fauorable audience pleading in their owne behalfe, *The harme of other mens perfidie ſuffe it lay not in vſe to anoyd*. After the ſame manner, whatſoeuer we read written, if it ſound to the preiudice of Baptiſme through any either Morall or Eccleſiaſticall defect therein, wee conſter it, as Equitie and Reaſon teacheth, with reſtraint to the offendor only, which doth, as farre as concerneth himſelfe and them, which wittingly concurre with him, make the Sacrament of God fruitleſſe. S. *Auguſtines*

a *Pallum alterius alij nocere non debet*, Vlp. l. de pupillo. §. ſi plurimum. Item Alphen. l. Pater familias. De Hæreticis. *Maleficia tenent Authorem ſuum non alios.*

b *Aug.* Epiſt. 23.

guſtines doubtfulneſſe, whether Baptiſme by a Lay-man may ſtand, or ought to be re-adminiſtred, ſhould not be mentioned by them which preſume to define peremptorily of that, wherein he was content to profeſſe himſelfe vnreſolued. Albeit in very truth his opinion is plaine enough, but the manner of deliuering his iudgement being modeſt, they make of a vertue an imbecillitie, and impute his calmeneſſe of ſpeech to an irreſolution of mind. His Diſputation in that place is againſt *Parmenian*, which held, that a Biſhop or a Prieſt if they fall into any Hereſie, doe thereby loſe the power which they had before, to baptize, and that therefore Baptiſme by Heretikes is meerely void. For anſwer whereof he firſt denyeth, that Hereſie can more depriue men of power to baptize others, then it is of force to take from them their owne Baptiſme; & in the ſecond place he farther addeth, that if Heretikes did loſe the power which before was giuen them by Ordination, & did therfore vnlawfully vſurpe as oft as they tooke vpon them to giue the Sacrament of Baptiſme, it followeth not that Baptiſme, by them adminiſtred without authoritie, is no Baptiſme. For then what ſhould we thinke of Baptiſme by Lay-men, to whom authoritie was neuer giuen? I doubt (ſaith S. *Auguſtine*) whether any man which carryeth a vertuous & godly mind will affirme, that the Baptiſme which Lay-men doe in caſe of neceſſity adminiſter ſhould be iterated. *For to doe it vnneceſſarily, is to execute an other mans office; neceſſitie vrging, to doe it is then either no fault at all* (much leſſe ſo grieuous a crime that it ſhould deſerue to be termed by the name of [b] ſacriledge) *or if any, a very pardonable fault. But ſuppoſe it euen of very purpoſe vſurped and giuen vnto any man by euery man that liſteth, yet that which is giuen cannot poſſibly be denied to haue beene giuen, how truly ſoeuer we may ſay it hath not beene giuen lawfully. Vnlawfull vſurpation a penitent affection muſt redreſſe. If not, the thing that was giuen ſhal remain to the hurt & detriment of him, which vnlawfully either adminiſtred or receiued the ſame, yet ſo that in this reſpect it ought not to be reputed, as if it had not at all beene giuen.* Whereby we may plainely perceiue, that Saint *Auguſtine* was not himſelfe vncertaine what to thinke, but doubtfull, whether any wel-minded men in the whole world, could thinke otherwiſe then hee did. Their [c] Argument taken from a ſtollen ſeale, may returne to the place out of which they had it, for it helpeth their cauſe nothing. That which men giue or grant to others, muſt appeare to haue proceeded of their owne accord. This being manifeſt, their Gifts and Grants are thereby made effectuall, both to barre themſelues from reuocation, and to aſſecure the right they haue giuen. Wherein for further preuention of miſchiefes, that otherwiſe might grow by the malice, treacherie, and fraud of men, it is both equall and meete that the ſtrength of mens deeds, and the inſtruments which declare the ſame, ſhould ſtrictly depend vpon diuers ſolemnities, whereof there cannot be the like reaſon in things that paſſe betweene God and vs, becauſe ſith wee neede not doubt, leſt the treaſures of his heauenly grace ſhould, without his conſent bee paſt by forged conueyances, nor leſt hee ſhould deny at any time his owne acts, and ſeeke to reuoke what hath beene conſented vnto before: as there is no ſuch feare of danger through deceit and falſhood in this caſe, ſo neither hath the circumſtance of mens perſons that waight in Baptiſme, which for good and inſt conſiderations in the cuſtodie of ſeales of Office it ought to haue. The grace of Baptiſme

a *T.C.l.1.p.136* *Auguſtine* ſtandeth in doubt whether Baptiſme by a Lay-man be auailable or no. *Cont. lit. Parmen. l.2. c.13.* where by all likelyhood he was out of doubt, that that which was miniſtred by a Woman, whoſe vnaptneſſe herein is double to that of a Lay-man, was of no effect.

b *T.C.l.1.p.116* The ſacriledge of priuate perſons, Women eſpecially in adminiſtring the holy Sacrament of Baptiſme.

c *T.C.l.3.p.239* As by the ſeale which the Prince hath ſet apart to ſeale his Grants with, when it is ſtollen and ſet to by him that hath no authoritie, there groweth no aſſurance to the parde that hath it: So if it were poſſible to be the ſeale of God which a woman ſhould ſet to, yet for that ſhe hath ſtollen it and put it to, not only without, but contrarie to the Commandements of God, I ſee not how any can take any aſſurance by reaſon thereof.

Baptiſme commeth by donation from God alone. That God hath committed the miniſterie of Baptiſme vnto ſpeciall men, it is for orders ſake in his Church, and not to the end that their authoritie might giue being, or adde force to the Sacrament it ſelfe. That Infants haue right to the Sacrament of Baptiſme, wee all acknowledge. Charge them we cannot as guileſull and wrongfull poſſeſſors of that, whereunto they haue right by the manifeſt will of the Donor, and are not parties vnto any defect or diſorder in the maner of receiuing the ſame. And if any ſuch diſorder be, we haue ſufficiently before declared, that *delictum eius capite ſemper ambulat*, mens owne faults are their owne harmes. Wherefore to counteruaile this and the like miſchoſen reſemblances with that, which more truely and plainely agreeth, the ordinance of God concerning their vocation that miniſter Baptiſme, wherein the miniſterie of our regeneration is wrought, hath therunto the ſame Analogie which lawes of wedlocke haue to our firſt natiuitie and birth. So that if Nature doe effect procreation, notwithſtanding the wicked violation and breach euen of Natures law, made that the entrance of all mankind into this preſent world might be without blemiſh, may we not luſtly preſume that Grace doth accompliſh the other, although there be faultineſſe in them that tranſgreſſe the order which our Lord Ieſus Chriſt hath eſtabliſhed in his Church? Some light may be borrowed from Circumciſion, for explication, what is true in this queſtion of Baptiſme. Seeing then, that euen they, which [a] condemne *Sephora* the wife of *Moſes*, for taking vpon her to circumciſe her ſonne, a thing neceſſary at that time for her to do, & as I thinke very hard to reproue in her, conſidering how *Moſes*, becauſe himſelfe had not done it ſooner, was therefore ſtricken by the hand of God, neither could in that extremitie performe the office; whereupon, for the ſtay of Gods indignation, there was no choice, but the action muſt needes fall into her hands; whoſe fact therein whether wee interpret, as ſome haue done, that being a Midianite, and as yet not ſo throughly acquainted with the exerciſe of Iewiſh Rites, it much diſcontented her, to ſee her ſelfe through her huſbands ouerſight, in a matter of his owne Religion, brought vnto theſe perplexities and ſtreights, that either ſhee muſt now indure him periſhing before her eyes, or elſe wound the fleſh of her owne Child, which ſhee could not doe but with ſome indignation ſhewed, in that ſhee fumingly both threw downe the fore-skin at his feete, and vpbraided him with the crueltie of his Religion: or if we better like to follow their more iudicious Expoſition, which are not inclinable to thinke that *Moſes* was matche like *Socrates*, nor that Circumciſion could now in *Eleazar* bee ſtrange vnto her, hauing had *Gerſom* her elder ſonne before circumciſed, nor that any occaſion of choler could riſe from a ſpectacle of ſuch miſerie, as doth [b] naturally moone compaſſion and not wrath, nor that *Sephora* was ſo impious, as in the viſible preſence of Gods deſerued anger, to ſtorme at the ordinance and law of God, nor that the words of the hiſtorie it ſelfe can inforce any ſuch affection, but doe opely

a Exod. 4. 24.

T.C. l. 1. p. 144. I ſay that the vnlawfulnes of that fact doth appeare ſufficiently, in that ſhee did it before her husband *Moſes*, which was a Prophet of the Lord, to whom that office of circumciſion did appertaine. Beſides, that ſhee did cut off the fore-skin of the Infant, not of mind to obey the Commandement of God, or for the ſaluation of the Child, but in a choler onely, to the end that her husband might bee eaſed and haue releaſe: which mind appeareth in her both by her words, and by caſting away in anger the fore-skin which ſhee had cut off. And if it be ſaid, that the euent declared that the act pleaſed God, becauſe that *Moſes* forthwith waxed better, and was recouered of his ſickneſſe, I haue ſhewed before that if we meaſure things by the euent, we ſhall oftentimes iuſtifie the wicked, and take the righteouſneſſe of the righteous from them.

b *Mala paſſim miſericordiam, ſed compaſſionem*, Boet. de Conſol.

only declare how after the act performed, ſhe *touched* the feet of *Moſes*, ſaying, [a]*Sponſus tu mihi es ſanguinum*; *Thou art vnto me an husband of bloud*, which might be very well, the one done, and the other ſpoken, euen out of the flowing abundance of commiſeration and loue, to ſignifie with hands laid vnder his feete, that her tender affection towards him, had cauſed her thus to forget woman-hood, to lay all motherly affection aſide, and to redeeme her husband out of the hands of Death with effuſion of bloud; the ſequele thereof, take it which way you will, is a plaine argument that God was ſatisfied with that ſhee did, as may appeare by his owne teſtimonie, declaring how there followed in the perſon of *Moſes* preſent releaſe of his grieuous puniſhment vpon her ſpeedie diſcharge of that dutie, which by him neglected, had offended God, [b]euen as after execution of Iuſtice by the hands of Princes, the plague was immediately taken away, which former impunitie of ſinne had cauſed; in which ſo manifeſt and plaine caſes, not to make that a reaſon of the euent, which God himſelfe hath ſet downe as a reaſon, were falſely to accuſe whom he doth iuſtifie, and without any cauſe to traduce what wee ſhould allow: yet ſeeing they which will haue it a breach of the Law of God, for her to circumciſe in that neceſſitie, are not able to deny, but Circumciſion being in that very manner performed, was to the innocent child which receiued it true Circumciſion, why ſhould that defect whereby Circumciſion was ſo little weakened be to Baptiſme a deadly wound? Theſe premiſſes therefore remayning, as hitherto they haue been laid, becauſe the commandement of our Sauiour Chriſt, which committeth [c] ioyntly to publique Miniſters both Doctrine and Baptiſme, doth no more by linking them together import, that the nature of the Sacrament dependeth on the Miniſters authoritie and power to preach the Word, then the force and vertue of the Word doth on licence to giue the Sacrament; and conſidering that the worke of externall miniſterie in Baptiſme is onely a preeminence of honor, which they that take to themſelues and are not thereunto called as *Aaron* was, doe but themſelues in their owne perſons, by meanes of ſuch vſurpation, incurre the iuſt blame of diſobedience to the Law of God, farther alſo in as much as it ſtandeth with no reaſon, that errours grounded on a wrong interpretation of other mens deedes, ſhould make fruſtrate whatſoeuer is miſconceiued, and that Baptiſme by Women ſhould ceaſe to be Baptiſme, as oft as any man will thereby gather that children which die vnbaptized are damned, which opinion if the act of Baptiſme adminiſtred in ſuch manner did inforce, it might be ſufficient cauſe of diſliking the ſame, but none of defeating or making it altogether void; laſt of all, whereas generall and full conſent of the godly learned in all Ages, doth make for validitie of Baptiſme, yea albeit adminiſtred in priuate and euen by Women, which kind of Baptiſme, in caſe of neceſſitie, diuers reformed Churches do both allow and

a Where the vſuall tranſlation hath *Exod.* 4. 25. She cut away the fore-skin of her ſonne, & caſt it at his feete, and ſaid, Thou art indeed a bloudie husband vnto me. So he departed from him. Then ſhe ſaid, O bloudy husband, becauſe of the circumciſion: the words as they lie in the originall, are rather to bee thus interpreted: And ſhe cut off the fore-skinne of her ſonne. Which being done, ſhee touched his feete (the feet of *Moſes*) and ſaid, Thou art to mee an husband of bloud (in the plurall number, thereby ſignifying effuſion of bloud.) And the Lord withdrewe from him at the very time, when ſhe ſaid, A husband of bloud in regard of circumciſion.

b *Pſal.* 106. 30.

c *T. C. lib.* 3. *pag.* 142. Seeing they onely are bidden in the Scripture to adminiſter the Sacraments, which are bidden to preach the Word, and that the publike Miniſters haue onely this charge of the Word; and ſeeing that the adminiſtration of both theſe are linked together, that the deniall of licence to doe one, is a deniall to doe the other, as of the contrarie part, licence to one, is licence to the other: conſidering alſo, that to miniſter the Sacraments, is an honour in the Church, which none can take vnto him, but he which is called vnto it, as was *Aaron*: and further, for as much as the baptizing by priuate perſons, and by women eſpecially, confirmeth the dangerous errour of the condemnation of young children, which die without Baptiſme: laſt of all, ſeeing we haue the conſent of the godly-learned of all times againſt the Baptiſme by women, and of the reformed Churches now, againſt the Baptiſme by priuate men, we conclude that the adminiſtration of this Sacrament by priuate perſons, and eſpecially by women, is meerely both vnlawfull and void.

defend,

defend, ſome others which doe not defend, tolerate; few, in compariſon, and they without any iuſt cauſe, doe vtterly diſanull and annihilate, ſurely, howſoeuer through defect on either ſide, the Sacrament may be without fruit, aſwell in ſome caſes to him which receiueth, as to him which giueth it, yet no diſability of either part can ſo farre make it fruſtrate and without effect, as to depriue it of the very nature of true Baptiſme, hauing all things elſe which the ordinance of Chriſt requireth. Whereupon we may conſequently inferre, that the adminiſtration of this Sacrament by priuate perſons, be it lawfull or vnlawfull, appeareth not as yet to be meerely void.

Interrogatories in Baptiſme touching Faith and the purpoſe of a Chriſtian life

63 All that are of the race of Chriſt, the Scripture nameth them *children of the promiſe*, which God hath made. The promiſe of eternall Life is the ſeed of the Church of God. And becauſe there is no attainement of life, but through the onely begotten Sonne of God, nor by him otherwiſe then being ſuch as the Creed Apoſtolike deſcribeth, it followeth that the Articles thereof are principles; neceſſarie for all men to ſubſcribe vnto, whom by Baptiſme the Church receiueth into Chriſts Schoole. All points of Chriſtian doctrine are either demonſtrable Concluſions, or demonſtratiue Principles. Concluſions haue ſtrong and inuincible prooſes, as well in the Schoole of Ieſus Chriſt as elſewhere. And Principle be grounds, which require no prooſe in any kind of Science, becauſe it ſufficeth if either their certaintie be euident in it ſelfe, or euident by the light of ſome higher knowledge, and in it ſelfe ſuch as no mans knowledge is euer able to ouerthrow. Now the principles whereupon wee doe build our ſoules, haue their euidence where they had their originall, and as receiued from thence we adore them, we hold them in reuerend admiration, we neither argue nor diſpute aboue them, we giue vnto them that aſſent which the Oracles of God require. We are not therefore aſhamed of the Goſpell of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, becauſe miſcreants in ſcorne haue vpbraided vs, that the higheſt point of our wiſedome is [a] *Beliefe*. That which is true and neither can be diſcerned by ſenſe, nor concluded by meere naturall principles, muſt haue principles of reuealed Truth whereupon to build it ſelfe, and an habit of Faith in vs wherewith principles of that kind are apprehended. [b] The myſteries of our Religion are aboue the reach of our vnderſtanding, aboue diſcourſe of mans reaſon, aboue all that any creature can comprehend. Therefore the firſt thing required of him, which ſtandeth for admiſſion into Chriſts Family, is beliefe. Which beliefe conſiſteth not ſo much in knowledge, as in acknowledgement of all things that heauenly wiſedome reuealeth; the affection of Faith is aboue her reach, her loue to God-ward aboue the comprehenſion which ſhee hath of God. And becauſe onely for Beleeuers all things may bee done, he which is goodneſſe it ſelfe, loueth them aboue all. Deſerue we then the loue of God, becauſe we beleeue in the Sonne of God? What more oppoſite then Faith and Pride? When God had created all things, he looked vpon them, and loued them, becauſe they were all as himſelfe had made them: So the true reaſon wherefore Chriſt doth loue Beleeuers, is, becauſe their beliefe is [c] the gift of God, a gift then which fleſh & bloud in this world cannot poſſibly receiue a greater. And as loue to them of whom we receiue good things is dutie, becauſe they ſatisfie our deſires in that which elſe we ſhould want, ſo to loue them on whom

a *Apoſtata malè dicam* οὐκ ὑπὲρ τὸ πίστευτον τῆς ὑμετέρας ἐστὶ σοφίας, Nazian. Orat. 1. cont. Iulia.

b ὑπὲρ λόγον, ὑπὲρ καταλαμβάνειν κλοιτὲ φύσεως τὰ ὑμέτερα, Iuſt. Mart. Expoſ. Fid.

c Matth. 16. 17. Iohn 1. 12.

whom we beſtow is nature, becauſe in them we behold the effects of our owne verme. Seeing therefore no Religion inioyeth Sacraments the ſignes of Gods loue, vnleſſe it haue alſo that Faith whereupon the Sacraments are built, could there be any thing more conuenient then that our firſt admittance to the actuall receit of his grace in the Sacrament of Baptiſme, ſhould be [a] conſecrated with profeſſion of beliefe, which is to the Kingdome of God as a key, the want whereof excludeth Infidels both from that and from all other ſauing grace? We find by experience, that although Faith be an intellectuall habit of the mind, and haue her ſeate in the vnderſtanding, yea an euill morall diſpoſition obſtinately wedded to the loue of darkneſſe, dampeth the very light of heauenly illumination, and permitteth not the mind to ſee what doth ſhine before it. Men are louers of pleaſure more then louers of God. Their aſſent to his ſauing Truth is many times with-held from it, not that the Truth is too weake to perſwade, but becauſe the ſtreame of corrupt affection carryeth them a cleane contrary way. That the mind therefore may abide in the light of Faith, there muſt abide in the will as conſtant a reſolution to haue no fellowſhip at all with the vanities and workes of darkneſſe. Two Couenants there are which Chriſtian men (ſaith [b] *Iſidore*) doe make in Baptiſme, the one concerning relinquiſhment of Satan, the other touching obedience to the Faith of Chriſt. In like ſort [c] S. AMBROSE, *He which is baptized*, forſaketh the intellectuall *Pharao* the Prince of this world, ſaying, *Abrenuncio; Thee, O Satan, and thy Angels, thy workes and thy mandates, I forſake vtterly.* [d] TERTVLLIAN hauing ſpeech of wicked ſpirits: *Theſe* (ſaith he) *are the Angels which we in Baptiſme renounce.* The declaration of [e] *Iuſtine* the *Martyr* cõcerning Baptiſme, ſheweth, how ſuch as the Church in thoſe daies did baptize, made profeſſion of Chriſtian beliefe, and vndertooke to liue accordingly. Neither doe I thinke it a matter eaſie for any man to proue that euer Baptiſme did vſe to be adminiſtred without interrogatories of theſe two kinds. Whereunto [f] S. *Peter* (as it may be thought) alluding, hath ſaid, that the Baptiſme *which ſaueth* vs, is not (as Legall purification were) a cleanſing of the fleſh from outward impuritie, but ἐπερώτημα, *an interrogatiue triall of a good conſcience towards God.*

[a] *Spiritus Sanctus habitator ſius Templi non efficitur quod Antiſtitem non habet veram fidem*, Hieron. aduer. Lucifer. cap. 4.

[b] *Iſid. de Offic. Eccleſ. l. 2. c. 24.*

[c] *Ambroſ. Hexam. l. 1. c. 4.*

[d] *Tertull. de Spectac.*

[e] Ὅσοι δὲ πείθονται καὶ πιστεύουσιν ἀληθῆ ταῦτα τὰ ὑφ' ἡμῶν διδασκόμενα καὶ λεγόμενα εἶναι, καὶ φασὶν ὅτως διώσεσθαι ὑπισχνοῦνται, εὔχεσθαι τε καὶ δεῆσθαι νηστεύοντες παρὰ τοῦ θεοῦ τῶν προπεπτωκότων ἁμαρτημάτων ἀφεσιν αἰτοῦντας ὑφ' ἡμῶν ἐνδια ὕδωρ ἐστὶ καὶ τρόπον ἀναγεννήσεως ὃν καὶ ἡμεῖς αὐτοὶ ἀναγεννήθημεν ἀναγεννᾶσθαι, Iuſtin. Apol.

[f] 1. *Pet.* 3. 21.

64 Now the fault which they find with vs concerning interrogatories, is, our mouing of theſe queſtions vnto Infants which cannot anſwer them, and the anſwering of them by others as in their names. The Anabaptiſt hath many pretences to ſcorne at the Baptiſme of children, firſt, becauſe the Scriptures, he ſaith, doe no where giue commandement to baptize Infants: ſecondly, for that as there is no commandement, ſo neither any manifeſt example ſhewing it to haue beene done either by Chriſt or his Apoſtles: thirdly, in as much as the Word preached and the Sacraments muſt goe together, they which are not capable of the one, are noſit receiuers of the other: laſt of all, ſith the order of Baptiſme continued from the firſt beginning, hath in it thoſe things which are

Interrogatories propoſed vnto Infants in Baptiſme, and anſwered as in their names by godfathers. They prophane holy Baptiſme in toying fooliſhly, for that they aske queſtions of an Infant which cannot anſwer, and ſpeake vnto them as was woont to be ſpoken vnto men, and vnto ſuch as being conuerted anſwered for themſelues, and were baptized. Which is but a mockerie of God, and therefore againſt the holy Scriptures, Gal. 6. 7. Admon. to the Parlia. The ſame defended in T. C. lib. 1. pag. 168.

vnfit

vnfit to be applied vnto ſucking children, it followeth in their conceit that the Baptiſme of ſuch is no Baptiſme, but plaine mockerie. They with whom we contend are no enemies to the Baptiſme of Infants; it is not their deſire that the Church ſhould hazzard ſo many ſoules, by letting them run on til they come to ripeneſſe of vnderſtanding, that ſo they may be converted and then baptized, as Infidels heretofore haue beene; they beare not towards God ſo vnthankefull minds, as not to acknowledge it euen amongſt the greateſt of his endleſſe mercies, that by making vs his owne poſſeſſion ſo ſoone, many aduantages which Satan otherwiſe might take are preuented, and (which ſhould be eſteemed a part of no ſmall happines) the firſt thing whereof we haue occaſion to take notice is, how much hath bin done already to our great good, though altogether without our knowledge; the Baptiſme of Infants they eſteeme as an ordinance which Chriſt hath inſtituted, euen in ſpeciall loue and fauour to his owne people; they deny not the practice thereof accordingly to haue beene kept, as deriued from the hands, and continued from the daies of the Apoſtles themſelues vnto this preſent. Only it pleaſeth them not, that to Infants there ſhould be interrogatories propoſed in Baptiſme. This they condemne as fooliſh, toyiſh, and prophane mockerie. But are they able to ſhew that euer the Church of Chriſt had any publique forme of Baptiſme without interrogatories; or that the Church did euer vſe at the ſolemne Baptiſme of Infants, to omit thoſe queſtions as needleſſe in this caſe? **Boniface* a Biſhop in S. *Auguſtines* time, knowing that the Church did vniuerſally vſe this cuſtome of baptizing Infants with interrogatories, was deſirous to learne from S. *Auguſtine* the true cauſe and reaſon thereof. *If* (ſaith he) *I ſhould ſet before thee a young Infant, and ſhould aske of thee whether that Infant when he commeth vnto riper age, will be honeſt and iuſt or no, thou wouldeſt anſwer (I know) that to tell in theſe things what ſhall come to paſſe, is not in the power of a mortall man. If I ſhould aske what good or euill ſuch an Infant thinketh, thine anſwer hereunto muſt needs be againe with the like vncertaintie. If thou neither canſt promiſe for the time to come, nor for the preſent pronounce any thing in this caſe, how is it that when ſuch are brought vnto Baptiſme, their Parents there vndertake what the child ſhould afterwards doe, yea they are not doubtfull to ſay it doth that which is impoſſible to be done by Infants? At the leaſt there is no man preciſely able to affirme it done. Vouchſafe me hereunto ſome ſhort anſwer, ſuch as not onely may preſſe me with the bare authoritie of cuſtome, but alſo inſtruct me in the cauſe thereof.* Touching which difficultie, whether it may truely be ſaid for Infants at the time of their Baptiſme that they doe beleeue, the effect of S. *Auguſtines* anſwer is yea, but with this diſtinction, * a preſent *actuall habite of faith there is not* in them, there is deliuered vnto them that Sacrament, a part of the due celebration whereof conſiſteth in anſwering to the Articles of faith, *becauſe* the habit of faith, which afterwards doth come with yeres, is but *a further* building vp of the ſame edifice, the *firſt foundation whereof was laid by the Sacrament* of Baptiſme. For that which there we profeſſed without any vnderſtanding, when we afterwards come to acknowledge, doe we any thing elſe but only bring vnto ripeneſſe the very ſeed that was ſowne before? We are *then beleeuers*, becauſe *then we begin to be* that which proceſſe of time doth make perfect. And till we come to actuall beliefe, the very Sacrament of Faith is a ſhield

* Aug. Epiſt. 23.

* *Sicut credere reſſuſcitatur, ita etiam fidelis vocatur; non rem ipſa mente tenendo, ſed ipſius rei Sacramentum percipiendo*, Auguſt.

as ſtrong as after this the faith of the ſacrament againſt all contrarie infernall powers. Which whoſoeuer doth thinke impoſſible, is vndoubtedly farther off from Chriſtian beliefe, though hee bee baptiſed, then are theſe innocents which at their baptiſme albeit they haue no conceipt or cogitation of faith, are, notwithſtanding pure and free from all oppoſite cogitations, whereas the other is not free. If therefore without any feare or ſcruple wee may accompt them and terme them beleeuers only for their outward profeſſions ſake, which inwardly are farther from faith then infants, why not infants much more at the time of their ſolemne initiation by baptiſme the ſacrament of faith, whereunto they not onely conceiue nothing oppoſite, but haue alſo that [a] grace giuen them which is the firſt and moſt effectuall cauſe out of which our beliefe groweth? In ſumme, the whole Church is a multitude of beleeuers, all honoured with that title, euen hypocrites for their profeſſions ſake as well as Saints, becauſe of their inward ſincere perſwaſion, and *infants as being in the firſt degree of their ghoſtly motion towards the actuall habite of faith*; the firſt ſort are faithfull in the eye of the world, the ſecond faithfull in the ſight of God; the laſt in the readie direct way to become both, if all things after bee ſuteable to theſe their preſent beginnings. *This* (ſayth Saint *Auguſtine*) *would not happily content ſuch perſons as are vncapable or vnquiet, but to them which hauing knowledge are not troubleſome, it may ſuffice. Wherein I haue not for eaſe of my ſelfe obiected againſt you that cuſtome onely, then which nothing is more firme, but of a cuſtome moſt profitable I haue done that little which I could to yeeld you a reaſonable cauſe.* Were Saint *Auguſtine* now liuing, there are which would tell him for his better inſtruction that to ſay [b] of a child *it is elect* and to ſay it doth beleeue are all one, for which cauſe ſith no man is able preciſely to affirme the one of any infant in particular, it followeth that *preciſely* and *abſolutely* we ought not to ſay the other. Which *preciſe* and *abſolute* termes are needleſſe in this caſe. We ſpeake of infants *as the rule of pietie* alloweth both to ſpeake and thinke. They that can take to themſelues in ordinarie talke a charitable kind of libertie to name men of their owne ſort *Gods deere children* (notwithſtanding the large raigne of hypocriſie) ſhould not me thinks be ſo ſtrict & rigorous againſt the Church for preſuming as it doth of a Chriſtian innocent. For when wee know how Chriſt in generall hath ſaid that *of ſuch* is the kingdome of heauen, which kingdome is the inheritance of Gods elect, and doe withall behold how his prouidence hath called them vnto the firſt beginnings of eternall life, and preſented them at the welſpring of new birth wherein originall ſinne is purged, beſides which ſinne there is no hinderance of their ſaluation knowne to vs, as themſelues will grant, hard it were that hauing ſo many faire inducements whereupon to ground, we ſhould not be thought to vtter at the leaſt a truth as probable and allowable in terming any ſuch particular infant an elect babe, as in preſuming [c] the like of others, whoſe ſafetie neuertheles we are not *abſolutely* able to warrant. If any troubled with theſe ſcruples bee only for inſtructions ſake deſirous to know yet ſome farther reaſon why interrogatories ſhould be miniſtred to infants in baptiſme, and be anſwered vnto by others as in their names, they may conſider that baptiſme implyeth a couenant or league betweene God and man, wherein as God doth beſtow preſently

[a] *Multum mirabilis res eſt quemadmodum quorundam nondum cognoſcentium Deum ſit inhabitator Dei & quorundam cognoſcentium non ſit. Nec illi enim ad templum Dei pertinent, qui cognoſcentes Deum non ſicut Deum glorificauerunt: & ad templum Dei pertinent paruuli ſanctificati ſacramento Chriſti regenerati ſpiritu Sancto, qui per ætatem nondum poſſunt cognoſcere Deum. Vnde quem potuerunt illi noſſe nec habere iſti potuerunt habere antequam noſſet. Auguſt. epiſt. 57.*

[b] T.C. lib. 1. pa. 169. If children could haue faith, yet they that preſent the child cannot preciſely tell whether that particular child hath faith or no; we are to thinke charitably and to hope it is one of the Church, but it can be no more preciſely ſaid that it hath faith, then it may be ſaid preciſely elected.

[c] 2. *Iohn* 1.

remiſſion of ſinnes and the holy Ghoſt, binding alſo himſelfe to adde in proceſſe of time what grace ſoeuer ſhall bee farther neceſſarie for the attainement of euerlaſting life; ſo euery baptiſed ſoule receiuing the ſame grace at the hands of God tyeth likewiſe it ſelfe for euer to the obſeruation of his law no leſſe then the Iewes [a] by Circumciſion bound themſelues to the law of Moſes. The law of Chriſt requiring therefore faith and newneſſe of life in all men by vertue of the couenant which they make in baptiſme, is it toyiſh that the Church in baptiſme exacteth at euery mans hands an expreſſe profeſſion of faith and an irreuocable promiſe of obedience by way of [b] ſolemne ſtipulation? That infants may contract and couenant with God, [c] the law is plaine. Neither is the reaſon of the law obſcure. For ſith it tendeth wee cannot ſufficiently expreſſe how much to their owne good, and doth no way hurt or endanger them to beginne the race of their liues herewith, they are as equitie requireth admitted hereunto, and in fauour of their tender yeeres ſuch formall complements of ſtipulation as being requiſite are impoſſible by themſelues in their owne perſons to bee performed, leaue is giuen that they may [d] ſufficiently diſcharge by others. Albeit therefore neither deafe nor dumbe men, neither furious perſons, nor children can receiue any ciuill ſtipulation, yet this kinde of ghoſtly ſtipulation they may through his indulgence who reſpecting the ſingular benefit thereof accepteth children brought vnto him for that end, entreth into articles of couenant with them, and in tender commiſeration granteth that other mens profeſſions and promiſes in baptiſme made for them ſhall auaile no leſſe then if they had beene themſelues able to haue made their owne. None more fit to vndertake this office in their behalfe then ſuch as preſent them vnto baptiſme. A wrong conceit that none may receiue the ſacrament of baptiſme but they whoſe parents at the leaſt the one of them are by the ſoundneſſe of their religion and by their vertuous demeanour known to be men of God, hath cauſed [e] ſome to repell children whoſoeuer bring them if their parents bee miſperſwaded in religion, or for other miſ-deſerts excommunicated; ſome likewiſe for that cauſe to withhold baptiſme, vnleſſe the father, albeit no ſuch exception can iuſtly bee taken againſt him, doe notwithſtanding make profeſſion of his faith, and auouch the child to bee his owne. Thus whereas God hath appointed the miniſters of holy things, they make themſelues inquiſitours of mens perſons a great deale farther then neede is. They ſhould conſider that God hath ordained baptiſme in fauour of mankind. To reſtraine fauours is an odious thing, to enlarge them acceptable both to God and man. Whereas therefore the Ciuill law gaue diuers immunities to them which were fathers of three children and had them liuing, thoſe immunities they held although their children were all dead if warre had conſumed them, becauſe it ſeemed in that caſe not againſt reaſon to repute them by a courteous conſtruction of law as [f] liue-men in that the honour of their ſeruice done to the common-wealth would remaine alwayes. Can it hurt vs in exhibiting the graces which God doth beſtow on men, or can it preiudice his glorie if the ſelfe-ſame equitie guide and direct our hands? When God made his couenant with ſuch as had Abraham to their father, was onely Abrahams immediate iſſue, or onely his lineall poſteritie according

a Gal.5.3.

b Stipulatio eſt verborum conceptio, quibus is qui interrogatur daturum factumue ſe quod interrogatus eſt reſpondet. l.5 §. 1. ff. de oblig. & act. In hac re olim ita verba tradita fuerunt. Spondes? Spondeo. Promittis? Promitto. Fide promittis? Fide promitto. Fide iubes? Fide iubeo. Dabis? Dabo. Facies? Faciam. Inſtit. de verb. obl. li.3. tit.15.

c Gen.17.14.

d Accommodat illa mater eccleſia aliorum fides vt veniant, aliorum cor vt credant, aliorum linguam vt fateantur, vt quoniam quod agri ſunt alio peccante pregnantur, ſic cum ſanctificantur alio pro eis confitente ſaluentur. Aug. ſerm. 10. de verb Apoſt.

e T.C. lib.1. pag. 172.

f Hi enim qui pro reb. ceciderunt in perpetuum per gloriam viuere intelliguntur. Inſtit. lib.2. tit. 25. §.1.

according to the flesh included in that couenant.) Were not Proſelites as well as Iewes alwaies taken for the ſeruants of *Abraham*? Yes becauſe the very heads of families are fathers in ſome ſort as touching prouidence and care for the meaneſt that belong vnto them, the ſeruants which *Abraham* had bought with money were as capable of Circumciſion being newly borne as any naturall child that *Abraham* himſelfe begat. Be it then that baptiſme belongeth to none but ſuch as either beleeue preſently, or elſe being infants are the children of *beleeuing parents*. In caſe the Church doe bring children to the holy font whoſe naturall parents are either vnknowne, or knowne to be ſuch as the Church ſo curſeth, but yet forgetteth not in that ſenentie to take compaſſion vpon their off-ſpring (for a it is the Church which doth offer them to baptiſme by the miniſterie of preſenters) were it not againſt both equitie and dutie to refuſe the mother of beleeuers her ſelfe, & not to take her in this caſe for a faithful parent? It is not the vertue of our fathers, nor the faith of any other that can giue vs the true holines which we have by vertue of our new birth. Yet euen through the common faith and ſpirit of Gods Church (a thing which no qualitie of parents can preiudice) I ſay through the faith of the Church of God vndertaking the motherly care of our ſoules, ſo farre forth wee may be, and are in our infancie ſanctified as to be thereby made ſufficiently capable of baptiſme, & to be intereſſed in the rites of our new birth for their pieties ſake that offer vs therevnto. *It commeth ſometimes to paſſe* (ſayth S. *Auguſtine*) *that the children of bond-ſeruants are brought to baptiſme by their lord, ſometime the parent being dead, the friends elſe vndertake that office, ſometime ſtrangers or virgins conſecrated vnto God, which neither haue nor can haue children of their owne, take vp infants in the open ſtreets and ſo offer them vnto baptiſme, whom the cruelties of vnnaturall parents caſteth out and leaueth to the aduenture of vncertaine pitie.* As therefore he which did the part of a neighbour, was a neighbour to that wounded man whom the parable of the Goſpell deſcribeth: ſo they are fathers although ſtrangers, that bring infants to him which maketh them the ſonnes of God. In the phraſe of ſome kind of men they vſe to be termed *witneſſes*, as if they came but to ſee and teſtifie what is done. It ſauoureth more of pietie to giue them their old accuſtomed name of fathers and mothers in God, whereby they are well put in minde what affection they ought to beare towards thoſe infants, for whoſe religious education the Church accepteth them as pledges. This therefore is their owne dutie. But becauſe the anſweres which they make to the vſuall demands of ſtipulation propoſed in baptiſme is not their owne, the Church doth beſt to receiue it of them in that forme which beſt ſheweth whoſe the act is. That which a Gardian doth in the name of his Guard or pupill ſtandeth by naturall equitie forcible for his benefit, though it be done without his knowledge. And ſhall we iudge it a thing vnreaſonable, or in any reſpect vnfit, that infants by words which others vtter ſhould (though vnwittingly) yet truly and forcibly binde themſelues to that whereby their eſtate is ſo aſſuredly bettered? Herewith Ne-

a *Offerunt quippe parentes ad percipiendam ſpiritualem gratiam non tam ob eam quorum ſpes ſæpe fallit incertum, quantum ob ipſius Ecclæ fidei ſanctæ, quam ab vniuerſæ ſocietate ſanctorum atque fidelium.* Auguſtin. epiſt. 23.

Κρατοῦσι τοῦ ἁγίου τὰς ἐκφερούσας ἐπὶ τὸ βάπτισμα τὰ βρέφη, οὐχ ὡς τῶν γεννησάντων ἐπιλαθομένων, ἀλλὰ τῆς μητρὸς ἀντὶ πάντων τῶν γεννησάντων οὔσης. Origen.

b *Si derisus olim Iudæi, ſi ante baptiſmum, &c. ſi vero in eadem [illegible] quæ non abſurdè cauſam erroris dicerent, ſi pertinacium non ſociarent errori. Nunc autem cum in Catholica ſede natus, Catholicis fidei ſacramentum Catholicè baptiſmatis regenerationis ſuæ ſe nouiſſe dicit, quod [illegible] quam [illegible] deferam in matris edituæ quidem de huius baptiſmi [illegible] ſi non habeam quod reſpondeam? Non [illegible] quam aliquid [illegible]. Hoc ſuo in Catholica fide editum quod ſuorum pro [illegible]*

stacius the Heretique was charged as having fallen from his first profession and broken the promise which he made to God in the armes of others. Of such as prophaned themselues being Christians with irreligious delight in the ensignes of idolatrie; heathenish spectacles, shower, and stage-players, *Tertullian to shake them the more deepe clay meth the promise which they made in baptisme. Why were they dumbe being thus challenged? Wherefore stood they not vp to answere in their owne defence, that such professions and promises made in their names were friuolous, that all which others vndertooke for them was but mockerie and prophanation? That which no heretique, no wicked liuer, no impious despiser of God, no misdoer or malefactor, which had himselfe beene baptised was euer so desperate as to disgorge in contempt of so fruitfully receiued customes, is now their voice that restore as they say the ancient puritie of religion.

* Tertul. lib. de spectac.

Of the Crosse in Baptisme.

65 In Baptisme many things of very ancient continuance are now quite and cleane abolished, for that the vertue and grace of this Sacrament had beene therwith ouershadowed as fruit with too great abundance of leaues. Notwithstanding to them which thinke it alwaies imperfect reformation that doth but sheare and not flea, our retaining certaine of those former rites, especially the *dangerous* signe of the Crosse hath seemed almost an impardonable ouersight. *The Crosse (they say) sith it is but a meere invention of man, should not therfore at all haue been added to the sacrament of baptisme. To signe children in the forehead with a Crosse, in token that hereafter they shall not be ashamed to make profession of the faith of Christ, is to bring into the Church a new word, wherein there ought to be no Doctor heard in the Church but our Iunior Christ. That reason which moued the Fathers to vse it should mooue vs not to vse the signe of the Crosse. They lined with Heathens which had the Crosse of Christ in contempt, we with such as adore the Crosse, and therefore we ought to abandon it euen as in like consideration Ezechias did of old the brasen serpent.* These are the causes of displeasure conceiued against the Crosse, a Ceremonie the vse whereof hath beene profitable although we obserue it not as the ordinance of God but of man. For, sayth *Tertullian, If of this and the like customes thou shouldest require some commandement to be expressed out of scripture, there is none found. What reason there is to iustifie tradition, vse or custome in this behalfe, either thou mayst of thy selfe perceiue, or else learne of some other that doth.* Least therefore the name of tradition should be offensiue to any, considering how farre by some it hath beene and is abused, we meane by traditions, ordinances made in the prime of Christian religion, established with that authoritie which Christ hath left to his Church for matters indifferent, & in their consideration requisite to be obserued, till like authoritie see iust & reasonable cause to alter them. So that traditions Ecclesiastical are not rudely and in grosse to be flushed off, because the inuentors of them were men. Such as say they allow no * inuention of men to be mingled with the outward administration of Sacraments, and vnder that pretence condemne our vsing the signe of the Crosse, haue belike some speciall dispensation themselues to violate their

a Tertul. de cor. milit.

b Traditiones non scripturæ ſ deffensum re-ſpiciunt cum deffendant omnia quæ bona diuersa. Quod si ratio in de Ecclesiasticis ordinibus & obſeruationibus Ecclesiasticis exigenda est, habes eam in his quæ per silentium firmantur & probantur, cum scilicet neque scripta reperiri debuerint, quæ non scripta reprehendi conuenit. Gentian. Hervet. annot. in Epiſt. Cypr. 74.

* T. C. lib. 3. pag. 122. They should not haue beene so bold as to haue brought it into the holy Sacrament of Baptisme, and so mingle the ceremonies and inuentions of men with the sacraments and ordinances of God.

owne

owne rules. For neither can they indeed decently nor doe they euer baptise any without manifest breach of this their profound axiome, that *Mans inuentions should not be mingled with sacraments and institutions of God.* They seeme to like very well in baptisme the custome of Godfathers, *because so generally all Churches haue receiued it.* Which custome being of God no more instituted then the other (howsoeuer they pretend the other hurtfull, and this profitable) it followeth that euen in their owne opinion, if their words doe shew their minds, there is no necessitie of stripping sacraments out of all such attire of Ceremonies as mans wisedome hath at any time clothed them withall, and consequently that either they must reforme their speech as ouer-generall, or else condemne their owne practice as vnlawfull. Ceremonies haue more in weight then in sight, they worke by commonnesse of vse much, although in the seuerall acts of their vsage we scarcely discerne any good they doe. And because the vse which they haue for the most part is not perfectly vnderstood, superstition is apt to impute vnto them greater vertue then indeed they haue. For prevention whereof, when we vse this Ceremonie we alwaies plainely expresse the end whereunto it serueth, namely, for a signe of remembrance to put vs in mind of our dutie. But by this meane they say we make it a great deale worse. For why? Seeing God hath no where commanded to draw two lines in token of the dutie which we owe vnto Christ, our practice with this exposition publisheth a new *Gospell*, and causeth an other *Word* to haue place in the Church of Christ, where no voice ought to be heard but his. By which good reason the authors of those graue admonitions to the Parliament are well holpen vp, which held that *sitting* at Communion *betokeneth rest and full accomplishment of legall Ceremonies in our Sauiour Christ.* For although it be the word of God that such Ceremonies are expired, yet seeing it is not the word of God that men to signifie so much should sit at the Table of our Lord, these haue their doome as well as others, *Guiltie of a new deuised Gospell in the Church of Christ.* Which strange imagination is begotten of a speciall dislike they haue to heare, that Ceremonies now in vse should be thought significant, whereas in truth such as are not significant must needs be vaine. Ceremonies destitute of signification are no better then the idle gestures of men, whose broken wits are not masters of that they doe. For if we looke but into secular and ciuill complements, what other cause can there possibly be giuen why to omit them where of course they are looked for, for where they are not so due to vse them bringeth mens secret intents oftentimes into great iealousie, I would know I say what reason wee are able to yeeld why things so light in their owne nature should weigh in the opinions of men so much, sauing onely in regard of that which they vse to signifie or betoken? Doth not our Lord Iesus Christ himselfe impute the omission of some courteous Ceremonies euen in domesticall intertainement to a colder degree of louing affection, and take the contrarie in better part, not so much respecting what was lesse done as what was signified lesse by the one then by the other? For to that very end he referreth in part of those gracious expostulations, *Simon, seest thou this woman? since I entred into thine house thou gauest me no water for my feet, but she hath washed my feet with teares, and wiped them with the haires of her head; thou gauest me no kisse, but this woman since the time I*

a T. C. l. 1. p. 176.

b T. C. l. 1. p. 190. The profitable signification of the crosse maketh the thing a great deale worse, and bringeth in a new word into the Church, whereas there ought to be no Doctrine heard in the Church but onely out Sauiour Christ. For although it be the word of God, that we should not be ashamed of the crosse of Christ, yet is not the word of God that we should keepe it in our remembrance of this by any lines drawne a crosse one ouer another in the aire, or otherwise. c Rob. 7. 44. d

came in her power: & so to kisse my feet, mine head with oyle thou didst not anoynt, but this woman hath anointed my feet with ointment. Wherefore as the vsuall dumbe Ceremonies of common life are in request or dislike according to that they import, euen so religion hauing likewise her silent rites, the chiefest rule whereby to iudge of their qualitie is that which they meane or betoken. For if they signifie good things (as somewhat they must of necessitie signifie because it is of their very nature to bee signes of intimation presenting both themselues vnto outward sense and besides themselues some other thing to the vnderstanding of beholders) vnlesse they bee either greatly mischosen to signifie the same, or else applied where that which they signifie agreeth not, there is no cause of exception against them as against euill and vnlawfull Ceremonies, much lesse of excepting against them onely in that they are not without sense. And if euery religious Ceremonie which hath beene inuented of men to signifie any thing that God himselfe alloweth were the publication of another Gospell in the Church of Christ, seeing that no Christian Church in the world is or can bee without continuall vse of some Ceremonies which men haue inuented, and that to signifie good things (vnlesse they bee vaine and friuolous Ceremonies (it would follow that the world hath no Christian Church which doth not daily proclaime new Gospels, a sequele the manifest absurditie whereof argueth the rawnesse of that supposall out of which it groweth. Now the cause why antiquitie did the more *in albions of common vse* honour the Ceremonie of the Crosse might bee for that they vsed with infidels. But that which they did in the sacrament of baptisme was for the fellefame good of beleeuers which is thereby intended still. The Crosse is for vs an admonition no lesse necessarie than for them to glorie in the seruice of Iesus Christ, and not to hang downe our heads as men ashamed thereof although it procure vs reproch and obliquie at the hands of this wretched world. Shame is a kind of feare to incurre disgrace and ignominie. Now whereas some things are worthie of reproch, some things ignominious onely through a false opinion which men haue conceiued of them; nature that generally feareth opprobrious reprehension must by reason and religion be taught what it should bee ashamed of, and what not. But be we neuer so well instructed what our dutie is in this behalfe, without some present admonition at the very instant of practice, what we know is many times not called to minde till that bee done whereupon our last confusion ensueth. To supplie the defects of such as that way might doe vs good when they see vs

in

in danger of sliding, there are iudicious and wise men which thinke wee may greatly relieue our selues by a bare imagined presence of some, whose authoritie we feare and would be loath to offend, if indeed they were present with vs. Witnesses we haue are a bridle vnto many offences. Let the minde haue alwaies some whom it feareth, some whose authoritie may keepe euen secret thoughts vnder awe. Take Cato, or if he be too harsh and rugged, chuse some other of a softer mettle, whose grauitie of life and speech thou louest, his minde and countenance carrie with thee, set him alwaies before thine eyes either as a watch or as a patterne. That which is crooked wee cannot streighten but by some such rule. If men of so good experience and insight in the maimes of our weake flesh, haue thought these fancied remembrances auaileable to awaken shamefastnesse, thus to the boldnesse of sinne may be stayed ere it looke abroad, surely the wisedome of the Church of Christ which hath to that vse conuerted the Ceremonie of the Crosse in Baptisme, it is no Christian mans part to despise, especially seeing that by this meane, where nature doth earnestly importe aide, religion yeeldeth her that readie assistance then which there can be no helpe more forcible, seruing onely to relieue memorie, and to bring to our cogitation that which should most make ashamed of sinne. The minde while wee are in this present life[b] whether it contemplate, meditate, deliberate, or howsoeuer exercise it selfe, worketh nothing without continuall recourse vnto imagination the onely store-house of wit, and peculiar chaine of memorie. On this anuile it ceaseth not day and night to strike, by meanes wherof, as the pulse declareth how the heart doth worke, so the very thoughts and cogitations of mans mind do they good or bad doe no where sooner bewray themselues, then through the crepesses of that wall wherewith nature hath compassed the cell and closets of fancie. In the forehead nothing more plaine to be seene then the feare of contumelie and disgrace. For which cause the Scripture (as with great probabilitie it may be thought) describeth them[d] marked of God in the forehead, whom his mercie hath vndertaken to keepe from finall confusion and shame. Nos that God doth set any corporall marke on his chosen, but to note that he giueth his elect securitie of preseruation from reproch, the feare whereof doth vse to shew it selfe[e] in that part. Shall I say that the signe of the Crosse (as we vse it) is in some sort a meane to worke our preseruation from reproch? Surely the minde which as yet hath not hardned it selfe in sin is seldome prouoked thereunto in any grosse and grieuous manner, but natures secret suggestion obiected against it ignominie as a barre. Which conceipt being entred into that palace of mans fancie, the gates whereof haue imprinted in them that holy signe which bringeth forth with to mind what soeuer Christ hath wrought and vowed against sinne, it commeth hereby so to passe, that Christian men neuer want a most effectuall though a silent reason to auoid whatsoeuer may deseruedly procure shame. So that is things which we should be ashamed of we are by the Crosse admonished faithfully of our dutie at the very moment when admonition doth most need. Other things there are which deserue honour and yet doe purchase many times our disgrace in this present world, as of old the very gorgh of religion it selfe, till God by his owne outstretched arme made the glorie thereof to shine ouer all the earth.

Where-

a Stuc. Rit. antiq.

b Τὸ νοεῖν ἡ φαντασία τοῖς ἐν τῷ σώματι ἐστίν. Arist. de anim. lib. 3. cap. 8. Ἡ μὲν γὰρ διάνοια τῆς φαντασίας ἐστὶν ἢ οὐκ ἄνευ φαντασίας. Ibid. Τὰ μὲν οὖν ἄλλα ζῷα τῇ φύσει μόνον ἔχει φαντασίαν καὶ μνήμην, ἐνίοις δὲ τούτων καὶ λόγος ὑπάρχει καὶ νόησις. Ibid. lib. 3. cap. 3. Ἐπεὶ δὲ ἡ ἀνθρωπίνη φύσις, βέλτιστα καὶ τὰ ἄλλα ἔχει μνήμην καὶ φρόνησιν καὶ τὴν ἀκρίβειαν ταύτην ἐν τούτοις ὑπερβάλλει μᾶλλον τὸ δυνάμει, ἢ φρονεῖν, ἢ ἐκ τῶν αἰσθήσεων ἐπὶ τὰ καθόλου ἰέναι διὰ τοῦτο ἐν τῇ ψυχῇ τὰ μαθηματικὰ νοήματα. Ibid. lib. 3. cap. 8.

c From hominis tristitia, bilis, clamoris, securitatis index Scheff. Phil. lib. 1.

d Ezech. 9. 4. Apoc. 7. 3. 9. 4.

e Ἐπαισχύνεται γάρ ἡ ἀγχίνοια. Arist. Eth. 4. c. 9.

f Cæno signatur ut & animamuniatur. Tert. de resur. car.

Whereupon [a] Saint *Cyprian* exhorting to martyrdome in times of heathenish perſecution and crueltie, thought it not vaine to alleage vnto them with other arguments the very Ceremonie of that Crolle whereof we ſpeake. Neuer let that hand offer ſacrifice to idols which hath alreadie receiued the bodie of our Sauiour Chriſt and ſhall hereafter the Crowne of his glorie; *arme your foreheads* vnto all boldneſſe that *the ſigne of God* may be kept ſafe. Againe, whenſe pleaſed God that the furie of their enemies being bridled the Church had ſome little reſt and quietneſſe, (if ſo ſmall a libertie but onely to breath betweene troubles may be termed quietneſſe and reſt) to ſuch as fell not away from Chriſt through former perſecutions, hee giueth due and deſerued praiſe in the ſelfe-ſame manner, [b] *You that were readie to indure impriſonment, and were reſolute to ſuffer death; you that haue courageouſly withſtood the world, yee haue made your ſelues both a glorious ſpectacle for God to behold, and a worthie example for the reſt of your brethren to follow. Thoſe mouthes which had ſanctified themſelues with food comming downe from heauen, loathed after Chriſts emptie bodie and blood to taſte the poyſoned and contagious ſcraps of idols; thoſe foreheads which the ſigne of God had purified, kept themſelues to bee crowned by him, the touch of the* [c] *garlands of Satan they abhorred.* Thus was the memorie of that ſigne which they had in baptiſme a kind of barre or preuention to keepe them euen from apoſtaſie, whereunto the frailtie of fleſh and blood ouermuch fearing to indure ſhame, might peraduenture the more eaſily otherwiſe haue drawne them. We haue not now through the gracious goodneſſe of almightie God, thoſe extreme conflicts which our fathers had with blaſphemous contumelies euery where offered to the name of Chriſt, by ſuch as profeſſed themſelues infidels and vnbeleeuers. Howbeit, vnleſſe wee be ſtrangers to the age wherein we liue, or elſe in ſome partiall reſpect diſſemblers of that we hourely both heare and ſee, there is not the ſimpleſt of vs but knoweth with what diſdaine and ſcorne Chriſt is honoured farre and wide. Is there any burthen in the world more heauie to beare then contempt? Is there any contempt that grieueth as theirs doth, whoſe qualitie no way making them leſſe worthie then others are of reputation, only the ſeruice which they doe to Chriſt in the daily exerciſe of religion treadeth them downe? Doth any contumelie which wee ſuffaine for religions ſake pierce ſo deeply as that which would ſeeme euen of meere conſcience religiouſly ſpitefull? when they that honour God are deſpiſed; when the chiefeſt ſeruice of honour that man can doe vnto him is the cauſe why they are deſpiſed; when they which pretend to honour him, and that with greateſt ſinceritie, doe with more then heathenish petulancie trample vnder foot almoſt what ſoeuer either wee or the whole Church of God by the ſpace of ſo many ages haue beene accuſtomed vnto for the comlier and better exerciſe of our religion, according to the ſoundeſt rules that wiſedome, directed by the word of God and by long experience confirmed, hath beene able with common iudge, with much deliberation and exceeding great diligence to comprehend; when no man fighting vnder Chriſts banner can be alwayes exempted from ſeeing or ſuffering theſe indignities, the ſting whereof not to feele, or feeling, not to bee mooued thereat, is a thing impoſſible to fleſh and bloud: If this bee any obiect for patience to worke on,

the

a *Cypr. Epiſt. 56. ad Thibaritanos.*

b *Cypr. de Lapſ.*

c *Quæ enim ſignium coronæ? Tertul. lib. de coron. militis.* In the ſeruice of Idols the coates of their Priests, the facinges, the aboue, the Priests and the Sacrificers that were conſecrated were garlands.

the strictest bond that thereunto tyeth vs is our vowed obedience of Christ; the solemnest vow that was euer made to obey Christ and to suffer willingly all reproches for his sake was made in baptisme; and amongst other memorials to keepe vs mindfull of that vow wee cannot thinke that the signe which our new baptized forheads did there receiue is either vnfit or vnforcible, the reasons hitherto alleaged being weighed with indifferent ballance. It is not (you will say) the crosse in our forheads, but in our hearts the faith of Christ that armeth vs with patience, constancie and courage. Which as wee graunt to be most true, so neither doe we despise no not the meanest helpes that serue though it be but in the very lowest degree of furtherance towards the highest services that God doth require at our hands. And if any man deny that such Ceremonies are auaileable vs the least as memorials of dutie, or doe thinke that himselfe hath no needs to bee so put in minde what our duties are, it is but reasonable that in the one the publique experience of the world ouerweigh some few mens perswasion, and in the other the rare perfection of a few condiscend vnto common imbecillitie. Seeing therefore that to feare shame which doth worthily follow sinne, and to beare vndeserued reproch constantly is the generall duty of all men professing Christianitie, seeing also that our weakenesse while wee are in this present world doth neede towards spirituall duties the helpe euen of corporall furtherances, and that by reason of naturall intercourse betweene the highest and the lowest powers of mans minde in all actions, his phancie or imagination carrying in it that speciall note of remembrance more then which there is nothing more forcible where either too weake or too strong a concept of infamie and disgrace might doe great harme, standeth alwaies ready to put forth a kind of necessarie helping hand; wee are in that respect to acknowledge the [a] good and profitable vse of this Ceremonie, and not to thinke it superfluous that Christ hath his marke applyed [b] vnto that part where bashfulnesse appeareth, in token that they which are Christians should bee at no time afeared of his ignominie. But to prevent some inconueniences, which might ensue if the ouer ordinarie vse thereof (as it fareth with such rites when they are too common) should cause it to bee of lesse obseruation or regard where it most auaileth, we neither omit it in that place, nor altogether make it so nudge as the custome heretofore hath beene: although to condemne the whole Church of God when it most flourished in zeale and pietie, for vsing that age with the bound of errour and superstition only, because they had this Ceremonie rather in vse then we how thinke needfull, boldly to affirme that this their perfidious gaine is soone through a fearefull malediction of God vpon the Ceremonie of the Crosse as if wee knew that his purpose was therby to make it manifest in all mens eyes how execrable those things are in his sight, which haue proceeded from humane inuention, is as we take it a censure of greater zeale then knowledge: when whose iudgements in these cases are growne more studious, although they remisse not as we doe the vse of this Ceremonie, perceiue [c] notwithstanding very well such censures to bee out of square, and do therefore not only [d] acquit the Fathers from superstition therein, but also thinke it sufficient to saue them in excuse of themselues, [e] *The ceremonie which we hold a thing indifferent were of old time iudged not as this day it is by necessarie*

a Χρῆσθαι δὲ χρὴ καὶ τοῖς φαλακτοῖς τῶν τοιούτων καὶ ὧν ἀναλαβεῖν τὸ τοιοῦτον καὶ τὸ κινητικὸν τῶν ἀναγκαίων καὶ τὸ φαυλικόν. *Arist. Rhet. lib. 1. cap. 6.*

b *Origen. tract. 35. in Matth. Ostium vero lateris veritatis in fronte maculatus est, ne parte corporis notatum offendat Dominum. Vbi signatur qui Dominum prouocarunt. Cypr. de vnit. Eccles. cap. 16.*

c *Gentian. Annot. in Cypr. lib. ad Demetr. cap. Quamuis veteres, Christiani externo signo crucis vti sint id tamen fuit ob superstitiosam, & doctrinæ de Christi merito ab errore qui postea irrepsit pios seruandi immunes.*

d *Idem annot. in Cypr. ep. 56. c. 7.*

necessarie for all Christian men to obserue. As for their last vpshot of all towards this marke, they are of opinion that if the ancient Christians to deliuer the Crosse of Christ from contempt did well and with good consideration vse often the signe of the Crosse in testimonie of their faith and profession before infidels which vpbraided them with Christs sufferings, now that wee liue with such as contrariwise adore the signe of the Crosse (because contrarie effects should alwayes haue contrarie remedies) we ought to take away all vse thereof. In which conceipt they both wayes greatly seduce themselues, first for that they imagine the Fathers to haue had no vse of the Crosse, but with reference vnto infidels, which misperswasion we haue before discouered at large; and secondly by reason that they thinke there is not any other way besides vniuersall extirpation to reforme superstitious abuses of the Crosse. Wherein because there are that stand very much vpon the example of *Ezechias*, as if his a *breaking to peeces that serpent* of brasse, whereunto the children of Israel had *burnt incense*, did enforce the vtter abolition of this Ceremonie, the fact of that vertuous prince is by so much the more attentiuely to be considered. Our liues in this world are partly guided by rules, and partly directed by examples. To conclude out of generall rules and axiomes by discourse of wit our duties in euery particular action is both troublesome and many times so full of difficultie, that it maketh deliberations hard and tedious to the wisest men. Whereupon we naturally all incline to obserue examples, to marke what others haue done before vs, and in the fauor of our owne ease rather to follow them then to enter into new consultation, if in regard of their vertue and wisedome we may but probably thinke they haue walked without error. So that the willingnesse of men to be led by example of others both discloseth and helpeth the imbecilitie of our iudgement. Because it doth the one, therefore insolent and proud wits would alwayes seeme to bee their owne guides; and because it doth the other, wee see how hardly the vulgar sort is driuen vnto any thing for which there are not as well examples as reasons alleaged. Reasons proouing that which is more particular by things more generall and further from sense are with the simpler sort of men lesse trusted, for that they doubt of their owne iudgement in those things; but of examples which proouе vnto them the doubtfull particular by an other more familiarly and sensibly knowne, they easily perceiue in themselues some better ability to iudge. The force of examples therefore is great, when in matter of action being doubtfull what to be wed are informed what others haue commendable done whose deliberations were like. But whosoeuer doth perswade by example, must as well respect the fitnesse as the goodnesse of that he alleageth. To *Ezechias* God himselfe in this fact giueth testimonie of well-doing. So that nothing is here questionable but onely whether the example alleaged bee pertinent, prophane and strong. The serpent spoken of was first erected for the extraordinarie and miraculous cure of the Israelites in the desart. This vse hauing prodigiously ceased when the cause for which God ordained it was quite remooued, the thing it selfe they notwithstanding kept for a *monument of Gods mercie*, as in like consideration they did the pot of Manna, the rod of *Aaron*, and the sword which *Dauid* tooke from *Goliah*. In processe of time they made of a memorian of diuine

a 2.*Reg.*18.3.

power

power a plaine idoll, they burnt incenſe before it contrarie to the law of God, and did it the ſeruices of honour due vnto God onely. Which groſſe and grieuous abuſe continued till Ezechias reſtoring the puritie of ſound religion, deſtroyed vtterly that which had been ſo long and ſo generally a ſnare vnto them. It is not amiſſe which the [a] Canon law hereupon concludeth, namely, that *if our predeceſſors haue done ſome things which at that time might be without fault, and afterward bee turned to errour and ſuperſtition, wee are taught by Ezechias breaking the braſen Serpent that poſteritie may deſtroy them without any delay, and with great authoritie.* But may it bee ſimply and without exception hereby gathered, that poſteritie *is bound to deſtroy* whatſoeuer hath beene either at the firſt inuented, or but afterwards turned to like ſuperſtition and errour? No it cannot be. The Serpent therefore and the ſigne of the Croſſe although ſeeming equall in this point that ſuperſtition hath abuſed both, yet being herein alſo vnequall, that neither they haue beene both ſubiect to the like degree of abuſe, nor were in hardneſſe of redreſſe alike, it may bee that euen as the one for abuſe was religiouſly taken away, ſo now, when religion hath taken away abuſe from the other, wee ſhould by vtter abolition thereof deſerue hardly his commendation, whoſe example there is offred vs no ſuch neceſſarie cauſe to follow. For by the words of *Ezechias* in terming the Serpent but *a lumpe of braſſe*, to ſhew that the beſt thing in it now was the mettall or matter whereof it conſiſted, wee may probably coniecture, that the people whoſe errour is therein controld had the ſelfe-ſame opinion of it which the Heathens had of idols, they thought that the power of deitie was with it, and when they ſaw it diſſolued happely they might to comfort themſelues imagine as *Olimpius* the Sophiſter did beholding the diſſipation of idols, [b] *Shapes and counterfeits they were, faſhioned of matter ſubiect vnto corruption, therefore to grinde them to duſt was eaſie, but thoſe celeſtiall powers which dwelt and reſided in them are aſcended into heauen.* Some difference there is betweene theſe opinions of palpable idolatrie, and that which the ſchooles in ſpeculation haue boulted out concerning the Croſſe. Notwithſtanding for as much as the Church of Rome hath hetherto practiſed and doth profeſſe the ſame adoration to the ſigne of the Croſſe, and neither leſſe nor other then is due vnto Chriſt himſelfe, howſoeuer they varniſh and qualifie their ſentence, pretending that the Croſſe, which to outward ſenſe preſenteth viſible it ſelfe alone, is not by them apprehended alone, but hath in their ſecret ſurmiſe or conceipt a reference to the perſon of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, ſo that the honour which they ioyntly doe to both, reſpecteth principally his perſon, and the Croſſe but onely for his perſons ſake, the people not accuſtomed to trouble their wits with ſo nice and ſubtle differences in the exerciſe of religion are apparently no leſſe inſnared by adoring the Croſſe, then the Iewes by burning incenſe to the braſen Serpent. It is by [c] *Thomas* ingeniouſly granted, that becauſe vnto reaſonable creatures a kind of reuerence is due for the excellencie which is in them, and whereby they reſemble God, therefore if reaſonable creatures, angels or men ſhould receiue at our hands holy and diuine honour as the ſigne of the Croſſe doth at theirs, to pretend that wee honour not them alone, but wee honour God with them, would not ſerue the turne, neither would

[a] Diſt. 6. 3. c. Quia.

[b] Serm. lib. 7. cap. 15.

[c] 1h. p. 3. q. 25. art. 3. reſp. ad tert.

would this bee able to preuent the errour of men or cauſe them alwaies to reſpect God in their adorations, and not to finiſh their intents in the obiect next before them. But vnto this hee addeth that no ſuch errour can grow by adoring in that ſort a dead image, which euery man knoweth to bee voide of excellencie in it ſelfe, and therefore will eaſily conceiue that the honour done vnto it hath an higher reference. Howbeit, ſeeing that wee haue by our true experience beene taught how often, eſpecially in theſe caſes, the light euen of common vnderſtanding faileth, ſurely their vſuall adoration of the Croſſe is not hereby freed. For in actions of this kinde wee are more to reſpect what the greateſt part of men is commonly prone to conceiue, then what ſome few mens wits may deuiſe in conſtruction of their owne particular meanings. Plaine it is, that a falſe opinion of ſome perſonall diuine excellencie to bee in thoſe things which either nature or arte hath framed, cauſeth alwaies religious adoration. And as plaine that the like adoration applyed vnto things ſenſible argueth to vulgar capacities, yea leaueth imprinted in them the very ſame opinion of deitie from whence all idolatrous worſhip groweth. Yea the meaner and baſer a thing worſhipped is in it ſelfe, the more they incline to thinke that euery man which doth adore it, knoweth there is in it or with it a preſence of diuine power? Bee it therefore true that Croſſes purpoſely framed or vſed for receipt of diuine honour, bee euen as ſcandalous as the braſen Serpent it ſelfe, where they are in ſuch ſort adored. Should wee hereupon thinke our ſelues in the ſight of God and in conſcience charged to aboliſh vtterly the very *Ceremonie* of the Croſſe, neither meant at the firſt, nor now conuerted vnto any ſuch offenſiue purpoſe? Did the Iewes which could neuer bee perſwaded to admit in the Citie of Ieruſalem that [a] image of *Ceſar* which the Romanes were accuſtomed [b] to adore, make any ſcruple of [c] *Ceſars* image in the Coine which they knew very well that men were not wont to worſhip? Betweene the Croſſe which ſuperſtition honoureth as Chriſt, and that Ceremonie of the Croſſe which ſerueth onely for a ſigne of remembrance, there is as plaine and as great a difference as betweene thoſe [d] braſen Images which *Salomon* made to beare vp the Ceſterne of the Temple, and (ſith both were of like ſhape but of vnlike vſe) [e] that which the Iſraelites in the wilderneſſe did adore; or betweene the [f] altars which *Ioſias* deſtroyed becauſe they were inſtruments of meere Idolatrie, and [g] that which the tribe of *Ruben* with others erected neere to the riuer Iordan, for which alſo they grew at the firſt into ſome diſlike, and were by the reſt of their brethren ſuſpected, yea hardly charged with open breach of the law of God, accuſed of backwardneſſe in religion, vpbraided bitterly with the fact of *Peor*, and the odious example of *Achan*, as if the building of their altar in that place had giuen manifeſt ſhew of no better then intended Apoſtaſie, till by a true declaration made in their owne defenſe, it appeared that ſuch as miſliked miſunderſtoode their enterpriſe, in as much as they had no intent to build any altar for ſacrifice which God would haue no where offered ſaue in Ieruſalem onely, but to a farre other ende and purpoſe, which beeing opened ſatisfied all parts, and ſo deliuered them from cauſeleſſe blame. In this particular ſuppoſe the worſt, imagine

a *Ioſeph. Antiq. lib.17. cap.8. & lib.18. cap.3. & de bell. li.2.c.8.*
b Their Eagles their enſignes, and the images of their Princes they carried with them in all their armies, and had alwaies a kind of Chappell wherein they placed and adored them as their Gods *Dio, lib.40. Herodia. li.4.*
c *Matth.22.20.*
d *1.Chro.4.3.*
e *Exod.32.4.*
f *2.Chro.34.7.*
g *Ioſu.22.10.*

imagine that the immateriall Ceremonie of the Croſſe had beene the ſubiect of as groſſe pollution as any Heathenish or prophane Idoll. If wee thinke the example of *Ezechias* a proofe, that things which Errour and Superſtition hath abuſed, may in no conſideration bee tolerated, although wee preſently finde them not ſubiect to ſo vile abuſe, the plaine Example of *Ezechias* prooueth the contrarie. The Temples and Idols which vnder *Salomon* * had beene of very purpoſe framed for the honour of forraine Gods, *Ezechias* deſtroyed not, becauſe they ſtood as forlorne things and did now no harme, although formerly they had done harme. [a] *Ioſias*, for ſome inconuenience afterwards, razed them vp. Yet to both there is one commendation giuen euen from God himſelfe, that touching [b] matter of Religion they walked in the ſteps of *Dauid*, and did no way diſpleaſe God. Perhaps it ſeemeth that by force and vertue of this Example, although it bare deteſtation and hatred of Idolatrie, all things which haue beene at any time worſhipped are not neceſſarily to bee taken out of the World, nenertheleſſe for remedie and preuention of ſo great offences, wiſdome ſhould iudge it the ſafeſt courſe to remooue altogether from the eyes of men that which may put them in mind of euill. Some kinds of euill, no doubt, there are very quicke in working on thoſe affections that moſt eaſily take fire, which euils ſhould in that reſpect no oftner then need requireth bee brought in preſence of weake minds. But neither is the Croſſe any ſuch euil, nor yet the brazen Serpent it ſelfe ſo ſtrongly poyſoned, that our eyes, eares and thoughts ought to ſhun them both, for feare of ſome deadly harme to enſue the onely repreſentation thereof by geſture, ſhape, ſound, or ſuch like ſignificant meanes. And for mine owne part I moſt aſſuredly perſwade my ſelfe, that had *Ezechias* (till the daies of whoſe moſt vertuous Reigne they ceaſed not continually to burne Incenſe to the Brazen Serpent) had he found the Serpent, though ſometime adored, yet at that time recouered from the euill of ſo groſſe abuſe, and reduced to the ſame that was before in the time of *Dauid*, at which time they eſteemed it onely as a memoriall, ſigne, or monument of Gods miraculous goodneſſe towards them, euen as we in no other ſort eſteeme the Ceremonie of the Croſſe, the due conſideration of an vſe ſo harmeleſſe, common to both, might no leſſe haue wrought their equall preſeruation, their different occaſion haue procured, notwithſtanding the ones extinguiſhment, the others lawfull continuance. In all perſwaſions, which ground themſelues vpon Example, we are not ſo much to reſpect what is done, as the cauſes and ſecret inducements leading thereunto. The queſtion being therefore, whether this Ceremonie ſuppoſed to haue beene *ſometimes* ſcandalous and offenſiue, ought for that cauſe to be *now* remooued, there is no reaſon wee ſhould forthwith yeeld our ſelues to bee carried away with Example, no not of them whoſe acts the higheſt iudgement approueth for hauing reformed in that manner any publike euill: but before wee either attempt any thing or reſolue, the ſtate and condition as well of our owne affaires as theirs whoſe Example preſſeth vs, is aduiſedly to be examined, becauſe ſome things are of their owne nature ſcandalous, and cannot chooſe but breed offence; as thoſe * Sinkes of execrable filth which *Ioſias* did ouerwhelme; ſome things, albeit not by nature and of themſelues,

* 1.*Reg.*11.17.

a 2.*Reg.*23.13.

b 2.*Reg.*18.3.6. 2.*Reg.*22.2.

* 2.*Reg.*23.7.

are notwithstanding so generally turned to euill, by reason of an euill corrupt habit growne, and through long continuance incurably settled in the mindes of the greatest part, that no redresse can be well hoped for, without remouall of that wherein they haue ruined themselues, which plainely was the state of the Iewish people, and the cause why *Ezechias* did with such suddaine indignation destroy what hee saw worshipped; finally, some things are as the signe of the Crosse, though subiect either almost or altogether to as great abuse, yet curable with more facilitie and ease. And to speake as the truth is, our very nature doth hardly yeeld to destroy that which may bee fruitfully kept, and without any great difficultie cleane scowred from the rust of euill, which by some accident hath growne into it. Wherefore to that which they build in this question vpon the Example of *Ezechias*, let this suffice. When Heathens despised Christian Religion, because of the sufferings of Iesus Christ, the Fathers, to testifie how litle such contumelies & contempts preuailed with them, chose rather the signe of the Crosse, then any other outward marke, whereby the World might most easily discerne alwayes what they were. On the contrary side now, whereas they which doe all professe the Christian Religion are diuided amongst themselues, and the fault of the one part is, that the zeale to the Sufferings of Christ they admire too much, and ouer-superstitiously adore the Visible signe of his Crosse, if you aske, what we that mislike them, should doe, wee are here aduised to cure one contrarie by another. Which Arte or Methode is not yet so currant as they imagine. For if, as their practice for the most part sheweth, it bee their meaning that the scope and drift of Reformation, when things are faultie, should bee to *settle* the Church in the contrarie, it standeth them vpon to beware of this rule, because seeing Vices haue not onely Vertues, but other Vices also in nature opposite vnto them, it may bee dangerous in these cases to seeke but that which wee finde contrarie to present euils. For in sores and sicknesses of the minde wee are not simply to measure good by distance from euill, because one Vice may in some respect be more opposite to another, then either of them to that Vertue which holdeth the meane betweene them both. Liberalitie and Couetousnesse, the one a Vertue and the other a Vice, are not so contrarie as the vices of Couetousnesse and Prodigalitie; Religion and Superstition haue more affiance, though the one bee Light and the other Darknesse, then Superstition and Prophanenesse, which both are vicious extremities. By meanes whereof it commeth also to passe, that the meane, which is Vertue, seemeth in the eyes of each extreme an extremitie; the liberall hearted man is by the opinion of the Prodigall miserable, and by the iudgement of the Miserable lauish; Impietie for the most part vpbraideth Religion as superstitious, which Superstition often accuseth as impious, both so conceiuing thereof because it doth seeme more to participate each extreme, then one extreme doth another, and is by consequent lesse contrarie to either of them, then they mutually betweene themselues. Now, if hee that seeketh to reforme Couetousnesse or Superstition, should but labour to induce the contrarie, it were but to draw men out of Lime into Cole-dust. So that their course which will remedie

the ſuperſtitious abuſe of things profitable in the Church is not ſtill to abolish vtterly the vſe thereof, becauſe not vſing it at all is moſt oppoſite to ill vſing, but rather if it may be, to bring them backe to a right perfect and religious vſage, which albeit leſſe contrarie to the preſent ſore, is notwithſtanding the better and by many degrees the ſounder way of recouerie. And vnto this effect that verie precedent it ſelfe which they propoſe may bee beſt followed. For as the Fathers, when the Croſſe of Chriſt was in vtter contempt, did not ſuperſtitiouſly adore the ſame, but rather declare that they ſo eſteemed it as was meet: in like manner where wee find the Croſſe to haue that honour which is due to Chriſt, is it not as lawfull for vs to retaine it in that eſtimation which it ought to haue, and in that vſe which it had of old without offence, as by taking it cleane away to ſeeme followers of their Example, which cure wilfully by abſciſion that which they might both preſerue and heale? Touching therefore the Signe and Ceremonie of the Croſſe, wee no way find our ſelues bound to relinquiſh it, neyther becauſe the firſt Inuentors thereof were but mortall men, nor left the ſenſe and ſignification wee giue vnto it ſhould be taken vs as Authors of a new Goſpell in the Houſe of God, nor in reſpect of ſome cauſe which the Fathers had more then we haue to vſe the ſame, nor finally for any ſuch offence or ſcandall as heretofore it hath beene ſubiect vnto by errour now reformed in the minds of men.

66 The ancient cuſtome of the Church was, after they had baptized, to adde thereunto Impoſition of hands, with effectuall Prayer for the * illumination of Gods moſt holy Spirit, to confirme and perfect that which the grace of the ſame Spirit had already begunne in Baptiſme. For our meanes to obtayne the graces which God doth beſtow, are our Prayers. Our Prayers to that intent are auayleable as well for others as for our ſelues. To pray for others, is *to bleſſe* them for whom we pray, becauſe Prayer procureth the bleſſing of God vpon them, eſpecially the Prayer of ſuch as God eyther moſt reſpecteth for their Pietie and Zeale that way, or elſe regardeth, for that their place & calling bindeth them aboue others vnto this duty, as it doth both naturall and ſpirituall Fathers. With Prayers of ſpirituall and perſonall Benediction, the manner hath beene in all Ages to vſe *Impoſition of hands*, as a Ceremonie betokening *our reſtrained deſires* to the partie, whom we preſent vnto God by Prayer. Thus when a *Iſrael bleſſed Ephraim* and *Manaſſes Ioſephs* Sonnes, hee *impoſed* vpon them his hands and prayed, *God in whoſe ſight my Fathers* ABRAHAM *and* ISAAC *did walke, God which hath fed me all my life long vnto this day, & the Angel which hath deliuered me from all euill, bleſſe theſe children.* The Prophets which healed diſeaſes by Prayer, vſed therein the ſelfe-ſame Ceremonie. And therefore b when *Eliszus* willed *Naaman* to waſh himſelfe ſeuen times in Iordan for cure of his foule diſeaſe, it much offended him: *I thought* (ſaith he) *with my ſelfe, Surely the man will come forth and ſtand and call vpon the Name of the Lord his God, and put his hand on the place, to the end he may ſo heale the Leproſie.* In c Conſecrations & Ordinations of men vnto roomes of diuine calling, the like was vſually done from the time of *Moſes* to Chriſt. Their ſuites that came vnto Chriſt for helpe were alſo tendered oftentimes, and are expreſſed in * ſuch formes or phraſes of ſpeech, as ſhew that he was himſelfe an obſeruer of the ſame cuſtome. Howbeit

Of Confirmation after Baptiſme.

* *Cæro manus impoſitione adumbratur, vt & anima ſpiritu illuminetur.* Tertull. de Reſur. car.

a *Gen.48.14.*

b *2.Reg.5.11.*

c *Numb.27.18.*

* *Mat.9.18. Mar.5.23.8.22.*

with Impoſition of Hands and Prayer did ſo great Workes of Mercie for reſtauration of bodily health, was worthily iudged as able to effect the infuſion of heauenly grace into them, whoſe age was not yet depraued with that malice which might be ſuppoſed a barre to the goodneſſe of God towards them.

* *Mat.19.13. Marke 10.13. Luke 18.15.* They * brought him therefore yong Children to put *his hands* vpon them and *pray*. After the Aſcenſion of our Lord and Sauiour Ieſus Chriſt, that which he had begunne continued in the daily practice of his Apoſtles, whoſe Prayer and Impoſition of hands, were a meane whereby thouſands became partakers of the wonderfull gifts of God; The Church had receiued from Chriſt

l *Mar.16.17.* a promiſe, that ſuch as beleeued in him, theſe ſignes and tokens ſhould follow them, *To caſt out Deuils, to ſpeake with tongues, to driue away Serpents, to be free from the harme which any deadly poyſon could work, and to cure diſeaſes by Impoſition of hands.* Which power, common at the firſt in a manner vnto *all Beleeuers*, all Beleeuers had not power to derive or communicate vnto all other men, but whoſoeuer was the inſtrument of God to inſtruct, conuert and baptize them,

m *Acts 19.6.* n *Acts 8.17,18* m the gift of miraculous operations by the power of the Holy Ghoſt they had not, but onely at the Apoſtles owne hands. For which cauſe n *Simon Magus* perceiuing that power to be in none but them, and preſuming that they which had it might ſell it, ſought to purchaſe it of them with money. And as miracu-

o *Iren.l.2.c.57.* lous graces of the Spirit continued after the Apoſtles times (for ſaith o *Ireneus*) *They which are truly his Diſciples, do in his Name, and through grace receiued from him, ſuch workes for the benefit of other men, as euery of them is by him inabled to worke; Some caſt out Deuils, in ſo much as they which are deliuered from wicked ſpirits, haue bin thereby manie vnto Chriſt, and doe conſtantly perſeuere in the Church and ſocietie of faithfull men; Some excell in the knowledge of things to come, in the grace of Viſions from God and the gift of Prophetical Predictions; Some by laying on their hands, reſtore them to health which are grieuouſly afflicted with ſickneſſe; yea there are that of dead haue bin made aline, & haue afterwards many yeeres conuerſed with vs; What ſhould I ſay? the gifts are innumerable wherewith God hath inriched his Church throughout the World, and by vertue whereof in the Name of Chriſt crucified vnder* PONTIVS PILATE, *the Church euery day doth many Wonders for the good of Nations, neyther fraudulently nor in any reſpect of lucre and gaine to her ſelfe, but as freely beſtowing as God on her hath beſtowed his diuine graces:* ſo it no where appeareth, that euer any did Prayer & Impoſition of hands ſithence the Apoſtles times, make others partakers of the like *miraculous gifts* and graces as long as it pleaſed God to continue the ſame in his Church, but

* *Aug. de vera Relig. cap.25.* onely Biſhops the Apoſtles Succeſſors for a time, euen in that power. * *S. Auguſtine* acknowledgeth, that ſuch gifts were not permitted to laſt alwayes, leſt men ſhould waxe cold with the commonneſſe of that, the ſtrangeneſſe whereof at the firſt inflamed them. Which words of Saint *Auguſtine* declaring how the vulgar vſe of theſe Miracles was then expired, are no prejudice to the like extraordinarie graces more rarely obſerued in ſome, eyther then or of later dayes. Now whereas the Succeſſors of the Apoſtles had but onely for a time ſuch power as by Prayer and Impoſition of hands to beſtow the holy Ghoſt; The reaſon wherefore Confirmation, neuertheleſſe by Prayer and Laying on of hands hath hitherto alwayes continued, is for other very ſpeciall benefits

which

which the Church thereby inioyeth. The Fathers euery-where impute vnto it that gift or grace of the Holy Ghoſt, not which maketh vs firſt Chriſtian men, but when we are made ſuch, aſſiſteth vs in all vertue, armeth vs againſt temptation and ſinne. For after Baptiſme adminiſtred, *there followeth* (ſaith [a] TERTVLLIAN) *Impoſition of hands with inuocation and inuitation of the Holy Ghoſt, which willingly commeth downe from the Father to reſt vpon the purified and bleſſed bodies, as it were acknowledging the waters of Baptiſme a fit ſeat.* S. [b] CYPRIAN in more particular manner alluding to that effect of the Spirit which here eſpecially was reſpected, *How great* (ſaith he) *is that power and force wherewith the mind is here* (he meaneth in Baptiſme) *inabled, being not onely withdrawne from that pernicious hold which the World before had of it, nor onely ſo purified and made cleane that no ſtaine or blemiſh of the Enemies inuaſion doth remayne, but euer and beſides* (namely, through Prayer and Impoſition of Hands) *becommeth yet greater, yet mightier in ſtrength, ſo farre as to raigne with a kind of Imperiall dominion ouer the whole Band of that roming & ſpeyling Aduerſary!* As much is ſignified by [c] EVSEBIVS EMISSENVS, ſaying, *The Holy Ghoſt which deſcendeth with ſauing influence vpon the waters of Baptiſme, doth there giue that fulnes which ſufficeth for innocencie, and afterwards exhibiteth in confirmation an augmentation of further grace.* The Fathers therefore being thus perſwaded held Confirmation as [d] an Ordinance Apoſtolike *alwaies profitable* in Gods Church, although not alwaies accompanied with equall largeneſſe of thoſe externall effects which gaue it countenance at the firſt. The cauſe of ſeuering Confirmation from Baptiſme (for moſt commonly they went together) was ſometime in the Miniſter, which being of inferiour degree might Baptize but not confirme, as in [e] their caſe it came to paſſe whom *Peter* and *Iohn* did confirme, whereas *Philip* had before baptized them; and in theirs of whom [f] Saint *Ierome* had ſaid, *I denie not but the cuſtome of the Churches is that the Biſhop ſhould goe abroad, and impoſing his hands pray for the gift of the Holy Ghoſt on them whom Presbyters and Deacons farre off in leſſer Cities haue alreadie baptized.* Which ancient cuſtome of the Church Saint *Cyprian* groundeth vpon the Example of *Peter* and *Iohn* in the eight of the *Acts* before alleaged. The [g] faithfull in Samaria (ſaith he) *Had alreadie obteyned Baptiſme: Onely that which was wanting,* PETER *and* IOHN *ſupplyed by Prayer and Impoſition of Hands, to the end the Holy Ghoſt might bee powred vpon them. Which alſo is done amongſt our ſelues, when they which bee alreadie Baptized are brought to the Prelates of the Church, to obtaine by our Prayer and Impoſition of Hands the Holy Ghoſt.* By this it appeareth that when the Miniſters of Baptime were perſons of inferiour degree, the Biſhops did after confirme whom ſuch had before baptized. Sometimes they which by force of Eccleſiaſticall calling might do as well the one as the other, were notwithſtanding men whom Hereſie had diſioyned from the fellowſhip of true Beleeuers. Whereupon when any man by them baptized and confirmed, came afterwards to ſee and renounce their errour, there grew in ſome Churches very hot contention about the manner of admitting ſuch into the boſome of the true Church, as hath beene declared alreadie in the queſtion of Rebaptization. But the generall receiued cuſtome was onely to admit them with Impoſition of Hands and Prayer. Of which cuſtome while ſome imagined the reaſon to bee

a *Tertull. de Baptiſ.*

b *Cypr. Epiſt. 2. ad Donat. c. 2.*

c *Euſeb. Emiſ. Ser. de Pent.*

d *Aug. de Trin. l. 15. c. 26. Heb. 6. 2.*

e *Acts 8. 12. 15*

f *Hieron. aduerſ. Luciſ. cap. 4.*

g *Cyp. Epiſt. 73. ad Iubaianum.*

for that Heretikes might giue remiſſion of ſinnes by Baptiſme, but not the Spirit by Impoſition of Hands, becauſe themſelues had not Gods Spirit, and that therefore their Baptiſme might ſtand, but Confirmation muſt bee giuen againe: the imbecillitie of this ground gaue *Cyprian* occaſion to oppoſe himſelfe againſt the practice of the Church herein, labouring many wayes to proone that Heretike could doe neyther, and conſequently, that their Baptiſme in all reſpects, was as fruſtrate as their Chriſme, for the manner of thoſe times was in confirming to vſe anoynting. On the other ſide, againſt Luciferians which ratified onely the Baptiſme of Heretikes, but diſanulled their Confirmations and Conſecrations, vnder pretenſe of the reaſon which hath beene before ſpecified, *Heretikes cannot giue the Holy Ghoſt*, Saint *Ierome* proueth at large, that if Baptiſme by Heretikes bee granted auaileable to remiſſion of ſinnes, which no man receiueth without the Spirit, it muſt needs follow that the reaſon taken from diſabilitie of beſtowing the Holy Ghoſt, was no reaſon wherefore the Church ſhould admit Conuerts with any new Impoſition of Hands. Notwithſtanding, becauſe it might bee obiected, that if the gift of the Holy Ghoſt doe alwayes ioyne it ſelfe with true Baptiſme, the Church, which thinketh the Biſhops Confirmation after other mens Baptiſme needfull for the obtayning of the Holy Ghoſt, ſhould hold an errour, Saint *Ierome* hereunto maketh anſwere, that the cauſe of this obſeruation is not any abſolute impoſſibilitie of receiuing the Holy Ghoſt by the Sacrament of Baptiſme, vnleſſe a Biſhop adde after it the Impoſition of Hands, but rather a certaine congruitie and fitneſſe to honour Prelacie with ſuch preeminences, becauſe the ſafetie of the Church dependeth vpon the dignitie of her chiefe Superiours, to whom if ſome eminent Offices of power aboue others ſhould not be giuen, there would be in the Church as many Schiſmes as Prieſts. By which anſwere it appeareth his opinion was, that the Holy Ghoſt is receiued in Baptiſme; that Confirmation is onely a Sacramentall complement; that the reaſon why Biſhops alone did ordinarily confirme, was not becauſe the benefit, grace and dignitie thereof is greater then of Baptiſme, but rather for that by the Sacrament of Baptiſme men being admitted into Gods Church, it was both reaſonable and conuenient that if hee baptize them not vnto whom the chiefeſt authoritie and charge of their ſoules belongeth, yet for honours ſake, and in token of his ſpirituall ſuperioritie ouer them, becauſe to * bleſſe is an Act of authoritie, the performance of this annexed Ceremonie ſhould bee ſought for at his hands. Now what effect their Impoſition of hands hath, eyther after Baptiſme adminiſtred by Heretikes or otherwiſe, Saint *Ierome* in that place hath made no mention, becauſe all men vnderſtood that in Conuerts it tendeth to the fruits of Repentance, and craueth in behalfe of the Penitent, ſuch grace as * *Dauid* after his Fall deſired at the hands of God; in others the fruit and benefit thereof is that which hath beene before ſhewed. Finally, ſometime the cauſe of ſeuering Confirmation from Baptiſme, was in the parties that receiued Baptiſme being Infants, at which age they might bee very well admitted to liue in the Family; but becauſe to fight in the Armie of God, to diſcharge the duties of a Chriſtian man, to bring forth the fruits, and to doe the Workes of the Holy Ghoſt, their time of abilitie was not yet come (ſo that

* Heb. 7. 3.

* Pſal. 51. 10, 11, 12.

Bap-

Baptiſme were not defer'd) there could by ſtay of their Confirmation no harme enſue but rather good. For by this meanes it came to paſſe that Children in expectation thereof, were ſeaſoned with the principles of true Religion, before malice and corrupt examples depraued their mindes, a good foundation was laid betimes for direction of the courſe of their whole liues, the ſeede of the Church of God was preſerued ſincere and ſound, the Prelates and Fathers of Gods Family, to whom the cure of their ſoules belonged, ſaw by triall and examination of them a part of their owne heauie burthen diſcharged, reaped comfort by beholding the firſt beginnings of true godlineſſe in tender yeeres, glorified him whoſe praiſe they found in the mouthes of Infants, and neglected not ſo fit opportunitie of giuing euerie one Fatherly incouragement and exhortation. Whereunto impoſition of hands and prayer being added, our warrant for the great good effect thereof is the ſame which Patriarkes, Prophets, Prieſts, Apoſtles, Fathers, and men of God haue had for ſuch their particular Inuocations and Benedictions, as no man, I ſuppoſe, profeſſing truth of Religion, will eaſily thinke to haue beene without fruit. No, there is no cauſe wee ſhould doubt of the benefit, but ſurely great cauſe to make complaint of the deepe neglect of this Chriſtian dutie, almoſt with all them to whom by right of their place and calling the ſame belongeth. Let them not take it in euill part, the thing is true, their ſmall regard hereunto hath done harme to the Church of God. That which * error raſhly vttereth in diſgrace of good things may peraduenture bee ſpunged out, when the print of thoſe euills which are growne through neglect will remaine behinde. Thus much therefore generally ſpoken, may ſerue for anſwer vnto their demands that require vs to tell them, *Why there ſhould be any ſuch Confirmation* in the Church, ſeeing we are not ignorant how earneſtly they haue proteſted againſt it, and how directly (although vntruly, for ſo they are content to acknowledge) it hath by ſome of them been ſaid, to be *firſt brought in by the fained decretal Epiſtles of the Popes*; or why it ſhould not be *vtterly aboliſhed, ſeeing that no one title thereof can be once found in the whole ſcripture*, except the Epiſtle to the [a] Hebrewes be Scripture, and againe, ſeeing that how free ſoeuer it be now from abuſe, if we looke backe to the times paſt, which wiſe men doe alwayes more reſpect then the preſent, it *hath beene* abuſed, and is found at the length *no* ſuch *profitable*

* T. C. lib. 1. p. 199. Tell me why there ſhould bee any ſuch confirmation in the Church, being brought in by the fained Decretall Epiſtles of the Popes (this is retracted by the ſame, T. C. lib. 3. p. 132. That it is ancienter then the fained Decretall Epiſtles, I yeeld vnto) and no one title thereof being once found in the Scripture, and ſeeing that it hath beene ſo horribly abuſed, and not neceſſarie, why ought it not to be vtterly abolished? And thirdly, this Confirmation hath many dangerous points in it. The firſt ſtep of Poperie in this Confirmation, is in the laying of hands vpon the head of the Child, whereby the opinion of it that it is a Sacrament, is confirmed, eſpecially when as the Prayer doth ſay, that it is done according to the example of the Apoſtles, which is a manifeſt vntruth, and taken indeed from the Popiſh Confirmation. The ſecond is, for that the Biſhop, as hee is called, muſt bee the onely Miniſter of it, whereby the Popiſh opinion, which eſteemeth it aboue Baptiſme, is confirmed. For whileſt Baptiſme may bee miniſtred of the Miniſter, and not Confirmation, but onely of the Biſhop, there is great cauſe of ſuſpition giuen to thinke that Baptiſme is not ſo precious a thing as Confirmation, ſeeing this was one of the principall reaſons whereby that wicked opinion was eſtabliſhed in Poperie. I doe not heere ſpeake of the inconuenience, that men are conſtrained with charges to bring their Children often-times halfe a ſcore miles for that which if it were needfull might bee as well done at home in their owne Parishes. The third is, for that the Booke ſaith, a cauſe of vſing Confirmation is, that by impoſition of hands and Prayer, the Children may receiue ſtrength and defence againſt all temptations, whereas there is no promiſe, that by the laying on of hands vpon Children any ſuch gift ſhall be giuen, and it maintaineth the Popiſh diſtinction, that the Spirit of God is giuen at Baptiſme, vnto remiſſion of ſins, and in Confirmation, vnto ſtrength. [a] Heb. 6. 3.

Ceremonie

Ceremonie as the whole ſilly Church of Chriſt for the ſpace of theſe ſixteene hundred yeeres hath through want of experience imagined: laſt of all, *ſeeing* alſo beſides the crueltie which is ſhewed towards poore Country people, who are faine ſometimes to let their Ploughs ſtand ſtill, and with incredible wearieſome toyle of their feeble bodies to wander ouer Mountaines and thorough Woods, it may be now and then little leſſe then a whole *halfe ſcore of miles* for a Biſhops bleſſing, *which if it were needfull, might as well be done at home in their owne Pariſhes*, rather then they to purchaſe it with ſo great loſſe and ſo intolerable paine, there are they ſay in Confirmation beſides this, *three* terrible *points*. The firſt is, *laying on of hands with preſence that the ſame is done to the example of the Apoſtles*, which is not onely as they ſuppoſe *a manifeſt vntruth* (for all the world doth know that the Apoſtles did neuer after Baptiſme lay hands on any, and therefore S. *Luke* which ſaith they did was much deceiued) but farther alſo we thereby teach men to thinke *impoſition of hands a Sacrament*, belike becauſe it is a principle ingrafted by common light of Nature in the minds of men, that all things done by Apoſtolike example muſt needs be Sacraments: the ſecond high point of danger is, that by *tying Confirmation to the Biſhop alone, there is great cauſe of ſuſpicion giuen to thinke that Baptiſme is not ſo precious a thing as Confirmation*, for will any man thinke that a veluet Cote is of more price then a linnen Coiſe, knowing the one to be an ordinarie garment, the other an ornament which onely Sergeants at Law doe weare? Finally, to draw to an end of perils, the laſt and the waightieſt hazzard is, where the Booke it ſelfe doth ſay that Children by *impoſition* of hands and prayer may receiue *ſtrength* againſt all temptation; which ſpeech as a two-edged ſword doth both wayes dangerouſly wound, partly, becauſe it aſcribeth grace to impoſition of hands whereby we are able no more to aſſure our ſelues in the warrant of *any promiſe from God* that his heauenly grace ſhall be giuen, then the Apoſtle was that himſelfe ſhould obtaine grace by the bowing of his knees to God; and partly, becauſe by vſing the verie word *ſtrength* in this matter, a word ſo apt to ſpread infection, we *maintaine* with Popiſh Euangeliſts, an old forlone *diſtinction* of the Holy Ghoſt, beſtowed vpon Chriſts Apoſtles before his Aſcenſion into heauen, and *augmented* vpon them afterwards, a diſtinction of *grace* infuſed into Chriſtian men by degrees, planted in them *at the firſt* by Baptiſme, *after* cheriſhed, watred, and (be it ſpoken without offence) *ſtrengthened* as by other vertuous offices which Pietie and true Religion teacheth, euen ſo by this very ſpecial Benediction wherof we ſpeake, the Rite or Ceremony of Confirmation.

Act. 8.15,17.

Ephes. 3.14.

Iohn 20.22.

Act. 2.3.

Of the Sacraments of the bodie & bloud of Chriſt.

67 The grace which we haue by the holy Euchariſt, doth not beginne but continue life. No man therefore receiueth this Sacrament before Baptiſme, becauſe no dead thing is capable of nouriſhment. That which groweth muſt of neceſſitie firſt liue. If our bodies did not daily waſte, food to reſtore them were a thing ſuperfluous. And it may be that the grace of Baptiſme would ſerue to eternall life, were it not that the ſtate of our ſpirituall being is daily ſo much hindered and impaired after Baptiſme. In that life therefore where neither body nor ſoule can decay, our ſoules ſhall as little require this Sacrament as our bodies corporall nouriſhment. But as long as the dayes of our warfare laſt, during the time that we are both ſubiect to diminution and capable of augmen-

augmentation in grace, the words of our Lord and Sauiour Chriſt will remaine forceable, *Except ye eate the fleſh of the Sonne of man, and drinke his blood, ye haue no life in you.* Life being therefore propoſed vnto all men as their end, they which by Baptiſme haue laid the foundation, and attained the firſt beginning of a new life, haue here their nouriſhment and food preſcribed for *continuance of life* in them. Such as will liue the life of God, muſt eate the fleſh, and drinke the blood of the Sonne of man, becauſe this is a part of that dyet, which if we want, we cannot liue. Whereas therefore in our Infancie we are incorporated into Chriſt, and by Baptiſme receiue the grace of his Spirit without any ſenſe of feeling of the gift which God beſtoweth, in the Eucharift we ſo receiue the gift of God, that we know by grace what the grace is which God giueth vs, the degrees of our owne increaſe in holineſſe and vertue we ſee and can iudge of them, we vnderſtand that the ſtrength of our life begunne in Chriſt is Chriſt, that his Fleſh is meat, and his Blood drinke, not by ſurmiſed imagination, but truely, euen ſo truely that through Faith we perceiue in the Body and Bloud ſacramentally preſented the very taſte of eternall life, the grace of the Sacrament is here as the food which we eate and drinke. This was it that ſome did exceedingly feare, leſt *Zwinglius* and *OEcolampadius* would bring to paſſe, that men ſhould account of this Sacrament but onely as of a ſhadow, deſtitute, emptie, and void of Chriſt. But ſeeing that by opening the ſeuerall opinions which haue beene held, they are growne, for ought I can ſee, on all ſides at the length to a generall agreement, concerning that which alone is materiall, namely, the *reall participation* of Chriſt, and of life in his Body and Bloud *by meanes of this Sacrament*, wherfore ſhould the world continue ſtill diſtracted and rent with ſo manifold contentions, when there remaineth now no Controuerſie ſauing onely about the ſubiect *where* Chriſt is? Yea, euen in this point no ſide denieth, but that *the ſoule of man* is the receptacle of Chriſts preſence. Whereby the queſtion is yet driuen to a narrower iſſue, nor doth any thing reſt doubtfull but this, whether when the Sacrament is adminiſtred, Chriſt be whole *within man onely*, or elſe his Bodie and Bloud be alſo externally ſeated in the very conſecrated Elements themſelues: which opinion they that defend, are driuen either to *Conſubſtantiate* and incorporate Chriſt with Elements Sacramentall, or to *Tranſubſtantiate* and change their ſubſtance into his, and ſo the one to hold him really but inuiſibly moulded vp with the ſubſtance of thoſe Elements, the other to hide him vnder the onely viſible ſhow of Bread and Wine, the ſubſtance whereof, as they imagine, is aboliſhed, and his ſucceeded in the ſame roome. All things conſidered and compared with that ſucceſſe, which truth hath hitherto had by ſo bitter conflicts with errours in this point, ſhall I wiſh that men would more giue themſelues to meditate with ſilence what we haue by the Sacrament, and leſſe to diſpute of the manner how? If any man ſuppoſe that this were too great ſtupiditie and dulneſſe, let vs ſee whether the Apoſtles of our Lord themſelues haue not done the like. It appeareth by many examples, that they of their owne diſpoſition were very ſcrupulous and inquiſitiue, yea, in other Caſes of leſſe importance and leſſe difficultie alwayes apt to mooue queſtions. How commeth it to paſſe that ſo few words of ſo high a myſterie being vttered, they

receiue

ſettine with gladneſſe the gift of Chriſt, and make no ſhew of doubt or ſcruple? The reaſon hereof is not darke to them which haue any thing at all obſerued how the powers of the mind are wont to ſtirre, when that which wee infinitely long for, preſenteth it ſelfe aboue and beſides expectation. Curious and intricate ſpeculations doe hinder, they abate, they quench ſuch inflamed motions of delight and ioy, as diuine graces vſe to raiſe when extraordinarily they are preſent. The mind therefore feeling preſent ioy, is alwayes maruellous vnwilling to admit any other cogitation, and in that caſe caſteth off thoſe diſputes whereunto the intellectuall part at other times eaſily draweth. A manifeſt effect whereof may be noted, if wee compare with our Lords Diſciples in the twentieth of *Iohn*, the people that are ſaid in the ſixt of *Iohn* to haue gone after him to Capernaum. Theſe leauing him on the one ſide the Sea of Tiberias, and finding him againe as ſoone as themſelues by ſhip were arriued on the contrarie ſide, whether they knew that by ſhip hee came not, and by Land the iourney was longer then according to the time he could haue ſo trauaile, as they wondred, ſo they asked alſo, *Rabbi, when cameſt thou hither?* Iohn 6. 26.

The Diſciples, when Chriſt appeared to them in farre more ſtrange and miraculous manner, mooued no queſtion, but reioyced greatly in that they ſaw. For why? The one ſort beheld onely that in Chriſt which they knew was more then naturall, but yet their affection was not rapt therewith through any great extraordinarie gladneſſe; the other, when they looked on Chriſt, were not ignorant that they ſaw the Well-ſpring of their owne euerlaſting felicitie; the one, becauſe they inioyed not, diſputed; the other diſputed not, becauſe they inioyed. If then the preſence of Chriſt with them did ſo much moone, iudge what their thoughts and affections were at the time of this new preſentation of Chriſt, not before their eyes, but within their ſoules. They had learned before, that his fleſh and bloud are the true cauſe of eternall life, that this they are not by the bare force of their owne ſubſtance, but through the dignitie and worth of his Perſon, which offered them vp by way of Sacrifice for the life of the whole world, and doth make them ſtill effectuall thereunto; finally, that to vs they are life in particular, by being particularly receiued. Thus much they knew, although as yet they vnderſtood not perfectly to what effect or iſſue the ſame would come, till at the length being aſſembled for no other cauſe which they could imagine, but to haue eaten the Paſſeouer onely that *Moſes* appointeth, when they ſaw their Lord and Maſter with hands and eyes lifted vp to heauen firſt bleſſe and conſecrate for the endleſſe good of all generations till the worlds end, the choſen Element of Bread and Wine, which Elements made for euer the inſtruments of life by vertue of his diuine Benediction, they being the firſt that were commanded to receiue from him, the firſt which were warranted by his promiſe, that not onely vnto them at the preſent time, but to whomſoeuer they and their Succeſſors after them did duely adminiſter the ſame, thoſe myſteries ſhould ſerue as conducts of life and conueyances of his body and bloud vnto them, was it poſſible they ſhould heare that voice, *Take, eate, this is my body, drinke yee all of this, this is my bloud*, poſſible that doing what was required, and beleeuing what was promiſed, the ſame ſhould haue preſent effect in them, and not fill them with

a kind

a kinde of fearefull admiration at the heauen which they ſaw in themſelues? They had at that time a Sea of comfort and ioy to wade in, and wee by that which they did are taught, that this heauenly Foode is giuen for the ſatisfying of our emptie ſoules, and not for the exerciſing of our curious and ſubtle wits. If we doubt what thoſe admirable words may import, let him be our Teacher for the meaning of Chriſt, to whom Chriſt was himſelfe a Schoole-maſter, let our Lords Apoſtle bee his Interpreter, content we our ſelues with his explication, MY BODY, *The communion of my Body*; MY BLOVD, *The communion of my Bloud*. Is there any thing more expedite, cleere, and eaſie, then that as Chriſt is termed our life, becauſe through him we obtayne life, ſo the parts of this Sacrament are his Body and Bloud, for that they are ſo to vs, who receiuing them, receiue that by them which they are termed? The Bread and Cup are his Body and Bloud, becauſe they are cauſes inſtrumentall, vpon the receit whereof the *participation* of his Body and Bloud enſueth. For that which produceth any certaine effect, is not vainely nor improperly ſaid to be that very effect whereunto it tendeth. Euery cauſe is in the effect which groweth from it. Our ſoules and bodies quickned to eternall Life are effects, the cauſe whereof is the Perſon of Chriſt, his Body and his Bloud are the true Well-ſpring out of which this life floweth. So that his Body and his Bloud are in that very ſubiect whereunto they miniſter life, not onely by effect or operation, euen as the influence of the heauens is in Plants, Beaſts, Men, and in euery thing which they quicken, but alſo by a farre more diuine and myſtical kind of Vnion, which maketh vs one with him, euen as He and the Father are one. The reall preſence of Chriſts moſt bleſſed Body and Bloud, is not therefore to be ſought for in the Sacrament, but in the worthy Receiuer of the Sacrament. And with this the very order of our Sauiours words agreeth; firſt, *Take and eate*; then, *This is my Body which was broken for you*: firſt, *Drinke yee all of this*; then followeth, *This is my bloud of the new Teſtament, which is ſhed for many for the remiſſion of ſinne*. I ſee not which way it ſhould bee gathered by the words of Chriſt, when and where the Bread is his Body, or the Cup his Bloud, but onely in the very heart and ſoule of him which receiueth them. As for the Sacraments they really exhibit, but for ought wee can gather out of that which is written of them, they are not really, nor doe really containe in themſelues that grace which with them or by them it pleaſeth God to beſtow. If on all ſides it be confeſt, that the grace of Baptiſme is powred into the ſoule of man, that by Water we receiue it, although it be neither ſeated in the water, nor the water changed into it, what ſhould induce men to thinke that the grace of the Euchariſt muſt needs bee in the Euchariſt, before it can bee in vs that receiue it? The fruit of the Euchariſt is the participation of the Body and Bloud of Chriſt. There is no ſentence of holy Scripture which ſaith, that wee cannot by this Sacrament bee made partakers of his Body and Bloud, except they be firſt contayned in the Sacrament, or the Sacrament conuerted into them. *This is my Body*, and, *This is my Bloud*, being words of promiſe, ſith we all agree, that by the Sacrament Chriſt doth really and truely in vs performe his promiſe, why doe wee vainely trouble our ſelues with ſo fierce contentions, whether by Conſubſtantiation, or elſe by Tranſubſtantiation the Sacra-

Mark 14.22.

ment

ment it ſelfe bee firſt poſſeſſed with Chriſt or no? A thing which no way can either further or hinder vs howſoeuer it ſtand, becauſe our participation of Chriſt in this Sacrament, dependeth on the cooperation of his Omnipotent Power, which maketh it his Body and Bloud to vs, whether with change or without alteration of the Element ſuch as they imagine, we needе not greatly to care or inquire. Take therefore that wherein all agree, and then conſider by it ſelfe what cauſe why the reſt in queſtion ſhould not rather bee left as ſuperfluous then vrged as neceſſarie. It is on all ſides plainely confeſt, firſt, That this Sacrament is a true and a reall participation of Chriſt, who thereby imparteth himſelfe euen his whole intire Perſon, *as a myſticall head*, vnto euery ſoule that receiueth him, and that euery ſuch Receiuer doth thereby incorporate or vnite himſelfe vnto Chriſt as *a myſticall member* of him, yea of them alſo whom hee acknowledgeth to bee his owne: ſecondly, That to whom *the Perſon of Chriſt* is thus communicated, to them he giueth by the ſame Sacrament his holy Spirit to ſanctifie them, as it ſanctifieth him which is their Head: thirdly, That what *merit, force, or vertue ſoeuer there is in his ſacrificed body and bloud*, we freely, fully, and wholly haue it by this Sacrament: fourthly, That *the effect thereof in vs is a reall tranſmutation of our ſoules and bodies* from ſin to righteouſneſſe, from death and corruption to immortalitie and life: fiftly, That becauſe the Sacrament being of it ſelfe but a corruptible and earthly Creature, muſt needs bee thought an vnlikely inſtrument to worke ſo admirable effects in Man, wee are therefore to reſt our ſelues altogether vpon *the ſtrength of his glorious power*, who is able and will bring to paſſe that the Bread & Cup which he giueth vs ſhall be truely the thing he promiſeth. It ſeemeth therefore much amiſſe, that againſt them whom they terme Sacramentaries, ſo many inuective diſcourſes are made, all running vpon two points, that the Euchariſt is not a bare ſigne or figure onely, and that the efficacy of his Body and Bloud is not all wee receiue in this Sacrament. For no man, hauing read their Books and Writings which are thus traduced, can be ignorant that both theſe Aſſertions they plainely confeſſe to bee moſt true. They doe not ſo interpret the words of Chriſt as if the name of his Body did import but the figure of his Body, and to be, were onely to ſignifie his Bloud. They grant that theſe holy myſteries rectiued in due manner, doe inſtrumentally both make vs partakers of the grace of that Body and Bloud which were giuen for the life of the World, and beſides alſo impart vnto vs euen in true and reall, though myſticall manner, the very Perſon of our Lord himſelfe whole, perfect, and intire, as hath beene ſhewed. Now whereas all three opinions doe thus farre accord in one, that ſtrong conceit which two of the three haue imbraced as touching a Literall, Corporall, and Orall manducation of the very ſubſtance of his Fleſh and Bloud, is ſurely an opinion no where deliuered in holy Scripture, whereby they ſhould thinke themſelues bound to beleeue it, and (to ſpeake with the ſofteſt termes wee can vſe) greatly preiudiced in that when ſome others did ſo conceiue of eating his Fleſh, our Sauiour to abate that errour in them, gaue them directly to vnderſtand how his Fleſh ſo eaten could profit them nothing, becauſe the words which hee ſpake were Spirit, that is to ſay, they had a reference to a myſticall participation, which myſticall participation

giueth

ginch life. Wherein there is small appearance of likelihood, that his meaning should be onely to make them Marcionites by inuersion, and to teach them that as *Marcion* did thinke, Christ seemed to bee man, but was not, so they contrariwise should beleeue them that Christ in truth would so giue them as they thought his flesh to eate, but yet lest the horrour thereof should offend them, he would not seeme to doe that hee did. When they which haue this opinion of Christ in that blessed Sacrament goe about to explaine themselues, and to open after what manner things are brought to passe, the one sort lay the Vnion of Christs Deitie with his Manhood, as their first foundation and ground: from thence they inferre a power which the Bodie of Christ hath *Aerly* to present it selfe in all places; out of which vbiquitie of his Bodie they gather the presence thereof with that sanctified Bread and Wine of our Lords Table, the coniunction of his Bodie and Bloud with those Elements they vse as an Argument, to shew how the Bread may as well in that respect bee termed his Bodie, because his Bodie is therewith ioyned, as the Sonne of God may bee named man, by reason that God and man in the person of Christ are vnited; to this they adde, how the words of Christ commanding vs to eate, must needs import that as he hath coupled the substance of his flesh, and the substance of Bread together, so wee together should receiue both; Which Labyrinth as the other sort doth iustly shunne, so the way which they take to the same Inne is somewhat more short, but no whit more certaine. For through Gods Omnipotent Power they imagine that Transubstantiation followeth vpon the words of Consecration, and vpon Transubstantiation the participation of Christs both Bodie and Bloud, in the onely shape of Sacramentall Elements. So that they all three doe plead Gods Omnipotencie, Sacramentarie to that alteration, which the rest confesse he accomplisheth; the Patrones of Transubstantiation ouer and besides that to the change of one substance into another; the followers of Consubstantiation, to the kneding vp of both substances, as it were into one lumpe. Touching the sentence of Antiquitie in this cause: First, for as much as they knew that the force of this Sacrament doth necessarily presuppose the Veritie of Christs both Bodie and Bloud, they vsed oftentimes the same as an Argument to proue that Christ hath as truely the substance of Man as of God, because heere wee receiue Christ and those graces which flow from him in that hee is Man. So that if hee haue no such being, neyther can the Sacrament haue any such meaning as we all confesse it hath. Thus [a] *Tertullian*, thus [b] *Ireney*, thus [c] *Theodoret* disputeth. Againe, as euident it is how they teach that Christ is *personally* there present, yea, present whole, albeit a part of Christ bee *corporally* absent from thence; that [d] Christ assisting this Heauenly Banquet with his personall and true presence, [e] doth by his owne Diuine Power adde to the naturall substance thereof supernaturall efficacie, which [f] addition to the nature of those con-

a *Acceptum panem & distributum Discipulis corpus suum illum fecit, hoc est corpus meum dicendo, id est, figura corporis mei. Figura autem non fuisset nisi veritatis esset corpus, cum vacuum quod est phantasma figuram capere non posset.* Tertul. contra Marc. lib. 4. cap. 40. b *Secundum hoc* (that is to say, it should bee true which Heretikes haue taught, denying that Christ tooke vpon him the very nature of man) *nec Dominus sanguine suo redemit nos, neque calix Eucharistiæ communicatio sanguinis eius erit, nec panis quem frangimus communicatio corporis eius est. Sanguis enim non est, nisi eorum quæ sunt secundum hominem substantia.* Irenæus lib. 5. cap. 1. c Εἰ τοίνυν τῶ ὄντως σώματος ἀντέστησαν οἱ τὰ θεῖα μυστήρια σῶμα εἶναι καὶ αἷμα τοῦ κυρίου τὸ σῶμα, οὐκ εἰς θεότητος μετεβλήθη φύσιν ἀλλὰ θείας δόξης ἐπλουτήθη. Theodor. Dialog. Ἀσύγχυτος.

d *Sacramenta quidem quantum in ſe eſt ſide propria virtute eſſi-*
ciunt, nec vllo modo ſi abſentia quædam ſupponas, Cypr. de Cœn.
cap.7. e *Sacramento viſibili inuiſibiliter diuina virtus operatur, vt*
effect Religionis c. vna Sacramenta dare ſit. Idem cap.6. Inuiſibile Sacramen-
tum viſibles creaturas in ſubſtantiam corporis & ſanguinis ſui verbo ſuo ſecre-
ta poteſtate conuertit. In ſpiritualibus Sacramentis verbis præſtat virtus
& ſeruit effectui, Euſeb. Emiſ. Hom.5. de Paſch. f Τὸ ὑφάλλον
τῦ ἄρτου γίνεται σῶμα τῦ κυρίου, ἄλλα μὴν καὶ τὰ ἀφιερω-
μένα ἐνεργείᾳ τῦ ἁγιάσματος, μετὰ δὲ γάμου ἐστὶν ἀλλήλοις ἡ τοιαύ-
γίνεται. Αλλ' ἐν ἀνθρώπῳ ἐστὶν ἀναγκαῖον. Μίαν γὰρ ἐκεῖ τὴν τῦ σώματος
οὐσίαν καὶ σχῆμα καὶ τὸ εἶδος, ἡ ἄρα καὶ ἐνταῦθα ἓν ἡ ἀμφοῖν ἐστὶ
σῶμα τῦ κυρίου, τοῦτο δὲ ἄνωθεν ἐγένετο καὶ σαρκωθὲν καὶ ἀναστὰν καὶ ἀνω-
φερόμενον εἰς οὐρανοὺς ἀνῆλθε καὶ καθίσεται. Theodor. *Ex quo à Domino dictum*
eſt, Hoc facite in meam commemorationem, hoc eſt caro mea, & hic
eſt ſanguis meus, quotieſcunque hic verbis & hac fide celebratur, panis ille
ſuperſubſtantialis, & calix benedictionis ſolemni ſanctificatione, ad tot ho-
minis vitam ſaluteme proficit. Cypr. de Cœn. cap.3. *Supernaturalis ele-*
mentia datur, & communibus cibis diſſimus, corporalis ſubſtantiæ reti-
nens ſpeciem, ſed virtutis diuinæ manifeſta efficientia probatur adeſſe præ-
ſentium. Ibid.cap.2. g *Sanctificatus Sacramentis multa vitæ æternæ ef-*
fectus, & noſtræ corporeæ quidem ſpiritualis tranſitionis Chriſto coniungit.
Ipſe enim & panis & caro & ſanguis, & idem cibus & ſubſtantia & vita
factus eſt Eccleſiæ ſuæ quidem corpus ſuum appellat, dans in participatio-
nem ſpiritus. Ibid.cap.5. *Noſtra & ipſius communio non miſcet perſonas,*
nec vnit ſubſtantias, ſed effectus conſortiis & conſolidat voluntates, &c.
Manſio noſtra in ipſo eſt mandatorum & totus quaſi quidam incorporatio.
c.9. Ille eſt in patre per naturalem diuinitatis, nos in eo per corporalem eius
Natiuitatem, illum ipſum in nobis per Sacramentorum myſteria. Hilar. de
Trinit.lib.8. h *Panis hic ἀγιάσματος cibus verus & ſalutaris per ſpecioſa*
& Sacramentum nec talibus ſanctificatus, ſide illuminat, veritate Chriſto
conformat. Cypr.de Cœn.cap.6. *Non aliud agit participatio corporis &*
ſanguinis Chriſti, quam vt in id quod ſumimus transeamus, & in quo mor-
tui & ſepulti & conreſuſcitati ſumus, ipſum per animæ & ſpiritus & carnis
geſtemus. Leo de Pal. Serm.14. *Quotidianum quo eſca de terra ſanctis*
percipiens Dei vocationem (id eſt, Alia inuocatione diuini nominis)
iam non communis panis eſt, ſed Euchariſtia ex duabus rebus conſtans ter-
rena & cœleſti: Sic & corpora noſtra percipientia Euchariſtiam, iam non
ſunt corruptibilia ſpem reſurrectionis habentia, Irenæus l.4.c.34. *Quo-*
niam ſalutaris cibo verbo Dei quod naturaliter vita eſt conſumpta vinifica
effecta eſt, quando ergo comedimus, tunc vitam habemus in nobis illi carni
coniuncti, quæ vita effecta eſt. Cyril.in Iohan.lib.4.cap.14.

ſecrated Elements, changeth them and maketh them that vnto vs, which otherwiſe they could not bee; that to vs they are thereby made ſuch inſtruments, as a myſtically, yet truly; inuiſibly, yet really work our communion & fellowſhip with the perſon of Ieſus Chriſt, as well in that he is man as God; our participation alſo in the fruit, grace and efficacy of his body and blood; whereupon there enſueth a kinde of Tranſubſtantiation in vs, a true change both of ſoule and body, an alteration from death to life. 7 In a word, it appeareth not, that of all the ancient Fathers of the Church, any one did euer conceiue or imagine other then onely a myſticall participation of Chriſts both body and bloud in the Sacrament, neyther are their ſpeeches concerning the change of the Elements themſelues into the bodie and bloud of CHRIST ſuch, that a man can thereby in conſcience aſſure himſelf it was their meaning to perſwade the World either of a Corporall Conſubſtantiation of CHRIST with thoſe ſanctified and bleſſed Elements before we receiue them, or of the like Tranſubſtantiation of them into the Body and Bloud of Chriſt. Which both to our myſticall Communion with Chriſt are ſo vnneceſſarie, that the Fathers, who plainly hold but this myſticall Communion, cannot eaſily bee thought to haue meant any other change of Sacramentall Elements, then that which the ſame Spirituall Communion did require them to hold. Theſe things conſidered, how ſhould that minde which louing Truth and ſeeking comfort out of holy Myſteries hath not perhaps the leiſure, perhaps not the wit nor capacitie to tread out ſo endleſſe Mazes, as the intricate Diſputes of this cauſe haue led men into, how ſhould a vertuouſly diſpoſed minde better reſolue with it ſelfe then

" thus? Varietie of iudgements and opinions argueth obſcuritie in thoſe things
" whereabout they differ. But that which all parts receiue for Truth, that which
" euerie one hauing ſifted, is by no one denyed or doubted of, muſt needes bee
" matter of infallible certaintie. Whereas therefore there are but three Ex-
" poſitions made of, *This is my Bodie*, the firſt, This is in it ſelfe before parti-
" cipation *really and truely the naturall ſubſtance of my bodie, by reaſon of the*

coexiſtence which my Omnipotent Body hath with the ſanctified Element of Bread which is the Lutherans interpretation: the ſecond, This is in it ſelfe and before participation *the very true and naturall ſubſtance of my body, by force of that Deitie which with the words of conſecration aboliſheth the ſubſtance of bread, and ſubſtituteth in the place thereof my body which is the Popiſh conſtruction:* the laſt, *This hallowed food, through concurrence of divine power, is in veritie and truth, unto faithfull Receivers, inſtrumentally a cauſe of that myſticall participation, whereby as I make my ſelfe wholy theirs, ſo I give them in bond and actuall poſſeſſion of all ſuch ſaving grace as my ſacrificed body can yeeld, and as their ſoules doe preſently need: this is* to them, and in them *my body:* of theſe three reherſed Interpretations, the laſt hath in it nothing but what the reſt doe all approove and acknowledge to bee moſt true, nothing but that which the wordes of Chriſt are on all ſides conſeſt to inforce nothing but that which the Church of God hath alwayes though neceſſarie, nothing but that which alone is ſufficient for euery Chriſtian man to beleeue concerning the vſe and force of this Sacrament, finally, nothing but that wherewith the Writings of all Antiquitie are conſonant, and all Chriſtian confeſſions agreeable. And as truth in what kinde ſoeuer is by no kind of truth gaine-ſaid, ſo the minde which reſteth it ſelfe on this, is neuer troubled with thoſe perplexities which the other doe both find, by meanes of ſo great contradiction betweene their opinions, and true principles of Reaſon grounded vpon Experience, Nature and Senſe. Which albeit with boyſterous courage and breath they ſeem often times to blow away, yet who ſo obſerueth, how againe they labour and ſweate by ſubtletie of wit to make ſome ſhew of agreement betweene their peculiar conceits, and the generall Edicts of Nature, muſt needes perceiue they ſtruggle with that which they cannot fully maſter. Beſides, ſith of that which is proper to themſelues, their Diſcourſes are hungry and vnpleaſant, full of tedious and irkeſome labour, hartleſſe and hitherto without fruit, on the otherſide reade wee them, or heare wee others, bee they of our owne or of ancienter times, to what part ſoeuer they bee thought to incline touching that whereof there is controuerſie, yet in this where they all ſpeake but one thing, their Diſcourſes are heauenly, their wordes ſweet as the Honey-Combe, their Tongues melodiouſly tuned Inſtruments, their ſentences meere conſolation and ioy: are wee not hereby almoſt euen with voyce from Heauen admoniſhed which wee may ſafeſt cleane vnto? Hee which hath ſaid of the one Sacrament, *Waſh and be cleane*, hath ſaid concerning the other likewiſe, *Eate and liue.* If therefore without any ſuch particular and ſolemne warrant as this is, that poore diſtreſſed Woman comming vnto Chriſt for health, could ſo conſtantly reſolue her ſelfe, *May I but touch the skirt of his garment, I ſhall be whole*, what mooueth vs to argue of the manner how life ſhould come by bread, our dutie being heere but to take what is offered, and moſt aſſuredly to reſt perſwaded of this, that can wee but eate wee are ſafe? when I behold with mine eyes ſome ſmall ſcarce diſcernable Graine or Seed whereof Nature maketh a promiſe that a Tree ſhall come; and when afterwards of that Tree any skilfull Artificer vndertaketh to frame ſome exquiſite and curious Worke, I looke for the euent, I mooue no queſtion about performance either of the one or of the other. Shall I ſimply credit Nature in things naturall,

" naturall, shall I in things artificiall relye my selfe on Arte, neuer offering to " make doubt, and in that which is aboue both Art and Nature refuse to beleeue " the Authour of both, except hee acquaint mee with his wayes, and lay the se- " cret of his skill before mee? Where God himselfe doth speake those things " which eyther for height and sublimitie of matter, or else for secrecie of per- " formance wee are not able to reach vnto, as wee may bee ignorant without " danger, so it can bee no disgrace to confesse wee are ignorant. Such as loue " Pietie will as much as in them lyeth, know all things that God commandeth, " but especially, the duties of seruice which they owe to God. As for his darke " and hidden workes, they preferre, as becommeth them in such cases, simpli- " citie of Faith before that knowledge, which curiously sifting what it should " adore, and disputing too boldly of that which the wit of man cannot search, " chilleth for the most part all warmth of zeale, and bringeth soundnesse of be- " liefe many times into great hazard. Let it therefore bee sufficient for mee pre- " senting my selfe at the Lords Table, to know what there I receiue from him, " without searching or inquiring of the manner how Christ performeth his pro- " mise; let Disputes and Questions enemies to Pietie, abatements of true Deuoti- " on and hitherto in this cause but ouer-patiently heard, let them take their rest; " let curious and sharpe-witted men beate their heads about what Questions " themselues will, the very letter of the Word of Christ giueth plaine securitie, " that these Mysteries doe as nayles fasten vs to his very Crosse, that by them " wee draw out, as touching efficacie, force and vertue, euen the blood of his " gored side, in the wounds of our Redeemer wee there dip our tongues, wee " are dyed red both within and without, our hunger is satisfied and our thirst " for euer quenched, they are things wonderfull which he saieth, great which " he seeth, and vnheard of which hee vttered, whose soule is possest of this Pas- " call Lambe, and made ioyfull in the strength of this new Wine, this Bread " hath in it more then the substance which our eyes behold, this Cup hallowed " with solemne Benediction, auaileth to the endlesse life and welfare both of " Soule and Bodie, in that it serueth as well for a Medicine to heale our infirmi- " ties and purge our sinnes, as for a Sacrifice of Thankesgiuing, with touching it " sanctifieth, it enlightneth with beliefe, it truly conformeth vs vnto the Image of " Iesus Christ; what these Elements are in themselues it skilleth not, it is enough " that to me which take them, they are the Bodie and Bloud of Christ, his pro- " mise in witnesse hereof sufficeth, his Word he knoweth which way to accom- " plish, why should any cogitation possesse the minde of a faithfull Communi- " cant but this, *O my God thou art true, O my soule thou art happy*. Thus therefore " wee see, that howsoeuer mens opinions doe otherwise varie, nevertheless " touching Baptisme and the Supper of the Lord, wee may with consent of the " whole Christian World conclude they are necessarie, the one to initiate or be- " gin, the other to consummate or make perfect our life in Christ.

Of faults noted in the forme of administring the holy Communion.

68 In administring the Sacrament of the Bodie and Bloud of Christ, the supposed faults of the Church of England are not greatly materiall, and therefore it shall suffice to touch them in few words. *The first is that we doe not vse in a generalitie once for all to say to Communicants*, Take eate, and drinke, *but vnto euery particular person*, Eate thou, drinke thou, *which it according to the*

Popish

Popiſh manner, and not the forme that our Sauiour did vſe. Our ſecond ouerſight is by geſture. For in kneeling there hath bin Superſtition ſitting agreeth better to the action of a Supper; and our Sauiour vſing that which was moſt fit did himſelfe not kneele. A third accuſation is for not examining all Communicants, whoſe knowledge in the myſtery of the Goſpell ſhould that way be made manifeſt. A thing euery-where they ſay vſed in the Apoſtles times, becauſe all things neceſſarie were vſed, Or this in their opinion, is neceſſary, yea, it is commanded, in as much as the [a] *Leuites are commanded to prepare the people for the Paſſeouer, and examination is a part of their preparation, our Lords Supper in place of the Paſſeouer. The fourth thing miſliked is, that againſt the Apoſtles* [b] *prohibition to haue any familiaritie at all with notorious offenders. Papiſts being not of the Church are admitted to our very Communion, before they haue by their Religious and Goſpel-like behauiour purged themſelues of that ſuſpition of Popery which their former life hath cauſed. They are Dogges, Swine vncleane beaſts, forrainers and ſtrangers from the Church of God, and therefore ought not to be admitted though they offer themſelues. Wee are iuſtly condemned, in as much as when there haue bin ſtore of people to heare Sermons and Seruice in the Church, we ſuffer the Communion to be miniſtred to a few. It is not enough that our Booke of Common Prayer hath godly Exhortations to moue all thereunto which are preſent. For it ſhould not ſuffer a few to communicate, it ſhould by Eccleſiaſticall Diſcipline and ciuil puniſhment prouide, that ſuch as would withdraw themſelues, might be brought to Communicate according both to the* [c] *Law of God and the ancient Church Canons. In the ſixt and laſt place commeth the enormitie of imparting this Sacrament priuately vnto the ſicke.* Thus fiue accuſed, we anſwere briefly to the [d] firſt, that ſeeing God by Sacraments doth apply in particular vnto euery mans perſon the grace which himſelfe hath prouided for the benefit of all Mankind, there is no cauſe, why adminiſtring the Sacraments we ſhould forbeare to expreſſe that in our formes of ſpeech, which hee by his Word and Goſpell teacheth all to beleeue. In the one Sacrament, *I baptize thee* diſpleaſeth them not. If *Eate thou* in the other offend them, their fancies are no Rules for Churches to follow. Whether Chriſt at his laſt Supper did ſpeake generally once to all, or to euery one in particular, is a thing vncertaine. His words are recorded in that forme which ſerueth beſt for the ſetting downe with Hiſtoricall breuitie what was ſpoken, they are no manifeſt proofe that hee ſpake but once vnto all which did then Communicate, much leſſe that wee in ſpeaking vnto euery Communicant ſeuerally doe amiſſe, although it were cleere that wee herein doe otherwiſe then Chriſt did. Our imitation of him conſiſteth not in tying ſcrupulouſly our ſelues vnto his ſyllables, but rather in ſpeaking by the Heauenly direction of that inſpired Diuine Wiſdome, which teacheth diuers wayes to one end, and doth therein controule their boldneſſe, by whom any profitable way is cenſured as reprooueable, onely vnder colour of ſome ſmall difference from great Examples going before, to doe throughout euery the like Circumſtance, the ſame which Chriſt did in this action, were by following his footſteps in that ſort to erre more from the purpoſe he aymed at, then we now do by not following them with ſo nice & ſeuere ſtrictnes. They little weigh with themſelues how dull, how heauie, and almoſt how without ſenſe the greateſt part of the common multitude euery-where is, who thinke it either*

[a] 2. Chro. 35. 6.

[b] 1. Cor. 5. 11.

[c] Num. 9. 13. Can. 9. Apoſt. conc. 1. Bracar. cap. 33.

[d] T. C. l. 3. p. 186 Beſides that it is good to leaue the Popiſh forme in thoſe things which we may ſo conueniently doe, it is beſt to come as neere the manner of celebration of the Supper which our Sauiour Chriſt vſed as may bee. And if it bee a good Argument to proue that therefore wee muſt rather ſay Take thou, then Take yee, becauſe the Sacrament is an application of the benefits of Chriſt it behooueth that the Preacher ſhould direct his Admonitions particularly one after another vnto all thoſe which heare his Sermon, which is a thing abſurd.

either vnmeet or vnneceſſary to put them euen man by man, eſpecially at that time in mind whereabout they are. It is true that in Sermons we doe not vſe to repeat our ſentences ſeuerally to euery particular hearer; a ſtrange madneſſe it were if we ſhould. The ſoftnes of wax may induce a wiſe man to ſet his ſtampe or image therein; it perſwadeth no man, that becauſe wooll hath the like qualitie, it may therefore receiue the like impreſſion. So the reaſon taken from the vſe of Sacraments in that they are inſtruments of grace vnto euery particular man, may with good congruitie lead the Church to frame accordingly her words in adminiſtration of Sacraments, becauſe they eaſily admit this forme, which being in Sermons a thing impoſſible, without apparent ridiculous abſurditie, agreement of Sacraments with Sermons in that which is alleaged as a reaſonable proofe of conuenience; for the one prooueth not the ſame allegation impertinent, becauſe it doth not inforce the other to be adminiſtred in like ſort. For equall principles doe then auaile vnto equall concluſions, when the matter whereunto we apply them is equall and not elſe. [1] Our kneeling at Communion is the geſture of Pietie. If wee did there preſent our ſelues but to make ſome ſhew or dumbe reſemblance of a Spirituall Feaſt, it may bee that ſitting were the fitter Ceremonie; but comming as Receiuers of ineſtimable grace at the hands of God, what doth better beſeeme our bodies at that houre, then to bee ſenſible Witneſſes of minden vnfainedly humbled? Our Lord himſelfe did that which cuſtome and long vſage had made fit; we, that which fitneſſe and great decencie hath made vſuall. The tryall of our ſelues before we eate of this Bread and drinke of this Cup, is by expreſſe Commandement euery mans preciſe dutie. As for neceſſitie of calling others vnto account beſides our ſelues, albeit wee bee not thereunto drawne by any great ſtrength which is in their Arguments, who firſt preſſe vs with it as a thing neceſſarie, by affirming that the Apoſtles did vſe it, and then proue [m] the Apoſtles to haue vſed it by affirming it to be neceſſary; againe, albeit we greatly muſe how they can auouch, that God did command the Leuites to prepare their Brethren againſt the Feaſt of Paſſeouer, and that the Examination of them was part of their preparation, when the place alleaged to this purpoſe doth but charge the Leuit, ſaying, *Make ready Laakbethem for your Brethren*, to the end they may do according to the Word of the Lord by *Moſes*. Wherefore in the ſelfe ſame place it followeth how Lambes, and Kids, and Sheep, and Bullockes were deliuered vnto the Leuites, and that thus *the ſeruice was made ready*: it followeth likewiſe how the Leuites hauing in ſuch ſort prouided for the people, they made proui-ſion for *themſelues, and for the Prieſts, the Sonnes of Aaron*, ſo that confidently from hence to conclude the neceſſity of examination, argueth their wonderfull great forwardneſſe in framing all things to ſerue their turne, neuertheleſſe the Examination of Communicants when need requireth, for the profitable vſe it may haue in ſuch caſes wee reiect not. Our fault in admitting Papiſh Communicants, is it in that wee are [n] forbidden to eate and therefore much more to communicate with notorious Malefactors? The name of a Papiſt is not giuen vnto any man for being a notorious Malefactor. And the crime wherewith we are charged, is ſuffering of Papiſts to communicate, ſo that bee their life and converſation whatſoeuer in the ſight of man, their Papiſh opi-

nions

[1] T.C.li.2.p.165. Kneeling carrieth a ſhew of worſhip, ſitting agreeth better with the action of the Supper. Chriſt and his Apoſtles kneeled not.

[m] T.C.li.1.p.164. All things neceſſary were vſed in the Churches of God in the Apoſtles times, but examination was a neceſſary thing, therefore vſed. In the Booke of Chronicles, 2.Chron 35.6. the Leuites were commanded to prepare the people to the receiuing of the Paſſeouer, in place whereof wee haue the Lords Supper. Now Examination being a part of preparation, it followeth that here is commandement of the Examination.

[n] 1.Cor.5.11. T.C.li.1.p.167.

nions are in this caſe laid as barres and exceptions againſt them, yea thoſe opinions which they haue held in former times, * although they now both profeſſe by word, and offer to ſhew by fact the contrarie. All this doth not iuſtifie vs which ought not (they ſay) to admit them in any wiſe, till their Goſpel-like behauiour haue remooued all ſuſpition of Poperie from them, becauſe Papiſts are *Dogs, Swine, Beaſts, Forrainers and Strangers* from the houſe of God, in a word, they are *not of the Church*. What the termes of Goſpel-like behauiour may include, is obſcure and doubtfull. But of the *viſible Church* of Chriſt in this preſent world, from which they ſeparate all Papiſts, we are thus perſwaded: *Church* is a word which Art hath deuiſed, thereby to ſeuer and diſtinguiſh that ſocietie of men, which profeſſeth the true Religion from the reſt which profeſſe it not. There haue beene in the world from the very firſt foundation thereof, but three Religions; *Paganiſme*, which liued in the blind maſſe of corrupt and depraued nature; *Iudaiſme*, imbracing the Law which reformed Heatheniſh impietie, and taught ſaluation to be looked for through One, whom God in the laſt daies would ſend and exault to be Lord of all; finally, *Chriſtian beliefe*, which yeeldeth obedience to the Goſpel of Ieſus Chriſt, and acknowledgeth him the Sauiour whom God did promiſe. Seeing then that *the Church* is a name, which Art hath giuen to *Profeſſors of true Religion*, as they which will define a man, are to paſſe by thoſe qualities wherein one man doth excell another, and take onely thoſe eſſentiall properties, whereby a man doth differ from creatures of other kinds: ſo he that will teach what *the Church* is, ſhall neuer rightly performe the worke thereabout hee goeth, till *in matter of Religion* hee touch that difference which ſeuereth the *Churches Religion* from theirs, who are not the Church. *Religion* being therefore a matter partly of *contemplation*, partly of *action*, wee muſt define the Church, which is a religious ſocietie, by ſuch differences as doe properly explaine the eſſence of ſuch things, that is to ſay, by the obiect or matter thereabout the contemplations and actions of the Church are properly conuerſant. For ſo all knowledges and all vertues are defined. Whereupon, becauſe the *onely obiect* which ſeparateth ours from other Religions, is *Ieſus Chriſt*, in whom none but the Church doth beleeue, and whom none but the Church doth worſhip, wee find that accordingly the Apoſtles doe euery-where diſtinguiſh hereby the Church from Infidels and from Iewes, accounting *them which call vpon the name of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt to be his Church*. If we goe lower, we ſhall but adde vnto this certaine caſuall and variable accidents, which are not properly of the being, but make onely for the happier and better being of the Church of God, either indeed, or in mens opinions and conceits. This is the errour of all Popiſh definitions that hitherto haue beene brought. They define not the Church by that which the Church eſſentially is, but by that which wherein they imagine their owne more perfect then the reſt are. Touching parts of eminencie and perfection, parts likewiſe of imperfection and defect in the Church of God, they are infinite, their degrees and differences no way poſſible to bee drawne vnto any certaine account. There is not the leaſt contention and variance, but it blemiſheth ſomewhat the Vnitie that ought to be in the Church of Chriſt, which notwithſtanding may haue not onely without offence or breach

* Although they would receiue the communion, yet they ought to be kept backe, vntil ſuch time as by their Religious and Goſpell-like behauiour, they haue purged them ſelues of that ſuſpition of Poperie, which their former life and conuerſation hath cauſed to be conceiued, *T.C.l.1. p.167.*

Rom.15.5. 1.Cor.1.10.

breach of concord her manifold varieties in Rites and Ceremonies of Religion, but alſo her ſtriſes and contentions many times, and that about matters of no ſmall importance, yea, her ſchiſmes, factions, and ſuch other euils whereunto the bodie of the Church is ſubiect, ſound and ſicke remaining both of the ſame body, as long as both parts retaine by outward profeſſion that vitall ſubſtance of truth, which maketh Chriſtian Religion to differ from theirs, which acknowledge not our Lord Ieſus Chriſt the bleſſed Sauiour of mankind, giue no credit to his glorious Goſpel, and haue his Sacraments the ſeales of eternall life in deriſion. Now the priuiledge of the viſible Church of God (for of that wee ſpeake) is to bee herein like the Arke of *Noah*, that, for any thing we know to the contrary, all without it are loſt ſheepe; yet in this was the Arke of *Noah* priuiledged aboue the Church, that whereas none of them which were in the one could periſh, numbers in the other are caſt away, becauſe to eternall life our profeſſion is not enough. Many things exclude from the Kingdome of God, although from the Church they ſeparate not. In the Church there ariſe ſundrie grieuous ſtormes, by meanes whereof whole Kingdomes and Nations profeſſing Chriſt, both haue beene heretofore, and are at this preſent day diuided about Chriſt. During which diuiſions and contentions amongſt men, albeit each part doe iuſtifie it ſelfe, yet the one of neceſſitie muſt needes erre, if there bee any contradiction betweene them, be it great or little, and what ſide ſoeuer it be that hath the truth, the ſame we muſt alſo
1.Ioh. 2. 19. acknowledge alone to hold *with the true Church in that point*, and conſequently, reiect the other as an enemie, *in that caſe fallen away from the true Church*. Wherefore of Hypocrites and Diſſemblers, whoſe profeſſion at the firſt was but onely from the teeth outward, when they afterwards tooke occaſion to oppugne certaine principle Articles of Faith, the Apoſtles which defended the truth againſt them, pronounce them *gone out* from the fellowſhip of ſound and ſincere Beleeuers, when as yet the Chriſtian Religion they had not vtterly caſt off. In like ſenſe and meaning throughout all ages, *Heretikes* haue iuſtly beene hated, as branches cut off from the body of the true Vine; yet onely ſo farre foorth cut off as their Hereſies haue extended. Both Hereſie, *and many other crimes*, which *wholly ſeuer from God*, doe ſeuer from the Church of God in *part onely*. The Myſterie of Pietie, ſaith the Apoſtle, is without peraduenture great, *God hath beene manifeſted in the Fleſh, hath beene iuſtified in the*
1.Tim. 3. 16. *Spirit, hath beene ſeene of Angels, hath beene preached to Nations, hath beene beleeued on in the World, hath beene taken vp into Glory*. The Church a pillar and foundation of this truth, which no where is knowne or profeſt, but only within the Church, and they all of the Church that profeſſe it. In the meane while it cannot be denied, that many profeſſe this, who are not therefore cleered ſimply from all either faults or errors, which make ſeparation betweene vs and the Wel-ſpring of our happineſſe. Idolatrie ſeuered of old the Iſraelites; Iniquity, thoſe Scribes and Phariſies from God, who notwithſtanding were a part of the ſeed of *Abraham*, a part of that very ſeed which God did himſelfe acknowledge to be his Church. The Church of God may therefore containe both them which indeed are not his, yet muſt be reputed his by vs that know not their inward thoughts, and them whoſe apparent wickedneſſe teſtifieth euen in the

ſight

ſight of the whole world that God abhorreth them. For to this and no other purpoſe, are meant thoſe Parables, which our Sauiour in the Goſpel hath concerning mixture of Vice with Vertue, Light with Darkeneſſe, Truth with Error, as well as openly knowne and ſeene as a cunningly cloked mixture. That which ſeparateth therefore *vtterly*, that which cutteth off *cleane* from the viſible Church of Chriſt, is plaine Apoſtaſie, *direct* denyall, vtter reiection of the whole Chriſtian Faith, as farre as the ſame is profeſſedly different from Infidelitie. Heretikes, as touching thoſe points of doctrine wherein they faile: Schiſmatikes, as touching the quarrels for which, or the duties wherein they diuide themſelues from their Brethren: Looſe, licentious and wicked perſons, as touching their ſeuerall offences or crimes, haue all forſaken the true Church of God, the Church which is ſound and ſincere in the doctrine that they corrupt; the Church that keepeth the bond of Vnitie, which they violate; the Church that walketh in the Lawes of righteouſneſſe, which they tranſgreſſe; this very true Church of Chriſt they haue left, howbeit not altogether left, not forſaken ſimply the Church vpon the maine foundations whereof they continue built, notwithſtanding theſe breaches whereby they are *rent at the top* aſunder. Now becauſe for redreſſe of profeſſed errors and open Schiſmes if it is, and muſt be the Churches care that all may in outward conformitie be one, as the laudable Politie of former Ages, euen ſo our owne to that end and purpoſe hath eſtabliſhed diuers Lawes, the moderate ſeueritie whereof is a meane both to ſtay the reſt, and to reclaime ſuch as heretofore haue beene led awry. But ſeeing that the offices which Lawes require are alwayes definite, and when that they require is done they goe no farther, whereupon ſundry ill affected perſons, to ſaue themſelues from danger of Lawes, pretend obedience, albeit inwardly they carry ſtill the ſame hearts which they did before, by meanes whereof it falleth out, that receiuing vnworthily the bleſſed Sacrament at our hands, they eate and drinke their owne damnation; it is for remedie of this miſchiefe * here determined, that whom the Law of the Realme doth puniſh vnleſſe they communicate, ſuch if they offer to obey Law, the Church notwithſtanding ſhould not admit without probation before had of their Goſpel-like behauiour. Wherein they firſt ſet no time how long this ſuppoſed probation muſt continue; againe, they nominate no certaine iudgement, the verdict whereof ſhall approoue mens behauiour to be Goſpel-like; and that which is moſt materiall, whereas they ſeeke to make it more hard for diſſemblers to be receiued into the Church, then Law & Politie as yet

Matt. 13. 24. 47

* *T. C. l. 1. p. 167.* If the place of the 5. to the Corinthians, doe forbid that we ſhould haue any familiarity with notorious offenders, it doth much more forbid that they ſhould be receiued to the Communion. And therefore Papiſts being ſuch as which are notoriouſly knowne to hold hereticall opinions, ought not to be admitted, much leſſe compelled to the Supper. For ſeeing that our Sauiour Chriſt did inſtitute his Supper amongſt his Diſciples, and thoſe only which were, as S. *Paul* ſpeaketh, within, it is euident, that the Papiſts being without, & Forrainers and Strangers from the Church of God, ought not to be receiued if they would offer themſelues:

and that Miniſter that ſhall giue the Supper of the Lord to him, which is knowne to be a Papiſt, and which hath neuer made any cleere renouncing of Poperie, with which he hath beene defiled, doth prophane the Table of the Lord, and doth giue the meate that is prepared for the Children, vnto Dogs, and he bringeth from the paſture, which is prouided for the Sheepe, Swine and vncleane beaſts, contrarie to the faith and truſt that ought to be in a Steward of the Lords houſe, as he is. For albeit that I doubt not but many of thoſe which are now Papiſts, pertaine to the election of God, which God alſo in his good time will call to the knowledge of his truth: yet notwithſtanding, they ought to be vnto the Miniſter and vnto the Church, touching the miniſtring of Sacraments, as ſtrangers and as vncleane beaſts. The miniſtring of the holy Sacraments vnto them, is a declaration and ſeale of Gods fauour and reconciliation with them, and a plaine preaching, partly, that they be waſhed already from their ſinne, partly, that they are of the houſhold of God, and ſuch as the Lord will feed to eternall life, which is not lawfull to be done vnto thoſe which are not of the houſhold of Faith. And therefore I conclude, that the compelling of Papiſts vnto the Communion, and the diſmiſſing and letting them goe, when as they be to be puniſhed for their ſtubbornneſſe in Poperie (with this condition, if they will receiue the Communion) is very vnlawfull, when as although they would receiue it, yet they ought to be kept backe till ſuch time as by their Religious and Goſpel-like behauiour, &c.

hath

hath done, they make it in truth more easie for such kind of persons, to wind themselues out of the Law, and to continue the same they were. The Law requireth at their hands that dutie which in conscience doth touch them nearest, because the greatest difference betweene vs and them is the Sacrament of the Body and Bloud of Christ, whose name in the seruice of our Communion we celebrate with due honour, which they in the errour of their Masse prophane. As therefore on our part to beare Masse, were an open departure from that sincere profession wherein we stand, so if they on the other side receiue our Communion, they giue vs the strongest pledge of fidelitie that man can demand. What their hearts are, God doth know. But if they which mind treachery to God and Man, shall once apprehend this aduantage giuen them, whereby they may satisfie Law, in pretending themselues conformable (for what can Law with Reason or Iustice require more?) And yet bee sure Church will accept no such offer, till their Gospel-like behauiour be allowed, after that our owne simplicitie hath once thus fairely eased them from the sting of Law, it is to be thought they will learne the mysterie of Gospel-like behauiour when leisure serueth them. And so while without any cause we feare to prophane Sacraments, we shall not only defeat the purpose of most wholsome Lawes, but lose or wilfully hazzard those soules, from which the likeliest meanes of full and perfect recouery, are by our indiscretion withheld. For neither doth God thus bind vs to dive into mens consciences, nor can their fraud and deceit hurt any man but themselues. To him they seeme such as they are, but of vs they must be taken for such as they seeme. In the eye of God they are against Christ, that are not truely and sincerely with him; in our eyes they must be receiued as with Christ, that are not to outward show against him. The case of impenitent and notorious sinners is not like vnto theirs, whose only imperfection is errour, seuered from pertinacie, Errour in appearance content to submit it selfe to better instruction, Errour so far already cured, as to craue at our hands that Sacrament, the hatred and vtter refusall whereof was the waightiest point wherein heretofore they swarued and went astray. In this case therefore they cannot reasonably charge vs with remisse dealing, or with carelessnesse to whom we impart the mysteries of Christ, but they haue giuen vs manifest occasion to thinke it requisite, that we earnestly aduise rather and exhort them to consider as they ought, their sundry ouer-sights, first, in equalling vndistinctly crimes with errours, as touching force to make vncapable of this Sacrament: secondly, in suffering indignation at the faults of the Church of Rome, to blind and with-hold their iudgements, from seeing that which withall they should acknowledge, concerning so much neuertheless still due to the same Church, as to be held and reputed a part of the house of God, a limme of the visible Church of Christ: thirdly, in imposing vpon the Church a burthen to enter farther into mens hearts, and to make a deeper search of their consciences, then any Law of God or reason of Man inforceth: fourthly and lastly, in repelling vnder colour of longer triall such from the mysteries of heauenly grace, as are both capable thereof by the Lawes of God, for any thing we heare to the contrarie, and should in diuers considerations bee cherished according to the mercifull ex-

amples

ample and Precept whereby the Goſpell of Chriſt hath taught vs towards ſuch to ſhew compaſſion, to receiue them with lenitie and all mildneſſe, if any thing be ſtaken in them to ſtrengthen it, not to quench with delayes and iealouſies that feeble ſmoke of conformitie which ſeemeth to breathe from them, but to build whereſoeuer there is any foundation, to adde perfection vnto ſlender beginnings, and that as by other offices of pietie, euen ſo by this very food of Life, which Chriſt hath left in his Church, not onely for preſeruation of ſtrength, but alſo for reliefe of weakeneſſe: but to returne to our owne ſelues, in whom the next thing ſeuerely reproued is the paucitie of Communicants, if they require at Communicants frequencie, we wiſh the ſame, knowing how acceptable vnto God ſuch ſeruice is, when multitudes chearefully concurre vnto it; if they incourage men thereunto, we alſo (themſelues acknowledge it) are not vtterly forgetfull to doe the like; if they require ſome publike coaction for remedie of that, wherein by milder and ſofter meanes little good is done, they know our Lawes and Statutes prouided in that behalfe, whereunto whatſoeuer conuenient helpe may be added more by the wiſedome of man, what cauſe haue we giuen the world to thinke that we are not readie to hearken to it, and to vſe any good meanes of ſweet compulſion, to haue this high and heauenly Banquet largely furniſhed? Onely we cannot ſo farre yeeld as to iudge it conuenient, that the holy deſire of a competent number ſhould be vnſatisfied, becauſe the greater part is careleſſe and vndiſpoſed to ioyne with them. Men ſhould not (they ſay) be permitted a few by themſelues to communicate, when ſo many are gone away, becauſe this Sacrament is a token of our coniunction with our Brethren, and therefore by communicating a part from them, we make an apparent ſhew of diſtraction. I aske then on which ſide Vnitie is broken, whether on theirs that depart, or on theirs who being left behind doe communicate? Firſt, in the one it is not denyed, but that they may haue reaſonable cauſes of departure, and that then euen they are deliuered from iuſt blame. Of ſuch kind of cauſes two are allowed, namely, danger of impayring health, and neceſſarie buſineſſe requiring our preſence otherwhere. And may not a third cauſe, which is *vnfitneſſe*, at the preſent time detaine vs as lawfully backe as either of theſe two? True it is, that we cannot hereby altogether excuſe our ſelues, for that we ought to preuent this and doe not. But if we haue committed a fault in not preparing our minds before, ſhall we therefore aggrauate the ſame with a worſe, the crime of vnworthy participation? He that abſtaineth, doth want for the time that grace and comfort which religious Communicants haue, but he that eateth and drinketh vnworthily, receiueth death; that which is life to others, turneth in him to poyſon. Notwithſtanding whatſoeuer be the cauſe for which men abſtaine, were it reaſon that the fault of one part ſhould any way abridge their benefit that are not faultie? There is in all the Scripture of God no one ſyllable which doth condemne communicating amongſt a few, when the reſt are departed from them. As for the laſt thing, which is our imparting this Sacrament priuately vnto the ſicke, whereas there haue beene of old (they grant) two kinds of neceſſity, wherein this Sacrament might be priuately adminiſtred, of which two, the one being erroniouſly imagined,

T.C.l.1. p.147.

2.Chron.30.13. Pſal.122.1.

Luke 14.23.

T.C.l.1.p.146.

imagined, and the other (they ſay) conteining no longer in vſe, there remaineth vnto vs no neceſſitie at all, for which that cuſtome ſhould be retained. The firſt ſuppoſed neceſſitie is this, whereby ſome haue thought all ſuch excluded from poſſibilitie of ſaluation, as did depart this life, and neuer were made partakers of the holy Euchariſt. The other caſe of neceſſitie was, when men, which had fallen in time of perſecution, and had afterwards repented them, but were not as yet reteined againe into the fellowſhip of this Communion; did at the houre of their death requeſt it, that ſo they might reſt with greater quietneſſe and comfort of mind, being thereby aſſured of departure in vnitie of Chriſts Church, which vnſpeakably deſire the Fathers did thinke ingrent impietie not to ſatisfie. This was *Serapions* caſe of neceſſitie. *Serapion* a faithfull aged perſon, and alwayes of very vpright life, till feare of perſecution in the end cauſed him to ſhrinke backe; after long ſorrow for his ſcandalous offence, and ſute oftentimes made to be pardoned of the Church, fell at length into grieuous ſickneſſe, and being readie to yeeld vp the Ghoſt, was then more inſtant then euer before to receiue the Sacrament. Which Sacrament was neceſſarie in this caſe, not that *Serapion* had beene deprined of euerlaſting Life without it, but that his end was thereby to him made the more comfortable. And do we thinke that all caſes of *ſuch neceſſitie* are cleane vaniſhed? Suppoſe that ſome haue by miſperſwaſion liued in Schiſme, withdrawne themſelues from holy and publike Aſſemblies, hated the Prayers, and lothed the Sacraments of the Church, falſly preſuming them to be fraught with impious and Antichriſtian corruptions, which errour the God of mercy and truth opening at the length their eyes to ſee, they doe not onely repent them of the euill which they haue done, but alſo in token thereof deſire to receiue comfort by that wherevnto they haue offered diſgrace (which may be the caſe of many poore ſeduced ſoules euen at this day) God forbid we ſhould thinke that the Church doth ſinne, in permitting the wounds of ſuch robe ſupplied with that Oile, which this gracious Sacrament doth yeeld, and their bruſed minds not onely need but begge. There is nothing which the ſoule of man doth deſire in that laſt houre ſo much, as comfort againſt the naturall terrors of death, and other ſcruples of conſcience, which commonly doe then moſt trouble and perplexe the weake, towards whom the verie Law of God doth exact at our hands all the helps that Chriſtian liuitie and indulgence can affoord. Our generall conſolation, departing this life, is the hope of that [a] glorious and bleſſed Reſurrection, which the Apoſtle [b] *S. Paul* nameth ἐξανάστασιν, to note that all men ſhall haue their *ἀνάστασιν*, and bee rayſed againe from the dead, ſo the iuſt ſhall be taken vp and exalted aboue the reſt, whom the power of God doth but raiſe and not exalt. This Life and this Reſurrection our Lord Ieſus Chriſt is for all men, as touching the ſufficiencie of that he hath done; but that which maketh vs partakers thereof, is our particular communion with Chriſt, and this Sacrament a principall meane, as well to ſtrengthen the bond, as to multiply in vs the fruits of the ſame Communion; for which cauſe [c] Saint *Cyprian* termeth it a ioyfull ſolemnitie of expedite and ſpeedie Reſurrection; [d] *Ignatius*, a medicine which procureth immortalitie and preuenteth death; [e] *Irenæus*, the nouriſhment of our bodies

to

[a] 1. Cor. 15. 21.
[b] Phil. 3. 11.
[b] Διὰ τοῦτο ἐν τῇ γῇ ἐκάμομεν, Theophil. οὐδὲν τὸ ἀνθρώπου ἀθάνατον μόνον δὲ τὸ πνεῦμα ἔζησεν τῶν ἀγαθῶν, Ammon vide. 2. Theſſ. 4. 17.
[c] *Matutate reſurrectionis tabernacula ſolemnia.* Cypr. de Com. Dom. cap. 16.
[d] φάρμακον ἀθανασίας ἀντίδοτον μὴ ἀποθανεῖν, Ignat. Epiſt. ad Epheſ.
Iren. l. 4. c. 34.
[e] *Et ſi nihil ſuſcitet mutandum eſt ex ſolemnitate, tamen vbi aequitas euidens poſcit ſubueniendum eſt*, Lib. 183. ff. de Reg. Iur.

to eternall life and their preseruatiue from corruption. Now because that Sacrament, which at all times we may receiue vnto this effect, is then most acceptable and most fruitfull, when any speciall extraordinarie occasion neerely, and presently vrging kindleth our desires towards it, their seueritie, who cleaue vnto that alone which is generally fit to be done, and so make all mens conditions alike, may adde much affliction to diuers troubled and grieued mindes, of whose particular estate, particular respect being had, according to the charitable order of the Church wherein wee liue, there insueth vnto God that glorie, which his righteous Saints comforted in their greatest distresses doe yeeld, and vnto them which haue their reasonable Petitions satisfied, the same contentment, tranquillitie and ioy, that others before them by meanes of like satisfaction haue reaped, and wherein we all are or should bee desirous finally to take our leaue of the World, whensoeuer our owne vncertaine time of most assured departure shall come. Concerning therefore both Prayers and Sacraments, together with our vsuall and receiued forme of administring the same in the Church of England, let thus much suffice.

Of Festiuall Daies, and the naturall causes of their conuenient institution.

69 As the substance of God alone is infinite, and hath *no kind* of limitation, so likewise his continuance is from euerlasting to euerlasting, and knoweth neither beginning nor end. Which demonstrable conclusion, being presupposed, it followeth necessarily, that besides him, all things are finite, both in substance and in continuance. If in substance all things be finite, it cannot bee, but that there are bounds without the compasse whereof their substance doth not extend; if in continuance also limited, they all haue, it cannot be denyed, their set and their certaine termes, before which they had no being at all. This is the reason, why first we doe most admire those things which are greatest, and secondly, those things which are ancientest, because the one are least distant from the infinite substance, the other from the infinite continuance of God. Out of this wee gather, that onely God hath true immortalitie or eternitie, that is to say, continuance wherein there groweth no difference by addition of hereafter vnto now, whereas the noblest and perfectest of all things besides, haue continually through continuance the time of former continuance lengthened, so that they could not heretofore bee said to haue continued so long as now, neither now so long as hereafter. Gods owne Eternitie is the hand which leadeth Angels in the course of their Perpetuitie, their Perpetuitie, the hand that draweth out celestiall Motion, the Line of which Motion and the Threed of Time are spunne together. Now as Nature bringeth forth Time with Motion, so wee by Motion haue learned how to diuide Time, and by the smaller parts of Time, both to measure the greater, and to know how long all things else indure. For Time considered in it selfe, is but the flux of that very instant, wherein the Motion of the Heauen began, being coupled with other things, it is the quantitie of their continuance measured by the distance of two instants. As the time of a man is a mans continuance from the instant of his first breath, till the instant of his last gaspe. Hereupon, some haue defined Time to bee the Measure of the Motion of Heauen, because the first thing which Time doth measure, is that Motion wherewithit began, and by the helpe whereof it measureth other things, as when the Pro-

phet *Dauid* ſaith, that a mans continuance doth not commonly exceed three-ſcore and tenne yeeres, hee vſeth the helpe both of Motion and Number to meaſure Time. They which make Time an effect of Motion, and Motion to be in Nature before Time, ought to haue conſidered with themſelues, that albeit we ſhould deny as *Meliſſus* did all Motion, wee might notwithſtanding acknowledge Time, becauſe Time doth but ſignifie the quantitie of continuance, which continuance may be in things that reſt and are neuer mooued. Beſides, wee may alſo conſider in reſt both that which is paſt, and that which is preſent, and that which is future, yea, farther euen length and ſhortneſſe in euery of theſe, although we neuer had conceit of Motion. But to *define* without Motion, *how* long or *how* ſhort ſuch continuance is, were impoſſible. So that herein we muſt of neceſſitie vſe the benefit of Yeeres, Dayes, Houres, Minutes, which all grow from Celeſtiall Motion. Againe, for as much as that Motion is Circular, whereby we make our diuiſions of Time, and the Compaſſe of that Circuit ſuch, that the Heauens which are therein continually moued, and keepe in their Motions vniforme celerity, muſt needs touch often the ſame points, they cannot chooſe but bring vnto vs by equall diſtances frequent returnes of the ſame times. Furthermore whereas Time is nothing but the meere quantitie of that continuance which all things haue that are not as God is without beginning, that which is proper vnto all quantities agreeth alſo to this kind, ſo that Time doth but meaſure other things, and neither worketh in them any reall effect, nor is it ſelfe euer capable of any. And there, hee when commonly we vſe to ſay, that Time doth eate or fret out all things that Time is the wiſeſt thing in the World, becauſe it bringeth forth all Knowledge, and that nothing is more fooliſh then Time, which neuer holdeth any thing long, but whatſoeuer one Day learneth, the ſame another Day forgetteth againe, that ſome men ſee proſperous and happie Dayes, and that ſome mens Dayes are miſerable, in all theſe and the like ſpeeches that which is vttered of the Time is not verified of Time it ſelfe, but agreeth vnto thoſe things which are in Time, and doe by meanes of ſo neere coniunction either lay their burthen vpon the backe, or ſet their Crowne vpon the head of Time. Yea the very Opportunities which we aſcribe to Time doe in truth cleaue to the things themſelues wherewith time is ioyned, as for Time it neyther caſteth things nor opportunities of things, although it comprize & containe both. All things whatſoeuer hauing their time, the Workes of God haue alwayes that time which is ſeaſonableſt and fitteſt for them. His Workes are ſome ordinary, ſome more rare, all worthy of obſeruation, but not all of like neceſſitie to bee often remembred, they all haue their times, but they all doe not adde the ſame eſtimation and glorie to the times wherein they are. For as God by being euery-where, yet doth not giue vnto all places one and the ſame degree of holineſſe, ſo neyther one and the ſame dignitie to all times by working in all. For if all eyther places or times, were in reſpect of God alike, wherefore was it ſaid vnto *Moſes* by particular deſignation, *The very place wherein thou ſtandeſt is holy ground?* Why doth the Prophet *Dauid* chooſe out of all the dayes of the yeere but one, whereof he ſpeaketh by way of principall admiration, *This is the day the Lord hath made?* No doubt, as Gods extraordinary preſence hath hallowed & ſan-

* χρονος ἐστὶν ὁ ἀριθμὸς, ἢ ἀριθμὸς ἐστὶ ϕορᾶς τινὸς. Hippo. lib. qui Præceptiones inſcribitur.

Exod. 3. 5.

Pſal. 118. 24.

ſanctified certaine places, ſo they are his extraordinary workes that haue truly and worthily aduanced certaine times, for which cauſe they ought to bee with all men that honour God more holy then other dayes. The Wiſeman therefore compareth herein not vnfitly the times of God with the perſon of men. If any ſhould aske how it commeth to paſſe, that one day doth excell another, ſeeing the light of all the dayes in the yeere proceedeth from one Sunne, to this he anſwereth, that, *That knowledge of the Lord hath parted them aſunder, he hath by them diſpoſed the times and ſolemne Feaſts, ſome hee hath choſen out and ſanctified, ſome he hath put among the dayes, to number*: euen as *Adam* and all other men are of one ſubſtance, all created of the Earth: *but the Lord hath diuided them by great knowledge and made their wayes diuers, ſome he hath bleſſed and exalted, ſome he hath ſanctified and appropriated to himſelfe, ſome hee hath curſed, humbled and put them out of their dignitie.* So that the cauſe being naturall and neceſſary, for which there ſhould be a difference in dayes, the ſolemne obſeruation whereof declareth Religious thankefulneſſe towards him whoſe workes of principall reckoning we thereby admire and honour, it commeth next to be conſidered what kindes of duties and ſeruices they are wherewith ſuch times ſhould be kept holy. *Pſal.* 118. 24. *Eccleſ.* 33. 7.

70 The ſanctification of dayes and times is a token of that thankefulneſſe, and a part of that publike honour which wee owe to God for admirable benefits, whereof it doth not ſuffice that we keepe a ſecret Kalender, taking thereby our priuate occaſions as we liſt our ſelues to thinke how much God hath done for all men, but the dayes which are choſen out to ſerue as publike Memorials of ſuch his mercies, ought to be clothed with thoſe outward Robes of holineſſe, whereby their difference from other dayes may bee made ſenſible. But becauſe time in it ſelfe, as hath beene alreadie prooued, can receiue no alteration, the hallowing of Feſtiuall Dayes muſt conſiſt in the ſhape or countenance which we put vpon the affaires that are incident into thoſe Dayes. This is the day which the Lord hath made, ſaith the Prophet *Dauid*, *Let vs reioyce and be glad* in it. So that generally offices and duties of [b] religious *ioy* are that wherein the hallowing of Feſtiuall times conſiſteth. The moſt naturall teſtimonies of our reioycing in God, are firſt his Prayſes ſet forth with cheereſull alacritie of mind, ſecondly, our comfort and delight expreſſed by a [c] charitable largeneſſe of ſomewhat more then common bountie, thirdly, ſequeſtration from ordinary labours, the toyles and cares whereof are not meet to bee companions of ſuch gladneſſe. Feſtiuall ſolemnitie therefore is nothing but the due mixture as it were of theſe three Elements, praiſe and bountie, and reſt. Touching prayſe, for as much as the Iewes, who alone knew the way how to magnifie God aright, did common (as appeared by their wicked liues) more of cuſtome and for faſhion ſake execute the ſeruices of their Religion, then with heartie and true deuotion (which God eſpecially requireth) he therefore proteſteth againſt their Sabbaths and ſolemne Dayes, as being therewith much offended. Plentifull and liberall expence is required in them that abound, partly,

The manner of celebrating Feſtiuall Dayes.

b *Grande videlicet officium ſecos & choros in publicum educere, vicatim epulari, ciuitatē taberna haliti obeſface, vino lutum cogere, catenatim curſitare ad iniurias, ad impudicitias, ad libidinis illecebras. Siccine exprimitur publicū gaudium? perpublicum dedecus.* Tert. Apol. c. 35

Dies feſtos Maieſtati altiſſimæ dedicatos nullis voluptatibus occupari. C. l. 12. tit. 12. l. 1

Ἀπὸ τῶν ἡδέων πομπείας καὶ δι-αχύσεως καὶ ἀναχορήσεως ἑορτάζοντας πανηγύρεις, ἱερὰ θεῶν ἐγκώμια καὶ ὕμνον καὶ γό-

λατα, ἀλλ' ὑμνεῖ θεὸν καὶ ἱερῇ λογίαν ἐκφαίνει, καὶ πρωτοχλιὰ ἐξεταίνει καρποφόρου δακρύου, Theod. ad Græc. Infideh. Serm. 9.

c Τῆς γὰρ ἀνθρώπου φύσεως ἴδιον ἐστιν ἀνοσιώτατόν τινας καὶ φιλάνθρωπον, Philo. lib. de Abraha.

as a ſigne of their owne ioy in the goodneſſe of God towards them, and partly as a meane whereby to refreſh thoſe poore and needy, who being eſpecially at
Deut.16.14. Nehem.8.9. theſe times made partakers of relaxation and ioy with others doe the more religiouſly bleſſe God, whoſe great mercies were a cauſe thereof, & the more contentedly indure the burthen of that hard eſtate wherein they continue. Reſt is the end of all Motion, and the laſt perfection of all things that labour. Labours in vs are iournies, and euen in them which feele no wearineſſe by any worke, yet they are but waies whereby to come vnto that which bringeth not happineſſe till it do bring reſt. For as long as any thing which we deſire is vnattained, we reſt not. Let vs not here take reſt for idlenes. They are idle, whom the painfulneſſe of action cauſeth to auoid thoſe labors, whereunto both God and Nature bindeth them: they reſt, which either ceaſe from their worke when they haue brought it vnto perfection, or elſe giue ouer a meaner labour, becauſe a worthier and better is to be vndertaken. God hath created nothing to be idle or ill imployed. As therefore, man doth conſiſt of different and diſtinct parts, euery part indued with manifold abilities, which all haue their ſeuerall ends and actions thereunto referred; ſo there is in this great varietie of duties which belong to men, that dependencie and order, by meanes whereof the lower ſuſtained alwaies the more excellent, and the higher perfecting the more baſe, they are in their times and ſeaſons continued with moſt exquiſite correſpondence, labours of bodily and daily toile purchaſe freedome for actions of religious ioy, which benefit theſe actions requite with the gift of deſired reſt: a thing moſt naturall and fit to accompanie the Solemne Feſtiuall duties of honour which are done to God. For if thoſe principall workes of God, the memorie whereof we vſe to celebrate at ſuch times, be but certaine taſtes and faies, as it were of that finall benefit, wherein our perfect felicitie and bliſſe lyeth folded vp, ſeeing that the preſence of the one doth direct our cogitations, thoughts and deſires towards the other, it giueth ſurely a kind of life, and addeth inwardly no ſmall delight to thoſe ſo comfortable expectation, when the very outward countenance of that wee preſently doe, repreſenteth after a ſort that alſo whereunto wee tend, as Feſtiuall reſt doth that Celeſtiall eſtate whereof the very * Heathens themſelues which had not the meanes whereby to apprehend much, did notwithſtanding imagine that it needs muſt conſiſt in reſt, and haue therefore taught, that aboue the higheſt mooueable Sphere there is nothing which feeleth alteration, motion or change, but all things immutable, vnſubiect to paſſion, bleſt with eternall continuance in a life of the higheſt perfection, and of that complete abundant ſufficiencie within it ſelfe, which no poſſibilitie of want, maime or defect can touch. Beſides, whereas ordinarie labours are both in themſelues painefull, and baſe in compariſon of Feſtiuall Seruices done to God, doth not the naturall difference betweene them ſhew that the one as it were by way of ſubmiſſion and homage ſhould ſurrender themſelues to the other wherewith they can neither eaſily concurre, becauſe painefulneſſe and ioy are oppoſite, nor decently, becauſe while the minde hath iuſt occaſion to make her abode on the Houſe of gladneſſe, the Weed of ordinarie toyle and trauell becommeth her not? Wherefore euen Nature hath taught the

* Οὐδ' ἐστὶν ἐνδεὲς ὑγρὸν μεταβολὴ τὸν ὑπερ ἐξωτὰ τοῦ φερομένου τόπου ἀλλ' ἀπαλλάττον τε καὶ ἀπαθῆ ὅλως ἀρχὴν ἔχοντ' ἐκεῖνον ἐγγὺς ἔχον καὶ τιμιώτατον ὄντα διατελεῖ τὸ ἀνώτατον ἀεῖον. Arist.

the Heathens, and God the Iewes, and Chriſt vs, firſt, that Feſtiuall Solemnities are a part of the publike exercise of Religion; ſecondly, that Praiſe, Liberalitie, and Reſt are as naturall Elements whereof Solemnities conſiſt. But theſe things the Heathens conuerted to the honour of their falſe gods, and as they failed in the end it ſelfe, ſo neither could they diſcerne rightly what forme and meaſure Religion therein ſhould obſerue. Whereupon, when the Iſraelites impiouſly followed ſo corrupt example, they are in euery degree noted to haue done amiſſe, their Hymnes or Songs of praiſe were Idolatrie, their bountie exceſſe, and their reſt wantonneſſe. Therefore the Law of God which appointed them dayes of Solemnitie, taught them likewiſe in what manner the ſame ſhould bee celebrated. According to the patterne of which Inſtitution, *Dauid* eſtabliſhing the ſtate of Religion, ordained praiſe to be giuen vnto God in the Sabbaths, Moneths and appointed times, as their cuſtome had beene alwaies before the Lord. Now, beſides the times which God himſelfe in the Law of *Moſes* particularly ſpecified, there were, through the wiſedome of the Church, certaine other deuiſed by occaſion of like occurents to thoſe, whereupon the former had riſen, namely, that which *Mardocheus* and *Eſter* did firſt celebrate in memorie of the Lords moſt wonderfull protection, when *Haman* had laid his ineuitable plot, to mans thinking, for the vtter extirpation of the Iewes euen in one day. This they call the Feaſt of *Lots*, becauſe *Haman* had caſt their life and their death, as it were vpon the hazard of a Lot. To this may be added, that other alſo of *Dedication*, mentioned in the tenth of Saint *Iohns* Goſpell, the inſtitution whereof is declared in the Hiſtorie of the Maccabees. But for as much as their Law by the comming of Chriſt is changed, and wee thereunto no way bound, Saint *Paul*, although it were not his purpoſe to fauour inuectiues againſt the ſpeciall ſanctification of dayes and times to the ſeruice of God, and to the honour of Ieſus Chriſt, doth notwithſtanding bend his forces againſt that opinion, which impoſed on the Gentiles the yoke of Iewiſh Legal obſeruations, as if the whole world ought for euer, & that vpon paine of condemnation, to keepe and obſerue the ſame. Such as in this perſwaſion hallowed thoſe Iewiſh Sabbaths, the Apoſtle ſharply reproueth, ſaying, [a] *Yee obſerue dayes and moneths, and times and yeers, I am in feare of you, leſt I haue beſtowed vpon you labour in vaine.* Howbeit ſo farre off was [b] *Tertullian* from imagining how any man could poſſibly hereupon call in queſtion ſuch dayes as the Church of Chriſt doth obſerue, that the obſeruation of theſe dayes hee vſeth for an Argument whereby to proone, it could not bee the Apoſtles intent and meaning to condemne ſimply all obſeruing of ſuch times. Generally therefore touching Feaſts in the Church of Chriſt, they haue that profitable vſe whereof Saint *Auguſtine* ſpeaketh, *By Feſtiuall Solemnities and ſet-dayes wee dedicate and ſanctifie to God the memories of his benefits, leſt vnthankfull forgetfulneſſe thereof ſhould creepe vpon vs in courſe of time.* And concerning particulars, their Sabbath the Church hath changed into our Lords Day, that is, the one did continually bring to mind the former world finiſhed by creation, ſo the other might keep vs in perpetuall remembrance of a far better World, begun by him which came to reſtore all things, to make both Heauen & Earth new. For which cauſe they

1. *Chron.* 23. 30.

Heſt. 9. 27.

Ioh. 10. 22.

1. *Mac.* 4. 59.

a Gal. 4. 10.

b *Si omnem in totum denotationem temporum & dierum & menſium & annorum tulit Apoſtolus, cur Paſcha celebramus anno circuito in menſe primo? Cur quinquagintà exinde diebus in omni exultatione decurrimus?* Li. aduerſ. Pſych. *Aug. de Ciuit. Dei lib. 16. c. 4.*

they honoured the laſt day, wee the firſt in euery ſeuen throughout the yeere. The reſt of the dayes and times which we celebrate, haue relation all vnto one head. We begin therfore our Eccleſiaſticall yeere with the glorious [c] Annuntiation of his birth by Angelicall Embaſſage. There being hereunto added his bleſſed Natiuitie it ſelfe, the myſterie of his legall [d] Circumciſion; the teſtification of his true Incarnation by the Purification of her which brought him into the World, his Reſurrection, his Aſcenſion into Heauen, the admirable ſending downe of his Spirit vpon his choſen and (which conſequently enſued) the notice of that incomprehenſible Trinitie thereby giuen to the Church of God; againe, for as much as we know that Chriſt hath not only been manifeſted great in himſelfe, but great in other his Saints alſo, the dayes of whoſe departure out of the World are to the Church of Chriſt, as the Birth and Coronation dayes of Kings or Emperors, therefore eſpeciall choiſe being made of the very flowre of all occaſions in this kinde; there are annuall ſelected times to meditate of Chriſt glorified in them which had the honor to ſuffer for his ſake, before they had age and abilitie to know him; glorified in them which knowing him as *Stephen* had the ſight of that before death, whereinto ſo acceptable death did leade; glorified in thoſe Sages of the Eaſt, that came from farre to adore him, and were conducted by ſtrange light; glorified in the ſecond *Elias* of the world, ſent before him to prepare his way; glorified in euery of thoſe Apoſtles, whom it pleaſed him to vſe as Founders of his Kingdome here; glorified in the Angels as in *Michael*; glorified in all thoſe happie ſoules that are already poſſeſſed of Heauen. Ouer and beſides which number not great, the reſt bee but foure other dayes heretofore annexed to the Feaſt of Eaſter and Pentecoſt, by reaſon of generall Baptiſme vſuall at thoſe two Feaſts, which alſo is the cauſe why they had not as other daies any proper name giuen them. Their firſt inſtitution was therefore through neceſſitie, and their preſent continuance is now for the greater honour of the principals, whereupon they ſtill attend. If it be then demanded, whether we obſerue theſe times as being thereunto bound by force of Diuine Law, or elſe by the only Poſitiue Ordinances of the Church, I anſwere to this, that the very Law of Nature it ſelfe, which all men confeſſe to be Gods Law, requireth in generall no leſſe the ſanctification of times then of places, perſons and things vnto Gods honour. For which cauſe it hath pleaſed him heretofore as of the reſt, ſo of times likewiſe to exact ſome parts by way of perpetuall homage, neuer to be diſpenſed withall nor remitted, againe, to require ſome other parts of time with as ſtrict exaction but for leſſe continuance, and of the reſt which were left arbitrarie, to accept what the Church ſhall in due conſideration conſecrate voluntarily vnto like Religious vſes. Of the firſt kind amongſt the Iewes was the Sabbath Day; of the ſecond, thoſe Feaſts which are appointed by the Law of *Moſes*; the Feaſt of Dedication inuented by the Church, ſtandeth in the number of the laſt kind. The Morall Law requiring therefore a ſeuenth part throughout the age of the whole world to be that way imployed, although with vs the day be changed in regard of a new reuolution begun by our Sauior Chriſt, yet the ſame proportion of time continueth which was before, becauſe in reference to the benefit of Creation, and now much more

[c] Luke 1.26.

[d] Luke 2.21.

more of Renouation thereunto added by him which was Prince of the world to come, we are bound to accompt the sanctification of one day in seuen, a dutie which Gods immutable Law doth exact for euer. The rest, they say, wee ought to abolish, because the continuance of them doth nourish wicked superstition in the minds of men, besides, they are all abused by Papists, the enemies of God, yea, certaine of them, as Easter and Pentecost, euen by the Iewes.

71 Touching Iewes, their Easter and Pentecost haue with ours as much affinitie, as *Philip* the Apostle with *Philip* the Macedonian King. As for *imitation of Papists*, and the *breeding of superstition*, they are now become such common ghests, that no man can thinke it discourteous to let them goe as they came. The next is a rare obseruation and strange. You shall find if you marke it (as it doth deserue to be noted well) that many thousands there are, who if they haue vertuously during those times behaued themselues, if their deuotion and zeale in prayer haue beene feruent, their attention to the Word of God, such as al Christian men should yeeld, imagine that herein they haue performed a good dutie, which notwithstanding to thinke is a very dangerous errour, in as much as the Apostle Saint *Paul* hath taught, that wee ought not to keepe our Easter as the Iewes did for certaine dayes, but in the vnleauened bread of sinceritie & of truth to feast continually, whereas the restraint of Easter to a certaine number of dayes causeth vs to rest for a short space in that neere consideration of our duties, which should be extended throughout the course of our whole liues, and so pulleth out of our minds the Doctrine of Christs Gospell ere wee be aware. The Doctrine of the Gospell which here they meane or should meane, is, that Christ hauing finished the Law, there is no Iewish Paschall Solemnitie, nor abstinence from sowre Bread now required at our hands, there is no Leauen which we are bound to cast out, but malice, sin and wickednesse, no Bread but the food of sincere Truth, wherwith we are tied to celebrate our Passeouer. And seeing no time of sinne is granted vs, neither any intermission of sound beliefe, it followeth that this kind of feasting ought to endure al waies. But how are standing Festiuall Solemnities against this? That which the Gospell of Christ requireth, is the perpetuitie of vertuous duties, not perpetuitie of exercise or action, but disposition perpetuall, and practise as oft as times and opportunities require. Iust, valiant, liberall, temperate and holy men are they, which can whensoeuer they will, and will whensoeuer they ought, execute what their seuerall perfections import. If vertues did alwaies cease to bee when they cease to worke, there should bee nothing more pernicious to Vertue then sleepe:

Exception against our keeping of other festiuall dayes besides the Sabbath. *T.C.l.1.p.151.*

If they had been neuer abused, neither by the Papists, nor by the Iewes, as they haue beene, and are daily, yet such making of Holy dayes is neuer without some great danger of bringing in some euill and corrupt opinions into the minds of men. I will vse an example in one, and that the chiefe of Holy dayes, and most generally, and of longest time obserued in the Church, which is the feast of Easter, which was kept of some more dayes, of some fewer. How many thousands are there, I will not say of the ignorant Papists, but of those also which professe the Gospell, which when they haue celebrated those dayes with diligent heed taken vnto their life, and with some earnest deuotion in praying, and hearing the Word of God, doe not by and by thinke that they haue well celebrated the Feast of Easter, and yet haue they thus notably deceiued themselues? For Saint *Paul* teacheth, 1. *Cor.* 5. 8. that the celebrating of the Feast of the Christians Easter, is not as the Iewes was for certaine dayes, but sheweth that wee must keepe this Feast all the dayes of our life in the vnleauened bread of sinceritie and of truth. By which wee see that the obseruing of the Feast of Easter for certaine dayes in the yeere doth pull out of our minds, ere euer wee bee aware, the Doctrine of the Gospell, and causeth vs to rest in that neere consideration of our duties, for the space of a few dayes, which should be extended to all our life.

ſleepe: neyther were it poſſible that men, as *Zacharie* and *Elizabeth* ſhould in all the Commandements of God walke vnreproueable, or that the Chaine of our converſation ſhould containe ſo many linkes of diuine vertues, as the Apoſtles in diuers places haue reckoned vp, if in the exerciſe of each vertue perpetuall continuance were exacted at our hands. Seeing therefore all things are done in time, and many offices are not poſſible at one and the ſame time to bee diſcharged, duties of all ſorts muſt haue neceſſarily their ſeuerall ſucceſſions and ſeaſons, in which reſpect the Schoole-men haue well and ſoundly determined, that Gods affirmatiue Lawes and Precepts, the Lawes that inioyne any actuall dutie, as Prayer, Almes, and the like, doe bind vs *ad ſemper velle*, but not *ad ſemper agere*, we are tyed to iterate and reſume them when neede is, howbeit not to continue them without any intermiſſion. Feaſts, whether God himſelfe hath ordayned them, or the Church by that authoritie which God hath giuen, they are of Religion ſuch publique ſeruices, as neither can, nor ought to bee continued otherwiſe then onely by iteration. Which iteration is a moſt effectuall meane to bring vnto full maturitie and growth thoſe ſeedes of godlineſſe, that theſe very men themſelues doe grant to bee ſowne in the hearts of many thouſands, during the while that ſuch feaſts are preſent. The conſtant habite of well-doing is not gotten without the cuſtome of doing well, neither can vertue bee made perfect, but by the manifold workes of vertue often practiſed. Before the powers of our mindes be brought vnto ſome perfection, our firſt aſſayes and offers towards vertue muſt needs bee raw, yet commendable, becauſe they tend vnto ripeneſſe. For which cauſe the wiſedome of God hath commanded eſpecially this circumſtance amongſt others in ſolemne feaſts, that to Children and Nouices in Religion, they miniſter the firſt occaſion to aske and inquire of God. Whereupon if there follow but ſo much pietie as hath beene mentioned, let the Church learne to further imbecillitie with prayer, *Preſerue, Lord theſe good and gracious beginnings, that they ſuddenly drie not vp like the morning dew, but may proſper and grow as the trees which riuers of waters keepe alwaies flouriſhing*; let all mens acclamations bee *grace, grace vnto it*, as to that firſt layd corner ſtone in *Zerubbabels* buildings. For who hath deſpiſed the day of thoſe things which are ſmall? Or how dare wee take vpon vs to condemne that very thing which voluntarily wee grant, maketh vs of nothing ſomewhat, ſeeing all wee pretend againſt it is onely that as yet this ſomewhat is not much? The dayes of ſolemnitie which are but few, cannot chooſe but ſoone finiſh that outward exerciſe of godlineſſe, which properly appertayneth to ſuch times, howbeit mens inward diſpoſition to vertue, they both augment for the preſent, and by their often returnes bring alſo the ſame at the length vnto that perfection which wee moſt deſire. So that although by their neceſſarie ſhort continuance, they abridge the preſent exerciſe of pietie in ſome kinde, yet becauſe by repetition they enlarge, ſtrengthen and confirme the habites of all vertue, it remayneth that wee honour, obſerue and keepe them as ordinances, many wayes ſingularly profitable in Gods Church. This exception being taken againſt Holy dayes, for that they reſtraine the praiſes of God vnto certaine

taine times, another followeth condemning reſtraint of men from their ordinarie Trades and labours at thoſe times. [a] It is not they ſay in the power of the Church to command reſt, becauſe God hath left it to all men at libertie, that if they thinke good to beſtow ſixe whole dayes in labour they may, neyther is it more lawfull for the Church to abridge any man of that libertie which God hath granted, then to take away the yoke which God hath laid vpon them, and to countermand what he doth expreſly inioyne. They denie not but in times of publike calamitie, that men may the better aſſemble themſelues to faſt and pray, the Church, *becauſe it hath receiued Commandement* from God to proclaime a Prohibition from ordinarie works, ſtandeth bound to doe it, as the Iewes afflicted did in Babylon. But without ſome expreſſe Commandement from God, there is no power they ſay vnder Heauen which may preſume by any Decree to reſtraine the libertie that GOD hath giuen. Which opinion, albeit applyed here no farther then to this preſent cauſe, ſhaketh vniuerſally the Fabricke of Gouernement, tendeth to Anarchie and meere confuſion, diſſolueth Families, diſſipateth Colledges, Corporations, Armies, ouerthroweth Kingdomes, Churches, and whatſoeuer is new, through the prouidence of God, by authoritie and power vpheld. For whereas God hath foreprized things of the greateſt weight, and hath therein preciſely defined, as well that which euery man muſt performe, as that which no man may attempt, leauing all ſorts of men in the reſt, either to be guided by their owne good diſcretion, if they bee free from ſubiection to others, or elſe to be ordered by ſuch Commandements and Lawes as proceed from thoſe Superiours vnder whom they liue; the Patrones of Libertie haue heere made Solemne Proclamation, that all ſuch Lawes and Commandements are void in as much as euery man is left to the freedome of his owne minde, in ſuch things as are not either exacted or prohibited by the Law of God; and becauſe onely in theſe things the Poſitiue Precepts of men haue place, which Precepts cannot poſſible

[a] *T.C. lib. 1. pag.* 152. I confeſſe that it is in the power of the Church to appoint ſo many dayes in the Weeke, or in the Yeere (in the which the Congregation ſhall aſſemble to heare the Word of God, and receiue the Sacrament, and offer vp Prayers vnto God) as it ſhall thinke good, according to thoſe rules which are before alleaged. But that it hath power to make ſo many *Holy-dayes* as we haue, wherein men are commanded to ceaſe from their daily vocations of ploughing and exerciſing their handy-crafts, that I denie to bee in the power of the Church. For proofe whereof, I will take the fourth Commandement, and no other interpretation of it then M. Doct. alloweth of, which is, that God licenſeth and leaueth it as the libertie of euery man, to worke ſixe dayes in the Weeke, ſo that he reſt the Seuenth Day. Seeing therefore that the Lord hath left it to all men at libertie, that they might labour if they thinke good ſixe dayes, I ſay the Church, nor no man can take this libertie away from them, and driue them to a neceſſarie reſt of the bodie. And if it be lawfull to abridge the libertie of the Church in this point, and in ſtead, that the Lord ſayth, ſixe dayes thou mayſt labour if thou wilt, to ſay, thou ſhalt labour ſixe dayes: I doe not ſee why the Church may not as well, whereas the Lord ſayth, thou ſhalt reſt the Seuenth Day, command that thou ſhalt not reſt the Seuenth Day. For if the Church may reſtraine the libertie which God hath giuen them, it may take away the yoke alſo which God hath put vpon them. And whereas you ſay, that notwithſtanding this fourth Commandement, the Iewes had certaine other Feaſts which they obſerued, indeed the Lord which gaue this generall Law, might make as many exceptions as hee thought good, and ſo long as hee thought good. But it followeth not, becauſe the Lord did it, that therefore the Church may doe it, vnleſſe it hath Commandement and Authoritie from God ſo to doe. As when there is any generall Plague or Iudgement of God either vpon the Church or comming towards it, the Lord commandeth in ſuch a caſe, *Ioel* 2. 15. that they ſhould ſanctifie a generall Faſt and proclaime *Gnatſarah*, which ſignifieth a Prohibition, or forbidding of ordinarie workes, and is the ſame Hebrew word wherewith thoſe Feaſt-dayes are noted in the Law wherein they ſhould reſt. The reaſon of which Commandement of the Lord was, that they abſtained that day as much as might bee conueniently from meate, ſo they might abſtaine from their daily workes, to the end they might beſtow the whole day in hearing the Word of God, and humbling themſelues in the Congregation, confeſſing their faults, and deſiring the Lord to turne away from his heeree wrath. In this caſe, the Church hauing Commandement to make a Holy-day, may and ought to doe it, as the Church which was in Babylon, did during the time of their Captiuitie: but where it is deſtitute of a Commandement, it may not preſume by any Decree to reſtraine that libertie which the Lord hath giuen.

possibly be giuen without some abridgement of their libertie, to whom they are giuen: therefore if the Father command the Sonne, or the Husband the Wife, or the Lord the Seruant, or the Leader the Souldier, or the Prince the Subiect, to goe or stand, sleepe or wake, at such times as God himselfe in particular commandeth neither, they are to stand in defence of the freedome which God hath granted, and to doe as themselues list, knowing that men may as lawfully command them things vtterly forbidden by the Law of God, as tie them to any thing which the Law of God leaueth free. The plaine contradictorie whereunto is vnfallibly certaine. Those things which the Law of God leaueth arbitrarie and at libertie, are all subiect to the positiue Lawes of men, which Lawes for the common benefit abridge particular mens libertie in such things, as farre as the rules of equitie will suffer. This we must either maintaine, or else ouer-turne the world, and make euery man his owne Commander. Seeing then that labour and rest vpon any one day of the sixe throughout the yeere, are granted free by the Law of God, how exempt we them from the force and power of Ecclesiasticall Law, except we deprive the world of power to make any Ordinance or Law at all? Besides, is it probable that God should not only allow, but command concurrencie of rest, with extraordinary occasions of dolefull euents, befalling peraduenture some one certaine Church, or not extending vnto many, and not as much as permit or licence the like, when pietie triumpheth with ioy and gladnesse, maketh solemne commemoration of Gods most rare and vnwonted mercies, *such especially as the whole race of Mankind* doth or might participate? Of vacation from labour in times of sorrow, the onely cause is, for that the generall publique prayers of the whole Church, and our owne priuate businesses, cannot both bee followed at once; whereas of rest in the famous solemnities of publique ioy, there is both this consideration the same, and also farther a kind of naturall repugnancie, which maketh labours (as hath beene prooued) much more vnfit to accompanie Festiuall praises of God, then offices of humiliation and griefe. Againe, if we sift what they bring for proofe and approbation of rest with fasting, doth it not in all respects as fully warrant, and as strictly command rest, whensoeuer the Church hath equal reason by feasts, and gladsome solemnities to testifie publique thankefulnesse towards God? I would know some cause, why those words of the Prophet IOEL, *Sanctifie a fast, call a solemne assembly*, which words were vttered to the Iewes, in miserie and great distresse, should more bind the Church to doe at all times after the like, in their like perplexities, then the words of *Moses*, to the same people in a time of ioyfull deliuerance from miserie, *Remember this day*, may warrant any annuall celebration of benefits, no lesse importing the good of men; and also iustifie as touching the manner and forme thereof, what circumstance soeuer they imitate onely in respect of naturall fitnesse or decencie, without any Iewish regard to Ceremonies, such as were properly theirs, and are not by vs expedient to bee continued. According to the rule of which generall directions, taken from the Law of God, no lesse in the one then the other, the practice of the Church commended vnto vs in holy Scripture, doth not onely make for the iustification of blacke and dismall dayes (as one of the Fathers termeth them) but plainely offereth

Ioel 2. 15.

Exod. 13. 3.

Hest. 9.

offereth it ſelfe to bee followed by ſuch ordinances (if occaſion require) as that which *Mardocheus* did ſometime deuiſe, *Heſter* what lay in her power helpe forward, and the reſt of the Iewes eſtabliſh for perpetuitie, namely, that the fourteenth and fifteenth dayes of the moneth *Adar*, ſhould be euery yeere kepth throughout all Generations, as dayes of feaſting and ioy, wherein they would reſt from bodily labour, and what by gifts of charitie beſtowed vpon the poore; what by other liberall ſignes of amitie and loue, all teſtifie their thankefull mindes towards God, which almoſt beyond poſſibilitie had deliuered them all, when they all were as men dead. But this decree, they * ſay, was Diuine not Eccleſiaſticall, as may appeare in that there is another decree in another Booke of Scripture, which decree is plaine, not to haue proceeded from the Churches authoritie, but from the mouth of the Prophet onely, and as a poore ſimple man ſometime was fully perſwaded, that if *Pontius Pilate* had not beene a Saint, the Apoſtles would neuer haue ſuffered his name to ſtand in the Creede, ſo theſe men haue a ſtrong opinion, that becauſe the Booke of *Heſter* is Canonicall, the decree of *Heſter* cannot bee poſſibly Eccleſiaſticall. If it were, they aske how the Iewes could binde themſelues alwayes to keepe it, ſeeing Eccleſiaſticall Lawes are mutable? As though the purpoſes of men might neuer intend conſtancie in that, the nature whereof is ſubiect to alteration. Doth the Scripture, it ſelfe make mention of any diuine Commandement? Is the Scripture witneſſe of more, then onely that *Mardocheus* was the Author of this cuſtome, that by Letters written to his brethren the Iewes, throughout all Prouinces, vnder *Darius* the King of Perſia, he gaue them charge to celebrate yeerely thoſe two dayes, for perpetuall remembrance of Gods miraculous deliuerance and mercie, that the Iewes hereupon vnder-tooke to doe it, and made it with generall conſent an order for perpetuitie, that *Heſter*, ſecondly, by her Letters confirmed the ſame, which *Mardocheus* had before decreed, and that finally, the ordinance was written to remaine for euer vpon record? Did not the Iewes in Prouinces abroad obſerue at the firſt the fourteenth day, the Iewes in Suſis the fifteenth? Were they not all reduced to an vniforme order by meanes of thoſe two decrees, and ſo euery-where three dayes kept, the firſt with faſting, in memorie of danger; the reſt, in token of deliuerance, as feſtiuall and ioyfull dayes? Was not the firſt of theſe three, afterwards the day of ſorrow and heauineſſe abrogated, when the ſame Church ſaw it meete that

* *T. C. l.* 3. *p.* 193. The example out of *Heſter* is no ſufficient warrant for theſe feaſts in queſtion. For firſt, as in other caſes, ſo in this caſe of dayes, the eſtate of Chriſtians, vnder the Goſpel, ought not to be ſo ceremonious, as was theirs vnder the Law. Secondly, that which was done there, was done by a ſpeciall direction of the Spirit of God, either through the miniſterie of the Prophets, which they had, or by ſome other extraordinarie meanes, which is not to be followed by vs. This may appeare by another place, *Zach.* 8. Where the Iewes changed their faſts into feaſts, onely by the mouth of the Lord, through the miniſterie of the Prophet. For further proofe whereof, firſt, I take the 28. *verſe*, where it appeareth, that this was an order, to indure alwayes, euen as long as the other Feaſts dayes, which were inſtituted by the Lord himſelfe. So that what abuſes ſoeuer were of that Feaſt, yet as a perpetuall decree of God, it ought to haue remained, whereas our Churches can make no ſuch decree, which may not vpon change of times, and other circumſtances be altered. For the other proofe hereof, I take the laſt *verſe*. For the Prophet contenteth not himſelfe with that, that he had rehearſed the decree, as he doth ſometimes the decree of profane Kings, but addeth preciſely, that as ſoone as euer the decree was made, it was regiſtred in this Booke of *Heſter*, which is one of the Bookes of the Canonicall Scripture, declaring thereby in what eſteeme they had it. If it had beene of no further authoritie then our decrees, or then a Canon of one of the Councels, it had beene preſumption to haue brought it into the Librarie of the holy Ghoſt. The ſumme of my anſwer is, that this decree was Diuine and not Eccleſiaſticall onely.

that a better day, a day in memorie of like deliuerance, out of the bloudy hands of *Nicanor*, ſhould ſucceed in the roome thereof? But for as much as there is no end of anſwering fruitleſſe oppoſitions, let it ſuffice men of ſober minds, to know that the Law both of God and Nature alloweth generally, dayes of reſt and feſtiuall ſolemnitie, to be obſerued by way of thankefull and ioyfull remembrance, if ſuch miraculous fauours be ſhewed towards mankind as require the ſame; that ſuch graces God hath beſtowed vpon his Church, as well in later as in former times, that in ſome particulars, when they haue fallen out, himſelfe hath demanded his owne honour, and in the reſt hath left it to the wiſedome of the Church, directed by thoſe precedents, and inlightned by other meanes, alwayes to iudge when the like is requiſite. About queſtions therefore concerning Dayes and Times, our manner is not to ſtand at bay with the Church of God, demanding wherefore the memorie of [a] *Paul* ſhould be rather kept then the memorie of [b] *Daniel*; we are content to imagine, it may be perhaps true that the leaſt in the Kingdome of Chriſt, is greater then the greateſt of all the Prophets of God that haue gone before; wee neuer yet ſaw cauſe to deſpaire, but that the [c] ſimpleſt of the people might bee taught the right conſtruction of as great myſteries, as the [d] name of a Saints day doth comprehend, although the times of the yeere goe on in their wonted courſe; we had rather glorifie and bleſſe God, for the fruit we daily behold, reaped by ſuch ordinances as his gracious Spirit maketh the ripe wiſdome of this Nationall Church to bring forth, then vainely boaſt of our owne peculiar and priuate inuentions, as if the skill of [e] profitable Regiment had left her publike habitation, to dwell in retired manner with ſome few men of one liuerie; we make not our childiſh [f] appeales ſometimes from our owne to forraine Churches, ſometime from both vnto Churches ancienter then both are, in effect alwayes from all others to our owne ſelues, but as becommeth them that follow with all humilitie the wayes of peace, we honour, reuerence and obey, in the very next degree vnto God, the voice of the Church of God wherein we liue. They, whoſe wits are too glorious to fall to ſo low an ebbe, they which haue riſen and ſwollen ſo high, that the walls of ordinarie Riuers are vnable to keepe them in, they whoſe wanton contentions in the cauſe whereof we haue ſpoken, doe make all where they go, a Sea, euen they at their higheſt flote are conſtrained both to ſee and [g] grant, that what their fancie will not yeeld to like, their iudgement cannot with reaſon condemne. Such is euermore the finall victorie of all truth, that they which haue not the hearts to loue her, acknowledge, that to hate her they haue no cauſe.

Touching thoſe feſtiuall Dayes therefore which wee now obſerue, their number

1. *Mac.* 15. 36.

1. *Mac.* 4. 55.

a *Commemoratio Apoſtolica paſſionis totius Chriſtianitatis magiſtra à cunctis iure celebratur*, Cod. l. 3. tit. 12. l. 7.

b *T. C. l.* 1. *p.* 153. For ſo much as the old people did neuer keepe any Feaſt or Holy day for remembrance either of *Moſes*, &c.

c *T. C. l.* 1. *p.* 153. The people, when it is called S. *Pauls* day, or, the bleſſed Virgin *Maries* day, can vnderſtand nothing thereby, but that they are inſtituted to the honour of Saint *Paul*, or the Virgin *Marie*, vnleſſe they be otherwiſe taught. And if you ſay, let them ſo be taught, I haue anſwered, that the teaching in this land, cannot by any order which is yet taken, come to the moſt part of thoſe, which haue drunke this poyſon, &c.

d *Seiſſet ignoraui nos nec Chriſtum quidem reſiſtere, qui pro totius ſtruendorum mundi ſalute paſſus eſt, nec alium quempiam colere poſſe. Nam hunc quidem hominem filium Dei adorantes, martyres vero eiuſdem hominem filium Dei adorantes, martyres vero eiuſdem Diſcipulos & imitatores Domini digne propter inſuperabilem in Reges ipſorum ac Praeceptores benevolentiam diligimus, quorum & nos conſortes & diſcipulos fieri optamus.* Euſeb. hiſt. Eccleſ. lib. 4. cap. 15.

e *T. C. l.* 1. *p.* 153 As for all the commodities, &c.

f *T. C. l.* 1. *p.* 154

g *T. C. l.* 1. *pag.* 254. We condemne not the Church of England, neither in this, nor in other things, which are meete to bee reformed. For it is one thing to miſ-like, another thing to condemne; and it is one thing to condemne ſomething in the Church, and another thing to condemne the Church for it.

number being no way [a] discommodious to the Common-wealth, and their grounde suchas hitherto hath beene shewed, what remayneth, but to keepe them throughout all Generations holy, severed by manifest notes of difference from other times, adorned with that which most may betoken true, vertuous and celestiall ioy? To which intent, because surcease from labour is necessarie, yet not so necessarie, no not on the Sabbath or Seventh Day it selfe, but that rarer occasions in more particular Affaires subiect to manifest detriment vnlesse they be presently followed, may with verie good conscience draw them sometimes aside from the ordinarie rule, considering the favourable dispensation which our Lord and Saviour groundeth on this Axiome, *Man was not made for the Sabbath, but the Sabbath ordayned for man*, so farre forth as concerneth Ceremonies annexed to the principall Sanctification thereof, howsoever the rigour of the Law of *Moses* may be thought to import the contrary, if we regard with what severitie the violation of Sabbaths hath beene sometime punished, a thing perhaps the more requisite at that instant, both because the Iewes by reason of their long abode in a place of continuall servile toyle, could not suddenly be wayned and drawne vnto contrarie Offices, without some strong impression of terror, and also for that there is nothing more needfull, then to punish with extremitie the first transgressions of those Lawes, that require a more exact observation for many Ages to come; therefore as the Iewes superstitiously addicted to their Sabbaths rest for a long time, not without danger to themselves, and [b] obloquie to their very Law, did afterwardes perceive and amend wisely their former error, not doubting that bodily labours are made by [c] impietie veniall, though otherwise, especially on that Day, rest be more conuenient, so as all times the voluntarie scandalous contempt of that rest from labour, wherewith publikely God is serued, wee cannot too [d] severely correct and bridle. The Emperour [e] *Constantine* having with over-great facilitie licensed Sundayes labours in Countrie Villages, vnder that pretence, whereof there may iustly no doubt sometime consideration bee had, namely, lest any thing which God by his providence hath bestowed, should miscarry not being taken in due time, *Leo*, which afterwards saw that this ground would not beare so generall and large indulgence as had been granted, doth by a contrarie Edict, both reverse and severely censure his Predecessours remissenesse, saying, [f] *Wee ordaine according to the true meaning of the Holy Ghost, and of the Apostles thereby directed, that on the sacred Day, wherein our owne integritie was restored, all doe rest and surcease labour, that neither Husbandman nor other on that day put their hands to forbidden workes. For if the Iewes did so much reverence their Sabbath, which was but a shadow of ours, are not we which inhabit the light and truth of grace, bound to honor that day which the Lord himselfe hath honoured, and hath therein delivered vs both from dishonour and from death? are we not bound to keepe it singular and inviolable, well contenting our selues with so liberall a grant of the rest, and not incroching vpon that one, which God hath chosen to his owne honour? Were it not wretchlesse neglect of Religion, to*

a πολλὰς μὲν ἔνιαι πολλὰς δὲ οὐδεμιᾶς ἱερομηνίας ἐπιτετὰ τῷ χρὼ πάσης τοῦ ἔτους εἰς ἑαυτὰς ἀπολίσετο καὶ τῶν δημοσίων ξυμβάντων ἐλαχίστη ἐγίγνετο, de Claudio dicta apud Dio. l. 60. *Marke* 2. 27. *Numb.* 15. 32.

b *Hi vacare consueti sunt septimo die, & neq; armis portare quicquam, neq; alterius cuiusquam curam habere possunt, sed in templo extendentes manus adorare vsq; ad vesperam solent sunt. Ingrediente verò in ciuitatem Proconsule Lago cum diuersis & multis hominibus, cum cuspide debuerunt ciuitatem, ipse sabbatizans observantibus gratiam quidem Dominum suscepit misericordem, lex verò manifestata est, malam habere formidatam.* Agatharchid. apud Ioseph. li. 1. cont. Appion. vide & Diom. l. 37.

c 1. *Mac.* 2. 40.

d *Neh.* 13. 15.

e *Cod. l. 3. tit.* 12. *l.* 3.

f *Leo const.* 34

make that very day common, & to think we may do with it as with the reſt? Imperial Lawes which had ſuch care of hallowing, eſpecially, our Lords Day, did not omit to prouide that * other Feſtiuall times might bee kept with vacation from labour, whether they were dayes appointed on the ſuddaine, as extraordinarie occaſions fell out, or dayes which were celebrated yeerly, for Politike & Ciuill conſiderations, or finally, ſuch dayes as Chriſtian Religion hath ordayned in Gods Church. The ioy that ſetteth aſide labour, diſperſeth thoſe things which labour gathereth. For gladneſſe doth alwayes riſe from a kind of fruition and happineſſe, which happineſſe baniſheth the cogitation of all want, it needeth nothing but onely the beſtowing of that it hath, in as much as the greateſt felicitie that felicitie hath, is to ſpread and inlarge it ſelfe, it commeth hereby to paſſe, that the firſt effect of ioyfulneſſe is to reſt, becauſe it ſeeketh no more; the next, becauſe it aboundeth to giue. The roote of both is the glorious preſence of that ioy of minde which riſeth from the manifold conſiderations of Gods vnſpeakeable mercie, into which conſiderations wee are led by occaſion of ſacred times. For how could the Iewiſh Congregations of old be put in minde by their weekely Sabbaths, what the World reaped through his goodneſſe, which did of nothing create the World; by their yeerely Paſſeouer, what farwell they tooke of the Land of Egypt; by their Pentecoſt what Ordinances, Lawes and Statutes, their Fathers receiued at the hands of God; by their Feaſt of Tabernacles, with what protection they iourneyed from place to place, through ſo many ſcares and hazards, during the tedious time of fortie yeeres trauaile in the Wilderneſſe; by their Annuall Solemnitie of Lots, how neere the whole Seed of Iſrael was vnto vtter extirpation, when it pleaſed that great God which guideth all things in Heauen and Earth, ſo to change the counſels and purpoſes of men, that the ſame hand which had ſigned a Decree in the opinion both of them that granted, and of them that procured it, irreuocable, for the generall maſſacre of Man, Woman and Childe, became the Buckler of their preſeruation, that no one haire of their heads might be touched; the ſame dayes which had beene ſet for the powring out of ſo much innocent bloud, were made the dayes of their execution, whoſe malice had contriued the plot thereof, and the ſelfe-ſame perſons that ſhould haue indured whatſoeuer violence and rage could offer, were imployed in the iuſt reuenge of crueltie, to giue vnto bloud-thirſtie men the taſte of their owne Cup? or how can the Church of Chriſt now endure to bee ſo much called on and preached vnto by that which euery [a] Dominicall Day throughout the yeere, that which yeere by yeere ſo many Feſtiuall times, [b] if not commanded by the Apoſtles themſelues, whoſe care at that time was of greater things, yet inſtituted eyther by ſuch [c] vniuerſall authoritie, as no man, or at the leaſt ſuch as wee with no reaſon may deſpiſe, doe as ſometime the holy Angels did from Heauen ſing, [d] *Glory be vnto God on high, peace on Earth, towards men good will* (for this in effect is very the Song that all Chriſtian Feaſts doe apply as their ſeueral occaſions require) how ſhold the dayes and times continually thus inculcate what God hath done, and wee refuſe

* *T.C.l.3.ſit.22. Dies feſtos.*

a *Mat.28.1. Marke 16.1. Luke 24.1. Iohn 20.1. 1.Cor.16.2. Apoc 1.10.*

b *Apoſtolis propoſitum fuit non vt leges de feſtis diebus celebrandis ſanxirent, ſed vt vtilis vſuendi rationis & pietatis nobis auctores eſſent.* Socrat. Hiſt. lib. 5. cap. 22. c *Quæ toto terrarum orbe ſeruantur, vel ab ipſis Apoſtolis vel Conciliis generalibus quorum eſt ſaluberrima in Eccleſia auctoritas ſtatuta eſſe intelligitur ſicuti quòd Dominicæ Paſſio & Reſurrectio, & in Cœlum Aſcenſus, & Aduentus Spiritus ſancti anniuerſaria ſolemnitate celebrantur.* Auguſt. Epiſt. 118. d Luke 2.14.

refuse to agnize the benefit of such remembrances, that very benefit which caused *Moses* to acknowledge those Guides of Day and Night, the Sunne and Moone, which enlighten the World, not more profitable vnto nature by giving all things life, then they are to the Church of God, by occasion of the variety here, in regard of the appointed Festiuall Times? That which the head of all Philosophers hath said of Women, if they be good, the halfe of the Common-wealth is happy, wherein they are, the same wee may fitly apply to times, well to celebrate these Religious and sacred Dayes, is to spend the flower of our time happily. They are the splendor and outward dignitie of our Religion, sensible Witnesses of ancient Truth, prouocations to the exercises of all Pietie, shadowes of our endlesse felicitie in Heauen, an Earthen-lasting Records and Memorials, wherein they which cannot be drawne to hearken vnto sharper teach, may onely by looking vpon that wee doe, in a manner reade whatsoeuer we beleeue.

Of Dayes appointed as well for ordinarie, as for extraordinarie Fits in the Church of God.

The matching of contrarie things together, is a kinde of illustration to both. Hauing therefore spoken thus much of Festiuall Dayes, the next thereof is, them selues to hand, are dayes of pensiue humiliation and sorrow. Fastings are either of mens owne free and voluntarie accord, as their particular deuotion doth moone them thereunto, or else they are publikely inioyned in the Church, and required at the hands of all men. There are which altogether disallow not the former kind, and the latter they greatly commend. For that is the vpon extraordinarie occasions only, and after one certaine manner exercised. But yeerly or weekly Fasts, such as ours in the Church of England, they allow no further, then as the Temporall State of the land doth require the same, for the maintenance of Seafaring men, and preseruation of Corne, because the decay of the one, & the wrack of the other could not well haue preuented but by a Politike order appointing some such vsuall change of Dyet as ours is. We are therefore the rather to make it manifest in all these cases, that set times of fasting appointed in spirituall considerations to be kept by all sorts of men, tooke not their beginning either from *Montanus*, or any other, whose Heresies may preiudice the credit and due estimation thereof, but haue their ground in the Law of Nature, are allowable in Gods sight, were in all Ages heretofore, and may still the World ouer be obserued, not without singular vse and benefit. Much hurt hath growne to the Church of God, through a false imagination, that Fasting standeth men in no stead for any spirituall respect, but onely to take down the fiercenesse of Nature, and to tame the wildenesse of flesh. Whereupon the World being bold to surfet, doth now blush to fast, supposing that men when they fast, doe rather bewray a Disease, then exercise a Vertue. I

much

much wonder what they who are thus perswaded doe thinke, what conceite they haue concerning the Faste of the Patriarkes, the Prophets, the Apostles, our Lord Iesus Christ himselfe? The affections of *Ioy* and *Griefe* are so fast vnto all the actions of mans life, that whatsoeuer we can doe, or may be done vnto vs, the sequell thereof is continually the one or the other affection. Wherefore considering that they which grieue and ioy as they ought, cannot possibly otherwise liue then as they should, the Church of Christ, the most absolute and perfect Schoole of all vertue, hath by the speciall direction of Gods good Spirit hitherto alwayes inured men from their infancie, partly with dayes of Festiuall exercise, for the framing of the one affection, and partly with times of a contrary sort, for the perfecting of the other. Howbeit ouer and besides this, we must note, that as nothing, so fasting likewise attendeth sometimes no lesse vpon the Actions of the highest, then vpon the affections of the lower part of the minde. Fasting, saith *Tertullian*, is a worke of reuerence toward God. The end thereof sometimes elevation of minde; sometime the purpose thereof cleane contrarie. The cause why *Moyses* in the Mount did so long fast, was meere diuine speculation: the cause why *Dauid*, humiliation. Our life is a mixture of good with euill. When wee are partakers of good things, we ioy, neither can wee but grieue at the contrarie. If that befall vs which maketh glad, our Festiuall Solemnities declare our reioycing to be in him whose meere vndeserued mercie is the Author of all happinesse; if any thing be eminent or present which wee feare, our Watchings, Fastings, Cryes and Teares are vnfayned confessions, that our sinnes wee condemne as the onely causes of our owne miseries, and doe all acknowledge him no lesse inclinable then able to saue. And because as the memorie of the one, though past, reneweth gladnesse; so the other called againe to minde, doth make the wound of sorrow fresh to bleede anew; which woulde needeth often touching the more, for that wee are generally more apt to Kalender Saints then sinners dayes, therefore there is in the Church a care not to iterate the one alone, but to haue frequent repetition of the other. Neuer to seeke after God, saue onely when either the Crib or the Whip doth constraine, were brutish seruilitie, and a great derogation to the worth of that which is most predominant in man, if sometimes it had not a kinde of voluntarie accesse to God, and of conference as it were with God, all theise inferiour considerations layd aside. In which sequestration for as much as higher cogitations doe naturally drowne and burie all inferiour cares, the minde may as well forget natural both food and sleepe, by being carryed aboue it selfe with serious and heauenly Meditation, as by being cast downe with heauinesse, drowned and swallowed vp of sorrow. Albeit therefore concerning bodily Abstinence from certaine kindes of meates, as being vncleane, the Apostle doth teach that the Kingdome of Heauen is not meate nor drinke, that food commendeth vs not vnto God, whether we take it, or abstaine from it, that if we eate, we are not thereby the more acceptable in his sight, nor the lesse if wee eate not; his purpose notwithstanding was farre from any intent to derogate from that Fasting, which is no such scrupulous Abstinence, as only refuseth some kindes of meates and drinkes, lest they make them vncleane that taste them, but

an

Tert. de ieiun. Propter emundationem. Semper ieiunium ad aliquam orationem. Philo lib. de Abrah. c Iohn 4.34.

d Rom. 14.17.

an Abstinence whereby we either interrupt or otherwise abridge the care of our bodily sustenance, to shew by this kind of outward exercise, the serious intention of our mindes, fixed on Heavenlier and better desires, the earnest hunger and thirst whereof depriveth the bodie of those vsuall contentments, which otherwise are not denyed vnto it. These being in Nature the first causes that induce Fasting, the next thing which followeth to be considered, is the ancient practice thereof amongst the Iewes. Touching whose priuate voluntary Fasts, the precept which our Sauiour gaue them, was; *When ye fast, looke not sowre, as hypocrites: For they disfigure their faces, that they might seeme vnto men to fast: Verily I say vnto you, they haue their reward. When thou fastest, anoint thy head, and wash thy face, that thou seeme not vnto men to fast, but vnto thy Father which is in secret, and thy Father which seeth in secret, will reward thee openly.* Our Lord and Sauiour would not teach the manner of doing, much lesse propose a reward for doing that, which were not both holy and acceptable in Gods sight. The Pharises weekely bound themselues vnto double Fasts, neyther are they for this reproued. Often Fasting, which was a vertue in *Iohns* Disciples, could not in them of it selfe be a vice, and therefore not the oftenesse of their Fasting, but their hypocrisie therein was blamed. Of [a] publique inioyned Fasts, vpon causes extraordinary, the Examples of Scripture are so frequent, that they need no particular rehearsall. Publique extraordinarie Fastings were sometimes for [b] one onely day, sometimes for [c] three, sometimes for [d] seuen. Touching Fasts not appointed for any such extraordinary causes, but eyther yeerely, or monethly, or weekely obserued and kept; first, vpon the [e] ninth day of that moneth, the tenth whereof was the Feast of Expiation, they were commanded of God, that euery soule, yeere by yeere, should afflict it selfe. Their yeerely Fasts euery fourth moneth in regard of the Citie of Ierusalem, entred by the Enemie; euery fift, for the memory of the ouerthrow of their Temple; euery seuenth, for the treacherous destruction and death of *Godolias*, the very last stay which they had, to leane vnto in their greatest miserie; euery tenth, in remembrance of the time when siege beganne first to bee layde against them; all these not commanded by God himselfe, but ordayned by a publique Constitution of their owne; the Prophet [f] *Zacharie* expressly toucheth. That Saint *Ierome*, following the tradition of the Hebrewes, doth make the first, a memoriall of the breaking of those two Tables, when *Moses* descended from Mount Sinay; the second, a memoriall as well of Gods indignation, condemning them to forty yeeres trauaile in the Desart, as of his wrath in permitting Chaldeans to waste, burne and destroy their Citie; the last, a memoriall of heauy tydings, brought out of Iury, to *Ezechiel* and the rest, which lived as Captiues in forraine parts, the difference is not of any moment, considering that euch time of sorrow is naturally euermore a Register of all such grieuous euents as haue hapned, either in, or neere about the same time. To these I might adde [g] sundry other Fasts, aboue twentie in number, ordayned amongst them by like occasions, and obserued in like manner, besides their weekly Abstinence, Mundayes and Thursdayes, throughout the whole yeere. When men fasted, it was not alwayes after one and the same sort, but either by depriuing themselues wholly of all food, during the time that their Fasts con-

Mat. 6. 16.

a 2. Chro. 20. Ierem. 36. Ezra 8. 1. Sam. 7.
b Iud. 20. 26.
c 2. Mac. 13. 12.
d 1. Sam. 31. 13. 1. Chron. 10. 12.
e Leuit. 23. Leuit. 16. Philo de hu'us festi scientia ita loquitur. Οὐ σιτίων μόνον ἀλλὰ πάσης ἐδέσεως προσεγγίσαι καθαρᾶς ψυχῆς διανοίαν μὴ δίχα ἱερογλαυκτος μηδ' ἀμυνεῖ δίζεται σωματικὰ πάθη ἐκποδὼν ἐκβαλοῦσα φιλαῖ συμβαλοῦσιν ἐν πλημμελῆς ἑορτάζουσι λιτανείαις τὸν πατέρα τῶν πάντων ἱκετεύουσι συγχωρῆσαι δι' ὧν ἁμαρτημάτων μὴ παλαιῶν ἀμαρτημάτων χρῆσιν δὲ ἐξ ἀνειλαυσιν ἀγαθῶν ἐπιδόσεις ἀπιτύχας. p. 447.
f Zach. 8. 6.
Exod. 32. Num. 14.
g Vide Riber. l. 5. c. 22.

continued, or by abating both the quantitie and kind of Diet. We haue of the one a plaine Example in the Niniuites Fasting, and as plaine a precedent for the other in the Prophet *Daniel*; *I was*, (saith he) *in heauinesse for three weekes of dayes, I ate no pleasant bread, neither tasted flesh, nor wine.* Their tables, when they gaue themselues to fasting, had not that vsuall furniture of such Dishes as doe cherish blood with blood, but [a] for food they had bread, for suppose, salt, and for sawce, herbes. Whereunto the Apostle may be thought to allude, saying, *One beleeueth he may eate all things, another which is weake* (and maketh a conscience of keeping those customes which the Iewes obserue) *eateth herbes.* This austere repast they tooke in the Euening, after Abstinence the whole day. For, to forfeite a noones Meale, and then to recompence themselues at night, was not their vse. Nor did they euer accustome themselues on Sabbaths, or Festiuall Dayes to fast. And yet it may bee a question whether in some sort they did not alwayes fast the Sabbath. Their Fastings were partly in token of penitencie, humiliation, griefe and sorrow; partly in signe of deuotion and reuerence towards God. Which second consideration (I dare not peremptorily and boldly affirme any thing) might induce to abstaine till noone, as their manner was on fasting dayes to doe till night. May it not very well be thought that hereunto the sacred [b] Scripture doth giue some secret kinde of Testimonie? *Iosephus* is plaine, that the sixt houre (the day they diuided into twelue) was woont on the Sabbath alwayes to call them home vnto meate. Neither is it improbable but that the Heathens did therefore so often vpbraide them with Fasting on that day. Besides, they which found so great fault with our Lords Disciples, for rubbing a few eares of Corne in their hands on the Sabbath Day, are not vnlikely to haue aymed also at the same marke. For neither was the bodily paine so great that it should offend them in that respect, and the very manner of defence which our Sauiour there vseth, is more direct and literall to iustifie the breach of the Iewish custome in Fasting, then in working at that time. Finally, the Apostles afterwards themselues when God first gaue them the gift of Tongues, whereas some in disdaine and spight termed grace drunkennesse, it being then the day of Pentecost, and but onely a fourth part of the day spent, they vse this as an Argument against the other cauill, *These men*, saith PETER, *are not drunke as you suppose, since as yet the third houre of the day is not ouer-past.* Howbeit, leaning this in suspence, as a thing not altogether certainely knowne, and to come from Iewes to Christians, we finde that of priuate voluntarie Fastings the Apostle Saint *Paul* speaketh [d] more then once. And (saith *Tertullian*) they are sometime commanded throughout the Church, *ex aliqua sollicitudine Ecclesiastica causa*, the care and feare of the Church so requiring. It doth not appeare that the Apostles ordayned any set and certaine dayes to bee generally kept of all. Notwithstanding for as much as Christ had fore-signified, that when himselfe should be taken from them, his absence would soone make them apt to fast, it seemeth that euen as the first Festiuall day appointed to be kept of the Church was the day of our Lords returne from the dead, so the first sorrowfull and mourning day was that which we now obserue in memorie of his departure out of this World. And because there could be no abatement of griefe, till they saw him rayfed whose death

was

Dan. 10. 2, 3.

a *Parum & sine animalibus cœnam. Apul. in Asclep. in fine. Pastum & potum pura nosse non ventris scilicet sed animæ causa. Tertul. de panit. vide Phil. lib. de vita contempl. Rom. 14. 2. Hieron. lib. 2. contr. Iouinian. Iudith. 8. 6. R. Mos. in Mitzr. Tirz. lib. 3. qui est de tempor. cap. de Sab. & cap. de Iejun.*

b *Neh. 8. 3. 12. Hora sexta quæ Sabbatis solebat ad prandium vocare, sibi seruauit, Ioseph. lib. de vita sua.*

c *Sabbata Iudæorum à Mose in vnum omnia dicta. Iustin. lib. 36. Ne Iudæus quidem ni Tiberi tam libenter Sabbati ieiuniũ seruat, quam ego habit seruum. Sueton. in Octau. cap. 76. Acts 2. 15.*

d *1. Cor. 7. 5. 2. Cor. 6. 5. 11. 27. Col. 4. 4.*

was the occasion of their heauinesse, therefore the day he lay in the Sepulcher hath beene also kept and obserued as a weeping day. The customs of fasting these two dayes before Easter is vndoubtedly most ancient, in so much that *Ignatius* not thinking him a Catholique Christian man which did not abhorre (and as the state of the Church was then) auoid fasting on the Iewes Sabboth, doth notwithstanding except for euer that one Sabboth or Saturday which falleth out to be the Easter-eue, as wish vs is alwayes doth, and did sometimes also with them which kept at that time their Easter the 14. day of March as the customs of the Iewes was. It came afterward to be an order, that euen as the day of Christs resurrection, so the other two, in memorie of his death and buriall, were weekely. But this when Saint *Ambrose* liued, had not as yet taken place throughout all Churches, no not in Millen where himselfe was Bishop. And for that cause he saith, that although at Rome he obserued the Saturdayes fast, because such was then the customs in Rome, nenerthelesse in his owne Church at home he did otherwise. The Churches which did not obserue that day, had another in stead thereof, which was the Wednesday, for that when they iudged it meet to haue weekely a day of humiliation, besides that whereon our Sauiour suffered death, it seemed best to make their choice of that day especially, wherein the Iewes are thought to haue first contriued their treason together with *Iudas* against Christ. So that the instituting and ordaining both of these and all other times of like exercise, is as the Church shall iudge expedient for mens good. And concerning euery Christian mans dutie herein, surely that which *Augustine* and *Ambrose* are before alleadged to haue done, is such, as all men fauouring equitie must needs allow, and follow, if they affect peace. As for their specified errors, I will set in this place dispute, whether voluntarie fasting with a vertuous purpose of mind, be any medicinable remedie of euill, or a dutie acceptable vnto God, and in the world to come euen rewardable, as other offices are which proceed from Christian pietie; whether wilfully to breake and despise the wholesome Lawes of the Church herein, be a thing which offendeth God; whether truely it may not be said that penitent both weeping and fasting, are meanes to blot out sinne, meanes whereby through Gods vnspeakeable and vndeserued mercie we obtaine or procure to our selues pardon, which attainment vnto any gracious benefit by him bestowed, the Phrase of antiquitie vseth to expresse by the name of merit; but if either Saint *Augustine* or Saint *Ambrose* haue taught any wrong opinion, seeing they which reprooue them are not altogether free from errour, I hope they will thinke it no errour in vs so to censure mens smaller faults, that their vertues be not thereby generally preiudiced. And if in Churches abroad, where we are not subiect to power or iurisdiction, discretion should teach vs for peace and quietnesse sake to frame our selues to other mens example, is it meete that at home where our freedome is lesse, our boldnesse should be more? Is it our dutie to oppugne, in the Churches whereof we are Ministers, the rites and customes, which in forraine Churches pietie and modestie did teach vs as strangers not to oppugne, but to keepe without shew of contradiction or dislike? Why oppose they the name of a Minister in this case vnto the state of a priuate

Ignat. Ep. ad Philip.

man? Doth their order exempt them from obedience to Lawes? That which their office and place requireth, is to shew themselues patternes of reuerend subiection, not Authors and Maisters of contempt towards ordinances, the strength whereof when they seeke to weaken, they doe but in truth discouer to the world their owne imbecillities, which a great deale wiselier they might conceale. But the practice of the Church of Christ, we shall by so much the better both vnderstand and loue; if to that which hitherto hath beene spoken, there bee somewhat added for more particular declaration, how heretiques haue partly abused Fasts, and partly beene themselues against the lawfull vse thereof in the Church of God. Whereas therefore *Ignatius* hath said, If any keepe Sundayes or Saturdayes Fast (one only Saturday in the yeere excepted) that man is no better then a murtherer of Christ; the cause of such his earnestnesse at that time was the impietie of certaine heretiques, which thought [a] that this world being corruptible, could not be made but by a very euill Author. And therefore as the Iewes did by the festiuall solemnitie of their Sabboth, reioyce in the God that created the world, as in the Author of all goodnesse: so those heretiques in hatred of the Maker of the world, sorrowed, wept and fasted on that day, as being the birth-day of all euill. And as Christian men of sound beliefe, did solemnize the Sunday, in ioyfull memorie of Christs resurrection; so likewise at the selfe-same time, such heretiques as denied his resurrection, did the contrarie to them which held it; when the one sort reioyced, the other fasted. Against those heretiques, which haue vrged perpetuall abstinence from certaine meates, as being in their verie nature vncleane, the Church hath still bent her selfe as an enemie; Saint *Paul* giuing charge to take heed of them, which vnder any such opinion, should vtterly forbid the vse of meates or drinkes. The Apostles themselues forbad some, as the order taken at Ierusalem declareth. But the cause of their so doing, we all know. Againe, when *Tertullian*, together with such as were his followers, beganne to Montanize, and pretending to perfect the seueritie of Christian Discipline, brought in sundrie vnaccustomed dayes of fasting, continued their Fasts a great deale longer, and made them more rigorous then the vse of the Church had beene; the mindes of men being somewhat mooued at so great, and so suddaine nouelrie, the cause was presently inquired into. After notice taken how the Montanists held these additions to be supplements of the Gospell, whereunto the Spirit of Prophecie did now meane to put as it were the last hand, and was therefore newly descended vpon *Montanus*, whose orders all Christian men were no lesse to obey, then the Lawes of the Apostles themselues; this abstinence the Church abhorred likewise, and that iustly. Whereupon *Tertullian* proclaiming euen open warre to the Church, maintained Montanisme, wrote a Booke in defence of the new Fast, and intituled the same; A Treatise of Fasting, against the opinion of the carnall sort. In which Treatise neuertheleſſe, because so much is sound and good, as doth either generally concerne the vse, or in particular declare the custome of the Churches fasting in those times, men are not to reiect whatsoeuer is alledged out of that booke, for confirmation of the truth. His error discloseth it selfe in those places, where he defendeth his Fasts to be duties necessarie for the whole Church

[a] Εἰ τις νηστεύει τὴν κυριακὴν ἢ σάββατον πλὴν ἑνὸς σαββάτου, υἱὸς ἐστὶ τοῦ διαβόλου. Ignat. ad Philip.

[a] Vide Irenæ. l. 1. c. 20, 22, 23, 24, 25. Epiph. hæres. 21, 22, 23, 24, 27, 38. & 41, 42.

Vide Canon Apost. 55.

of

of Christ to obserue as commanded by the holy Ghost, and that with the same authoritie from whence all other Apostolicall ordinances came, both being the lawes of God himselfe, with any other distinction or difference, saue only that he which before had declared his will by *Paul* and *Peter*, did now further reuele the same by *Montanus* also. *Against vs yee pretend*, saith *Tertullian*, *that the publique orders which Christianitie is bound to keepe, were deliuered at the first, and that no new thing is to be added thereunto. Stand if you can vpon this point; For behold, I challenge you for fasting more then at Easter your selues. But no doubt ye answer, that those things are to be done as established by the voluntarie appointment of men, and not by vertue or force of any diuine commandement. Well then (he addeth) ye haue renounced your first footing, and gone beyond that which was deliuered by a thing more then was at the first imposed vpon you. You say, you must doe that which your owne iudgements haue allowed: we require your obedience to that which God himselfe doth institute. It is not strange that men to their owne will should build that which to Gods commandements they will not grant. Shall the Paraclete* (or *Montanus*) *preuaile more with you then the power of God himselfe?* These places of *Tertullian* for fasting haue worthily beene put to silence. And as worthily *Atrius* condemned for opposition against fasting. The one indeuoured to bring in such fasts as the Church ought not to receiue, the other to ouerthrow such as already it had receiued and did obserue; the one was plausible vnto many by seeming to hate carnall loosenesse and riotous excesse much more then the rest of the world did, the other drew hearers, by pretending the maintenance of Christian liberty; the one thought his cause very strongly vpheld by making inueighing declamations with a pale & withered countenance against the church, by filling the eares of his starued Hearers with speech fitable to such mens humours; and by telling them no doubt as their marueilous continencie and liking, *Our new Prophesies are refused, they are despised. Is it because* Montanus *doth preach some other God, or dissolue the Gospel of Iesus Christ, or ouerthrow any Canon of faith and hope? No our crime is, we teach that men ought to fast more often then marrie, the best feast-maker is with them the perfectest Saint, they are assuredly neere Spirit, and therefore these our corporall deuotions please them not:* thus the one for *Montanus* and his Superstition. The other in a cleane contrarie tune against the Religion of the Church, *These set-Fasts, away with them, for they are Iewish, and bring men vnder the yoke of seruitude: if I will fast, let me choose my time that Christian libertie be not abridged.* Hereupon their glorie was to fast especially vpon the Sunday, because the order of the Church was on that day not to fast. *Our Church fasting dayes, and especially the weeke before Easter, when with vs* (saith EPIPHANIVS) *custome admitteth nothing but lying downe vpon the earth, abstinence from fleshly delights and pleasures, seruentfulnesse, diris and vnfained dyet, prayer, watching, fasting, all the medicines which holy affections vse minister, they are vp betimes to take in of the strongest for the belly; and when their veines are well swolne, they make themselues mirth with laughter at this our seruitie, wherein wee are perswaded wee please God.* By this of *Epiphanius* it doth appeare, not onely what fastings the Church of Christ in those times vsed, but also what other parts of Discipline were together therewith in force, according to the ancient vse and custome of bringing all

Epiph. Haref. 75.

to men

men at certaine times to a due consideration and an open humiliation of themselues. I no finde there were of publike penitencie, the one belonging to notorious offenders, whose open wickednesse had beene scandalous, the other appertaining to the whole Church and vnto every seuerall person whom the same containeth. It will be answered, that touching this latter kind it may be exercised well enough by men in priuate. No doubt, but penitencie is a Prayer, a thing acceptable vnto God, be it in publike or priuate. Howbeit as in the one if men were wholly left to their owne voluntary Meditations in their Closets, and not drawne by Lawes and Orders vnto the open Assemblies of the Church, that there they may ioyne with others in Prayer, it may be soone coniectured, what Christian deuotion that way would come vnto in a short time: euen so in the other, we are by sufficient experience taught, how little it boteth to tell men of shaking away their sinnes with teares of Repentance, and so to leaue them altogether vnto themselues. O Lord, what heapes of grieuous transgressions haue we committed, the best, the perfectest, the most righteous amongst vs all, and yet cleane passe them ouer vnforewarned of, and vnprepared, only because the Church hath forgotten vtterly how to hallow her monedtimes of Discipline, wherein the publike example of all was vnto euery particuler person, a most effectuall meane to put them often in mind, and euen in a manner to draw them to that which now we all quite and cleane forget, as if penitencie were no part of a Christian mans dutie. Agains, besides our priuate offences which ought not thus loosely to be ouerslipt, suppose we in bodie and corporation of the Church ioynt, that as no time it needeth to shew it selfe openly ashamed, in regard of those sinnes and transgressions which though they doe not properly belong vnto any one, had notwithstanding a speciall Sacrifice appointed for them in the Law of Moses, and being common to the whole Church is which containeth all, must needes so farre concerne euery man in particuler, as that sometime in solemne manner to require acknowledgement with more then daily and ordinarie testifications of griefe. There could not haue growne a fitter president hee deuised, then that memorable commission set downe in the Booke of Common Prayer, if our practise in the rest were sutable. The head already so well drawne, doth but wish a proportionable body. And by the Preface to that verie part of the English Liturgie, it may appeare how at the first setting downe thereof, no lesse was intended. For some seeke to interprete the meaning of those words, wherein reliuition of the Primitiue Church-Discipline is greatly wished for, touching the manner of publike penance in time of Lent. Wherewith some being not onely pleased, but hauing framed in their minds the conceit of a new Discipline, fare vnlike vnto that of old, they make themselues beleeue, it is vndoubtedly this their Discipline, which at the first was so much desired. They haue long preached that the whole Scripture is plaine for them. If now the Communion Booke make for them too (I will thinke the one doth as much as the other) it may bee hoped that being found such a yoke, willingly vnto their cause, they will more fauour it then they haue done. Hauing therefore hitherto spoken, both of Festiuall daies and so much of solemne Fasts, as may reasonably serue to shew the ground thereof in the Law of Nature, the practise partly appointed, & partly allowed

of

of God in the Iewiſh Church, the like continued in the Church of Chriſt, together with the ſiniſter oppoſitions, either of Heretikes erroniouſly abuſing the ſame, or of others thereat quarrelling without cauſe, we will onely collect the chiefeſt points as well of reſemblance, as of difference betweene them, and ſo end. Firſt, in this they agree, that becauſe nature is the generall roote of both, therefore both haue beene alwayes common to the Church with Infidels and Heathen men. Secondly, they alſo herein accord, that as oft as ioy is the cauſe of the one, and griefe the wel-ſpring of the other, they are [a] incompatible. A third degree of affinitie betweene them, is, that neither being acceptable to God it ſelfe, but both tokens of that which is acceptable; their approbation with him muſt neceſſarily depend on that which they ought to import and ſignifie, ſo that if herein the mind diſpoſe not it ſelfe aright, whether we [b] reſt or [c] faſt we offend. A fourth thing common vnto them is, that the greateſt part of the World hath alwayes groſly and palpably offended in both; Infidels becauſe they did all in relation to falſe gods; godleſſe ſenſuall and careleſſe minds, for that there is in them no conſtant true and ſincere affection towards thoſe things which are pretended by ſuch exerciſe; yea, certaine flattering ouerſights there are, wherewith ſundrie, and they not of the worſt ſort, may be eaſily in theſe caſes led awry, euen through abundance of loue and liking to that which muſt be imbraced by all meanes, but with caution, in as much as the very admiration of Saints, whereer we celebrate their glorie or follow them in humilitie, whether we laugh or weepe, mourne or reioyce with them, is (as in all things the affection of loue) apt to deceiue, and doth therefore need the more to be directed by a watchfull guide, ſeeing there is manifeſtly both wayes, euen in them whom we honour that which we are to obſerue and ſhun. The beſt haue not ſtill beene ſufficiently mindfull, that Gods very Angels in Heauen are but Angels, and that bodily exerciſe conſidered [d] in it ſelfe is no great matter. Finally, ſeeing that both are Ordinances well deuiſed for the good of man, and yet not man created purpoſely for them, as for [e] other offices of vertue whereunto Gods immutable Law for euer tyeth, it is but equitie to wiſh or admoniſh that whereby vniforme order they are not as yet receiued, the example of [f] Victors extremitie in the one, and of [g] *Iohns* Diſciples curioſitie in the other be not followed; yea, where they are appointed by Law, that notwithſtanding [h] we auoid Iudaiſme, and as in Feaſtiuall dayes, mens neceſſities for matter of labour, ſo in times of Faſting, regard be had to their imbecillities, leſt they ſhould ſuffer harme, doing good. Thus therefore we ſee how theſe two cuſtomes are in diuers reſpects equall. But of Faſting the vſe and exerciſe though leſſe pleaſant, is by ſo much more requiſite then the other, as griefe of neceſſitie is a more familiar gueſt then the contrarie paſſion of mind, albeit gladneſſe to all men be naturally more welcome. For firſt, we our ſelues doe many moe things amiſſe then well, and the fruit of our owne ill doing is remorſe, becauſe nature is conſcious to it ſelfe that it ſhould do the contrary. Againe, for as much as the world ouer-aboundeth with malice, and few are delighted in doing good vnto other men, there is no man ſo ſeldome croſt as pleaſured at the hands of others, whereupon it cannot be choſen, but euery mans woes muſt double in that reſpect

a *Con. Laod. cā.* 51. *vetat Natalitia Martyrum, Quadrageſ. mācelebrari.*
b *Eſay* 1. 13.
c *Eſay* 58. 3.
d 1. *Tim.* 4. 8.
e *Eccleſ.* 12. 13. *Eſay* 58. 6, 7. *Rom.* 14. 17. *Iac.* 1. 27. *Heb.* 12. 14. *Epheſ.* 2. 4.
f *Euſeb. Eccleſi. Hiſt. l.* 5. *c.* 23.
g *Matth.* 9. 14.
h *Col.* 2. 16.

ſpect the number and meaſure of his delights. Beſides, concerning the very choice which oftentimes we are to make, our corrupt inclination well conſidered, there is cauſe why our Sauiour ſhould account them happieſt that doe moſt mourne, and why *Salomon* might iudge it better to frequent mourning then feaſting houſes, not better ſimply and in it ſelfe (for then would nature that way incline) but in regard of vs and our common weakeneſſe better. *Iob* was not ignorant that his Childrens Banquets though tending to amitie, needed Sacrifice. Neither doth any of vs all need to be taught that in things which delight, we [m] eaſily ſwarue from mediocritie, and are not eaſily led by a right direct line. On the other ſide, the ſores and diſeaſes of mind which inordinate pleaſure breedeth, are by dolour and griefe cured. For which cauſe as all offences vſe to ſeduce by pleaſing, ſo all puniſhments indeuour by vexing to reforme tranſgreſſions. We are of our owne accord apt enough to giue intertainement to things delectable, but patiently to lacke what fleſh and blood doth deſire, and by *vertue* to forbeare what by *nature* we couet this, no man attaineth vnto, but with labour and long practice. From hence it riſeth that in former Ages, abſtinence and faſting more then ordinarie, was alwayes a ſpeciall branch of their praiſe, in whom it could be obſerued and knowne, were they ſuch as continually gaue themſelues to auſtere life; or men that tooke often occaſions in priuate vertuous reſpects to lay *Salomons* counſell aſide, [n] *Eat thy bread with ioy*, and be followers of *Dauids* Example, which ſaith, [o] *I humbled my ſoule with faſting*; or but they who otherwiſe worthy of no great commendation, haue made of hunger, ſome their gaine, ſome their Phyſicke, ſome their Art, that by maſtering ſenſuall appetites without conſtraint, they might grow able to indure hardneſſe whenſoeuer need ſhould require. For the bodie accuſtomed to emptineſſe, pineth not away ſo ſoone as hauing ſtill vſed to fill it ſelfe. Many ſingular effects there are which ſhould make faſting euen in publike conſiderations the rather to be accepted. For I preſume we are not altogether without experience how great their aduantage is in martiall enterpriſes, that lead Armies of men trained in a Schoole of abſtinence. It is therefore noted at this day in ſome, that patience of hunger and thirſt hath giuen them many victories, in others that becauſe if they want, there is no man able to rule them, nor they in plentie to moderate themſelues, he which can either bring them to hunger or ouercharge them, is ſure to make them their owne ouerthrow. What Nation ſoeuer doth feele theſe dangerous inconueniences, may know that ſloth and fulneſſe in peaceable times at home is the cauſe thereof, and the remedie a ſtrict obſeruation of that part of Chriſtian Diſcipline, which teacheth men in practice of Ghoſtly warfare againſt themſelues, thoſe things that afterwards may helpe them, iuſtly aſſaulting or ſtanding in lawfull defence of themſelues againſt others. The verie purpoſe of the Church of God, both in the number and in the order of her Faſts, hath bin not only to preſerue, thereby throughout all Ages, the remembrance of miſeries heretofore ſuſtained, and of the cauſes in our ſelues out of which they haue riſen, that men conſidering the one might feare the other the more, but further alſo to temper the mind, leſt contrarie affections comming in place ſhould make it too profuſe and diſſolute, in which reſpect it ſeemeth

Matth. 6. 4. Eccleſ. 7. 4.

Iob 1. 5.

m Ἐν πᾶσι γὰρ ἑκτικὸν ἐστὶ τὸ ὑπερβάλλειν καὶ ἐλλείπειν τοῦ μέσου· καὶ τὸ μὴ ῥᾴδιον εὑρεῖν τὸν σκοπὸν καὶ τὸν χρόνον καὶ τὸν τρόπον καὶ τὸν ἐφ' οἷς καὶ ὡς δεῖ. Ariſt. Eth. 2. cap. 13.

n Eccleſ. 9. 7.

o Pſal. 35. 13.

much that Faſts haue beene ſet as Vſhers of Feſtiuall Dayes, for preuention of thoſe diſorders, as much as might bee, wherein, notwithſtanding the World alwayes will deſerue * as it hath done, blame; becauſe ſuch euils being not poſſible to be rooted out, the moſt we can do, is in keeping them low; and (which is chiefly the fruit we looke for) to create in the mindes of men a loue towards frugall and ſeuere life, to vndermine the Palaces of Wantonneſſe, to plant Parſimonie as Nature, where Riotouſneſſe hath beene ſtudie, to harden whom pleaſure would melt, and to helpe the tumours which alwayes fulneſſe breedeth, that Children as it were in the Woall of their Infancie dyed with hardneſſe, may neuer afterwards change colour; that the poore, whoſe perpetuall Faſts are neceſſitie, may with better contentment endure the hunger, which Vertue cauſeth others ſo often to chooſe, and by aduice of Religion it ſelfe to turne to eſteeme aboue the contrarie; that they, which for the moſt part doe lead ſenſuall and eaſie liues; they which, as the Prophet *Dauid* deſcribeth them, are not plagued like other men, may by the publike ſpectacle of all be ſtill put in minde what themſelues are; finally, that euery man may bee euerie mans daily guide and example, as well by faſting to declare humilitie, as by prayſe to expreſſe ioy in the ſight of God, although it haue herein befalne the Church as ſometime *Dauid*, ſo that the ſpeech of the one may bee truely the voice of the other, *My Soule faſted, and euen that was alſo turned to my reproch.*

* *Valde abſurdum eſt virum ſalutarie velle bonorare matrimonium quem ſciat Deo placuiſſe ieiunijs* Hieron. Epiſt. ad Euſtach.

Pſal. 73.5.

Pſal. 69.10.

13 In this World there can be no ſocietie durable, otherwiſe then only by propagation. Albeit therefore ſingle Life bee a thing more Angelicall and Diuine, yet ſith the replenifhing firſt of Earth with bleſſed Inhabitants, and then of Heauen with Saints euerlaſtingly prayſing God, did depend vpon coniunction of Man and Woman, he which made all things complete and perfect, ſaw it could not bee good to leaue man without an Helper, vnto the ſoreſaid alleaged end: In things which ſome farther end doth cauſe to bee deſired, choice reſteth rather vpon proportion then abſolute perfection of goodneſſe. So that woman being created for mans ſake to bee his Helper, in regard of the end before mentioned, namely, the hauing and the bringing vp of Children, whereunto it was not poſſible they could concurre, vnleſſe there were ſubalternation betweene them, which ſubalternation is naturally grounded vpon inequalitie, becauſe things equall in euery reſpect are neuer willingly directed one by another, Woman therefore was euen in her firſt eſtate framed by Nature, not onely after in time, but inferiour in excellencie alſo vnto man, how-beit in ſo due and ſweete proportion, as being preſented before our eyes, might bee ſooner perceiued then deſired. And euen herein doth lye the reaſon, why that kind of loue, which is the perfectſt ground of Wedlocke, is ſeldome able to yeeld any reaſon of it ſelfe. Now, that which is borne of Man, muſt be nouriſhed with farre more trauell, as being of greater price in Nature, and of ſlower pace to perfection, then the Off-ſpring of any other Creature beſides. Man and Woman being therefore to ioyne themſelues for ſuch a purpoſe, they were of neceſſitie to bee linked with ſome ſtraight and inſoluble knot. The bond of Wedlocke hath bin alwayes more or leſſe eſteemed of, as a thing religious and ſacred. The title which the very Heathens themſelues doe thereunto ſometimes giue, is * *Holy*. Thoſe Rites and Orders which were inſti-

* *Plutarch. Dionyſ. Halicar. aut Ia.*

tuted in the solemnization of Marriage, the Hebrewes terme, by the name of coningall [a] *sanctifications*. Amongst our selues, because sundry things appertaining vnto the publike order of Matrimonie, are called in question, by such as know not from whence those Customes did first grow, to shew briefly some true and sufficient reason of them shall not bee superfluous, although wee doe not hereby intend, to yeeld so farre vnto Enemies of all Church-orders saying their owne, as though every thing were vnlawfull, the true cause and reason, whereof at the first might hardly, perhaps be now rendered. Wherefore, to beginne with the times wherein the libertie of Marriage is restrayned. *There is*, saith *Salomon*, *a time for all things*, a time to laugh, and a time to mourne. That duties belonging vnto Marriage, and Offices pertayning to Penance, are things vnsutable and vnfit to be matched together, the Prophets and Apostles themselues doe witnesse. Vpon which ground, as we might right well thinke it marueilous absurd to see in a Church, a Wedding on the day of a publike Fast; so likewise in the selfe-same consideration, our Predecessors thought it not amisse to take away the common libertie of Marriages, during the time which was appointed for preparation vnto, and for exercise of generall humiliation by fasting and praying, weeping for sins. As for the deliuering vp of the woman, either by her Father or by some other, wee must note, that in ancient times, [b] all women which had not Husbands nor Fathers to governe them, had their Tutors, [c] without whose authority there was no act which they did, warrantable. And for this cause, they were in Marriage deliuered vnto their Husbands by others. Which custome remained, both till this yeere, that it putteth woman in minde of a dutie, whereunto the very imbecillitie of their nature and sexe doth bind them, namely, to be alwayes directed, guided and ordered by others, although our Positiue Lawes doe not tye them now as vnto pupils. The custome of laying downe money, seemeth to haue beene derived from the Saxons, whose manner was to buy their Wives. But, seeing there is not any great cause, wherefore the memorie of that custome should remayne, it skilleth not much, although we suffer it to lye dead, euen as wee see it in a manner already worne out. The Ring hath beene alwayes vsed as an especiall pledge of faith and fidelitie. Nothing more fit to serue as a Token of our purposed endlesse continuance in that which wee neuer ought to reuoke. This is the cause wherefore the Heathens themselues did in such cases vse the Ring, whereunto *Tertullian* alluding, saith, that in ancient times; [d] *No woman was permitted to weare gold, saueing only vpon one finger, which her husband had fastned vnto himself, with that ring which was finally giuen for assurance of future marriage*. The cause why the Christians vse it, as some of the Fathers thinke, is [e] either to testifie mutuall loue, or rather to serue for a pledge of coniunction in heart and minde agreed vpon betweene them. But what right and custome is there so harmelesse, wherein the wit of man bending it selfe to derision, may not easily finde out some what to scorne and iest at? Hee that should haue beheld the Iewes when they stood with [f] a foure cornered Canopie, spred ouer the heads of espoused couples, while their Espousals were in making, he that should haue beheld their [g] praying ouer a Cup, and their deliuering the same at the Marriage Feast with set formes of Benediction, as the order amongst them was, might iudge lewdly,

a *Riddusbim. in Rituali Heb. de benedictione nuptiarum.*

Eccles. 3. 1. 1. Cor. 7. 5.

b *Mulieres antiquo iure tutè a perpetuo custodiebantur. Recessit vetus & turpis iuris solicitudo, quæ in matrimonio cognoscitur.* Bozi. in Tacit. Cic.

c *Nullum ne primum quidem tem fœminam fuæ auctore agere maiores nostri voluerunt*, Liu. lib. 4.

The reason yeelded by *Tully*, this, *Propter infirmitatem animi*, Cic. pro Mur. Vide Legat. Saxon. tit. 6. & 17.

d *Aurum nulla mulier præter vnius digiti quem sponsus obsignauerit pronubo annulo*, Tertul. Apologet. c. 6.

e *Isidor. de Eccles. Offic. lib. 2. c. 19.*

f *Elias Thesb. in diff. Hebræo.*

g *In Missal. de benedict. nuptiarum.*

lewdly,

lewdly affected, take thereat as iust occasion of scornfull cauell, as at the vse of the Ring in Wedlocke amongst Christians. But of all things the most hardly take, is the vttering of those words, *With my body I thee worship*, in which words, when once they are vnderstood, there will appeare as little cause as in the rest, for any Wise man to bee offended. First therefore, in as much as vnlawfull copulation doth pollute and [b] dishonour both parties, this protestation that wee doe worship and honour another with our bodies, may import a denyall of all such lets and impediments to our knowledge, as might cause any stayne, blemish or disgrace that way, which kind of construction being probable, would easily approoue that speech to a peaceable and quiet mind. Secondly, in that the Apostle doth so expresly affirme, that parties vnmarried haue not any longer intyre power ouer themselues, but each hath interest in others person, it cannot bee thought an absurd construction to say, that worshipping with the bodie, is imparting of that interest in the bodie vnto another, which none before had, saue onely our selues. But if this were the naturall meaning, the words should perhaps bee as requisite to bee vsed on the one side as on the other, and therefore a third sence there is which I rather relye vpon. Apparent it is, that the ancient difference betweene a lawfull Wife and a Concubine was easily [c] in the different purpose of man betaking himselfe to the one or the other. If his purpose were onely fellowship, there grew to the woman by this meane no worship at all, but the contrarie. In professing that his intent was to adde by his person honour, and worship vnto hers, hee tooke her plainly and cleerly to his Wife. This is it which the Ciuill Law doth meane, when it maketh a Wife to differ from a Concubine in [d] dignitie; a Wife to bee taken where [e] Coniugall honour and affection doe goe before. The worship that grew vnto her being taken with declaration of this intent, was that her Children became by this meanes legitimate and free; her selfe was made a Mother ouer his Family; last of all, shee receiued such aduancement of state, as things annexed vnto his person might augment her with, yea, a right of participation was thereby giuen her both in him, and euen in all things which were his. This doth somewhat the more plainly appeare, by adding also that other clause, *with all my worldly goods I thee endow.* The former branch hauing granted the principall, the latter granteth that which is annexed thereunto. To end the publike Solemnitie of Marriage, with receiuing the Blessed Sacrament, is a custome so Religious and so Holy, that if the Church of England be blameable in this respect, it is not for sufferingit to bee so much, but rather for not prouiding that it may be more put in vre. The Lawes of *Romulus* concerning Marriage are therefore extolled aboue the rest amongst the Heathens which were before, in that they established the vse of certaine speciall Solemnities, whereby the minds of men were drawne to make the greater conscience of Wedlocke, and to esteeme the bond thereof, a thing which could not be without impietie dissolued. If there bee any thing in Christian Religion strong and effectuall to like purpose, it is the Sacrament of the holy Eucharist, in regard of the force whereof *Tertullian* breaketh out into these words, concerning Matrimonie therewith

b *Rom.* 4. 24. 1 *Cor.* 7. 4.

c *L. penul. D. de concub.*

d *L. item legato § penult. D. de legat.* 3.

e *L. donationes D. de donationib.*

Οὗτος ὁ νόμος τὸν μὲν γυναῖκα ἐκέλευεν τῷ ἀνδρὶ παρὰ πάντα τὸν βίον ὁμοτροφεῖν, καὶ τοῦ μὲν ἀνδρὸς ἐξεῖναι μηδεμίαν ἄλλην ἐπεισάγεσθαι γυναῖκα πρὸς ἐκείνης τῆς ζώσης τέκνων ποιήσεως χάριν, τὴν δὲ γυναῖκα μὴ ἀπολείπειν τὸν ἄνδρα μήτε νοσοῦντα μήτε ἀπορίᾳ χρήματος τὴν γαμετὴν πιέζοντα. Dion. Hal. Antiq. lib. 2.

Tertull. lib. 2. ad vxorem.

with ſealed; *Vnde ſufficiam ad enarrandam felicitatem eius Matrimonij quod Eccleſia conciliat & confirmat oblatio? I know not which way I ſhould bee able to ſhew the happineſſe of that Wedlock, the knot whereof the Church doth faſten, and the Sacrament of the Church confirme.* Touching Marriage therefore, let thus much be ſufficient.

Churching of Women. T.6.l.1.p.150.

74 The fruit of Marriage is birth, and the companion of birth trauaile, the griefe whereof being ſo extreme, and the danger alwayes ſo great, dare we open our mouthes againſt the things that are holy, and preſume to cenſure it, as a fault in the Church of Chriſt, that women after their deliuerance doe publikely ſhew their thankefull minds vnto God? But behold what reaſon there is againſt it: Forſooth, *if there ſhould be ſolemne and expreſſe giuing of thankes in the Church for euery benefit, either equall, or greater then this which any ſingular perſon in the Church doth receiue, wee ſhould not onely haue no preaching of the Word, nor miniſtring of the Sacraments, but we ſhould not haue ſo much leiſure as to doe any corporall or bodily worke, but ſhould bee like thoſe Maſſilian Heretikes which doe nothing elſe but pray.* Surely better a great deale to bee like vnto thoſe Heretikes which doe nothing elſe but pray, then thoſe which doe nothing elſe but quarrell. Their heads it might happily trouble ſomewhat more then as yet they are aware of, to find out ſo many benefits greater then this, or equiualent thereunto, for which if ſo be our Lawes did require ſolemne & expreſſe thankeſgiuing in the Church, the ſame were like to proone a thing ſo greatly cumberſome as is pretended. But if there bee ſuch ſtore of mercies euen ineſtimable powred euery day vpon thouſands (as indeed the earth is full of the bleſſings of the Lord which are day by day renewed without number and aboue meaſure) ſhall it not bee lawfull to cauſe ſolemne thankes to bee giuen vnto God for any benefit, then which greater or whereunto equall are receiued, no Law binding men in regard thereof to performe the like dutie? Suppoſe that ſome bond there bee that tyeth vs at certaine times to mention publikely the names of ſundry our Benefactours. Some of them it may bee are ſuch, that a day would ſcarcely ſerue to reckon vp together with them the Catalogue of ſo many men beſides, as we are either more or equally beholden vnto. Becauſe no Law requireth this impoſſible labour at our hands, ſhall wee therefore condemne that Law whereby the other being poſſible and alſo dutifull is inioyned vs? So much wee owe to the Lord of Heauen, that wee can neuer ſufficiently prayſe him nor giue him thankes for halfe thoſe benefits for which this Sacrifice were moſt due. Howbeit, God forbid wee ſhould ceaſe performing this dutie, when publike Order doth draw vs vnto it, when it may be ſo eaſily done, when it hath beene ſo long executed by deuout and vertuous people; God forbid, that being ſo many wayes prouoked in this caſe vnto ſo good a dutie, we ſhould omit it, onely becauſe there are other caſes of like nature, wherein we cannot ſo conueniently, or at leaſtwiſe doe not performe the ſame moſt vertuous Office of Pietie. Wherein wee truſt that as the action it ſelfe pleaſeth God, ſo the order and manner thereof is not ſuch as may iuſtly offend any. It is but an ouer-flowing of Gall, which cauſeth the Womans abſence from the Church, during the time of her lying in, to bee traduced and interpreted as though ſhe were ſo long iudged *vnholy*, and were thereby ſhut

out

out or ſequeſtred from the Houſe of God, according to the ancient Leuiticall Law. Whereas the very Canon Law it ſelfe doth not ſo hold, but directly [a] profeſſeth the contrarie, ſhee is not barred from thence in ſuch ſort as they interpret it, nor in reſpect of any vnholineſſe, forbidden entrance into the Church, although her abſtayning from publike Aſſemblies, and her abode in ſeparation for the time bee [b] moſt conuenient. To ſcoffe at the manner of attire, the which there could be nothing deuiſed for ſuch a time more graue and decent, to make it a token of ſome folly commited, for which they are loth to ſhew their faces, argueth that great Diuines are ſometime more mercifull then wiſe. As for the Women theſelues, God accepting the ſeruice which they faithfully offer vnto him, it is no great diſgrace though they ſuffer pleaſant witted men, a little to intermingle with zeale ſcorne. The name of *Oblations* applyed not onely heere to thoſe ſmall and petite payments which yet are a part of the Miniſters right, but alſo generally giuen vnto all ſuch allowances as ſerue for their needful maintenance, is both ancient and conuenient. For as the life of the Clergie is ſpent in the Seruice of God, ſo it is ſuſtayned with his reuenue. Nothing therefore more proper then to giue the name of Oblations to ſuch payments, in token that we offer vnto him whatſoeuer his Miniſters receiue.

[a] *Dift. 5. c. Hæc quæ. In lege præcipiebatur vt mulier ſi maſculum pareret, 40 ſi fœminam 80 diebus à templi ceſſaret ingreſſu. Nunc autem ſta in poſt partum Eccleſiam ingreſſu non prohibetur.* [b] *Leo conſt 17. Quod profectò non tam propter muliebrem immunditiem, quam ob aliam cauſam in intima legislatione reconditam, & veteri prohibitum eſſe lege & gratia tempus traditum loco ſuſpexiſſe puto. Exiſtimo ſiquidem ſacram legem id præſcripſiſſe, quo præteritum earum qui interpretantur vinceret concupiſcentiam caſtigaret, quemadmodum, & alia multa per alia præcepta ordinantur & præſcribuntur, quo indomitum quorundam in mulieres ſimultatis temperetur. Quia & hæc prouidentia quæ legem conſtituit voluntas eſt, vt partus à deprauatione liberi ſint. Quia enim quicquid naturæ ſuperuacaneum eſt, idem corruptionem eſt & inutile, quod hic ſanguis ſuper fluus ſit, quæ illi obnoxia eſſent in immunditie, ad id temporis vinctæ illa lex iubet, quo ipſo etiam naturæ ſono laſciui concupiſcentia ad temperantiam redigatur, ne ex inutili & corrupta materia ipſum animum contaminetur.*

75 But to leaue this, there is a dutie which the Church doth owe to the faithfull departed, wherein for as much as the Church of England is ſaid to doe thoſe things which are, though *not vnlawfull*, yet *inconuenient*, becauſe it appointeth a preſcript forme of Seruice at Burials, ſuffereth mourning Apparell to bee worne, and permitteth Funerall Sermons, a word or two concerning this point will bee neceſſarie, although it bee needleſſe to dwell long vpon it. The end of Funerall Duties is, firſt, to ſhew that loue towards the partie deceaſed which Nature requireth; then to doe him that honour which is fit both generally for man, and particularly for the qualitie of his perſon; laſt of all, to teſtifie the care, which the Church hath to comfort the liuing, and the hope which we all haue concerning the Reſurrection of the dead. For ſignification of loue towards them that are departed, mourning is not denyed to bee a thing conuenient. As in truth the Scripture euery-where doth approoue lamentation made vnto this end. The Iewes by our Sauiours teares therefore, gathered in this caſe that his loue towards *Lazarus* was great. And that as mourning at ſuch times is fit, ſo likewiſe that there may bee a kind of Attire ſuitable to a ſorrowfull affection, and conuenient for Mourners to weare, how plainly doth *Dauids* example ſhew, who being in heauineſſe went vp to the Mount with his head couered, & all the people that were with him in like ſort? White garments being fit to vſe at Mariage-feaſts, and ſuch other times of ioy, whereunto *Salomon* alluding, when hee requireth continuall cheerefulneſſe of mind,

Of the Rites of Buriall. *T.C.l.3 p.236.*

Iohn 11.36.

2. *Sam.* 15.30.

Eccleſ 9.8.

mind, ſpeaketh in this ſort, *Let thy garments be alwayes white*: what doth hinder the contrary from being now as conuenient in griefe, as this heretofore in gladneſſe hath bin? *If there be no ſorrow*, they ſay, *it is hypocriticall to pretend it, & if there be, to prouoke it* by wearing ſuch attire, is *dangerous*. Nay, if there be to ſhew it, is naturall, & if there be not, yet the ſignes are meet to ſhew what ſhold be, eſpecially, ſith it doth not come oftentimes to paſſe, that men are faine to haue their mourning Gowns puld off their backs, for feare of killing themſelues with ſorrow that way nouriſhed. The honour generally due vnto all men, maketh a decent interring of them to bee conuenient euen for very humanities ſake. And therefore ſo much as is mentioned in the Buriall of the Widdowes Sonne, the carrying of him forth vpon a Beere, and the accompanying of him to the earth, hath bin vſed euen amongſt Infidels, all men accounting it a very extreme deſtitution, not to haue at the leaſt this honour done them. Some mans eſtate may require a great deale more, according as the faſhion of the Country where he dyeth doth afford. And vnto this appertained the ancient vſe of the Iewes, to embalme the Corps with ſweete Odours, and to adorne the Sepulchres of certaine. In regard of the qualitie of men, it hath beene iudged fit to commend them vnto the World at their death, amongſt the Heathen in Funerall Orations, amongſt the Iewes in * ſacred Poemes; and why not in Funerall Sermons alſo amongſt Chriſtians? Vs it ſufficeth, that the knowne benefit hereof doth counteruaile Millions of ſuch inconueniences as are therein ſurmiſed, although they were not ſurmiſed onely but found therein. The life and the death of Saints is precious in Gods ſight. Let it not ſeeme odious in our eyes, if both the one and the other bee ſpoken of, then eſpecially, when the preſent occaſion doth make mens mindes the more capable of ſuch ſpeech. The care no doubt of liuing, both to liue and to dye well muſt needes bee ſomewhat increaſed, when they know that their departure ſhall not be folded vp in ſilence, but the eares of many be made acquainted with it. Moreouer when they heare how mercifully God hath dealt with their Brethren in their laſt need, beſides the prayſe which they giue to God, and the ioy which they haue or ſhould haue by reaſon of their fellowſhip and Communion with Saints, is not their hope alſo much confirmed againſt the day of their owne diſſolution? Againe, the ſound of theſe things doth not ſo paſſe the eares of them that are moſt looſe and diſſolute in life, but it cauſeth them one time or other to wiſh, O that I might dye the death of the Righteous, and that my end might bee like his! Thus much peculiar good there doth grow at thoſe times by ſpeech concerning the dead, beſides the benefit of publike inſtruction common vnto Funerall with other Sermons. For the comfort of them whoſe mindes are through naturall affection penſiue in ſuch caſes, no man can iuſtly miſlike the cuſtome which the Iewes had to end their Burials with Funerall Banquets, in reference whereunto the Prophet *Ieremie* ſpake, concerning the people whom God had appointed vnto a grieuous manner of deſtruction, ſaying, that men ſhould not *giue them the Cup of conſolation to drinke for their Father or for their Mother*, becauſe it ſhould not be now with them as in peaceable times with others, who bringing their Anceſtors vnto the Graue with weeping eyes,

Luke 7.12.

Pſal.79.3. Iohn 19.40. Mat.23.27.

* 1.Sam.1.19.

Ierem.16.7.

haue

haue notwithſtanding meanes wherewith to be recomforted. *Giue wine*, ſaith SALOMON, *vnto them that haue griefe of heart*. Surely, he that miniſtreth vnto them * comfortable ſpeech, doth much more then giue them wine. But the greateſt thing of all other about this dutie of Chriſtian buriall, is an outward teſtification of the hope which we haue touching the Reſurrection of the dead. For which purpoſe let any man of reaſonable iudgement examine, whether it be more conuenient for a companie of men, as it were in a dumbe ſhow, to bring a Corſe to the place of buriall, there to leaue it couered with earth, and ſo end, or elſe to haue the Exequies deuoutly performed with ſolemne recitall of ſuch Lectures, Pſalmes and Prayers, as are purpoſely framed for the ſtirring vp of mens minds vnto a carefull conſideration of their eſtate, both here and hereafter. Whereas therefore it is obiected, that neither the people of God vnder the Law, nor the Church in the Apoſtles times did vſe any forme of ſeruice, in buriall of their dead, and therefore that this order is taken vp without any good example or precedent followed therein; firſt, while the world doth ſtand, they ſhall neuer be able to prooue, that all things which either the one or the other did vſe at Burials, are ſet downe in holy Scripture, which doth not any-where of purpoſe deliuer the whole manner and forme thereof, but toucheth only ſometime one thing, and ſometime another which was in vſe, as ſpeciall occaſions require any of them to be either mentioned or inſinuated. Againe, if it might be prooued that no ſuch thing was vſuall amongſt them, hath Chriſt ſo depriued his Church of iudgement, that what Rites and Orders ſoeuer the later Ages thereof haue deuiſed, the ſame muſt needs be inconuenient? Furthermore, that the Iewes before our Sauiours comming had any ſuch forme of ſeruice, although in Scripture it be not affirmed, yet neither is it there denied (for the forbidding of Prieſts to be preſent at burials, letteth not but that others might diſcharge that dutie, ſeeing all were not Prieſts which had roomes of publique Function in their Synagogues) and if any man be of opinion, that they had no ſuch forme of ſeruice, thus much there is to make the contrarie more probable. The Iewes at this day haue, as appeareth in their forme of Funerall Prayers, & in certaine of their Funerall Sermons publiſhed, neither are they ſo affected towards Chriſtians, as to borrow that order from vs, beſides, that the forme thereof is ſuch as hath in it ſundrie things, which the very words of the Scripture it ſelfe doe ſeeme to allude vnto, as namely, after departure from the Sepulcher vnto the houſe whence the dead was brought, it ſheweth the manner of their buriall Feaſt, and a conſolatorie forme of prayers, appointed for the Maſter of the Synagogue thereat to vtter, albeit I may not deny, but it hath alſo ſome things which are not perhaps ſo ancient as the Law and the Prophets. But whatſoeuer the Iewes cuſtome was before the dayes of our Sauiour Chriſt, hath it once at any time beene heard of, that either Church or Chriſtian man of ſound beliefe did euer iudge this a thing vnmeet, vndecent, vnfit for Chriſtianitie, till theſe miſerable dayes, wherein vnder the colour of remouing ſuperſtitious abuſes, the moſt effectuall meanes, both to teſtifie and to ſtrengthen true Religion, are plucked at, and in ſome places euen pulled vp by the very roots? Take away this which was ordained to ſhew at burials, the peculiar hope of the Church

Prou. 31. 6.

* 1. Chron. 19. 2.

Iob 2. 11.

of

of God concerning the Dead, and in the manner of thoſe dumbe Funerals, what one thing is there whereby the World may perceiue wee are Chriſtian men?

Of the nature of that miniſterie, which ſerueth for performance of diuine duties in the Church of God, and how happineſſe not eternall only, but alſo temporal, doth depend vpon it.

76 I come now vnto that function which vnder-taketh the publike miniſterie of holy things, according to the Lawes of Chriſtian Religion. And becauſe the nature of things conſiſting, as this doth in action, is knowne by the obiect whereabout they are conuerſant, and by the end or ſcope whereunto they are referred, we muſt know that the obiect of this function is both God and men; God, in that he is publikely worſhipped of his Church, and Men, in that they are capable of happineſſe, by meanes which Chriſtian Diſcipline appointeth. So that the ſumme of our whole labour in this kind, is to honour God, and to ſaue men. For whether we ſeuerally take, and conſider men one by one, or elſe gather them into one ſocietie and bodie, as it hath beene before declared, that euery mans Religion is in him the Well-ſpring of all other ſound and ſincere vertues, from whence both here in ſome ſort, and hereafter more abundantly, their full ioy and felicitie ariſeth, becauſe while they liue, they are bleſſed of God, and when they die, their works follow them: ſo at this preſent we muſt againe call to mind, how the very worldly peace and proſperitie, the ſecular happineſſe, the temporall and naturall good eſtate both of all Men, and of all Dominions, hangeth chiefly vpon Religion, and doth euermore giue plaine teſtimonie, that as well in this as in other conſiderations the Prieſt is a pillar of that Common-wealth, wherein he faithfully ſerueth God. For if theſe Aſſertions be true, firſt, that nothing can be inioyed in this preſent world, againſt his will which hath made all things: ſecondly, that albeit God doth ſometime permit the impious to *haue*, yet impietie permitteth them not to *inioy*, no not temporall bleſſings on earth: thirdly, that God hath appointed thoſe bleſſings to attend as hand-maids vpon Religion: and fourthly, that without the worke of the miniſterie, Religion by no meanes can poſſibly continue, the vſe and benefit of that ſacred Function, euen towards all mens worldly happineſſe muſt needs be granted. Now the * firſt being a Theoreme both vnderſtood and confeſt of all, to labour in proofe thereof were ſuperfluous. The ſecond perhaps may be called in queſtion, excepe it be perfectly vnderſtood. By good things temporall therefore, we meane length of dayes, health of bodie, ſtore of friends and well-willers, quietneſſe, proſperous ſucceſſe of thoſe things we take in hand; riches with fit oportunities to vſe them during life, reputation following vs both aliue and dead, children or ſuch as in ſtead of children, we wiſh to leaue Succeſſors and partakers of our happineſſe. Theſe things are naturally euery mans deſire, becauſe they are good. And on whom God beſtoweth the ſame, them we confeſſe he graciouſly bleſſeth. Of earthly bleſſings the meaneſt is wealth, reputation the chiefeſt. For which cauſe we eſteeme the gaine of honour an ample recompence for the loſſe of all other worldly benefits. But for as much as in all this there is no certaine perpetuitie of goodneſſe, nature hath taught to affect theſe things, not for their owne ſake, but with reuerence and relation to ſomewhat independantly good, as is the exerciſe of vertue and ſpeculation of truth.

* *Si creatura Dei merito & diſpenſatio Dei ſumus: Quis enim magis diligit, quàm ille qui fecit? Quis autem ordinatum regit, quàm is qui & fecit & diligit? Quis vero ſapientius, & fortius ordinario & regere falſa poteſt, quã qui & faciendа prouidit, & prouiſa perfecit? Quapropter omnem poteſtatem à Deo eſſe omnemque ordinationem, & qui non legerunt ſentiunt, & qui legerunt cogi-tant.* Paul. Oroſ. Hiſt aduer. Pagan. lib. 2.

Οὐ γὰρ τὰ χρήματ' ἴσα κτεάνοισι βίου τὰ τῶν θεῶν ἐ ἐχθὸς ἐπιστήμη, Eurip. Phœniſ.

truth. None, whoſe deſires are rightly ordered, would wiſh to liue to breathe and mooue, without performance of thoſe actions which are beſeeming mans excellencie. Wherefore hauing not how to imploy it, wee waxe wearie euen of life it ſelfe. Health is precious, becauſe ſickneſſe doth breed that paine which diſableth action. Againe, why doe men delight ſo much in the multitude of friends, but for that the actions of life being many, doe need many helping hands to further them? Betweene troubleſome and quiet dayes we ſhould make no difference, if the one did not hinder and interrupt the other vphold our libertie of action. Furthermore, if thoſe things we doe, ſucceed, it reioyceth vs not ſo much for the benefit we thereby reape, as in that * it probably argueth our actions to haue beene orderly and well guided. As for riches, to him which hath and doth nothing with them, they are a contumely. Honour is commonly preſumed a ſigne of more then ordinarie vertue and merit, by meanes whereof when ambitious mindes thirſt after it, their indeuours are teſtimonies how much it is in the eye of nature to poſſeſſe that body, the very ſhaddow whereof is ſet at ſo high a rate. Finally, ſuch is the pleaſure and comfort which we take in doing, that when life forſaketh vs, ſtill our deſires to continue action, and to worke though not by our ſelues, yet by them whom wee leaue behind vs, cauſeth vs prouidently to reſigne into other mens hands, the helps wee haue gathered for that purpoſe; diuiſing alſo the beſt wee can to make them perpetuall. It appeareth therefore, how all the parts of temporall felicitie are onely good in relation to that which vſeth them as inſtruments, and that they are no ſuch good as wherein a right deſire doth euer ſtay or reſt it ſelfe. Now temporall bleſſings are inioyed of thoſe which haue them, know them, *eſteeme them according to that they are in their owne nature.* Wherefore of the wicked whom God doth hate, his vſuall and ordinarie ſpeeches are, That bloud-thirſtie and deceitfull men ſhall not liue out halfe their dayes; that God ſhall cauſe a peſtilence to cleaue vnto the wicked, and ſhall ſtrike them with conſuming griefe, with feauers, burning diſeaſes and ſores which are paſt cure; that when the impious are fallen, all men ſhall tread them downe, and none ſhew countenance of loue towards them, at much as by pittying them in their miſerie; that the ſinnes of the vngodly ſhall bereaue them of peace; that all counſels, complots, and practices againſt God ſhall come to nothing; that the lot and inheritance of the vniuſt is beggerie; that the name of vnrighteous perſons ſhall putrifie, and the poſteritie of Robbers ſtarue. If any thinke that Iniquitie and Peace, Sinne and Proſperitie can dwell together, they erre, becauſe they diſtinguiſh not aright betweene the matter, and that which giueth it the forme of happineſſe, betweene poſſeſſion and fruition, betweene the hauing and the inioying of good things. The impious cannot inioy that they haue, partly becauſe they receiue it not as at Gods hands, which onely conſideration maketh temporall bleſſings comfortable, and partly becauſe through errour, placing it aboue things of farre more price and worth, they turne that to poyſon which might be food, they make their proſperitie their owne ſnare, in the neſt of their higheſt growth they lay fooliſhly thoſe Egges, out of which their wofull ouer-throw is afterwards hatcht. Hereby it commeth to paſſe, that wiſe and iudicious men obſeruing the vaine behauiours

* Ἱκανὸν δικαίῳ τὸν ἰσχυρῶς τι κτᾶσθαι κακόν. Eurip. Herac.

Pſal. 55. 23.

Deut. 28. 22.

Pſal. 10.

behauiours of ſuch as are riſen to vnwonted greatneſſe, haue thereby beene able to prognoſticate their ruine. So that in very truth no impious or wicked man doth proſper on earth, but either ſooner or later the world may perceiue eaſily, how at ſuch time as others thought them moſt fortunate, they had but onely the good eſtate which fat Oxen haue aboue leane, when they appeared to grow, their climing was towards ruine. The groſſe and beſtiall conceit of them which want vnderſtanding is onely, that the fulleſt bellies are happieſt. Therefore the greateſt felicitie they wiſh to the Common-wealth wherein they liue, is, that it may but abound and ſtand; that they which are riotous may haue to powre out without ſtint; that the poore may ſleepe, and the rich feed them, that nothing vnpleaſant may be commanded, nothing forbidden men which themſelues haue a luſt to follow; that Kings may prouide for the eaſe of their ſubiects, and not bee too curious about the manners, that wantonneſſe, exceſſe, and lewdneſſe of life may be left free, and that no faulc may be capitall, beſides diſlike of things ettled in ſo good termes. But be it farre from the iuſt to dwell either in or neere to the Tents of theſe ſo miſerable felicities. Now whereas we thirdly affirme, that Religion and the feare of God, as well induceth ſecular proſperitie as euerlaſting bliſſe in the world to come; this alſo is true. For otherwiſe godlineſſe could not be ſaid to haue the promiſes of both liues, to be that ample reuenew, wherein there is alwayes ſufficiencie, and to carrie with it a generall diſcharge of want, euen ſo generall, that *Dauid* himſelfe ſhould proteſt, he neuer ſaw the Iuſt forſaken. Howbeit to this we muſt adde certaine ſpeciall limications, as firſt, that we doe not forget how crazed and diſeaſed minds (whereof our heauenly Phyſician muſt iudge) receiue often-times moſt benefit by being depriued of thoſe things which are to others beneficially giuen, as appeareth in that which the Wiſe-man hath noted concerning them, whoſe liues God mercifully doth abridge, leſt wickedneſſe ſhould alter their vnderſtanding; againe, that the meaſure of our outward proſperitie be taken by proportion with that, which euery mans eſtate in this preſent life requireth. Externall abilities are inſtruments of action. It contenteth wiſe Artificers to haue their inſtruments proportionable to their worke, rather fit for vſe then huge and goodly to pleaſe the eye. Seeing then the actions of a ſeruant doe not need that which may be neceſſarie for men of calling and place in the world, neither men of inferiour condition many things which greater perſonages can hardly want, ſurely they are bleſſed in worldly reſpects, that haue wherewith to performe [a] ſufficiently what their ſtation and place asketh, though they haue no more. For by reaſon of mans imbecillitie and proneneſſe to elation of mind, [a] too high a flow of proſperitie is dangerous, too low an ebbe againe as dangerous; for that the vertue of patience is rare, & the hand of neceſſitie ſtronger, then ordinarie vertue is able to withſtand. *Salomons* diſcreet & moderate deſire we al know: *Giue me, O Lord, neither riches nor penurie.* Men ouer-high exalted either in honor, or in power, or in nobilitie, or in wealth; they likewiſe that are as much on the contrarie hand ſunke either with beggerie, or through deiection, or by baſeneſſe doe not eaſily giue eare to reaſon, but the one exceeding apt vnto outrages, and the other vnto peſtie miſchiefes. For greatneſſe delighteth to ſhew it ſelfe by effects of power, and baſeneſſe

Prou. 16. 18. *Ante ruinam elatio.*

φαλῆ ὁ θεὸς πάντα τὰ ὑπερέχοντα καλύψῃ. ἡ γὰρ, ἐὰ φορτὸν ἄλλο μέγα ἢ ἑαυτὸν, Herodot. lib. 7.

[a] Ἐστὶ γὰρ ἀνῶν ἱκανὰ τοῖς γὰ σώφροσιν, Eurip. Phœniſ.

[a] τεκτονικὸν ὁ λογισμὸς ἔφυσε, ἀλλ' ὧν ἀφαλεστάτων, ἵνα σὺν ἀσφαλεῖ καὶ ὑγιᾶ βίῳ μετοι, Greg. Naz. Apolog. 3. They may ſeem: haply the moſt deiect, but they are the wiſeſt for their owne ſafetie, which feare climing no leſſe then falling.

[b] *Ariſt. Polit. lib. 2. cap. 11.*

baſeneſſe to helpe it ſelfe with ſhifts of malice. For which cauſe, a moderate, indifferent temper, betweene fulneſſe of bread, and emptineſſe hath beene evermore thought and found (all circumſtances duely conſidered) the ſafeſt and happieſt for all Eſtates, euen for King and Princes themſelues: Againe, we are not to looke, that theſe things ſhould alwayes concurre, no not in them which are accounted happie, neither that the courſe of mens liues or of publike affaires ſhould continually be drawne out as an euen thred (for that the nature of thing will not ſuffer) but a iuſt ſurucy being made, as thoſe particular men are worthily reputed good, whoſe vertues be great, and their faults tolerable, ſo him we may regiſter for a man fortunate, and that for a proſperous or happie State, which hauing flouriſhed, doth not afterwards feele any Tragicall alteration, ſuch as might cauſe them to be a ſpectacle of miſery to others. Beſides, whereas true felicitie conſiſteth in the higheſt operations of that nobler part of man, which ſheweth ſometime greateſt perfection, not in vſing the benefits which delight nature, but in ſuffering what nature can hardlieſt indure, there is no cauſe why either the loſſe of good, if it tend to the purchaſe of better, or why any miſery, the iſſue whereof, is their greater praiſe and honour that haue ſuſtained it, ſhould be thought to impeach that temporall happineſſe, wherewith Religion, we ſay, is accompanied, but yet in ſuch meaſure, as the ſeuerall degrees of men may require by a competent eſtimation, and valeſſe the contrary do more aduance, as it hath done thoſe moſt Heroicall Saints, whom afflictions haue made glorious. In a word, not to whom no calamitie falleth, but whom neither miſerie nor proſperitie is able to mooue from a right mind, them we may truly pronounce fortunate, and whatſoeuer doth outwardly happen without that precedent improbitie, for which it appeareth in the eyes of ſound and vnpartial Iudges to haue proceeded from Diuine reuenge, it paſſeth in the number of Humane caſualties wherennto we are all alike ſubiect. No miſerie is reckoned more then common or humane, if God ſo diſpoſe that we paſſe thorow it, and come ſafe to ſhore, euen as contrariwiſe, men doe not vſe to thinke thoſe flouriſhing dayes happie which doe end with teares. It ſtandeth therefore with theſe cautions firme and true, yea, ratified by all mens vnfained confeſſions drawne from the verie heart of experience, that whether we compare men of note in the world with others of like degree and ſtate, or elſe the ſame men with themſelues, whether we conferre one Dominion with another, or elſe the different times of one and the ſame Dominion, the manifeſt oddes betweene their very outward condition, as long as they ſtedfaſtly were obſerued to honour God, and their ſucceſſe being falne from him, are remonſtrances more then ſufficient, how al our welfare euen on earth dependeth wholly vpon our Religion. Heathens were ignorant of true Religion. Yet ſuch as that little was which they knew, it much impaired, or bettered alwayes their worldly affaires, as their loue and zeale towardes it, did waine or grow. Of the Iewes, did not euen their moſt malicious and mortall Aduerſaries all acknowledge, that to ſtriue againſt them, it was in vaine, as long as their amitie with God continued, that nothing could weaken them but Apoſtaſie? In the whole courſe of their owne proceedings, did they euer find it otherwiſe, but that during their faith & fidelity towards God, euery man of them was in war, as a thouſand ſtrong, and

as much as a grand Senate, for counsell in peaceable deliberations; contrariwise that if they swarued, as they often did, their wonted courage and magnanimitie forsooke them vtterly, their Souldiers and Military men troubled at the sights of the naked sword; when they entred into mutuall conference, and sate in counsell for their owne good, that which children might haue seene, their graueſt Senators could not discerne, their Prophets saw darkenesse in stead of Visions, the wise and prudent were as men bewitcht, euen that which they knew (being such as might stand them in stead) they had not the grace to vtter, or if any thing were well propoſed, it tooke no place, it entred not into the minds of the rest to approue and follow it, but as men confounded with strange and vnusuall amazements of spirit, they attempted tumultuously they saw not what, and by the issues of all attempts, they found no certaine conclusion but this, *God and heauen are strong against vs in all we doe.* The cause whereof was secret feare, which tooke heart and courage from them, and the cauſe of their feare, an inward guiltinesse that they all had offered God such apparant wrongs as were not pardonable. But is may be, the case is now altogether changed, and that in Christian Religion, there is not like force towardes temporall felicitie. Search the ancient Records of time, looke what hath happened by the space of these sixteene hundred yeares, for if all things to this effect be not luculent and cleere, yea, all things so manifeſt, that for euidence and proofe herein, we need not by vncertaine darke coniectures furniſh any to haue beene plagued of God for contempt, or blaſt in the course of faithfull obedience towardes true Religion, more then onely them, whom we find in that respect on the one side, guilty by their owne confeſſions, and happie on the other side by all meanes whereby conſcience, who beholding the proſperous estate of such as are good and vertuous, impute boldly the same to Gods most especiall fauour, but cannot in like manner pronounce, that whom he afflicteth aboue others, with them he hath cauſe to be more offended. For Verue is alwaies plaine to be seene, vertue it ſelfe craueth it to be obserued, and goodneſſe to be honoured with admiration. As for iniquitie and sinne, it lyeth many times hid, and because we be all offenders, it becommeth vs not to incline towards hard and seuere sentences touching others, vnleſſe their notorious wickednesse did sensibly before proclaime that which afterwards came to paſſe. Wherefore the summe of euery Christian mans dutie is, to labour by all meanes towards that, which other men seeing in vs may inſtruct, and what we our ſelues muſt accuſe, if we fall into it, that by all meanes we can to auoid, conſidering especially, that as hitherto vpon the Church there neuer yet fell tempeſtuous storme, the vapours whereof were not firſt noted to riſe from coldneſſe in affection, and ſlouthfulneſſe in deuotion of ſeruice towards God: ſo if that which the times of Antiquitie haue vttered concerning this point ſhould be here ſet downe, it were abundantly enough to ſoften and to mollifie an heart of Steele. On the contrary part, although we conſeſſe with Saint *Auguſtine* moſt willingly, that the chiefeſt happineſſe for which we haue ſome Chriſtian Kings in ſingular admiration aboue the reſt, is not becauſe of their long Reigne, their calme and quiet departure out of this preſent life, the ſettled eſtabliſhment of their owne ſeed and bloud ſucceeding them in Royal-

tie,

ſit and power, the glorious ouerthrow of forraine enemies, or the wiſe preuention of inward danger, and of ſecret attempts at home; all which ſolaces and comforts of this our vnquiet life, it pleaſeth God oftentimes to beſtow on them which haue no ſocietie or part in the ioyes of Heauen, giuing thereby to vnderſtand, that theſe in compariſon are toyes and trifles farre vnder the value and price of that which is to be looked for at his hands: but in truth the reaſon wherefore we moſt extoll their felicitie, is, if ſo be they haue vertuouſly reigned, if honour haue not filled their hearts with pride, if the exerciſe of their power haue beene ſeruice and attendance vpon the Maieſtie of the moſt High, if they haue feared him as their owne interiours and ſubiects haue feared them, if they haue loued neither pompe nor pleaſure more then heauen, if reuenge haue ſlowly proceeded from them, and mercie willingly offered it ſelfe, if ſo they haue tempered rigour with lenitie, that neither extreme ſeuerity might vtterly cut them off in whom there was manifeſt hope of amendment, nor yet the eaſineſſe of pardoning offences imbolden offenders, if knowing that whatſoeuer they doe their potencie may beare it out, they haue beene ſo much the more carefull not to doe any thing but that which is commendable in the beſt, rather then vſuall with greateſt perſonages, if the true knowledge of themſelues haue humbled them in Gods ſight, no leſſe then God in the eyes of men hath raiſed them vp; I ſay, albeit wee reckon ſuch to bee the happieſt of them that are mightieſt in the world, and albeit thoſe things alone are happineſſe, neuertheleſſe, conſidering what force there is euen in outward bleſſings, to comfort the mindes of the beſt diſpoſed, and to giue them the greater ioy when Religion and Peace, heauenly and earthly happineſſe are wreathed in one Crowne, as to the worthieſt of Chriſtian Princes it hath by the prouidence of the Almightie hitherto befallen, let it not ſeeme vnto any man a needleſſe and ſuperfluous waſte of labour, that there hath beene thus much ſpoken, to declare how in them eſpecially it hath beene ſo obſerued, and with all vniuerſally noted euen from the higheſt to the very meaneſt how this peculiar benefit, this ſingular grace and preeminence Religion hath, that either it gardeth as an heauenly ſhield from all calamities, or elſe conducteth vs ſafe thorow them, and permitteth them not to be miſeries; it either giueth honours, promotions and wealth, or elſe more benefit by wanting them then if wee had them at will; it either filleth our houſes with plentie of all good things, or maketh a Sallet of greene herbs, more ſweet then all the ſacrifices of the vngodly. Our fourth Propoſition before ſet downe was, that Religion without the helpe of ſpirituall miniſterie is vnable to plant it ſelfe, the fruits thereof not poſſible to grow of their owne accord. Which laſt Aſſertion is therein the firſt, that it needeth no further confirmation. If it did, I could eaſily declare, how all things which are of God, be hath by wonderfull arte and wiſedome ſodered, as it were, together with the glue of mutuall aſſiſtance, appointing the loweſt to receiue from the neereſt to themſelues, what the influence of the higheſt yeeldeth. And therefore the Church being the moſt abſolute of all his works, was in reaſon to be alſo ordered with like harmonie, that what hee worketh, might no leſſe in grace then in nature be effected by hands and inſtruments, duely ſubordinated vnto the power of his owne Spirit. A

thing both needfull for the humiliation of man, which would not willingly be debter to any, but to himselfe, and of no small effect to nourish that diuine loue, which now maketh each embrace other, not as Men, but as Angels of God. Ministeriall actions tending immediately vnto Gods honour, and mans happinesse, are either as contemplation, which helpeth forward the principall worke of the Ministerie, or else they are parts of that principall worke of administration it selfe, which worke consisteth in doing the seruice of Gods house, and in applying vnto men the soueraigne Medicines of grace alreadie spoken of the more largely, to the end it might thereby appeare, that we [a] owe to the guides of our soules euen as much as our soules are worth, although the debt of our temporall blessings should be stricken off.

Luke 12.42. 1.Cor.4.1. Tit.1.7. 1.Pet.4.10. Ephes.3.2.

[a] ἡ τῶν τοιούτων μισθοφορὰ ψυχαῖς, ἐπίσκ. ad Philc. Of power giuen vnto men to execute that heauenly Office; of the gift of the holy Ghost in ordination; and whether conueniently the power or Order may bee sought or sued for.

77 The ministerie of things diuine is a function, which as God did himselfe institute, so neither may men vndertake the same but by authoritie and power giuen them in lawfull manner. That God which is no way deficient or wanting vnto Man in necessaries, and hath therefore giuen vs the light of his heauenly Truth, because without that inestimable benefit, wee must needes haue wandred in darknesse, to our endlesse perdition and woe, hath in the like aboundance of mercies ordayned certaine to attend vpon the due execution of requisite parts and offices therein prescribed for the good of the whole world, which men, thereunto assigned, doe hold their authoritie from him, whether they be such as himselfe immediately, or as the Church in his Name inuesteth, it being neither possible for all, nor for euery man without distinction conuenient to take vpon him a charge of so great importance. They are therefore Ministers of God, not only by way of subordination as Princes and ciuill Magistrates, whose execution of iudgement and iustice the supreme hand of diuine prouidence doth vphold, but Ministers of God, as from whom their authoritie is deriued, and not from men. For in that they are Christs Embassadours and his Labourers, who should giue them their Commission, but hee whose most inward affaires they manage? Is not God alone the Father of Spirits? Are not Soules the purchase of Iesus Christ? What Angell in heauen could haue said to Man, as our Lord did vnto PETER, *Feede my sheepe? Preach? Baptize? Doe this in remembrance of me? Whose sinnes yee retaine, they are retayned, and their offences in Heauen pardoned, whose faults yee shall on earth forgiue?* What thinke we? Are these terrestriall sounds, or else are they voices vttered out of the clouds aboue? The power of the ministerie of God translateth out of darknesse into glorie; it rayseth men from the earth, and bringeth God himselfe downe from heauen, by blessing visible elements it maketh them inuisible grace, it giueth daily the holy Ghost, it hath to dispose of that flesh which was giuen for the life of the world, and that bloud which was powred out to redeeme soules, when it powreth malediction vpon the heads of the wicked they perish; when it renoketh the same they reuiue. O wretched blindnesse, if wee admire not so great power, more wretched if wee consider it aright, and notwithstanding, imagine that any but God can bestow it! To whom Christ hath imparted power both ouer that mysticall Body which is the societie of soules, and ouer that naturall which is himselfe for the knitting of both in one, (a worke which antiquitie doth call the making of Christs Body) the same power

power is in ſuch not amiſſe both termed a kind of marke or Character, and acknowledged to be indeleble. Miniſteriall power is a marke of ſeparation, becauſe it ſeuereth them that haue it from other men, and maketh them a ſpeciall *order* conſecrated vnto the ſeruice of the moſt High, in things wherewith others may not meddle. Their difference therefore from other men, is in that they are a diſtinct *order*. So *Tertullian* calleth them. And Saint *Paul* himſelfe dividing the body of the Church of Chriſt into two moieties, nameth the one part λαϊκους, which is as much as to ſay, the order of the Laitie, the oppoſite part whereunto we in like ſort terme the order of Gods Clergie, and the ſpirituall power which hee hath giuen them, the power of their *order*, ſo farre forth as the ſame conſiſteth in the bare execution of holy things, called properly the affaires of God. For of the power of their iuriſdiction ouer mens perſons wee are to ſpeake in the bookes following. They which haue once receiued this power, may not thinke to put it off, and on, like a cloke, as the weather ſeruеth, to take it, reiect and reſume it as oft as themſelues liſt, of which prophane and impious contempt theſe latter times haue yeelded, as of all other kinds of iniquitie and Apoſtaſie, ſtrange examples, but let them know which put their hands vnto this plough, that once conſecrated vnto God, they are made his peculiar inheritance for euer. Suſpenſions may ſtop, and degradations vtterly cut off the vſe or exerciſe of power before giuen: but voluntarily it is not in the power of man to ſeparate and pull aſunder what God by his authoritie coupleth. So that although there may be through miſdeſert degradation, as there may be cauſe of iuſt ſeparation after Matrimony; yet if (as ſometime it doth) reſtitution to former dignitie, or reconciliation after breach doth happen, neither doth the one, nor the other euer iterate the firſt knot. Much leſſe is it neceſſarie, which ſome haue vrged, concerning the reordination of ſuch, as others in times more corrupt, did conſecrate heretofore. Which errour already queld by Saint *Ierome*, doth not now require any other refutation. Examples I graunt there are which make for reſtraint of thoſe men from admittance againe into roomes of ſpirituall function, whoſe fall by hereſie, or want of conſtancie in profeſſing the Chriſtian faith, hath beene once a diſgrace to their calling. Nеuertheleſſe, as there is no law which bindeth, ſo there is no cauſe that ſhould alwayes leade to ſhew one and the ſame ſeueritie towards perſons culpable. Goodneſſe of nature it ſelfe more inclineth to clemencie then rigour. And wee in other mens offences doe behold the plaine image of our owne imbecillitie. Beſides alſo them that wander out of the way, [b] it cannot be vnexpedient to win with all hopes of fauour, leſt ſtrictneſſe vſed towards ſuch as reclaime themſelues, ſhould make others more obſtinate in error. Wherefore [c] after that the Church of Alexandria had ſomewhat recouered it ſelfe from the Tempeſts and ſtormes of Arrianiſme, being in conſultation about the reeſtabliſhment of that which by long diſturbance had beene greatly decayed and hindred, the ſeruenter ſort gaue quicke ſentence, that touching them which were of the Clergie, and had ſtained themſelues with hereſie, there ſhould bee none ſo receiued into the Church againe, as to continue in the order of the Clergie. The reſt which conſidered how many mens caſes it did concerne, thought it much more ſafe and conſo-

Tertull. de Adhor. caſtit.

Heb. 2. 17.

Matth. 19.

b *In 12. tabulis cautum eſt, vt idem iuris eſſet ſanantibus quod fortibus, id eſt, bonis & qui nunquam defecerunt à populo Romano Feſt. in ver. Sanates.*

c *Ruffin. Hiſt. Eccleſ. l. cap. 28.*

nant to bend ſomewhat downe towards them which were fallen, to ſhew ſeueritie vpon a few of the chiefeſt leaders, and to offer to the reſt a friendly reconciliation, without any other demaund ſauing onely the abiuration of their errour, as in the Goſpell that waſtfull young man which returned home to his Fathers houſe, was with ioy both admitted and honoured, his elder brother hardly thought of for repining therest, neither commended ſo much for his owne fidelitie & vertue, as blamed for not embracing him freely, whoſe vnexpected recouerie ought to haue blotted out all remembrance of miſdemeanors and faults paſt. But of this ſufficient. A thing much ſtumbled at in the manner of giuing Orders, is our vſing thoſe memorable words of our Lord and Sauiour Chriſt, *Receiue the holy Ghoſt*. The holy Ghoſt they ſay wee cannot giue, and therefore wee [a] *fooliſhly* bid men receiue it. Wiſe men for their authorities ſake muſt haue leaue to befoole them whome they are able to make wiſe by better inſtruction. Notwithſtanding, if it may pleaſe their wiſedome as well to heare what fooles can ſay, as to controll that which they doe, thus we haue heard ſome wiſe men teach, namely, that the [b] *holy Ghoſt* may be vſed to ſignifie not the perſon alone, but the gifts of the holy Ghoſt, and wee know that ſpirituall gifts are not onely abilities to doe things miraculous, as to ſpeake with tongues which were neuer taught vs, to cure diſeaſes without art, and ſuch like, but alſo that the very authoritie and power which is giuen men in the Church to bee Miniſters of holy things, this is contained within the number of thoſe gifts whereof the holy Ghoſt is authour, and therefore he which giueth this power, may ſay without abſurditie or folly, *Receiue the holy Ghoſt*, ſuch power as the Spirit of Chriſt hath indued his Church withall, ſuch power as neither Prince nor Potentate, King nor Ceſar on earth can giue. So that if men alone had deuiſed this forme of ſpeech, thereby to expreſſe the heauenly welſpring of that power which Eccleſiaſticall ordinations doe beſtow, it is not ſo fooliſh but that wiſe men might beare with it. If then our Lord and Sauiour himſelfe haue vſed the ſelfe-ſame forme of words, and that in the ſelfe-ſame kind of action, although there bee but the leaſt ſhew of probabilitie, yea, or any poſſibilitie, that his meaning might bee the ſame which ours is, it ſhould teach ſober and graue men not to be too venturous in condemning that of folly, which is not impoſſible to haue in it more profoundneſſe of wiſedome then fleſh and bloud ſhould preſume to controll. Our Sauior after his reſurrection from the dead gaue his Apoſtles their commiſſion, ſaying, *All power is giuen me in heauen and in earth: Goe therefore and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and the Son, and the holy Ghoſt, teaching them to obſerue all things whatſoeuer I haue commaunded you.* In ſum, *As my Father ſent me, ſo ſend I you.* Whereunto Saint *Iohn* doth adde farther, that *hauing thus ſpoken, hee breathed on them and ſaid, Receiue the holy Ghoſt.* By which words hee muſt of likelihood vnderſtand ſome gift of the Spirit which was preſently at that time beſtowed vpon them, as both the ſpeech of actuall deliuerie in ſaying *Receiue*, and the viſible ſigne thereof, his breathing, did ſhew. Abſurd it were to imagine our Sauiour did both to the eare and alſo to the verie eye expreſſe a reall donation, and they at that time receiue nothing. It reſteth then that wee ſearch what ſpeciall grace they did

[a] *Papiſticus quidem ritus, ſalui quidem ab illis & ſine vllo ſcripturæ fundamento inſtitutus & à diſciplinæ veteris auctoribus (post illorum diuortia) non magno primum iudicio acceptus, minore adhuc in Eccleſia noſtra retinetur.* Eccleſiaſt. diſci. 2.13.

[b] Eccleſiaſt. diſcip. fol.52.p.2.lin.1.

Matth.28.18.

Iohn 20.22.

at that time receiue. Touching miraculous power of the Spirit, moſt apparent it is, that as then they receiued it not, but the promiſe thereof was to bee ſhortly after performed. The words of Saint *Luke*, concerning that power, are therefore ſet downe with ſignification of the time to come, *Behold, I will ſend* the promiſe of my Father vpon you, but tarrie you in the Citie of Ieruſalem, vntill yee bee indued with power from on high. Wherefore, vndoubtedly, it was ſome other effect of the Spirit, the holy Ghoſt in ſome other kinde which our Sauiour did then beſtow. What other likelier then that which himſelfe doth mention, as it ſhould ſeeme of purpoſe to take away all ambiguous conſtructions, and to declare that the holy Ghoſt, which he then gaue, was an holy and a ghoſtly Authoritie, authoritie ouer the ſoules of men, authoritie, a part whereof conſiſteth in power to remit and retaine ſinnes? Receiue the holy Ghoſt, *Whoſe ſinnes ſoeuer yee remit, they are remitted, whoſe ſinnes yee retayne, they are retayned.* Whereas therefore the other Euangeliſts had ſet downe, that Chriſt did before his ſuffering, promiſe to giue his Apoſtles the Keyes of the Kingdome of heauen, and being riſen from the dead, promiſed moreouer at that time a miraculous power of the holy Ghoſt: Saint *Iohn* addeth, that hee alſo inueſted them euen then with the power of the holy Ghoſt for caſtigation and relaxation of ſin, wherin was fully accompliſhed that which the promiſe of the Keyes did import. Seeing therefore that the ſame power is now giuen, why ſhould the ſame forme of words expreſſing it be thought fooliſh? The cauſe why we breathe not as Chriſt did on them vnto whom he imparted power, is, for that neither Spirit nor ſpiritual authoritie may be thought to proceed from vs, which are but delegates or aſſignes to giue men poſſeſſion of his graces. Now beſides that the power and authoritie deliuered with thoſe words is it ſelfe χάρισμα, a gracious donation which the Spirit of God doth beſtow, we may moſt aſſuredly perſwade our ſelues, that the hand which impoſeth vpon vs the function of our miniſtery, doth vnder the ſame forme of words ſo tie it ſelfe thereunto, that hee which * receiueth the burthen, is thereby for euer warranted to haue the Spirit with him, and in him for his aſſiſtance, aide, countenance and ſupport in whatſoeuer he faithfully doth to diſcharge dutie. Knowing therefore that when we take Ordination, we alſo receiue the preſence of the holy Ghoſt, partly to guide, direct, and ſtrengthen vs in all our wayes, and partly to aſſume vnto it ſelfe for the more authoritie, thoſe actions that appertayne to our place and calling, can our eares admit ſuch a ſpeech vttered in the reuerend performance of that ſolemnitie, or can wee at any time renew the memorie, and enter into ſerious cogitation thereof but with much admiration and ioy? Remoue what theſe fooliſh words doe imply, and what hath the Miniſterie of God beſides wherein to glorie? Whereas now for as much as the holy Ghoſt, which our Sauiour in his firſt ordinations gaue, doth no leſſe concurre with ſpirituall vocations throughout all ages, then the Spirit which God deriueth from *Moſes* to them that aſſiſted him in his gouernment, did deſcend from them to their ſucceſſors in like authoritie and place, we haue for the leaſt and meaneſt duties performed by vertue of Miniſteriall power, that, to dignifie, grace and authorize them, which no other offices on earth can challenge. Whether we preach, pray, baptize, communicate, condemne, giue abſo-

Luke 24. 49.

Ioha 20. 23.

* Et ſi neceſſarium eſt trepidare de merito, religioſum eſt tamen gaudere de dono: quoniam qui mihi in vtilitate eſt autor, ipſe eſt & adminiſtrationis adiutor, & ne magnitudine gratiæ ſuccumbat infirmus, dabit vitæ ſuæ quibuſdam laudis dignitatem. Leo. ſerm. 1. in Anniuer. die A. τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον ἐδόθη ἡμῖν εἰς τὴν διακονίαν τέτλα. Greg. Nazian. Num. 11. 17.

abſolution, or whatſoeuer, as diſpoſers of Gods myſteries, our words, iudgements, acts and deeds, are not ours but the holy Ghoſts. Enough if vnfainedly and in heart we did beleeue it, enough to baniſh whatſoeuer may iuſtly bee thought corrupt, either in beſtowing, or in vſing, or in eſteeming the ſame otherwiſe then is meete. For prophanely to beſtow, or looſely to vſe, or vilely to eſteeme of the holy Ghoſt, we all in ſhew and profeſſion abhorre. Now becauſe the Miniſterie is an office of dignitie and honour; ſome are doubtfull whether any man may ſeeke for it without offence, or to ſpeake more properly, doubtfull they are not, but rather bold to accuſe our Diſcipline in this reſpect, as not only permitting, but requiring alſo ambitious ſutes & other oblique waies or meanes whereby to obtaine it. Againſt this they pleade, that our Sauiour did ſtay till his Father ſent him, and the Apoſtles till hee them; that the ancient Biſhops in the Church of Chriſt were examples and patterns of the ſame modeſtie. Whereupon in the end they inferre, *Let vs therefore at the length amend that cuſtome of repairing from all parts vnto the Biſhop at the day of ordination, & of ſeeking to obtaine orders, let the cuſtome of bringing commendatory letters be remooued; let men keepe themſelues home, expecting there the voice of God, and the authoritie of ſuch as may call them to vndertake charge.* Thus ſeuerely they cenſure and controll ambition, if it be ambition which they take vpon them to reprehend. For of that there is cauſe to doubt. Ambition, as we vnderſtand it, hath beene accounted a vice which ſeeketh after honors inordinately. Ambitious minds eſteeming it their greateſt happineſſe to bee admired, reuerenced and adored aboue others, vſe all meanes lawfull & vnlawfull which may bring them to high roomes. But as for the power of order conſidered by it ſelfe, and as in this caſe it muſt be conſidered, ſuch reputation it hath in the eye of this preſent world, that they which affect it, rather needs encouragement to beare contempt, then deſerue blame as men that carrie aſpiring mindes. The worke whereunto this power ſerueth is commended, and the deſire thereof allowed by the Apoſtle for good. Neuertheleſſe becauſe the burthen thereof is heauie and the charge great, it commeth many times to paſſe, that the minds euen of vertuous men are drawne into cleane contrarie affections, ſome in humilitie declining that by reaſon of hardneſſe, which others in regard of goodneſſe onely doe with feruent alacritie couet. So that there is not the leaſt degree in this ſeruice, but it may bee both * in reuerence ſhunned and of very deuotion longed for. If then the deſire thereof may bee holy, religious, and good, may not the profeſſion of that deſire bee ſo likewiſe? Wee are not to thinke it ſo long good as it is diſſembled, and euill if once wee begin to open it. And allowing that it may bee opened without ambition, what offence, I beſeech you, is there in opening it, there where it may be furthered and ſatisfied, in caſe they to whome it appertaineth thinke meete? In vaine are thoſe deſires allowed, the accompliſhment whereof it is not lawfull for them to ſeeke. Power therefore of Eccleſiaſticall order may bee deſired, the deſire thereof may bee profeſſed, they which profeſſe themſelues that way inclined, may endeuour,

Author lib. 1 de diſcipl. Eccleſiaſt.

1. Tim. 3. 1.

* τῶν γεγαλειοτέρων τοῖς ἐνδοξοτέροις ἀπεχθεστέρων ἐμπλεκομένων τοῖς ἐπιφθονωτέροις ἢ ὑποφεύγειν ἢ χάριν ὀφείλειν τοῖς ἐξ αὐτῆς προβλήμασι τῆς ὕλης τὸν ἐπιλαμβανόμενον τὸ χάρισμα ἢ ἐνδύεσθαι μᾶλλον ἢ ἐκδύεσθαι τὸν ἐκ τῆς ὕλης, διὰ τῶν ἐμπεσόντων τὸν ὑποδούμενον, ἢ μετὰ χαρᾶς τὸ βάρος ὑπολαμβάνειν, ἢ λίαν ἀπαιτεῖν ἐπιεικῶς ἐπιτίθεσθαι, Greg. Nazian. Apologet.

to bring their deſires to effect, and in all this no neceſſitie of euill. Is it the bringing of teſtimoniall letters wherein ſo great obliquitie conſiſteth? What more ſimple, more plaine, more harmeleſſe, more agreeable with the law of common humanitie, then that men where they are not knowne, vſe for their eaſier acceſſe the credit of ſuch as can beſt giue teſtimonie of them? Letters of any other conſtruction our Church Diſcipline alloweth not, and theſe to allow, is neither to require, ambitious ſuings, nor to approoue any indirect or vnlawfull act. The Prophet *Eſay* receiuing his meſſage at the hands of God, and his charge by heauenly viſion, heard the voice of the Lord, ſaying, *Whome ſhall I ſend? Who ſhall goe for vs?* Whereunto he recordeth his own anſwere, *Then I ſaid, Here, Lord I am, ſend me.* Which in effect is the rule and Canon whereby touching this point the very order of the Church is framed. The appointment of times for ſolemne ordination, is but the publique demaund of the Church in the name of the Lord himſelfe, *Whome ſhall I ſend, who ſhall goe for vs?* The confluence of men, whoſe inclinations are bent that way, is but the anſwere thereunto, whereby the labours of ſundrie being offred, the Church hath freedome to take whome her agents in ſuch caſe thinke meete and requiſite. *Eſay 6.8.*

As for the example of our Sauiour Chriſt, who tooke not to himſelfe this honour to bee made our high Prieſt, but receiued the ſame from him which ſaid; *Thou art a Prieſt for euer after the order of Melchiſedec*, his waiting, and not attempting to execute the office till God ſaw conuenient time, may ſerue in reproofe of vſurped humours, for as much as wee ought not of our owne accord to aſſume dignities, whereunto wee are not called as Chriſt was. But yet it ſhould bee withall conſidered, that a proud vſurpation without any orderly calling is one thing, and another the bare declaration of willingneſſe to obtaine admittance, which willingneſſe of minde, I ſuppoſe, did not want in him whoſe anſwere was to the voyce of his heauenly calling, *Behold, I am come to doe thy will.* And had it beene for him, as it is for vs, expedient to receiue his commiſſion ſigned with the hands of men, to ſeeke it, might better haue beſeemed his humilitie, then it doth our boldneſſe, to reprehend them of Pride and Ambition, that make no worſe kind of ſuites then by letters of information. Himſelfe in calling his Apoſtles preuented all cogitations of theirs that way, to the end it might truely be ſaid of them, *Ye choſe not me, but I of mine owne voluntary motion made choice of you.* Which kind of vndeſired nomination to Eccleſiaſticall places, befell diuers of the moſt famous amongſt the ancient Fathers of the Church in a cleane contrarie conſideration. For our Sauiours election reſpected not any merit or worth, but tooke them which were fartheſt off from likelihood of fitneſſe, that afterwards their ſupernaturall abilitie and performance, beyond hope, might cauſe the greater admiration, whereas in the other, meere admiration of their ſingular and rare vertues was the reaſon why honours were inforced vpon them, which they of meekeneſſe and modeſtie did what they could to auoid. But did they euer iudge it a thing vnlawfull to wiſh or deſire the Office, the onely charge and bare function of the Miniſterie? Towards which labour, what doth the bleſſed Apoſtle elſe but encourage, ſaying, *He which deſireth it, is deſirous of a good worke?* What doth *Heb. 5.5.* *Heb. 10.9.*

doth he elſe by ſuch ſentences but ſtirre, kindle and inflame ambition, if I may terme that deſire ambition, which coueteth more to teſtifie loue by painefulneſſe in Gods ſeruice, then to reape any other benefit? Although of the very honour it ſelfe, and of other emoluments annexed to ſuch labours, for more encouragement of mans induſtrie, we are not ſo to conceiue neither, as if no affection could be caſt towards them without offence. Only as the Wiſeman giueth counſell: *Seeke not to be made a Iudge, leſt thou be not able to take way iniquitie, and leſt thou fearing the perſon of the mighty, ſhouldeſt commit an offence againſt thine vprightneſſe*, ſo it alwaies behoueth men to take good heede, leſt affection to that, which hath in it as well difficultie as goodneſſe, ſophiſticate the true and ſincere iudgement which before-hand they ought to haue of their owne abilitie, for want whereof, many forward minds haue found in ſtead of contentment repentance. But for as much as hardneſſe of things in themſelues moſt excellent cooleth the feruencie of mens deſires, valeſſe there be ſomewhat naturally acceptable to incite labour (for both the method of ſpeculatiue knowledge doth by things which we ſenſibly perceiue conduct to that which is in nature more certaine though leſſe ſenſible, and the method of vertuous actions is alſo to traine beginners at the firſt by things acceptable vnto the taſte of naturall appetite, till our minds at the length be ſettled to imbrace things precious in the eye of reaſon, meerely and wholly for their owne ſakes) howſoeuer inordinate deſires doe heereby take occaſion to abuſe the politie of God and nature, either affecting without worth, or procuring by vnſeemely meanes that which was inſtituted, and ſhould be reſerued for better minds to obtaine by more approued courſes, in which conſideration the Emperours *Anthemius* and *Leo* did worthily oppoſe againſt ſuch ambitious practices that ancient famous Conſtitution, wherein they haue theſe ſentences, *Let not a prelate be ordained for reward or vpon requeſt, who ſhould be ſo far ſequeſtred from all ambition, that they which aduance him might be faine to ſeeke where he hideth himſelfe, to intreat him drawing back, and to follow him till importunity haue made him yeeld, let nothing promote him but his excuſes to auoyd the burthen, they are vnworthy of that vocation which are not thereunto brought vnwillingly*; notwithſtanding, we ought not therefore with the odious name of ambition, to traduce and draw into hatred euery poore requeſt or ſute wherein men may ſeeme to affect honour; ſeeing that ambition and modeſtie doe not alwaies ſo much differ in the marke they ſhoote at, as in the manner of their proſecutions. Yea euen in this may bee error alſo, if wee ſtill imagine them leaſt ambitious, which moſt forbeare to ſtirre either hand or foote towards their owne preferments. For there are that make an Idoll of their great ſufficiencie, and becauſe they ſurmiſe the place ſhould bee happie that might enioy them, they walke euery where like graue Pageants, obſeruing whether men doe not wonder why ſo ſmall account is made of ſo rare worthineſſe, and in caſe any other mans aduancement bee mentioned, they either ſmile or bluſh at the matchleſſe folly of the world, which ſeeth not where dignities ſhould offer themſelues. Seeing therefore that ſuites after ſpirituall functions may bee as ambitiouſly forborne as proſecuted, it remaineth that the euenneſt line of moderation betweene both is neither to follow them, *without* con-

Eccluſ. 7. 6.

a Μίσει ἰμὶ τὴν τῶν τὰ ἀγαν τολμηρὰν ἢ τῶν λίαν δειλῶν, τῶν μὲν πολλοὺς ἐνορῶ δυσέρωτας θρασείας φιλοτιμίας, δειλίᾳ τοῦ ἀγῶνος τὸ ἄριστον ἐπιζημιοῦντας· τῶν δὲ ἑτέρων πάλιν ἀκροβολιστῆρας. *Greg. Nazian. Apologet.*

conſcience, nor of *pride*; to withdraw our ſelues vtterly from them.

78. It pleaſeth Almightie God to chooſe to himſelfe, for diſcharge of the * legall Miniſterie, one only Tribe out of twelue others, the Tribe of *Leui*, not all vnto euery diuine ſeruice, but *Aaron* and his ſonnes to one charge, the reſt of that ſanctified Tribe to another. With what ſolemnities they were admitted into their functions, in what manner *Aaron* and his ſucceſſors the high Prieſts aſcended euery Sabbath and feſtiuall day, offred, and miniſtred in the Temple; with what ſinne-offering once euery yeere they reconciled firſt themſelues and their owne houſe, afterwards the people vnto God; how they confeſſed all the iniquities of the children of *Iſrael*, laid all their treſpaſſes vpon the head of a ſacred Goate, and ſo carried them out of the Citie; how they purged the holy place from all vncleaneneſſe, with what reuerence they entred within the Vaile, preſented themſelues before the Mercie-Seat, and conſulted with the Oracle of God: What ſeruice the other Prieſts did continually in the holy place, how they miniſtred about the Lamps Morning and Euening; how euery Sabboth they placed on the Table of the Lord thoſe twelue loaues with pure incenſe, in perpetuall remembrance of that mercie which the Fathers, the twelue Tribes, had found by the prouidence of God for their foode, when hunger cauſed them to leaue their naturall ſoyle, and to ſeeke for ſuſtenance in Egypt; how they imployed themſelues in ſacrifice day by day; finally, what offices the Leuites diſcharged, and what duties the reſt did execute, it were a labour too long to enter into it, if I ſhould collect that which Scriptures and other ancient records doe mention. Beſides theſe, there were indifferently out of all Tribes from time to time ſome cald of God as Prophets, fore-ſhewing them things to come, and giuing them counſell in ſuch particulars as they could not be directed in by the Law; ſome choſen of men to reade, ſtudie, and interpret the Law of God, as the Sonnes or Schollers of the old Prophets, in whoſe roome afterwards Scribes and Expounders of the Law ſucceeded. And becauſe where ſo great varietie is, if there ſhould be equalitie, confuſion would follow, the Leuits were in all their ſeruice at the appointment and direction of the ſonnes of *Aaron*, or Prieſts, they ſubiect to the principall guides and leaders of their owne Order, and they all in obedience vnder the high Prieſt. Which difference doth alſo manifeſt it ſelfe in the verie titles, that men for honours ſake gaue vnto them, terming *Aaron* and his ſucceſſors, High or great; the ancients ouer the companies of Prieſts, Archprieſts; Prophets, Fathers; Scribes and interpreters of the Law, Maſters. Touching the Miniſterie of the Goſpell of Ieſus Chriſt, the whole Bodie of the Church being diuided into Laitie and Cleargie, the Cleargie are either Presbyters or Deacons. I rather terme the one ſort Presbyters then [a] Prieſts, becauſe in a matter of ſo ſmall moment I would not willingly offend their eares, to whom the name of Prieſthood is odious, though without cauſe. For as things are diſtinguiſhed one from another by thoſe true eſſentiall formes, which being really and actually

Of Degrees, whereby the power of Order is diſtinguiſhed, and concerning the Attyre of Miniſters.

* Πρὸς διατάγματα καὶ φυλακὰς ἱερέως καὶ ἱερωσύνης καὶ λειτουργίαν ἐκ τῶν πρὸς τὸν θεὸν τιμὴν ἀναφέρ τοντας. Philo. p. 297.

[a] *T. C. l. 1. p. 198.* For ſo much as the cõmon and vſuall ſpeech of England is to note by the word *Prieſt*, not a Miniſter of the Goſpell, but a *Sacrificer*, which the Miniſter of the Goſpell is not, therefore wee ought not to call the Miniſters of the Goſpell *Prieſts*. And that this is the Engliſh ſpeech, it appeareth by all the Engliſh Tranſlations, which tranſlate alwayes *hiereis*, which were ſacrificers, *Prieſts*, and doe not of the other ſide, for any that euer I read, tranſlate πρεσβύτερον a *Prieſt*. Seeing therefore a Prieſt with vs, and in our Tongue, doth ſignifie both by the Papiſts iudgement, in reſpect of their abominable Maſſe, and alſo by the iudgement of the Proteſtants, in reſpect of the Beaſts which were offered in the Law, *a ſacrificing Office*, which the Miniſter of the Goſpell neyther doth nor can execute, it is manifeſt that it cannot be without great offence ſo vſed.

ally in them, doe not onely giue them the very laſt and higheſt degree of their naturall perfection, but are alſo the knot, foundation and roote whereupon all other inferiour perfections depend: ſo if they that firſt doe impoſe names, did alwayes vnderſtand exactly the nature of that which they nominate, it may be that then by hearing the termes of vulgar ſpeech, wee ſhould ſtill be taught what the things themſelues moſt properly are. But becauſe words haue ſo many artificers by whom they are made, and the things whereunto we apply them are fraught with ſo many varieties, it is not alwayes apparent, what the firſt inuentors reſpected, much leſſe what euery mans inward conceit is which vſeth their words. For any thing my ſelfe can diſcerne herein, I ſuppoſe, that they which haue bent their ſtudie to ſearch more diligently ſuch matters, doe for the moſt part finde that names aduiſedly giuen, had either regard vnto that which is naturally moſt proper; or if perhaps, to ſome other ſpecialtie, to that which is ſenſibly moſt eminent in the thing ſignified; and concerning popular vſe of words, that which the wiſedome of their inuentors did intend thereby, is not commonly thought of, but by the name the thing altogether conceiued in groſſe, as may appeare in that if you aske of the common ſort what any certaine word, for example, what a Prieſt doth ſignifie, their manner is not to anſwere a Prieſt is a Clergie-man which offereth the ſacrifice to God, but they ſhew ſome particular perſon, whome they vſe to call by that name. And if wee liſt to deſcend to Grammar, wee are told by Maſters in thoſe Schooles, that the word *Prieſt* hath his right place ἐπὶ τῶν ἱερῶν προσώπων τῶν διακονίας τῆς θεοῦ, in him whoſe meere function or charge is the ſeruice of God. Howbeit becauſe the moſt eminent part both of *Heathenish* and *Iewiſh* ſeruice did conſiſt in ſacrifice, when learned men declare what the word Prieſt doth properly ſignify, *according to the mind of the firſt impoſer* of that name, their ordinary Schooles doe well expound it to imply ſacrifice. Seeing then that ſacrifice is now no part of the Church-Miniſterie, how ſhould the name of Prieſthood bee thereunto rightly applyed? Surely euen as Saint *Paul* applyeth the name of *fleſh* vnto that very ſubſtance of fiſhes which hath a proportionable correſpondence to fleſh, although it be in nature another thing. Whereupon when Philoſophers will ſpeake warily, they make a difference betweene fleſh in one ſort of liuing creatures, and that other ſubſtance in the reſt which hath but a kind of analogie to fleſh: the Apoſtle contrariwiſe hauing matter of greater importance whereof to ſpeake, nameth indifferently both fleſh. The Fathers of the Church of Chriſt with like ſecuritie of ſpeech call vſually the Miniſterie of the Goſpell *Prieſthood*, in regard of that which the Goſpell hath *proportionable* to auncient ſacrifices, namely the *Communion* of the bleſſed body and blond of Chriſt, although it haue properly now no ſacrifice. As for the people, when they heare the name, it draweth no more *their mindes* to any cogitation of ſacrifice, then the name of a Senator or of an Alderman, cauſeth them to thinke vpon old age, or to imagine that euery one ſo termed muſt needs be ancient, becauſe yeeres were reſpected in the firſt nomination of both. Wherefore to paſſe by the name, let them vſe what dialect they will, whether we call it a Prieſthood, a Presbyterſhip, or a Miniſterie, it skilleth not: Although in truth the word *Presbyter* doth ſeeme more

Etymol. mag.

a Heſy. *Chriſtus homo dicitur, quia natus eſt Prophetà, quia futura reuelauit, ſacerdos, quia pro nobis hoſtiam ſe obtulit.* Iſid. Orig. lib. 7. cap. 2.

b 1. Cor. 15. 39.

c Ἔχει δέ τινα διαφορὰν τὸ αὐτόπτερον τὸ ἓν ἀνὰ ἄνεμον, αὐτόπτερον ἢ σάρξ· καὶ ἐν τοῖς ἄλλοις τὸ ἀνάλογον ἢ οὐσία. Arist. de Anim. lib. c. 11.

fit

ſie, and in propriete of ſpeech more agreeable then *Prieſt* with the drift of the whole Goſpell of Ieſus Chriſt. For what are they that imbrace the Goſpell but ſonnes of God? What are Churches but his families? Seeing therefore wee receiue the adoption and ſtate of Sonnes by their miniſterie whom God hath choſen out for that purpoſe, ſeeing alſo that when we are the ſonnes of God, our continuance is ſtill vnder their care which were our Progenitors, what better title could there bee giuen them then the reuerend name of *Preſbyters*, or fatherly guides? The holy Ghoſt throughout the body of the new Teſtament, making ſo much mention of them, doth not any where call them Prieſts. The Prophet *Eſay*, I grant, doth, but in ſuch ſort as the ancient Fathers by way of analogie: *A Preſbyter*, according to the proper meaning of the new Teſtament, *is he, vnto whom our Sauiour Chriſt hath cõmunicated the power of ſpirituall procreation.* Out of twelue Patriarkes iſſued the whole multitude of *Iſrael* according to the fleſh. And according to the myſterie of heauenly birth, our Lords Apoſtles wee all acknowledge to bee the Patriarkes of his whole Church. Saint *Iohn* therefore beheld ſitting about the Throne of God in heauen [a] foure and twentie Presbyters, the one halfe Fathers of the old, [b] the other of the new Ieruſalem. In which reſpect the Apoſtles likewiſe gaue themſelues the ſame title, albeit that name were not proper, but common vnto them with others. For of Presbyters, ſome were greater, ſome leſſe in power, and that by our Sauiours owne appointment; the greater they which receiued fulneſſe of ſpirituall power, the leſſe they to whom leſſe was graunted. The Apoſtles peculiar charge was to publiſh the Goſpell of Chriſt vnto all Nations, and to deliuer them his Ordinances receiued by [c] *immediate reuelation from himſelfe*. Which preeminence excepted, to all other offices and duties incident into their order, it was in them to ordayne and conſecrate whom ſoeuer they thought meete, euen as our Sauiour did himſelfe aſſigne ſeuentie other of his owne Diſciples inferior Presbyters, whoſe commiſſion to preach and baptize, was the ſame which the Apoſtles had. Whereas therefore wee finde, that the very firſt Sermon which the Apoſtles did publikely make, was the conuerſion of aboue three thouſand ſoules, vnto whom there were euery day more and more added, they hauing no open place permitted them for the exerciſe of Chriſtian Religion, thinke wee that twelue were ſufficient to teach and adminiſter Sacraments in ſo many priuate places, as ſo great a multitude of people did require? This harueſt, our Sauiour (no doubt) foreſeeing, prouided accordingly Labourers for it beforehand. By which meanes it came to paſſe, that the growth of that Church being ſo great and ſo ſuddaine, they had notwithſtanding in a readineſſe Presbyters enow to furniſh it. And therefore the hiſtorie doth make no mention by what occaſion Presbyters were inſtituted in Ieruſalem, onely wee reade of things which they did, and how the like were made afterwards elſewhere. To theſe two degrees appointed of our Lord and Sauiour, Chriſt his Apoſtles ſoone after annexed Deacons. Deacons therefore muſt know, ſaith *Cyprian*, that our Lord himſelfe did elect Apoſtles, but Deacons after his Aſcenſion into heauen the Apoſtles ordayned. Deacons were Stewards of the Church, vnto whom at the firſt was committed the diſtribution of Church goods, the care of prouiding therewith for the

Eſay 66. 21.

a *Reuel. 4. 4.*
b *Reuel 21. 14. Matth. 19. 28. 1. Pet. 5. 1.*

c οἱ τῶν ἱερῶν διστραδόντων ῥωμαθήτας. *Dionyſ. Areop. p. 110 Act. 2. 41. Act.*

Cypr. Ep. 9. l. 3. ad Rogatianum.

the poore, and the charge to see that all things of expence might bee religiously and faithfully dealt in. A part also of their Office, was attendance vpon their Presbyters at the time of Diuine Seruice; For which cause *Ignatius*, to set forth the dignitie of their calling, saith, that they are in such sort to the Bishop, as if Angelicall powers did serue him. These onely being the vses for which Deacons were first made, if the Church haue sithence extended their Ministerie farther then the circuit of their labour at the first was drawne, wee are not herein to thinke the ordinance of Scripture violated, except there appeare some prohibition, which hath abridged the Church of that libertie. Which I note chiefly in regard of them, to whom it seemeth a thing so monstrous, that Deacons should sometime bee licensed to preach, whose institution was at the first to another end. To charge them for this as men not contented with their owne vocations, and as breakers into that which appertayneth vnto others, is very hard. For when they are therevnto once admitted, it is a part of their owne vocation, it appertayneth now vnto them as well as others, neither is it intrusion for them to doe it being in such sort called, but rather in vs it were temeritie to blame them for doing it. Suppose wee the office of teaching to bee so repugnant vnto the office of Deaconship, that they cannot concurre in one and the same person? What was there done in the Church by Deacons, which the Apostles did not first discharge being Teachers? Yes, but the Apostles found the burthen of Teaching so heauie, that they iudged it meete to cut off that other charge, and to haue Deacons which might vndertake it. Be it so. The multitude of Christians increasing in Ierusalem, and waxing great, it was too much for the Apostles to teach, and to minister vnto Tables also. The former was not to bee slacked, that this latter might bee followed. Therefore vnto this they appointed others. Whereupon we may rightly ground this axiome, that when the subiect wherein one mans labours of sundrie kinds are imployed, doth waxe so great, that the same men are no longer able to manage it sufficiently as before, the most naturall way to helpe this, is, by deuiding their charge into slipes and ordayning of vnder-officers, as our Sauiour vnder twelue Apostles, seuentie Presbyters, and the Apostles by his example seuen Deacons to bee vnder both. Neither ought it to seeme lesse reasonable, that when the same men are sufficient both to continue in that which they doe, and also to vndertake somewhat more, a combination bee admitted in this case, as well as diuision in the former. Wee may not therefore disallow it in the Church of Geneua, that *Caluin* and *Beza* were made both Pastors and Readers of Diuinitie, being men so able to discharge both. To say they did not content themselues with their Pastorall vocations, but brake into that which belongeth to others; to alleage against them, *Hee that exhorteth in exhortation*, as against vs, *Hee that distributeth in simplicitie*, is alleaged in great dislike of granting licence for Deacons to preach, were very hard. The ancient custome of the Church, was to yeeld the poore much reliefe, especially widdowes. But as poore people are alwayes querulous and apt to thinke themselues lesse respected then they should bee, wee see that when the Apostles did what they could without hinderance to their waightier businesse,

Ignat. Epist. ad Tral.

Rom. 12. 8.

yet

yet there were which grudged that other had too much, and they too little, the Grecian Widowes ſhorter Commons then the Hebrewes. By meanes whereof the Apoſtles ſaw it meete to ordaine Deacons. Now tract of time hauing cleane worne out thoſe firſt occaſions, for which the Deaconſhip was then moſt neceſſary, it might the better be afterwards extended to other Seruices, and ſo remaine as at this preſent day, a degree in the Clergie of God which the Apoſtles of Chriſt did inſtitute. That the firſt ſeuen Deacons were choſen out of the ſeuentie Diſciples, is an errour in *Epiphanius*. For to draw men from places of waightier, vnto roomes of meaner labour, had not beene fit. The Apoſtles, to the end they might follow teaching with more freedome, committed the Miniſterie of Tables vnto Deacons. And ſhall we thinke they iudged it expedient to chooſe ſo many out of thoſe ſeuentie to bee Miniſters vnto Tables, when Chriſt himſelfe had before made them Teachers? It appeareth therefore, how long theſe three degree of Eccleſiaſticall Order haue continued in the Church of Chriſt, the higheſt and largeſt, that which the Apoſtles, the next that which Preſbyters, and the loweſt that which Deacons had. Touching Prophets, they were ſuch men as hauing otherwiſe learned, the Goſpel had from aboue beſtowed vpon them a ſpeciall gift of expounding Scriptures, and of foreſhewing things to come. Of this ſort *Agabus* was, and beſides him in Ieruſalem ſundry others, who notwithſtanding are not therefore to be reckoned with the Clergie, becauſe no mans gifts or qualities can make him a Miniſter of Holy things, vnleſſe Ordination doe giue him power. And we no where find Prophets to haue beene made by Ordination, but all whom the Church did ordaine, were either to ſerue as Preſbyters or as Deacons. Euangeliſts were Preſbyters of principall ſufficiencie, whom the Apoſtles ſent abroad, and vſed as Agents in Eccleſiaſticall affaires whereſoeuer they ſaw need. They whom we find to haue beene named in Scripture, Euangeliſts, [m] *Ananias*, [n] *Apollos*, [o] *Timothy*, and others were thus imployed. And concerning Euangeliſts, afterwards in *Traians* dayes, the Hiſtory Eccleſiaſticall noteth that many of the Apoſtles, Diſciples and Scholers which were then aliue, and did with ſingular loue of Wiſedome affect the Heauenly Word of God, to ſhew their willing minds in executing that which Chriſt firſt of all requireth at the hands of men, they ſold their Poſſeſſions, gaue them to the poore, betaking themſelues to trauaile, vndertooke the labour of Euangeliſts, that is, they painefully preached Chriſt, and deliuered the Goſpel to them, who as yet had neuer heard the Doctrine of Faith. Finally, whom the Apoſtle nameth Paſtors and Teachers, what other were they then Preſbyters alſo, howbeit ſettled in ſome certaine charge, and thereby differing from Euangeliſts? I beſeech them therefore which haue hitherto troubled the Church with queſtions, about Degrees and Offices of Eccleſiaſticall calling, becauſe they principally ground themſelues vpon two places, that all partialitie laid aſide, they would ſincerely waigh and examine whether they haue not miſ-interpreted both places, and all by ſurmiſing incompatible Offices, where nothing is meant but ſundrie graces, gifts and abilities which Chriſt beſtowed. To them of Corinth, his words are theſe, *God placed in the Church, firſt of all, ſome Apoſtles; Secondly, Prophets; Thirdly, Teachers; after them powers,*

Epiph. l. 1. c. 21.

Acts 21. 10.

Acts 11. 27.

m *Acts 9. 18.*
n *Acts 18. 24.*
o *2. Tim. 4. 5, 9.*
1. Tim. 3. 15, 5,
14. 2. 8.

Euſeb. Eccleſ. hiſt. l. 3. c. 34.

1. Cor. 12. 28.

powers, then gifts of Cures, Aides, Gouernments, kinds of Languages. Are all Apoſtles? Are all Prophets? Are all Teachers? Is there power in all? Haue all grace to cure? Doe all ſpeake with Tongues? Can all interpret? But be you deſirous of the better graces. They which plainly diſcerne firſt, that ſome *one generall* thing there is which the Apoſtle doth here diuide into all theſe branches, & do ſecondly conceiue that generall to be Church-Offices, beſides a number of other difficulties, can by no means poſſibly denie but that many of theſe might concurre in one man, and peraduenture, in ſome one all, which mixture notwithſtanding, their forme of Diſcipline doth moſt ſhunne. On the otherſide, admit that *Communicants of ſpeciall infuſed grace*, for the benefit of members knit into one body, the Church of Chriſt, are here ſpoken of, which was in truth the plaine drift of that whole Diſcourſe, and ſee if euery thing doe not anſwere in due place with that fitneſſe, which ſheweth eaſily what is likelieſt to haue bin meant. For why are Apoſtles the firſt, but becauſe vnto them was granted the Reuelation of all Trueth from Chriſt immediately? Why Prophets the ſecond, but becauſe they had of ſome things knowledge in the ſame manner? Teachers the next, becauſe whatſoeuer was knowne to them it came by hearing, yet God withall made them able to inſtruct, which euery one could not doe that was taught. After Gifts of Edification there follow generall abilities to worke things aboue Nature, Grace to cure men of bodily Diſeaſes, Supplies againſt occurrent Defects and Impediments, Dexterities to gouerne and direct by Counſell; Finally, Aptneſſe to ſpeake or interprete Forraine Tongues. Which Graces not powred out equally, but diuerſly ſorted and giuen, were a cauſe why not onely they all did furniſh vp the whole Body, but each benefit and helpe other. Againe, the ſame Apoſtle other-where in like ſort, *To euerie one of vs is giuen grace, according to the meaſure of the gift of Chriſt. Wherefore he ſaith, When he aſcended vp on high, he led Captiuity captiue, and gaue gifts vnto men. He therefore gaue ſome Apoſtles, & ſome Prophets, & ſome Euangeliſts, and ſome Paſtors and Teachers, for the gathering together of Saints, for the worke of the Miniſtery, for the edification of the Body of Chriſt.* In this place none but gifts of inſtruction are expreſt. And becauſe the Teachers ſome were Euangeliſts which neither had any part of their knowledge by Reuelation as the Prophets, and yet in abilitie to teach were farre beyond other Paſtors, they are, as hauing receiued one way leſſe then Prophets, and another way more then Teachers, ſet accordingly betweene both. For the Apoſtle doth in neither place reſpect what any of them were by Office or power giuen them through Ordination, but what by Grace they all had obtayned through miraculous infuſion of the Holy Ghoſt. For in Chriſtian Religion, this being the ground of our whole Beliefe, that the promiſes which God of olde had made by his Prophets concerning the wonderfull Gifts and Graces of the Holy Ghoſt, wherewith the Raigne of the true *Meſſias* ſhould be made glorious, were immediately after our Lords Aſcenſion performed, there is no one thing whereof the Apoſtles did take more often occaſion to ſpeake. Out of men thus indued with gifts of the Spirit vpon their Converſion to Chriſtian Faith, the Church had her Miniſters choſen, vnto whom was giuen Eccleſiaſticall power by Ordination. Now, becauſe the Apoſtle in reckoning degrees and varieties of Grace, doth

Ephes. 4. 7. Pſal. 68. 18.

mention

mention Paſtors and Teachers, although hee mention them not in reſpect of their Ordination to exerciſe the Miniſterie, but as Examples of men eſpecially enricht with the gifts of the Holy Ghoſt, diuers learned and skilfull men haue ſo taken it, as if thoſe places did intend to teach what Orders of Eccleſiaſticall perſons there ought to bee in the Church of Chriſt, which thing wee are not to learne from thence, but out of other parts of holy Scripture, whereby it cleerly appeareth, that Churches Apoſtolike did know but three degrees in the power of Eccleſiaſticall Order, at the firſt Apoſtles, Preſbyters, and Deacons, afterwards in ſtead of Apoſtles, Biſhops, concerning whoſe order wee are to ſpeake in the ſeuenth Booke. There is an errour which beguileth many who much intangle both themſelues and others by not diſtinguiſhing *Seruices, Offices* and *Orders* Eccleſiaſticall, the firſt of which three, and in part the ſecond may bee executed by the Laitie, whereas none haue, or can haue the third but the Clergie. Catechiſts, Exorciſts, Readers, Singers, and the reſt of like ſort, if the nature onely of their labours and paines be conſidered, may in that reſpect ſeeme Clergie-men, euen as the Fathers for that cauſe terme them vſually Clerkes, as alſo in regard of the end whereunto they were trained vp, which was to bee ordered when yeeres and experience ſhould make them able. Notwithſtanding, in as much as they no way differed from others of the Laitie longer then during that worke of Seruice, which at any time they might giue ouer, being thereunto but admitted; not tyed by irreuocable Ordination, we find them alwayes exactly ſeuered from that bodie whereof thoſe three before rehearſed Orders alone are natural parts. Touching Widowes, of whom ſome men are perſwaded, that if ſuch as Saint *Paul* deſcribeth may bee gotten, wee ought to retaine them in the Church for euer, certaine meane Seruices there were of Attendance, as about Women, at the time of their Baptiſme, about the bodies of the ſicke and dead, about the neceſſities of Trauailers, Wayfaring men and ſuch like, wherein the Church did commonly vſe them when need required, becauſe they liued of the Almes of the Church, and were fitteſt for ſuch purpoſes. Saint *Paul* doth therefore, to auoyde ſcandall, require that none but Women well experienced and vertuouſly giuen, neyther any vnder threeſcore yeeres of age ſhould be admitted of that number. Widowes were neuer in the Church ſo highly eſteemed as Virgines. But ſeeing neither of them did or could receiue Ordination, to make them Eccleſiaſticall perſons were abſurd. The ancienteſt therefore of the Fathers mention thoſe three degrees of Eccleſiaſtical Order ſpecified and no moe. *When your Captains* (ſaith TERTVLLIAN) *that is to ſay, the Deacons, Preſbyters and Biſhops flye, who ſhall teach the Laitie, that they muſt be conſtant?* Againe, *What ſhould I mention Lay men* (ſaith OPTATVS) *yea, or diuers of the Miniſtery it ſelfe? To what purpoſe Deacons, which are in the third, or Preſbyters in the ſecond degree of Prieſthood, when the very Heads & Princes of all, euen certaine of the Biſhops themſelues* were content to redeeme life with the loſſe of Heauen? Heaps of allegations in a caſe ſo euident & plaine are needleſſe. I may ſecurely therefore conclude, that there [illegible] this day in the Church of England, no other then the ſame degrees of Eccleſiaſticall Order, namely, Biſhops, Preſbyters, and Decons, which had their beginning from Chriſt, & his bleſſed Apoſtles themſelues. As for Deanes,

T.C.l.1.p.192. 1.*Tim.*5.9.

Tertull.de Perſecut.

Optat.lib.1.

Prebendaries, Parſons, Vicars, Curates, Archdeacons, Chancelors, Officials, Commiſſaries, and ſuch other the like names, which being not found in holy Scripture, we haue beene thereby through ſome mens errour thought to allow of Eccleſiaſticall Degrees not knowne, nor euer heard of in the better Ages of former times, all theſe are in truth but Titles of Office, whereunto partly Eccleſiaſticall perſons, and partly others are in ſundry formes and conditions admitted, as the ſtate of the Church doth need Degrees of Order, ſtill continuing the ſame they were from the firſt beginning. Now, what habit or attire doth beſeeme each order to vſe in the courſe of common life, both, for the grauitie of his place, and for example ſake, to other men is a matter friuolous to be diſputed of. A ſmall meaſure of Wiſdome may ſerue to teach them how they ſhould cut their Coats. But ſeeing all well ordered Polities haue euer iudged it meet and fit by certaine ſpeciall diſtinct Ornaments to ſeuer each ſort of men from other when they are in publike, to the end that all may receiue ſuch Complements of Ciuill Honour, as are due to their Roomes and Callings, euen where their perſons are not knowne, it argueth a diſproportioned minde in them, whom ſo decent Orders diſpleaſe.

Of Oblations, Foundations, Endowments, Tithes, all intended for perpetuitie of Religion, which purpoſe being chiefly fulfilled by the Clergies certaine and ſufficient maintenance, muſt needs by alienation of Church-liuings be made fruſtrate.

79 We might ſomewhat maruaile, what the Apoſtle Saint *Paul* ſhould meane to ſay that Couetouſneſſe is Idolatrie, if the daily practice of men did not ſhew, that whereas Nature requireth God to bee honoured with wealth, wee honour for the moſt part wealth as God. Faine we would teach our ſelues to beleeue, that for worldly goods it ſufficeth frugally & honeſtly to vſe them to our owne benefit, without detriment and hurt of others; or if we goe a degree farther, and perhaps conuert ſome ſmall contemptible Portion thereof to Charitable vſes, the whole dutie which we owe vnto God herein is fully ſatisfied. But for as much as wee cannot rightly honour God, vnleſſe both our Soules and Bodies be ſometime imployed meerely in his Seruice, againe, ſith wee know that Religion requireth at our hands the taking away of ſo great a part of the time of our liues quite and cleane from our owne buſineſſe, and the beſtowing of the ſame in his, ſuppoſe wee that nothing of our wealth and ſubſtance is immediately due to God, but all our owne to beſtow and ſpend as our ſelues thinke meet? Are not our riches as well his as the dayes of our life are his? Wherefore, vnleſſe with part we acknowledge his Supreme Dominion, by whoſe beneuolence we haue the whole, how giue wee Honour to whom Honour belongeth, or how hath God the things that are Gods? I would know what Nation in the World did euer Honour God, and not thinke it a point of their dutie to doe him honour with their very goods. So that this wee may boldy ſet downe as a Principle cleere in Nature, an Axiome which ought not to be called in queſtion, a Truth manifeſt and infallible, that men are eternally bound to honor God with their ſubſtance, in token of thankfull acknowledgement that all they haue is from him. To honour him with our wordly goods, not only by ſpending them in lawfull manner, and by vſing them without offence, but alſo by alienating from our ſelues ſome reaſonable part or portion thereof, and by offering vp the ſame to him as a ſigne that wee gladly confeſſe his ſole and Soueraigne Dominion ouer all, is a dutie which all men are bound vnto, and a part of that very Worſhip of God, which as the Law of God

and

and Nature it ſelfe requireth, ſo wee are the rather to thinke all men no leſſe ſtrictly bound thereunto then to any other naturall dutie, in as much as the hearts of men doe ſo cleaue to theſe earthly things, ſo much admire them for the ſway they haue in the world, impute them ſo generally either to Nature or to Chance and Fortune, ſo little thinke vpon the Grace and Prouidence from which they come, that vnleſſe by a kind of continuall tribute wee did acknowledge Gods Dominion, it may be doubted that in ſhort time men would learne to forget whoſe Tenants they are, and imagine that the World is their owne abſolute, free and independent inheritance. Now, concerning the kind or qualitie of gifts which God receiueth in that ſort, we are to conſider them, partly as firſt they proceed from vs, and partly as afterwards they are to ſerue for diuine vſes. In that they are teſtimonies of our affection towards God, there is no doubt, but ſuch they ſhould bee as beſeemeth moſt his Glorie to whom wee offer them. In this reſpect the fatneſſe of *Abels* ſacrifice is commended, the flower of all mens increaſe aſſigned to God by *Salomon*, the gifts and donations of the people reiected as oft as their colde affection to Godward made their preſents to be little worth. Somewhat the Heathens ſaw touching that which was herein fit, and therefore they vnto their gods did not thinke they might conſecrate any thing which was *impure* or *vnſound*, or *already giuen*, or elſe *not truely their owne to giue*. Againe, in regard of vſe, for as much as we know that God hath himſelfe no need of worldly commodities, but taketh them becauſe it is our good to be ſo exerciſed, and with no other intent accepteth them, but to haue them vſed for the endleſſe continuance of Religion; there is no place left of doubt or controuerſie, but that wee in the choice of our gifts are to leuell at the ſame marke, and to frame our ſelues to his knowne intents and purpoſes. Whether we giue vnto God therefore that which himſelfe by commandement requireth; or that which the publike conſent of the Church thinketh good to allot; or that which euery mans priuate deuotion doth beſt like, in as much as the gift which wee offer, proceedeth not onely as a teſtimonie of our affection towards God, but alſo as a meane to vphold Religion, the exerciſe whereof cannot ſtand without the helpe of temporall commodities: if all men bee taught of Nature to wiſh, and as much as in them lyeth, to procure the perpetuitie of good things; if for that very cauſe we honour and admire their wiſedome, who hauing beene founders of Common-weales, could deuiſe how to make the benefit they left behinde them durable; if eſpecially in this reſpect wee preferre *Lycurgus* before *Solon*, and the Spartan before the Athenian politie, it muſt needs follow, that as wee doe vnto God very acceptable ſeruice in honouring him with our ſubſtance, ſo our ſeruice that way is then moſt acceptable, when it tendeth to perpetuitie. The firſt permanent donations of honour in this kind are Temples. Which works doe ſo much ſet forward the exerciſe of Religion, that while the World was in loue with Religion, it gaue to no ſort greater reuerence then to whom it could point and ſay, *Theſe are the men that haue built vs Synagogues*. But of Churches we haue ſpoken ſufficiently heretofore. The next things to Churches are the ornaments of Churches, memorials which mens deuotion hath added to remayne in the treaſure of Gods houſe, not one-

Purum, probum, profanum, ſanum, Feſt. lib. 14.

ly for vſes wherein the exerciſe of Religion preſently needeth them, but alſo partly for ſupply of future caſuall neceſſities, whereunto the Church is on earth ſubiect, and partly to the end that while they are kept they may continually ſerue as teſtimonies, giuing all men to vnderſtand, that God hath in euerie Age and Nation, ſuch as thinke it no burthen to honour him with their ſubſtance. The riches firſt of the Tabernacle of God, and then of the Temple of Ieruſalem, ariſing out of voluntarie gifts and donations, were, as we commonly ſpeake, *a nemo ſcit*, the value of them aboue that which any man would imagine. After that the Tabernacle was made, furniſhed with all neceſſaries and ſet vp, although in the wilderneſſe their habilitie could not poſſibly be great, the very mettle of thoſe veſſels which the Princes of the twelue Tribes gaue to God for their firſt preſents, amounted euen then to two thouſand and foure hundred ſhekels of Siluer, an hundred and twenty ſhekles of Gold, euery ſhekell weighing halfe an ounce. What was giuen to the Temple which *Salomon* erected, wee may partly coniecture, when ouer and beſides wood, marble, yron, braſſe, veſtment, precious ſtones, and money, the ſumme which *Dauid* deliuered into *Salomons* hands for that purpoſe, was of Gold in Maſſe eight thouſand, and of Siluer ſeauentene thouſand Cichars, euery Cichar containing a thouſand and eight hundred ſhekels which riſeth to nine hundred ounces in euery one Cichar: whereas the whole charge of the Tabernacle did not amount vnto 30. Cichars. After their returne out of Babylon, they were not preſently in caſe to make their ſecond Temple of equall magnificence and glory with that which the enemy had deſtroyed. Notwithſtanding what they could they did. In ſo much that the building finiſhed, there remayned in the Cofers of the Church to vphold the fabrick thereof, 6. hundred and 50. Cichars of ſiluer, one hundred of Gold. Whereunto was added by *Nehemias* of his owne gift a thouſand drammes of Golde, fiftie veſſels of Siluer, fiue hundred and thirtie Prieſts veſtments; by other the Princes of the fathers twenty thouſand drammes of Golde, two thouſand and two hundred peeces of Siluer; by the reſt of the people twenty thouſand of Gold, two thouſand of Siluer, threeſcore and ſeuen attires of Prieſts. And they furthermore bound themſelues towards other charges to giue by the Polle in what part of the world ſoeuer they ſhould dwell, the third of a Shekell, that is to ſay, the ſixt part of an ounce yeerely. [a] This out of forraine prouinces, they alwayes ſent in Golde. Whereof [b] *Mithridates* is ſaid to haue taken vp by the way before it could paſſe to Ieruſalem from Aſia, in one aduenture eight hundred talants; *Craſſus* after that to haue borrowed of the Temple it ſelfe eight thouſand: at which time *Eleazar* hauing both many other rich ornaments and all the tapeſtrie of the Temple vnder his cuſtodie, thought it the ſafeſt way to grow vnto ſome compoſition, and ſo to redeeme the reſidue by parting with a certayne beame of Gold about ſeuen hundred and a halfe in waight, a prey ſufficient for one man, as hee thought who had neuer bargained with *Craſſus* till then, and therefore vpon the confidence of a ſolemne oath that no more ſhould be looked for, hee ſimply deliuered vp a large morſell whereby the value of that which remayned was betrayed and the whole loſt. Such being the caſualties whereunto moueable treaſures are ſubiect, the Law of Moſes

Num.7.85.86.

1.Chron.29.

Exod.25.28. & 37.24.
Ezr.1.68.69.
Hag.2.40.
Ezr.8.24.

Nehem.7.70.

Nehem.10.32.

a *Cic.orat.pro L.Flac.Cum aurum Iudæorum nomine quotannis ex Italia & ex omnibus veſtris prouincijs Hieroſolymam exportari ſoleret Flaccus Sanxit edicto, ne ex Aſia exportari liceret.*
b *Ioſeph. Antiq. lib.14. cap.12.*
c Euery talent in value 600 crownes.

ſes did both require eight and twentie Cities together with their fields and whole Territories in the land of Iurie, to be reſerued for God himſelfe; and not onely prouide for the libertie of farther additions, if men of their owne accord ſhould thinke good, but alſo for the ſafe preſeruation thereof vnto all poſterities, that no mans auarice or fraud, by defeating ſo vertuous intents, might diſcourage from like purpoſes. Gods third indowment did therefore of old conſiſt in lands. Furthermore, ſome cauſe no doubt there is, why beſides ſundry other more rare donations of vncertayne rate, the tenth ſhould be thought a reuenue ſo naturall to bee allotted out vnto God. For of the ſpoiles which *Abraham* had taken in warre, he deliuered vnto *Melchiſedeck* the Tithes. The vow of *Iacob*, at ſuch time as he tooke his iourney towards Haran, was, *If God will be with me, and will keepe me in this voyage which I am to goe, and will giue me bread to eate and clothes to put on, ſo that I may returne to my fathers houſe in ſafety, then ſhall the Lord be my God, and this ſtone which I haue ſet vp as a pillar, the ſame ſhall be Gods houſe, and of all thou ſhalt giue me I will giue vnto thee the Tithe.* And as *Abraham* gaue voluntarily, as *Iacob* vowed to giue God tithes, ſo the law of *Moyſes* did require at the hands of all men the ſelfe ſame kind of tribute, the tenth of their corne, wine, oile, fruit, cattle, and what ſoeuer increaſe his heauenly prouidence ſhould ſend. In ſo much that Paynims being herein followers of their ſteps, paid Tithes likewiſe: Imagine wee that this was for no cauſe done, or that there was not ſome ſpeciall inducement to iudge the tenth of our worldly profits the moſt conuenient for Gods portion? Are not all things by him created in ſuch ſort, that the formes which giue them their diſtinction are number, their operations meaſure, and their matter waight? *Three* being the myſticall number of Gods vnſearchable perfection within himſelfe; *ſeuen* the number whereby our owne perfections through grace are moſt ordered; and *ten* the number of natures perfections (for the beauty of nature is order, and the foundation of order number, and of number ten the higheſt wee can riſe vnto without iteration of numbers vnder it) could nature better acknowledge the power of the God of nature then by aſſigning vnto him that quantitie which is the continent of all ſhee poſſeſſeth? There are in *Philo* the Iew many arguments to ſhew the great congruitie and fitneſſe of this number in things conſecrated vnto God. But becauſe ouer nice and curious ſpeculations become not the earneſtneſſe of holy things, I omit what might be farther obſerued as well out of others as out of him touching the quantitie of this generall ſacred tribute, whereby it commeth to paſſe, that the meaneſt and the very pooreſt amongſt men, yeelding vnto God as much in proportion as the greateſt and many times in affection more, haue this as a ſenſible token alwayes aſſuring their mindes, that in his ſight, from whom all good is expected, they are concerning acceptation, protection, diuine priuiledges and preheminences whatſoeuer, equals and peeres with them vnto whom they are otherwiſe in earthly reſpects inferiours, being furthermore well aſſured that the top as it were thus preſented to God is neither loſt, nor vnfruitfully beſtowed, but doth ſanctifie to them againe the whole Maſſe, and that hee by receiuing a little vndertaketh to bleſſe all. In which conſideration the Iewes were accuſtomed to name their Tithes the

Num.18.
Leuit.25.34. & 27.32.

Gen.14.20.
Gen.28.20.

Deut.14.22.

Plin.hiſt.nat. lib.12. cap.14.

hedge

* *Maſſoreth ſepes eſt legi; diuitiarum ſepes decime. R. Aquiba in Pirk. Aboth.*

* *hedge* of their riches. Albeit a hedge doe only fence and preſerue that which is contayned, whereas their Tithes and offerings did more, becauſe they procured increaſe of the heape, out of which they were taken. God demandeth no ſuch debt for his owne neede, but for their onely benefit that owe it. Wherefore detayning the ſame, they hurt not him whom they wrong; and themſelues whom they thinke they relieue, they wound, except men will haply affirme, that God did by faire ſpeeches, and large promiſes delude the world in ſaying, *Bring yee all the tithes into the ſtorehouſe, that there may bee meate in mine houſe,* (deale truely, defraude not God of his due, but bring all) *and proue if I will not open vnto you the windowes of heauen, and powre downe vpon you an immeſurable bleſsing.* That which Saint *Iames* hath concerning the effect of our prayers vnto God, is for the moſt part of like moment in our gifts: Wee pray and obtayne not, becauſe hee which knoweth our hearts, doth ſee our deſires are euill. In like manner we giue, and wee are not the more accepted, becauſe he beholdeth how vnwiſely we ſpill our gifts in the * bringing. It is to him which needeth nothing, all one whether any thing or nothing bee giuen him. But for our owne good, it alwayes behoueth that whatſoeuer we offer vp into his hands, we bring it ſeaſoned with this cogitation, *Thou Lord art worthie of all honour.* With the Church of Chriſt touching theſe matters it ſtandeth as it did with the whole World before *Moſes.* Whereupon for many yeeres men being deſirous to honour God in the ſame manner, as other vertuous and holy perſonages before had done, both during the time of their life, and if farther habilitie did ſerue, by ſuch deuice as might cauſe their workes of pietie to remayne alwayes, it came by theſe meanes to paſſe that the Church from time to time, had treaſure proportionable vnto the poorer or wealthier eſtate of Chriſtian men. And aſſoone as the ſtate of the Church could admit thereof, they eaſily condeſcended to thinke it moſt naturall and moſt fit, that God ſhould receiue as before of all men his ancient accuſtomed reuenewes of Tithes. Thus therefore both God and nature haue taught to conuert things temporall to eternall vſes, and to prouide for the perpetuitie of Religion, euen by that which is moſt tranſitorie. For to the end that in worth and value there might be no abatement of any thing once aſſigned to ſuch purpoſes, the Law requireth preciſely, the beſt of that we poſſeſſe; and to preuent all damages by way of commutation, where in ſtead of naturall commodities, or other rights, the price of them might be taken, the Law of *Moyſes* determined their rates, and the payments to be alwayes made by the ſicle of the Sanctuarie, wherein there was great aduantage of waight aboue the ordinarie currant ſicle. The troeſt and ſureſt way for God to haue alwayes his owne, is by making him payment in kinde out of the very ſelfe ſame riches, which through his gracious benediction the earth doth continually yeeld. This where it may be without inconuenience, is for euery mans conſcience ſake. That which commeth from God to vs, by the naturall courſe of his prouidence, which we know to be innocent and pure, is perhaps beſt accepted, becauſe leaſt ſpotted with the ſtaine of vnlawfull, or indirect procurement. Beſides, whereas prices daily change, Nature which commonly is one, muſt needes bee the moſt indifferent and permanent ſtandard betweene God and

Mal. 3.

* *Nemo libenter debet quod non accepit ſed expreſſit. Sen. de Benef. l. 1. c. 1.*

Leuit. 27. 25.

and Man. But the maine foundation of all, whereupon the ſecuritie of theſe things dependeth, as farre as any thing may be aſcertained amongſt men, is, that the Title and Right which man had in euery of them before Donation, doth by the Act, and from the time of any ſuch Donation, or Dedication, or Grant, remaine the proper poſſeſſion of God til the worlds end, vnleſſe himſelfe renounce or relinquiſh it. For if equitie haue taught vs, that euery one ought to inioy his owne; that what is ours, no other can alienate from vs, but with our [a] owne [b] deliberate conſent; finally, that no man hauing paſt his conſent or deed, may [c] change it to the preiudice of any other, ſhould we preſume to deale with God worſe then God hath allowed any man to deale with vs? Albeit therefore we be now free from the Law of *Moſes*, and conſequently, not thereby bound to the payment of Tithes, yet becauſe Nature hath taught men to honour God with their ſubſtance, and Scripture hath left vs an example of that particular proportion, which for morall conſiderations hath beene thought fitteſt, by him whoſe wiſedome could beſt iudge; furthermore, ſeeing that the Church of Chriſt hath long ſithence entred into like obligation, it ſeemeth in theſe dayes a queſtion altogether vaine and ſuperfluous, whether Tithes be a matter of diuine Right: becauſe howſoeuer at the firſt, it might haue beene thought doubtfull, our caſe is cleerely the ſame now with theirs, vnto whom Saint *Peter* ſometime ſpake, ſaying, *While it was whole, it was whole thine?* When our Tithes might haue probably ſeemed our owne, we had colour of libertie to vſe them as we our ſelues ſaw good. But hauing made them his whoſe they are, let vs be warned by other mens example what it is *τοῦς ἀλουσθαι*, to waſh or clip that coyne which hath on it the marke of God. For that all theſe are his poſſeſſions, and that he doth himſelfe ſo reckon them, appeareth by the forme of his owne ſpeeches. Touching Gifts and Oblations, *Thou ſhalt giue them me*; touching Oratories and Churches, *My houſe* ſhall be called the houſe of Prayer; touching Tithes, *Will a man ſpoile God?* Yet behold, euen me your God yee haue [d] *ſpoiled*, notwithſtanding yee aske wherein, as though ye were ignorant, what iniurie there hath beene offered in *Tithes*: ye are heauily accurſed, becauſe with a kind of publike conſent yee haue ioyned your ſelues in one to rob me, imagining the commonneſſe of your offence to be euery mans particular iuſtification; touching Lands, *Yee ſhall offer to the Lord a ſacred portion of ground, and that ſacred portion ſhall belong to the Prieſts.* Neither did God onely thus ordaine amongſt the Iewes, but the very purpoſe, intent, and meaning of all that haue honoured him with their ſubſtance, was to inueſt him with the propertie of thoſe benefits, the vſe whereof muſt needs be committed to the hands of men. In which reſpect the ſtile of ancient Grants and Charters, is, *We haue giuen vnto God both for Vs and our Heires for euer.* Yea, we know, ſaith *Charles* the Great, that *the goods of the Church are the ſacred indowments of God, to the Lord our God we offer and dedicate whatſoeuer we deliuer vnto his Church.* Whereupon the Lawes Imperiall doe likewiſe diuide all things in ſuch ſort, that they make ſome to belong by right of Nature indifferently vnto euerie man, ſome to be the certaine goods and poſſeſſions of Common-weales, ſome to appertaine vnto ſeuerall Corporations or Companies of men, ſome to bee priuately mens owne in particular, and ſome to bee ſeparated quite

* from

a *Lib. 11. de Reg. Iur.*

b *Cuius per errorem data repetitio eſt, eius conſulto data donatio eſt, lib. 1. D. de cond. indeb.* This the ground of *Conſideration* in alienations from man to man.

c *Nemo poteſt mutare conſilium ſuum in alterius præiudicium, lib. 75. de Reg. Iur.*

Act. 5. 4.

Exod. 32. 29, 30.

Matth. 21. 13.

Mal. 3. 8.

d *Non videntur rem adminiſtare quibus pro ria non fuit, lib. 83. de Reg. Iur.*

Exech. 45. 1, 4.

Magn. Char. c. 1.

Capitul. C. 71. lib. 6. cap. 284.

* Nullius autem ſunt res ſacræ & religioſæ & ſanctæ. Quod enim diuini iuris eſt, id nullius in bonis eſt, Inſtit. lib. 2. tit. 1.

a Soli cum Dijs ſacri legi pugnant Curt. lib. 7. Sacrum ſacroue commendatum qui dempſerit vaſtaſſitue, parricida eſto, Leg. 12. tab. Capitul. Carul. lib. 6. cap. 285.

b De poſita pietate, Tertul. Apologet. Prudent. Peri-ſteph.

* from all men, which laſt branch comprizeth things ſacred and holy, becauſe thereof God is alone is owner. The ſequell of which receiued opinion, as well without as within the wals of the houſe of God touching ſuch poſſeſſions hath beene euer, that there is not an act more honourable, then by all meanes to amplifie and to defend the patrimonie of Religion, not any more a impious and hatefull, then to impaire thoſe poſſeſſions which men in former times, when they gaue vnto holy vſes, were wont at the Altar of God, & in preſence of their ghoſtly Superiours, to make as they thought inuiolable, by words of fearefull execration, ſaying, *Theſe things we offer to God, from whom if any take them away (which we hope no man will attempt to doe) but if any ſhall, let his account be without fauour in the laſt day, when he commeth to receiue the doome which is due for ſacriledge againſt that Lord and God, vnto whom we dedicate the ſame.* The beſt and moſt renowmed Prelates of the Church of Chriſt haue in this conſideration rather ſuſtained the wrath, then yeelded to ſatisfie the hard deſire of their greateſt Commandes on earth, coueting with ill aduice and counſell that which they willingly ſhould haue ſuffered God to inioy. There are of Martyrs, whom poſteritie doth much honour, for that hauing vnder their hands the cuſtodie of ſuch b treaſures, they could by vertuous deluſion inuent how to ſaue them from prey, euen when the ſafetie of their owne liues they gladly neglected, as one, ſometime an Archdeacon vnder *Xiſtus* the Biſhop of Rome, did, whom when his Iudge vnderſtood to be one of the Church Stewards, thirſt of bloud began to ſlake, and another humour to worke, which firſt by a fauorable countenance, and then by quiet ſpeech did thus calmely diſcloſe it ſelfe, *You that profeſſe the Chriſtian Religion, make great complaints of the wonderfull crueltie we ſhew towards you. Neither peraduenture altogether without cauſe. But for my ſelfe, I am farre from any ſuch bloodie purpoſe. Yee are not ſo willing to liue, as I vnwilling that out of theſe lips ſhould proceed any capitall ſentence againſt you. Your Biſhops are ſaid to haue rich veſſels of gold and ſiluer, which they vſe in the exerciſe of their Religion, beſides, the fame is, that numbers ſell away their Lands and Liuings, the huge prices whereof are brought to your Church-coffers, by which meanes the deuotion that maketh them and their whole poſteritie poore, muſt needs mightily inrich you, whoſe God we know was no Coyner of money, but left behind him many wholeſome and good Precepts, as namely, that Caſar ſhould haue of you the things that are fit for, and due to Caſar. His warres are coſtly and chargeable vnto him. That which you ſuffer to ruſt in corners, the affaires of the Commonwealth doe need. Your profeſſion is not to make account of things tranſitorie. And yet if ye can be contented but to forgoe that which ye care not for, I dare vndertake to warrant you both ſafetie of life, and freedome of vſing your conſcience, a thing more acceptable to you then wealth.* Which faire parly the happy Martyr quietly hearing, and perceiuing it neceſſarie to make ſome ſhift for the ſafe concealement of that which being now deſired, was not vnlikely to be more narrowly afterwards ſought, hee craued reſpit for three dayes, to gather the riches of the Church together, in which ſpace againſt the time the Gouernour ſhould come to the doores of the Temple, bigge with hope to receiue his prey, a miſerable ranke of poore, lame, and impotent perſons was prouided, their names deliuered him vp in writing as a true Inuentorie of the Churches goods,

goods, & ſome few words vſed to ſignifie how proud the Church was of theſe treaſures. If men did not naturally abhorre ſacriledge, to reſiſt or to defeate ſo impious attempts would deſerue ſmall praiſe. But ſuch is the generall deteſtation of rapine in this kind, that whereas nothing doth either in peace or war more vphold mens reputation then proſperous ſucceſſe, becauſe in common conſtruction, vnleſſe notorious improbitie be ioyned with proſperitie, it ſeemeth to argue fauour with God, they which once haue ſtained their hands with theſe odious ſpoiles, doe thereby faſten vnto all their actions an eternall preiudice, in reſpect whereof, for that it paſſeth through the world as an vndoubted rule and principle, that ſacriledge is open defiance to God, whatſoeuer afterward they vndertake, if they proſper in it, men reckon it but *Dionyſius* his Nauigation, & if any thing befall them otherwiſe, it is not, as commonly, ſo in them aſcribed to the great vncertainty of caſuall euents, wherein the prouidence of God doth controll the purpoſes of men oftentimes, much more for their good then if al things did anſwer fully their hearts deſire, but the cenſure of the world is euer directly againſt them both [a] bitter and peremptorie. To make ſuch actions therefore leſſe odious, and to mitigate the enuie of them, many colourable ſhifts and inuentions haue beene vſed, as if the world did hate onely Woolues and thinke the Foxe a goodly creature. The time [b] it may be will come, when they that either violently haue ſpoiled or thus ſmoothly defrauded God, ſhall find they did but deceiue themſelues. In the meane while there will be alwayes ſome skilful perſons, which can teach a way how to grind treatably the Church with iawes that ſhall ſcarſe moue, and yet deuour in the end more then they that come rauening with open mouth, as if they would worry the whole in an inſtant; others alſo who hauing waſtfully eaten out their owne patrimony, would be glad to repaire, if they might, their decayed eſtates, with the ruine they care not of what nor of whom, ſo the ſpoile were theirs, whereof in ſome part if they happen to ſpeed, yet commonly they are men borne vnder that conſtellation which maketh them, I know not how, as vnapt to inrich themſelues as they are readie to impouerish others, it is their lot to ſuſtaine during life both the miſery of beggers, and the infamy of robbers. But though no other plague and reuenge ſhould follow ſacrilegious violations of holy things, the naturall ſecret diſgrace and ignominy, the very turpitude of ſuch actions in the eye of a wiſe vnderſtanding heart, is it ſelfe a [c] heauy puniſhment. Men of vertuous quality are by this ſufficiently moued to beware how they anſwer and requite the mercies of God with iniuries, whether openly or indirectly offered. I will not abſolutely ſay concerning the goods of the Church, that they may in no caſe be ſeized on by men, or that no Obligation, Commerce and Bargaine made betweene man and man, can euer be of force to alienate the property which God hath in them. Certaine caſes I grant there are wherein it is not ſo darke what God himſelfe doth warrant, but that we may ſafely preſume him as willing to forgoe for our benefit, as alwayes to vſe and conuert to our benefit whatſoeuer our Religion hath honoured him withall. But ſurely vnder the name of that which may bee, many things that ſhould not bee are often done. By meanes whereof the Church moſt commonly for gold hath ſtanell, and whereas the vſuall Saw of old was *Glaucus his*

a *Nouimus multa regna, & reges eorum propterea cecidiſſe, quia Eccleſias ſpoliauerint, reſq; earum vaſtauerunt, alienauerunt vel diripuerunt, Epiſcopis & Sacerdotibus, atque quod malum eſt Eccleſys eorum abſtuleruntꝝ pugnantibus dederunt. Quapropter nec fortes in bello, nec in fide ſtabiles fuerunt, nec valores extiterunt, ſed turga multi vulnerati & plures interfecti verterunt, regnaq; & regiones, & quod poius eſt, regna cœleſtia perdiderunt, atq; propriis hereditatibus caruerunt & hactenus carent.* Verba Carol. Ma. in Capitu. Caru. l. 7. c. 104

b *Turne tempus erit magno cum optaueris emptum Intactæ Pallanta & cum ſpolia iſta diemq; Oderis.* Virgil. Æn. lib. 10.

c ὑπὲρ πραγμάτων τοιούτων ἀνθρώπου ἀγαθοῦ ἐστὶν ἡ βεβαίωσις ἱκανὴ τοῖς γε σώφροσιν, Demoſt. *Panam non dico legum quas ſæpe perrumpimus, ſed ipſius turpitudinis quæ acerbiſſima eſt non vident.* Cic. Offic lib. 1. *Impunita tu credes eſſe iniuſta iuntiant vllum ſupplicium grauius exiſtimas publico adeſt* Senec. de Benef. lib. 3. c. 17.

his change, the Prouerbe is now, *A Church bargaine.* And for feare leſt couetouſneſſe alone ſhould linger out the time too much, and not to be able to make hauocke of the houſe of God with that expedition, which the mortall Enemie thereof did vehemently wiſh, he hath by certaine ſtrong inchantments ſo deepely bewitcht Religion it ſelfe, as to make it in the end an earneſt Sollicitor, and an eloquent Perſwader of ſacriledge, vrging confidently, that the very beſt ſeruice which men of power can doe to Chriſt, is without any more Ceremonie, to ſweepe all, and to leaue the Church as bare as in the day it was firſt borne, that fulneſſe of bread hauing made the children of the houſhold wanton, it is without any ſcruple to bee taken away from them, and throwne to Dogs, that they which laid the prices of their Lands as offerings at the Apoſtles feete, did but ſowe the ſeeds of ſuperſtition; that they which indowed Churches with Lands, poiſoned Religion, that Tithes and Oblations are now in the ſight of God as the ſacrificed bloud of Goates, that if we giue him our hearts and affections, our goods are better beſtowed otherwiſe, that *Irenæus Polycarps* Diſciple ſhould not haue ſaid, *We offer vnto God our goods as tokens of thankefulneſſe for that we receiue*, neither ORIGEN, *He which worſhippeth God, muſt by Gifts and Oblations acknowledge him the Lord of all*; in a word, that to giue vnto God is errour, reformation of errour, to take from the Church, that which the blindneſſe of former Ages did vnwiſely giue. By theſe or the like ſuggeſtions receiued with all ioy, and with like ſedulitie practiſed in certaine parts of the Chriſtian world, they haue brought to paſſe, that as *Dauid* doth ſay of man, ſo it is in hazzard to be verified concerning the whole Religion and Seruice of God: *The time thereof may peraduenture fall out to be threeſcore and ten yeeres, or if ſtrength doe ſerue vnto foureſcore, what followeth, is likely to be ſmall ioy for them whatſoeuer they be that behold it.* Thus haue the beſt things beene ouer-throwne, not ſo much by puiſſance and might of Aduerſaries, as through defect of counſell, in them that ſhould haue vpheld and defended the ſame.

Irenæus lib. 4. 34.
Orig. in 18. Num. hom. 11.

Pſal. 90. 10.

Of Ordinations lawfull without title, and without any popular election precedent, but in no caſe without regard of due information what their qualitie is, that enter into holy Orders.

80 There are in a Miniſter of God theſe foure things to be conſidered, his Ordination which giueth him power to meddle with things ſacred, the charge or portion of the Church allotted vnto him for exerciſe of his Office; the performance of his dutie, according to the exigence of his charge, and laſtly, the maintenance which in that reſpect he receiueth. All Eccleſiaſticall Lawes and Canons which either concerne the beſtowing or the vſing of the power of miniſteriall Order, haue relation to theſe foure. Of the firſt we haue ſpoken before at large. Concerning the next, for more conuenient diſcharge of Eccleſiaſticall duties, as the body of the people muſt needs be ſeuered by diuers precincts, ſo the Clergie likewiſe accordingly diſtributed. Whereas therefore Religion did firſt take place in Cities, and in that reſpect was a cauſe why the name of Pagans, which properly ſignifieth Country people, came to be vſed in common ſpeech for the ſame that Infidels and Vnbeleeuers were, it followed thereupon that all ſuch Cities had their Eccleſiaſticall Colledges, conſiſting of Deacons and of Preſbyters, whom firſt the Apoſtles or their Delegates the Euangeliſts, did both ordaine and gouerne. Such were the Colledges of Ieruſalem, Antioch, Epheſus, Rome, Corinth, and the reſt, where the

the Apoſtles are knowne to haue planted our Faith and Religion. Now becauſe Religion and the Cure of ſoules was their generall charge in common ouerall that were neere about them, neither had any one Preſbyter his ſeuerall Cure apart, till *Euariſtus* Biſhop in the See of Rome, about the yeere 112. beganne to aſſigne precincts vnto euery Church, or Title, which the Chriſtians held, and to appoint vnto each Preſbyter a certaine compaſſe, whereof himſelfe ſhould take charge alone, the commodiouſneſſe of this inuention cauſed all parts of Chriſtendome to follow it, and at the length amongſt the reſt our owne Churches, about the yeere 636. became diuided in like manner. But other diſtinction of Churches, there doth not appeare any in the Apoſtles Writings, ſaue only, according to thoſe * Cities wherein they planted the Goſpell of Chriſt, and erected Eccleſiaſticall Colledges. Wherefore to ordaine [a] κατὰ πόλιν, throughout euery Citie, and [b] κατὰ ἐκκλησίαν, throughout euery Church, doe in them ſignifie the ſame thing. Churches then neither were, nor could bee in ſo conuenient ſort limited as now they are, firſt, by the bounds of each ſtate, and then within each ſtate by more particular precincts, till at the length we deſcend vnto ſeuerall Congregations termed *Pariſhes*, with farre narrower reſtraint, then this name at the firſt was vſed. And from hence hath growne their errour, who as oft as they reade of the dutie which Eccleſiaſticall perſons are now to performe towards the Church, their manner is alwayes to vnderſtand by that Church, ſome particular Congregation, or Pariſh Church. They ſuppoſe that there ſhould now bee no man of Eccleſiaſticall Order, which is not tyed to ſome certaine Pariſh. Becauſe the names of all Church Officers are words of relation, becauſe a Shepherd muſt haue his Flocke, a Teacher his Scholers, a Miniſter his Companie which hee miniſtreth vnto, therefore it ſeemeth a thing in their eyes abſurd and vnreaſonable, that any man ſhould be ordayned a Miniſter, otherwiſe, then onely for ſome particular Congregation. Perceiue they not, how by this meane they make it vnlawfull for the Church to imploy men at all, in conuerting Nations? For if ſo be the Church may not lawfully admit to an Eccleſiaſticall function, vnleſſe it tye the partie admitted vnto ſome particular Pariſh, then ſurely, a thankeleſſe labour it is, whereby men ſeeke the conuerſion of Infidels, which know not Chriſt, and therefore cannot bee as yet diuided into their ſpeciall Congregations and Flockes. But to the end it may appeare how much this one thing amongſt many more hath beene miſtaken, there is firſt no Precept, requiring that Preſbyters and Deacons be made in ſuch ſort, and not otherwiſe. Albeit therefore the Apoſtles did make them in that order, yet is not their Example ſuch a Law, as without all exception bindeth to make them in no other order but that. Againe, if we will conſider that which the Apoſtles themſelues did, ſurely, no man can iuſtly ſay that herein wee practiſe any thing repugnant to their example. For by them there was ordayned onely in each Chriſtian Citie, a Colledge of Preſbyters and Deacons to adminiſter holy things. *Euariſtus* did a hundred yeeres after the birth of our Sauiour Chriſt, begin the diſtinction of the Church into Pariſhes. Preſbyters and Deacons hauing beene ordayned before to exerciſe Eccleſiaſticall functions, in the Church of Rome promiſcuouſly, hee was the firſt that tyed them each one to his owne ſtation. So that

* *Acts* 15.36. *Apoc.* 1.20.

a *Tit.* 1.6.
b *Acts* 14.23.

of the two indefinite Ordination of Preſbyters and Deacons doth come more neere the Apoſtles Example, and the tying of them to bee made onely for particular Congregations, may inſtlier ground it ſelfe vpon the Example of *Euariſtus* then of any Apoſtle of Chriſt. It hath beene the opinion of Wiſe-men and good men heretofore, that nothing was euer deuiſed more ſingularly beneficiall vnto Gods Church, then this which our honorable Predeceſſors haue to their endleſſe prayſe found out by erecting ſuch Houſes of Studie, as thoſe two moſt famous Vniuerſities do containe, and by prouiding that choice wits, after reaſonable time ſpent in contemplation, may at the length eyther enter into that holy Vocation, for which they haue beene ſo long nouriſhed and brought vp, or elſe giue place and ſuffer others to ſucceed in their roomes, that ſo the Church may bee alwayes furniſhed with a number of men, whoſe abilitie being firſt knowne by publike tryall in Church-labours there where men can beſt iudge of them, their calling afterwards vnto particular charge abroad may bee according. All this is fruſtrate, thoſe worthy Foundations wee muſt diſſolue, their whole deuice and religious purpoſe which did erect them is made void, their Orders and Statutes are to bee cancelled and diſannulled, in caſe the Church be forbidden to grant any power of Order, vnleſſe it be with reſtraint to the partie ordayned vnto ſome particular Pariſh or Congregation. Nay, might we not rather affirme of Preſbyters and of Deacons, that the verie nature of their Ordination is vnto neceſſary locall reſtraint a thing oppoſite and repugnant? The Emperour *Iuſtinian* doth ſay of Tutors, *Certarum rerum tutor dari non poteſt, quia perſonæ non cauſæ vel rei tutor datur.* He that ſhould graunt a Tutorſhip, reſtraining his grant to ſome one certaine thing or cauſe, ſhould doe but idely, becauſe Tutors are giuen for perſonall defence generally, and not for meaning of a few particular things or cauſes. So peraduenture ordeyning a Preſbyter or a Deacon, ſhould in the forme of Ordination reſtraine the one or the other to a certaine place, might with much more reaſon bee thought to vſe a vaine and a friuolous addition, then they reaſonably to require ſuch locall reſtraint, as a thing which muſt of neceſſitie concurre euermore with all lawfull Ordinations. Preſbyters and Deacons are not by Ordination conſecrated vnto places, but vnto Functions. In which reſpect, and in no other it is, that firſt they are by vertue thereof bequeathed vnto God, ſeuered and ſanctified to bee imployed in his Seruice, which is the higheſt aduancement that mortall creatures on Earth can be rayſed vnto, the Church of Chriſt hath not beene acquainted in former Ages, with any ſuch prophane and vnnaturall cuſtome, as doth hallow men with Eccleſiaſticall Functions of Order onely for a time, and then diſmiſſe them againe to the common Affaires of the World. Whereas, contrariwiſe from the place or charge where that power hath beene exerciſed, wee may bee by ſundry good and lawfull occaſions tranſlated, retayning neuertheleſſe the ſelfe-ſame power which was firſt giuen. It is some griefe to ſpend thus much labour in refuting a thing that hath ſo little ground to vpholde it, eſpecially ſith they themſelues that teach it, doe not ſeeme to giue them vnto any great credit, if wee may iudge their mindes by their actions. There are amongſt them that haue done the workes of Eccleſiaſticall perſons, ſometime in the Families of Noble

Inſt. lib. 1. tit. 14. §. 4.

men, ſometime in much more publique and frequent Congregations, there are that haue ſucceſſiuely gone thorow perhaps ſeuen or eight particular Churches after this ſort, yea, ſome that at one and the ſame time haue beene, ſome which at this preſent houre are in reall obligation of Eccleſiaſticall dutie, and poſſeſſion of commoditie thereto belonging, euen in ſundry particular Churches within the Land, ſome there are amongſt them which will not ſo much abridge their libertie, as to bee faſtned or tyed vnto any place, ſome which haue bound themſelues to one place, onely for a time, and that time being once expired, haue afterwards voluntarily giuen other places the like experience and tryall of them. All this I preſume they would not doe, if their perſwaſion were as ſtrict as their words pretend. But for the auoyding of theſe and ſuch other the like confuſions as are incident into the cauſe and queſtion whereof we preſently treat, there is not any thing more materiall, then firſt to ſeparate exactly the nature of the Miniſterie, from the vſe and exerciſe thereof; Secondly, to know that the onely true and proper Act of Ordination is, to inueſt men with that power which doth make them Miniſters by conſecrating their perſons to God, and his ſeruice in holy things during terme of life, whether they exerciſe that power or no; Thirdly, that to giue them a title or charge where to vſe their Miniſterie, concerneth not the making, but the placing of Gods Miniſters, and therefore the Lawes which concerne onely their Election or Admiſſion vnto place of charge, are not applyable to infringe any way their Ordination; Fourthly, that as oft as any ancient Conſtitution, Law or Canon is alleaged, concerning either Ordinations or Elections, wee forget not to examine whether the preſent caſe bee the ſame which the ancient was, or elſe doe containe ſome iuſt reaſon for which it cannot admit altogether the ſame Rules which former Affaires of the Church now altered did then require. In the queſtion of making Miniſters without a *Title*, which to doe they ſay is a thing vnlawfull, they ſhould at the verie firſt haue conſidered what the name of *Title* doth imploy, and what affinitie or coherence Ordinations haue with Titles, which thing obſerued would plainly haue ſhewed them their owne errour. They are not ignorant that when they ſpeake of a Title, they handle that which belongeth to the placing of a Miniſter in ſome charge, that the place of charge wherein a Miniſter doth execute his Office, requireth ſome Houſe of God for the people to reſort vnto, ſome definite number of Soules vnto whom hee there adminiſtreth holy things, and ſome certaine allowance whereby to ſuſtaine life; that the Fathers at the firſt named *Oratories*, and the Houſes of Prayer, Titles, thereby ſignifying how God was intereſſed in them and held them as his owne Poſſeſſions. But becauſe they know that the Church had Miniſters before Chriſtian Temples and Oratories were, therefore ſome of them vnderſtand by a Title, a *definite Congregation* of people onely, and ſo deny that any Ordination is lawful which maketh Miniſters, that haue no certaine Flocke to attend, forgetting how the Seuentie whom Chriſt himſelfe did ordaine Miniſters, had their calling in that manner, whereas yet no certaine charge could bee giuen them. Others referring the name of a Title, eſpecially to the *maintenance* of the Miniſter, infringe all Ordinations made, * except they which receiue Orders bee firſt intitled

* Vnlawfull to ordaine a Miniſter without a Title, *Abſtract. p.243. & p.246.* The Law requireth that euery one admitted vnto Orders hauing for his preſent Reliefe ſome Eccleſiaſticall Benefice, ſhuld alſo haue ſome other Title vnto ſome annuall rent or penſion whereby he might be releeued in caſe he were not able through infirmity, ſickneſs or other lawfull impediment to execute his Eccleſiaſticall Office and Function.

titled to a competent Eccleſiaſticall Benefice and (which is moſt ridiculouſly ſtrange) except beſides their preſent Title to ſome ſuch Benefice, they haue likewiſe ſome other Title of Annuall Rent or Penſion whereby they may bee releeued, in caſe through infirmitie, ſickneſſe or other lawfull impediment they grow vnable to execute their Eccleſiaſticall Function. So that euery man lawfully ordained muſt bring a Bow which hath two ſtrings, a Title of preſent Right, and another to prouide for future poſſibilitie or chance. Into theſe abſurdities and follies they ſlide by miſ-conceiuing the true purpoſe of certaine Canons, which indeed haue forbidden to ordaine a Miniſter without a Title, not that ſimply it is vnlawfull ſo to ordaine, but becauſe it might grow to an inconuenience, if the Church did not ſomewhat reſtraine that libertie. For ſeeing they which haue once receiued Ordination, cannot againe returne into the World, it behoueth them which ordaine, to fore-ſee how ſuch ſhall bee afterwards able to liue, leſt their pouertie and deſtitution ſhould redound to the diſgrace and diſcredit of their calling. Which euill preuented, thoſe verie Lawes which in that reſpect forbid, doe expreſly admit Ordinations to bee made at large, and without Title, namely, if the partie ſo ordained haue of his owne for the ſuſtenance of this life, or if the Biſhop which giueth him Orders will find him competent allowance, till ſome place of Miniſtration, from whence his maintenance may ariſe, bee prouided for him, or if any other fit and ſufficient meanes bee had againſt the danger before mentioned. Abſolutely therfore it is not true, that any ancient Canon of the Church which is, or ought to bee with vs in force, doth make Ordinations at large vnlawfull, and as the ſtate of the Church doth ſtand, they are moſt neceſſarie. If there bee any conſcience in men touching that which they write or ſpeake, let them conſider as well what the preſent condition of all things doth now ſuffer, as what the Ordinances of former Ages did appoint, as well the waight of thoſe cauſes, for which our Affaires haue altered, as the reaſons in regard whereof our Fathers and Predeceſſors did ſometime ſtrictly and ſeuerely keepe that which for vs to obſerue now, is neither meete nor alwayes poſſible. In this our preſent Cauſe and Controuerſie, whether any not hauing Title of Right to a Benefice may bee lawfully ordained a Miniſter, is it not manifeſt in the eyes of all men, that whereas the name of a Benefice doth ſignifie ſome ſtanding Eccleſiaſticall Reuenew, taken out of the Treaſure of God, and allotted to a Spirituall Perſon, to the end he may vſe the ſame, and inioy it as his owne for terme of life, vnleſſe his default cauſe Depriuation: the Clergie for many yeeres after Chriſt had no other Benefices, but onely their Canonicall Portions, or Monethly Diuidends allowed them according to their ſeuerall degrees and qualities, out of the common Stock of ſuch Gifts, Oblations and Tithes, as the feruour of Chriſtian Pietie did then yeeld? Yea, that euen when Miniſters had their Churches and Flockes aſſigned vnto them in ſeuerall, yet for maintenance of life, their former kind of allowance continued, till ſuch time as Biſhops and Churches Cathedrall beeing ſufficiently endowed with Lands, other Preſbyters enioyed in ſtead of their firſt Benefices, the Tithes and Profits of their owne Congregations whole to themſelues? Is it not manifeſt that in this Realme, and ſo in other the like Dominions,

where

where the tenure of Lands is altogether grounded on Militarie Lawes, and held as in Fee vnder Princes which are not made Heads of the people by force of vountarie Election, but borne the Soueraigne Lords of thoſe whole and intyre Territories, which Territories their famous Progenitors obtayning by way of Conqueſt, retayned what they would in their owne hands, and diuided the reſt to others with reſeruation of Soueraigntie and Capitall intereſt, the building of Churches, and conſequently the aſſigning of either Pariſhes or Benefices, was a thing impoſſible without conſent of ſuch as were principall Owners of Land, in which conſideration, for their more incouragement hereunto, they which did ſo farre benefit the Church, had by common conſent granted (as great equitie and reaſon was) a right for them and their Heires till the Worlds end, to nominate in thoſe Benefices men whoſe qualitie the Biſhop allowing might admit them thereunto? Is it not manifeſt, that from hence inevitably ſuch inequality of Pariſhes hath growne, as cauſeth ſome through the multitude of people which haue reſort vnto one Church, to bee more then any one man can weild, and ſome to bee of that nature by reaſon of Chappels annext, that they which are Incumbents ſhould wrong the Church, if ſo bee they had not certaine Stipendaries vnder them, becauſe where the Corpes of the profit or Benefice is but one, the Title can bee but one mans, and yet the charge may require more? Not to mention therefore any other reaſon whereby it may cleerly appeare how expedient it is, and profitable for this Church to admit Ordinations without Title, this little may ſuffice to declare, how impertinent their allegations againſt it are out of ancient Canons, how vntrue their confident aſſeuerations, that onely through negligence of Popiſh Prelates the cuſtome of making ſuch kind of Miniſters hath prevayled in the Church of Rome againſt their Canons, and that with vs it is expreſly againſt the Lawes of our owne Gouernment, when a Miniſter doth ſerue as a ſtipendarie Curate, which kind of ſeruice neuertheleſſe the greateſt Rabbines of that part doe altogether follow. For howſoeuer they are loth peraduenture to be named Curates, Stipendaries they are, and the labour they beſtow, is in other mens Cures, a thing not vnlawfull for them to doe, yet vnſeemely for them to condemne which practiſe it. I might here diſcouer the like ouer-ſight throughout all their Diſcourſes, made in behalfe of the peoples pretended right to elect their Miniſters before the Biſhop may lawfully ordaine. But becauſe we haue otherwhere at large diſputed of popular Elections, and of the right of Patronage, wherein is drowned whatſoeuer the people vnder any pretence or colour may ſeeme to challenge about admiſſion and choice of the Paſtors that ſhall feed their ſoules; I cannot ſee what one dutie there is which alwayes ought to goe before Ordination, but only care of the parties worthineſſe, as well for integritie and vertue, as knowledge, yea, for vertue more, in as much as defect of knowledge may ſundry wayes be ſupplyed, but the ſcandall of vicious and wicked life, is a deadly euill.

Of the Learning that ſhould be in Miniſters, their Reſidence, and the number of their Liuings.

81 The truth is, that of all things hitherto mentioned, the greateſt is that threefold blot or blemiſh of notable ignorance, vnconſcionable abſence from the Cures whereof men haue charge, and vnſatiable hunting after ſpirituall

ſpirituall preferments, without eyther care or conſcience of the publike good. Whereof, to the end that wee may conſider as in Gods owne ſight and preſence with all vprightneſſe, ſinceritie and truth, let vs particularly waigh and examine in euery of them; Firſt, how farre forth they are reprooueable by Reaſons and Maximes of common right; Secondly, whether that which our Lawes doe permit, be repugnant to thoſe Maximes, and with what equitie wee ought to iudge of things practiſed in this caſe, neither on the one hand defending that which muſt bee acknowledged out of ſquare, nor on the otherſide condemning raſhly whom we liſt, for whatſoeuer we diſallow. Touching Arguments therefore, taken from the principles of common right, to prooue that Miniſters ſhould be [a] learned, that they ought to be [o] Reſident vpon their Liuings, and that [p] more then one onely Benefice or Spirituall Liuing may not be granted vnto one man, the firſt, becauſe S. *Paul* requireth in a Miniſter abilitie to teach, to conuince, to diſtribute the Word rightly, becauſe alſo the Lord himſelfe hath proteſted, they ſhall be no Prieſts to him which haue reiected knowledge, and becauſe if the Blind lead the Blind, they muſt both needs fall into the Pit; the ſecond, becauſe Teachers are Shepherds whoſe Flockes can bee at no time ſecure from danger, they are Watchmen whom the Enemy doth alwayes beſiege, their labours in the Word and Sacraments admit no intermiſſion, their dutie requireth inſtruction and conference with men in priuate, they are the liuing Oracles of God, to whom the people muſt reſort for counſell, they are commanded to bee Patternes of Holineſſe, Leaders, Feeders, Superuiſors amongſt their owne, it ſhould be their griefe, as it was the Apoſtles to be abſent, though neceſſarily from them ouer whom they haue taken charge; finally, the laſt, becauſe Pluralitie and Reſidence are oppoſite, becauſe the placing of one Clarke in two Churches, is a point of Merchandize and filthy gaine, becauſe no man can ſerue two Maſters, becauſe euery one ſhould remaine in that Vocation whereto he is called, what conclude they of all this? Againſt Ignorance, againſt Non-reſidence, and againſt Pluralitie of Liuings, is there any man ſo raw and dul, but that the Volumes which haue bin written, both of old and of late, may make him in ſo plentifull a cauſe eloquent? For if by that which is *generally* iuſt and requiſite, we meaſure what knowledge there ſhould bee in a Miniſter of the Goſpell of Chriſt, the Arguments which Light of Nature offereth, the Lawes and Statutes which Scripture hath, the Canons that are taken out of ancient Synods, the Decrees, and Conſtitutions of ſincereſt Times, the Sentences of Antiquitie, and in a word, euen euery mans full conſent & conſcience is againſt Ignorance in them that haue charge and cure of Soules. Againe, what auayleth it if wee bee Learned and not Faithfull? or what benefit hath the Church of Chriſt, if there bee in vs ſufficiencie without endeuour or care to doe that good which our place exacteth? Touching the paines and induſtrie therefore, wherewith men are in conſcience bound to attend the worke of their Heauenly Calling, euen as much as in them lyeth, bending thereunto their whole endeuour, without either fraud, ſophiſtication or guile, I ſee not what more effectuall Obligation or Bond of Dutie there ſhould be vrged, then their owne onely Vow and Promiſe made vnto God himſelfe, at the time of their Ordinati-

on.

a *T.C.l.1.p.70.*
o *66.*
p *69.*
1.Tim.3.2.
Tit.1.9.
2.Tim.2.15.
Hoſ.4.6.
Mat.15.14.
Luke 2.8.
Acts 20.2.
1.Sam.1.19.
1.Tim.4.12.
Iohn 10.4.
1.Pet.5.2.
Acts 20.28.
1.Theſſ.2.17.
Concil.Nic.c.15.
Mat.6.24.
1.Cor.7.24.

on. The worke which they haue vndertaken, requireth both care & feare. Their ſloth that negligently performe it, maketh them ſubiect to malediction. Beſides wee alſo know that the fruit of our paines in this Function, is life both to our ſelues and others. And doe we yet need incitements to labour? Shal we ſtop our eares both againſt thoſe coniuring exhortations which Apoſtles, & againſt the fearfull comminations which Prophets haue vttered out of the mouth of God, the one for preuention, the other for reformation of our ſluggiſhnes in this behalfe? S. PAVL, *Attend to your ſelues, and to all the flocke, whereof the holy Ghoſt hath made you ouer-ſeers, to feed the Church of God, which he hath purchaſed with his owne blood. Againe, I charge thee before God and the Lord Ieſus Chriſt, which ſhall iudge the quicke and the dead at his comming, preach the Word, be inſtant.* Acts 20. 27. IEREMIE, *Woe vnto the Paſtors that deſtroy and ſcatter the ſheepe of my paſture, I will viſit you for the wickedneſſe of your workes, ſaith the Lord, the remnant of my ſheepe I will gather together out of all Countries, and will bring them againe to their folds, they ſhall grow and increaſe, and I will ſet vp ſhepheards ouer them, which ſhall feed them.* EZECHIEL, *Should not the ſhepheards, ſhould they not feed the flockes? Yee eate the fat, and yee clothe your ſelues with the wooll, but the weake yee haue not ſtrengthened, the ſicke yee haue not cured, neither haue yee bound vp the broken, nor brought home againe that which was driuen away, yee haue not inquired after that which was loſt, but with crueltie and rigor yee haue ruled. Wherefore, as I liue, ſaith the Lord God, I will require my ſheepe at their hands, nor ſhall the ſhepheards feede themſelues any more, for I will deliuer my ſheepe from their mouthes, they ſhall no more deuoure them.* Ier. 23. 2. Ezech. 34. 2. Nor let vs thinke to excuſe our ſelues, if haply wee labour, though it bee at randome, and ſit not altogether idle abroad. For wee are bound to attend that part of the flocke of Chriſt, whereof the holy Ghoſt hath made vs ouer-ſeers. The reſidence of Miniſters vpon their owne peculiar charge, is by ſo much the rather neceſſarie, for that abſenting themſelues from the place, where they ought to labour, they neither can doe the good which is looked for at their hands, nor reape the comfort which ſweetneth life to them that ſpend it in theſe trauailes vpon their owne. For it is in this as in all things elſe, which are through priuate intereſt dearer, then what concerneth either others wholly, or vs but in part, and according to the rate of a generall regard. As for pluralitie, it hath not onely the ſame inconueniences which are obſerued to grow by abſence, but ouer and beſides, at the leaſt in common conſtruction, a ſhew of that worldly humour which men doe thinke ſhould not raigne ſo high. Now from hence their Collections are as followeth, firſt, a repugnancie or contradiction betweene the Principles of common right, and that which our Lawes in ſpeciall conſiderations haue allowed: ſecondly, a nullitie or fruſtration of all ſuch acts, as are by them ſuppoſed oppoſite to thoſe Principles, an inualiditie in all Ordinations of men vnable to preach, and in all diſpenſations which mitigate the Law of common right for the other two. And why ſo? Forſooth, becauſe whatſoeuer we doe in theſe three caſes, and not by vertue of common right, wee muſt yeeld it of neceſſitie done by warrant of peculiar right or priuiledge. Now a priuiledge is ſaid to be that, that for fauour of certaine perſons commeth forth *againſt* common right; things *prohibited* are diſpenced with, becauſe things *permit-* *Abſtract. p. 117.*

permitted are diſpatched by common right, but things *forbidden* require diſpenſation. By which deſcriptions of a priuiledge and diſpenſation it is (they ſay) apparent, that a priuiledge muſt licence and authorize the ſame, which the Law againſt ignorance, non-reſidence and pluralitie doth infringe, and ſo be a Law contrariant or repugnant to the Law of Nature, and the Law of God, becauſe all the reaſons whereunto the Poſitiue Law of man againſt theſe three was firſt eſtabliſhed, are taken and drawne from the Law of Nature & the Law of God. For anſwer whereunto wee will but leade them to anſwer themſelues. Firſt therefore if they will grant (as they muſt) that all direct oppoſitions of ſpeech require one and the ſelfe-ſame ſubiect, to be meant on both parts where oppoſition is pretended, it will follow that either the maximes of common right doe inforce *the very ſame things* not to be good, which we ſay are good, grounding of our ſelues on the Reaſons, by vertue whereof our priuiledges are eſtabliſhed; or if the one doe not reach vnto that *particular ſubiect*, for which the other haue provided, then is there no contradiction betweene them. In all contradictions, if the one part be true, the other eternally muſt be falſe. And therefore if the Principles of common right, doe at any time truly inforce *that particular* not to bee good, which priuiledges make good, it argueth inuincibly, that ſuch priuiledges haue beene grounded vpon ſome errour. But to ſay, that every priuiledge is oppoſite vnto the principles of common right, becauſe it diſpenſeth with that which common right doth prohibit, hath groſſe abſurditie. For the voice of Equitie and Iuſtice is, that a generall Law doth neuer derogate from a ſpeciall Priuiledge, whereas if the one were contrariant to the other, a generall Law being in force ſhould alwayes diſſolue a Priuiledge. The reaſon why many are deceiued by imagining that ſo it ſhould doe, and why men of better inſight conclude directly it ſhould not, doth reſt in the *ſubiect or matter* it ſelfe, which matter *indefinitely* conſidered in Lawes of common right, is in Priuiledges conſidered as *beſet and limited with ſpeciall circumſtances*, by meanes whereof to them which reſpect it, but by way of generalitie it ſeemeth one and the ſame in both, although it be not the ſame, if once we deſcend to particular conſideration thereof. Precepts doe alwayes propoſe perfection, not ſuch as none can attaine vnto, for then in vaine ſhould we aske or require it at the hands of men, but ſuch perfection as all men muſt ayme at, to the end that as largely as humane prouidence and care can extend it, it may take place. Morall Lawes are the rules of Politique, thoſe Politique, which are made to order the whole Church of God, Rules vnto all particular Churches, and the Lawes of every particular Church, Rules vnto every particular man, within the bodie of the ſame Church. Now becauſe the higher we aſcend in theſe rules, the further ſtill we remooue from thoſe ſpecialties, which being proper to the ſubiect, whereupon our actions muſt worke, are therefore chiefly conſidered by vs, by them leaſt thought vpon that wade altogether in the two firſt kindes of generall directions, their iudgement cannot be exact and ſound, concerning either Lawes of Churches, or Actions of men in particular, becauſe they determine of effects by a part of the cauſes onely out of which they grow, they iudge concluſions by demipremiſes and halfe principles, they lay them in the ballance ſtript from thoſe neceſſarie materiall

teriall circumſtances; which ſhould giue them waight, and by ſhew of falling vneuen with the ſcale of moſt vniuerſall and abſtracted rules, they pronounce that too light which is not, if they had the skill to weigh it. This is the reaſon why men altogether conuerſant in ſtudie, doe know how to teach, but not how to gouerne; men experienced contrariwiſe gouerne well, yet know not which way to ſet downe orderly the Precepts and Reaſons of that they doe. Hee that will therefore iudge rightly of things done, muſt ioyne with his formes and conceits of generall ſpeculation, the matter wherein our actions are conuerſant. For by this ſhall appeare what equitie there is in thoſe Priuiledges and peculiar Grants or Fauours, which otherwiſe will ſeeme repugnant to iuſtice, and becauſe in themſelues conſidered they haue * a ſhew of repugnancie, this deceiueth thoſe great Clarkes, which bearing a priuiledge defined to be *an eſpeciall right brought in by their power and authoritie, that make it for ſome publike benefit againſt the generall courſe of reaſon*, are no able to comprehend how the word *againſt* doth import *exception*, without any *oppoſition* at all. For in as much as the hand of Iuſtice muſt diſtribute to euery particular what is due, and iudge what is due with reſpect had, no leſſe of particular circumſtances then of generall rules and axiomes, it cannot fit all ſorts with one meaſure, the wills, counſels, qualities and ſtates of men being diuers. For example, the Law of common right bindeth all men to keepe their promiſes, performe their compacts, and anſwer the Faith they haue giuen either for themſelues, or others. Notwithſtanding he which bargaineth with one vnder yeeres, can haue no benefit by this allegation, becauſe hee bringeth it againſt a perſon which is exempt from the common rule. Shall we then conclude, that thus to exempt certaine men from the Law of common right, is againſt God, againſt Nature, againſt whatſoeuer may auaile to ſtrengthen and iuſtifie that Law before alleaged, or elſe acknowledge (as the truth is) that ſpeciall cauſes are to be ordered by ſpeciall rules, that if men growne vnto ripe age, diſaduantage themſelues by bargaining, yet what they haue wittingly done, is ſtrong, and in force againſt them, becauſe they are able to diſpoſe and manage their owne affaires, whereas youth for lacke of experience and iudgement, being eaſily ſubiect to circumuention, is therefore iuſtly exempt from the Law of common right, whereunto the reſt are iuſtly ſubiect? This plaine inequalitie betweene men of yeeres, and vnder yeeres, is a cauſe why Equitie and Iuſtice cannot apply equally the ſame generall Rule to both, but ordereth the one by common right, and granteth to the other a ſpeciall priuiledge. Priuiledges are either tranſitorie or permanent. * Tranſitorie, ſuch as ſerue only ſome one turne, or at the moſt extend no farther then to this or that man, with the end of whoſe naturall life they expire; Permanent, ſuch as the vſe whereof doth continue ſtill, for that they belong vnto certaine *kinds* of men and cauſes which neuer die. Of this nature are all immunities and preeminences, which for iuſt conſiderations one ſort of men inioyeth aboue another, both in the Church and Common-wealth, no man ſuſpecting them of contrarietie to any branch of thoſe Lawes or Reaſons, whereupon the generall right is grounded. Now there being generall Lawes & Rules whereby it cannot be denied, but the Church of God ſtandeth bound to prouide that the Miniſtery may be learn'd, that they which haue charge may reſide

* *Ius ſingulare eſt quod contra tenorem rationis propter aliquam vtilitatem authoritate conſtituentium introductum eſt.* Paulus, ff. de Legib.

* *Priuilegium perſonale cum perſona extinguitur, & priuilegium datum actioni tranſit cum actione.* Op. de regulis part 1. 227.

vpon

vpon it, and that it may not be free from them in ſcandalous manner to multiply Eccleſiaſticall liuings, it remaineth in the next place to bee examined, what the Lawes of the Church of England doe admit, which may be thought repugnant to any thing hitherto alledged, and in what ſpeciall conſideration they ſeeme to admit the ſame. Conſidering therefore, that to furniſh all places of Cure in this Realme, it is not an Armie of twelue thouſand learned men that would ſuffice, nor two Vniuerſities that can alwayes furniſh as many as decay in ſo great a number, nor a fourth part of the liuing with Cure, that when they fall are able to yeeld ſufficient maintenance for learned men, is it not plaine, that vnleſſe the greateſt part of the people ſhould bee left vtterly without the publike vſe and exerciſe of Religion, there is no remedie but to take into the Eccleſiaſticall order, a number of men meanely qualified in reſpect of learning? For whatſoeuer we may imagine in our priuate Cloſets, or talke for communication ſake at our Boords, yea, or write in our Bookes, through a notionall conceit of things needfull, for performance of each man dutie, if once we come from the Theorie of learning, to take out ſo many learned men, let them be diligently viewed, out of whom the choyce ſhall be made, and thereby an eſtimate made, what degree of skill wee muſt either admit, or elſe leaue numbers, vtterly deſtitute of guides, and I doubt not but that men indued with ſenſe of common equitie, will ſoone diſcerne, that beſides eminent and competent knowledge, wee are to deſcend to a lower ſtep, receiuing knowledge in that degree, which is but tolerable. When wee commend any man for learning, our ſpeech importeth him to bee more then meanely qualified that way; but when Lawes doe require learning as a qualitie, which maketh capable of any function, our meaſure to iudge a learned man by, muſt bee ſome certaine degree of learning, beneath which we can hold no man ſo qualified. And of euerie man that liſteth may ſet that degree himſelfe, how ſhall wee euer know when Lawes are broken, when kept, ſeeing one man may thinke a lower degree ſufficient, another may iudge them vnſufficient that are not qualified in ſome higher degree. Wherefore of neceſſitie either we muſt haue ſome Iudge in whoſe conſcience they that are thought and pronounced ſufficient, are to be ſo accepted and taken, or elſe the Law it ſelfe is to ſet downe the very loweſt degree of fitneſſe, that ſhall bee allowable in this kind. So that the queſtion doth grow to this iſſue. Saint *Paul* requireth learning in Preſbyters, yea ſuch learning as doth inable them to exhort in doctrine which is ſound, and to diſ. preoue them that gaine-ſay it. What meaſure of abilitie in ſuch things ſhall ſerue to make men capable of that kind of Office, hee doth not himſelfe preciſely determine, but referreth it to the conſcience of *Titus*, and others, which had to deale in ordaining Preſbyters. Wee muſt therefore of neceſſitie make this demand, whether the Church lacking ſuch as the Apoſtle would haue choſen, may with good conſcience take out of ſuch as it hath in a meaner degree of fitneſſe, them that may ſerue to performe the ſeruice of publique Prayer, to adminiſter the Sacraments vnto the People, to ſolemnize Marriage, to viſit the Sicke, & burie the dead, to inſtruct by reading, although by preaching the be not as yet ſo able to benefit and feed Chriſts flocke. Wee conſtantly hold, that in this caſe the Apoſtles Law is not broken. He requireth more in

Titus 1. 9.

Preſbyters

Preſbyters then there is found in many whom the Church of England alloweth. But no man being tied vnto impoſſibilities, to doe that we cannot, we are not bound. It is but a ſtratagem of theirs therefore and a very indirect practice, when they publiſh large declamations to prooue that learning is required in the miniſterie, and to make the ſilly people beleeue that the contrarie is maintained by the Biſhops, and vpheld by the Lawes of the Land, whereas the queſtion in truth is not whether learning be required, but whether a Church wherein there is not ſufficient ſtore of learned men to furniſh all Congregations, ſhould doe better to let thouſands of ſoules grow ſauage, to let them liue without any publique ſeruice of God, to let their children die vnbaptized, to with-hold the benefit of the other Sacrament from them, to let them depart this world like Pagans, without any thing, as much as read vnto them concerning the way of life, then as it doth in this neceſſitie, to make ſuch Preſbyters as are ſo farre forth ſufficient, although they want that abilitie of preaching which ſome others haue. In this point therefore wee obey neceſſitie, and of two euills wee take the leſſe; in the reſt a publique vtilitie is ſought, and in regard thereof ſome certaine inconueniences tolerated, becauſe they are recompenced with greater good. The Law giueth libertie of non-Reſidence for a time to ſuch as will liue in Vniuerſities, if they faithfully there labour to grow in knowledge, that ſo they may afterwards the more edifie and the better inſtruct their Congregations. The Church in their abſence is not deſtitute, the peoples ſaluation not neglected for the preſent time, the time of their abſcence is in the intendment of Law beſtowed to the Churches great aduantage and benefit, thoſe neceſſarie helpes are procured by it, which turne by many degrees more to the peoples comfort in time to come, then if their Paſtors had continually abidden with them. So that the Law doth hereby prouide in ſome part to remedie and helpe that euill, which the former neceſſitie hath impoſed vpon the Church. For compare two men of equall meaneneſſe, the one perpetually reſident, the other abſent for a ſpace, in ſuch ſort as the Law permitteth. Allot vnto both ſome nine yeeres continuance with Cure of ſoules. And muſt not three yeeres abſence in all probabilitie and likelihood, make the one more profitable then the other vnto Gods Church, by ſo much as the increaſe of his knowledge, gotten in thoſe three yeeres, may adde vnto ſixe yeeres trauaile following? For the greater abilitie there is added to the inſtrument, wherewith it pleaſeth God to ſaue ſoules, the more facilitie and expedition it hath to worke that which is otherwiſe hardlier effected. As much may be ſaid touching abſence, granted to them that attend in the families of Biſhops, which Schooles of grauitie, diſcretion and wiſedome, preparing men againſt the time that they come to reſide abroad, are in my poore opinion euen the fitteſt places that any ingenious mind can wiſh to inter into, betweene departure from priuate ſtudie, and acceſſe to a more publike charge of ſoules, yea no leſſe expedient, for men of the beſt ſufficiencie and moſt maturitie in knowledge, then the verie Vniuerſities themſelues are for the ripening of ſuch as be raw. Imployment in the families of Noble men, or in Princes Courts hath another end, for which the ſelfe-ſame leaue is giuen, not without great reſpect to the good of the whole Church. For aſſuredly

redly whoſoeuer doth well obſerue, how much all inferiour things depend vpon the orderly courſes and motions of thoſe greater Orbes, will hardly iudge it either meete or good, that the Angels aſſiſting them ſhould bee driuen to betake themſelues vnto other Stations, although by nature they were not tyed where now they are, but had charge alſo elſewhere, as long as their abſence from beneath might but tolerably bee ſupplyed, and by deſcending their roomes aboue ſhould become vacant. For wee are not to dreame in this caſe of any platforme, which bringeth equally high and low vnto Pariſh Churches, nor of any conſtraint to maintaine at their owne charge men ſufficient for that purpoſe; the one ſo repugnant to the Maieſtie and Greatneſſe of Engliſh Nobilitie, the other ſo improbable and vnlikely to take effect, that they which mention either of both, ſeeme not indeed to haue conceiued what either is. But the eye of the Law is the eye of God, it looketh into the hearts and ſecret diſpoſitions of men, it beholdeth how farre one ſtarre differeth from another in glorie, and as mens ſeuerall degrees require, accordingly it guideth them, granting vnto principall Perſonages priuiledges correſpondent to their high eſtates, and that not onely in Ciuill, but euen in Spirituall affaires, to the end they may loue that Religion the more, which no way ſeeketh to make them vulgar, no way diminiſheth their dignitie and greatneſſe, but to doe them good, doth them honour alſo, and by ſuch extraordinarie fauours teacheth them to bee in the Church of God, the ſame which the Church of God eſteemeth them, more worth then thouſands. It appeareth therefore in what reſpect the Lawes of this Realme haue giuen libertie of non-reſidence to ſome, that their knowledge may be increaſed, and their labours by that meanes be made afterwards the more profitable to others, leſt the houſes of great men ſhould want that daily exerciſe of Religion, wherein their example auayleth as much, yea many times peraduenture more then the Lawes themſelues, with the common ſort. A third thing reſpected both in permitting abſence, and alſo in granting to ſome that libertie of addition or pluralitie, which neceſſarily inforceth their abſence, is a meere both iuſt and conſcionable regard, that as men are in qualitie, and as their ſeruices are in waight for the publike good, ſo likewiſe their rewards and incouragements by ſpeciall priuiledge of Law, might ſomewhat declare how the State it ſelfe doth accept their paines, much abhorring from their beſtiall and ſauage rudeneſſe, which thinke that Oxen ſhould onely labour, and Aſſes feed. Thus to Readers in Vniuerſities, whoſe very paper and booke-expences, their ancient allowances and ſtipends at this day doe either not or hardly ſuſtaine; to Gouernours of Colledges, leſt the great ouer-plus of charges neceſſarily inforced vpon them, by reaſon of their place, and very ſlenderly ſupplied, by meanes of that change in the preſent condition of things, which their Founders could not foreſee; to men call'd away from their Cures, and imployed in waightier buſines, either of the Church or Common-wealth, becauſe to impoſe vpon them a burthen which requireth their abſence, and not to releaſe them from the dutie of Reſidence, were a kind of cruell and barbarous iniuſtice; to Reſidents in Cathedrall Churches, or vpon dignities Eccleſiaſticall, for as much as theſe being roomes of greater Hoſpitalitie, places of more reſpect and conſequence then the reſt, they

are

are the rather to be furniſhed with men of beſt qualitie, and the men for their qualities ſake to bee fauoured aboue others, I ſay vnto all theſe in regard of their worth and merit, the Law hath therefore giuen leaue while themſelues beare waightier burthens, to ſupply inferiour by deputation, and in like conſideration partly, partly alſo by way of honour to learning, Nobilitie and Authoritie permitteth, that men which haue taken Theologicall degrees in Schooles, the Suffraganes of Biſhops, the houſhold Chapplens of men of honour, or in great Offices, the brethren and ſonnes of Lords temporall, or of Knights, if God ſhall mooue the hearts of ſuch to enter at any time into holy Orders, may obtaine to themſelues a faculties or licence to hold two Eccleſiaſticall Liuings though hauing cure, any ſpirituall Perſon of the Queenes Councell three ſuch Liuings, her Chapplens, what number of promotions her ſelfe in her owne Princely wiſedome thinketh good to beſtow vpon them. But, as it fareth in ſuch caſes, the gap which for iuſt conſiderations wee open vnto ſome, letteth in others through corrupt practices, to whom ſuch fauours were neither meant, nor ſhould be communicated. The greatneſſe of the Haruеſt, and the ſcarcitie of able Workemen hath made it neceſſarie, that Law ſhould yeeld to admit numbers of men but ſlenderly and meanely qualified. Hereupon becauſe whom all other worldly hopes haue forſaken, they commonly reſerue miniſteriall Vocation, as their laſt and ſureſt refuge euer open to forlorne men, the Church that ſhould nouriſh them, whoſe ſeruice ſhee needeth, hath obtruded vpon her their ſeruice, that know not otherwiſe how to liue and ſuſtaine themſelues. Theſe finding nothing more eaſie then meanes to procure the writing of a few lines to ſome one or other, which hath authoritie, and nothing more vſuall then too much facilitie in condiſcending vnto ſuch requeſts, are often received into that Vocation whereunto their vnworthineſſe is no ſmall diſgrace. Did any thing more aggrauate the crime of *Ieroboams* prophane Apoſtaſie, then that he choſe to haue his Clergie the ſcumme and refuſe of his whole Land? Let no man ſpare to tell it them, they are not faithfull towards God, that burthen wilfully his Church with ſuch ſwarmes of vnworthy creatures. I will not ſay of all degrees in the Miniſtrie, that which Saint *Chryſoſtome* doth of the higheſt, *He that will vndertake ſo waighty a charge, had need to be a man of great vnderſtanding, rarely aſſiſted with Diuine grace, for integritie of manners, puritie of life, and for all other vertues, to haue in him more then a man*, but ſurely this will I ſay with *Chryſoſtome*, *We need not doubt whether God be highly diſpleaſed with vs, or what the cauſe of his anger is if things of ſo great feare & holines as are the leaſt & loweſt duties of his ſeruice, but browne wilfully on them whoſe not only meane, but lewd & ſcandalous qualitie doth defile whatſoeuer they handle.* Theſe eye-ſores and blemiſhes, in continuall attendants about the Seruice of Gods Sanctuarie, doe make them euery day fewer, that willingly reſort vnto it, till at length all affection and zeale towards God bee extinct in them through a wearieſome contempt of their perſons, which for a time onely liue by Religion, and are for recompence in fine, the death of the Nourſe that feedeth them. It is not obſcure, how inconmodious the Church hath found both this abuſe of the libertie, which Law is enforced to grant, and not onely this, but the like abuſe of that fauour alſo, which Law in other conſidera- *Chryſoſt. de Sacred. l. 3. c. 15.*

tions alreadie mentioned, affoordeth touching reſidence and pluralitie of ſpirituall Linings. Now that which is practiſed corruptly to the detriment & hurt of the Church, againſt the purpoſe of thoſe very Lawes, which notwithſtanding are pretended in defence and iuſtification thereof, wee muſt needes acknowledge no leſſe repugnant to the grounds and principles of common right, then the fraudulent proceedings of Tyrants to the principles of iuſt Soueraignetie. Howbeit not ſo thoſe ſpeciall priuiledges which are but inſtruments wreſted and forced to ſerue malice. There is in the Patriarke of Heathen Philoſophers this precept, [a] *Let no Husband-man, nor no Handy-craftſman be a Prieſt.* The reaſon whereupon he groundeth, is a maxime in the law of Nature. It importeth greatly the good *of all men that God be reuerenced*, with whoſe honour it ſtandeth not that they which are publiquely imployed in his ſeruice, ſhould liue of baſe & mannarie Trades. Now compare herewith the Apoſtles words, [b] *Ye know theſe hands haue miniſtred to my neceſſities, and them that are with me.* What thinke wee? Did the Apoſtle any thing oppoſite herein, or repugnant to the Rules and Maximes of the Law of Nature? The ſelfe-ſame reaſons that accord his actions with the law of Nature ſhall declare, our Priuiledges and his Lawes no leſſe conſonant. Thus therefore we ſee, that although they vrge very colourably the Apoſtles owne ſentences, requiring that a Miniſter ſhould be able to diuide rightly the word of God, that they who are placed in charge, ſhould attend vnto it themſelues, which in abſence they cannot doe, and that they which haue diuers Cures, muſt of neceſſitie be abſent from ſome, whereby the Law Apoſtolique ſeemeth apparently broken, which Law requiring attendance, cannot otherwiſe bee vnderſtood, then ſo as to charge them with perpetuall reſidence: againe, though in euery of theſe cauſes, they infinitely heape vp the Sentences of Fathers, the Decrees of Popes, the ancient Edicts of Imperiall authoritie, our owne Nationall Lawes & Ordinances prohibiting the ſame, and grounding euermore their prohibitions, partly on the Lawes of God, and partly on reaſons drawne from the light of Nature, yet hereby to gather and inferre contradiction betweene thoſe Lawes which forbid indefinitely, and ours which in certaine caſes haue allowed the ordaining of ſundry Miniſters, whoſe ſufficiencie for learning is but meane, againſt the licenſing of ſome to be abſent from their Flockes, and of others to hold more then one onely Liuing which hath cure of Soules, I ſay, to conclude repugnancie betweene theſe eſpeciall permiſſions, & the former generall prohibitions, which ſet not downe their owne limits, is erronious, and the manifeſt cauſe thereof ignorance in differences of matter which both ſorts of Law concerne. If then the conſiderations bee reaſonable, iuſt and good, whereupon wee ground whatſoeuer our Lawes haue by ſpeciall right permitted; if onely the effects of abuſed Priuiledges be repugnant to the Maximes of common right, this maine foundation of repugnancie being broken, whatſoeuer they haue built thereupon, falleth neceſſarily to ground. Whereas therefore, vpon ſurmiſe or vaine ſuppoſall of oppoſition betweene our ſpeciall, and the principles of common right, they gather that ſuch as are with vs ordained Miniſters, before they can preach, be neither lawfull, becauſe the Lawes already mentioned, forbid generally to create ſuch, neither are they indeed Miniſters, although wee commonly

a Ἔτι γεωργὸν ἔτι βάναυσον ἱερέα καταστῆσαι δεῖ γὰρ τῶν μὲν τιμᾶσθαι τοὺς θεούς. Ariſt. Po. 7. c. 9.

b *Act.* 20. 34. 1. *Cor.* 4. 12. 1. *Theſ.* 2. 9. 2. *Theſ.* 3. 8.

monly ſo name them, but whatſoeuer they execute by vertue of ſuch, their pretended vocation is voide; that all our graunts and tolerations, as well of this as the reſt are fruſtrate and of no effect, the perſons that enioy them poſſeſſe them wrongfully, and are depriuable at all bowers; finally that other iuſt and ſufficient remedie of euils there can bee none beſides the vtter abrogation of theſe our mitigations, and the ſtrict eſtabliſhment of former ordinances to be abſolutely executed whatſoeuer follow, albeit the anſwere already made in diſcouerie of the weake and vnſound foundation whereupon they haue built theſe erronious collections may bee thought ſufficient, yet becauſe our deſire is rather to ſatisfie if it be poſſible, then to ſhake them off, wee are with very good will contented to declare the cauſes of all particulars more formally and largely, then the equitie of our owne defence doth require. There is crept into the minds of men, at this day a ſecret pernicious and peſtilent conceit that the greateſt perfection of a Chriſtian man doth conſiſt in diſcouerie of other mens faults, and in wit to diſcourſe of our owne profeſſion. When the World moſt abounded with iuſt, righteous and perfect men, their chiefeſt ſtudie was the exerciſe of pietie, wherein for their ſafeſt direction, they reuerently harkened to the readings of the Law of God, they kept in mind the Oracles and Aphoriſmes of wiſedome, which tended vnto vertuous life, if any ſcruple of Conſcience did trouble them for matter of Actions which they tooke in hand, nothing was attempted before counſell and aduiſe were had for feare leaſt raſhly they might offend. Wee are now more confident, not that our knowledge and iudgement is riper, but becauſe our deſires are another way. Their ſcope was obedience, ours is skill; their endeuour was reformation of life, [a] our vertue nothing but to heare gladly the reproofe of vice; they in the practiſe of their religion wearied chiefly their knees and hands, we eſpecially our eares & tongues. We are growne as in many things elſe, ſo in this to a kind of intemperancie, which (only ſermons excepted) hath almoſt brought all other duties of religion out of taſte. At the leaſt they are not in that account and reputation which they ſhould bee. Now becauſe men bring all religion in a manner to the only office of hearing ſermons, if it chaunce that they who are thus conceited doe imbrace any ſpeciall opinion different from other men, the Sermons that relliſh not that opinion, can in no wiſe pleaſe their appetite. Such therefore as preach vnto them, but hit not the ſtring they looke for, are receiued as vnprofitable, the reſt as vnlawfull, and indeede no Miniſters, if the faculties of ſermons want. For why? A Miniſter of the Word ſhould, they ſay, bee able rightly to *diuide* the Word, Which Apoſtolique Canon, many thinke they doe well obſerue, when in opening the ſentences of holy Scripture they draw all things fauourably ſpoken vnto one ſide, but whatſoeuer is reprehenſiue ſeuere and ſharpe, they haue others on the contrarie part whom that muſt alwayes concerne, by which their ouer partiall and vnindifferent proceeding while they thus labour amongſt the people to diuide the Word they make the Word a meane to diuide and diſtract the people.

[a] Ἀλλ' ἐν πολλοῖς τοῦτο μὲν ὁ σπουδαῖος ἴσως ἐστὶ τὸ μὴ λίαν περιφέρεσθαι πρὸς ἡδονάς, ἀλλὰ μετρίως χαίρειν ἐπὶ τοῖς καλοῖς πράγμασιν, ἢ ἔστιν ἐν ὀλίγοις συνεθίσαι· ἴσως γὰρ τοῦτο καὶ τοῖς λόγοις τοῖς περὶ τῶν ἠθῶν καὶ τοῖς ἀκούουσιν ἐν ἅπασι μάλιστα ἁρμόττει· διὰ τὸ ἐν ἡσυχίᾳ καὶ μὴ ὑπ' ἄλλων ἀναγκαζομένους ἄρχειν τοῦ πράττειν τὰ τοιαῦτα· ὁ γὰρ κατὰ τὸν λόγον ἐνεργῶν ἐν τούτοις οὐδὲν διοίσει τοῦ κατὰ τὴν ἀρετὴν ἐνεργοῦντος, ἐὰν ὦσι τοιοῦτοι· διὸ τὸ μὲν ἀκροατὴν εἶναι τῶν ἠθικῶν, Arist. Eth. lib. 2. cap. 5.

ὀρθοτομῶν *to diuide aright*, doth not in the Apoſtles writings, ſoundneſſe of doctrine onely, and in meaning ſtandeth oppoſite to καινολογῶν *the broaching of new opinions againſt that which is receiued*. For queſtionleſſe the firſt things deliuered to the Church of Chriſt, were pure and ſincere Truth. Which whoſoeuer did afterwards oppugne could not chooſe but diuide the Church into two moities, in which diuiſion, ſuch as taught what was firſt beleiued helpe the truer part, the contrarie ſide in that they were teachers of noueltie erred. For preuention of which euill there are in this Church many ſingular and well deuiſed remedies, as namely the vſe of ſubſcribing to the Articles of religion before admiſſion to degrees of learning, or to any Eccleſiaſticall liuing, the cuſtome of reading the ſame Articles and of approouing them in publike Aſſemblies whereſoeuer men haue benefices with cure of ſoules, the order of teſtifying vnder their hands allowance of the Booke of common Prayer, and the Booke of ordayning Miniſters; finally, the Diſcipline and moderate ſeueritie which is vſed eyther in other wiſe correcting or ſilencing them that trouble and diſturbe the Church with Doctrines which tend vnto Innouation, it being better that the Church ſhould want altogether the benefit of ſuch mens labours, then indure the miſchiefe of their inconformitie to good Lawes; in which caſe if any repine at the courſe and proceedings of Iuſtice, they muſt learne to content themſelues with the anſwere of *M. Curius*, which had ſometime occaſion to cut off one from the Body of the Common-wealth, in whoſe behalfe becauſe it might haue beene pleaded that the partie was a man ſeruiceable, he therefore began his iudiciall ſentence with this preamble, *non eſſe opus Reip. eo tiue qui parere neſciret; The Common-wealth needeth men of qualitie, yet neuer thoſe men which haue not learned how to obey*. But the wayes which the Church of England hath taken to prouide that they who are Teachers of others may doe it ſoundly, that the Puritie and Vnitie as well of auncient Diſcipline as Doctrine may be vpheld, that auoyding ſingularities, we may all glorifie God with one heart, and one tougue, they of all men do leaſt approoue, that moſt vrge the Apoſtles Rule and Canon. For which cauſe they alleage it not ſo much to that purpoſe, as to prooue that vnpreaching Miniſters (for ſo they terme them) can haue no true nor lawfull calling in the Church of God. Saint *Auguſtine* hath ſaid of the will of man, that *ſimply to will proceedeth from Nature, but our well-willing is from Grace*. We ſay as much of the Miniſter of God, *publikely to teach and inſtruct the Church, is neceſſary in euery Eccleſiaſticall Miniſter, but abilitie to teach by Sermons is a Grace which God doth beſtow on them whom he maketh ſufficient for the commendable diſcharge of their dutie*. That therefore wherein a Miniſter differeth from other Chriſtian men, is not as ſome haue childiſhly imagined, the *ſound preaching of the Word of God*, but as they are lawfully and truely Gouernours to whom authoritie of Regiment is giuen in the Common-wealth, according to the order which Politie hath ſet, ſo Canonicall ordination in the Church of Chriſt is that which maketh a lawfull Miniſter, *as touching the validitie of any Act which appertayneth to that vocation*. The cauſe why Saint *Paul* willed *Timothy* not to bee ouerhaſtie in ordayning Miniſters, was (as wee very well may coniecture) becauſe impoſition of hands doth conſecrate and make them Miniſters, whether they haue

Valer. l. 6. c. 3.

Ox. mem. p. 21.

If want of learning and skill to preach did fruſtrate their Vocation, Miniſters ordayned before they be growne vnto that maturitie, ſhould receiue new Ordination, whenſoeuer it chanceth, that ſtudie and induſtrie doth make them afterwards more able to performe the Office, then which what conceit can bee more abſurd? Was not Saint *Auguſtine* himſelfe contented to admit an Aſſiſtant in his owne Church, a man of ſmall Erudition, conſidering that what hee wanted in knowledge, was ſupplied by thoſe vertues, which made his life a better Orator, then more learning could make others whoſe conuerſation was leſſe holy? Were the Prieſts, ſithence *Moſes*, all able and ſufficient men, learnedly to interpret the Law of God? or was it euer imagined, that this defect ſhould fruſtrate what they executed, and depriue them of right vnto any thing they claimed by vertue of their Prieſthood? Surely, as in Magiſtrates, the want of thoſe gifts which their Office needeth, is cauſe of iuſt imputation, of blame in them that wittingly chooſe vnſufficient and vnfit men when they might doe otherwiſe, and yet therefore is not their choice void, nor euerie action of Magiſtracie fruſtrate in that reſpect. So whether it were of neceſſitie, or euen of verie careleſneſſe, that men vnable to preach ſhould bee taken in Paſtors roomes, neuertheleſſe, it ſeemeth to bee an errour in them, which thinke that the lacke of any ſuch perfection defeateth vtterly their Calling. To wiſh that all men were ſo qualified, as their Places and Dignities require, to haue all ſiniſter and corrupt dealings which herevnto are any let; to couet ſpeedie redreſſe of thoſe things whatſoeuer, whereby the Church ſuſtayned detriment, theſe good and vertuous deſires cannot offend any but vngodly minds. Notwithſtanding, ſome in the true vehemencie, and others vnder the faire pretence of theſe deſires, haue aduentured that which is ſtrange, that which is violent and vniuſt. There are which in confidence of their generall allegations concerning the knowledge, the Reſidence and the ſingle Liuings of Miniſters, preſume not onely to annihilate the ſolemne Ordinations of ſuch as the Church muſt of force admit, but alſo to vrge a kind of vniuerſall proſcription againſt them; to ſet downe Articles, to draw Commiſſions, and almoſt to name themſelues of the *Quorum*, for inquirie into mens eſtates and dealings, whom at their pleaſure they would depriue and make obnoxious to what puniſhment themſelues liſt, and that not for any violation of Lawes, either Spirituall or Ciuill, but becauſe men haue truſted the Lawes too farre, becauſe they haue held and inioyed the libertie which Law granteth, becauſe they had not the wit to conceiue as theſe men doe, that Lawes were made to intrap the ſimple, by permitting thoſe things in ſhew and appearance, which indeed ſhould neuer take effect, for as much as they were but granted with a ſecret condition to bee put in practice, *If they ſhould bee profitable and agreeable with the Word of God*, which condition failing in all Miniſters that cannot preach, in all that are abſent from their Liuings, and in all that haue diuers Liuings (for ſo it muſt bee preſumed, though neuer as yet prooued) therefore as men which haue broken the Law of God, and Nature, they are depriueable at all houres. Is this the Iuſtice of that Diſcipline whereunto all Chriſtian Churches muſt ſtoope and ſubmit themſelues? is this the equitie wherewith they labour to reforme the World? I will no way

The Author of the *Abſtract.*

way diminish the force of those Arguments whereupon they ground. But if it please them to behold the visage of these collections in another Glasse, there are Ciuill as well as Ecclesiasticall Vnsufficiencies, Non-residences, and Pluralities; yea, the reasons which Light of Nature hath ministred against both are of such affinitie, that much lesse they cannot inforce in the one then in the other. When they that beare great Offices, bee persons of meane worth, the contempt whereinto their authoritie groweth, [n] weakeneth the sinew of the whole State. Notwithstanding, where many Gouernors are needfull, and they not many, whom their qualitie can commend, [o] the penurie of worthier must needs make the meaner sort of men capable: Cities in the absence of their Gouernors, are as ships wanting Pilots at sea. But were it therefore [p] Iustice to punish whom superiour Authoritie pleaseth to call from home, or alloweth to be imployed elsewhere? In committing [q] many Offices to one man, there are apparantly these inconueniences, the Commonwealth doth lose the benefit of seruiceable men, which might be trayned vp in those roomes; it is not easie for one man to discharge many mens duties well; in seruice of Warfare and Nauigation, were it not the ouerthrow of whatsoeuer is vndertaken, if one or two should ingrosse such Offices as being now diuided into many hands, are discharged with admirable both perfection and expedition? Neuertheless, be it farre from the minde of any reasonable man to imagine, that in these considerations, Princes either ought of dutie to reuoke all such kind of grants, though made with very speciall respect to the extraordinarie merit of certayne men, or might in honour demand of them the resignation of their Offices, with speech to this or the like effect, *For as much as you* A. B. *by the space of many yeeres, haue done vs that faithfull seruice in most important affaires, for which wee alwayes iudging you worthy of much honour, haue therefore committed vnto you from time to time, very great and waightie Offices, which hitherto you quietly inioy; we are now giuen to vnderstand, that certaine graue and learned men haue found in the bookes of ancient Philosophers, diuers Arguments drawne from the common light of Nature, and declaring the wonderfull discommodities which vse to grow by Dignities thus heaped together in one, For which cause, at this present, moued in conscience and tender care for the publike good, we haue summoned you hither, to dispossesse you of those places, and to depose you from those roomes, whereof indeed by vertue of our owne grant, yet against reason, you are possessed. Neither ought you, or any other to thinke vs rash, light, or inconstant, in so doing: For we tell you plaine, that herein we will both say and doe that thing which the noble and wise Emperor sometime both said, and did, in a matter of farre lesse waight then this,* Quod inconsultò fecimus, consultò reuocamus, *That which we vnaduisedly haue done, we aduisedly will reuoke and vndo.* Now for mine owne part, the greatest harme I would wish them who thinke that this were consonant with equitie and right, is, that they might but liue where all things are with such kind of Iustice ordered, till experience haue taught them to see their error. As for the last thing which is incident into the cause whereof we speake, namely, what course were the best and safest whereby to remedie such euils as the Church of God may sustaine, where the present libertie of Law is turned to great abuse, some light we may receiue from abroad, not vnprofitable for direction of Gods owne

[n] μεγάλων χώρια καθεστῶτες ἀν ἰσχνὰς ὦσι μεγάλα βλάπτουσι. Aristo.

[o] *Nec ignoro maximos honores ad tarum dignos penuria malorum solere deferri.* Mamertin. paneg. ad Iulian.

[p] *Neque enim æquum visum est absentem reipub. causa inter reos referri dum reipub. operatur.* Vlpian. l. 15. *si maritus, ad legem* Iulian. *de adulter.*

[q] *Arist. Polit. lib* 2. *cap.* 11. See the like Preamble framed by the Author of the *Abstract*, where hee fancieth a Bishop, deposing one vnapt to preach, whom himselfe had before ordayned.

owne ſacred Houſe and Family. The Romanes being a people full of generoſitie, and by nature courteous, did no way more ſhew their gentle diſpoſition, then by eaſie condeſcending to ſet their bondmen at libertie. Which benefit in the happier and better times of the Common-wealth, was beſtowed for the moſt part as an ordinarie reward of vertue, ſome few now and then alſo purchaſing freedome with that which their iuſt labours could gaine, & their honeſt frugalitie ſaue. But as the Empire daily grew vp, ſo the manners and conditions of men decayed, wealth was honored, and vertue not cared for, neither did any thing ſeeme opprobrious out of which there might ariſe commoditie and profit, ſo that it could be no maruell in a State thus far degenerated, if when the more ingenious ſort were become baſe, the baſer laying aſide all ſhame and face of honeſtie, did ſome by robberies, burglaries, and proſtitutions of their bodies gather wherewith to redeeme libertie; others obtaine the ſame at the hands of their Lords, by ſeruing them as vile inſtruments in thoſe attempts, which had beene worthy to be reuenged with ten thouſand deaths. A learned, iudicious, and polite Hiſtorian, hauing mentioned ſo foule diſorders, giueth his iudgement & cenſure of them in this ſort, *Such eye-ſores in the Commonwealth haue occaſioned many vertuous minds, to condemne altogether the cuſtome of granting liberty to any bond-ſlaue, for as much as it ſeemed a thing abſurd, that a people which cõmanded all the world, ſhould conſiſt of ſo vile refuſe. But neither is this the only cuſtom wherein the profitable inuentions of former are depraued by latter Ages, and for my ſelfe I am not of their opinion that wiſh the abrogation of ſo groſly vſed cuſtomes, which abrogation might peraduenture be cauſe of greater inconueniences enſuing, but as much as may be I would rather aduiſe that redreſſe were ſought, through the carefull prouidence of chiefe Rulers & Ouerſeers of the Cõmonwealth, by whom a yeerly ſuruey being made of all that are manumiſed, they which ſeeme worthy might be taken and diuided into Tribes with other Citizens, the reſt diſperſed into Colonies abroad, or otherwiſe diſpoſed of, that the Commonwealth might ſuſtaine neither harme nor diſgrace by them.* The waies to meet with diſorders, growing by abuſe of Lawes, are not ſo intricate and ſecret eſpecially in our caſe, that men ſhould need either much aduertiſement or long time for the ſearch thereof. And if counſell to that purpoſe may ſeeme needful, this Church (God be thanked) is not deſtitute of men indued with ripe iudgement, whenſoeuer any ſuch thing ſhall be thought neceſſary. For which end at this preſent to propoſe any ſpeciall inuentions of mine owne, might argue in a man of my place & calling more preſumption perhaps then wit. I wil therefore leane it intire vnto grauer conſideration, ending now with requeſt only & moſt earneſt ſute, firſt, that they which giue Ordination, would, as they tender the very honor of Ieſus Chriſt, the ſafetie of men, & the endleſſe good of their own ſoules, take heed, leſt vnneceſſarily, and through their default the Church be found worſe, or leſſe furniſhed then it might be: ſecondly, that they which by right of Patronage haue power to preſent vnto ſpiritual Liuings, & may in that reſpect much damnifie the Church of God, would, for the eaſe of their own account in that dreadful day, ſomwhat conſider what it is to betray for gaine the ſoules which Chriſt hath redeemed with bloud, what to violate the ſacred bond of fidelity & ſolemne promiſe, giuen at the firſt to God & his Church by them,

Dionyſ. Halicar. Rom. antiq. l. 4.

from

from whoſe originall intereſt together with the ſelfe-ſame Title of right, the ſame Obligation of dutie likewiſe is deſcended: Thirdly, that they vnto whom the granting of Diſpenſations is committed; or which otherwiſe haue any ſtroke in the diſpoſition of ſuch preferments as appertayne vnto learned men, would bethinke themſelues what it is to reſpect any thing either aboue or beſides merit, conſidering how hardly the world taketh it, when to men of commendable note and qualitie there is ſo little reſpect had, or ſo great vnto them whoſe deſerts are very meane, that nothing doth ſeeme more ſtrange then the one ſort, becauſe they are not accounted of, and the other becauſe they are, it being euery mans hope and expectation in the Church of God, eſpecially that the onely purchaſe of greater rewards ſhould be alwayes greater deſerts, and that nothing ſhould euer bee able to plant a Thorne where a Vine ought to grow: Fourthly, that honorable Perſonages, and they, who by vertue of any principall Office in the Common-wealth are inabled to qualifie a certayne number, and make them capable of fauours or faculties aboue others, ſuffer not their names to be abuſed, contrarie to the true intent & meaning of wholeſome Lawes, by men in whom there is nothing notable beſides couetouſneſſe and ambition: Fiftly, that the grauer and wiſer ſort in both Vniuerſities, or whoſoeuer they be, with whoſe approbation the markes and recogniſances of all learning are beſtowed, would thinke the Apoſtles caution againſt vnaduiſed Ordinations, not impertinent or vnneceſſary to be borne in minde, euen when they grant thoſe degrees of Schooles, which degrees are not *gratiæ gratis datæ*, kindneſſes beſtowed by way of humanitie, but they are *gratiæ gratum facientes*, fauours which alwaies imply a teſtimonie giuen to the Church and Commonwealth, concerning mens ſufficiency for manners and knowledge; a teſtimonie, vpon the credit whereof ſundrie Statutes of the Realme are built, a teſtimonie ſo far auaileable, that nothing is more reſpected for the warrant of diuers mens abilities, to ſerue in the affaires of the Realme, a teſtimonie wherein if they violate that Religion wherewith it ought to bee alwayes giuen, and doe thereby induce into errour ſuch as deeme it a thing vnciuill to call the credit thereof in queſtion, let them looke that God ſhall returne backe vpon their heads, and cauſe them in the ſtate of their owne Corporations, to feele either one way or other the puniſhment of thoſe harmes, which the Church through their negligence doth ſuſtayne in that behalfe: Finally, and to conclude, that they who inioy the benefit of any ſpeciall Indulgence or fauour, which the Lawes permit, would as wel remember what in dutie towards the Church, and in conſcience towards God they ought to doe, as what they may doe by vſing to their owne aduantage whatſoeuer they ſee tolerated, no man being ignorant that the cauſe why abſence in ſome caſes hath beene yeelded vnto, and in equitie thought ſufferable, is the hope of greater fruit through induſtrie elſewhere, the reaſon likewiſe wherefore pluralities are allowed vnto men of note, a very ſouereigne and ſpeciall cure, that as Fathers in the ancient world did declare the preeminence of prioritie in birth, by doubling the worldly portions of their firſt borne; ſo the Church by a courſe not vnlike in aſſigning mens rewards, might teſtifie an eſtimation, had proportionably of their vertues, according to the ancient rule Apoſtolike, *They which excell in labour, ought to*

excell

excell in labour ought to excell in honour, and therefore vnleſſe they anſwer faithfully the expectation of the Church herein, vnleſſe ſincerely they bend their wits day and night, both to ſow becauſe they reape, and to ſow as much more aboundantly, as they reape more aboundantly then other men, whereunto by their very acceptance of ſuch benignities, they formally binde themſelues, let them be well aſſured that the honie which they eate with fraude, ſhall turne in the end into true gall, for as much as lawes are the ſacred image of his wiſdome who moſt ſeuerely puniſheth thoſe colourable and ſubtle crimes that ſeldome are taken within the walke of humaine Iuſtice. I therefore conclude that the grounds and maximes of common right whereupon ordinations of Miniſters vnable to preach, tolerations of abſence from their cures, and the multiplications of their ſpirituall liuings are diſproued, doe but indefinitely enforce them vnlawfull, not vnlawfull vniuerſally and without exception; that the lawes which indefinitely are againſt all theſe things, and the Priuiledges which make for them in certaine caſes are not the one repugnant to the other, that the Lawes of God and nature are violated through the effects of abuſed Priuiledges; that neither our ordinations of men vnable to make ſermons, nor our diſpenſations for the reſt can be iuſtly proued fruſtrate by vertue of any ſuch ſurmiſed oppoſition betweene the ſpeciall Lawes of this Church which haue permitted, and thoſe generall which are alledged to diſproue the ſame; that when priuiledges by abuſe are growne incommodious, there muſt be redreſſe; that for remedie of ſuch euils, there is no neceſſitie, the Church ſhould abrogate either in whole or in part, the ſpecialties before mentioned; and that the moſt to be deſired were a voluntarie reformation thereof on all hands which may giue paſſage vnto any abuſe.

For the mayne hypotheſis or foundation of theſe concluſions, let that before ſet downe in the 9. be red together with this laſt the 81. Paragraph.

FINIS

Certayne

DIVINE TRACTATES, and other Godly SERMONS.

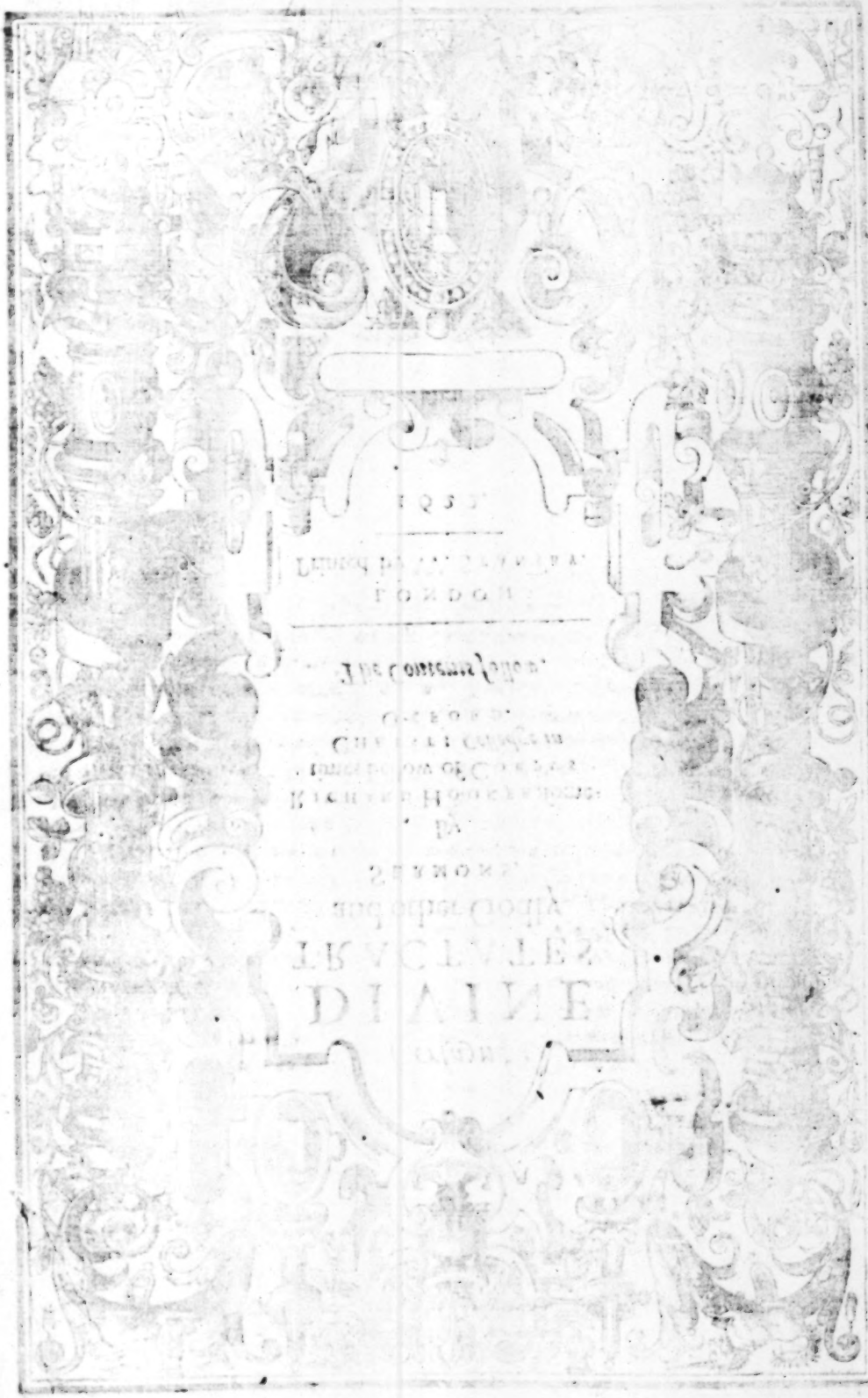
By

RICHARD HOOKER, sometimes Fellow of CORPVS CHRISTI *Colledge in* OXFORD.

The Contents follow.

LONDON
Printed by W. STANSBY.

1622.



TO THE READER.

THe pleasures of thy spacious walkes in Master HOOKERS Temple-Garden (*not vnfitly so called, both for the* Temple *whereof he was* Master, *and the Subiect*, Ecclesiasticall Politie) *doe promise acceptance to these* Flowers, *planted and watered by the same hand, and for thy sake composed into this Posie. Sufficiently are they commended, by their fragrant smell, in the dogmaticall Truth; by their beautifull colours, in the accurate stile; by their medicinable vertue, against some diseases in our neighbour-Churches now proning epidemicall, and threatning farther infection; by their strict feature and spreading nature, growing from the root of* Faith (*which, as here is proued, can neuer be rooted vp*) *and extending the branches of* Charitie *to the couering of* Noahs nakednesse, *opening the windowes of* Hope *to mens mistie conceits of their bemisted forefathers. Thus and more then thus, doe the workes commend themselues; the Work-man needs a better workman to commend Him* (ALEXANDERS *picture requires* APELLES *his pencill*) *nay, he needs it not,* His owne workes commend him in the gates, *and* being dead, he yet speaketh; *the syllables of that memorable name,* Master RICHARD HOOKER, *proclayming more, then if I should here stile him a painefull Student, a profound Scholer, a iudicious Writer, with other due titles of his honour. Receiue then this posthume Orphan, for his owne, yea for thine owne sake: and if the Printer hath with ouer-much haste, like* MEPHIBOSHETHS *Nurse, lamed the Child with slipping and falling, yet be thou* DAVIDS *mind,* Shew kindnesse to him for his Father IONATHANS sake. *God grant that the rest of his brethren be not more then lamed, and that as* SAVLS three sonnes died the same day with him, *so those Three promised to perfect his* Politie, *with other issues of that learned braine, be not buried in the graue with their renowned Father. Farewell.*

W. S.

The Contents of theſe Treatiſes following.

1. *A Supplication made to the Counſell by Maſter* WALTER TRAVERS.

2. *Maſter* HOOKERS *anſwere to the Supplication that Maſter* TRAVERS *made to the Counſell.*

3. *A learned Diſcourſe of Iuſtification, Workes, and how the foundation of Faith is ouer-throwne.*

4. *A learned Sermon of the nature of Pride.*

5. *A Remedie againſt Sorrow and Feare, deliuered in a Funerall Sermon.*

6. *Of the certainty and perpetuity of Faith in the Elect: eſpecially of the Prophet* HABAKKUKS *Faith.*

7. *Two Sermons vpon part of Saint* IAMES *Epiſtle.*

W. S.

A SVPPLICATION MADE TO THE COVNCELL BY MASTER WALTER TRAVERS.

RIGHT Honourable, the manifold benefits which all the Subiects within this Dominion do at this present, and haue many yeeres enioyed, vnder her Maiesties most happy and prosperous raigne, by your godly wisedome, and carefull watching ouer this estate night and day: I truely and vnfainedly acknowledge from the bottome of my heart, ought worthily to binde vs all, to pray continually to Almightie God for the continuance and encrease of the life and good estate of your Honours, and to be readie with all good duties to satisfie and serue the same to our power. Besides publique benefites common vnto all, I must needs, and doe willingly confesse my selfe to stand bound by most speciall obligation to serue and honour you more then any other, for the honourable fauour it hath pleased you to vouchsafe both oftentimes heretofore, and also now of late, in a matter more deare vnto me then any earthly commoditie, that is, the vpholding and furthering of my seruice in the ministring of the Gospell of Iesus Christ. For which cause, as I haue beene alwaies carefull so to carrie my selfe as I might by no meanes giue occasion to be thought vnworthie of so great a benefit, so doe I still, next vnto her Maiesties gracious countenance, hold nothing more deare and precious vnto me, then that I may alwaies remaine in your Honours fauor, which hath oftentimes bin helpfull and comfortable vnto me in my Ministerie, and to all such as reaped any fruit of my simple and faithfull labour. In which dutifull regard, I humbly beseech your Honours to vouchsafe to doe me this grace, to conceiue nothing of me otherwise then according to the dutie wherein I ought to liue, by any information against me, before your Honours haue heard my answere, and been throughly informed of the matter. Which although it be a thing, that your

wiſdomes, not in fauour, but in iuſtice yeeld to all men: yet the ſtate of the calling vnto the Miniſterie, whereunto it hath pleaſed God of his goodneſſe to call me, though vnworthieſt of all, is ſo ſubiect to miſ-information, as except we may find this fauour with your Honours, wee cannot looke for any other, but that our vnindifferent parties may eaſily procure vs to be hardly eſteemed of; and that we ſhall be made like the poore fiſher-boates in the Sea, which euery ſwelling waue and billow taketh and runneth ouer. Wherein my eſtate is yet harder then any others of my ranke and calling, who are indeed to fight againſt fleſh and bloud in what part ſoeuer of the Lords hoſt and field they ſhall ſtand marſhalled to ſerue, yet many of them deale with it naked and vnfurniſhed of weapons: but my ſeruice was in a place where I was to encounter with it well appointed and armed with skill and with authoritie, whereof as I haue alwaies thus deſerued, and therefore haue bin carefull by all good meanes to entertaine ſtill your Honors fauorable reſpect of me, ſo haue I ſpecial cauſe at this preſent, wherein miſ-information to the Lord Archbiſhop of Canterburie, and other of the high Commiſſion hath bin able ſo farre to preuaile againſt me, that by their letter they haue inhibited me to preach, or execute any act of Miniſterie in the Temple or elſewhere, hauing neuer once called me before them to vnderſtand by mine anſwere the truth of ſuch things as had bin enformed againſt mee. Wee haue a ſtorie in our bookes, wherein the Phariſes proceeding againſt our Sauiour Chriſt without hauing heard him, is reproued by an honorable Counſeller (as the Euangeliſt doth tearme him) ſaying, Doth our law iudge a man before it heare him, and know what he hath done? Which I doe not mention, to the end that by an indirect and couert ſpeech I might ſo compare thoſe, who haue without euer hearing me, pronounced a heauie ſentence againſt me, for, notwithſtanding ſuch proceedings, I purpoſe by Gods grace to carrie my ſelfe towards them in all ſeeming dutie agreeable to their places: much leſſe doe I preſume to liken my cauſe to our Sauiour Chriſts, who hold it my chiefeſt honor and happineſſe to ſerue him, though it be but among the hindes and hired ſeruants, that ſerue him in the baſeſt corners of his houſe. But my purpoſe in mentioning it, is, to ſhew by the iudgement of a Prince and great man in Iſrael, that ſuch proceeding ſtandeth not with the law of God, and in a princely patterne to ſhew it to be a noble part of an honorable Counceller, not to allow of indirect dealings, but to allow and affect ſuch a courſe in iuſtice, as is agreeable to the law of God. We haue alſo a plaine rule in the word of God, not to proceed any otherwiſe againſt any Elder of the Church; much leſſe againſt one that laboureth in the word and in teaching: which rule is deliuered with this moſt earneſt charge and obteſtation, I beſeech and charge thee in the ſight of God, and the Lord Ieſus Chriſt, and the elect Angels, that thou keepe thoſe [rules] without preferring one before another, doing nothing of partialitie, or enclining to either part; with Apoſtolicall and moſt earneſt charge, I referre it to your Honors wiſdome how it hath bin regarded in ſo heauie a iudgement againſt mee, without euer hearing my cauſe, and whether, as hauing God before their eies, and the Lord Ieſus, by whom all former iudgements ſhall be tried againe, and as in the preſence of the elect Angels witneſſes, obſeruers of the regiment of the Church, they haue proceeded thus to ſuch a ſentence. They alleage indeed

1. *Tim.* 5. *verſ* 29, 21.

two

two reasons in their letters whereupon they restraine my Ministerie, which, if they were as strong against me as they are supposed, yet I referre to your Honors wisdomes, whether the qualitie of such an offence as they charge me with, which is in effect but an indiscretion, deserue so grieuous a punishment both to the Church and me, in taking away my Ministerie, and that poore little commoditie which it yeeldeth for the necessarie maintenance of my life; if so vnequall a ballancing of faults and punishments, should haue place in the commonwealth, surely we should shortly haue no actions vpon the case, nor of trespasse, but all should be pleas of the Crowne, nor any man amerced, or fined, but for euery light offence put to his ransome. I haue credibly heard, that some of the Ministerie haue bin committed for grieuous transgressions of the lawes of God and men, being of no abilitie to doe other seruice in the Church then to reade, yet hath it bin thought charitable and standing with Christian moderation and temperancie, not to deprive such of ministery and beneficency, but to inflict some more tolerable punishment. Which I write not because such as I thinke, were to be fauoured, but to shew how vnlike their dealing is with me, being through the goodnesse of God not to be touched with any such blame, and one who according to the measure of the gift of God, haue laboured now some yeeres painefully, in regard of the weake estate of my body in preaching the Gospel, and as I hope, not altogether vnprofitably in respect of the Church. But I beseech your Honours to giue me leaue briefly to declare the particular reasons of their Letters, and what answer I haue to make vnto it.

The first is, that as they say I am not lawfully called to the function of the Ministerie, nor allowed to preach according to the lawes of this Church of England.

For answer to this, I had need to diuide the points, and first to make answer to the former, where in leauing to shew what by the holy Scriptures is required in a lawfull calling, and that all that is to be found in mine, that I be not too long for your other waighty affaires, I rest.

I this answer: My calling to the Ministery was such as in the calling of any thereunto, is appointed to be vsed by the orders agreed vpon in the Nationall Synods of the Low Countries, for the direction and guidance of their Churches, which orders are the same with those whereby the French and Scottish Churches are gouerned, whereof I haue shewed such sufficient testimoniall to my Lord the Archbishop of Canterburie, as is requisite in such a matter: whereby it must needs fall out, if any man be lawfully called to the Ministery in those Churches, then is my calling, being the same with theirs, also lawfull. But I suppose notwithstanding they vse this generall speech, they meane only my calling is not sufficient, to deale in the Ministerie within this land, because I was not made Minister according to that order which in this cause is ordained by our lawes. Whereunto I beseech your Honours to consider throughly of mine answer, because exception now againe is taken to my Ministery, whereas hauing beene heretofore called in question for it, I so answered the matter, as I continued my ministery, and for any thing I discerned, looked to heare that no more obiected vnto me. The communion of Saints (which euery Christian man professeth to beleeue) is such, as that the acts which are done in any true Church

of Christs according to his word, are held as lawfull, being done in one Church, as in another. Which as it holdeth in other acts of ministery, as baptisme, marriage, and such like, so doth it in the calling to the ministerie; by reason whereof all Churches doe acknowledge and receiue him for a minister of the word, who hath beene lawfully called thereunto in any Church of the same profession. A Doctor created in any Vniuersitie of Christendome, is acknowledged sufficiently qualified to teach in any country. The Church of Rome it selfe, and the Canon law holdeth it, that being ordered in Spaine, they may execute that belongeth to their order in Italie, or in any other place. And the Churches of the Gospell neuer made any question of it. Which if they shall now begin to make doubt of, and denie such to be lawfully called to the Ministery, as are called by another order then our owne, then may it well be looked for that other Churches will doe the like: and if a Minister called in the Low Countries bee not lawfully called in England, then may they say to our Preachers which are there, that being made by another order then theirs, they cannot suffer them to execute any act of Ministery amongst them; which in the end must needs breed a schisme and dangerous diuision in the Churches. Further I haue heard of those that are learned in the lawes of this land, that by expresse Statute to that purpose *Anno* 13. vpon subscription of the Articles agreed vpon *Anno* 62. that they who pretend to haue beene ordered by another order then that which is now established, are of like capacitie to enioy any place of ministery within the land, as they that haue bin ordered according to that is now by law in this case established. Which comprehending manifestly all, euen such as were made Priests according to the order of the Church of Rome, it must needs be, that the law of a Christian land professing the Gospell, should be as fauorable for a Minister of the Word as for a Popish Priest, which also was so found in M. *Whittingames* case, who notwithstanding such replies against him, enioyed still the benefit he had by his ministerie, and might haue done vntill this day if God had spared him life so long; which if it be vnderstood so & practised in others, why should the change of the person alter the right, which the law giueth to all other? The place of ministery, whereunto I was called, was not presentatiue: and if it had beene so, surely they would neuer haue presented any man whom they neuer knew; and the order of this Church is agreeable herein to the Word of God, and the ancient and best Canons, that no man should be made minister *sine titulo*; therefore hauing none, I could not by the orders of this Church haue entred into the ministerie, before I had charge to tend vpon. When I was at *Antwerp*, and to take a place of ministerie among the people of that nation, I see no cause why I should haue returned againe ouer the seas for orders here, nor how I could haue done it, without disallowing the orders of the Churches prouided in the countrie where I was to liue. Whereby I hope it appeareth, that my calling to the ministerie is lawfull, and maketh mee by our law of capacitie to enioy any benefit or commoditie, that any other by reason of his ministerie may enioy. But my cause is yet more easie, who reaped no benefit of my ministerie by law, receiuing onely a benevolence and voluntarie contribution, and the ministerie I deale with being preaching onely, which euery Deacon here may doe being licensed, and certaine that are neither Ministers

nor

nor Deacons: thus I anſwere the former of theſe two points, whereof if there be yet any doubt, I humbly deſire for a finall end thereof, that ſome competent Iudges in Law may determine of it; whereunto I referre and ſubmit my ſelfe with all reuerence and dutie.

The ſecond is, that I preached without licence: whereunto this is my anſwere; I haue not preſumed vpon the calling I had to the Miniſtery abroad, to preach, or deale with any part of the Miniſtery within this Church, without the conſent and allowance of ſuch as were to allow me vnto it: my allowance was from the Biſhop of *London*, teſtified by his two ſeuerall Letters to the Inner Temple, who without ſuch teſtimonie would by no meanes reſt ſatisfied in it; which letters being by me produced, I referre it to your Honors wiſedome, whether I haue taken vpon me to preach without being allowed (as they charge) according to the orders of the Realme. Thus hauing anſwered the ſecond point alſo, I haue done with the obiection of dealing without calling or licence.

The other reaſon they alleage is, concerning a late action wherein I had to deale with Maſter *Hooker*, Maſter of the Temple: in the handling of which cauſe they charge me with an indiſcretion and want of dutie, in that I inueighed (as they ſay) againſt certaine points of doctrine taught by him as erroneous, not conferring with him, nor complayning of it to them. My anſwere hereunto ſtandeth in declaring to your Honors the whole courſe and carriage of that cauſe, and the degrees of proceeding in it, which I will doe as briefly as I can, and according to the truth, God be my witneſſe, as neere as my beſt memorie, and notes of remembrance may ſerue me thereunto. After that I haue taken away that which ſeemeth to haue moued them to thinke me not charitably minded to Maſter *Hooker*, which is, becauſe he was brought into Maſter *Alueyes* place, wherein this Church deſired that I might haue ſucceeded; which place, if I would haue made ſute to haue obtayned, or if I had ambitiouſly affected and ſought, I would not haue refuſed to haue ſatisfied by ſubſcription ſuch as the matter then ſeemed to depend vpon: whereas contrariwiſe, notwithſtanding I would not hinder the Church to doe that they thought to be moſt for their edification and comfort, yet did I neither by ſpeech, nor letter, make ſute to any for the obtayning of it, following herein that reſolution which I iudge to be moſt agreeable to the Word and Will of God, that is, That labouring and ſuing for places and charges in the Church is not lawfull. Further, whereas at the ſute of the Church ſome of your Honors entertayned the cauſe, and brought it to a neere iſſue, that there ſeemed nothing to remayne, but the commendation of my Lord the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, when as he could not be ſatisfied but by my ſubſcribing to his late Articles, and that my anſwere agreeing to ſubſcribe according to any Law, and to the Statute prouided in that caſe, but praying to be reſpited for ſubſcribing to any other, which I could not in conſcience doe, either for the Temple (which otherwiſe, he ſaid, he would not commend me to) not for any other place in the Church, did ſo little pleaſe my Lord Archbiſhop, as hee reſolued that otherwiſe I ſhould not be commended to it. I had vtterly here no cauſe of offence againſt Maſter *Hooker*, whom I did in no ſort eſteeme to haue preuented

uented or vnderminded me, but that God diſpoſed of me as it pleaſed him, by ſuch meanes and occaſions as I haue declared. Moreouer, as I had taken no cauſe of offence at Maſter *Hooker* for being preferred, ſo there were many witneſſes that I was glad that the place was giuen him, hoping to liue in all godly peace and comfort with him, both for acquaintance and good will which hath beene betweene vs, and for ſome kinde of affinitie in the marriage of his neereſt kinred and mine: ſince his comming I haue ſo carefully endeuoured to entertaine all good correſpondence and agreement with him, as I thinke he himſelfe will beare mee witneſſe of many earneſt Diſputations and Conferences with him about the matter; the rather, becauſe that contrarie to my expectation, he enclined from the beginning but ſmally thereunto, but ioyned rather with ſuch as had alwaies oppoſed themſelues to any good order in this charge, and made themſelues to be brought indiſpoſed to his preſent ſtate and proceedings. For both knowing that Gods commandement charged mee with ſuch dutie, and diſcerning how much our peace might further the good ſeruice of God and his Church, and the mutuall comfort of vs both, I had reſolued conſtantly to ſeeke for peace, and though it ſhould flie from me (as I ſaw it did by meanes of ſome, who little deſired to ſee the good of our Church) yet according to the rule of Gods Word to follow after it. Which being ſo (as hereof I take God to witneſſe, who ſearcheth the heart, and reines, and by his Sonne will iudge the World, both the quicke and dead) I hope no charitable iudgement can ſuppoſe me to haue ſtood euill-affected towards him for his place, or deſirous to fall into any Controuerſie with him. Which my reſolution I purſued, that whereas I diſcouered ſundrie vnſound matters in his doctrine (as many of his Sermons taſted of ſome ſowre leauen, or other) yet thus I carried my ſelfe towards him. Matters of ſmaller weight, and ſo couertly diſcouered, that no great offence to the Church was to be feared in them, I wholly paſſed by, as one that diſcerned nothing of them, or had beene vnfurniſhed of replyes. For other of greater moment, and ſo openly deliuered, as there was iuſt cauſe of feare, leſt the Truth and Church of God ſhould bee preiudiced and perilled by it, and ſuch as the conſcience of my dutie and calling would not ſuffer me altogether to paſſe ouer, this was my courſe, to deliuer, when I ſhould haue iuſt cauſe by my Text, the truth of ſuch doctrine as he had otherwiſe taught in generall ſpeeches, without touch of his perſon in any ſort, and further at conuenient opportunities to conferre with him in ſuch points. According to which determination, whereas he had taught certaine things concerning Predeſtination otherwiſe then the Word of God doth, as it is vnderſtood by all Churches profeſſing the Goſpell, and not vnlike that wherewith *Corsmo* ſometimes troubled his Church, I both deliuered the truth of ſuch points in a generall doctrine, without any touch of him in particular, and conferred with him alſo priuately vpon ſuch Articles. In which Conference, I remember, when I vrged the conſent of all Churches, and Good Writers againſt him that I knew, and deſired if it were otherwiſe, what Authours he had ſeene of ſuch doctrine, he anſwered me, That his beſt Authour was his owne reaſon: which I wiſhed him to take heed of, as a matter ſtanding with Chriſtian modeſtie and wiſedome in a doctrine not receiued by the Church,

not

not to truſt to his owne iudgement ſo farre, as to publiſh it before he had conferred with others of his profeſſion, labouring by daily prayer and ſtudie, to know the will of God, as he did, to ſee how they vnderſtood ſuch Doctrine: notwithſtanding, hee with wauering replying, that hee would ſome other time deale more largely in the matter, I wiſhed him, and prayed him not ſo to doe, for the Peace of the Church, which by ſuch meanes might be hazarded; ſeeing he could not but thinke, that men, who make any conſcience of their Miniſterie, will iudge it a neceſſarie dutie in them, to teach the Truth, and to conuince the contrarie. Another time, vpon like occaſion of this Doctrine of his, that the aſſurance of that wee beleeue by the Word, is not ſo certaine, as of that wee perceiue by ſenſe; I both taught the Doctrine otherwiſe, namely, the aſſurance of Faith to bee greater, which aſſureth both of things aboue, and contrarie to all ſenſe and humane vnderſtanding, and dealt with him alſo priuately vpon that point. According to which courſe, of late, when as he had taught that the Church of Rome is a true Church of Chriſt, and a ſanctified Church by profeſſion of that Truth, which God hath reuealed vnto vs by his Sonne, though not a pure, and perfect Church: and further that hee doubted not, but that thouſands of the Fathers, which liued and died in the Superſtitions of that Church, were ſaued becauſe of their ignorance, which excuſeth them, miſ-alleaging to that end a * Text of Scripture to prooue it: the matter being of ſet purpoſe openly and at large handled by him, and of that moment that might preiudice the Faith of Chriſt, encourage the ill-affected to continue ſtill in their damnable wayes, and other weake in Faith to ſuffer themſelues eaſily to bee ſeduced to the deſtruction of their Soules; I thought it my moſt bounden dutie to God, and to his Church, whileſt I might haue opportunitie to ſpeake with him, to teach the Truth in a generall ſpeech in ſuch points of Doctrine. * 1. Tim. 1. 13.

At which time I taught that ſuch as dye, or haue dyed at any time in the Church of Rome, holding in their ignorance that Faith, which is taught in it, and namely, Iuſtification in part by Workes, could not bee ſaid by the Scriptures to be ſaued. In which matter foreſeeing that, if I waded not warily in it, I ſhould bee in danger to bee reported (as hath falne out ſince notwithſtanding) to condemne all the Fathers: I ſaid directly and plainly to all mens vnderſtanding, that it was not indeed to bee doubted, but many of the Fathers were ſaued, but the meanes (I ſaid) was not their ignorance, which excuſeth no man with God, but their knowledge and Faith of the Truth, which it appeareth God vouchſafed them by many notable Monuments and Records extant of it in all Ages. Which being the laſt point in all my Sermon, riſing ſo naturally from the Text I then expounded, as would haue occaſioned mee to haue deliuered ſuch matter, notwithſtanding the former Doctrine had beene ſound, and being dealt in by a generall ſpeech without touch of his particular: I looked not that a matter of controuerſie would haue beene made of it, no more then had beene of my like dealing in former time. But farre otherwiſe then I looked for, Maſter *Hooker* ſhewing no griefe of offence taken at my ſpeech all the weeke long, the next Sabbath, leauing to proceed vpon his ordinary Text, profeſſed to preach againe that he had done the day before, for

ſome

ſome queſtion that his Doctrine was drawne into, which he deſired might bee examined with all ſeueritie.

So proceeding, he beſtowed his whole time in that Diſcourſe, concerning his former doctrine, and anſwering the places of Scripture, which I had * alleaged, to proue that a man dying in the Church of Rome, is not to be iudged by the Scriptures to be ſaued. In which long Speech, and vtterly impertinent to his Text, vnder colour of anſwering for himſelfe, hee impugned directly and openly to all mens vnderſtanding the true Doctrine which I had deliuered, and added to his former points ſome other like (as willingly one errour followeth another) that is, that the Galathians ioyning with Faith in Chriſt Circumciſion, as neceſſarie to Saluation, myght not be ſaued. And that they of the Church of Rome may be ſaued by ſuch a Faith of Chriſt, as they had, with a generall Repentance of all their errours, notwithſtanding, their opinion of Iuſtification, in part by their Workes and Merits. I was neceſſarily, though not willingly drawne to ſay ſome thing to the points hee obiected againſt ſound Doctrine, which I did in a ſhort Speech in the end of my Sermon, with proteſtation of ſo doing, not of any ſiniſter affection to any man, but to beare witneſſe to the Truth according to my Calling. And wiſhed, if the matter ſhould needs further be dealt in, ſome other more conuenient way might be taken for it; wherein I hope, my dealing was manifeſt to the conſciences of all indifferent hearers of me that day, to haue beene according to Peace, and without any vncharitableneſſe being duly conſidered.

* Act. 18.4. Gal. 1.2,3,4.

For that I conferred with him the firſt day, I haue ſhewed that the cauſe requiring of mee the dutie, at the leaſt not to bee altogether ſilent in it, being a matter of ſuch conſequence, that the time alſo being ſhort, wherein I was to preach after him, the hope of the fruit of our communication being ſmall, vpon experience of former Conferences, my expectation being that the Church ſhould be no further troubled with it, vpon the motion I made of taking ſome other courſe of dealing. I ſuppoſe my deferring to ſpeake with him till ſome fit oportunitie, cannot in Charitie be iudged vncharitable.

The ſecond day, his vnlooked for oppoſition with the former reaſons, made it to be a matter that required of neceſſitie ſome publique anſwere; which being ſo temperate, as I haue ſhewed, if notwithſtanding it be cenſured as vncharitable, and puniſhed ſo grieuouſly as it is, what ſhould haue beene my puniſhment, if (without all ſuch cautions and reſpects as qualified my ſpeech) I had before all, and in the vnderſtanding of all ſo reproued him offending openly, that other might haue feared to doe the like? Which yet if I had done, might haue beene warranted by the rule and charge of the Apoſtles, *Them that offend openly, rebuke openly, that thereſt may alſo feare*, and by his example, who when *Peter* in this very caſe which is now betweene vs, had (not in preaching) but in a matter of converſation not gone with a right foot, as was fit, for the truth of the Goſpell, conferred not priuately with him, but, as his owne rule required, reproued him openly before all, that other might beare, and feare, and not dare to doe the like: all which reaſons together weighed, I hope, will ſhew the manner of my dealing to haue beene charitable, and warrantable in euery ſort.

The

The next Sabbath day after this, Maſter *Hooker* kept the way hee had entred into before, and beſtowed his whole houre and more only vpon the queſtions he had moued and maintayned, wherein he ſo ſet forth the agreement of the Church of Rome with vs, and their diſagreement from vs, as if we had conſented in the greateſt, and waightieſt points, and differed onely in certaine ſmaller matters: which agreement noted by him in two chiefe points, is not ſuch as he would haue made men beleeue. The one in that he ſaid, They acknowledged all men ſinners, euen the bleſſed Virgin, though ſome of them freed her from ſinne: for the Counſell of Trent boldeth that ſhee was free from ſinne. Another in that he ſaid, They teach Chriſts righteouſneſſe to be the only meritorious cauſe of taking away ſinne, and differ from vs only in the applying of it. For *Thomas Aquinas* their chiefe Schoole-man, and Archbiſhop *Catherinus* teach, That Chriſt tooke away only originall ſinne, and that the reſt are to be taken away by our ſelues; yea, the Councell of Trent teacheth, that righteouſneſſe, whereby we are righteous in Gods ſight, is an inherent righteouſneſſe: which muſt needs be of our owne workes, and cannot be vnderſtood of the righteouſneſſe inherent only in Chriſts perſon, and accounted vnto vs. Moreouer, he taught the ſame time, that neither the Galathians, nor the Church of Rome did directly ouerthrow the foundation of Iuſtification by Chriſt alone, but onely by conſequent, and therefore might well be ſaued; or elſe neither the Churches of *Lutheranes*, nor any which hold any manner of error could be ſaued, becauſe (ſayth he) euery error by conſequent ouerthroweth the foundation. In which diſcourſes and ſuch like he beſtowed his whole time and more, which, if he had affected either the Tractat of God, or the Peace of the Church, he would ſurely not haue done. Whoſe example could not draw me to leaue the Scripture I tooke in hand, but ſtanding about an houre to deliuer the doctrine of it, in the end vpon iuſt occaſion of the Text, leauing ſundry other his vnſound ſpeeches, and keeping me to the principall; I confuted the falſe-ſound doctrine of Iuſtification by Chriſt onely, to be neceſſarie to the ſaluation of all that ſhould be ſaued, and that the Church of Rome directly denyeth that a man is iuſtified by Chriſt, or by Faith alone without the workes of the Law. Which my anſwere was moſt neceſſarie for the ſeruice of God, and the Church, to ſay it without the moſt odious, & reproachfull ſpeech of Maiſter *Hooker*, whoſe vnlearned and often dealing in a cauſe of ſuch importance as the faith of Chriſt, and ſaluation of the Church, notwithſtanding I knew well what I ſpake, I deſired, and what leaue ſeeking either from the Lord *Treaſurer*, or *Beacon*, ſecretary of *Lambeth*, I ſpake, yea I ſpoke rather to content my ſelfe, then the People, that ſtood gaping, and wondring at him, of whom they had conceiued ſo great opinion for his ſeeming gifts, and ſhew of learning, and zeale. But *Peter* the Apoſtle ſo ſpeaketh of this. This is meete to be ſpoken of, and the hearers muſt not be offended, leſt they fall. I hope, my very aduerſaries will not blame me for well ſtanding to mine Maiſter, in not conſenting with him,

Mark.3.17.

2.Sam.7.2.

3.Reg.

b *Gal.2. 11,14.*

him, whereof I haue ſpoken ſufficiently alreadie: and to the high Commiſ-
ſion, in not reuealing the matter to them, which yet now I am further to an-
ſwere. My anſwere is, That I proteſt, no contempt nor wilfull neglect of any
lawful authoritie ſtayed me from complayning vnto them, but theſe Reaſons
following.

Firſt, I was in ſome hope, that Maſter *Hooker*, notwithſtanding he had beene
ouer-carried with a ſhew of charitie to preiudice the Truth, yet when it ſhould
be ſufficiently proued, would haue acknowledged it, or as the leaſt induced
with peace, that it might be offered without either offence to him, or to ſuch
as would receiue it; either of which would haue taken away any cauſe of iuſt
complaint. When neither of theſe fell out according to my expectation, and
deſire, but that he replyed to the truth, and obiected againſt it, I thought he
might haue ſome doubts, and ſcruples in himſelfe, which yet if they were cleer-
ed, hee would either embrace ſome doctrine, or at leaſt ſuffer it to haue his
courſe; which hope of him I nouriſhed ſo long as the matter was not bitterly,
and immodeſtly handled betweene vs.

Another reaſon was the cauſe it ſelfe, which according to the parable of the
Tares (which are ſaid to be ſowne amongſt the Wheat) ſprung vp firſt in his
graſſe. Therefore as the Seruants in that place are not ſaid to haue come to
complaine to the Lord, till the Tares came vp, ſhew their fruits in their kind:
ſo I thinking it yet but a time of diſcouering of it, what it was, deſired not
their fickle to cut it downe.

For further anſwere, it is to be conſidered, that the conſcience of my dutie
to God, and to his Church, did binde me at the firſt to deliuer ſound doctrine
in ſuch points, as had beene otherwiſe vttered in the place, where I had now
ſome yeeres taught the truth. Otherwiſe the rebuke of the [b] Prophet had
fallen vpon me for not going vp to the breach, and ſtanding in it, and the [c] pe-
nall for anſwering the bloud of the Circ, in whoſe watch Tower I ſate, if it
had beene ſurpriſed by my default. Moreouer my publike proteſtation in be-
ing vnwilling, that if any were not yet ſatisfied, ſome other more conuenient
way might be taken for it. And laſtly, that I had reſolued (which I vttered
before to ſome, dealing with me about the matter) to haue proteſted the next
Sabbath day, that I would no more anſwere in that place any obiections to
the doctrine taught by my meanes, but ſome other way ſhould be ſought, as ſhould
ſeeme meete. Theſe I truſt may ſeeme reaſons, that I ſtayed not in dutie to au-
thoritie, notwithſtanding I did not complaine, nor proceed ſo forwarde-
ly in the cauſe. If I had been in the cleere, which one alleges none of all theſe
for himſelfe, who [illegible] of the Scriptures, and his ordinarie
[illegible] ſimple anſwere and confeſſion of his faith, neither of
[illegible] nor of [illegible] himſelfe, and to
[illegible] Sabbath, vnto the
[illegible] Church of Rome, nor
[illegible] man,
[illegible] he is a dead man, whereby it
might

[b] Ezec.22.30.
[c] Ezec.33.6.

might ſeeme that a man might, without hurt, adde workes to Chriſt, and pray alſo, that God and S. *Peter* would ſaue him.

That the Galathians caſe is harder then the caſe of the Church of Rome, becauſe the Galathians ioined Circumciſion with Chriſt, which God hath forbidden, and aboliſhed: but that which the Church of Rome ioined with Chriſt, were good works which God hath commanded. Wherein he committed a double fault; one, in expounding all the queſtion of the Galathians, and conſequently of the Romans, and other Epiſtles of Circumciſion only, and the Ceremonies of the Law (as they doe who anſwer for the Church of Rome in their Writings) contrary to the cleere meaning of the Apoſtle, as may appeare by many ſtrong, and ſufficient reaſons: the other, in that he ſaid, the addition of the Church of Rome was of works commanded of God, whereas the leaſt part of the works, whereby they looked to merit, was of ſuch works, and moſt were of ſupererogation, and of works which God neuer commanded, but was highly diſpleaſed with, as of Maſſes, Pilgrimages, Pardons, paines of Purgatory, and ſuch like: further, that no one ſequell vrged by the Apoſtle againſt the Galathians for ioining Circumciſion with Chriſt, but might bee aſwell enforced againſt the Lutherans, that is, that for their vbiquitie it may bee aſwell ſaid to them, If yee hold the Bodie of Chriſt to be in all places, you are fallen from grace, you are vnder the curſe of the Law, ſaying, Curſed be he that fulfilleth not all things written in this Booke, with ſuch like: he added yet further, that to a Biſhop of the Church of Rome, to a Cardinall, yea to the Pope himſelfe, acknowledging Chriſt to be the Sauiour of the World denying other errours, and being diſcomforted for want of workes whereby he might be iuſtified, he would not doubt but vſe this ſpeech; Thou holdeſt the foundation of Chriſtian Faith, though it bee but by a ſlender thread; thou holdeſt Chriſt, though but as by the hem of his Garment, why ſhouldſt thou not hope that vertue may paſſe from Chriſt to ſaue thee? That, which thou holdeſt of Iuſtification by thy works, ouerthroweth indeed by conſequent the foundation of Chriſtian Faith; but be of good cheere, thou haſt not to doe with a captious Sophiſter, but with a mercifull God, who will iuſtifie thee for that thou holdeſt, and not take the aduantage of doubtfull conſtruction to condemne thee. And if this, he ſaid, be an errour, I hold it willingly; for it is the greateſt comfort I haue in this World, without which I would not will either to ſpeake or to liue. Thus far, being not to be anſwered in it any more, he was bold to proceed; the abſurditie of which ſpeech I need not to ſtand vpon. I thinke the like to this and other ſuch in this Sermon, and the reſt of this matter hath not beene heard in publike places within this Land ſince Queene *Maries* dayes. What conſequence this Doctrine may be of, if he be not by authoritie ordered to reuoke it, I beſeech your HH. as the truth of God and his Goſpel is deare and precious vnto you, according to your godly wiſdomes to conſider.

I haue beene bold to offer to your HH. a long and tedious Diſcourſe of theſe matters, but ſpeech being like to Tapeſtry, which if it be folded vp, ſheweth but part of that which is wrought, and being vnlapt and laid open, ſheweth plainely to the eye all the worke that is in it; I thought it neceſſarie to vnfold this Tapeſtrie, and to hang vp the whole chamber of it in your moſt Ho-

norable Senate: that ſo you may the more eaſily diſcerne of all the pieces, and the ſundry workes and maters contained in it. Wherein my hope is, your HH. may ſee I haue not deſerued ſo great a puniſhment as is laid vpon the Church for my ſake, and alſo vpon my ſelfe in taking from mee the exerciſe of my Miniſtery: which puniſhment how heauie it may ſeeme to the Church, or fall out indeed to be, I referre it to them to iudge, and ſpare to write what I feare; but to my ſelfe it is exceeding grieuous, for that it taketh from mee the exerciſe of my Calling. Which I doe not ſay is deare vnto me as the meanes of that little benefit whereby I liue (although this bee a lawfull conſideration, and to bee regarded of mee in due place, and of the authoritie vnder whoſe protection I moſt willingly liue, euen by Gods Commandement, both vnto them, and vnto me:) but which ought to bee more precious to me then my life, for the loue which I ſhould beare to the glory and honour of Almightie God, and to the edification and ſaluation of his Church, for that my life cannot any other way be of like ſeruice to God, nor of ſuch vſe and profit to men by any meanes: for which cauſe, as I diſcerne, how deare any Miniſtery ought to be vnto me, ſo it is my hearty deſire, and moſt humble requeſt vnto God, to your HH. and to all the authoritie I liue vnder, to whom any dealing herein belongeth, that I may ſpend my life according to his Example, who in a word of like ſound of fuller ſenſe, comparing by it the beſtowing of his life to the Offring powred out vpon the Sacrifice of the faith of Gods people, and eſpecially of this Church, whereupon I haue already powred out a great part thereof in the ſame Calling, from which I ſtand now reſtrayned. And if your HH. ſhall finde it ſo that I haue not deſerued ſo great a puniſhment, but rather performed the dutie, which a good and faithfull Seruant ought in ſuch a caſe to doe his Lord, and the people hee putteth him in truſt withall carefully to keepe; I am a moſt humble Suiter by theſe preſents to your HH. that by your godly Wiſdome, ſome good courſe may be taken for the reſtoring of me to my Miniſterie and place againe. Which ſo great a fauour ſhall bind mee yet in a greater obligation of duty (which is already ſo great, as it ſeemed nothing could be added vnto it, to make it greater) to honour God daily for the continuance and increaſe of your good eſtate, and to bee readie with all the poore meanes God hath giuen mee, to doe your HH. that faithfull ſeruice I may poſſibly performe: but if, notwithſtanding my cauſe bee neuer ſo good, your HH. can by no meanes pacifie ſuch as are offended, nor reſtore mee againe, then am I to reſt in the good pleaſure of God, and to commend to your HH. protection vnder her Maieſties my priuate life, while it ſhall be led in dutie, and the Church to him, who hath redeemed to himſelfe a people with his precious blond, and is making ready to come to iudge both the quick and the dead, to giue to euery one according as hee hath done in this life, bee it good or euill, to the wicked and vnbeleeuer, iuſtice vnto death, but to the faithfull, and ſuch as loue his truth, mercie and grace to life euerlaſting.

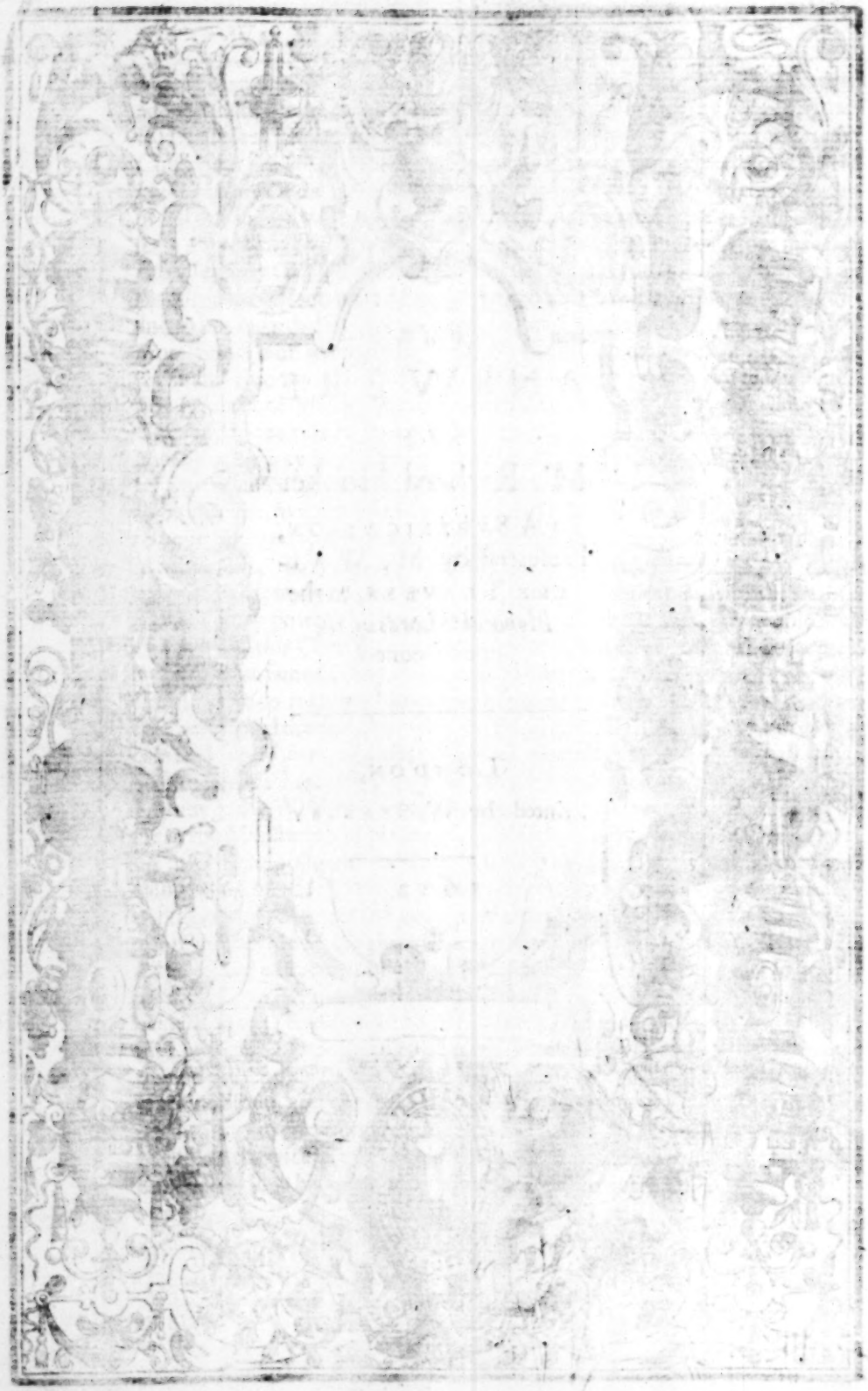
Your Honours moſt bounden, and moſt humble Suppliant,

WALTER TRAVERS, *Miniſter of the Word of God.*

THE ANSWERE OF Mr. Richard Hooker TO A SVPPLICATION, Preferred by Mr. WALTER TRAVERS, to the *Honorable Lords of the* Priuie Councell.

LONDON, Printed by W. STANSBY

1622.



MASTER HOOKERS ANSWERE TO THE SVPPLICATION THAT MASTER TRAVERS made to the COVNCELL.

To my LORD of Canterbury his Grace.

MY dutie in moſt humble wiſe remembred. May it pleaſe your Grace to vnderſtand, that whereas there hath been a late Controuerſie rayſed in in the Temple, and purſued by Maſter *Trauers*, vpon cõceit taken at ſome words by me vttered with a moſt ſimple and harmleſſe meaning; in the heate of which purſuit, after three publike Inuectiues, ſilence being enioyned him by authoritie; he hath hereupon for defence of his proceedings, both preſented the right Honorable Lords and others of her Maieſties Priuie Councell with a writing, and alſo cauſed or ſuffered the ſame to be copied out, and ſpred through the hands of ſo many, that wel-nigh all ſorts of men haue it in their boſomes; the matters wherewith I am therein charged being of ſuch qualitie as they are, and my ſelfe being better knowne to your Grace, then to any other of their Honours beſides; I haue choſen to offer to your Graces hands, a plaine declaration of my innocency in all thoſe things, wherewith I am ſo hardly and ſo heauily charged, leſt if I ſtill remayne ſilent, that which I doe for quietneſſe ſake, be taken as an Argument, that I lacke what to ſpeake truely and iuſtly in mine owne defence.

2 Firſt, becauſe Maſter *Trauers* thinketh it is expedient to breed an opinion in mens minds, that the roote of all inconuenient euents which are now ſprung out, is the ſurly and vnpeaceable diſpoſition of the man with whom he hath to doe, therefore the firſt in the ranke of accuſations laid againſt me is my inconformitie, which haue ſo little inclined to ſo many and ſo earneſt Exhortations and Conferences, as my ſelfe, hee ſaith, can witneſſe, to haue beene

ſpent vpon mee, for my better faſhioning vnto good correſpondence and agreement.

3 Indeed, when at the firſt, by meanes of ſpeciall well-willers, without any ſute of mine, as they very well know, (although I doe not thinke it had beene a moſt all fitnes (in a reaſonable ſort to haue ſhewed moderate ſtaie that way) yet when by their indeuour without inſtigation of mine, ſome reuerend and honourable, fauourably affecting mee, had procured her Maieſties grant of the place, at the very point of my entring thereinto, the euening before I was firſt to preach, thee came and two other Gentlemen ioyned with him: the effect of his Conference then was, that he thought it his dutie to aduiſe me not to enter with a ſtrong hand, but to change my purpoſe of preaching there the next day, and to ſtay till he had giuen notice of mee to the Congregation, that ſo their allowance might ſeale my calling. The effect of mine Anſwere was, that as in place where ſuch order is, I would not breake it; ſo here where it neuer was, I might not of mine owne head take vpon me to beginne it; but liking very well the motion for the opinion which I had of his good meaning who made it, requeſted him not to miſlike my Anſwer, though it were not correſpondent to his mind.

4 When this had ſo diſpleaſed ſome, that whatſoeuer was afterwardes done, or ſpoken by me, it offended their taſte, angry informations were daily ſent out, intelligence giuen farre and wide what a dangerous enemy was crept in, the worſt that ielouſie could imagine was ſpoken and written to ſo many, that at the length ſome knowing me well, and perceiuing how iniurious the reports were, which grew daily more and more vnto my diſcredit, wrought meanes to bring M^r. *Trauers* and me to a ſecond conference. Wherein when a common friend vnto vs both, had quietly requeſted him to vtter thoſe things wherewith hee found himſelfe any way grieued, hee firſt renewed the memorie of my entring into this charge by vertue only of an humane creature (for ſo the want of that * formalitie of popular allowance was then cenſured;) and vnto this was annexed a Catalogue, partly of caſteleſſe ſurmiſes; as that I had conſpired againſt him, and that I ſought ſuperioritie ouer him; and partly of faults, which to mee, I ſhould haue thought it a greater offence then to commit, if I did account them faults and had heard them ſo curiouſly obſerued in any other then my ſelfe, they are ſuch filly things; as praying in the entrance of my Sermons only, and not in the end, naming Biſhops in my Prayer, kneeling when I pray, and kneeling when I receiue the Communion, with ſuch like, which I would be as loth to recite as I was ſorrie to heare them obiected, if the rehearſall thereof were not by him thus wreſted from mee. Theſe are the conferences wherewith I haue both wooed to entertayne peace and good agreement.

* A meere formalitie it had beene to me in that place whereas no man had euer vſed it before me; ſo it could neyther further me, if I did vſe it, nor hinder me, if I did not.

5 As for the vehement exhortations he ſpeaketh of, I would gladly know ſome reaſon wherefore he thought them needfull to be vſed. Was there any thing found in my ſpeeches or dealings which gaue them occaſion, who are ſtudious of peace, to thinke that I diſpoſed my ſelfe to ſome vnquiet kinde of proceedings? Surely, the ſpeciall Prouidence of God, I doe now ſee it was, that the firſt words I ſpake in this place, ſhould make the firſt thing whereof I am

an accuſed, to appeare not onely vntrue, but improbable to as many as then heard me with indifferent eares, and doe, I doubt not, in their conſciences acquite me of this ſuſpicion. Howbeit I grant this were nothing if it might be ſhewed, that my deeds following were not ſuteable to my words. If I had ſpoken of peace at the firſt, and afterwards ſought to moleſt and grieue him, by croſſing him in his function, by ſtorming if my pleaſure were not asked and my will obeyed in the leaſt occurrences, by carping needleſly ſometimes at the manner of his teaching; ſometimes at this, ſometimes at that point of his doctrine; I might then with ſome likelihood haue beene blamed, as one diſdaining a peaceable hand when it hath beene offered. But if I be able (as I am) to prooue, that my ſelfe haue now a full yeere together borne the continuance of ſuch dealings, not onely without any manner of reſiſtance, but alſo without any ſuch complaint as might let or hinder him in his courſe; I ſee no cauſe in the world, why of this I ſhould be accuſed, vnleſſe it be left I ſhould accuſe, which I meant not. If therefore I haue giuen him occaſion to vſe conferences and exhortations vnto peace, if when they were beſtowed vpon me I haue diſpiſed them; it will not be hard to ſhew ſome one word or deed wherewith I haue gone about to worke diſturbance: one is not much, I require but one. Only I require if any thing be ſhewed, it may be prooued, and not obiected only as this is, *That I haue ioyned with ſuch as haue alwaies oppoſed to any good order in the Church, and made themſelues to be thought miſſpoſed to the preſent eſtate and proceedings.* The words haue reference as it ſeemeth, vnto ſome ſuch things as being attempted before my comming to the Temple, went not ſo effectually perhaps forward as he which deuiſed them would haue wiſhed. An order as I learne there was tendred, that Communicants ſhould neither kneele, as in the moſt places of the Realme; nor ſit, as in this place the cuſtome is; but walke to the one ſide of the Table, and there ſtanding till they had receiued, paſſe afterwards away round about by the other. Which being on a ſudden begun to be practiſed in the Church, ſome ſate wondering what it ſhould meane, others deliberating what to doe: till ſuch time as at length by name one of them being called openly thereunto, requeſted that they might doe as they had beene accuſtomed, which was granted, and as Maſter *Trauers* had miniſtred his way to the reſt, ſo a Curate was ſent to miniſter to them after their way. Which vnproſperous beginning of a thing, (ſauing onely for the inconuenience of needleſſe alterations otherwiſe harmleſſe) did ſo diſgrace that order in their conceit, who had to allow or diſallow it, that it tooke no place. For neither they could euer induce themſelues to thinke it good, and it ſo much offended Maſter *Trauers* who ſuppoſed it to be the beſt, that he ſince that time, although contented himſelfe to receiue it as they doe at the hands of others, yet hath not thought it meete they ſhould euer receiue it out of his, which would not admit that order of receiuing it, and therefore in my time hath beene alwayes preſent not to miniſter, but onely to be miniſtred vnto.

6 Another order there was likewiſe deuiſed, but an order of much more waight and importance. This ſoile, in reſpect of certaine immunities and other ſpecialties belonging vnto it, ſeemed likely to beare that which in other

places

places of the Realme of England doth not take. For which cauſe requeſt was made to ſome of her Maieſties Priuie Councell, that whereas it is prouided by a Statute, there ſhould bee Collectors and Side-men in Churches, which thing or ſomewhat correſpondent vnto it, this place did greatly want, it would pleaſe their Honors to motion ſuch a matter to the Ancients of the Temple. And according to their Honorable manner of helping forward all motions ſo grounded, they wrote their Letters, as I am informed, to that effect. Whereupon although theſe Houſes neuer had vſe of ſuch Collectors and Side-men, as are appointed in other places, yet they both erected a Boxe to receiue mens deuotion for the poore, appointing the Treaſurer of both Houſes to take care for beſtowing it where need is, and granting further, that if any could bee intreated (as in the end ſome were) to vndertake the labour of obſeruing mens ſlackneſſe in diuine duties, they ſhould be allowed, their complaints heard all times, and the faults they complained of, if Maſter *Alueyes* priuate admoniſhion did not ſerue, then by ſome other meanes redreſſed, but according to the old receiued Orders of both Houſes. Whereby the ſubſtance of their Honors Letters were indeed fully ſatisfied. Yet becauſe Maſter *Trauers* intended not this, but as it ſeemed another thing, therefore notwithſtanding the Orders which haue beene taken, and for any thing I know, doe ſtand ſtill in as much force in this Church now, as at any time heretofore: He complaineth much of the good Orders which hee doth meane haue beene withſtood. Now it were hard if as many, as any way oppoſe vnto theſe and the like Orders, in his perſwaſion good, do thereby make themſelues to be thought diſlikers of the preſent ſtate and proceedings. If they, whom he aymeth at, haue any otherwiſe made themſelues to be thought ſuch, it is likely hee doth know wherein, and will, I hope, diſcloſe to whom it appertayneth, both the perſons whom hee thinketh, and the cauſes why hee thinketh them ſo ill-affected. But whatſoeuer the men be, doe their faults make mee faultie? They doe, if I ioyne my ſelfe with them. I beſeech him therefore to declare wherein I haue ioyned with them. Other ioyning then this with any man here, I cannot imagine: It may be I haue talked, or walked, or eaten, or interchangeably vſed the duties of common humanitie, with ſome ſuch as he is hardly perſwaded of. For I know no Law of God or Man by force whereof they ſhould be as Heathens and Publicans vnto me, that are not gracious in the eyes of another man, perhaps without cauſe, or if with cauſe, yet ſuch cauſe as he is priuy vnto, and not I. Could hee or any reaſonable man thinke it a charitable courſe in mee, to obſerue them that ſhew by externall courteſies a fauourable inclination towards him, and if I ſpie out any one amongſt them, of whom I thinke not well, herevpon to draw ſuch an accuſation as this againſt him, and to offer it where he hath giuen vp his againſt me? Which notwithſtanding I will acknowledge to be iuſt and reaſonable, if he or any man liuing ſhall ſhew that I vſe as much as the bare familiar companie but of one, who by word or deed hath euer giuen me cauſe to ſuſpect or coniecture him, ſuch as here they are termed, with whom complaint is made that I ioyne my ſelfe. This being ſpoken therefore and written without all poſſibilitie of proofe, doth not Maſter *Trauers* giue me ouer great cauſe to ſtand in ſome feare, leſt hee make too little conſcience

how

how he vſeth his tongue or penne? Theſe things are not laid againſt mee for nothing, they are to ſome purpoſe if they take place. For in a mind perſwaded that I am as he deciphereth me, one which refuſe to be at peace with ſuch as imbrace the truth, and ſide my ſelfe with men ſiniſterly affected thereunto, any thing that ſhal be ſpoken concerning the vnſoundnes of my doctrine, cannot chooſe but be fauourably entertained. This preſuppoſed, it will haue likelyhood enough, which afterwards followeth, that *many of my Sermons haue taſted of ſome ſowre leauen or other*, that in them he hath *diſcouered ſundry vnſound matters*. A thing much to be lamented, that ſuch a place as this which might haue beene ſo well prouided for, hath falne into the hands of one no better inſtructed in the truth. But what if in the end it be found that hee iudgeth my words, as they doe colours, which looke vpon them with greene ſpectacles, and thinke that which they ſee is greene, when indeed that is greene whereby they ſee?

7 Touching the firſt point of this diſcouerie which is about the matter of Predeſtination, to ſet downe that I ſpake, (for I haue it written) to declare and confirme the ſeuerall branches thereof, would be tedious now in this writing, where I haue ſo many things to touch, that I can but touch them onely. Neither is it herein ſo needfull for mee to iuſtifie my ſpeech, when the verie place and preſence where I ſpake doth it ſelfe ſpeake ſufficiently for my cleering. This matter was not broached in a blind Alley, or vttered where none was to heere it that had skill with authoritie to controll, or couertly inſinuated by ſome glyding ſentence.

8 That which I taught was at *Pauls Croſſe*, it was not huddled in amongſt other matters in ſuch ſort that it could paſſe without noting, it was opened, it was prooued, it was ſome reaſonable time ſtood vpon. I ſee not which way my Lord of *London*, who was preſent and heard it, can excuſe ſo great a fault as patiently without rebuke or controlement afterwards, to heare any man there teach otherwiſe then *the Word of God doth*, not as it is vnderſtood by the priuate interpretation of ſome one or two men, or by a ſpeciall conſtruction receiued in ſome few bookes, but as it is vnderſtood *by all Churches profeſſing the Goſpel*, by them all, and therefore euen by our owne alſo amongſt others. A man that did meane to prooue that hee ſpeaketh, would ſurely take the meaſure of his words ſhorter.

9 The next thing diſcouered, is an opinion about the aſſurance of mens perſwaſion in matters of faith. I haue taught he ſaith, *That the aſſurance of things which we beleeue by the Word, is not ſo certain as of that we perceiue by ſence*. And is it as certain? Yea, I taught as he himſelfe, I truſt, wil not deny, that the things which God doth promiſe in his Word, are ſurer vnto vs then any thing we touch, handle, or ſee. But are we ſo ſure and certaine of them? If wee be, why doth God ſo often proue his promiſes vnto vs, as he doth by argument taken from one ſenſible experience? Wee muſt be ſurer of the proofe then of the thing prooued, otherwiſe it is no proofe. How is it, that if ten men do all looke vpon the Moone, euery one of them knoweth it as certainly to be the Moone as another: but many beleeuing one and the ſame promiſes, all haue not one and the ſame fulneſſe of perſwaſion? How falleth it out, that men being aſſu-

red

red of any thing by ſence, can bee no ſurer of it then they are, whereas the ſtrongeſt in faith that lineth vpon the earth, hath alwayes need to labour, and ſtriue, and pray, that his aſſurance concerning heauenly and ſpirituall things, may grow, increaſe, and be augmented?

10 The Sermon wherein I haue ſpoken ſomewhat largely of this point, was long before this late controuerſie roſe betweene him and mee, vpon requeſt of ſome of my friends ſeene, and read by many, and amongſt many, ſome who are thought able to diſcerne: and I neuer heard that any one of them hitherto hath condemned it as containing vnſound matter. My caſe were very hard, if as oft as any thing I ſpeake diſpleaſing one mans taſte, my doctrine vpon his onely word ſhould be taken for ſowre leauen.

11 The reſt of this diſcouerie is all about the matter now in queſtion, wherein hee hath two faults predominant, which would tyre out any that ſhould anſwer vnto euery point ſeuerally: vnapt ſpeaking of Schoole controuerſies; and of my words ſometimes ſo vntoward a reciting, that hee which ſhould promiſe to draw a mans countenance, & did indeed expreſſe the parts, at leaſtwiſe the moſt of them truely, but peruerſly place them, could not repreſent a more offenſiue viſage, then vnto mee my owne ſpeech ſeemeth in ſome places as hee hath ordered it. For anſwer whereunto, that writing is ſufficient wherein I haue ſet downe both my words and meaning in ſuch ſort, that where this accuſation doth depraue the one, and either miſinterpret, or without iuſt cauſe miſlike the other, it will appeare ſo plainely, that I may ſpare very well to take vpon me a new and a needleſſe labour here.

12 Onely as one thing which is there to be found, becauſe Maſter *Trauers* doth here ſeeme to take ſuch a ſpeciall aduantage, as if the matter were vnanſwerable, hee conſtraineth mee either to deteſt his ouer-ſight, or to confeſſe mine owne in it. In ſetting the queſtion betweene the Church of Rome and vs about Grace and Iuſtification, leſt I ſhould giue them an occaſion to ſay, as commonly they doe, that when we cannot refute their opinions, wee propoſe to our ſelues ſuch in ſtead of theirs, as we can refute, I tooke it for the beſt and moſt perſpicuous way of teaching, to declare firſt, how farre we doe agree, and then to ſhew our diſagreement; not generally (as Maſter *Trauers* his * words would carry it, for the eaſier faſtning that vpon me, wherewith, ſauing only by him, I was neuer in my life touched;) but about the matter onely of Iuſtification: for further I had no cauſe to meddle at that time. What was then my

* His words be theſe: *The next Sabbath day after this* M. Hooker *kept the way he had entred into before, and beſtowed his whole houre and more only vpon the queſtions he had moued and maintained. Wherein hee ſo ſet out the agreement of the Church of Rome with vs, and their diſagreement from vs, as if we had confeſſed in the greateſt and weightieſt points, and differed onely in certaine ſmaller matters: Which agreement noted by him in two cheefe points, is not ſuch as he would haue made men beleeue: The firſt is that he ſaid they acknowledge all mans ſinfulneſſe, euen the bleſſed Virgin, though ſome of them freed her from ſinne: for the Councell of Trent holdeth that ſhe was free from ſinne: Another is that he ſaid, They teach Chriſts righteouſneſſe to be the onely meritorious cauſe of taking away ſinne, and differ from vs only in the applying of it. For* Thomas Aquinas *their cheefe Schoolman, and Archbiſhop* Catharinus *teach, That Chriſt tooke away onely originall ſinne, and that the reſt are to be taken away by our ſelues: yea the Councell of Trent teacheth, That the righteouſneſſe whereby we are righteous in Gods ſight, is inherent righteouſneſſe, which muſt needs be of our owne workes, and cannot be vnderſtood of the righteouſneſſe inherent onely in Chriſts perſon and accounted vnto vs.*

offence

offence in this caſe? I did, as he ſaith, ſo ſet it out, as if we had conſented in the greateſt and waightieſt points, and differed onely in ſmaller matters. I will not be found, when it commeth to the ballance, a light difference where we diſagree, as I did acknowledge that we doe about the very eſſence of the Medicine whereby Chriſt cureth our diſeaſe. Did I goe about to make a ſhew of agreement in the waightieſt points, and was I ſo fond as not to conceale our diſagreement about this? I doe wiſh that ſome indifferencie were vſed by them, that haue taken the waighing of my words.

13 Yea, but our agreement is not ſuch in two of the chiefeſt points, as I would haue men beleeue it is: and what are they? The one is, I ſaid, *They acknowledge all men ſinners, euen the bleſſed Virgin, though ſome of them free her from ſin.* Put the caſe I had affirmed, that only ſome of them free her from ſin, and had deliuered it as the moſt currant opinion amongſt them, that ſhe was conceiued in ſinne: doth not *Bonauenture* ſay plainely, *Omnes fere*; In a manner all men doe hold this? Doth he not bring many reaſons wherefore all men ſhould hold it? Were there voices ſince that time euer counted, and their number found ſmaller which hold it, then theirs that hold the contrarie? Let the queſtion then be, whether I might ſay, The moſt of them *acknowledged all men ſinners, euen the bleſſed Virgin her ſelfe.* To ſhew that their generall receiued opinion is the contrarie, The Tridentine Councell is alledged, peraduenture not altogether ſo conſiderately. For if that Councell haue by reſolute determination freed her, if it hold as Maſter *Trauers* ſaith it doth, that ſhee was free from ſin; then muſt the Church of Rome needs condemne them that hold the contrarie. For what that Councell holdeth, the ſame they all doe and muſt hold. But in the Church of Rome, who knoweth not, that it is a thing indifferent to thinke and defend the one or the other? So that by this argument; the Councell of Trent holdeth the Virgin free from ſinne, *Ergo*, It is plaine that none of them may, and therefore vntrue that moſt of them doe acknowledge her a ſinner, were forcible to ouerthrow my ſuppoſed Aſſertion, if it were true that the Councell did hold this. But to the end it may cleerely appeare, how it neither holdeth this nor the contrarie, I will open what many do conceiue of the Canon that concerneth this matter. The Fathers of Trent perceiued, that if they ſhould define of this matter, it would bee dangerous, howſoeuer it were determined. If they had freed her from her originall ſinne, the reaſons againſt them are vnanſwerable which *Bonauenture* and others doe alledge, but eſpecially *Thomas*, whoſe line as much as may be they follow. Againe, if they did reſolue the other way, they ſhould controll themſelues in another thing, which in no caſe might be altered. For they profeſſe to keepe no day holy in the honour of an vnholy thing; and the Virgins Conception they honour with a * Feaſt; which they could not abrogate without cancelling a Conſtitution of *Xyſtus Quartus*. And that which is worſe, the world

* This doth much trouble *Thomas*, holding her Conception ſtayned with the naturall blemiſh inherent in mortall ſeed. And therefore hee putteth it off with two anſweres; the one, That the Church of Rome doth not allow, but tolerate the Feaſt, which anſwer now will not ſerue: the other, That being ſafe thee was ſanctified before birth, but vnſure how long a while after her Conception, therefore vnder the name of her Conception-day, they honour the time of her Sanctification. So that beſides this, they haue now no ſolder to ioyne the certaine allowance of their Feaſt, and their vncertaine ſentence concerning her ſinne to cleaue together. *Thom. 3. part. queſt. 27. art. 2. ad 2. & 3.*

might

might perhaps hereupon ſuſpect, that if the Church of Rome diſmiſſe before in this, it is not impoſſible for her to faile in other things. In the end they did wiſely quoſe out their Canon by a middle thred, eſtabliſhing the Feaſt of the Virgins Conception, and leaving the other queſtion doubtfull as they found it: giuing onely a caueat, that no man ſhould take the Decree, which pronounceth all mankind originally ſinneſull, for a definitiue ſentence concerning the bleſſed Virgin. This in my ſight is plaine by their owne words. *Declarat hac ipſa ſancta Synodus, &c.* wherefore our Countrimen at Rhemes mentioning this point, are marueilous warie how they ſpeake; they touch it as though it were a hot cole: *Many godly deuout men iudge that our bleſſed Lady was neither borne nor conceiued in ſinne.* Is it their want to ſpeake nicely of things definitiuely ſet downe in that Councell? In like ſort we find that the reſt, which haue ſince the time of the Tridentine Synode written of originall ſinne, are in this point for the moſt part either ſilent or very ſparing in ſpeech; and when they ſpeake either doubtfull what to thinke, or whatſoeuer they thinke themſelues, fearefull to ſet downe any certaine determination. If I be thought to take the Canon of that Councell otherwiſe then they themſelues doe, let him expound it whoſe ſentence was neither laſt asked, nor his pen leaſt occupied in ſetting it downe. I meane *Andradius*, whom *Gregory* the Thirteenth hath allowed plainly to confeſſe, that it is a matter which neither expreſſe euidence of Scripture, nor the Tradition of the Fathers, nor the ſentence of the Church hath determined; that they are too ſurly and ſelfe-willed, which defending either opinion, are diſpleaſed with them by whom the other is maintained: finally, that the Fathers of Trent haue not ſet downe any certaintie about this queſtion, but left it doubtfull and indifferent. Now whereas my words which I had ſet downe in writing before I vttered them, were indeed theſe; *Although they imagine that the Mother of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt were for his honour, and by his ſpeciall protection preſerued cleane from all ſin, yet concerning the reſt they teach as we doe, that all haue ſinned.* Againſt my words they might with more pretence take exception, becauſe ſo many of them thinke ſhe had ſin: which exception notwithſtanding, the Propoſition being indefinite, and the matter contingent, they cannot take, becauſe they graunt that many whom they count graue and deuout amongſt them, thinke that ſhee was cleere from all ſin. But whether Maſter *Trauers* did note my words himſelfe, or take them vpon the credit of ſome other mans noting, the Tables were faultie wherin it was noted: *Al men ſinners, euen the bleſſed Virgin.* When my ſpeech was rather, *All men, except the bleſſed Virgin.* To leaue this; another fault he findeth that I ſaid, *They teach Chriſts righteouſneſſe to be the onely meritorious cauſe of taking away ſin, and differ from vs only in the applying of it.* I did ſay and doe, *They teach as we doe, that although Chriſt be the only meritorious cauſe of our iuſtice, yet as a medicine which is made for health, doth not heale by being made, but by being applied: So by the merits of Chriſt there can be no life nor iuſtification, without the application of his merits: But about the manner of applying Chriſt, about the number and power of meanes, whereby he is applied, we diſſent from them.* This of our diſſenting from them is acknowledged.

Annot. in Rom. 5. Sect. 9.

Lib. 5. defenſ. fidei.

14 Our agreement in the former is denied to bee ſuch as I pretend. Let their

their owne words therefore, and mine concerning them, be compared. Doth not *Andradius* plainly confeſſe, *Our ſinnes doe ſhut, and only the merits of Chriſt open the entring vnto bleſſednesse?* And Scotus, *It is put for a ground, that all ſince the fall of Adam obtaine ſalvation only by the paſſion of Chriſt: howbeit as no cauſe can be effectuall without applying, ſo neither can any man bee ſaued to whom the ſuffering of Chriſt is not applyed.* In a word, who not? when the Councell of Trent reckoning vp the cauſes of our firſt iuſtification, doth name no end but Gods glorie and our felicitie; no efficient, but his Mercie; no inſtrumentall, but Baptiſme; no meritorious, but Chriſt, whom to haue merited the taking away of no ſinne, but originall, is not their opinion: which himſelfe will find when he hath well examined his Witneſſes *Catharinus* and *Thomas*. Their Ieſuites are maruellous angry with the men, out of whoſe gleanings Maſter *Trauers* ſeemeth to haue taken this; they openly diſclaime it, they ſay plainly, *Of all the Catholikes there is no one that did euer ſo teach*, they make ſolemne proteſtation, *We beleeue and profeſſe that Chriſt vpon the croſſe hath altogether ſatisfied for all ſins, as well originall as actuall.* Indeed they teach that the merit of Chriſt doth not take away actuall ſinne, in ſuch ſort as it doth originall, wherein if their Doctrine had beene vnderſtood, I for my ſpeech had neuer beene accuſed. As for the Councell of Trent concerning inherent righteouſneſſe, what doth it here? No man doubteth but they make another formall cauſe of Iuſtification then we doe. In reſpect whereof, I haue ſhewed already, that we diſagree about the very eſſence of that which cureth our ſpirituall Diſeaſe: Moſt true it is which the Grand Philoſopher hath, *Euery man iudgeth well of that which he knoweth*, and therefore till we know the things throughly, whereof we iudge, it is a point of iudgement to ſtay our iudgement.

Orthod. lib. 3.

In 4 Sent. diſt. 1. quæſt. 4. art. 6.

Bellarm. Iudic. de lib. Concor. Mendac. 18. *Nemo Catholicorum vnquam ſic docuit; ſed credimus, & profitemur Chriſtum in cruce pro omnibus omnino peccatis ſatisfeciſſe, tam originalibus, quàm actualibus.*

15 Thus much labour being ſpent in diſcouering the vnſoundneſſe of my Doctrine, ſome paines hee taketh further to open faults in the manner of my teaching, as that *I beſtowed my whole houre and more, my time, and more then my time, in Diſcourſes vtterly impertinent to my Text.* Which if I had done, it might haue paſt without complayning of to the Prinie Councell.

16 But I did worſe, as he ſaith, *I left the expounding of the Scriptures and my ordinarie calling, and diſcourſed vpon Schoole-points, and queſtions, neither of edification, nor of truth.* I read no Lecture in the Law or in Phyſick. And except the bounds of ordinary calling may be drawne like a Purſe, how are they ſo much wider vnto him then to me, that he which in the limits of his ordinarie calling, ſhould reproue that in mee which he vnderſtood not, and I labouring that both hee and others might vnderſtand, could not doe this without forſaking my calling? The matter whereof I ſpake was ſuch, as being at the firſt by me but lightly touched, he had in that place openly contradicted, and ſolemnely taken vpon him to diſproue. If therefore it were a Schoole queſtion and vnfit to be diſcourſed of there, that which was in me but a Propoſition only at the firſt, wherefore made he a Probleme of it? Why tooke he firſt vpon him to maintayne the negative of that, which I had affirmatiuely ſpoken, only to ſhew mine owne opinion, little thinking that euer it would haue a queſtion? Of what nature ſoeuer the queſtion were of, I could doe no leſſe then there explaine my ſelfe to them, vnto whom I was accuſed of vnſound Doctrine;

wherein if to ſhew what had beene through ambiguitie miſtaken in my words, or miſapplyed by him in this cauſe againſt me, I vſed the diſtinctions and helpes of Schooles, I truſt thatt herein I haue committed no vnlawfull thing. Theſe Schoole-implements are acknowledged by * graue and wiſemen not vnprofitable to haue beene inuented. The moſt approoued for learning and iudgement doe vſe them without blame; the vſe of them hath beene well liked in ſome that haue taught euen in this very place before mee; the qualitie of my hearers is ſuch, that I could not but thinke them of capacitie verie ſufficient for the moſt part to conceiue harder then I vſed any; the cauſe I had in hand did in my iudgement neceſſarily require them which were then vſed; when my words ſpoken generally without diſtinctions had beene peruerted, what other way was there for me, but by diſtinctions to lay them open in their right meaning, that it might appeare to all men whether they were conſonant to truth or no? And although Maſter *Trauers* be ſo inured with the Citie, that he thinketh it vnmeete to vſe my ſpeech which ſauoureth of the Schoole, yet his opinion is no Canon: though vnto him his mind being troubled, my ſpeech did ſeeme like ſetters and manicles, yet there might be ſome more calmely-affected which thought otherwiſe; his priuate iudgement will hardly warrant his bold words, that the things which I ſpake *were neither of edification nor truth*. They might edifie ſome other for any thing he knoweth, and be true for any thing he prooueth to the contrarie. For it is no prooſe to crie *Abſurdities, the like whereunto haue not beene heard in publique places within this Land ſince Queene* Maries *dayes*. If this came in earneſt from him, I am ſorrie to ſee him ſo much offended without cauſe. More ſorrie that his fit ſhould be ſo extreme to make him ſpeake he knoweth not what: That I neither *affected the truth of God, nor the peace of the Church. Mihi pro minimo eſt*. It doth not much moone me; when Maſter *Trauers* doth ſay that which I truſt a greater then Maſter *Trauers* will gaineſay.

17 Now let all this which hitherto hee hath ſaid be granted him, let it be as hee would haue it, let my doctrine and manner of teaching be as much diſallowed by all mens iudgement as by his, what is all this to his purpoſe? Hee alledgeth this to be the cauſe why he bringeth it in: The high Commiſſioners *charge him with an indiſcretion and want of dutie, in that hee inueighed againſt certaine points of doctrine taught by me as erroneous, not conferring firſt with me, nor complaining of it to them*. Which faults, a ſea of ſuch matter as hee hath hitherto waded in, will neuer be able to ſcowre from him. For the auoiding of Schiſme and diſturbance in the Church, which muſt needs grow if all men might thinke what they liſt, and ſpeake openly what they thinke; therefore by a * Decree agreed vpon by the Biſhops, and confirmed by her Maieſties authoritie it was ordred, that erroneous doctrine, if it were taught publiquely, ſhould not bee publiquely refuted, but that notice thereof ſhould bee giuen vnto ſuch as are by her Highneſſe appointed to heare and to determine ſuch

* *Calu. Inſt. l. 1. cap. 8. Sect. 9.*

* In the Aduertiſements publiſhed in the 7. yeere of her Maieſties Raigne: If any Preacher or Parſon, Vicar, or Curate ſo licenſed, ſhall fortune to preach any matter tending to diſſenſion or to derogation of the Religion and Doctrine receiued, that the hearers denounce the ſame to the Ordinarie, or the next Biſhop of the ſame place, but not openly to contrary or to impugne the ſame ſpeech ſo diſorderly vttered, whereby may grow offence, and diſquiet of the people, but ſhall be conuinced and reproued by the Ordinarie, after ſuch a conuenient order as ſhall bee ſeene to him according to the grauitie of the offence: And that it be preſented within one moneth after the words ſpoken.

cauſes. For breach of which Order when he is charged with lacke of duty, all the faults that can be heaped vpon me, will make but a weake defence for him: as ſurely his defence is not much ſtronger when hee alleageth for him ſelfe that, *He could in ſome hope his ſpeech in proouing the truth, & cleering thoſe ſcruples which I had in my ſelfe, might cauſe me either to imbrace ſound doctrine, or ſuffer it to be imbraced of others, which if I did, he ſhould not need to complaine; that, It was meete he ſhould diſcouer firſt what I had ſowne, and withe it manifeſt to be tares, & then deſire their ſithe to cut it downe; that conſcience did bind him to do otherwiſe then the ſaide ſaid order requireth; that he was vnwilling to deale in that publike manner, & wiſhed a more conuenient way were taken for it; that he had reſolued to haue proteſted the next Sabbath Day that he would ſome other way ſatisfie ſuch as ſhould require it, and not deale more in that place.* Be it imagined (let mee not be taken as if I did compare the offenders when I do not, but their anſwers only) bee it imagined that a Libeller did make this apologie for himſelfe, I am not ignorant that if I haue iuſt matter againſt any man, the Law is open, there are Iudges to heare it, and Courts where it ought to be complained of; I haue taken another courſe againſt ſuch or ſuch a man, yet without breach of duty, for as much as I am able to yeeld a reaſon of my doing, I conceiue ſome hope that a little diſcredit amongſt men would make him aſhamed of himſelfe, and that his ſhame would worke his amendment; which if it did, other accuſation there ſhould not need; could his anſwere be thought ſufficient, could it in the iudgement of diſcreet men free him from all blame? No more can the hope which Maſter *Trauers* conceiued to reclaime me by publike ſpeech, iuſtifie his fault againſt the eſtabliſhed Order of the Church.

18 His thinking it meet *he ſhould firſt openly diſcouer to the people the tares that had bin ſowne amongſt them, and then require the hand of Authority to mowe them downe*, doth onely make it a queſtion, whether his opinion that this was meete, may bee a priuiledge or protection againſt that lawfull conſtitution which had before determined of it as of a thing vnmeete. Which queſtion I leaue for them to diſcuſſe whom it moſt concerneth. If the order bee ſuch that it cannot be kept without hazarding a thing ſo precious as a good conſcience, the perill whereof could bee no greater to him then it needes muſt bee to all others whom it toucheth in like caſes, when this is euident, it will bee a moſt effectual motiue not onely for England, but alſo for other reformed Churches, euen Geneua it ſelfe [for they haue the like] to change or take that away which cannot but with great inconuenience be obſerued. In the meane while the breach of it may in ſuch conſideration bee pardoned [which truely I wiſh howſoeuer it bee,] yet hardly defended as long as it ſtandeth in force vncanceld.

19 Now whereas he confeſſeth another way had *beene more conuenient*, and that he found in himſelfe ſecret vnwillingneſſe to doe that which hee did, doth hee not ſay plainly in effect that the light of his owne vnderſtanding prooued the way hee tooke peruerſe and crooked; reaſon was ſo plaine and pregnant againſt it, that his minde was alienated, his will auerted to another courſe? yet ſomewhat there was which ſo farre ouer-ruled, that it muſt needes be done euen againſt the very ſtreame, what doth it bewray? Finally his pur-

posed transition, whereby he meanes openly to make it knowne, that he did not allow this kind of proceeding, and therefore would satisfie men otherwise, *and deale no more in that place*, the which his good mind in this, that he meant to stay himselfe from further offending, but is forced not his turne. He is blamed, because the thing in hand done were amisse, and his answere is, That which I would have done afterwarde had become well, if so be I had done it.

20 But as in this he standeth perswaded, that hee hath done nothing beside duetie, so he taketh it hardly that the High Commissioners should charge him with indiscretion. Wherefore as if he could so wash his hands, he maketh a long and a large declaration concerning the carriage of himselfe: how he waded in matters *of smaller weight*, & how in things of greater *moment*, how warily he deale; how *narrowly* he took his things *rising from the Text*, how closely he kept himselfe to *the Scripture he tooke in hand*; how much paines he *tooke to confirme the necessity of beleeving Iustification by Christ only*, and to shew how *the Church of Rome* denyeth *that a man is saued by faith alone, without works of the Law*; what *the Synode of thunder would have done*, if they had beene in his case; that his *answere was very temperate without* immodest *or reproachfull speech*, that when he might *before all* have reproued me, he did not, *but contented himselfe with exhorting me* before all, *to follow* Nathans *example and resist my desire*; when he might have followed S. *Pauls* example *in reproouing Peter*, he did not, but exhorted me with *Peter*, *to endeuour be withstood*. This testimonie of his discreet carrying himselfe in the handling of his matter, being more agreeably framed and given him by another then by himselfe, might make somewhat for the prayse of his person; but for defence of his action vnto them by whom hee is thought vndiscreete, for not conferring priuately before hee spake, will it serue to answere, that when hee spake, hee did it considerately? Hee perceiueth it will not, and therefore addeth reasons such as they are. As namely, how he purposed at the first to take another course, and that was this, *Publikely to deliuer the truth of such Doctrine as I had otherwise taught, and at conuenient opertunity to conferre with me vpon such points*. Is this the rule of Christ, If thy brother offend openly in his speech, controll it first with contrary speech openly, and conferre with him afterwards vpon it, when conuenient opportunity serueth? Is there any Law of God, or of Man, whereupon to ground such a resolution, any Church extant in the World, where Teachers are allowed, thus to do or to be done vnto? He cannot but see how weake an allegation it is, when he bringeth in his following this course, first in one matter, and so afterwards in another, to approoue himselfe, now following it againe. For if the very purpose of doing a thing so vncharitable bee a fault, the deed is a greater fault, and doth the doing of it twice, make it the third time fit and allowable to be done? The weight of the cause, which is his third defence, relieueth him as little. The weightier it was, the more it required considerate aduice and consultation, the more it stood him vpon to take good heed, that nothing were rashly done or spoken in it. But he meaneth *weightie* in regard of the wonderfull danger, except hee had presently withstood me without expecting a time of conference. *That cause being of such moment that might preiudice the faith of Christ, inuite the ill-affected to continue still in their damnable*

wayes,

wayes, and other weake in faith, to ſuffer themſelues to be ſeduced to the deſtruction of their ſoules, he thought it his bounden dutie to ſpeake before he talked with me. A man that ſhould reade this, and not know what I had ſpoken, might imagine that I had at the leaſt denyed the Diuinitie of Chriſt. But they which were preſent at my ſpeech and can teſtifie, that nothing paſſed my lips more then is contayned in their writings, whom for ſoundneſſe of doctrine, learning, and iudgement Maſter *Trauers* himſelfe doth, I dare ſay, not only allow, but honour, they which heard and do know that the doctrine here ſignified in ſo fearfull manner, the doctrine that was ſo dangerous to the Faith of Chriſt, that was ſo likely *to encourage ill-affected men, to continue ſtill in damnable wayes*, that gaue ſo great cauſe to tremble for feare of the preſent *deſtruction of ſoules*, was only this, *I doubt not but God was mercifull to ſaue thouſands of our Fathers, liuing heretofore in Popiſh Superſtitions, in as much as they ſinned ignorantly*, and this ſpoken in a Sermon, the greateſt part whereof was againſt Poperie, they will hardly bee able to diſcerne how Chriſtianitie ſhould herewith bee ſo grieuouſly ſtricken.

21 Whereby his fourth excuſe is alſo taken from him. For what doth it boot him to ſay, *The time was ſhort wherein he was to preach after me*, when his preaching of this matter perhaps ought, ſurely might haue beene either verie well omitted, or at the leaſt more conueniently for a while deferd, euen by their iudgements that caſt the moſt fauourable aſpect towards theſe his haſtie proceedings? The poyſon which men had taken at my hands, was not ſo quick and ſtrong in operation, as in eight dayes to make them paſt cure; by eight dayes delay there was no likelihood that the force and power of his ſpeech could die; longer Meditation might bring better and ſtronger proofs to minde, then extemporall dexteritie could furniſh him with; and who doth know whether Time, the only Mother of ſound iudgement and diſcreete dealing, might haue giuen that action of his ſome better ripeneſſe, which by ſo great feſtination hath, as a thing borne out of Time, brought ſmall ioy vnto him that begat it? Doth hee thinke it had not beene better that neither my ſpeech had ſeemed in his eyes as an arrow ſticking in a thigh of fleſh, nor his owne as a child whereof he muſt needs be deliuered by an boure? His laſt way of diſburdening himſelfe is, by caſting his lode vpon my backe, as if I had brought him by former conferences out of hope, that any fruit would euer come of conferring with me. Loth I am to rip vp thoſe conferences, whereof hee maketh but a ſlipperie and looſe relation. In one of them the queſtion betweene vs was, whether the perſwaſion of Faith concerning remiſſion of ſinnes, eternall life, and whatſoeuer God doth promiſe vnto man, be as free from doubting as the perſwaſion which we haue by ſenſe concerning things taſted, felt, and ſeene? For the negatiue I mentioned their Example, whoſe Faith in Scripture is moſt commended, and the experience which all faithfull men haue continually had of themſelues. For proofe of the affirmatiue, which he held, I deſiring to haue ſome reaſon, heard nothing but *All good Writers* oftentimes inculcated. At the length, vpon requeſt, to ſee ſome one of them, *Peter Martyr's* common places were brought, where the leaues were turned downe, at a place ſounding to this effect, that *the Goſpel doth make Chriſtians more verteous, then moral Philoſophie doth*

doth make Heathens: which came not neere the queſtion by many miles.

22 In the other Conference he queſtioned about the matter of Reprobation, miſliking firſt that I had termed God a permiſſiue, and no poſitiue cauſe of the euill, which the Schoole men doe call *malum culpæ*. Secondly, that to their obiection who ſay, *If I be elected, doe what I will, I ſhall be ſaued*, I had anſwered, that the will of God in this thing is not abſolute, but conditionall, to ſaue his Elect beleeuing, fearing, and obediently ſeruing him: Thirdly, that to ſtop the mouthes of ſuch as grudge and repine againſt God for reiecting caſt-awayes, I had taught that they are not reiected, no not in the purpoſe and counſell of God, without a fore-ſeene worthineſſe of reiection going, though not in time yet in order before. For if Gods electing doe in order (as needs it muſt) preſuppoſe the fore-ſight of their being that are elected, though they be elected before they be, nor only the poſitiue fore-ſight of their being, but alſo the permiſſiue of their being miſerable, becauſe election is through mercy, and mercy doth alwayes preſuppoſe miſerie: it followeth, that the very choſen of God acknowledge to the praiſe of the riches of his exceeding free compaſſion, that when he in his ſecret determination ſet it downe, *Thoſe ſhall liue and not dye*, they lay as vgly ſpectacles before him, as Lepers couered with dung and mire, as vlcers putrified in their fathers loynes, miſerable, worthy to be had in deteſtation; and ſhall any forſaken creature be able to ſay vnto God, Thou didſt plunge me into the depth, and aſſigne me vnto endleſſe tormentes, onely to ſatisfie thine owne will, finding nothing in mee for which I could ſeeme in thy ſight ſo well worthy to feele euerlaſting flames?

23 When I ſaw that Maſter *Trauers* carped at theſe things only, becauſe they lay not open, I promiſed at ſome conuenient time to make them cleere as light both to him and all others. Which if they that reproue mee will not grant me leaue to doe, they muſt thinke that they are for ſome cauſe or other, more deſirous to haue me reputed an vnſound man, then willing that my ſincere meaning ſhould appeare and be approoued. When I was further asked what my grounds were, I anſwered, that S. *Pauls* words concerning this cauſe were my grounds. His next demand, what Authour I did follow in expounding S. *Paul*, and gathering the doctrine out of his words, againſt the iudgement (he ſaith) of *all Churches*, and *all good Writers*. I was well aſſured that to controll this ouer-reaching ſpeech, the ſentences which I might haue cited out of Church Confeſſions, together with the beſt learned Monuments of former times, and not the meaneſt of our owne, were mo in number then perhaps he would willingly haue heard of, but what had this booted me? For although he himſelfe in generalitie doe much vſe thoſe formall ſpeeches, *All Churches*, and *all good Writers*: yet as hee holdeth it in Pulpit lawfull to ſay in generall, the *Paynims* thinke this, or the *Heathens* that, but vtterly vnlawfull to cite any ſentence of theirs that ſay it; ſo hee gaue me at that time great cauſe to thinke that my particular alleadging of other mens words, to ſhew their agreement with mine, would as much haue diſpleaſed his minde as the thing it ſelfe for which it had beene alleaged. For hee knoweth how often he hath in publike place bitten me for this, although I did neuer in any Sermon vſe many of the Sentences of other Writers, and doe make moſt without any, hauing

alwayes

alwayes thought it meeteſt neither to affect nor to contemne the vſe of them.

24 He is not ignorant that in the very entrance to the talke, which wee had priuately at that time, to proue it vnlawful altogether in preaching, either for confirmation, declaration, or otherwiſe to cite any thing but meere Canonicall Scripture, he brought in, *The Scripture is giuen by inſpiration, and is profitable to teach, improue, &c.* Urging much the vigour of theſe two clauſes, *The man of God* and *euery good worke*. If therefore the worke were good which hee required at my hands, if priuately to ſhew, why I thought the doctrine I had deliuered to be according to S. *Pauls* meaning, were a good worke, can they which take the place before alledged for a Law, condemning euery man of God, who in doing the worke of preaching any way vſeth humane authoritie, like it in me, if in the worke of ſtrengthning, that which I had preached, I ſhould bring forth the teſtimonies and the ſayings of mortall men? I alledged therefore, that which might vnder no pretence in the world be diſallowed, namely reaſons, not meaning thereby my owne reaſon as now it is reported, but true ſound diuine reaſon; reaſon wherby thoſe Concluſions might be out of S. *Paul* demonſtrated, and not probably diſcourſed of only; reaſon proper to that ſcience whereby the things of God are knowne; Theologicall reaſon without principles in Scripture that are plaine, ſoundly deduced more doubtfull inferences, in ſuch ſort that being heard they cannot be denied, nor any thing repugnant vnto them receiued, but whatſoeuer was before otherwiſe by miſcollecting gathered out of darke places, is thereby forced to yeeld it ſelfe, and the true conſonant meaning of ſentences, not vnderſtood, is brought to light. This is the reaſon which I intended. If it were poſſible for me to eſcape the Ferula in any thing I doe or ſpeake, I had vndoubtedly eſcaped it in this. In this I did that which by ſome is thought to be the only allowable, but granted by all as the moſt ſure and ſafe way, whereby to reſolue things doubted of, in matters appertaining to Faith and Chriſtian Religion. So that Maſter *Trauers* had here ſmall cauſe giuen him to be weary of conferring, valeſſe it were in other reſpects then that poore one which is heere pretended, that is to ſay, the little hope he had of doing meany good by conference.

25 Yet behold his firſt reaſon of not complaining to the High Commiſſion, is, that ſith I offended onely through an ouer charitable inclination, hee conceiued good hope, when I ſhould ſee the truth cleered, and ſome ſcruples, which were in my mind, remooued by his diligence, I would yeeld. But what experience ſoeuer hee had of former conferences, how ſmall ſoeuer his hope was that fruit would come of it if hee ſhould haue conferred, will any man iudge this a cauſe ſufficient, why to open his mouth in publique without any one word priuately ſpoken? Hee might haue conſidered that men doe ſometimes reape, where they ſowe but with ſmall hope; he might haue conſidered that although vnto me (whereof he was not certaine neither) but if to me his labour ſhould be as water ſpilt or powred into a horne diſh, yet to him it could not be fruitleſſe to doe that which order in Chriſtian Churches, that which charitie amongſt Chriſtian men, that which at many mens hands euen common humanitie it ſelfe, at his, many other things beſides did require. What fruit could there come of his open contradicting in ſo great haſt with ſo ſmall aduice,

aduice, but ſuch as muſt needs be vnpleaſant, and mingled with much acerbitie? Surely, he which will take vpon him to defend, that in this there was no ouer-ſight, muſt be ware leſt by ſuch defences, hee leaue an opinion dwelling in the minds of men, that he is more ſtiffe to maintaine what hee hath done, then carefull to doe nothing but that which may iuſtly be maintained.

26. Thus haue I as neere as I could, ſeriouſly anſwered things of waight; with lmaller I haue deale as I thought the qualitie did require. I take no ioy in ſtriuing. I haue not beene nuzled or trained vp in it. I would to Chriſt they which haue at this preſent inforced me hereunto, had ſo ruled their hands in any reaſonable time, that I might neuer haue beene conſtrained to ſtrike ſo much as in mine owne defence. Wherefore to preſente this long and tedious contention no further, ſhall I wiſh that your Grace and their Honours (vnto whoſe intelligence the dutifull regard which I haue of their iudgements, maketh me deſirous, that no accuſations haue beene brought againſt me, ſo that this my anſwer thereunto may likewiſe come) did both with the one and the other, as *Conſtantine* with bookes containing querulous matter. Whether this be conuenient to be wiſht or no, I cannot tell. But ſith there can come nothing of contention, but the mutuall waſte of the parties contending, till a common enemie dance in the aſhes of them both, I doe wiſh heartily that the graue aduice which *Conſtantine* gaue for reuniting of his Clergy ſo many times, vpon ſo ſmall occaſions, in ſo lamentable ſort diuided, or rather the ſtrict commandement of Chriſt vnto his, that they ſhould not be diuided at all, may at the length, if it be his bleſſed will, preuaile ſo farre at the leaſt in this corner of the Chriſtian world, to the burying and quite forgetting of ſtrife, together with the cauſes which haue either bred it or brought it vp: that things of ſmall moment neuer diſioyne them, whom one God, one Lord, one Faith, one Spirit, one Baptiſme, bands of ſo great force haue linked, that a reſpective eye towards things, wherewith we ſhould not be diſquieted, make vs not, as through infirmitie the very Patriarkes themſelues ſometimes were, full gorged, vnable to ſpeake peaceably to their owne brother: finally, that no ſtrife may euer be heard of againe but this, who ſhall hate ſtrife moſt, who ſhall purſue Peace and Vnitie with ſwifteſt paces.

(***)

FINIS.

A

LEARNED DISCOVRSE OF *Iustification, Workes,* and how the foundation *of* FAITH *is ouerthrowne.*

By RICHARD HOOKER, sometimes Fellow of CORPVS CHRISTI *Colledge in* OXFORD.

LONDON,
Printed by W. STANSBY

1622.

TO THE CHRISTIAN READER.

Whereas many, desirous of resolution in some points handled in this learned Discourse, were earnest to haue it copied out; to ease so many labours, it hath beene thought most worthy and very necessary to be printed: that not onely they might bee satisfied, but the whole Church also hereby edified. The rather, because it will free the Author from the suspicion of some errours, which he hath beene thought to haue favoured. Who might well haue answered with Cremutius *in* Tacitus, [a] Verba mea arguuntur, adeo factorum innocens fuit. *Certainely, the euent of that time wherein he lined, shewed that to be true, which the same* [b] *Author spake of a worse,* Cui deerat inimicus, per amicos oppressus; *and that there is not* [c] minus periculum ex magna fama, quàm ex mala. *But he hath so quit himselfe, that all may see, how, as it was said of* Agricola, Simul suis virtutibus, simul vitijs aliorum in ipsam gloriam præceps agebatur. *Touching whom I will say no more, but that which my Author said of the same man,* Integritatem, &c. in tanto viro referre, iniuria virtutem fuerit. *But as of*

[a] Lib. 4. Ann.

[b] Lib. 1. Hist.

[c] In vita Agricolæ.

of all other his writings, so of this I will adde that, which
Lib. 2. Velleius *spake in commendation of* Piso, Nemo fuit, qui magis, quæ agenda erant, curaret, sine vlla ostentatione agendi. *So not doubting, Good Christian Reader, of thy assent herein, but wishing thy fauourable acceptance of this Worke (which will be an inducement to set forth others of his learned Labours) I take my leaue; from*

Corpus Christi Colledge
in Oxford the sixt of
July. 1612.

Thine in Christ Iesus.

HENRY IACKSON.



A LEARNED DISCOVRSE OF IVSTIFICATION, WORKES, AND HOW THE foundation of FAITH is ouerthrowne.

ABAK. 1.4.

The wicked doth compaſſe about the righteous; therefore perueꝛſe iudgement doth proceed.

FOr the better manifeſtation of the Prophets meaning in this place, we are firſt to conſider *the wicked*, of whom hee ſaith, *That they compaſſe about the righteous:* Secondly, the *righteous*, that are compaſſed about by them: and Thirdly, That which is inferred; *Therefore peruerſe iudgement proceedeth.* Touching the firſt, there are two kindes of wicked men, of whom, in the firſt of the former to the Corinthians, the bleſſed Apoſtle ſpeaketh thus: *Doe yee not iudge them that are within? But God iudgeth them that are without.* There are wicked therefore whom the Church may iudge, and there are wicked whom God only iudgeth: wicked within, and wicked without the wals of the Church. If within the Church, particular perſons bee apparantly ſuch, as cannot otherwiſe be reformed; the rule of the Apoſtolicall iudgement, is this; *Separate them from among you:* if whole Aſſemblies, this; *Separate your ſelues from among them: for what ſocietie hath light with darkneſſe?* But the wicked, whom the Prophet meaneth, were Babylonians, and therefore without. For which cauſe wee haue heard at large heretofore in what ſort hee vrgeth God to iudge them. 1. 2. 3. 1.Cor.5.12,13. 2.Cor.6. verſ.7.

2 Now concerning the Righteous, there neither is, nor euer was any meere naturall man abſolutely righteous in himſelfe, that is to ſay, voide of all vnrighteouſneſſe, of all ſinne. We dare not except, no not the bleſſed Virgin her ſelfe; of whom although we ſay with S. *Auguſtine*, for the honor ſake which wee owe to our Lord and Sauiour Chriſt, wee are not willing in this cauſe to moouе any queſtion of his Mother: yet foraſmuch as the Schooles of Rome

haue made it a queſtion; wee may anſwere with * *Euſebius Emiſſenus*, who ſpeaketh of her and to her in this effect: *Thou didſt, by ſpeciall prerogative, nine moneths together entertayne within the cloſet of thy fleſh, the hope of all the ends of the Earth, the honour of the World, the commoditie of Men: Hee, from whom all things had their beginning, had his beginning from thee; of thy body he tooke the blood, which was to bee ſhed for the life of the World; of thee hee tooke that, which euen for thee he payed. A peccati uinculo ueteris nexus, * per ſe non eſt immunis, nec ipſa genetrix Redemptoris:* the Mother of the Redeemer, her ſelfe, is not otherwiſe looſed from the bond of ancient ſinne, then by Redemption; if Chriſt haue paid a ranſome for all, euen for her, it followeth, that all without exception were captiues. If one haue dyed for all, then all were dead in ſin; all ſinfull therefore, none abſolutely righteous in themſelues; but we are abſolutely righteous in Chriſt. The World then muſt ſhew a righteous man, otherwiſe it is not able to ſhew a man that is perfectly righteous: *Chriſt is made to vs Wiſdome, Iuſtice, Sanctification, and Redemption: Wiſdome*, becauſe he hath reuealed his Fathers will: *Iuſtice*, becauſe he hath offered vp himſelfe a Sacrifice for ſin: *Sanctification*, becauſe he hath giuen vs his Spirit: *Redemption*, becauſe he hath appointed a Day to vindicate his Children out of the hands of corruption, into libertie, which is glorious. How Chriſt is made *Wiſdome*, and how *Redemption*, it may be declared, when occaſion ſerueth. But how Chriſt is made the *righteouſneſſe* of men, we are now to declare.

* Or whoſoeuer it bee that was the author of thoſe Homilies that go vnder his name.

a Knowing how the Schoolmen hold this queſtion, ſome Criticall wits may perhaps halfe ſuſpect that theſe two words, *Per ſe*, are In-matters. But if the place which they haue, bee their owne, their ſenſe can be none other then that which I haue giuen them by a paraphraſticall interpretation.

3 There is a glorifying righteouſneſſe of men in the World to come; as there is a iuſtifying and ſanctifying righteouſneſſe here. The righteouſneſſe, wherewith we ſhall be clothed in the World to come, is both perfect and inherent. That whereby here we are iuſtified, is perfect, but not inherent. That whereby we are ſanctified, is inherent, but not perfect. This openeth a way to the vnderſtanding of that grand queſtion, which hangeth yet in controuerſie betweene vs and the Church of Rome, about the matter of iuſtifying righteouſneſſe.

They teach as we doe, that God doth iuſtifie the ſoule of man alone, without any coeffective cauſe of iuſtice.

Deus ſine medio coeffectiuo animam iuſtificat. Caſal de quadr. part. iuſt. l. 1. c. 8. Idem lib. 3. c. 9.

4 Firſt, although they imagine, that the Mother of our Lord and Sauiour Ieſus Chriſt, were for his honor, and by his ſpeciall protection, preſerued cleane from all ſinne: yet touching the reſt they teach as we doe; that Infants which neuer did actually offend, haue their natures defiled, deſtitute of Iuſtice, conuerted from God; that in making man righteous, none doe efficiently worke with God, but God. They teach as we doe, that vnto Iuſtice no man euer attayned, but by the Merits of Ieſus Chriſt. They teach as we doe, that although Chriſt as God, be the efficient; as Man, the meritorious cauſe of our Iuſtice: yet in vs alſo there is ſomething required. God is the cauſe of our naturall life, in him we liue: but he quickeneth not the bodie without the ſoule in the bodie. Chriſt hath merited to make vs iuſt: but as a medicine, which is made for health, doth not heale by being made, but by being applyed: ſo by the Merits of Chriſt there can bee no iuſtification, without the application of his Merits. Thus farre we ioyne hands with the Church of Rome.

The differences betwixt the Papiſts and vs about iuſtification.

5 Wherein then doe wee diſagree? Wee diſagree about the nature and eſſence of the medicine, whereby Chriſt cureth our Diſeaſe; about the manner of applying it; about the number, and the power of meanes, which God requireth

quireth

quireth in vs for the effectuall applying thereof to our ſoules comfort. When they are required to ſhew what the righteouſneſſe is, whereby a Chriſtian man is iuſtified: they * anſwere, that it is a diuine ſpirituall qualitie, which qualitie receiued into the ſoule, doth firſt make it to be one of them, who are borne of God: and ſecondly, indue it with power, to bring forth ſuch workes, as they doe that are borne of him; euen as the ſoule of man being ioyned to his bodie, doth firſt make him to bee of the number of reaſonable creatures; and ſecondly enable him to performe the naturall functions which are proper to his kind: that it maketh the ſoule amiable and gracious in the ſight of God, in regard whereof it is termed grace; that it purgeth, purifieth, and waſheth out all the ſtaines, and pollutions of ſinne, that by it, through the merit of Chriſt, we are deliuered as from ſinne, ſo from eternall death and condemnation, the reward of ſinne. This grace they will haue to be applyed by infuſion to the end, that as the body is warme by the heate, which is in the body, ſo the ſoule might be righteous by the inherent grace: which grace they make capable of increaſe; as the bodie may bee more and more warme, ſo the ſoule more and more iuſtified, according as grace ſhall bee augmented; the augmentation whereof is merited by good workes, as good workes are made meritorious by it. Wherefore, the firſt receit of grace in their diuinitie, is the firſt iuſtification; the increaſe thereof the ſecond iuſtification. As grace may bee increaſed by the merit of good workes: ſo it may bee diminiſhed by the demerit of ſinnes veniall; it may bee loſt by mortall ſinne. In as much therefore as it is needfull in the one caſe to repaire; in the other, to recouer the loſſe which is made: the infuſion of grace hath her ſundry after-meales, for the which cauſe, they make many wayes to apply the infuſion of grace. It is applyed to Infants through Baptiſme, without either Faith, or Workes, and in them really it taketh away originall ſinne, and the puniſhment due vnto it: it is applyed to Infidels and wicked men in the firſt iuſtification, through Baptiſme without Workes, yet not without Faith; and it taketh away both ſinnes actuall and originall together, with all whatſoeuer puniſhment, eternall, or temporall, thereby deſerued. Vnto ſuch as haue attayned the firſt iuſtification, that is to ſay, the firſt receit of grace, it is applyed farther by good works to the increaſe of former grace, which is the ſecond iuſtification. If they worke more and more, grace doth more and more increaſe, and they are more and more iuſtified. To ſuch as diminiſhed it by veniall ſinnes, it is applyed by holy Water, *Aue Maries*, Croſſings, Papall ſalutations, and ſuch like, which ſerue for reparations of grace decayed. To ſuch as haue loſt it through mortall ſinne, it is applyed by the Sacrament (as they terme it) of Penance: which Sacrament hath force to conferre grace anew, yet in ſuch ſort, that being ſo conferred, it hath not altogether ſo much power, as at the firſt. For it only cleanſeth our the ſtaine or guilt of ſinne committed; and changeth the puniſhment eternall into a temporall ſatisfactorie puniſhment, here, if time doe ſerue, if not, hereafter to be indured, except it be lightened by Maſſes, workes of Charitie, Pilgrimages, Faſts, and ſuch like; or elſe ſhortned by Pardon, forterme, or by plenarie Pardon quite remooued, and taken away. This is the myſterie of the Man of ſinne. This maze the Church of Rome doth cauſe her followers to treade,

* Tho. Aquin. 1.2. quæſt. 100. *Gratia gratum faciens, id eſt, iuſtificans, eſt in anima quiddam regale & poſitiuum qualitas quædam* (art. 2. concl.) *ſupernaturalis, non eadem cum virtute infuſa, vt Magiſter; ſed aliquid* (art. 3.) *præter virtutes infuſas, fidem, ſpem, charitatis, habitudo quædã* (art. 3. ad 3.) *quæ præſupponitur in virtutibus iſtis ſicut earum principium & radix, eſſentiam animæ tanquam ſubiectum occupat non potentias; ſed ab ipſa* (art. 4. ad 1.) *effluunt virtutes in potentias animæ, per quas potentiæ mouentur ad actus, plura vid. quæſt. 113. de Iuſtificatione.*

when they aske her the way to iuſtification. I cannot ſtand now to vnrip this building, and to ſift it piece by piece; onely I will paſſe by it in few words, that that may be all Babylon in the preſence of that, which God hath builded, as happened vnto *Dagon* before the Arke.

a Phil.3.v.8. 6 Doubtleſſe, ſaith the a Apoſtle, *I haue counted all things loſſe, and iudge them to be dung, that I may winne Chriſt; and to bee found in him not hauing my owne righteouſneſſe, but that which is through the faith of Chriſt, the righteouſnes, which is of God through faith.* Whether they ſpeake of the firſt, or ſecond iuſtification, they make it the eſſence of a diuine qualitie inherent, they make it righteouſneſſe which is in vs. If it bee in vs, then is it ours, as our ſoules are ours, though wee haue them from God, and can hold them no longer then pleaſeth him: for if hee withdraw the breath of our noſtrils, wee fall to duſt: but the righteouſneſſe, wherein wee muſt bee found, if we will be iuſtified, is not our owne; therefore wee cannot bee iuſtified by any inherent qualitie. Chriſt hath merited righteouſneſſe for as many as are found in him. In him God findeth vs, if we be faithfull, for by faith wee are incorporated into Chriſt. Then although in our ſelues wee be altogether ſinfull, and vnrighteous, yet euen the man which is impious in himſelfe, full of iniquitie, full of ſinne, him being found in Chriſt through faith, and hauing his ſinne remitted through Repentance: him God vpholdeth with a gracious eye; putteth away his ſinne by not imputing; taketh quite away the puniſhment due thereunto, by pardoning it; and accepteth him in Ieſus Chriſt, as perfectly righteous, as if hee had fulfilled all that was commanded him in the Law: ſhall I ſay more perfectly righteous, then if himſelfe had fulfilled the whole Law? I muſt take heed what I ſay: but the Apoſtle ſaith, * *God made him to bee ſinne for vs, who knew no ſinne, that we might be made the righteouſneſſe of God in him.* Such wee are in the ſight of God the Father, as is the very Sonne of God himſelfe. Let it be counted folly, or phrenſie, or furie whatſoeuer; it is our comfort, and our wiſedome; wee care for no knowledge in the World but this, That Man hath ſinned, and God hath ſuffered; that God hath made himſelfe the Sonne of Man, and that Men are made the righteouſneſſe of God. You ſee therefore that the Church of Rome, in teaching iuſtification by inherent grace, doth peruert the Truth of Chriſt, and that by the hands of the Apoſtles wee haue receiued otherwiſe then ſhe teacheth. Now concerning the righteouſneſſe of ſanctification, we deny it not to be inherent: we grant, that vnleſſe we worke, we haue it not: onely wee diſtinguiſh it a thing different in nature from the righteouſneſſe of iuſtification: wee are righteous, the one way by the faith of *Abraham*; the other way, except we doe the workes of *Abraham*, wee are not righteous. Of the one, Saint PAVL; *To him that worketh not, but beleeueth, faith is counted for righteouſneſſe.* Of the other, S. IOHN; *Qui facit iuſtitiam, iuſtus eſt*; He is righteous, which worketh righteouſneſſe. Of the one, S. *Paul* doth proue by *Abrahams* Example, that we haue it of faith without workes. Of the other, S. *Iames*, by *Abrahams* Example, that by workes we haue it, and not onely by faith. Saint *Paul* doth plainly ſeuer theſe two parts of Chriſtian righteouſneſſe one from the other. For in the ſixt to the *Rom.* thus he writeth,

* 2.Cor.5.21.

Rom.4.5. 2.Iohn 3.7.

Rom.6. *Being freed from ſinne, and made ſeruants to God, yee haue your fruit in holineſſe,*

and

and the end everlaſting life. Ye are made free from ſinne, and made Seruants vnto God; this is the righteouſneſſe of iuſtification: *yee haue your fruit in holineſſe*; this is the righteouſneſſe of ſanctification. By the one we are intereſſed in the right of inheriting; by the other we are brought to the actuall poſſeſſion of eternall bliſſe, and ſo the end of both is everlaſting life.

7 The Prophet *Abak.* doth heere tearme the Iewes *righteous* men, not onely becauſe being iuſtified by Faith they were free from ſinne: but alſo becauſe they had their meaſure of fruites in holineſſe. According to whoſe example of charitable iudgement, which leaueth it to God to diſcerne what wee are, and ſpeaketh of them according to that, which they doe profeſſe themſelues to bee, although they bee not holy men, whom men doe thinke, but whom God doth know indeed to bee ſuch: yet let euery Chriſtian man know, that in Chriſtian equitie, he ſtandeth bound for to thinke and ſpeake of his Brethren, as of men that haue meaſure in the fruit of holineſſe, and a right vnto the Titles, wherewith God, in token of ſpeciall fauour and mercie, vouchſafeth to honour his choſen Seruants. So wee ſee the Apoſtles of our Sauiour Chriſt, doe vſe euery where the name of *Saints*, ſo the Prophet, the name of *righteous*. But let vs all be ſuch as wee deſire to bee tearmed. *Beatus impij ſit pium nomen*, ſaith *Saluianus*. Godly names doe not iuſtifie godleſſe men. Wee are but vpbrayded, when we are honoured with Names and Titles, wherunto our liues and manners are not futable. If indeed we haue our fruit in holineſſe, notwithſtanding we muſt note, that the more wee abound therein, the more need we haue to craue, that we may be ſtrengthened and ſupported. Our very Vertues may be ſnares vnto vs. The enemie, that wayteth for all occaſions to worke our ruine, hath found it harder to ouerthrow an humble Sinner, then a proud Saint. There is no mans caſe ſo dangerous, as his whom Satan hath perſwaded, that his owne righteouſneſſe ſhall preſent him pure and blameleſſe in the ſight of God. If wee could ſay, wee were not guiltie of any thing at all in our conſciences (we know our ſelues farre from this innocencie, we cannot ſay, we know nothing by our ſelues; but if wee could,) ſhould wee therefore plead not-guiltie before the preſence of our Iudge, that ſees further into our hearts, then we our ſelues can doe? If our hands did neuer offer violence to our Brethren, a bloudie thought doth proue vs Murtherers before him: if wee had neuer opened our mouth to vtter any ſcandalous, offenſiue, or hurtfull word, the cry of our ſecret cogitations is heard in the eares of God. If we doe not commit the ſinnes, which daily and hourely, eyther in deede, word, or thoughts, wee doe commit; yet in the good things which we doe, how many defects are there intermingled? God in that which is done, reſpecteth the minde and intention of the doer. Cut off then all thoſe things wherein wee haue regarded our owne glorie, thoſe things, which men doe to pleaſe men, and to ſatisfie our owne liking, thoſe things which we do by any reſpect, not ſincerely, and purely for the loue of God: and a ſmall ſcore will ſerue for the number of our righteous deeds. Let the holyeſt & beſt thing we do be conſidered, we are neuer better affected vnto God, then when we pray; yet when we pray, how are our affections many times diſtracted! How little reuerence doe wee ſhew vnto the grand Maieſtie of God, vnto whom we ſpeake! How

little remorſe of our owne miſeries! How little taſte of the ſweete influence of his tender mercies doe we feele! Are we not as vnwilling many times to begin, and as glad to make an end; as if in ſaying, *Call vpon me*, he had ſet vs a very burdenſome taske? It may ſeeme ſomewhat extreame, which I will ſpeake: therefore let euery one iudge of it, euen as his owne heart ſhall tell him, and no otherwiſe; I will but onely make a demand: If God ſhould yeeld vnto vs, not as vnto *Abraham*, If fifty, forty, thirty, twenty, yea, or if ten good perſons could be found in a Citie, for their ſakes that Citie ſhould not bee deſtroyed: but, and if he ſhould make vs an offer thus large; Search all the Generations of men, ſithence the Fall of our Father *Adam*, find one man, that hath done one action, which hath paſt from him pure, without any ſtayne or blemiſh at all, and for that one mans only action, neither man nor Angell ſhall feele the torments which are prepared for both. Doe you thinke that this ranſome, to deliuer men and Angels, could be found to bee among the ſonnes of men? The beſt things, which wee doe, haue ſomewhat in them to be pardoned. How then can we doe any thing meritorious, or worthy to be rewarded? Indeed God doth liberally promiſe whatſoeuer appertayneth to a bleſſed life, to as many as ſincerely keepe his Law, though they be not exactly able to keepe it. Wherefore wee acknowledge a dutifull neceſſitie of doing well; but the meritorious dignity of doing well, we vtterly renounce. We ſee how farre we are from the perfect righteouſneſſe of the Law; the little fruit which wee haue in Holineſſe, it is, God knoweth, corrupt and vnſound: wee put no confidence at all in it, wee challenge nothing in the World for it, wee dare not call God to reckoning, as if we had him in our Debt-bookes: our continuall ſuit to him is, and muſt be, to beare with our infirmities, and pardon our offences.

8 But the people of whom the Prophet ſpeaketh, were they all, or were the moſt part of them ſuch, as had care to walke vprightly? Did they thirſt after righteouſneſſe? Did they wiſh? Did they long with the righteous Prophet; *O that our wayes were made ſo direct, that we might keepe thy ſtatutes?* Did they lament with the righteous Apoſtle; *O miſerable men, the good which wee wiſh and purpoſe, and ſtriue to do, we cannot?* No, the words of the other Prophet concerning this people, doe ſhew the contrary. How grieuouſly hath *Eſay* mourned ouer them! *O ſinfull Nation, laden with iniquitie, wicked ſeed, corrupt children!* All which notwithſtanding, ſo wide are the bowels of his compaſſion inlarged, that he denyeth vs not, no, not when wee were laden with iniquitie, leaue to commune familiarly with him, libertie to craue and intreate, that what plagues ſoeuer we haue deſerued, we may not be in worſe caſe then vnbeleeuers, that we may not be hemmed in by Pagans, and Infidels. Ieruſalem is a ſinfull polluted Citie: but Ieruſalem compared with Babylon, is righteous. And ſhall the righteous bee ouerborne? ſhall they be compaſt about by the wicked? But the Prophet doth not only complaine; Lord, how commeth it to paſſe, that thou handleſt vs ſo hardly, of whom thy Name is called, and beareſt with the Heathen Nations, that deſpiſe thee? No, hee breaketh out through extremitie of grief, and inferreth violently; This *proceeding is peruerſe*, the righteous are thus handled; *therefore peruerſe iudgement doth proceed.*

Rom. 7. 19.

Esay 1. 4.

9 Which

9 Which illation containeth many things, whereof it were better much both for yee to heare, and me to ſpeake, if neceſſitie did not draw me to another taske. *Paul* and *Barnabas* being requeſted to preach the ſame things againe, which once they had preached, thought it their duties to ſatisfie the godly deſires of men, ſincerely affected to the truth. Nor may it ſeeme burdenous to me, or for yee vnprofitable, that I follow their example, the like occaſion vnto theirs being offered me. When he had laſt the Epiſtle of Saint *Paul* to the Hebrewes in hand, and of that Epiſtle theſe words: *In theſe laſt dayes he hath ſpoken vnto vs by his Sonne.* After wee had thence collected the nature of the viſible Church of Chriſt; and hath defined it to be a communitie of men, * ſanctified through the profeſſion of the Truth, which God hath taught the world by his Sonne; and had declared, that the ſcope of Chriſtian doctrine is the comfort of them, whoſe hearts are ouer-charged with the burden of ſinne; and had proued that the doctrine profeſſed in the Church of Rome, doth bereaue men of comfort both in their liues and in their deaths: the concluſion in the end, whereunto we came was this; the Church of Rome being in faith ſo corrupted, as ſhee is, and refuſing to be reformed, as ſhee doth, we are to ſeuer our ſelues from her, the example of our Fathers may not retaine vs in communion with that Church; vnder hope, that we ſo continuing, may be ſaued, as well as they. God, I doubt not, was mercifull to ſaue thouſands of them, though they liued in Popiſh ſuperſtitions, inaſmuch as they ſinned ignorantly: but the truth is now laid before our eyes. The former part of this laſt ſentence, namely, theſe words: *I doubt not, but God was mercifull to ſaue thouſands of our Fathers liuing in Popiſh ſuperſtitions, in as much as they ſinned ignorantly*: this ſentence, I beſeech you, to marke, and to ſift it with the ſeuerity of auſtere iudgement, that if it be found to be gold, it may be ſuteable to the precious foundation, whereon it was then laid: for, I proteſt, that, if it be hay or ſtubble, my owne hand ſhall ſet fire to it. Two queſtions haue riſen by reaſon of this ſpeech before alledged. The one, *Whether our Fathers, infected with Popiſh errors and ſuperſtitions, may be ſaued.* The other, *Whether their ignorance be a reaſonable inducement to make vs thinke, they might.* Wee are then to examine: firſt, what poſſibilitie: then, what probabilitie there is, that God might be mercifull vnto ſo many of our Fathers.

Heb.1.v.2.

* By ſanctification, I meane a ſeparation from others, not profeſſing as they doe. For true holynes conſiſteth not in profeſſing, but in obeying the truth of Chriſt

10 So many of our Fathers liuing in Popiſh ſuperſtitions, yet by the mercy of God to be ſaued? No; this could not be: God hath ſpoken by his Angel from heauen, vnto his people concerning Babylon (by Babylon we vnderſtand the Church of Rome;) *Goe out of her, my people, that yee be not partakers of her plagues.* For anſwer whereunto, firſt, I doe not take the words to be meant onely of temporall plagues, of the corporall death, ſorrow, famine, and fire, whereunto God in his wrath hath condemned Babylon; and that to ſaue his choſen people from theſe plagues, he ſaith, *Goe out*, with like intent, as in the Goſpel, ſpeaking of Hieruſalems deſolations, he ſaith, *Let them that are in Iudea flie vnto the Mountaines, and them that are in the midſt thereof depart out*; or, as in the former times to *Lot*, *Ariſe, take thy wife, and thy daughters, which are there, leſt thou be deſtroyed in the puniſhment of the Citie*: but for as much as here it is ſaid, *Goe out of Babylon*; we doubt, their euerlaſting deſtruction, which

Apoc.18.4.

Matth.24.16.

Gen.19.15.

which are partakers therein, is either principally meant, or neceſſarily implyed in this ſentence. How then was it poſſible for ſo many of our Fathers to bee ſaued: ſith they were ſo farre from departing out of Babylon, that they tooke her for their mother, and in her boſome yeelded vp the ghoſt?

11. Firſt, for the plagues being threatned vnto them, that are partakers in the ſinnes of Babylon, we can define nothing concerning our Fathers, out of this ſentence: vnleſſe we ſhew, what the ſinnes of Babylon be; and what they be, which are ſuch partakers of them, that their euerlaſting plagues are inuitable. The ſinnes, which may bee common both to them of the Church of Rome, and to others departed thence, muſt be ſeuered from this queſtion. He which ſaith, *Depart out of Babylon, leſt you be partakers of her ſinnes*: ſheweth plainely, that he meaneth ſuch ſinnes, as, except wee ſeparate our ſelues, wee haue no power in the world to auoid ſuch impieties, as by their Law they haue eſtabliſhed, and whereunto all that are among them, either doe indeed aſſent, or elſe are by powerable meanes forced, in ſhew and appearance, to ſubiect themſelues. As for example, in the Church of Rome it is maintained, that the ſame credit and reuerence that wee giue to the Scriptures of God, ought alſo to be giuen to vnwritten veities; That the Pope is ſupreme head miniſteriall ouer the vniuerſall Church militant; That the bread in the Euchariſt is tranſubſtantiated into Chriſt; That it is to be adored, and to bee offered vp vnto God, as a ſacrifice propitiatorie for quicke and dead; That Images are to be worſhipped; Saints to be called vpon as interceſſors, and ſuch like. Now, becauſe ſome Hereſies doe concerne things only beleeued, as the tranſubſtantiation of the ſacramentall Elements in the Euchariſt; ſome concerne things which are practiſed and put in vre, as the adoration of the Elements tranſubſtantiated: wee muſt note, that erroneouſly, the practice of that is ſometime receiued, whereof the doctrine, that teacheth it, is not heretically maintained. They are all partakers in the maintenance of Hereſies, who by word or deed allow them, knowing them, although not knowing them to be Hereſies; as alſo they, and that moſt dangerouſly of all others, who knowing Hereſie to be Hereſie, doe notwithſtanding in worldly reſpects, make ſemblance of allowing that, which in heart and iudgement they condemne: but Hereſie is heretically maintained, by ſuch as obſtinately hold it, after wholſome admonition. Of the laſt ſort, as of the next before, I make no doubt, but that their condemnation, without an actuall repentance, is inuitable. Leſt any man therefore ſhould thinke, that in ſpeaking of our Fathers, I ſhould ſpeake indifferently of them all: let my words, I beſeech you, be well marked: *I doubt not, but God was mercifull to ſaue thouſands of our Fathers*: which thing I will now, by Gods aſſiſtance, ſet more plainely before your eyes.

12. Many are partakers of the errour, which are not of the Hereſie of the Church of Rome. The people following the conduct of their guides, and obſeruing, as they did, exactly that which was preſcribed, thought they did God good ſeruice, when indeed they did diſhonour him. This was their error: but the Hereſie of the Church of Rome, their dogmaticall Potions oppoſite vnto Chriſtian truth, what one man amongſt tenne thouſand, did euer vnderſtand? Of them, which vnderſtand Romane Hereſies, and allow them, all are

not

not alike partakers in the action of allowing. Some allow them as the firſt founders and eſtabliſhers of them: which crime toucheth none but their Popes, and Councels; the people are cleere and free from this. Of them, which maintaine Popiſh Hereſies, not as Authors, but Receiuers of them from others, all maintaine them not as Maſters. In this are not the people partakers neither, but only the Predicants and Schoolemen. Of them, which haue been partakers in this ſinne of teaching Popiſh hereſie, there is alſo a difference; for they haue not all beene Teachers of all Popiſh Hereſies. *Put a difference*, ſaith S. *Iude*; *haue compaſſion vpon ſome*. Shall we lay vp all in one condition? Shall we caſt them all head-long? Shall we plunge them all into that infernall and euerlaſting flaming lake? Them that haue beene partakers of the errors of Babylon, together with them which are in the Hereſie? Them which haue beene the Authors of Hereſie, with them that by terror and violence haue beene forced to receiue it? Them who haue taught it, with them whoſe ſimplicitie hath by ſleights and conueyances of falſe Teachers, beene ſeduced to beleeue it? Them which haue beene partakers in one, with them which haue beene partakers in many? Them which in many, with them which in all? *Verſe* 22.

13 Notwithſtanding I grant, that, although the condemnation of them, be more tolerable then of theſe: yet from the man, that laboureth at the plough, to him that ſitteth in the Vatican; to all partakers in the ſinnes of Babylon; to our Fathers, though they did but erroneouſly practiſe that which the guides heretically taught; to all, without exception, plagues were due. The pit is ordinarily the end, aſwell of the guide, as of the guided in blindneſſe. But woe worth the houre wherein we were borne, except we might promiſe our ſelues better things; things which accompanie mans ſaluation, euen where we know, that worſe, and ſuch as accompany condemnation are due. Then muſt we ſhew ſome way, how poſſibly they might eſcape. What way is there, that ſinners can find to eſcape the iudgement of God, but onely by appealing to the ſeate of his ſauing mercy? Which mercy, with *Origen*, we doe not extend to Deuils and damned ſpirits. God hath mercy vpon thouſands, but there be thouſands alſo which he hardeneth. Chriſt hath therefore ſet the bounds, he hath fixed the limits of his ſauing mercy, within the compaſſe of theſe termes: *God ſent not his owne Sonne to condemne the world, but that the world through him might be ſaued.* In the third of S. *Iohns* Goſpel mercie is reſtrained to Beleeuers: *He that beleeueth, ſhall not be condemned; He that beleeueth not, is condemned alreadie, becauſe hee beleeued not in the Sonne of God.* In the ſecond of the Reuelation, mercy is reſtrained to the penitent. For of *Iezabel* and her ſectaries, thus he ſpeaketh: *I gaue her ſpace to repent, and ſhe repented not. Behold, I will caſt her into a bed, and them that commit fornication with her, into a great affliction, except they repent them of their workes, and I will kill her children with death.* Our hope therefore of the Fathers, is, if they were not altogether faithleſſe and impenitent. *Iohn* 3. 17. *Reuel.* 2. 22.

14 They are not all faithleſſe, that are weake in aſſenting to the truth, or ſtiffe in maintaining things any way oppoſite to the truth of Chriſtian doctrine. But as many as hold the foundation which is precious, though they hold

hold it but weakely, and as it were with a ſlender thred, although they frame many baſe and vnſutable things vpon it, things that cannot abide the triall of the fire, yet ſhall they paſſe the fierie triall and be ſaued, which indeed haue builded themſelues vpon the Rocke, which is the foundation of the Church. If then our Fathers did not hold the foundation of Faith, there is no doubt, but they were faithleſſe. If many of them held it, then is therein no impediment, but many of them might be ſaued. Then let vs ſee, what the foundation of Faith is, and whether we may thinke, that thouſands of our Fathers, being in Popiſh ſuperſtitions, did notwithſtanding hold the foundation.

15 If the foundation of Faith doe import the generall ground, whereupon we reſt, when we doe beleeue, the writings of the Euangeliſts and the Apoſtles are the foundation of the Chriſtian Faith, *Credimus quia legimus*, ſaith S. *Ierome*: O that the Church of Rome did as * ſoundly interprete theſe fundamentall writings, whereupon wee build our Faith, as ſhee doth willingly hold and imbrace them.

* They miſinterpret, not onely by making falſe and corrupt gloſſes vpon the ſcripture, but, alſo by forcing the old vulgar tranſlation as the onely authentical: howbeit they refuſe no booke which is Canonicall, though they admit ſundrie which are not.

16 But if the name of *Foundation* doe note the principall thing, which is beleeued: then is that the foundation of our Faith, which S. *Paul* hath to *Timothy*: [a] *God manifeſted in the fleſh, iuſtified in the Spirit, &c.* that of *Nathaniel*, [b] *Thou art the Sonne of the liuing God, Thou art the King of Iſrael*: that of the Inhabitants of Samaria: [c] *This is Chriſt the Sauiour of the world*: he that directly denieth this, doth vtterly raſe the very foundation of our Faith. I haue prooued heretofore, that, although the Church of Rome hath plaid the Harlot worſe then euer did Iſrael, yet are they not as now the Synagogue of the Iewes, which plainely deny Chriſt Ieſus, quite and cleane excluded from the new Couenant. But as Samaria compared with Hieruſalem is termed *Aholath*, a Church or Tabernacle of her owne; contrariwiſe, Ieruſalem, *Aholibath*, the reſting place of the Lord: ſo whatſoeuer we terme the Church of Rome, when we compare her with reformed Churches, ſtill we put a difference, as then betweene Babylon and Samaria, ſo now betweene Rome and the Heatheniſh aſſemblies. Which opinion, I muſt, and will recall, I muſt grant, and will, that the Church of Rome, together with all her children, is cleane excluded. There is no difference in the world betweene our Fathers, and Saracens, Turkes, and Paynims; if they did directly denie Chriſt crucified for the ſaluation of the world.

a 1. *Tim.* 3. 16.
b *Ioh.* 1. 49.
c *Ioh.* 4. 42.

17 But how many millions of them were knowne ſo to haue ended their mortall liues, that the drawing of their breath hath ceaſed with the vttering of this Faith, *Chriſt my Sauiour, my Redeemer Ieſus?* Anſwer is made, That this they might vnfainedly confeſſe, and yet be farre enough from ſaluation. For, behold, ſaith the Apoſtle, *I Paul ſay vnto you, that if yee be circumciſed, Chriſt ſhall profit you nothing*. Chriſt in the worke of mans ſaluation is alone: the Galathians were caſt away by ioyning *Circumciſion*, and the other Rites of the Law with Chriſt; the Church of Rome doth teach her children to ioyne other things likewiſe with him; therefore their faith, their beliefe, doth not profit them any thing at all. It is true, that they doe indeed ioyne other things with Chriſt: but how? Not in the worke of redemption it ſelfe, which they grant, that Chriſt alone hath performed ſufficiently for the ſaluation of the

Gal. 5. 2.

the whole world; but in the applicarion of this inestimable treasure, that it may be effectuall to their ſaluation: how demurely ſoeuer they confeſſe, that they ſeeke remiſſion of ſinnes, no otherwiſe then by the bloud of Chriſt, vſing humbly the meanes appointed by him to apply the benefit of his holy bloud; they teach, indeed, ſo many things pernicious in Chriſtian Faith, in ſetting downe the meanes, whereof they ſpeake, that the very foundation of Faith, which they hold, is thereby * plainely ouerthrowne, and the force of the bloud of Ieſus Chriſt extinguiſhed. We may therefore diſpute with them, vrge them euen with as dangerous ſequels, as the Apoſtle doth the Galatians. But I demand, if ſome of thoſe Galatians heartily imbracing the Goſpel of Chriſt, ſincere and ſound in faith (this one onely errour excepted) had ended their liues before they were euer taught, how perilous an opinion they held: ſhall we thinke, that the damage of this errour did ſo ouer-waigh the benefit of their faith, that the mercy of God might not ſaue them? I grant they ouerthrew the very foundation of faith by conſequent: doth not that ſo likewiſe, which the * *Lutheran* Churches doe at this day ſo ſtifly and ſo firmely maintaine? For mine owne part, I dare not here denie the poſſibilitie of their ſaluation, which haue beene the chiefeſt inſtruments of ours: albeit they carried to their graue a perſwaſion ſo greatly repugnant to the truth. Forasmuch therefore as it may be ſaid of the Church of Rome, ſhee hath yet a little ſtrength, ſhe doth not directly deny the foundation of Chriſtianitie: I may, I truſt, without offence, perſwade my ſelfe, that thouſands of our Fathers in former times liuing and dying within her wals, haue found mercy at the hands of God.

18 What although they repented not of their errors? God forbid, that I ſhould open my mouth to gaine-ſay that which Chriſt himſelfe hath ſpoken: *Except yee repent, yee ſhall all periſh.* And if they did not repent, they periſhed. But withall note, that we haue the benefit of a double repentance: the leaſt ſinne, which we commit in Deed, Thought, or Word, is death, without repentance. Yet how many things doe eſcape vs in euery of theſe, which we doe not know? How many, which we doe not obſerue to be ſinnes? And without the knowledge, without the obſeruation of ſinne, there is no actuall repentance. It cannot then be choſen, but that for as many as hold the foundation; and haue all holden ſinnes and errors in hatred; the bleſſing of repentance for vnknowne ſinnes and errours, is obtained at the hands of God, through the gracious mediation of Ieſus Chriſt, for ſuch ſuiters as crie with the Prophet DAVID: *Purge me, O Lord, from my ſecret ſinnes.*

19 But we waſh a wall of Lime; we labour in vaine; all this is nothing; it doth not proone; it cannot inſtifie, that which we goe about to maintaine. Infidels and Heathen men are not ſo godleſſe, but that they may, no doubt, crie God mercie, and deſire in generall to haue their ſinnes forgiuen them. To ſuch as deny the foundation of faith, there can be no ſaluation (according to the ordinarie courſe, which God doth vſe in ſauing men) without a particular repentance of that error. The Galatians thinking, that vnleſſe they were circumciſed, they could not be ſaued, ouerthrew the foundations of faith directly: therefore if any of them did die ſo perſwaded, whether before or after they

* Plainely in all mens ſight whoſe eyes God hath inlightened to behold his truth. For they, which are in error, are in darkeneſſe, and ſee not that, which in light is plaine. In that which they teach concerning the natures of Chriſt, they hold the ſame which *Neſterius* fully, the ſame with *Eutiches* about the proprieties of his nature.

a The opinion of the *Lutherans* though it be no direct deniall of the foundation, may notwithſtanding be damnable vnto ſome: and I do not thinke but that in many reſpects it is leſſe damnable, as at this day ſome maintain it, then it was in them which held it at firſt, as *Luther* and others, whom I had an eye vnto in this ſpeech. The queſtion is not whether an errour with ſuch and ſuch circumſtances; but ſimply, whether an error ouerthrowing the foundation, doe exclude all poſſibilitie of ſaluation, if it be not recanted, and expreſly repented of.

they told of their errors, their end is dreadfull; there is no way with them but one, death and condemnation. For the Apoſtle ſpeaketh nothing of men deparred, but ſaith generally of all, *If you be circumciſed, Chriſt ſhall profit you nothing. You are aboliſhed from Chriſt, whoſoeuer are iuſtified by the law; ye are fallen from grace, Gal.* 5. Of them in the Church of Rome, the reaſon is the ſame. For whom Antichriſt hath ſeduced, concerning them did not S. *Paul* ſpeake long before, that they receiued not the word of truth, they might not be ſaued? therefore God would *ſend them ſtrong delusions to beleeue lies, that all they might be damned which beleeued not the truth, but had pleaſure in vnrighteouſneſſe.* 2. *Theſſ.* 2. 11. And S. *Iohn, All that dwel vpon the earth ſhal worſhip him, whoſe names are not written in the Booke of life, Apoc.* 13. 8. Indeed many in former times, as their Bookes and Writings doe yet ſhew, held the foundation, to wit, ſaluation by Chriſt alone, and therefore might be ſaued. God hath alwayes had a Church amongſt them, which firmely kept his ſauing truth. As for ſuch as hold with the Church of Rome, that we cannot be ſaued by Chriſt alone without workes; they doe not onely by a circle of conſequence, but directly deny the foundation of faith; they hold it not, no not ſo much as by a thred.

20. This to my remembrance, being all that hath beene oppoſed with any countenance or ſhew of reaſon, I hope, if this be anſwered, the cauſe in queſtion is at an end. Concerning generall repentance therefore: what? A Murtherer, a Blaſphemer, an vncleane perſon, a Turke, a Iew, any ſinner to eſcape the wrath of God, by a generall repentance? *God forgiue me!* Truely it neuer came within mine heart, that a generall repentance doth ſerue for all ſinnes: it ſerueth only for the common ouerſights of our ſinfull life, and for the faults, which either we doe not marke, or doe not know, that they are faults. Our Fathers were actually penitent for ſinnes, wherein they knew they diſpleaſed God; or elſe they fall not within the compaſſe of my firſt ſpeech. Againe, that otherwiſe they could not be ſaued, then holding the foundation of Chriſtian faith, we haue not onely affirmed, but prooued. Why is it not then confeſſed, that thouſands of our fathers, which liued in Popiſh ſuperſtitions, might yet by the mercie of God be ſaued? Firſt, if they had directly denied the verie foundations of Chriſtianitie, without repenting them particularly of that ſin; he which ſaith there could be no ſaluation for them, according to the ordinary courſe, which God doth vſe in ſauing men, graunteth plainely, or at the leaſt cloſely inſinuateth, that an extraordinary priuiledge of mercie might deliuer their ſoules from hell, which is more then I required. Secondly, if the foundation be denied, it is denied for feare of ſome Hereſie, which the Church of Rome maintaineth. But how many were there amongſt our Fathers, who being ſeduced by the common errour of that Church, neuer knew the meaning of her Hereſies? So that, although all Popiſh Heretiques did periſh: thouſands of them, which liued in Popiſh ſuperſtitions, might be ſaued. Thirdly, ſeeing all that held Popiſh Hereſies, did not hold all the Hereſies of the Pope: why might not thouſands, which were infected with other leauen, liue and die vnſowred with this, and ſo be * ſaued? Fourthly, if they all held this Hereſie, many there were that held it, no doubt, but onely in a generall forme of words, which a fauourable interpretation might expound in a ſenſe differing farre

* For this is the onely thing alledged to proue the impoſſibilitie of their ſaluation: The Church of Rome ioyneth workes with Chriſt, which is a deniall of the foundation, and vnleſſe we hold the foundation, we cannot be ſaued.

ſerue though from the poyſoned conceit of Hereſie. As for example, Did they holde, that wee cannot be ſaued with Chriſt, without good workes. Wee our ſelues doe, I thinke, all ſay as much, with this conſtruction, ſaluation being taken in that ſentence, *Confeſſio eſt ad iuſtitiam, nec fit confeſſio ad ſalutem*, except infants, and men cut off upon the point of their conuerſion: of the reſt none ſhall ſee God, but ſuch as ſeeke peace and holineſſe, though not as a cauſe of their ſaluation, yet as a way which they muſt walke, which will bee ſaued. Did they hold, that without workes wee are not iuſtified? Take iuſtification ſo as it may alſo imply ſanctification, and Saint *Iames* doth ſay as much. For except there be an ambiguitie in the ſame tearme, Saint *Paul*, and Saint *Iames* doe contradict each the other, which cannot be. Now there is no ambiguitie in the name either of faith, or of workes, being meant by them both in one and the ſame ſenſe. Finding therefore, that iuſtification is ſpoken of by Saint *Paul*, without implying ſanctification, when he pronounceth, that a man is iuſtified by faith without workes; finding likewiſe that iuſtification doth ſometime imply ſanctification alſo with it: I ſuppoſe nothing to be more ſound, then ſo to interpret Saint *Iames*, ſpeaking not in that ſenſe, but in this.

We haue already ſhewed, that there be two kinds of Chriſtian righteouſneſſe: the one without vs, which we haue by imputation; the other in vs, which conſiſteth of faith, hope, and charitie, and other Chriſtian vertues. And Saint *Iames* doth prooue, that *Abraham* had not onely the one, becauſe the thing beleeued was imputed vnto him for righteouſneſſe; but alſo the other, becauſe he offered vp his ſonne. God giueth vs both the one iuſtice and the other: the one, by accepting vs for righteous in Chriſt; the other, by working Chriſtian righteouſneſſe in vs. The proper and moſt immediate efficient cauſe in vs of this latter, is the Spirit of adoption wee haue receiued into our hearts. That whereof it conſiſteth, whereof it is really and formally made, are thoſe infuſed vertues, proper and particular vnto Saints, which the Spirit in the very moment, when firſt it is giuen of God, bringeth with it: the effects whereof are ſuch actions as the Apoſtle doeth call the fruits of workes, the operations of the Spirit. The difference of the which operations from the roote whereof they ſpring, maketh it needfull to put two kinds likewiſe of ſanctifying righteouſneſſe, *Habituall*, and *Actuall*. *Habituall*, that holineſſe, wherewith our ſoules are inwardly indued, the ſame inſtant, when firſt wee beginne to be the Temples of the holy Ghoſt. *Actuall*, that holineſſe, which afterwards beautifieth all the parts and actions of our life; the holineſſe for the which *Enoch*, *Iob*, *Zacharie*, *Elizabeth*, and other Saints, are in the Scriptures ſo highly commended. If here it be demanded, which of theſe wee doe firſt receiue? I anſwere, that the Spirit, the vertues of the Spirit, the habituall iuſtice, which is ingrafted, the externall iuſtice of *Ieſus Chriſt*, which is imputed: theſe we receiue all at one and the ſame time; whenſoeuer we haue any of theſe, we haue all, they goe together. Yet ſith no man is iuſtified except hee beleeue, and no man beleeueth except he haue faith, and no man except hee haue receiued the Spirit of adoption, hath faith, forаſmuch as they doe neceſſarily inferre iuſtification, and iuſtification doth of neceſſitie preſuppoſe them: we muſt needs hold that imputed righteouſneſſe, indiguitie being the chiefeſt, is notwith-

standing in order the last of all these: but *actuall righteousnesse*, which is the righteousnesse of good workes, succeedeth all, followeth after all, both in order and time. Which being attentiuely marked, sheweth plainely how the faith of true Beleeuers cannot bee diuorced from hope and loue; how faith is a part of sanctification, and yet vnto iustification necessarie; how faith is perfected by good workes, and no worke of ours without faith: finally, how our Fathers might hold, that wee are iustified by Faith alone, and yet hold truely, that without workes wee are not iustified. Did they thinke that men doe merit rewards in heauen, by the workes they performe on earth? The ancient vse *meriting*, for *obtaining*, and in that sense they of *Wittenberg* haue it in their Confession: *We teach, that good workes commanded of God, are necessarily to be done, and by the free kindnes of God they merit their certaine rewards.* Therefore speaking as our Fathers did, and we taking their speech in a sound meaning, as we may take our Fathers, and might for as much as their meaning is doubtfull and charitie doth alwaies interpret doubtfull things fauourably: what should induce vs to thinke, that rather the damage of the worst construction did light vpon them all, then that the blessing of the better was granted vnto thousands? Fifthly, if in the worst construction that may be made, they had generally all imbraced it liuing, might not many of them dying, vtterly renounce it? Howsoeuer men when they sit at ease, do vainely tickle their hearts with the wanton conceit, of I know not what proportionable correspondence, betweene their merits and their rewards, which in the trance of their high speculations they dreame that God hath measured, weighed, and laid vp, as it were, in bundles for them: notwithstanding, we see by daily experience, in a number euen of them, that when the houre of death approcheth, when they secretly heare themselues summoned forthwith to appeare, and stand at the Barre of that Iudge, whose brightnesse causeth the eyes of the Angels themselues to dazle, all these idle imaginations doe then beginne to hide their faces, to name merits then is to lay their soules vpon the racke, the memorie of their owne deeds is lothsome vnto them, they forsake all things, wherein they haue put any trust or confidence, no staffe to leane vpon, no ease, no rest, no comfort then, but onely in Iesus Christ.

22 Wherefore if this proposition were true: *To hold in such wise, as the Church of Rome doth, that we cannot be saued by Christ alone without works, is directly to deny the foundation of Faith*, I say, that if this Proposition were true: * neuertheless so many wayes I haue shewed, whereby wee may hope that thousands of our Fathers which liued in Popish superstition, might be saued. But what if it be not true? What if neither that of the Galatians concerning Circumcision, nor this of the Church of Rome, by Works, be any direct deniall of the foundation, as it is affirmed, that both are? I need not wade so farre as to discusse this Controuersie, the matter which first was brought into question being so cleere, as I hope it is. Howbeit, because I desire, that the truth euen in that also should receiue light, I will doe mine indeuour to set downe somewhat more plainely: first, the foundation of Faith, what it is; Secondly, what it is directly to deny the foundation: Thirdly, whether they whom God hath chosen to be Heires of life, may fall so farre as directly to denie

* They may cease to put any confidence in workes, and yet neuer thinke, liuing in Popish superstition, they did amisse. Pighius dyed Popish, and yet denyed Poperie in the Article of Iustification by workes long before his death.

What the foundation of Faith is.

Vocatâ ad consilium malitia, quæ ubique, &c. Vide in populi vocem corpus nullo ore proferquam regium potest, Lips. de Rom. lib. 1.

a Ephes. 1. 23. & 4. 15.

b Ephes. 2. 20.

c John 6. 68.

d 2. Tim. 3. 15.

e Acts 16. 17.

f Heb. 10. 20.

g Gen. 49.

h Job 19.

ruth, from the writing of the Law, to the time of Grace. Every Prophet ...

... Whether be the ...

... Christ, whom ...

... of the World ...

... Now, because the foundation is an affirmative Proposition, they all ouerthrow it who denie it; they directly ouerthrow it, who denie it directly; and they ouerthrow it by consequence, or indirectly, which hold any one affirmative thereto, wherefore the direct denyall thereof may bee necessarily concluded. What is the Difference betweene the Gentiles and vs, but this, *Whether Salvation be by Christ?* What betweene the Iewes and vs, but this, *Whether*

Whether by the Iesus, whom we call Christ, you are so? This to be the maine point, whereupon Christianitie standeth, it is cleere by that one sentence of *Festus* concerning *Paule* doctrine: *They brought no crime of his but this, that he had certaine questions against them of their superstition, and of one Iesus, which was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be alive.* Where we see that Iesus dead, and raised for the saluation of the World, is by Iewes denyed, despised by a Gentile, by a Christian Apostle maintained. The Fathers therefore in the Primitiue Church, when they wrote, *Tertullian*, the Booke which he calleth (*adversus Iudæos*) *Aduersus Iudæos*, the Booke, which hee inscribeth *Ad Nationes*; *Arnobius* the seuen Bookes against the Gentiles; *Lactantius*, his Orations against the Iewes; *Eusebius* his seuen Bookes of *Euangelicall Demonstration*: they found infidelitie of Christianitie against them, by whom the foundation thereof was directly denyed. But the Writings of the Fathers against *Manichees*, *Pelagians*, and other Heretikes of the like note, with Positions, whereby the foundation of Christian Faith was ouerthrowne by consequents only. In the former sort of Writings, the foundation is proued, inuestitur, and alleaged as a proofe, which to men that had beene now no directly to denie, might haue seemed euery beggerly kinde of disputing. All Infidels therefore denie the foundation of Faith directly; by consequent, many a Christian man, yea whole Christian Churches haue denyed it, and doe denie it at this present day. Christian Churches, the foundation of Christianitie? Not directly, for then they should not be Christian Churches: but by consequent, in respect whereof we condemne them as erroneous, although for holding the foundation we doe, and must hold them Christian.

We see what is to hold the foundation, what directly, and what by consequent, to denie it. The next thing which followeth, is, what hee they whom God hath chosen to shewe the glories of our Lord Iesus Christ, may, once effectually called, and through faith iustified truly, afterwards fall so far, as directly to denie the foundation, which their hearts haue before imbraced with ioy and comfort in the Holy Ghost? for such is the faith, which indeede doth iustifie. Deuils know the same things, which we beleeue, and the reasons of the most vngodly may be fully perswaded of the Truth: which knowledge in the one and in the other is sometimes termed faith, but equiuocally; being indeede no such faith as that, whereby a Christian man is iustified. It is the Spirit of Adoption, which worketh faith in vs, with them both the things which we beleeue, are by vs apprehended, not only as true, but also as good, and that to vs as good, they are not by them apprehended, as true they are. Whereupon followeth the third difference; the Christian man the more he beleeueth in them, the more his ioy and comfort aboundeth; the truer they, the more sure they are of the truth, the more they quake and tremble at it. This begetteth another effect, where the hearts of the one sort haue a different disposition from the other. *Non habent pleroſq; conſcientiæ morſum, nihil ſe eſſe ob-*
ſcuræ magnitudinis, quæ timeant. Christian *mens* *cuius* *ſe poſſe*
ſe ſpectatiſſimos ait. I am not ignorant, saith Cyprian, that there bee many, who being conscious, what they haue to looke for, doe vtterly wish that they might, when they thinke that they shall cease, when they cease to liue:

because they hold it better that death should confume them vnto nothing, then God raise them vnto punishment. So it is in other Articles of Faith, whereof wicked men thinke, no doubt, many times they are not true: on the contrary side, to the other, there is no griefe or torment greater, then to settle their perswasion weake in things, whereof when they are perswaded, they reape such comfort and ioy of spirit, such is the faith whereby we are iustified: such, I meane, in respect of the qualitie. For touching the principall obiect of faith, lately there is holden the foundation whereof we have spoken, it neyther iustifieth, nor is, but ceaseth to bee faith, when it ceaseth to believe, that Iesus Christ is the onely Saviour of the World. The cause of life spirituall in vs, is Christ, not carnally or corporally inhabiting, but dwelling in the soule of man, as a thing which (when the minde apprehendeth it) is said to inhabite or possesse the minde. The minde conceiveth Christ by hearing the Doctrine of Christianitie, or the light of Nature doth the minde to apprehend those truthes which are meerely reasonall, so that seeing Truth, which is farre above the reach of humane reason, cannot otherwise, then by the Spirit of the Almightie, be conceived. All these are implyed, wheresoever any of these is mentioned as the cause of the spirituall life. Wherefore if we have read that *The Spirit is our life*; or *The Word our life*, or *Christ our life*; we are by every of these to understand, that our life is Christ, by the hearing of the Gospell, apprehended as a Saviour, and effected vnto vs through the power of the Holy Ghost. The first intellectuall conceit and comprehension of Christ so enhanced, Saint Peter calleth *The seed whereof we be new borne*; our first imbracing of Christ, is our first [e] reuiuing from the state of death and condemnation. [f] *He that hath the Sonne, hath life*, saith S. *Iohn*, *and he that hath not the Sonne of God, hath not life*. If therefore a man, which once hath the Sonne, may cease to have the Sonne, though he for a moment, he ceaseth for that moment to have life. But the life of them which have the Sonne of God, is [g] everlasting, *in the World to come*. But because as Christ being raised from the dead, dyeth no more; death hath no more power over him; So he iustified may [h] being dead to God in Iesus Christ our Lord, derive immediately from that [i] stocke and roote of life, as Christ is, by whom he hath life, liueth alwayes. I might if I had not other matter largely done it already, shew by many and sundry manifest, and evident proofes, how the motions and operations of life, are sometimes so indiscernible, and so secret, that they seeme none at all, yet notwithstanding are still alive vnto God in Christ. For so long as that seed dwelleth in vs, which conceiveth, quickeneth, and giveth life, so long we live, and may know that the cause of our faith abideth in vs, for even *If Christ*, the [k] Fountaine of life, may die, and leave the habitation, where vnto he dwelleth, what shall become of his promise, *I am with you to the World's end?* If the Seed of God, which conveyeth Christ, may bee first conceived, and then cast out: how doth S. *Peter* terme it [l] *incorruptible*? How doth S. *Iohn* affirme, [m] *He abideth*? If the Spirit, which is given to cherish, and preserve the Seed of life, may be given and taken away, how is it the ground of our inheritance vntill Redemption? how doth it continue with vs for ever? If therefore the seed which is once in vs by faith, shall live by faith, and live for ever: it followeth, that

a Rom.8.10.
b Phil.1.15.
c Col.3.4.
d 1.Pet.1.
e Ephes.2.5.
f 1.Iohn 5.12.
g 1.Iohn 5.13. Perpetuitie of Faith.
h Rom.6.10.
i Iohn 14.19.
k 1.Pet.1.
l 1.Iohn 3.9.
m Ephes.1.14. Iohn 4.16.

thinke which once doth believe the foundation, must needs believe the foundation for ever. If he believe it for ever, how can he ever directly denie it? Faith holding the direct affirmation, the direct negation, so long as Faith continueth, is excluded. But you will say, that as he that is to day holy, may to morrow forsake his holinesse, and become impure; as a friend may change his mind, and be mad man enemy; as hope may wither: so Faith may die in the heart of man, the Spirit may be quenched, Grace may be extinguished, the which believe, may be quite turned away from the truth. The case is cleare, lately experience hath made this manifest: it needs no proofe. I grant we are as readie to fall, and readie to forsake God: but is God as readie to forsake us? Are his counsels as changeable: is he so likewise? Whom God hath iustified, hath he Christ illumed, that is to *his Fathers will to giue them a Kingdome?* Not withstanding it shall not be otherwise giuen them, then if they continue *grounded and stablished in the faith, and be not moued away from the hope of the Gospell, if they abide in loue and holinesse.* Our Sauiour therefore, when he spake of the sheepe effectually called, and truely gathered into his fold, *I giue vnto them eternall life, and they shall neuer perish, neither shall any plucke them out of my hand:* in promising to saue them, he promised, no doubt, to preserue them in that, without which there can be no saluation, as also from that whereby it is irrecouerably lost. Euery error in things appertaining vnto God, is repugnant vnto faith; euery fearefull cogitation, vnto hope; vnto loue, euery straggling inordinate desire; vnto holinesse, euery blemish, wherewith either the inward thoughts of our minds, or the outward actions of our liues are stained. But Hymeneus, such as that of *Ebion, Cerinthus*, and others, against whom the Apostles were forced to bend themselues both by word, and also by writing; that repining discouragement of heart, which tempteth God, thereof we haue heard in the Desert for a penurie: coldnesse, such as that in the Angels of Ephesus; some sinne, knowne to be expressly against the sixt, or second Table of the Law, such as *Noah, Manasses, Dauid, Salomon*, and *Peter* committed: these are each in their kind so opposite to the former vertues, that they haue no place for saluation without an actuall repentance. But infidelitie, extreme despaire, hatred of God and all goodnesse, obduration in sinne, cannot stand where there is but the least sparke of faith, hope, loue, and repentance: coldnesse in the lowest degree cannot be, where heate in the highest degree hath not been. Whereupon I conclude, that, although in the first kind, as in this which speaketh not; and, in the second, as perfect as any doe liue, euery sinner of the man which is borne of God, hath a promise, that in him, *the seed of God shall abide*, which seed is a sure preseruatiue against the sinne that is of the third sort: greater and clearer assurance we cannot haue of any thing, then of this, that from such sinnes God shall preserue the righteous, as the apple of his eye for euer. Directly to denie the foundation of faith, is plaine infidelitie: where faith is entred, there Infidelitie is for euer excluded, therefore by him which hath once sincerely beleeued in Christ, the foundation of Christian faith can neuer be directly denied. Did not *Peter?* Did not *Iudas?* Did not others both directly denie Christ, after that they had beleeued, and against the light, after they had denyed? No doubt, as they

Ob.

Sol.

* Col. 1. 23.

a 1. Tim. 1. 19.

b Iohn 10.

c 1. Iohn 3. 9.

they confesse in words, whose condemnation is nevertheless their not believing: for even so we have *Iohn* 3. So likewise, they may believe in heart, whose condemnation, without repentance, is their not confessing. Although therefore *Peter* and the rest, for whose faith Christ had prayed, that it might not fayle, did not by denyall, cease the sinne of Infidelitie, which is an inward abnegation of Christ, (but if they had done this, their faith had cleerely fayled:) yet because they sinned pernitiously and grievously, committing that, which they knew to be expressly forbidden by the Law, which saith, *Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve*; necessary it was that he, which purposed to save their soules, should, as he did, touch their hearts with true unfained repentance, that his mercy might restore them againe to life, whom sinne had made the children of death and condemnation. Touching the point therefore, I hope I may fully for down, that if she justified erre, as we may, and never cease to vindicate her errour, God doth save him through generall repentance: but if he fall into Heresie, he falleth him apostate or obstinate by actuall repentance: but from Infidelitie, which is an inward direct denyall of the foundation, he preserveth him by speciall providence for ever. Whereby we may easily know, what to thinke of those Galatians, whose hearts was so possest with the love of the Temple service, that had it beene possible, they would have pluckt out their eyes to bestow upon their Teachers. It is true, that they were grossly changed, both in perswasion and affection: so that the Galatians, which *Saint Paul* wrote unto them, were not now the Galatians, which they had been in former times: for that through errour they wandered, although they were his sheepe: false were the doctrine that I should deny, that they were his sheepe, if I should grant, that through errour they perished. It was a pestilent opinion that they held: pestilent, I say, touching that which held in deede an errour; directly: indirectly, because with the foundation it consequented. But in deede which I boldly maintain: I cannot thinke it lesse then a damnable Heresie. We have shewed a great difference betweene these, which erre of ignorance, resisting neverthelesse a blind desire to be instructed in truth; and those, which, after the truth is laid open, persist in the stubborne defence of their false doctrine. Heretikes all the fathers, froward and self-witted teachers of errour, even the blessed Apostle calls Dogges: Silly men, who were deluded to thinke verily, that whatsoever he preacheth, he taketh up in his armes, he louingly imbraceth, he kisseth, he weepeth with more then fatherly tenderneſſe doth so temper qualifie and vary the whole speech he useth toward them, that a man cannot easily discerne, whether did most abound, the love, which he bare to their godly affections, or the griefe, which the danger of their corrupted loved them. Their opinion touching circumcision was not theirs alone, who thought the Kingdome of Christ should be earthly: was not theirs, which thought the Gospel ought first to be preached to none Iewes? What more opposite to perfect truth of doctrine, touching the comming of Christ, then the vaine Conceipts of the Gnosticks, Ebionites, and other? Yet they which held such fancies, were called they knew how, and not the worst men in the Church. The Manichees [illegible] about the Penigians [illegible]

against

*Howsoever men be changed (for changed they may be, even the best amongst men) if they that have received, as it seemeth, some of the Galatians which fell into error, had received the gifts and graces of God which are called *gratuita*, such as faith, hope, and charitie are, which God doth never take away from him, to whom they are given, as if it repented him to have given them; if such might bee so farre changed by errour, as that the very roote of faith should be quite extinguished in them, and so their salvation utterly lost: it would shake the hearts of the strongest and stoutest of us all. See the contrarie in Bez. his observations upon the harmony of Confessions

against all those Fathers in the Greeke Church, which being alike perswaded, dyed in the error of free Will? Of those Galatians therefore, which first were iustified and then declined, as I can shew no cause, why as many as dyed before circumcision, might not by merits be restored: [illegible] in error: so I make no doubt, but as many as dyed, till they were admonished, found the mercie of God effectuall in correcting them from their error, left any one that is Christes, should perish. Of this I make no controversie; only against the salvation of them which dyed, though before admonition, yet in error, it is obiected, that their opinion was a very plaine direct denyall of the foundation. If *Paul* and *Barnabas* had beene to perswade, they would happily have vsed the verie same otherwise speaking of the Masters themselues, who did first stir that error among[st] certaine of the Sects of the Pharisies which beleeved. What difference was there betweene these Pharisies, and other Pharisies, from whom by a flat all description they are distinguished, but this? These which came to *Antioch*, teaching the necessitie of Circumcision, were Christians; the other, enemies of Christianitie. Why then should these be termed so distinctly Deniers, if they did directly deny the foundation of our beliefe; besides which there was no other thing, that made the rest to be no Beleevers? We need goe no further then S. *Paules* very reasoning against them, for proofe of this matter. Seeing you knew God, or rather are knowne of God, how turne you againe to impotent rudiments? The Law engendreth servants, her children are in bondage: They which are gotten by the Gospell, are free. Brethren, we are not children of the servant, but of the free woman, and will you yet be vnder the Law? That they thought it vnto salvation necessarie, for the Church of Christ, to obserue Dayes, and Moneths, and Times, and Yeares, to keepe the Ceremonies and Sacraments of the Law, this was their error. Yet he which condemneth their errour, confesseth, that notwithstanding, they knew God, and were knowne of him; he taketh not the honour from them to be named Sonnes begotten of the immortall seed of the Gospel. Let the heauie words which he vseth, be weighed; consider the drift of these dreadfull conclusions: If yee be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing: As many as are iustified by the Law, are fallen from Grace. It had bin to no purpose in the world, so to vrge them; had not the Apostle beene perswaded, that at the hearing of such sequels, no benefit by Christ, a defection from Grace, their hearts would tremble and quake within them: and why? because thus they knew also in Christ, and in Grace, their saluation lay, which is a plaine direct acknowledgement of the foundation. Left I should seeme to hold that which no one learned, or godly hath done; let these words be considered, which import as much as I affirme. [*] Surely those brethren, which in S. *Paules* time, thought that God did lay a necessitie vpon them to make choice of dayes and meanes, spake as they beleeved, and could not but in words condemne the libertie, which they supposed to be brought in against the authoritie of diuine Scripture. Otherwise it had beene needlesse for S. *Paule* so admonishly them, not to condemne such as eate without scrupulositie, whatsoeuer was set before them. This neuer if you weigh what it is of it selfe, did at once ouerthrow all Scripture, wherby we are taught iustification by faith

in

*Error convicted, and afterwards maintained, is more then error: for although opinion bee the same it was, in which respect I still call it error, yet they are not now the same they were when they are taught what the truth is, and plainely taught.

a *Act.* 15.5.

b *Gal.*4.24,25.

c *Vers* 28.

d *Vers* 31.

e *Vers* 21.

[*] *Bucer. de Vnit. Eccles. formula.*

Calvin. Epist.

red, bind himselfe to keepe his Elect from worshipping the Beast, and from receiuing his marke in their foreheads: but hee hath preserued, and will preserue them from receiuing any deadly wound at the hands of the Man of sin, whose deceit hath preuailed ouer none vnto death, but onely vnto such as neuer loued the truth, such as tooke a pleasure in vnrighteousnesse; they in all ages, whose hearts haue delighted in the principall truth, and whose soules haue thirsted after righteousnesse, if they receiued the marke of Errour, the mercie of God causeth erring, and dangerously erring might saue them: if they receiued the marke of Heresie, the same mercy did, I doubt not, conuert them. How farre Romish Heresies may preuaile ouer Gods Elect, how many God hath kept falling into them, how many haue beene conuerted from them, is not the question now in hand: for if heauen had not receiued any one of that crew for these thousand yeares, it may still bee true, that the doctrine which this day they doe professe, doeth not directly ouerthrow the foundation, and so proue them simply to be no Christian Church. One I haue alleaged, whose words, in my eares, sound that way: shall I adde another, whose speech is plaine? *I deny her not the name of a Church*, saith another, *as we are bound to acknowledge the name of a woman, as long as she liueth, what soeuer she hath.* His reason is this; *Saluation in Iesus Christ, which is the marke which ioyneth the head with the bodie, Iesus Christ with the Church, is so cut off by many merits, by the merits of Saints, by the Popes Pardons, and such other wickednesse, that the life of the Church holdeth by a very thread*; yet still the life of the Church holdeth. A third hath these words, *I acknowledge the Church of Rome, euen at this present day, for a Church of Christ; such a Church as Israel did sometimes, yet a Church.* His reason is this; *Euery man seeth, except he willingly bee blinde himselfe, that we alwaies, as now, the Church of Rome holdeth strictly and stedfastly the doctrine of truth concerning Christ, and baptizeth in the Name of the Father, the Sonne, and the holy Ghost, confesseth and worshipth Christ, for the only Redeemer of the World, and the Iudge that shall sit vpon quicke and dead, receiuing true beleeuers into endlesse ioy, faithlesse and godlesse men being cast with Sathan and his angels into flames vnquenchable.*

* *Morn. de Eccles.*

* *Zanch. præfat. de relig.*

28 I may, and will, reine the question shorter then they doe. Let the Pope take downe his top, and captiuate no more mens soules by his Papall iurisdiction: let him no longer count himselfe *Lord Paramount* ouer the Princes of the world: no longer hold Kings as his seruants *perforce*: let his starely Senate submit their neckes to the yoke of Christ, and cease to die their garment like *Edom*, in bloud: let them from the highest to the lowest, hate and forsake their Idolatrie, abiure all their errours and heresies, wherewith they haue any way peruerted the truth: let them strippe their Churches, till they leaue no polluted rag, but only this one about her, *By Christ alone, without workes, we cannot be saued*: it is enough for me, if I proue, that the holding of this one thing doth not proue the foundation of faith directly denied in the Church of Rome.

29 Workes are an addition: be it so; what then? the foundation is not subuerted by euery kind of addition. Simply to adde vnto those fundamentall words, is not to mingle Wine with Water, Heauen & Earth, things polluted,

lured, with the sanctified blood of Christ: of which crime in this charge, which attributes those operations in whole or in part to any creature, which in the worke of our salvation wholly are peculiar vnto Christ, and if I open my mouth to speake in their defence, if I hold my peace and plead not against them so long as breath in nostrils my body, let me be guilty of all the dishonour that ever hath beene done to the Name of God. But the most dreadfull a thing it is to denie salvation by Christ alone, the more fearefull I am, the more is the sinne manifest, so lay nothing so grievous to any mans charge. Let vs beware, lest if we make too many wayes of denying Christ, we leave vnto vs no way for our selves truely and lively to confesse him. Salvation onely by Christ is the true foundation, whereupon indeed Christianity standeth. But what if I say you cannot be saved onely by Christ, without this addition, Christ believed in heart, confessed with mouth, obeyed in life and conversation? Because I adde, doe I therefore denie, that which I did directly affirme? There may be an additament of explication, which overthroweth not, but proveth and concludeth the proposition, wherevnto it is annexed. He which saith, *Peter* was a chiefe Apostle, doth prove that *Peter* was an Apostle; he which saith, Our salvation is of the Lord, * through sanctification of the Spirit and Faith of the truth, proveth that our salvation is of the Lord. But if that which is added be such a limitation as taketh away the very essence of that whereunto it is added, then by the former it ouerthroweth. He which saith *Iudas* is a dead man, though in word he graunteth *Iudas* to be a man, yet in effect he proveth him by that very speech no man, because death depriveth him of being. In like sort, he that should say, our election is of grace for our workes sake, should grant in sound of words, but in deed by consequence denie that our election is of Grace, for the * grace which hath respect vnto works, is no grace, if it elect vs for our workes sake.

* 2. Thess. 2. 13.

* Rom. 11. 6.

Now whereas the Church of Rome addeth workes, we must note further, that the adding of * Workes is not like the adding of Circumcision vnto Christ. Christ came not to abrogate and put away good workes; he did, to change Circumcision; for wee see, that in place thereof, hee hath substituted holy Baptisme. To say, you cannot be saved by Christ, except you be circumcised, is to adde a thing excluded, a thing not onely not necessarie to be kept, but necessarie not to be kept by them that will be saved. On the other side, to say you cannot be saved by Christ without workes, is to adde things, not only not excluded, but commanded, as being in their place, and in their kinde necessarie, and therefore subordinate vnto Christ, by Christ himselfe, by whom the workes of salvation is spoken: * *Except your righteousnesse exceed the righteousnesse of the Scribes and Pharisies, you shall in no case enter into the Kingdome of Heaven.* They were b rigorous exactors of things not vtterly to be neglected, and left vndone; Washings, and Tithings, &c. As they were in these, so must we be in iudgement, and the loue of God. Christ in workes personall, giueth more liberty, in a morall much lesse, then they did. Workes of righteousnesse therefore are

* I denie not but that the Church of Rome requireth some kinds of works which shee ought not to require at mens hands. But our question is generall about the adding of good workes, not whether such or such works be good. In this comparison it is enough to touch so much of the matter in question betweene Christ and the Church, as toucheth Christ. Christ requireth nothing: which Church will deny to be necessarie to salvation. Therefore they make Christ and us friends, I make them vnfriends.

b Luke 11. 39.

c Matth. 5. 21.

not

not for pregnantly added in the one propoſition, as in the other, Circumciſion is.

But we ſay, our ſaluation is by Chriſt alone, therefore howſoeuer, or whatſoeuer we adde vnto Chriſt in the matter of ſaluation, wee ouerthrow Chriſt: Our caſe were very hard, if this argument ſo vniuerſally meant, as it is propoſed, were ſound and good. We our ſelues doe not teach Chriſt alone, excluding our owne faith, vnto iuſtification; Chriſt alone, excluding our owne workes, vnto ſanctification; Chriſt alone, excluding the one or the other vnneceſſarie vnto ſaluation. It is a childiſh cauill wherewith in the matter of iuſtification our Aduerſaries doe ſo greatly pleaſe themſelues, exclayming that we tread all Chriſtian vertues vnder our feet, and require nothing in Chriſtians but faith, becauſe we teach, that faith alone iuſtifieth: whereas by this ſpeech we neuer meant to exclude either hope, or charitie from being alwayes ioyned as inſeparable Mates with Faith in the man that is iuſtified; or workes from being added as neceſſarie duties required at the hands of euery iuſtified man: but to ſhew, that faith is the only hand which putteth on Chriſt vnto iuſtification; and Chriſt, the only garment, which being ſo put on couereth the ſhame of our defiled natures, hideth the imperfections of our workes, preſenteth vs blameleſſe in the ſight of God, before whom otherwiſe, the weakeneſſe of our faith were cauſe ſufficient to make vs culpable, yea to ſhut vs from the Kingdome of Heauen, where nothing that is not abſolute, can enter. That our dealing with them bee not as childiſh as theirs with vs, when wee heare of ſaluation by Chriſt alone, conſidering that [*alone*] as an excluſiue particle, wee are to note, what it doth exclude, and where. If I ſay, *Such a Iudge only ought to determine ſuch a cauſe*, all things incident to the determination thereof, beſides the perſon of the Iudge, as Lawes, Depoſitions, Euidences, &c. are not hereby excluded; perſons are not excluded from witneſſing herein, or aſſiſting, but onely from determining and giuing ſentence. How then is our ſaluation wrought by Chriſt alone? Is it our meaning that nothing is requiſite to mans ſaluation, but Chriſt to ſaue, and he to be ſaued quietly without any more adoe? No; we acknowledge no ſuch foundation. As we haue receiued, ſo we teach, that beſides the bare and naked worke, wherein Chriſt without any other Aſſociate, finiſhed all the parts of our Redemption, and purchaſed Saluation himſelfe alone: for conueyance of this eminent bleſſing vnto vs, many things are of neceſſitie required, as to bee knowne and choſen of God before the foundation of the World, in the World to be called, iuſtified, ſanctified; after we haue left the World, to bee receiued vnto glorie. Chriſt in euery of theſe hath ſomewhat, which hee worketh alone. Through him according to the eternall purpoſe of God, before the foundation of the World, borne, Crucified, Buried, Riſen, &c. wee were in gracious acceptation knowne vnto God, long before we were ſeene of men: God * knew vs, loued vs, was kinde to vs in Ieſus Chriſt; in him we were elected to bee Heires of life. Thus farre God through Chriſt hath wrought in ſuch ſort alone, that our ſelues are meere Patients, working no more then dead and ſenſleſſe Matter, Wood, or Stone, or Iron, doth in the Artificers hands, no more then the Clay when the Potter appointeth it to be framed for an honorable vſe, nay, how ſo much ſo the

* Ephe. 1. 3.

Matter whereupon the Craftſman worketh, he chooſeth being moued by the fitneſſe which is in it to ſerue his turne; in vs no ſuch thing. Touching the reſt, which is laid for the foundation of our Faith, importeth further; That [a] by him we are called; that [a] wee haue Redemption, [b] Remiſſion of ſinnes through his bloud, [c] Health by his ſtripes, [d] Iuſtice by him; that hee [e] doth ſanctifie his Church, and make it glorious to himſelfe; that [f] entrance into ioy ſhall be giuen vs by him, yea, all things by him alone. Howbeit not ſo by him alone, as if in vs no [g] our vocation, the hearing of the Goſpel; to our iuſtification, Faith; to our ſanctification, the fruits of the Spirit; to our entrance into reſt, perſeuerance in Hope, in Faith, in Holineſſe, were not neceſſarie.

[a] Gal. 5. 8.
[a] 1. Pet. 2. 9. 2. Pet. 1. 3.
[b] Epheſ. 1. 7.
[c] Eſa. 53. 12.
[d] Ierem. 23. 6.
[e] Epheſ. 5. 26.
[f] Matth. 25. 23.
[g] 2. Theſſ. 2. 14. Gal. 2. 16. Gal. 5. 22. 2. Theſſ. 2. 15.

32 Then what is the fault of the Church of Rome? Not that ſhee requireth workes at their hands which will be ſaued: but that ſhe attributeth vnto workes a power of ſatisfying God for ſinne; yea, a vertue to merit both grace here, and in heauen glorie. That this ouer-throweth the foundation of faith, I grant willingly; that it is a direct denying thereof, I vtterly deny: what it is to hold, and what directly to denie the foundation of faith, I haue alreadie opened. Apply it particularly to this cauſe, and there needes to more adoe. The thing which is handled, if the forme, vnder which it is handled, bee added thereunto, it ſheweth the foundation of any doctrine whatſoeuer. Chriſt is the Matter whereof the Doctrine of the Goſpel treateth; and it treateth of Chriſt, as of a Sauiour. Saluation therefore by Chriſt is the foundation of Chriſtianitie: as for workes, they are a thing ſubordinate, no otherwiſe then becauſe our ſanctification cannot be accomplished without them; the Doctrine concerning them is a thing builded vpon the foundation; therefore the Doctrine, which addeth vnto them the power of ſatisfying or of meriting, addeth vnto a thing ſubordinated, builded vpon the foundation, not to the very foundation it ſelfe: yet is the foundation by this addition conſequently ouerthrowne, for as much as out of this addition, it may be negatiuely concluded; Hee which maketh any worke good, and acceptable in the ſight of God, to proceed from the naturall freedome of our will; Hee which giueth vnto any good workes of ours, the force of ſatisfying the wrath of God for ſinne, the power of meriting either earthly or heauenly rewards; Hee which holdeth workes going before our vocation, in congruitie to merit our vocation, workes following our firſt, to merit our ſecond iuſtification, and by condignitie our laſt reward in the Kingdome of Heauen; pulleth vp the Doctrine of faith by the roots; for one of euery of theſe the plaine direct denyall thereof may bee neceſſarily concluded. Not this onely, but what other Hereſie is there, that doth not raze the very foundation of faith by conſequent? Howbeit, wee make a difference of Hereſies, accounting them in the next degree to Infidelitie, which directly deny any one thing to bee, which is expreſſly acknowledged in the Articles of our Beliefe; for one of any one Article ſo denyed, the denyall of the very foundation it ſelfe is ſtraight-way infer'd. As for example; if a man ſhould ſay, *I haue in my Catholike Church*, it followeth immediately thereupon, that this Ieſus whom we call the Sauiour, is not the Sauiour of the World; becauſe all the Prophets beare witneſſe, that the true *Meſſias* ſhould [h] *ſhew light vnto the Gentiles*, that is to ſay, gather ſuch a Church as is Catholike, not re-

Haec ratio Eccleſiaſtici Sacramenti & Catholicae Fidei eſt, vt qui partem diuini Sacramenti negat, partem non habeat confiteri. Ita enim ſibi connexa & concorporata ſunt omnia, vt aliud ſine alio ſtare non poſſit, & qui vnum ex omnibus denegauerit; alia ſi omnia credidiſſe non profit. Caſſiod. lib. 6. de Inuent. Dei. If he obſtinately ſtand in denyall. pag. 193.

[h] Act. 26. 23.

reſtrayned any longer vnto one circumciſed Nation. In the ſecond ranke wee place them, out of whoſe Poſitions, the denyall of any the fore-ſaid Articles may be with like facilitie concluded: ſuch as are they, which haue denyed either the Diuinitie of Chriſt with *Hebion*, or with *Marcion* his Humanitie; an example whereof may be that of *Caſſianus*, defending the Incarnation of the Sonne of God, againſt *Neſtorius* Biſhop of Antioch, which held, that the Virgin, when ſhee brought forth Chriſt, did not bring forth the Sonne of God, but a ſole and a meere man: out of which Hereſie the denyall of the Articles of the Chriſtian Faith he deduceth thus: *If thou deſt deny our Lord Ieſus Chriſt in denying the Sonne, thou canſt not thereſo him denie the Father: for according to the voice of the Father himſelfe, He that hath not the Sonne, hath not the Father. Wherefore denying him which is begotten, thou denyeſt him which doth beget. Againe, denying the Sonne of God to haue beene borne in the fleſh, how canſt thou beleeue him to haue ſuffered? beleeuing not his Paſſion, what remaineth, but that thou denie his Reſurrection? For we beleeue him not Buryed, except we firſt beleeue him Dead: neither can the reaſon of his riſing from the Dead ſtand without the faith of his death going before. The denyall of his Death and Paſſion inferreth the denyall of his riſing from the depth. Whereupon it followeth that thou alſo denyeſt his Aſcenſion into Heauen. The Apoſtle affirmeth, that he which Aſcended, did firſt Deſcend, ſo that as much as lyeth in thee, our Lord Ieſus Chriſt hath neither riſen from the depth, nor is aſcended into Heauen; nor ſitteth on the right hand of God the Father, neither ſhall he come at the Day of the finall Account which is looked for, nor ſhall iudge the quicke and dead. And dareſt thou yet ſet foot in the Church? Canſt thou thinke thy ſelfe a Biſhop, when thou haſt denyed all theſe things, whereby thou doſt obtaine a Biſhoply calling?* Nestorius confeſſed all the Articles of the Creed, but his opinion did imply the denyall of euery part of his Confeſſion. Hereſies them are of the third ſort, ſuch as the Church of Rome maintayneth, which be removed by a greater diſtance from the foundation, although indeed they ouerthrow it. Yet becauſe of their weakneſſe, which the Philoſopher noteth in mens capacities, when he ſaith, that the common ſort cannot ſee things, which follow in reaſon, when they follow not were a farre off by many deductions; therefore the repugnancie of ſuch Hereſie and the foundation, is not ſo quickly or ſo eaſily found, but that an Heretike of this, ſooner then of the former kind, may directly graunt, and conſequently nevertheleſſe, denie the foundation of Faith. Lib. 6. de Incar. Dom. cap. 16.

33 If reaſon be ſuſpected, tryall will ſhew that the Church of Rome doth no otherwiſe by teaching the doctrine ſhe doth teach concerning good works. Offer them the very fundamentall words: and what man is there, that will refuſe to ſubſcribe vnto them? Can they directly graunt, and directly denie one and the very ſelfe-ſame thing? Our owne proceedings in diſputing againſt their workes ſatisfactorie, and meritorious, doe ſhew not only, that they hold, but that we acknowledge them to hold the foundation, notwithſtanding their opinion. For are not theſe our arguments againſt them? *Chriſt alone hath ſatisfied and appeaſed his Fathers wrath: Chriſt hath merited ſaluation alone.* Wee ſhould doe fondly to vſe ſuch diſputes, neither could we thinke to preuaile by them, if that, wherevpon we ground, were a thing, which wee know they doe

not hold, which we are assured they will not graunt. Their very answere to all such reasons as are in this Controuersie brought against them, will not permit vs to doubt, whether they hold the foundation, or no. Can any man that hath read their Bookes concerning this matter, be ignorant how they draw all their answers vnto these heades? *That the remission of all our sinnes, the pardon of all whatsoeuer punishments thereby deserued, the rewards which God hath laid vp in Heauen, are by the bloud of our Lord Iesus Christ purchased, and obtayned sufficiently for all men: but for vs more effectually, for his benefit in particular, except the bloud of Christ be applyed particularly vnto him, by such meanes as God hath appointed that to be by. That those meanes of themselues, being but dead things, onely the bloud of Christ is that which putteth life, force, and efficacie in them to worke, and to be available, each in his kind to our saluation. Finally, that grace being purchased for vs by the bloud of Christ, and freely without any merit or desert at the first bestowed vpon vs, the good things which we do, after grace receiued, be thereby made faith-factory, & meritorious.* Some of their fathers, to this effect, I must alleage for mine owne warrant. If we desire to heare soueraine iudgements, we find in one this confession: *He that could reckon how many the vertues and merits of our Sauiour Iesus Christ haue beene, might likewise vnderstand how many the benefits haue beene, that are to come vnto vs by him; for euen he as men are made partakers of them all by vertue of his Passion: by him is giuen vnto vs Remission of our sinnes, grace, glory, liberty, peace, saluation, redemption, iustification, iustice, satisfaction, sacrifices merits, and all other things which we had, and were behouefull for our saluation.* In another we haue these oppositions, and answers made vnto them: *All grace is giuen by Christ Iesus? True, but not except Christ Iesus be applyed. He is the propitiation for our sinne, by his stripes we are healed, he hath offered himselfe vp for vs: all this is true, but apply it vnto vs, we put all satisfaction in the bloud of Iesus Christ, but not hold that the meanes which Christ hath appointed for vs in the effects applyed, are our part?* Our Countrymen in Rhemes make the like answere, that they seeke saluation no other way, then by the bloud of Christ; and that humbly they doe vse Prayers, Fastings, Almes, Faith, Charitie, Sacrifice, Sacraments, Priests, only as the meanes appointed by Christ, to apply the benefit of his holy bloud vnto them; touching our good workes, that in their owne natures they are not meritorious, nor answerable to the ioyes of Heauen, is commeth by the grace of Christ, and not of the worke it selfe, that we haue by well doing a right to Heauen, and deserue it worthily. If any man thinke that I seeke to varnish their opinions, to set the better foote of a lame cause fore-most: let him know, that since I began throughly to vnderstand their meaning, I haue found their halting greater, then perhaps it seemeth to them which know not the deepe wiles of Satan, as the blessed Diuine speaketh. For although this bee proofe sufficient, that they doe not directly denie the foundation of Faith: yet if there were no other leauen in the whole lumpe of their Doctrine, but this: this were sufficient to proue, that their Doctrine is not agreeable vnto the foundation of Christian Faith. The Pelagians being our great friends vnto Nature, made themselues enemies vnto Grace, for all their confessing, that men haue their soules, and all the faculties thereof, their wits, and all the abilities of their wills from God. And is not the Church of Rome still

Lewis of Granad. Medit. cap. last 3.

Panigarola Inst. 11.

Aduer. in 1. Ioh. 2.

still an aduersarie vnto Christs Merits, because of her acknowledging, that we haue receiued the power of merising by the bloud of Christ? Sir *Thomas More* fetcheth downe the odds betweene vs and the Church of Rome, in the matter of workes, thus, *Like as we graunt them, that no good workes of man is rewardable in heauen of his owne nature, but through the meere goodnes of God, that list to set so high a price vpon so poore a thing; and that this price God setteth through Christs Passion, and for that also they be his own workes with vs; for good workes to God-ward worketh no man, without God worke in him; and as wee grant them also, that no man may be proud of his works, for his imperfect working, & for that in all that euer a man may do, he can do God no good, but is a seruant vnprofitable, & doth but his bare duty; as we, I say, graunt vnto them these things: so this one thing, or twaine, do they grant vs againe, that men are bound to work good works, if they haue time and power, & that whose worketh in true faith most, shall be most rewarded, but then set they thereto, that all his rewards shall be giuen him for his faith alone, and nothing for his works at all, because his faith is the thing, they say, that forceth him to worke well.* I see by this of Sir *Thomas More*, how eatie it is for men of the greatest capacity to mistake things written or spoken, as well on the one side as on the other. Their doctrine, as he thought, maketh the worke of man rewardable in the World to come, through the goodnesse of God whom it pleased to set so high a price vpon so poore a thing and ours, that a man doth receiue that eternall and high reward, not for his works, but for his faiths sake, by which he worketh: whereas in truth our doctrine is no other then that wee haue learned at the feet of Christ, namely, that God doth iustifie the beleeuing man, yet not for the worthinesse of his beliefe, but for the worthinesse of him, which is beleeued: God rewardeth abundantly euery one which worketh, yet not for any meritorious dignitie, which is or can be in the worke, but through his meere mercie, by whose commandement he worketh. Contrariwise, their doctrine is, that as pure water of it selfe hath no sauour, but if it passe through a sweete Pipe, it taketh a pleasant smell of the Pipe through which it passeth: so, although before grace receiued, our workes doe neither satisfie, nor merit, yet after, they doe both the one and the other. Euery vertuous action hath then power in such to satisfie, that if wee our selues commit no mortall sinne, no haynous crime whereupon to spend this treasure of satisfaction in our owne behalfe, it runneth to the benefit of other men release, on whom it shall please the Steward of the house of God so bestow it, so that we may satisfie for our selues and others, but merit only for our selues. In meriting our actions doe worke with two hands, with one they get their morning stipend, the increase of grace, with the other their euening hire, the euerlasting Crowne of glorie. Indeed they teach that our good works doe not these things, as they come from vs, but as they come from grace into vs: which grace in vs is another thing in their Diuinitie, then is the meere goodnesse of Gods mercie towards vs in Christ Iesus.

In his Book of Consolation.

Works of Supererogation.

34. If it were not a strong deluding spirit, which hath possession of their hearts; were it possible, but they should see, how plainly they doe here in game say the very ground of Apostolique faith, I meane this free salvation by grace, whereof so plentifull mention is made in the Scriptures of God? Was

this their meaning, which first taught the World to looke for saluation onely by Christ? *By grace*, the Apostle saith, and by grace in such sort as a gift: a thing that commeth not of our selues, not of our workes, lest any man should boast, and say, *I haue wrought out my owne saluation.* By grace they confesse; but by grace in fact, that is many as weare the Diademe of blisse, they weare nothing but what they haue woone. The Apostle, as if he had fore-seene, how the Church of Rome would abuse the World in time by ambiguous termes, to declare in what sense the name of grace must be taken, when we make it the cause of our saluation, saith, *He saued vs according to his mercie:* which mercie, although it exclude not the working of our new birth, the renewing of our hearts by the Holy Ghost, the meanes, the vertues, the duties, which God requireth of our hands which shall be saued; yet is it so repugnant vnto merit, that to say wee are saued for the worthinesse of any thing which is ours, is to deny wee are saued by grace. Grace bestoweth freely: and therefore iustly requireth the glory of that which is bestowed. We deny the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ; we abuse, disanull, and annihilate the benefit of his bitter Passion, if we rest in those proud imaginations, that life is deservedly ours, that we merit it, and that we are worthy of it.

35 Howbeit, considering how many vertuous and iust men, how many Saints, how many Martyrs, how many of the ancient Fathers of the Church, haue had their sundry perilous opinions: and amongst sundry of their opinions, this, that they hoped to make good some part of amends for their sinnes, by the voluntary punishments which they laid vpon themselues, because by a consequent it may follow hereupon, that they were iniurious vnto Christ: shall we therefore make such deadly Epitaphs, and set them vpon their graues, *They denyed the foundation of faith directly, they are damned, there is no saluation for them?* S. Austin saith of himselfe, *Errare possum, haereticus esse nolo.* And except we put a difference betweene them that erre, and them that obstinately persist in error, how is it possible, that euer any man should hope to be saued? Surely in this case, I haue no respect of any person aliue or dead. Giue me a man of what state or condition soeuer, yea, a *Cardinall* or a *Pope*, whome in the extreame point of his life affliction hath made to know himselfe, whose heart God hath touched with true sorrow for all his sinnes, and filled with loue towards the Gospell of Christ, whose eyes are opened to see the Truth, and his mouth to renounce all heresie and error any wise oppositе thereunto: this one opinion of Merites excepted, her thinketh God will require at his hands, and because he wanteth, therefore trembleth, and is discouraged; It may be, I am forgetfull, and vnthankfull, not satisfied with things new and old, as a wise learned Scribe should bee, not able to alleage that, wherevnto, if it were alleaged, he doth beare a minde most willing to yeeld, and so to be recalled as well from this, as from other errors. And shall I thinke, because of this onely error, that such a man toucheth not so much as the hemme of Christs garment? If he dye, wherefore should not I haue hope, that vertue may proceed from Christ to saue him? Because his error doth by consequent ouerthrow his faith? Shall I therefore cut him off, as one that hath vtterly cast off Christ? or else beleeue not so much as by a slender threed? No, I will not

be afraid to fay vnto a *Pope* or *Cardinall* in this plight, Be of good comfort, we haue no doe with a merciſull God; rather to make the beſt of a little which we hold well, and not with a captious Sophiſter, which gathereth the worſt out of euery thing, wherein we erre. Is there any reaſon that I ſhould be ſuſpected, or you offended for this ſpeech? * Is it a dangerous thing to imagine, that ſuch men may find mercie? The houre may come when we ſhall thinke it a bleſſed thing to heare, that if our ſinnes were the ſinnes of the *Popes* and *Cardinals*, the bowels of the mercie of God are larger. I doe not propoſe vnto you a Pope with the necke of an Emperour vnder his feet, a Cardinall riding his horſe to the bridle in the bloud of Saints: but a *Pope* or *Cardinall*, ſorrowfull, penitent, diſ-robed, ſtript not onely of vſurped power, but alſo deliuered and recald from errour, Antichriſt conuerted and lying proſtrate at the foote of Chriſt: and ſhall I thinke that Chriſt will ſparke at him? And ſhall I croſſe and gaine-ſay the merciſull promiſes of God, generally made vnto penitent ſinners, by oppoſing the name of a Pope, of a Cardinall? What difference is there in the world betweene a *Pope* and a *Cardinall*, and *Iohn Style* in this caſe? If wee thinke it impoſſible for them, after they be once come within that ranke, to be afterwards touched with any ſuch remorſe, let that be granted. The Apoſtle ſaith, *If I or an Angell from heauen preach vnto, &c.* Let it be as likely that S. *Paul* or an Angell from heauen ſhould preach Hereſie, as that a Pope or a Cardinall ſhould be brought ſo farre foorth to acknowledge the truth: yet if a Pope or Cardinall ſhould, what find we in their perſons, why they might not be ſaued? It is not the perſons you will ſay, but the errour, wherein I ſuppoſe them to die, which excludeth them from the hope of mercie; the opinion of merits doth take away all poſſibilitie of ſaluation from them. What, if they hold it onely as an errour? Although they hold the truth truely and ſincerely in all other parts of Chriſtian faith? Although they haue in ſome meaſure all the vertues and graces of the Spirit, all other tokens of Gods elect children in them? Although they be farre from hauing any proud preſumptuous opinion, that they ſhall be ſaued by the worthyneſſe of their deeds? Although the only thing which troubleth and moleſteth them, be but a little too much deiection, ſomewhat too great a feare, riſing from an erroneous conceit, that God will require a worthineſſe in them, which they are grieued to find wanting in themſelues? Although they be not obſtinate in this perſwaſion? Although they be willing and would be glad to forſake it, if any one reaſon were brought ſufficient to diſproue it? Although the only let, why they doe not forſake it ere they die, be the ignorance of the meanes, by which it might be diſproued? Although the cauſe why the ignorance in this point is not remoued, be the want of knowledge in ſuch as ſhould be able, and are not, to remoone it? Let me die, if euer it be prooued, that ſimply an errour doth exclude a *Pope* or a *Cardinall* in ſuch a caſe vtterly from hope of life. Surely, I muſt conſeſſe vnto you, if it be an errour, that God may be merciſull to ſaue men, euen when they erre: my greateſt comfort is my errour; were it not for the loue I beare vnto this errour, I would neuer wiſh to ſpeake nor to liue.

36 Wherefore, to returne that Mother ſentence, wherevnto I little thought that ſo much trouble would haue growne: *I doubt not but that God is merciful*

to

* Let all affection bee laid aſide; Let the matter indifferently be conſidered.

to saue thousands of our Fathers liuing in Popish superstition, in ignorance of the saued ignorantly. Alas! what bloody meaner is there [illegible] that it should be an occasion of so many hard censures? Did I say, *thousands of our Fathers might be saued?* I haue shewed which way it cannot be denied. Did I say, *I doubt not but they were saued?* I am no Iesuite in this perswasion, though I had no reason for it. Did I say, *I haue great cause to doubt, hope they did find mercy, and so were saued?* What can such [illegible] but sin? Sinnes are not equall: and ignorance though it doth not make it to be no sinne, yet leeing it did make their sinne the lesse, why should it not make our hope concerning their life, the greater? We pitie the mad, and scorne not, but God hath most compassion ouer them that sinne for want of vnderstanding. As much is confessed by sundrie others, almost in the selfe same words which I haue vsed. It is but onely my euill hap, that the same sentence of charitie in other mens bookes, should seeme so bolde, hearing whom they are once by me recited. If I be deceiued in this point, not they, but the blessed Apostle hath deceiued me. What I said of others, the same he said of himselfe, *I obtaine mercie, for I did it ignorantly.* Confirme his words, and you cannot misconstrue mine. I speake no otherwise, I meant no otherwise then he did.

37 Thus haue I brought the question, concerning our Fathers, at the length, vnto an end. Of whole estate vpon so fit an occasion, as was offered me, handling the waighty causes of seperation betweene the Church of Rome and vs, and the weake motiues which are commonly brought to retaine vs in that societie, amongst which motiues, the examples of our Fathers ouerfled is one, although I saw it conuenient to vrge the sentence which I did to the end, that all men might thereby vnderstand, how vtterly we are to condemne as many as haue bin before vs otherwise perswaded then we our selues are, yet more then this one sentence I did not thinke it expedient to vrge, iudging it a great deale meeter for vs to haue regard to our owne estate, then to fall ouer-curiously, what is become of others past. And leasting left that such questions as these, if voluntarily they should be too farre waded in might seeme worthy of that rebuke, which our Sauiour thought needfull in a case not vnlike: *What is that vnto thee?* When I was forced much beside mine expectation, to render a reason of my speech, I could not but yeeld at the call of others, and proceed so farre as duties bound me, for the fuller satisfying of minde. Wherein I haue walked as with reuerence, so with feare: with reuerence, in regard of our Fathers, which liued in former times; not without feare, considering them that are alive.

38 I am not ignorant, how readie men are to feed and soothe vp themselues in euill. Shall I, will the man fly that loueth the perfect world more then he loueth Christ Iesus? Shall I incurre the high displeasure of the mightiest vpon earth? Shall I hazzard my goods? Endanger my estate? Put my life in ieopardie, rather then to yeeld to that, which so many of my Fathers embraced, and yet found fauour in the sight of God? *Christ Iesus came into the world to saue sinners, because they beleeued not the Law, they hated him not as the murtherer of life.* If I should not onely not helpe the Lord against the mightie, but helpe to

Iudg. 5.23.

strengthen

ſtrength then they that are mighty, againſt the Lord: worthily might I fall vnder the burthen of that curſe, worthy I were to beare my owne iudgement. But if the doctrine which I teach, be a flowre gathered in the Garden of the Lord; a part of the ſauing truth of the Goſpel; from whence notwithſtanding poyſoned creatures doe ſucke venome: I can but wiſh it were otherwiſe, and content my ſelfe with the lot that hath befallen me, the rather, becauſe it hath not befallen me alone. S. *Paul* touched a tracke, and a comfortable truth, when he taught, that the greater our miſerie is, in reſpect of our iniquities, the readier is the mercy of God for our releaſe. If we ſeeke vnto him, the more we haue ſinned, the more praiſe, and glorie, and honour, vnto him that pardoneth our ſinne. But marke what lewd collections were made hereupon by ſome: *Why then (ſaid they) I ſhould ſinne for a finer?* And the Apoſtle (as we are blamed, and as ſome affirme that we ſay: *Why doe we not euill, that good may come of it?*) he was accuſed to teach that which ill-diſpoſed men did gather by his reaſoning, though it were cleane not only beſides, but againſt his meaning. The Apoſtle addeth, *Their condemnation (which thus doe) is iuſt.* I am not haſtie to apply ſentences of condemnation. I wiſh from mine heart their converſion, whoſoeuer are thus peruerſly affected. For I muſt needs ſay, their caſe is fearefull, their eſtate dangerous, which harden themſelues, preſuming on the mercy of God towards others. It is true that God is mercifull; but let vs beware of preſumptuous ſinnes. God deliuered *Ionah* from the bottome of the Sea; will you therefore caſt your ſelues headlong from the tops of Rocks, and ſay in your hearts, God ſhall deliuer vs? Hee pitieth the blind that would gladly ſee, but will he pitie him, that may ſee, and but maketh himſelfe in blindneſſe? No. Chriſt hath ſpoken too much vnto you, to claime the priuiledge of your Fathers.

39 As for vs that haue handled this caſe concerning the condition of our Fathers, whether it be this thing, or any other, which we bring vnto you, the counſell is good which the Wiſe man giueth, *Stand thou faſt in thy ſure vnderſtanding, in the way and knowledge of the Lord, and haue but one manner of word, and follow the Word of peace and righteouſneſſe.* As a looſe tooth is a griefe to him that eateth: ſo doth a wauering and vnſtable word in ſpeech, that tendeth to inſtruction, offend. *Shall a wiſe man ſpeake words of the winde,* ſaith *Eliphaz*; light, vnconſtant, vnſtable words? Surely, the wiſeſt may ſpeake words of the winde, ſuch is the vntoward conſtitution of our nature, that we doe neither ſo perfectly vnderſtand the way and knowledge of the Lord, nor ſo ſtedfaſtly imbrace it, when it is vnderſtood; nor ſo graciouſly vtter it, when it is imbraced; nor ſo peaceably maintaine it, when it is vttered; but that the beſt of vs are ouer-taken ſometimes through blindneſſe, ſometimes through haſtineſſe, ſometime through impatience, ſometime through other paſſions of the mind, whereunto (God doth know) we are too ſubiect. We muſt therefore be contented, both to pardon others, and to craue that others muſt pardon vs for ſuch things. Let no man, that ſpeaketh as a man, thinke himſelfe, whiles hee liueth, alwayes freed from ſcapes and ouer-ſights in his ſpeech. The things themſelues, which I haue ſpoken vnto you, are ſound, howſoeuer they haue ſeemed otherwiſe vnto ſome: as whoſe hands I haue in that reſpect receiued

iniurie.

iniurie. I willingly forget it: although indeed, considering the benefit which I have reaped by this necessarie speech of truth, I rather incline to that of the Apostle, *They have not iniured me at all.* I have cause to wish them as many blessings in the Kingdome of heaven, as they have forced me to vtter words and syllables in this cause, wherein I could not be more sparing of speech then I have beene. *It becommeth no man,* saith Saint IEROME, *to be patient in the crime of Heresie.* Patient, as I take it, we should be alwayes, though the crime of Heresie were intended: but silent in a thing of so great consequence I could not, beloued, I durst not be: especially the loue that I beare to the truth of Christ Iesus being hereby somewhat called in question. Whereof I beseech them in the meekenesse of Christ, that haue beene the first originall cause, to consider that a watch-man may crie (*ex euentu*) when indeed a friend commeth. In which cause, as I deeme such a watch-man more worthy to be loued for his care, then misliked for his errour: so I haue iudged it my owne part in this, as much as in me lyeth, to take away all suspicion of any vnfriendly intent or meaning against the Truth, from which, God doth know, my heart is free.

40 Now to you, Beloued, which haue heard these things, I will vse no other words of admonition, then those which are offered me by Saint IAMES, *My Brethren, haue not the faith of our glorious Lord Iesus in respect of persons.* Yee are not now to learne, that as of it selfe it is not hurtfull, so neither should it be to any scandalous and offensiue in doubtfull cases, to heare the different iudgements of men. Be it that *Cephas* hath one interpretation, and *Apollos* hath another; that *Paul* is of this mind, that *Barnabas* of that; if this offend you, the fault is yours. Carry peaceable minds, and you may haue comfort by this variety.

Now the God of peace giue you peaceable minds, and turne it to your euerlasting comfort.

FINIS.

FIVE LEARNED SERMONS,

Written

By RICHARD HOOKER, sometimes Fellow of CORPVS CHRISTI *Colledge in* OXFORD.



LONDON,
Printed by W. STANSBY

1622.

FIVE
LEARNED
SERMONS

Printed
By Richard Hodgkinsonne, some
time Fellow of Corpus
Christi Colledge in
Oxford.

LONDON,
Printed by W. Stansby

1622.

A LEARNED SERMON OF THE NATURE OF PRIDE.

ABAC. 2.4.

His minde swelleth and is not right in him:
But the just by his Faith shall live.



His subject of such being much more delighted to be led then driven, doth many times faithfully exhort, when to perswasion is ... doth. Whereupon this wise Law-maker hath determined always, that those Lawes might have most reputation which they ... kept. A Law fundamentall ... forbidding, is but dead in ... Of those which expresseth the reason ... doth the one as the other. And surely even the Lawes of God, although they ... Heb. hath given commandement, herein is His ... sufficient to crush all obedience at the hands of men, were ... indeed it is so also, with greater elevation and cheerfulnesse of minde; what else do we plainly thereby signifie, more than we must ... yield unto precepts we will have ... In a word, whatsoever we be taught, learn Precepts for direction of our manners, or Articles for instruction of our faith, or Documents any way for information of our minde, it then ... roots and ... when we conceive not only what God doth speake, but why. Neither is it a small thing which we denounce as well from the honour of his truth, as from the ... joy, and delight which we our selves should take by it, when we ... over his speech as though it were ... common, vulgar and trivial; whereas by ... it is ... Doctrine delivered, a depth of Wisdome, in the very ... of words to declare it, a ... of being ... , but by ... of ... than our nice ... for the ... would have the Words ... so ... as ... woman ... breach of this ... God ... and ... in the second ... what ... of ... to the ...

the confusion of their ſinfull neighbours, notwithſtanding the troubles which now they ſuffer; and after ſome [illegible] paſſe over without detayning your mindes in any further remooued ſpeculation. Betwixt Nurſe and Children, and that which men of capacitie and iudgement do or ſhould receiue inſtruction by.

The minde of the Prophet being erected with that which hath beene hitherto ſpoken, receiueth ſome full ſatisfaction, a ſhort abridgement of that which is afterwards more particularly vnfolded. Wherefore as the queſtion before diſputed of doth concerne two ſorts of men, the wicked flouriſhing as the Bay, and the righteous like the withered Graſſe; the one full of Pride, the other caſt downe with vtter diſcouragement: ſo the anſwere which God doth make for reſolution of both, [illegible] ſorts, and this preſent ſentence [illegible] hendeth ſummarily as well the fearefull eſtate of iniquitie ouer-exalted, as the [illegible] vpſtanding againſt them. In the former branch of which ſentence, [illegible] God doth ſo bound the minde of the [illegible] creature, [illegible] reſpect of [illegible] which each thing [illegible] Other things [illegible] and effect of them and [illegible] by [illegible] by neceſſitie [illegible] Heauen doe riſe, [illegible] cannot [illegible] Only men [illegible] leſſe for, neither are they by [illegible] raine determine their [illegible] will, [illegible] which hath the laſt end of his [illegible] affection to the mind directly bending [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] trauell [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

is, that all particular things which are naturally desired in the world, as food, rayment, honour, wealth, pleasure, knowledge, they are subordinated in such wise vnto that future good which we looke for in the world to come, that euen in them there lyeth a direct way tending vnto this. Otherwise we must thinke that God making promises of good things in this life, did seek to peruert men, and so leade them from their right mindes. Where is then the obliquitie of the minde of man? His minde is peruerse, vaine, and crooked, not when it tendeth vnto any of these things, but when it tendeth so, that it swarueth either to the right hand or to the left, by excesse or defect from that exact rule whereby humane actions are measured. The Rule to measure and iudge them by, is the Law of God. For this cause the Prophet doth make so often so earnest sute, *O direct me in the way of thy Commandements*. As long as I haue respect to thy Statutes, I am sure not to tread amisse. Vnder the name of the Law, we must comprehend not only that which God hath written in Tables and leaues, but that which Nature also hath engrauen in the heart of man. Else how shall those Heathen which neuer had Bookes but Heauen and Earth to looke vpon, be conuicted of peruersenesse, but the Gentiles which had not the Law in Bookes, had, saith the Apostle, the effect of the Law written in their hearts.

Then seeing that the heart of man is not right exactly vnlesse it be found in all parts such, that God examining and calling it vnto account with all seuerity of rigour, be not able once to charge it with declining or swarning aside, (which absolute perfection when did God euer finde in the sonnes of meere mortall men?) Doth it not follow that all flesh must of necessitie fall downe and confesse, wee are not dust and ashes, but worse, our mindes from the highest to the lowest are not right? If not right, then vndoubtedly not capable of that blessednesse which we naturally seeke, but subiect vnto that which we most abhorre, anguish, tribulation, death, woe, endlesse miserie. For whatsoeuer misseth the way of Life, the issue thereof cannot bee but perdition. By which reason all being wrapped vp in sinne, and made thereby the Children of death, the minds of all men being plainly conuicted not to be right: shall we thinke that God hath indued them with so many excellencies, moe not only then any, but then all the Creatures in the World besides, to leaue them in such estate, that they had bin happier if they had neuer bin? Heere commeth necessarily in a new way vnto Saluation, so that they which were in the other peruerse, may in this be found straight and righteous. That the way of Nature, this the way of Grace. The end of that way, Saluation merited, presupposing the righteousnesse of mens workes, their righteousnesse, a naturall habilitie to doe them, that habilitie the goodnesse of God which created them in such perfection. But the end of this way, Saluation bestowed vpon men as a gift presupposing not their righteousnesse, but the forgiuenesse of their vnrighteousnesse, iustification, their iustification, not their naturall habilitie to doe good, but their heartie sorrow for not doing, and vnfayned beliefe in him for whose sake not doers are accepted, which is their vocation; their vocation, the election of God, taking them out from the number of lost children, their election a Mediator in whom to be elect; this mediation, inexplicable mercy, his mercy

their miſerie, for whome hee vouchſafed to make himſelfe a Mediatour. The want of exact diſtinguiſhing betweene theſe two wayes, and obſerving what they have common, what peculiar, hath beene the cauſe of the greateſt part of that confuſion, wherein Chriſtianitie at this day laboureth. The lacke of diligence in ſearching, laying downe, and inuring mens minds with thoſe hidden grounds of Reaſon, whereupon the leaſt particulars in each of theſe are moſt firmely and ſtrongly builded, is the onely reaſon of all thoſe ſcruples and vncertainties wherewith we are in ſuch ſore intangled, that a number deſpaire of euer diſcerning what is right or wrong in any thing. But wee will let this matter reſt, whereunto we ſtooped to ſearch out a way, how ſome mindes may bee and are right truely euen in the ſight of God, though they bee ſimply in themſelues not right.

Howbeit there is not onely this difference betweene the iuſt and impious, that the mind of the one is right in the ſight of God, becauſe his obliquitie is imputed; the other peruerſe, becauſe his ſinne is vnrepented of: but euen as lines that are drawne with a trembling hand, but yet to the point which they ſhould, are thought ragged and vneuen, nevertheleſſe direct in compariſon of them which run cleane another way; ſo there is no incongruity in terming them right-minded men, whom though God may charge with many things amiſſe, yet they are not as thoſe hideous and vgly Monſters, in whom becauſe there is nothing but wilfull oppoſition of minde againſt God, a more then tolerable deformitie is noted in them, by ſaying, that their mindes are not right. The Angell of the Church of *Thyatira*, vnto whom the Sonne of God ſendeth this greeting, *I know thy workes and thy loue, and ſeruice, and faith: notwithſtanding I haue a few things againſt thee*, was not as he vnto whom Saint *Peter*, *Thou haſt no fellowſhip in this buſineſſe, for thy heart is not right in the ſight of God*. So that whereas the orderly diſpoſition of the minde of man ſhould be this, perturbations and ſenſuall appetites all kept in awe by a moderate and ſober will; will, in all things framed by reaſon; reaſon, directed by the Law of God and Nature; this *Babylonian* had his minde as it were turned vpſide downe. In him vnreaſonable cecity and blindneſſe trampled all Lawes both of God and Nature vnder feet; wilfulneſſe tyrannized ouer reaſon, and brutiſh ſenſualitie ouer will. An euident token that his outrage would worke his ouerthrow, and procure his ſpeedie ruine. The Mother whereof was that which the Prophet in theſe words ſignifieth, *His minde doth ſwell*.

Immoderate ſwelling, a token of very eminent breach, and of inevitable deſtruction; *Pride*, a vice which cleaueth ſo faſt vnto the hearts of men, that if wee were to finde our ſelues of all faultes one by one, wee ſhould vndoubtedly find it the very laſt and hardeſt to put off. But I am not here to touch the ſecret itching humour of vanitie wherewith men are generally touched. It was a thing more then meanely inordinate, wherewith the *Babylonian* did ſwell. Which that we may both the better conceiue, and the more eaſily reape profit by the nature of this vice, which ſetteth the whole World out of courſe, and hath put ſo many euen of the wiſeſt beſides themſelues, is firſt of all to bee inquired into; Secondly, the dangers to be diſcouered, which it draweth inevitable after it, being not cured; and laſt of all, the wayes to cure it.

Whether

Whether we looke vpon the gifts of nature, or of grace, or whatsoeuer is in the World admired as a part of mans excellencie, adorning his bodie, beautifying his minde, or externally any way commending him in the accounte and opinion of men, there is in euery thinke somewhat possible which no man hath, and somewhat had which few men can attayne vnto. By occasion whereof there groweth disparagement necessarily; and by occasion of disparagement, Pride through mens ignorance. First therefore, although men bee not proud of any thing which is not at least in opinion good, yet euery good thing they are not proud of, but onely of that which (either is common vnto many, and being desired of all, causeth them which haue it, to be honored aboue the rest. Now there is no man so voide of braine, as to suppose that Pride consisteth in the bare possession of such things; for then to haue Vertue were a Vice, and they should bee the happiest men who are most wretched, because they haue least of that which they would haue. And though in speech wee doe intimate a kind of vanity to be in them of whom we say, *They are Wisemen and they know it*, yet this doth not proue that euery Wiseman is proud which doth not thinke himselfe to be blockish. What we may haue and know that we haue it without offence, do we then make offensiue when we take ioy and delight in hauing it? What difference betweene men enriched with all abundance of earthly and heauenly blessings, and Idolatrously disposed, but this, *the one takes pleasure in that which they haue, the other not?* If we may be pollest with beautie, strength, riches, power, knowledge, if we may be prime what we are euery way, if glad and ioyfull for our owne welfare, and in all this remayne vnblameable, neuertheleſſe some there are who granting thus much, doubt whether is may stand with humility to except those testimonies of praise and commendation, those titles, roomes, and other honours which the World yeeldeth as acknowledgements of some meh excellencies aboue others. For in as much as Christ hath said vnto those that are his; *The Kings of the Gentiles raigne ouer them, and they that beare rule ouer them are called gracious Lords: Be ye not so*; The Anabaptist hereupon vrgeth equalitie amongst Christians, as if all exercise of authoritie were nothing else but Heathenish Pride. Our Lord & Sauiour had no such meaning. But his Disciples feeding themselues with a vain imagination for the time, that the Messias of the World should in Ierusalem erect his Throne, and exercise dominion with great pompe and outward stateliness, aduanced in honour and terrene power aboue all the Princes of the Earth, began to thinke how with their Lords condition, their owne would also rise: that hauing left and forsaken all to follow him, their place about him should not be meane: and because they were many, it troubled them much, which of them should bee the greatest man. When sute was made for two by name, that of them one might sit at his right hand, and the other at his left, the rest beganne to stomacke, each taking it grieuously, that any should haue what all did affect. Their Lord and Master to correct this humour, turneth aside their cogitations from these vaine and fantasticall conceits, giuing them plainely to vnderstand that they did but deceiue themselues. His comming was not to purchase an earthly, but to bestow an heauenly Kingdome, wherein they (if any) shall bee greatest, whom vnfayned Humilitie maketh in this

World lowest, and least amongst others: *Yee are they which haue continued with mee in my temptations, therefore I leaue vnto you a Kingdome, as my Father hath appointed vnto me, that you may eat and drinke at my Table in my Kingdome, and sit on seates, and iudge the twelue Tribes of Israel.* But my Kingdome is no such Kingdome as yee dreame of. And therefore these hungry ambitious contentions are seemlier in Heathens then in you. Wherefore from Christs intent and purpose nothing further removed, then dislike of distinctions in titles and callings annexed for order sake vnto authoritie, whether it be Ecclesiastical or Ciuil. And when wee haue examined throughly what the nature of this vice is, no man knowing it, can be so simple, as not to see an vgly shape there of apparent many times in reiecting honours offered, then in the very exacting of them at the hands of men. For as *Iudas* his care for the poore was meere couetousnesse, and that franck-hearted wastfulnesse spoken of in the Gospell, thrift; so there is no doubt but that going in rags may be Pride; and Thrones bee challenged with vnfained humilitie.

Wee must goe further therefore and enter somewhat deeper, before wee can come to the Closet wherein this Poyson lyeth. There is in the heart of euery proud man, first, an errour of vnderstanding; a vaine opinion whereby he thinketh his owne excellencie, and by reason thereof, his worthinesse of estimation, regard, and honour, to be greater then in truth it is. This maketh him in all his affections accordingly to rayse vp himselfe, and by his inward affections his outward acts are fashioned. Whiche if you list to haue exemplified, you may either by calling to minde things spoken of them whom God himselfe hath in Scripture specially noted with this fault, or by presenting to your secret cogitations that which you daily behold in the odious lines and manners of high-minded men. It were too long to gather together so plentifull an harvest of examples in this kind as the sacred Scripture affordeth. That which wee drinke in at our Eares, doth not so piercingly enter, as that which the mind doth conceiue by sight. Is there any thing written concerning the *Assyrian* Monarch in the tenth of *Esay*, of his swelling mind, his haughtie looks, his great and presumptuous vaunts; *By the power of mine owne hand I haue done all things, and by mine owne wisdome I haue subdued the World?* Any thing concerning the Dames of Sion in the third of the Prophet *Esay*, of their stretched out necks, their immodest eyes, their Pageant-like, stately, and pompeous gate? Any thing concerning the practices of *Corah*, *Dathan*, and *Abiram*; of their impatience to liue in subiection, their mutinies, repining at lawfull authority, their grudging against their Superiours Ecclesiasticall and Ciuill? Any thing concerning Pride in any sort soeuer, which the present face of the World doth not as in a glasse represent to the view of all mens beholding? So that if Bookes, both prophane and holy, were all lost, as long as the manners of men retaine the state they are in, for him which obserueth how that when men haue once conceiued an ouer-weening of themselues, it maketh them in all their affections to swell, how deadly their hatred, how beastie their displeasure, how vnappeaseable their indignation and wrath is aboue other mens, in what manner they compose themselues to be as *Hesychastes*, without the compasse of all such Rules as common ore sort measured by, how the Oathes which religious

hearts

hearts doe tremble at, they affect as principall graces of ſpeech; what felicitie they take to ſee the enormitie of their crimes aboue the reach of Lawes and punishments; how much it delighteth them when they are able to appale with the cloudineſſe of their looke; how farre they exceed the termes wherewith mans nature ſhould be limited; how high they beare their heads ouer others; how they brow-beat all men which doe not receiue their Sentences as Oracles with marueious applauſe and approbation; how they looke vpon no man, but with an indirect countenance, nor heare any thing ſauing their owne praiſe, with patience, nor ſpeake without ſcornefulneſſe and diſdaine; how they vſe their ſeruants, as if they were beaſts, their inferiors as ſeruants, their equals as inferiors, and as for ſuperiors acknowledge none; how they admire themſelues as venerable, puiſſant, wiſe, circumſpect, prouident, euerie way great, taking all men beſides themſelues for cyphers, poore, inglorious, ſilly creatures, needleſſe burthens of the earth, off-scowrings, nothing: in a word, for him which marketh how irregular and exorbitant they are in all things, it can be no hard thing hereby to gather, that Pride is nothing but an inordinate elation of the mind, proceeding from a falſe conceit of mens excellencie in things honoured, which accordingly frameth alſo their deeds and behauiour, vnleſſe there be cunning to conceale it. For a foule ſcarre may be couered with a faire cloth. And as proud as *Lucifer*, may be in outward appearance lowly.

No man expecteth Grapes of Thiſtles: nor from a thing of ſo bad a nature, can other then ſuitable fruits be looked for. What harme ſoeuer in priuate families there groweth by diſobedience of children, ſtubbornneſſe of ſeruants, vntractableneſſe in them, who although they otherwiſe may rule, yet ſhould in conſideration of the imparitie of their ſexe be alſo ſubiect; what ſoeuer by ſtrife amongſt men combined in the fellowſhip of greater Societies, by tyranny of Potentates, ambition of Nobles, rebellion of Subiects in ciuill States; by Hereſies, Schiſmes, diuiſions in the Church; naming Pride, we name the Mother which brought them forth, and the only Nurſe that feedeth them. Giue me the hearts of all men humbled, and what is there that can ouerthrow or diſturbe the peace of the world? Wherein many things are the cauſe of much euill, but Pride of all.

To declaime of the ſwarmes of euils iſſuing out of Pride, is an eaſie labour. I rather wiſh that I could exactly preſcribe & perſwade effectually the remedies, whereby a ſore ſo grieuous might be cured, and the meanes how the pride of ſwelling minds might be taken downe. Whereunto ſo much we haue alreadie gained, that the euidence of the cauſe, which breedeth it, pointeth directly vnto the likelieſt and fitteſt helps to take it away: diſeaſes that come of fulneſſe, emptineſſe muſt remoue. Pride is not cured, but by abating the error which cauſeth the mind to ſwell. Then ſeeing that they ſwell by miſconceit of their owne excellency; for this cauſe all which tend to the beating downe of their pride, whether it be aduertiſement from men, or from God himſelfe chaſtiſement, it then maketh them ceaſe to be proud, when it cauſeth them to ſee their error in ouer-ſeeing the thing they were proud of. At this marke, *Iob*, in his Apologie vnto his eloquent friends, aymeth. For perceiuing how

how much they delighted to heare themselves talke, as if they had given their poore afflicted familiar a schooling of marvellous deepe and rare instruction, as if they had taught him more then all the world besides could acquaint him with, his answer was to this effect: Yea well as though you had confessed some greater matter, but as for that which you are delivered off, who knoweth it not? Is any man ignorant of these things? As the same make the blessed Apostle driveth; yee abound in all things, yee are rich, yee reigne, and would to Christ we did reigne with you. But boast not. For what have yee, or are yee of your selves? To this marke all those humble Confessions are referred, which have beene alwayes frequent in the mouthes of Saints, truely wading in the tryall of themselves: as that of the Prophet, *We are nothing but sinfulnesse and festered corruption*: our very light is darknesse, and our righteousnesse it selfe unrighteousnesse; that of Gregory, *Let no man ever put confidence in his owne deserts; Sordet in conspectu Iudicis, quod fulget in conspectu operantis*, In the sight of that dreadfull Iudge it is noysome, which in the doers iudgement maketh a beautifull shew: That of Augustine, *I adore thee, I blesse thee, Lord God of heaven, and Redeemer of the world, with all the power, ability, and strength of my heart and soule, for thy goodnes so wonderfully extended, not in regard of my merits, wherewith I ought to serve thee more due, but of thy meere unprocured benignity*. If these Fathers should be raised again from the dust, & have the bookes laid open before them wherein such sentences are found as this, *Workes, rather then the value, desert, price, and worth of the ioyes of the Kingdome of heaven; Heaven, in relation to our workes, as the very stipend, which the hyred Labourer covenanteth to have of him whose workes he doth, a thing equally and iustly answering unto the time and waight of his travailes, rather then to a voluntarie or bountifull gift*. If, I say, those reverend fore-rehearsed Fathers, whose bookes are so full of sentences, witnessing their Christian humilitie, should be raised from the dead, and behold with their eyes such things written; would they not plainly pronounce of the Authors of such writ, that they were fuller of *Lucifer* then of Christ, that they were proud-hearted men, and carried more swelling minds then sincerely and feelingly knowne Christianitie can tolerate?

Anno. Rhem. in 1. Cor. 3.

But as unruly children, with whom wholsome admonition prevaileth little, are notwithstanding brought to feare that ever after, which they have once well smarted for: so the mind which falleth not with instruction, yet under the rod of divine chastisement ceaseth to swell. If therefore the Prophet *David* instructed by good experience, have acknowledged, Lord, I was even at the point of cleane forgetting my selfe, and so straying from my right mind: but thy rod hath beene my reformer, it hath beene good for me, even as much as my soule is worth, that I have beene with sorrow troubled: if the blessed Apostle did need the corrosive of sharpe & bitter strokes, lest his heart should swell with too great abundance of heavenly Revelations, surely, upon us whatsoever God in this world doth, or shall inflict, it cannot seeme more then our pride doth exact, not only by way of revenge, but of remedie. So hard it is to cure a sore of such qualitie, as pride is, in as much as that which rooteth out other vices, causeth this, and (which is even aboute all conceit) if we were cleane from all spot and blemish, both of other faults of pride, the fall of

Angels

Angels doth make it almoſt a queſtion whether we might not need a preſeruatiue ſtill, leſt we ſhould haply waxe proud that we are not proud. What is Vertue, but a medicine; and Vice, but a wound? Yet we haue ſo often deeply wounded our ſelues with medicine, that God hath beene faine to make wounds medicinable, to cure by Vice where Vertue hath ſtricken, to ſuffer the iuſt man to fall, that being raiſed, he may be taught what power it was which vpheld him ſtanding. I am not afraid to affirme it boldly with S. *Auguſtine*, that men puffed vp through a proud opinion of their owne ſanctitie and holineſſe, receiue a benefit at the hands of God, and are aſſiſted with his grace, when with his grace they are not aſſiſted, but permitted, and that grieuouſly to tranſgreſſe, whereby as they were in ouer-great liking of themſelues ſupplanted, ſo the diſlike of that which did ſupplant them, may eſtabliſh them afterwards the ſurer. Aske the very ſoule of *Peter*, and it ſhall vndoubtedly make you it ſelfe this anſwer; My eager proteſtations made in the glorie of my ghoſtly ſtrength, I am aſhamed of, but thoſe Chryſtall teares wherewith my ſinne and weakeneſſe was bewayled, haue procured my endleſſe ioy, my ſtrength hath beene my raine, and my fall my ſtay.

FINIS.

FINIS.

A REMEDIE AGAINST SORROW AND FEARE,

Deliuered in a Funerall SERMON.

IOHN 14. 27.

Let not your hearts be troubled, neither feare.



His holy Apoſtles hauing gathered themſelues together by the ſpeciall appointment of Chriſt, and being in expectation to receiue from him ſuch inſtructions as they had beene accuſtomed with, were told that which they leaſt looked for, namely, That the time of his departure out of the world was now come. Whereupon they fall into conſideration, firſt, of the manifold benefits which his abſence ſhould berieue them off; and ſecondly, of the manifold euils which themſelues ſhould be ſubiect vnto, being ones bereaued of ſo gracious a Maſter and Patron. All this new conſideration ouerwhelmed their ſoules with heauineſſe: The other with feare. Their Lord and Sauiour, whoſe words had caſt downe their hearts, raiſeth them preſently by giuing with choſen ſentences of ſweet encouragement: *My deare, it is for your ouwne ſakes that I leaue the world. I know the affections of your hearts are tender, but if your loue were directed with that diſcreet and ſtaid iudgement which ſhould be in you, my ſpeech of leauing the world, and going vnto my Father, would not a little augment your ioy. Deſolate and comfortleſſe I will not leaue you, in Spirit I am with you to the worlds end, whether I be preſent or abſent, nothing ſhall euer take you out of theſe hands: my going is to take poſſeſſion of that, in your names, which is not onely for me, but alſo for you prepared, where I am, you ſhall be. In the meane while, My peace I giue vnto you, as the world giueth, giue I vnto you: Let not your hearts be troubled, neither feare.* The former part of which ſentence hauing (as hee ſaw) ſufficiently wrought vpon them, this vnlooked for occaſion to open the latter part thereof lies, (I will not looke for, but ſo God diſpoſeth the prayers of them that truſt in him) I hartily beſeech him that the thing which hee hath alreadie wrought by his priuie decree, may through his gracious goodneſſe turne vnto your comfort. Conſider that

Our

Our nature coueteth preseruation from things hurtfull. Hurtfull things being present, doe breed [illegible] our care to auoide them. Our Sauiour to abate the one, speaketh thus vnto his Disciples: *Let not your hearts bee troubled*, and to moderate the other, addeth *Feare not*. Griefe and heauinesse in the presence of sensible euils cannot but trouble the minds of men. It may therefore seeme that Christ required a thing impossible. Be not troubled. Why, how could they choose? But we must note this, being naturall and therefore simply not reprouueable, it is vs good or bad according to the causes for which we are grieued, or the measure of our griefe. It is not my meaning to speake so largely of this affection, as to go ouer all particulars whereby men doe one way or other offend in it, but to teach it so farre onely as it may cause the very Apostles equals to swarue. Our griefe and heauinesse therefore is reprouueable, sometime in respect of the cause from whence, sometime in regard of the measure whereunto it groweth.

When Christ the life of the world was led vnto cruell death, there followed a number of people and women, which women bewayled much his heauie case. It was naturall compassion which caused them, where they saw vndeserued miseries, there to powre forth vnrestrained teares. Nor was this reproued. But in such readinesse to lament where they lesse needed, their blindnesse in not discerning that for which they ought much rather to haue mourned, this our Sauiour a little toucheth, putting them in mind that the teares which were wasted for him, might better haue been spent vpon themselues. *Daughters of Ierusalem, weepe not for me, weepe for your selues and for your children.* It is not as the Stoicks haue imagined, a thing vnseemely for a wise man to be touched with griefe of mind, but to be sorrowfull where we cause haue, and where we should lament, there to laugh, this argueth our small wisedome. Againe, when the Prophet *Dauid* confesseth thus of himselfe, *I grieued to see the great prosperitie of godlesse men how they flourish and get vnto aught*, Psal. 73. Himselfe hereby openeth both our common and his speciall imperfection, whom this cause should not haue made so pensiue. To grieue at this, is to grieue where we should not, because this griefe doth rise from errour. We erre when we grieue at wicked mens impunitie and prosperitie, because their estate being rightly discerned, they neither prosper nor goe vnpunished. It may seeme a paradoxe, it is a truth, that no wicked mans estate is prosperous, fortunate, or happie. For what though they bleese themselues and thinke their happinesse great? Haue not franticke persons many times a great opinion of their owne wisedome? It may be that such as they thinke themselues, others also doe accompt them. But what others? Surely such as themselues are. Truth and reason discerneth farre otherwise of them. Vnto whom the Iewes with all prosperitie, vnto them the phrase of their speech is to wish peace. Seeing then the name of peace conteineth in it all parts of true happinesse, when the Prophet shieth plainely that the wicked haue no peace, how can we thinke them to haue any part of other then vainely imagined felicitie? What wise man did euer accompt finches happie? If wicked men were wise, they would cease to be wicked. Their iniquitie therefore proueth their folly, how can we stand in doubt of their miserie? They abound in those things which all men

desire.

deſire. A poore happineſſe to haue good things in poſſeſſion, *A man to whom God hath giuen riches and treaſures and honour, ſo that he wanteth nothing for his ſoule of all that it deſireth, yet yes God giueth him not the power to eat thereof:* ſuch a felicitie *Saloweon* eſteemeth but as a vanity, a thing of nothing. If ſuch things adde nothing to mens happineſſe where they are not vſed, ſurely wicked men that vſe them ill, the more they haue, the more wretched. Of their proſperitie therefore we ſee what we are to thinke. Touching their impunitie, the ſame is likewiſe but ſuppoſed. They are oftener plagued then wee are aware of. The pangs they feele are not alwayes written in their fore-heads. Though wickednes be ſugar in their mouthes, and wantonneſſe as Oyle to make them looke with cheereſull countenance, neuertheles if their hearts were diſcloſed, perhaps their glittering eſtate would not greatly beeneuied. The voices that haue broken out from ſome of them, *O that God had giuen me a heart ſenſleſſe like the flint in the rocks of ſtone!* which as it can taſte no pleaſure, ſo it feeleth no woe; theſe and the like ſpeeches are ſurely tokens of the curſe which *Zophar* in the Booke of *Iob* powreth vpon the head of the impious man, *He ſhall ſucke the gall of Aſps, and the Vipers tongue ſhall ſlay him.* If this ſeeme light becauſe it is ſecret, ſhall we thinke they goe vnpuniſhed, becauſe no apparent plague is preſently ſeene vpon them? The iudgements of God doe not alwayes follow crimes as Thunder doth Lightning, but ſometimes the ſpace of many Ages comming betweene. When the Sunne hath ſhined faire the ſpace of ſixe dayes vpon their Tabernacle, wee know not what Cloudes the ſeuenth may bring. And when their puniſhment doth come, let them make their account in the greatnes of their ſufferings, to pay the intereſt of that reſpect which hath beene giuen them. Or if they chance to eſcape cleerely in this World, which they ſeldome doe, in the Day when the Heauens ſhall ſhriuell as a Scrole, and the mountaines moue as frighted men out of their places, what Caue ſhall receiue them? what Mountaine or Rock ſhall they get by intreatie to fall vpon them? What couert to hide them from that wrath which they ſhall be neither able to abide nor auoyde? No mans miſerie therefore being greater then theirs whoſe impiety is moſt fortunate, much more cauſe there is for them to bewaile their owne infelicitie, then for others to be troubled with their proſperous and happie eſtate, as if the hand of the Almightie did not or would not touch them. For theſe cauſes and the like vnto theſe therefore be not troubled. Eccl. 6. 2.

Now though the cauſe of our heauineſſe be iuſt, yet may not our affections herein be yeelded vnto with too much indulgencie and fauour. The griefe of compaſſion, whereby we are touched with the feeling of other mens woes, is of all other leaſt dangerous. Yet this is a let vnto ſundry duties, by this wee are to ſpare ſometimes where we ought to ſtrike. The griefe which our owne ſufferings doe bring, what temptations haue not riſen from it? What great aduantage Satan hath taken euen by the godly griefe of hartie contrition for ſinnes committed againſt God, the neere approching of ſo many afflicted ſoules, whom the conſcience of ſinne hath brought vnto the very brinke of extreme deſpaire, doth but too abundantly ſhew. Theſe things whereſoeuer they fall, cannot but trouble and moleſt the minde. Whether wee bee therefore mooued vainely with that which ſeemeth euill and is not; or

haue iuſt cauſe of griefe, being preſſed indeed with thoſe things which are grieuous, our Sauiours leſſon is touching the one, Be not troubled, nor ouer-troubled for the other. For though to haue no feeling of that which meerely concerneth vs were ſtupiditie, neuertheleſſe, ſeeing that as the Author of our Saluation was himſelfe conſecrated by affliction, ſo the way which wee are to follow him by, is not ſtrewed with roſhes, but ſet with thornes, bee it neuer ſo hard to learne wee muſt learne to ſuffer with patience, euen that which ſeemeth almoſt impoſſible to be ſuffered, that in the houre when God ſhall call vs vnto our tryall, and mixe this honey of peace and pleaſure wherewith wee ſwell in that gall and bitternes which fleſh doth ſhrinke to taſte of, nothing may cauſe vs in the troubles of our ſoules to ſtorme and grudge and repine at God, but euery heart be enabled with diuinely inſpired courage to incalcate vnto it ſelfe, *Be not troubled*, and in thoſe laſt and greateſt conflicts to remember it, that nothing may be ſo ſharpe and bitter to be ſuffered, but that ſtill we our ſelues may giue our ſelues this encouragement, *Euen learne alſo patience, O my ſoule.*

Naming patience, I name that vertue which onely hath power to ſtay our ſoules from being ouer-exceſſiuely troubled: a vertue, wherein if euer any, ſurely that ſoule had good experience, which extremitie of paines hauing chaſed out of the Tabernacle of this fleſh, Angels, I nothing doubt, haue carried into the boſome of her father *Abraham*. The death of the Saints of God is precious in his ſight. And ſhall it ſeeme vnto vs ſuperfluous at ſuch times as theſe are, to heare in what manner they haue ended their liues? The Lord himſelfe hath not diſdayned ſo exactly to regiſter in the Booke of life, after what ſort his Seruants haue cloſed vp their dayes on earth, that he deſcendeth euen to their very meaneſt affaires, what meate they haue longed for in their ſickneſſe, what they haue ſpoken vnto their Children, Kinſfolke, and Friends, whom they haue willed their dead Carkaſſes to be laid, how they haue framed their Wils and Teſtaments, yea the very turning of their faces to this ſide or that, the ſetting of their eyes, the degrees whereby their naturall breath hath departed from them, their cryes, their groanes, their pantings, breathings, and laſt gaſpings, he hath moſt ſolemnely commended vnto the memorie of all Generations. The care of the liuing both to liue and to dye well muſt needes bee ſomewhat increaſed, when they know that their departure ſhall not be folded vp in ſilence, but the eares of many bee made acquainted with it. Againe, when they heare how mercifully God hath dealt with others in the houre of their laſt need, beſides the prayſe which they giue to God, and the ioy which they haue or ſhould haue by reaſon of their fellowſhip and communion of Saints, is not their hope alſo much confirmed againſt the day of their owne diſſolution? Finally, the ſound of theſe things doth not ſo poſſe the eares of them that are moſt looſe and diſſolute of life, but it cauſeth them ſometime or other to wiſh in their hearts, *O that we might dye the death of the righteous, and that our end might be like his!* Howbeit, becauſe to ſpend herein many words, would be to ſtrike euen as many wounds into their minds whom I rather wiſh to comfort, therefore concerning this vertuous Gentlewoman, only this little I ſpeake, and that of knowledge, *She liued a Doue, and dyed a Lambe.* And if amongſt

mongſt ſo many vertues, heartie deuotion towards God, towards pouertie tender compaſſion, motherly affection towards ſeruants, towards friends euen ſeruiceable kindneſſe, milde behaviour, and harmeleſſe meaning towards all; if where ſo many vertues were eminent, any be worthy of ſpeciall mention, I wiſh her deareſt friends of that ſexe to be her neereſt followers in two things: *Silence*, ſauing only where dutie did exact ſpeech, and *Patience*, euen then when extremitie of paines did enforce griefe. *Bleſſed are they which dye in the Lord.* And concerning the dead which are bleſſed, let not the hearts of any liuing be ouer-charged, with griefe ouer-troubled.

Touching the latter affection of feare which reſpecteth euils to come, as the other which we haue ſpoken of doth preſent euils; firſt, in the nature thereof it is plaine, that we are not of euery future euill afraid. Perceiue wee not how they, whoſe tenderneſſe ſhrinketh at the leaſt raſe of a Needles point, doe kiſſe the Sword that pierceth their Soules quite through? If euery euill did cauſe feare, ſinne, becauſe it is ſinne, would be feared; whereas properly ſinne is not feared as ſinne, but onely as hauing ſome kind of harme annexed. To teach men to auoyd ſinne, it had beene ſufficient for the Apoſtle to ſay, Flye it. But to make them afraid of committing ſinne, becauſe the naming of ſinne ſufficed not, therefore he addeth further, that it is as a *Serpent which ſtingeth the ſoule.* Againe, be it that ſome noxious or hurtfull things be towards vs, muſt feare of neceſſitie follow hereupon? Not except thoſe hurtfull things do threaten vs either with deſtruction or vexation, and that ſuch as wee haue neither a conceit of abilitie to reſiſt, nor of vtter impoſſibilitie to auoyde. That which we know our ſelues able to withſtand, we feare not, adde that which we know we are vnable to deferre or diminiſh, or any way auoyd, we ceaſe to feare, wee giue our ſelues ouer to beare and ſuſtaine it. The euill therefore which is feared, muſt be in our perſwaſion vnable to be reſiſted when it commeth, yet not vtterly impoſſible for a time in whole or in part to bee ſhunned. Neyther doe we much feare ſuch euils, except they be imminent and neere at hand, nor if they be neere, except we haue an opinion that they be ſo. When we haue once conceiued an opinion, or apprehended an imagination of ſuch euils preſt and readie to inuade vs, becauſe they are hurtfull vnto our nature, wee feele in our ſelues a kind of abhorring, becauſe they are thought neere, yet not preſent, our nature ſeeketh forthwith how to ſhift and prouide for it ſelfe; becauſe they are euils which cannot be reſiſted, therefore ſhe doth not prouide to withſtand, but to ſhun and auoyde. Hence it is, that in extreme feare the Mother of life contracting her ſelfe, auoyding as much as may be the reach of euill, and drawing the heate together with the ſpirits of the bodie to her, leaueth the outward parts cold, pale, weake, feeble, vnapt to performe the functions of life, as wee ſee in the feare of *Balthaſar* King of *Babel*. By this it appeareth, that feare is nothing elſe but a perturbation of the minde through an opinion of ſome imminent euill, threatning the deſtruction, or great annoyance of our nature, which to ſhun, it doth contract and deiect it ſelfe.

Now becauſe not in this place onely, but other where often we heare it repeated *Feare not*, it is by ſome made a long queſtion, *whether a man may feare deſtruction or vexation, without ſinning?* First, the reproofe wherewith Chriſt

checketh his Disciples more then once, *O men of little faith, wherefore are yee afraid?* Secondly, the punishment threatned in the twenty one of the *Reuelation*, to wit, the Lake, and fire, and brimstone, not onely to Murtherers, vncleane persons, Sorcerers, Idolaters, Lyers, but also to the fearefull and faint-hearted, this seemeth to argue that fearefulnesse cannot but be sinne. On the contrarie side we see, that He which neuer felt motion vnto sinne, had of this affection more then a slight feeling. How cleere is the euidence of the Spirit, that *in the dayes of his flesh hee offered vp Prayers and Supplications with strong cries and teares vnto him that was able to saue him from death, and was also heard in that which hee feared?* Heb. 5. 7. Whereupon it followeth, that feare in it selfe is a thing not sinfull. For is not feare a thing naturall, and for mens preseruation necessary, implanted in vs by the prouident and most gracious Giuer of all good things, to the end that wee might not runne head-long vpon those mischiefes wherewith we are not able to encounter, but vse the remedie of shunning those euils which we haue not abilitie to withstand? Let that people therefore which receiue a benefit by the length of their Princes dayes, that Father or Mother that reioyceth to see the Off-spring of their flesh grow like greene and pleasant Plants, let those children that would haue their Parents, those men that would gladly haue their friends and brethrens dayes prolonged on earth, (as there is no naturall-hearted man but gladly would) let them blesse the Father of lights, as in other things, so euen in this, that he hath giuen man a fearefull heart, and setled naturally that affection in him, which is a preseruation against so many wayes of death. Feare then (o it selfe being meere nature, cannot in it selfe bee sinne, which sinne is not nature, but thereof an accessary depriuation.

But in the matter of feare we may sinne, and doe, two wayes. If any mans danger be great, theirs greatest, that haue put the feare of danger farthest from them. Is there any estate more fearefull then that Babylonians Strumpets, that sitteth vpon the tops of seuen hils, glorying and vaunting, *I am a Queene? &c. Reuel.* 18. 7. How much better and happier they, whose estate hath beene alwayes as his who speaketh after this sort of himselfe, *Lord, from my youth haue I borne thy yoke?* They which sit at continuall ease, and are setled in the lees of their securitie, looke vpon them, view their countenance, their speech, their gesture, their deedes; put them in feare, O God, saith the Prophet, that so they may know themselues to be but men, Wormes of the Earth, dust and ashes, fraile, corruptible, feeble things. To shake of securitie therefore, and to breed feare in the hearts of mortall men, so many admonitions are vsed concerning the power of euils which beset them, so many threatnings of calamities, so many descriptions of things threatned, and those so liuely, to the end they may leaue behind them a deepe impression of such as haue force to keepe the heart continually waking. All which do shew, that wee are to stand in feare of nothing more, then the extremitie of not fearing.

When feare hath deliuered vs from that Pit, wherein they are sunke that haue put far from them the euill day; that haue made a league with death, and haue said *Tush, we shall feele no harme*; it standeth vs vpon to take heed it cast vs not into that, wherein soules destitute of all hope are plunged. For our direction, to anoyde, as much as may be, both extremities, that wee may know as a

Ship-

Shipmaſter by his Carde, how farre we are wide, either on the one ſide or on the other; we muſt note that in a Chriſtian man there is firſt, nature, Secondly, corruption peruerting Nature; Thirdly, grace correcting, and amending corruption. In feare all theſe haue their ſeuerall operations. Nature teacheth ſimply, to wiſh preſeruation and auoydance of things dreadful, for which cauſe one Sauiour himſelfe prayeth, and that often; Father, if it be *poſſible*. In which caſes, corrupt natures ſuggeſtions are, for the ſafetie of temporall life, not to ſticke at things excluding from eternall: wherein how farre euen the beſt may bee led, the chiefeſt Apoſtles frailtie teacheth. Were it not therefore for ſuch cogitations, as on the contrarie ſide grace and faith miniſtreth, ſuch as that of Iob, *Though God kill me*, that of Paul, *Scio, cui credidi*, I know him on whom I doe relye, ſmall euils would ſoone be able to ouer-whelme euen the beſt of vs. *A Wiſeman*, ſaith Salomon, *doth ſee a plague comming, and hideth himſelfe*. It is nature which teacheth a Wiſeman, in feare to hide himſelfe, but grace and faith doth teach him where. Fooles care not where they hide their heads. But where ſhall a Wiſeman hide himſelfe, when he feareth a plague comming? Where ſhould the frighted Childe hide his head, but in the boſome of his louing Father? Where a Chriſtian, but vnder the ſhadow of the wings of Chriſt his Sauiour? Come, my people, ſaith God, in the Prophet, *Enter into thy Chamber, hide thy ſelfe, &c. Eſay* 26. But becauſe we are in danger like chaſed Birds, like Doues that ſeeke, and cannot ſee the reſting holes that are right before them, therefore our Sauiour giueth his Diſciples theſe encouragements beforehand, that feare might neuer ſo amaze them, but that alwayes they might remember, that whatſoeuer euils at any time did beſet them, to him they ſhould ſtill repaire for comfort, counſell, and ſuccour. For their aſſurance whereof, his *Peace* he *gaue them*, his *Peace* he *left vnto them*, *not ſuch peace as the World* offereth, by whom his name is neuer ſo much pretended, as when deepeſt treachery is meant, but *Peace which paſſeth all vnderſtanding*, *Peace* that bringeth with it all happineſſe, *Peace* that continueth for euer and euer with them that haue it. This Peace God the Father grant, for his Sonnes ſake, vnto whom with the Holy Ghoſt, three Perſons, one Eternall, and Euer-liuing God, be all honour, glorie, and praiſe, now, and for euer.

Amen.

FINIS.

FINIS.

A LEARNED AND COMFORTABLE SERMON OF THE CERTAINTIE AND PERPETUITIE OF FAITH in the Elect; especially of the Prophet HABAKKUK's Faith.

HABAK. 1. 4.

Whether the Prophet Habakkuk, by admitting this cogitation into his mind,
The Law doth faile, *did thereby shew himself to be vnbeleeuing.*

WE haue seene in the opening of this clause, which concerneth the weakneſſe of the Prophets faith, firſt, what things they are whereunto the faith of ſound beleeuers doth aſſent: ſecondly, wherefore all men aſſent not thereunto: and thirdly, why they that doe, doe it many times with ſmall aſſurance. Now becauſe nothing can be ſo truely ſpoken, but through miſ-vnderſtanding it may be depraued; therefore to preuent, if it be poſſible, all miſconſtruction in this cauſe, where a ſmall error cannot riſe but with great danger, it is perhaps needfull ere we come to the fourth point, that ſomething be added to that which hath beene already ſpoken concerning the third.

That meere naturall men doe neither know nor acknowledge the things of God, we doe not marueil, becauſe they are ſpiritually to be diſcerned: but they in whoſe hearts the light of grace doth ſhine, they that are taught of God, why are they ſo weake in faith? Why is their aſſenting to the Law ſo ſcrupulous, ſo much mingled with feare and wauering? It ſeemeth ſtrange that euer they ſhould imagine the Law to faile. It cannot ſeeme ſtrange if we waigh the reaſon. If the things which we beleeue be conſidered in themſelues, it may truely be ſaid, that Faith is more certaine then any Science. That which we know either by ſenſe, or by infallible demonſtration, is not ſo certaine as the principles, articles, and concluſions of Chriſtian faith. Concerning which we muſt note, that there is a *certaintie* of *euidence*, and a *certaintie* of *adherence*. *Certaintie* of *euidence* we cal that, when the mind doth aſſent vnto this or that, not becauſe it is true in it ſelfe, but becauſe the truth is cleere, becauſe it is manifeſt to vs. Of things in themſelues moſt certaine, except they be alſo moſt euident, our perſwaſion is not ſo aſſured, as it is of things more euident, although in themſelues they be leſſe certaine. It is as ſure, if not ſurer, that there be ſpirits as that there be men: but wee be more aſſured of theſe then of them, becauſe theſeare more euident. The truth of ſome things is ſo euident, that no man which heareth them, can doubt of them: as when we heare that *a part of anything is leſſe then the whole*, the mind is conſtrained to ſay, This is true. If it were ſo in matters of faith, then as all men haue equall certaintie of this, ſo no beleeuer ſhould be more ſcrupulous and doubtfull then another. But we find

the

the contrarie. The Angels and Spirits of the righteous in heauen, haue certainetie most euident of things beleeued: but this they haue by the light of glorie. That which we see by the light of grace, though it be indeed more certaine, yet is it not so euidently certaine, as that which selfe or the light of nature will not suffer a man to doubt of. Proofes are vaine and friuolous, except they be more certaine then is the thing proued: and do we not see how the Spirit euery where in the Scripture proueth matters of faith, laboureth to confirme vs in the thing which we beleeue, by things whereof we haue sensible knowledge? I conclude therefore that we haue lesse certaintie of euidence concerning things beleeued, then concerning sensible or naturally perceiued. Of these who doth doubt at any time? Of them at sometime who doubteth not? I will not here alledge the sundrie confessions of the perfectest, that haue liued vpon earth, concerning their great imperfections this way; which if I did, I should dwel too long vpon a matter, sufficiently known by euery faithfull man that doth know himselfe.

The other which we call the *certaintie of adherence*, is when the heart doth cleaue and sticke vnto that which it doth beleeue. This certaintie is greater in vs then the other. The reason is this. The faith of a Christian doth apprehend the words of the Law, the promises of God, not only as true, but also as good: and therefore euen then when the euidence which he hath of the truth, is so small, that it greeueth him to feele his weakenesse in assenting thereto; yet is there in him such a sure adherence vnto that which he doth but faintly and fearefully beleeue, that his Spirit hauing once truly tasted the heauenly sweetnesse thereof, all the world is not able quite and cleane to remoue him from it: but he striueth with himselfe to hope against all reason of beleeuing, being settled with *Iob* vpon this vnmouueable resolution, *Though God kill me, I will not giue ouer trusting in him.* For why? This lesson remaineth for euer imprinted in him, *It is good for me to cleaue vnto God, Psal.73.*

Now the minds of all men being so darkned, as they are with the foggie dampe of originall corruption, it cannot be that any mans heart liuing should be either so enlightned in the knowledge, or so established in the loue of that wherein his saluation standeth as to be perfect, neither doubting nor shrinking at all. If any such were, what doth let why that man should not be iustified by his owne inherent righteousnesse? For righteousnesse inherent, being perfect, will iustifie. And perfect faith is a part of perfect righteousnesse inherent; yea a principall part, the roote and the mother of all the rest: so that if the fruit of euery tree be such as the roote is, faith being perfect, as it is if it be not at all mingled with distrust and feare, what is there to exclude other Christian vertues from the like perfections? And then what need we the righteousnesse of Christ? His garment is superfluous; we may be honourably clothed with our owne Robes, if it be thus. But let them beware who challenge to themselues a strength which they haue not, lest they lose the comfortable support of that weakenesse which indeed they haue.

Some shew, although no soundnesse of ground there is, which may be alledged for defence of this supposed perfection in certaintie touching matters of our faith: as first, that *Abraham* did beleeue and doubted not: secondly, that the Spirit which God hath giuen vs to no other end, but only to assure vs

that

that we are the ſonnes of God; to embolden vs to call vpon him as our Father, to open our eyes and to make the truth of things beleeued euident vnto our minds, is much mightier in operation then the common light of nature, whereby we diſcerne ſenſible things: wherefore we muſt needs be more ſure of that we beleeue, then of that we ſee; wee muſt needs be more certaine of the mercies of God in Chriſt Ieſus, when we are of the light of the Sunne when it ſhineth vpon our faces. To that of ABRAHAM, *He did not doubt*, I anſwer, that this *negation* doth not exclude all feare, all doubting; but only that which cannot ſtand with true faith. It freeth *Abraham* from doubting through *infidelitie*, not from doubting through *infirmitie*; from the doubting of *vnbeleeuers*, not of *weake beleeuers*; from ſuch a doubting as that whereof the Prince of Samaria is attainted, who hearing the promiſe of ſudden plentie in the middeſt of extreme dearth, anſwered, *Though the Lord would make windowes in heauen, were it poſſible ſo to come to paſſe?* But that *Abraham* was not void of all doubting, what need wee any other proofe then the plaine euidence of his owne words? *Geneſ.* 17. *v.* 17. the reaſon which is taken from the power of the Spirit were effectuall, if God did worke like a naturall Agent, as the fire doth inflame, and the Sunne inlighten, according to the vttermoſt abilitie which they haue to bring forth their effects. But the incomprehenſible wiſedome of God doth limit the effects of his power, to ſuch a meaſure as ſeemeth beſt vnto himſelfe. Wherefore he worketh that certaintie in all, which ſufficeth abundantly to their ſaluation in the life to come; but in none ſo great as attaineth in this life vnto perfection. Euen ſo, O Lord, it hath pleaſed thee, euen ſo it is beſt and fitteſt for vs, that feeling ſtill our owne infirmities, we may no longer breathe, then pray, *Adiuua Domine, Helpe, Lord, our incredulitie.* Of the third queſtion, this I hope, will ſuffice, being added vnto that which hath beene thereof alreadie ſpoken. The fourth queſtion reſteth, & ſo an end of this point.

1. *King.* 7. 2.

That which commeth laſt of all in this firſt branch, to be conſidered concerning the weakneſs of the Prophets faith: *Whether he did by this very thought*, The Law doth faile, *quench the ſpirit, fall from faith, and ſhew himſelfe an vnbeleeuer or no.* The queſtion is of moment, the repoſe and tranquillitie of Infinite ſoules doth depend vpon it. The Prophets caſe is the caſe of many, which way ſoeuer wee caſt for him; the ſame way it paſſeth for all others. If in him this cogitation did extinguiſh grace, why the like thoughts in vs ſhould not take the like effect, there is no cauſe. Foraſmuch therefore as the matter is waightie, deare, and precious, which wee haue in hand, it behoueth vs with ſo much the greater charineſſe to wade through it, taking ſpecial heed both what we build, and whereon we build: that if our building be pearle, our foundation be not ſtubble; if the doctrine wee teach be full of comfort and conſolation, the ground whereupon we gather it be ſure: otherwiſe we ſhall not ſaue but deceiue both our ſelues and others. In this we know we are not deceiued, neither can wee deceiue you, when wee teach that the faith whereby yee are ſanctified cannot faile; it did not in the Prophet, it ſhall not in you. If it be ſo, let the difference be ſhewed betweene the condition of vnbeleeuers and his, in this or in the like imbecillitie and weakneſs. There was in *Habbak.* that which *S. Iohn* doth call the *ſeed of God*, meaning thereby, the *firſt grace* which God powreth into the hearts of them that are incorporated into Chriſt; which hauing

uing receiued, if becauſe it is an aduerſarie vnto ſinne, we doe therefore thinke we ſinne not both otherwiſe, and alſo by diſtruſtfull and doubtfull apprehending of that, which we ought ſtedfaſtly to beleeue, ſurely, we doe but deceiue our ſelues. Yet they which are of God, doe not ſinne either in this, or in any thing any ſuch ſinne as doth quite extinguiſh grace, cleane cut them off from Chriſt Ieſus: becauſe the *ſeed of God* abideth in them, and doth ſhield them from receiuing any irremediable wound. Their faith when it is at ſtrongeſt is but weake; yet euen then when it is at the weakeſt, ſo ſtrong, that vtterly it neuer faileth, it neuer periſheth altogether, no not in them, who thinke it extinguiſhed in themſelues. There are, for whoſe ſakes I dare not deale ſlightly in this cauſe, ſparing that labour which muſt be beſtowed to make it plaine. Men in like agonies vnto this of the Prophet *Habakkuks*, are through extremitie of griefe many times in iudgement ſo confounded, that they find not themſelues in themſelues. For that which dwelleth in their hearts they ſeeke, they make diligent ſearch and enquirie. It abideth, it worketh in them, yet ſtill they aske where? Still they lament as for a thing which is paſt finding: they mourne as *Rachel*, and refuſe to be comforted, as if that were not, which indeed is; and as if that which is not, were; as if they did not beleeue when they doe; and as if they did deſpaire when they doe not. Which in ſome, I grant, is but a melancholy paſſion proceeding only from that dejection of mind, the cauſe whereof is in the bodie, and by bodily meanes can be taken away. But where there is no ſuch bodily cauſe, the mind is not lightly in this moode, but by ſome of theſe three occaſions. One; that iudging by compariſon either with other men or with themſelues, at ſome other time more ſtrong, they thinke imperfection to be a plaine depriuation, weakeneſſe to be vtter want of faith. Another cauſe is, they often miſtake one thing for another. Saint *Paul* wiſhing well to the Church of Rome, prayeth for them after this ſort: *The God of hope fill you with all ioy of beleeuing*. Hence an error groweth, when men in heauineſſe of ſpirit ſuppoſe they lacke faith, becauſe they find not the ſugered ioy and delight which indeed doth accompany faith, but ſo as a ſeparable accident; as a thing that may be remooued from it; yea, there is a cauſe why it ſhould be remooued. The light would neuer be ſo acceptable, were it not for that vſuall entercourſe of darkeneſſe. Too much hony doth turne to gall, and too much ioy euen ſpiritually would make vs wantons. Happier a great deale is that mans caſe, whoſe ſoule by inward deſolation is humbled, then he whoſe heart is through abundance of ſpirituall delight lifted vp, and exalted aboue meaſure. Better it is ſometimes to goe downe into the pit with him, who beholding darkneſſe, and bewailing the loſſe of inward ioy and conſolation, cryeth from the bottome of the loweſt hell, *My God, my God, why haſt thou forſaken me?* then continually to walke arme in arme with Angels, to ſit, as it were, in *Abrahams* boſome, and to haue no thought, but cogitation, *I thanke my God, it is not with me as it is with other men*. No, God will haue them that ſhall walke in light, to feele now and then what it is to ſit in the ſhadow of death. A grieued ſpirit therefore is no argument of a faithleſſe mind. A third occaſion of men miſ-iudging themſelues, as if they were faithleſſe when they are not, is; They faſten their cogitations vpon the diſtruſtfull ſuggeſtions of the fleſh, whereof finding great abundance in themſelues, they gather thereby,

Surely,

Surely, vnbeliefe hath full dominion, it hath taken plenarie possession of me; if I were faithfull, it could not be thus. Not marking the motions of the Spirit and of Faith, because they lye buried and over-whelmed with the contrarie: which notwithstanding as the blessed Apostle doth acknowledge, that the *Spirit groneth*, and that God heareth when we doe not; so there is no doubt, but that our faith may haue, and hath her priuie operations secret to vs, in whom, yet knowne to him by whom they are. Tell this poore man that hath a mind deceiued by too hard an opinion of himselfe, and it doth but augment his griefe: he hath his answer readie; Will you make me thinke otherwise then I find, then I feele in my selfe? I haue throughly considered and exquisitely sifted all the corners of my heart, and I see what there is: never seeke to perswade me against my knowledge, *I doe not, I know, I doe not beleeue.* Well, to fauour them a little in their weakenesse: let that be granted which they doe imagine; be it that they are faithlesse and without beliefe. But are they not grieued for their vnbeliefe? They are. Doe they not wish it might, and also striue that it may be otherwise? We know they doe. Whence commeth this, but from a secret loue and liking which they haue of those things that are beleeued? No man can loue things which in his owne opinion are not. And if they thinke those things to be, which they shew that they loue, when they desire to beleeue them; then must it needs be, that by desiring to beleeue, they proue themselues true beleeuers. For without faith, no man thinketh that things beleeued are. Which argument all the subtiltie of infernall powers will neuer be able to dissolue. The Faith therefore of true Beleeuers, though it haue many and grieuous down-falls, yet doth it still continue inuincible; it conquereth and recouereth it selfe in the end. The dangerous conflicts whereunto it is subiect, are not able to preuayle against it. The Prophet *Habbakuk* remained faithfull in weakenesse, though weake in faith. It is true, such is our weake and wauering nature, that we haue no sooner receiued grace, but we are readie to fall from it: wee haue no sooner giuen our assent to the Law that it cannot faile, but the next conceit which we are readie to imbrace, is, that it may, and that it doth faile. Though wee find in our selues a most willing heart to cleaue vnseparably vnto God, euen so farre as to thinke vnfaynedly with PETER, *Lord, I am readie to goe with thee into Prison and to death*: yet how soone and how easily, vpon how small occasions are we changed, if we be but a while let alone and left vnto our selues? The Galatians to day for their sakes which teach them the truth in Christ, content if need were to plucke out their owne eyes, and the next day readie to plucke out theirs which taught them. The loue of the Angel to the Church of Ephesus, how greatly enflamed, and how quickly slaked? The higher we flow, the neerer we are vnto an ebbe, if men be respected as meere men, according to the wonted course of their alterable inclination, without the heauenly support of the Spirit. Againe, the desire of our ghostly Enemie is so vncredible, and his meanes so forcible to ouer-throw our faith, that whom the blessed Apostle knew betrothed & made hand-fast vnto Christ, to them he could not write but with great trembling: *I am iealous ouer you with a godly iealousie, for I haue prepared you to one Husband, to present you a pure Virgin vnto Christ: but I feare, lest as the Serpent beguiled* Eve *through his subtiltie, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicitie which is in Christ.*

The

The ſimplicitie of faith which is in Chriſt, taketh the naked promiſe of God, his bare Word, and on that it reſteth. This ſimplicitie the Serpent laboureth conſtantly to peruert, corrupting the mind with many imaginations of repugnancie and contrarietie betweene the promiſe of God, and thoſe things which ſenſe or experience, or ſome other fore-conceiued perſwaſion hath imprinted. The Word of the promiſe of God vnto his people is; *I will not leaue thee, nor forſake thee*: vpon this the ſimplicitie of Faith reſteth, and it is not afraid of famine. But marke how the ſubtiltie of Satan did corrupt the minds of that rebellious generation, whoſe ſpirits were not faithful vnto God. They beheld the deſolate face of the Deſart in which they were, and by the wiſedome of their ſenſe, concluded the promiſe of God to be but fully: *Can God prepare a Table in the wilderneſſe?* The Word of the promiſe to *Sara* was, *Thou ſhalt beare a Sonne*. Faith is ſimple and doubteth not of it: but Satan, to corrupt this ſimplicitie of faith, entangleth the mind of the Woman with an argument, drawne from common experience to the contrarie: *A woman that is old*, SARA, *now to be acquainted againe with forgotten paſſions of youth?* The Word of the promiſe of God by *Moſes* and the Prophets, made the Sauiour of the world ſo apparent vnto *Philip*, that his ſimplicitie could conceiue no other Meſſias, then Ieſus of Nazareth the Sonne of *Ioſeph*. But to ſtay *Nathaniel*, left being inuited to come and ſee, he ſhould alſo beleeue, and ſo be ſpeed: the ſubtiltie of Satan caſteth a miſt before his eyes, putteth in his head againſt this, the common conceiued perſwaſion of all men concerning Nazareth: *Is it poſſible that a good thing ſhould come from thence?* This ſtratagem he doth vſe with ſo great dexteritie, the minds of all men are ſo ſtrangely enforceled with it, that it bereaueth them of the time of all perceiuance of that which ſhould releeue them and be their comfort, yea, it taketh all remembrance from them, euen of things wherewith they are moſt familiarly acquainted. The people of Iſrael could not be ignorant, that he which led them through the Sea, was able to feed him in the Deſart: but this was obliterated and put out by the ſenſe of their preſent want. Feeling the hand of God againſt them in their food, they remembred not his hand in the day that he deliuered them from the hand of the Oppreſſor. *Sara* was not then to learne, that *with God all things are poſſible*. Had *Nathaniel* neuer noted, how *God doth chooſe the baſe things of this world, to diſgrace them that are moſt honourably eſteemed?* The Prophet *Habbakuk* knew that the promiſes of grace, protection, and fauour, which God in the Law doth make vnto his people, do not grant them any ſuch immunitie as can free and exempt them from all chaſtiſements: he knew that as God ſaid, *I will continue my mercy for euer towards them*; ſo he likewiſe ſaid, *Their tranſgreſſions I will puniſh with a rod*: he knew that it cannot ſtand with any reaſon, we ſhould ſet the meaſure of our owne puniſhments, and preſcribe vnto God how great or how long our ſufferings ſhall be: he knew that we were blind, & altogether ignorant what is beſt for vs; that we ſue for many things very vnwiſely againſt our ſaluts, thinking we aske Fiſh, when indeed we craue a Serpent: he knew that when the thing we aske is good, & yet God ſeemeth ſlow to grant it, he doth not denie, but defer our petitions, to the end we might learn to deſire great things greatly: all this he knew. But beholding the Land which God had ſeuered for his owne people; and ſeeing it abandoned vnto Heathen

Nations;

nations, viewing how reproachfully they did tread it downe, and wholly make hauock of it at their pleasure; beholding the Lords owne Royall Seate made an heape of stones, his Temple defiled, the carkasses of his seruants cast out for the Fowles of the ayre to deuoure, and the flesh of his meeke ones for the beasts of the field to feed vpon; being conscious to himselfe how long and how earnestly he had cryed, *Auenge vs, O God of our welfare, for the glorie of thine owne Name*; and feeling that their sore was still increased: the conceit of repugnancie betweene this which was obiect to his eyes, and that which faith vpon promise of the Law did looke for, made so deepe an impression and so strong, that hee disputeth not the matter, but without any further enquirie or search, inferreth as we see, *The Law doth fulfill*.

Of his wife is heere, which cannot very soberly aduise his Brother; Sir, you must labour to strengthen your faith by that experience which heretofore you haue had of Gods great goodnesse towards you, *for as you ignorant prædita disseruere prædicta*: By those things which you haue knowne performed, learne to hope for those things which are promised. Doe you acknowledge to haue receiued much? Let that make you certaine to receiue more. *Habenti dabitur: To him that hath, more shall be giuen*. When you doubt what you shall haue, search what you haue had at Gods hands. Make this reckoning, that the benefits which he hath bestowed, are Bils Obligatorie and sufficient Sureties that he will bestow further. His present mercie is still a warrant of his future loue, because *whom he loueth, he loueth vnto the end*. Is it not thus? Yet if wee could reckon vp as many euidents, cleere, vndoubted signes of Gods reconciled loue to vs, as there are yeeres, yea dayes, yea houres past ouer our heads; all these for ought we haue not such force to confirme our faith, as the losse, and sometimes the onely feare of losing a little transitorie goods, credit, honour, or fauour of men, a small calamitie, a matter of nothing to breed a conceit, and such a conceit as is not easily againe removed; that wee are cleane crost out of Gods Booke, that he regards vs not, that he looketh vpon others, but passeth by vs like a stranger, as whom we are not knowne. Then we thinke, looking vpon others, and comparing them with our selues; their Tables are furnished day by day; wealth and ease are our bread: they sing to the Lute, and they see their children dance before them; our hearts are beaten in our bodies as leafe, our sighes beat as thicke as a swift Pulse, our teares doe wash the beds wherein we lye; the Sunne smiteth vpon their fore-heads; we are hanged vp like Bottles in the smoake, cast into corners like the sherds of a broken Pot: tell not vs of the promises of Gods fauour, tell such as doe reape the fruit of them, they belong not to vs, they are made to others: the Lord bee merciull to our weakenesse, but thus it is. Well, let the frailtie of our nature, the subtilties of Satan, the horror of our goastfull imaginations be, as wee cannot deny but they are, things that threaten euery moment the vtter subuersion of our faith, faith notwithstanding is not ouerthrowen by these things. Thus which one sometimes told the Senators of Rome, *Ego te exitii causam, P. C. vti patrem spe meum præsidium, auditorem, quo te grauius nemo vnquam audiuit, testem, quo nemo vnquam grauior fuit, vltorem, quo nemo vnquam acerbior, interfici*. As I haue often heard my Father acknowledge, so I my selfe did euer thinke, that the friends and fauou-

rers of this State changed themselues with great labour, but the mans condition so safe as theirs: the same we may say a great deale more fully in the case of our Fathers and Prophets, our Lord and Master hath full often spoken, by long experience we haue found it true, in many as haue euer their names in the mysticall Booke of Life, *no assistance, labour, sufferance*, that haue taken vpon them a labourlesse, a toylesome, a painefull profession, *for euerie man hath his suites esse*, but no mans security like to theirs. *Simon, Simon, Satan hath desired to winnow thee as wheat*: Here is our toyle: *but I haue prayed for thee, that thy faith faile not*: this is our safetie. No mans condition so safe on earth: the Prayer of Christ is more then sufficient both to strengthen vs, be we neuer so weake; and to ouerthrow all aduerse power, be it neuer so strong and potent. His Prayer must not exclude our labour; their thoughts are vaine, who think that their watching can preserue the Citie which God himselfe is not willing to keepe. And are not theirs as vaine, who think that God will keepe that Citie, for which they themselues are not carefull to watch? The husband-man may not therefore burne his Plough, nor the Marchant forsake his Trade, because God hath promised, *I will not forsake thee*. And doth the promise of God concerning our stabilitie, thinke you, make it a matter indifferent for vs to vse or not to vse the meanes whereby to attend or not to attend vnto the duty? Are we not to pray that we fall not into temptation? Surely if we looke to stand in the faith of the Sonnes of God, we must hourely, continually be prouiding and setting our selues to labour. It was not the meaning of our Lord and Sauiour in saying, *Father, keepe them in thy Name*, that we should haue no labour to keepe our selues. To our own safetie our owne sedulitie is required. And that blessed for euer and euer be that Mothers child, whose faith doth gaine him the title of God. The earth may shake, the pillars of the World may tremble, the countenance of the Heauen may be appalled, the Sunne may lose his light, the Moone her beautie, the Starres their glorie; but concerning the man that trusteth in God, if the firebrand proclaimed it, *Si violauerit*, touch but a haire of his head, if Lyons, Beasts ranenous by nature, and hauing withall hunger, being set to deuoure, haue as it were religiously adored his feet, the faithfull man, what is there in the World, that shall change his heart, alter his faith, alter his affection towards God, or the affection of God towards him? Who shall be of this note, who shall make a separation betweene natural men and God? Shall tribulation, or anguish, or persecution, or famine, or nakednesse, or peril, or sword? No, I am perswaded that neither tribulation, nor anguish, nor persecution, nor famine, nor nakednesse, nor peril, nor sword, nor death, nor life, nor Angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height nor depth, nor any other creature shall euer preuaile to depriue me. I know in whom I haue beleeued, I am not ignorant, that precious blood hath beene shed for me, I haue a Sheepeheard full of kindnesse, full of compassion, full of power: vnto him I commit my soule, in whose hand I haue engraued mine inheritance in the Tables of my heart. *Satan hath desired to winnow thee as wheat, but I haue prayed that thy faith faile not*. Therefore the assurance of my hope I will labor to keepe as a Iewell vnto the end, and by labor, through the gracious mediation of his Prayer, I shall keepe it.

FINIS.

TWO SERMONS VPON PART OF S. IVDES EPISTLE.

By

RICHARD HOOKER,
Sometimes Fellow of CORPVS CHRISTI *Colledge in* OXFORD.

LONDON,
Printed by W. STANSBY.
1622.

TWO SERMONS VPON PART OF S. IVDES EPISTLE.

By

RICHARD HOOKER,

Sometimes Fellow of C. C. C.

Oxon.

LONDON,

Printed by W. STANSBY.

1614.

TO THE WORSHIPFVLL M. GEORGE SVMMASTER, Principall of Broad-Gates Hall in Oxford, HENRY IACKSON wisheth all happinesse.

SIR,

YOur kind acceptance of a former testification of that respect I owe you, hath made mee venture to shew the World these godly Sermons vnder your name. In which, as euerie point is worth obseruation, so some especially are to be noted. The first, that as the Spirit of Prophecie is from God himselfe, who doth inwardly beat and enlighten the hearts and mindes of his holy Pen-men, (which if some would diligently consider, they would not puzzle themselues with the contentions of SCOT, *and* THOMAS, Whether God onely, or his ministring Spirits, doe infuse into mens mindes Prophetical Reuelations, *per species intelligibiles*) *so God framed their words also. Whence the holy Father* [a] *Saint* AVGVSTINE *religiously obserueth, That all those which vnderstand the sacred Writers, will also perceiue, that they ought not to vse other words, then they did, in expressing those heauenly Mysteries which their hearts conceiued, as the* Blessed Virgin *did our Saviour,* By the Holy Ghost. *The greater is* CASTELLIO *his offence, who hath laboured to teach the Prophets to speake otherwise, then they haue already. Much like to that impious King of Spaine,* ALPHONSVS *the tenth, who found fault with Gods Workes,* [b] *Si, inquit, creationi affuissem, mundum melius ordinassem. If hee had beene with God at the Creation of World, the World had gone better, then now it doth. As this man found fault with Gods Workes, so did the other with Gods words. But because we haue a* [c] *most sure*

[a] Lib. 4. cap. 6. de doct. Chr.

[b] Rob. Tolet. lib. 4 cap. 5.

[c] 2. Pet. 1.

word of the Prophets, to which we must take heed, I will let his words passe with the wind, hauing [d] elsewhere spoken to you more largely of his Errours, whom notwithstanding, for his other excellent parts, I much respect.

[d] Pref. in Orat. D. Reinold.

You shall moreouer from hence vnderstand, how Christianitie consists not in formall and seeming puritie (vnder which, who knowes not notorious villanie to maske?) but in the heart-roote. Whence the Authour truly teacheth, that Mockers, which vse Religion as a Cloake, to put off and on, as the Weather serueth, are worse then Pagans and Infidels. Where I cannot omit to shew, how iustly this kind of men hath beene reproued by that renowmed Martyr of Iesus Christ, B. Latimer; both because it will bee opposite to this purpose, and also free that Christian Worthie from the slanderous reproches of [*] him, who was, if euer any, a Mocker of God, Religion, and all good men. But first I must desire you, and in you all Readers, not to thinke lightly of that excellent man, for vsing of this and the like vnlike Similitudes in his Sermons. For whosoeuer will call to mind, with what riff-raff Gods people were fedde in those dayes, when their Priests, [e] whose lips should haue preserued knowledge, preached nothing else but Dreames, and false Miracles of counterfeit Saints, enrolled in that [f] fatiſh Legend, coyned and amplified by a drowsie head, betweene sleeping and waking. Hee that will consider this, and also how the people were delighted with such toyes (God sending them strong Delusions, that they should beleeue lies) and how hard it would haue beene for any man, wholly, and vpon the suddayne, to draw their minds to another bent; will easily perceiue, both how necessary it was to vse Symbolicall Discourse, and how wisely, and moderately it was applied by that Religious Father, to the end he might lead their vnderstanding so farre, till it were so conuinced, informed, and setled, that it might forget the meanes and way, by which it was led, and thinke onely of that it had acquired. For in all such mysticall speeches, the knowne rule is, that the end for which they are vsed, is onely to be thought vpon.

[*] Parsons in 3. Conuers.

[e] Malac. 2. 7.

[f] Caus Iacob. lib. 11. cap. 8. Vincent. lib. 2. de corrupt. art. Mord. lib. 4.

This then being first considered, let vs heare the Storie, as it is related by Master Fox: Master LATIMER (saith he) in his Sermon gaue the people certaine Cards out of the fift, sixt, and seuenth Chapters of Saint Matthew. For the chiefe Triumph in the Cards, he limitted the Hart, as the principall thing that they should serue God withall, whereby hee quite ouerthrew all

[g] Pag. 1903. edit. 1570.

all hypocriticall and externall Ceremonies, not tending to the neceſſarie furtherance of Gods holy Word and Sacraments. By this hee exhorted all men to ſerue the Lord with inward heart and true affection, and not with outward Ceremonies, adding moreouer to the praiſe of that Triumph, that though it were neuer ſo ſmall, yet it would take vp the beſt Coat-Card beſide in the Bunch, yea, though it were the King of Clubbes, &c. meaning thereby, how the Lord would be worſhipped and ſerued in ſimplicitie of the heart, and veritie, wherein conſiſteth true Chriſtian Religion, &c. *Thus Maſter* Fox.

By which it appeares, that the holy mans intention was to lift vp the peoples hearts to God; and not vpon [illegible] *made a* Sermon of playing at Cards, and taught them how to play at Triumph, and played (*himſelfe*) at Cards in the Pulpit, as *that baſe Companion* [h] Parſons *reports the matter, in his vented ſcurrilous vaine of Raylng, whence hee calleth it a* [i] Chriſtmaſſe Sermon. *Now he that will thinke ill of ſuch Alluſions, may out of the abundance of his folly, ieſt at* Demoſthenes, *for his ſtorie of the* [k] *Sheepe, Wolues, and Dogges, and at* Menenius, *for his fiction of the Belly. But, Ineptiæ laetum vnum. The good Biſhop meant, that the Romiſh Religion came not from the* heart, *but conſiſted in outward Ceremonies: Which ſorely grieued* Parſons, *who neuer had the leaſt warmth or ſparke of honeſtie. Whether Biſhop* Latimer *compared the Biſhops to the* Knaues *of* Clubbes, *as the fellow interprets him, I know not: I am ſure* Parſons, *of all others, deſerued thoſe Colours; and ſo I leaue him.*

Woe ſee then, what inward purity is required of all Chriſtians, which if they haue, then [m] *prayer, and all other Chriſtian duties, they ſhall lift vp* pure hands, *as the Apoſtle ſpeakes, not as* [n] Baronius *would haue it*, waſhed from ſinnes with holy water, *but* pure, *that is*, holy, *free from the pollution of ſinne, as the Greeke word* [illegible] *doth ſignifie.*

You may alſo ſee here refuted thoſe Calumnies of the Papiſts, that wee abandon all Religious Rites, and godly Duties, as alſo the confirmation of our Doctrine touching certainetie of Faith (and ſo of Saluation) which is ſo ſtrongly denied by ſome of that Faction, that they haue told the world, [o] S. PAVL himſelfe was vncertaine of his owne ſaluation. *What then ſhall wee ſay, but pronounce a* WOE *to*

h In the third part of 3. conuerſions of England: in the Examin. of Foxes Saints, *cap.* 14. § 53. 54. *p.* 215.

i *Sect.* 55.

k *Plut. in Demoſthen.*

l *Liu. Dec.* 1. *lib.* 2. *an V.C.* 60

m 1. Tim. 2. 8.

n *Annal to.* 1. *An.* 57. *n.* 109. 110. *& to.* 2. *An.* 132. *num* 5

o S. Paulus de ſua ſalute incert. Richton. Ieſuit. *lib.* 2. *c.* 12. Idololat. Hugiron. *fol.* 219. *in marg. edit. Mogunt.* 1613. *inter te.* Marcel. *tom.* 4. *ſaith.*

to the most strict obseruers of Saint Francis Rule, and his Canonicall Discipline (though they make him euen p equall with Christ) and the most meritorious Monke that euer was registred in their Kalender of Saints? But wee for our comfort are otherwise taught out of the holy Scripture, and therefore exhorted to build our selues in our most holy faith, that so, when our q earthly house of this Tabernacle shall be destroyed, we may haue a building giuen of God, a house not made with hands, but eternall in the Heauens.

This is that, which is most piously and feelingly taught in these few leaues, so that you shall read nothing here, but what, I perswade my selfe, you haue long practised in the constant course of your life.

It remaineth onely, that you accept of these Labours tendered to you by him, who wisheth you the long ioyes of this world, and the eternall of that which is to come.

p Witnesse the verses of Horatius a Iesuite, recited by Possev. Bibioth. Select. part. 2. l. 17. c. 19 Exue Franciscum tunicâ, lacerog; cucullo, Qui Franciscus erat, iam tibi Christus erit. Franciscí exuuijs (si qua licet) induc Christum, Iam Franciscus erit, qui modo Christus erat. The like hath Bencius, another Iesuite.

q 2. Cor. 5. 2.

Oxon. from Corp. Christi Colledge, this 13. of Ianuarie, 1613.

TWO SERMONS VPON PART OF S. IVDES EPISTLE.

THE FIRST SERMON.

EPIST. IVDE, VERS. 17. 18. 19. 20. 21.

But you, beloued, remember the words which were spoken before of the Apostles of our Lord Iesus Christ,

How they told you, that there should be mockers in the last time, which should walke after their owne vngodly lusts.

These are they who separate themselues, sensuall, hauing not the Spirit.

But you, beloued, edifie your selues in your most holy faith, praying in the Holy Ghost,

And keepe your selues in the loue of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Iesus Christ, vnto eternall life.

THe occasion whereupon, together with the end wherefore, this Epistle was written, is opened in the front and entrie of the same. There were then, as there are now, many euill and wicked ly disposed persons, one of the mysticall bodie, yet within the visible bounds of the Church, men which were of old ordained to condemnation, vngodly men, which turned the grace of our God into wantonnesse, and denied the Lord Iesus. For this cause the Spirit of the Lord is in the hand of *Iude*, the seruant of Iesus, and brother of *Iames*, to exhort them that are called, and sanctified of God the Father, that they would earnestly contend to maintaine the faith which was once deliuered vnto the Saints. Which faith because we cannot maintaine, except we know perfectly, first, against whom, secondly, to what end it must be maintained; therefore in the former three verses of this peeell of Scripture which I haue read, the enemies of the Crosse of Christ are plainely described; and in the latter two, they that loue the Lord Iesus, haue a sweet Lesson giuen them, how to strengthen and stablish themselues in the faith. Let vs first therefore examine the description of these reprobates, concerning faith;

faith; and afterwards come to the words of the exhortation, wherein Chri-
[illegible] ing
Texte. The description of these godlesse persons is two-fold, *Generall* and *Spe-
ciall*. The *generall* doth point them out and shew what manner of men they
should be. The *particular* pointeth at them, and saith plainly, These are they.
In the *generall* description we have to consider of these things. *First*, when
they were described, *they were told of before*. *Secondly*, the time by whom they
were described, *They were spoken of by the Apostles of our Lord Iesus Christ*.
Thirdly, the dayes wherein they should be manifested unto the world, they told
you they *should be in the last time*. *Fourthly*, their disposition and whole de-
meanure, *mockers and walkers after their owne ungodly lusts*.

2 In the third to the Philippians, the Apostle describeth certaine. *They
are men* (saith he) *of whom I have told you often, and now with teares I tell you
of them, their God is their belly, their glorying and reioycing is in their owne
shame, they mind earthly things*.

These were enemies of the Crosse of Christ, enemies whom he saw, and
his eyes gushe out with teares to behold them. But we are taught in this place
how the Apostles spake also of enemies, whom as yet they had not seene, de-
scribed a family of men as yet unheard of, a generation reserved for the end
of the world, and for the last time, they had not onely declared what they
heard and saw in the dayes wherein they lived, but they have prophecied also
of men in time to come. And *you doe well* (saith S. Peter) *in that you take
heed to the words of Prophecie, so that you first know this, that no Prophecie in the
Scripture commeth of any mans owne resolution*. No prophecie in Scripture com-
meth of any mans owne resolucion. For all prophecie, which is in Scripture,
came by the secret inspiracion of God. But there are prophecies which are
no Scripture, yea, there are prophecies against the Scripture: by brethren,
beware of such prophecies, and take heed you heed them not. Remember
the things that were spoken of before, but spoken of before by the Apostles
of our Lord and Saviour Iesus Christ. Take heed to prophecies, but to pro-
phecies which are in Scripture: For both the manner and the matter of those
prophecies doe shew plainely, that they are of God.

Of the spirit of Prophecie received from God himselfe.

3 Touching the manner, how men by the spirit of prophecie in holy
Scripture have spoken and written of things to come, we must understand,
that as the knowledge of that they spake, so likewise the vtterance of that
they knew, came not by these vsuall and ordinarie meanes, whereby wee are
brought to understand the mysteries of our salvacion, and are wont to instruct
others in the same. For whatsoever we know, we have it by the hands and
ministerie of men, which leade us along like children, from a letter to a sylla-
ble, from a syllable to a word, from a word to a line, from a line to a sentence,
from a sentence to a side, and so turne over. But God himselfe was their in-
structor, he himselfe taught them, partly by Dreames and Visions in the
night, partly by Revelations in the day, taking them aside from amongst their
brethren, and talking with them, as a man would talke with his neigh-
bour in the way. Thus they became acquainted even with the secret and
hidden counsels of God. They saw things, which themselves were not

able

able to vtter, they beheld that, whereat men and Angels are astonished. They vnderstood in the beginning, what should come to passe in the last dayes.

God, which lightned thus the eyes of their vnderstanding, giuing them knowledge by vnusuall and extraordinarie meanes, did also miraculously himself frame and fashion their words and writings, in so much that a great difference there seemeth not to be betweene the manner of their knowledge, then there is betweene the manner of their speech and ours. When perhaps conceiued a thing in our hearts, and throughly vnderstand it, as we thinke within our selues, yet we can vtter it in such sort that our brethren may receiue instruction or comfort at our mouthes, how great, how long, how earnest meditation are we forced to vse? And after much trauaile, and much paines, when we open our lips to speake of the wonderfull works of God, our tongues doe tarrie within our mouthes, yea many times we disgrace the dreadfull mysteries of our faith, and grieue the spirit of our hearers by words vnsauory, and vnseemely speeches. *Shall a wise man fill his belly with the Easterne wind,* saith *Eliphaz, shall a wise man dispute with words not conuenient, or with talke that is not profitable?* Yet behold, euen they that are wisest amongst vs liuing, compared with the Prophets, seeme as otherwise to talke of God, then as the children which are carried in armes, should speake of the greatest matters of state. They whose words doe most shew forth their wise vnderstanding, and whose lips doe vtter the purest knowledge, so long as they vnderstand and speake as men, are euer put to faine sundrie wayes to excuse themselues. Sometimes acknowledging with the wise man, *Hardly can we discerne the things that are on earth, and with great labour find we out the things that are before vs; who euer searched out the things that are in heauen?* Sometimes confessing with *Iob* the righteous, increasing of things too wonderfull for vs, we haue spoken we wot not what. Sometimes ending their talke, as doth the Historie of the Maccabees, If we haue done well, and as the cause required, it is that we desire, if we haue spoken slenderly and barely, we haue done what we could. *But God hath made my mouth like a sword,* saith *Esay.* And *we haue receiued,* saith the Apostle, *not the spirit of this world, but the spirit which is of God, that we might know the things which are giuen vs of God, which things also we speake, not in words which mans wisdome teacheth, but which the holy Ghost teacheth.* This is that which the Prophets meane by those bookes written full within, and without, which booke, when so often deliuered them to eate, not because God fed them with inke, and paper, but to teach vs, that so oft as he imployed them in this heauenly worke, they neither spake nor wrote any word of their owne, but vttered syllable by syllable as the Spirit put it into their mouthes, no otherwise then the Harpe or the Lute doth giue a sound according to the affection of his hands that holdeth and striketh in with skill. The difference is onely this: An Instrument, whether it be a Pipe or Harpe, maketh a distinction in the tunes and sounds, which distinction is well perceiued of the hearer, the Instrument it selfe vnderstanding not what is Piped or Harped. The Prophets and holy men of God not so. *I opened my mouth,* saith *Ezechiel,* and *God reached me a scroll, saying, Sonne of man cause thy belly to eat, and fill thy bowels with the I giue thee. I ate it, & it was sweet in my mouth as hony.*

Of the Prophets manner of speech.

Iob 15.2,3.

Wisd. 9.16.

Esay 49.2.

Ezech. 3.2.

faith

saith the Prophet. Yea sweeter, I am perswaded, then either hony, or the hony-combe. For herein they were not like Harps or Lutes, but they sit, they set the power and strength of their owne words. When they spake of our peace, every corner of their hearts, was filled with joy. When they prophecied of mournings, lamentations, and woes, to fall upon us, they were in the bitternesse and indignation of spirit, the hande of the Lord being mighty and strong upon them.

5 On this manner were all the prophecies of holy Scripture. Which Prophecies, although they conteine nothing which is not profitable for our instruction, yet as one starre differeth from another in glory, so every word of prophecie hath a treasure of matter in it, but all matters are not of like importance, as all treasures are not of equall price. The chiefe and principall matter of prophecie is the promise of righteousnesse, peace, holinesse, glory, victory, immortalitie, unto every Soule which believeth that Iesus is Christ, of the *Iew* first, and of the *Gentile*. Now because the doctrine of Salvation to be looked for by Faith in him, who was in outward appearance as it had beene a man forsaken of God, in him who was numbred, iudged, and condemned with the wicked, in him whom men did see buffeted on the face, scorned by Souldiers, scourged by tormentors, hanged on the Crosse, pierced to the heart, in him whom the eyes of many wemen saw behold, when the anguish of his soule enforced him to roare as if his heart had rent in sunder, *O my God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?* They, because the doctrine of Salvation by Him, is a thing unprobable to a naturall man, that whether we preach it to the Gentile, or to the Iew, the one condemneth vs, such as mad, the other as blasphemers, therefore to establish and confirme the certainetie of this thing (Truth in the hearts of men, the Lord together with their preaching, which his first messengers, sent himselfe, to reveale these things unto the world, inspired prophecies of things both Civill and Ecclesiasticall, which were so come in every age from time to time, in the very last of the latter dayes, that by those things, wherein we see daily their words fulfilled and done, we might have strong consolation in the hope of things which are not seene, because they have revealed as well the one as the other. For when many things are spoken of before in Scripture, wherein we see first one thing accomplished and then another, and so a third, perceive we not plainely, that God doth nothing else but lead vs along by the hand, till he have settled vs upon the Rocke of an assured hope, that no one iot or title of his Word shall passe till all be fulfilled? It is not therefore vaine in vaine, that these godlie wicked ones were spoken of before.

6 But by whom? By them whose words, if men or Angels from heaven glisten, they are seduced by them, whom whosoever depraveth, depraveth not them, but me, saith Christ. If any man therefore doth hate the Lord Iesus, and woe worth him that loveth not the Lord Iesus, I beseech you how know that he loveth him indeed, if he despise not the things that are spoken of by his Apostles, whom many have despised even for the outwarde and simplenesse of their persons. For it is the propertie of fleshly and carnall men, to honour, and admire, credit, and discredit the words and deeds of every

A naturall man perceiveth not heavenly things.

man,

man according to that he wanteth or hath without. If a man with gorgeous apparell come amongst vs, although he be a Theefe or a Murtherer (for there are Theeues and Murtherers in gorgeous apparell) bee his heart whatsoeuer, if his Coat be of Purple, or Veluet, or Tiffue, euery one riseth vp, and all the reuerent Solemnities we can vse, are too little. But the man that ſeruеth God, is contemned and deſpiſed amongſt vs for his pouertie. *Herod* ſpeaketh in Iudgement, and the people cry out, *The voice of God, and not of man. Paul* preacheth Chriſt, they eſteeme him a triſler. Hearken, beloued: hath not God choſen the poore of this World, that they ſhould be rich in faith? Hath hee not choſen the refuſe of the World to bee heires of his Kingdome, which hee hath promiſed to them that loue him? Hath he not choſen the off-ſcowrings of men to be the Lights of the World, and the Apoſtles of Ieſus Chriſt? Men vnlearned, yet how fully repleniſhed with vnderſtanding? few in number, yet how great in power? contemptible in ſhew, yet in Spirit how ſtrong? how wonderfull! *I would faine learne the myſteries of the eternall generation of the Sonne of God*, ſaith *Hilarie*. Whom ſhall I ſeeke? Shall I get me to the Schooles of the *Grecians*? Why? I haue read, *Vbi ſapiens? vbi Scriba? vbi Conquiſitor huius ſeculi?* Theſe Wiſemen in the World muſt needs be dumbe in this, becauſe they haue reiected the Wiſdome of God. Shall I beſeech the Scribes and Interpreters of the Law, to become my Teachers? how can they know this, ſith they are offended at the Croſſe of Chriſt? It is death for me to be ignorant of the vnſearchable myſteries of the Sonne of God: of which myſteries notwithſtanding I ſhould haue beene ignorant, but that a poore Fiſherman, vnknowne, vnlearned, new come from his Boat with his clothes wringing wet, hath opened his mouth and taught me, *In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.* Theſe poore ſillie creatures haue made vs rich in the knowledge of the myſteries of Chriſt.

Iam. 2.

Acts 12.

Acts 17.

7 Remember therefore that which is ſpoken of by the Apoſtles. Whoſe words if the Children of this World doe not regard, is it any marualle? They are the Apoſtles of our Lord Ieſus; not of their Lord, but of our. It is true which one hath ſaid in a certaine place, *Apoſtolicam fidem ſeculi homo non capit*, A man ſworne to the World, is not capeable of that Faith which the Apoſtles doe teach. What meane the Children of this World then to tread in the courts of our God? What ſhould your bodies doe at *Bethel*, whoſe hearts are at *Bethauen*? The god of this World, whom ye ſerue, hath prouided apoſtles and teachers for you, *Chaldeans, Wiſards, Southſayers, Aſtrologers*, and ſuch like: Heare them. Tell not vs that yee will ſacrifice to the Lord our God, if wee will ſacrifice to *Aſtaroth* or *Melcom*; that ye will reade our Scriptures, if wee will liſten to your Traditions; that if yee may haue a Maſſe by permiſſion, wee ſhall haue a Communion with good leaue and liking; that yee will admit the things that are ſpoken of by the Apoſtles of our Lord Ieſus, if your Lord and Maſter may haue his ordinances obſerued, and his Statutes kept. *Salomon* tooke it (as well he might) for an euident proofe, that ſhe did not beare a motherly affection to her Child, which yeelded to haue it cut in diuers parts. Hee cannot loue the Lord Ieſus with his heart, which leadeth one care to his Apoſtles, and another to falſe apoſtles: which can brooke to ſee a mingle-

We muſt not halt betweene two Opinions.

mangle of Religion and Superſtition, Miniſters and Maſſing Prieſts, Light and Darkneſſe, Truth and Error, Traditions and Scriptures. No; we haue no Lord but Ieſus; no Doctrine, but the Goſpell; no Teachers, but his Apoſtles. Were it reaſon to require at the hands of an Engliſh ſubiect, obedience to the Lawes and Edicts of the Spaniard? I doe marueil, that any man bearing the name of a Seruant of the Seruants of Ieſus Chriſt, will goe about to draw vs from our Allegeance. We are His ſworne Subiects; it is not lawfull for vs to heare the things that are not told vs by his Apoſtles. They haue told vs, that in the laſt dayes there ſhall be Mockers, therefore we beleeue it; *Credimus quia legimus*, We are ſo perſwaded, becauſe we reade it muſt be ſo. If we did not reade it, we would not teach it: *Nam quæ libro Legis non continentur, ea nec noſſe debemus*, ſaith *Hilarie*: Thoſe things that are not written in the Bookes of the Law, wee ought not ſo much as to be acquainted with them. *Remember the words which were ſpoken of before of the Apoſtles of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt.*

Mockers in the laſt time.

8 The third thing to bee conſidered in the deſcription of theſe men of whom we ſpeake, is the time, wherein they ſhould be manifeſted to the World. They told you, there ſhould be mockers in the laſt time. *Noah* at the commandement of God, built an Arke, and there were in it beaſts of all ſorts, cleane and vncleane. A Huſbandman planteth a Vineyard, and looketh for Grapes, but when they come to the gathering, behold, together with Grapes there are found alſo wilde Grapes. A rich man prepareth a great Supper, and biddeth many, but when he ſitteth him downe, he findeth amongſt his friends here and there a man whom he knoweth not. This hath beene the ſtate of the Church ſithence the beginning. God alwayes hath mingled his Saints with faithleſſe and godleſſe perſons; as it were the cleane with the vncleane, Grapes with ſowre Grapes, his friends and children with aliens and ſtrangers. Marueil not then, if in the laſt dayes alſo yee ſee the men, with whom you liue & walke arme in arme, laugh at your Religion, and blaſpheme that glorious Name, whereof you are called. Thus it was in the dayes of the Patriarkes and Prophets; and are we better then our Fathers? Albeit we ſuppoſe, that the bleſſed Apoſtles, in foreſhewing what manner of men were ſet out for the laſt dayes, meant to note a calamitie ſpeciall and peculiar to the Ages and Generations which were to come. As if he ſhould haue ſaid; As God hath appointed a time of Seed for the Sower, and a time of harueſt for him that reapeth, as he hath giuen vnto euery herbe and euery tree his owne fruit, and his owne ſeaſon, not the ſeaſon nor the fruit of another (for no man looketh to gather figges in the Winter, becauſe the Summer is the ſeaſon for them, nor Grapes of Thiſtles, becauſe Grapes are the fruit of the Vine) ſo the ſame God hath appointed ſundry for euery Generation of men, other men for other times, and for the laſt times the worſt men, as may appeare by their properties, which is the fourth point to be conſidered of in this deſcription.

Mockers.

9 They told you, that there ſhould be *Mockers*. He meaneth men that ſhal vſe Religion as a cloke, to put off, and on, as the weather ſerueth; ſuch as ſhall with *Herod* heare the preaching of *Iohn Baptiſt* to day, and to morrow condeſcend to haue him beheaded; or with the other *Herod* ſay, they will worſhip Chriſt, when they purpoſe a maſſacre in their hearts; kiſſe Chriſt with *Iudas*,

and

and betray Christ with *Iudas*. The first Mockers. For as *Ishmael* the sonne of *Hagar* laughed at *Isaak*, which was heire of the promise, so shall these men laugh at you as the maddest people vnder the Sunne, if yee be the *Israel*, choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, then to enioy the pleasures of sinne for a season. And why? God hath not giuen them eyes to see, nor hearts to conceiue that exceeding recompence of your reward. The promises of saluation made to you are matters wherein they can take no pleasure, euen as *Ishmael* tooke no pleasure in that promise, wherein God hath said vnto *Abraham*, *In Isaak shall thy seed be called*, because the promise concerned not him, but *Isaak*. They are tearmed for their impietie towards God, *mockers*, and for the impuritie of their life and conuersation, *walking after their owne vngodly lusts*. S. *Peter* in his second Epistle and third Chapter soundeth the very depth of their impietie: shewing *first*, how they shall not shame at the length to professe themselues prophane, and irreligious, by flat denying the Gospell of Iesus Christ, and deriding the sweet and comfortable promises of his appearing: *secondly*, that they shall not be only deriders of all religion, but also Disputers against God, vsing Truth to subuert the Truth; yea Scriptures themselues to disproue Scripture. Being in this sort *mockers*, they must needes bee also followers of *their owne vngodly lusts*. Being Atheists in perswasion, can they choose but be beasts in conuersation? For why remoued they quite from them the feare of God? Why take they such paines to abandon and put out from their hearts all sense, all taste, all feeling of Religion? but only to this end and purpose, that they may without inward remorse and grudging of conscience giue ouer themselues to all vncleannesse. Surely the state of these men is more lamentable, then is the condition of Pagans and Turkes. For at the bare beholding of Heauen and Earth, the Infidels heart by and by doth giue him, that there is an eternall, infinite, immortall, and euer-liuing God, whose hands haue fashioned and framed the World; hee knoweth that euery house is builded of some man, though hee see not the man which built the house, and hee considereth, that it must bee God which hath built and created all things; although because the number of his dayes bee few, hee could not see when God disposed his workes of old, when he caused the light of his cloudes first to shine, when he laid the corner stone of the earth, and swadled it with bands of water and darknesse, when he caused the morning starre to know his place, and made barres and doores to shut vp the Sea within his bonse, saying, *Hitherto shalt thou come, but no further*: he hath no eye-witnesse of these things. Yet the light of natural reason hath put this wisedome in his reines, and hath giuen his heart thus much vnderstanding. Bring a Pagan to the Schooles of the Prophets of God; propheſie to an Infidell, rebuke him, lay the iudgements of God before him, make the secret sinnes of his heart manifest, and he shall fall downe and worship God. They that crucified the Lord of Glorie, were not so far past recouery, but that the preaching of the Apostles was able to moue their hearts and to bring them to this, *Men and brethren, what shall we doe?* *Agrippa*, that sate in iudgement against *Paul* for preaching, yeelded notwithstanding thus farre vnto him, *Almost thou perswadest me to become a Christian*. Although the Iewes for want of knowledge haue not submitted them-

Mockers worse then Pagans, and Infidels.

Acts 2.

Acts 26.

Rom. 10.

selues to the righteousnesse of God, yet I beare them record, saith the Apostle, *that they haue a zeale*. The *Atheniens*, a people hauing neither Zeale, nor knowledge, yet of them also the same Apostle beareth witnesse, *Ye men of Athens, I perceiue yee are deuout in euery point*, & some way religious, but Mockers, walking after their owne vngodly lusts, they haue smothered euery sparke of that heauenly Light, they haue stifled euen their very naturall vnderstanding. O Lord, thy mercie is ouer all thy workes, thou louest Man and Beast! yet a happie case it had beene for these men if they had neuer beene borne: and so I leaue them.

Iudas *vir sapiens & certi iudicij.*

To S. *Iude* hauing his minde exercised in the doctrine of the Apostles of Iesus Christ, concerning things to come in the last time, became a man of a wise and staid iudgement. *Grieued* he was, to see the departure of many, and their falling away from the faith, which before they did profesle: *grieued*, but not *dismayed*. With the simpler and weaker sort it was otherwise: Their countenance began by and by to change, they were halfe in doubt they had deceiued themselues in giuing credit to the Gospell of Iesus Christ. S. *Iude*, to comfort and refresh these silly Lambes, taketh them vp in his armes, and sheweth them the men at whom they were offended. Looke vpon them that forsake this blessed Profession wherein you stand: They are now before your eyes; view them, marke them, are they not carnall? are they not like to noysome carrion cast out vpon the earth? is there that Spirit in them which cryeth *Abba* Father in your bosomes? Why should any man be discomforted? Haue you not heard that there should be *mockers* in the last time? These verily are they, that now doe separate themselues.

For your better vnderstanding, what this seuering and separating of themselues doth meane, wee must know, that the multitude of them which truly beleeue, (how soeuer they bee dispersed farre and wide each from other) is all *one bodie*, whereof the Head is Christ, *one building*, whereof he is the Corner Stone, in whom they as the members of the bodie being knit, and as the stones of the building, being coupled, grow vp to a man of perfect stature, and rise to an holy Temple in the Lord. That which linketh Christ to vs, is his meere mercie and loue towards vs. That which tyeth vs to him, is our faith in the promised saluation reuealed in the Word of truth. That which vniteth and ioyneth vs amongst our selues, is such sort that wee are now as if wee had but one heart and one soule, without loue. Who bee inwardly in heart the liuely members of this body, and the polished stones of this building, coupled and ioyned to Christ, as flesh of his flesh, and bones of his bones, by the mutuall bond of his vnspeakeable loue towards them, and their vnfayned faith in him, thus linked and fastned each to other by a spirituall, sincere, and hearty affection of loue, without any manner of simulation, who be Iewes within, and what their names be, none can tell, saue he whose eyes doe behold the secret disposition of all mens hearts. We, whose eyes are too dimme to behold the inward man, must leaue the secret iudgement of euery seruant to his owne Lord, accounting and vsing all men as brethren both neere and deare vnto vs, supposing Christ so loue them tenderly, so as they keepe the profession of the Gospell, and ioyne in the outward Communion of Saints. Whereof the one

doth

doth warrantize vnto vs their faith, the other their loue, till they fall away, and forsake either the one, or the other, or both; and then it is no iniurie to terme them as they are. When they separate themselues, they are ἀνωμοτοι, not iudged by vs, but by their owne doings. Men doe separate themselues eyther by Heresie, Schisme, or Apostasie. If they loose the bond of faith, which then they are iustly supposed to doe, when they frowardly oppugne any principall point of Christian doctrine, this is to separate themselues by *Heresie*. If they breake the bond of vnitie, whereby the bodie of the Church is coupled and knit in one, as they doe, which wilfully forsake all externall communion with Saints in holy exercises purely and orderly established in the Church, this is to separate themselues by *Schisme*. If they willingly cashiere, and vtterly forsake both profession of Christ, and communion with Christians, taking their leaue of all Religion, this is to separate themselues by plaine *Apostasie*. And Saint *Iude*, to expresse the manner of their departure, which by *Apostasie* fell away from the Faith of Christ, saith, they separated themselues: noting thereby, that it was not constraint of others, which forced them to depart, it was not infirmitie and weakenesse in themselues, it was not feare of persecution to come vpon them, whereat their hearts did faile; it was not griefe of torments, whereof they had tasted, and were not able any longer to endure them. No, they voluntarily did separate themselues with a fully settled and altogether determined purpose neuer to name the Lord Iesus any more, nor to haue any fellowship with his Saints, but to bend all their counsell and all their strength to raze out their memoriall from amongst men.

Three-fold Separation.
1. Heresie.
2. Schisme.
3. Apostasie.

12 Now because that by such examples, not only the hearts of Infidels were hardened against the Truth, but the minds of weake Brethren also much troubled, the Holy Ghost hath giuen sentence of these back-sliders, that they were carnall men, and had not the Spirit of Christ Iesus, lest any man hauing an ouer-weening of their persons, should be ouer-much amazed and offended at their fall. For simple men not able to discerne their spirits, were brought by their Apostasie thus to reason with themselues. If Christ be the Sonne of the liuing God, if he haue the words of eternall life, if he be able to bring saluation to all men that come vnto him, what meaneth this Apostasie, and vnconstrayned departure? Why doe his seruants so willingly forsake him? Babes be not deceiued, his Seruants forsake him not. They that separate themselues, were amongst his Seruants, but if they had beene of his Seruants, they had not separated themselues. They were amongst vs, not of vs, saith S. *Iohn*: and S. *Iude* proueth it, because they were carnall, and had not the Spirit. Will you iudge of Wheate by Chaffe which the winde hath scattered from amongst it? Haue the children no bread because the Dogs haue not tasted it? Are Christians deceiued of that saluation they looked for, because they denyed the ioyes of the life to come which were no Christians? What if they seemed to be Pillers and principall vpholders of our faith? What is that to vs, which know that Angels hath falne from Heauen? Although if these men had beene of vs indeede, (O the blessednesse of a Christian mans estate!) they had stood surer then the Angels, they had neuer departed from their place. Whereas now wee maruaile not at their departure at all, neither are wee preiudiced by their falling away;

because they were not of vs, sith they are fleshly, and haue not the Spirit. Children abide in the house for euer; they are bond-men and bond-women which are cast out.

13 It behoueth you therefore greatly euery man to examine his owne estate, and so try whether you be bond or free, children or no children. I haue told you already, that we must beware we presume not to sit as Gods in iudgement vpon others, and rashly, as our conceit and fancie doth lead vs, so to determine of this man, he is sincere, or of that man, He is an hypocrite, except by their falling away they make it manifest and knowne what they are. For who art thou that takest vpon thee to iudge another before the time? Iudge thy selfe. God hath left vs infallible euidence, whereby wee may at any time giue true and righteous sentence vpon our selues. We cannot examine the hearts of other men, we may our own. That we haue passed from death to life, we know it, saith Saint *Iohn*, because wee loue our Brethren: and know yee not your owne selues, how that Iesus Christ is in you, except yee be Reprobates? I trust, beloued, we know that we are not Reprobates, because our Spirit doth beare vs record, that the Faith of our Lord Iesus Christ is in vs.

Infallible euidence in the faithfull, that they are Gods Children.

14 It is as easie a matter for the Spirit within you to tell whose yee are, as for the eyes of your bodie to iudge where you sit, or in what place you stand. For what saith the Scripture? Yee, which were in times past strangers and enemies, because your mindes were set on euill workes, Christ hath now reconciled in the bodie of his flesh through death, to make you holy, and vnblameable, and without fault in his sight: if you continue grounded and established in the faith, and be not moued away from the hope of the Gospell, *Coloss.* 1. And in the third to the *Colossians*. Yee know, that of the Lord yee shall receiue the reward of that Inheritance, for yee serue the Lord Christ. If we can make this account with our selues; I was in times past dead in trespasses and sinnes, I walked after the Prince that ruleth in the Ayre, and after the Spirit that worketh in the Children of disobedience; but God, who is rich in mercie, through his great loue, wherewith hee loued mee, euen when I was dead, hath quickened me in Christ. I was fierce, headie, proud, high-minded; but God hath made me like the child that is newly weyned: I loued pleasures more then God; I followed greedily the loyes of this present World; I esteemed him, that erected a Stage or Theatre, more then *Salomon* which built a Temple to the Lord; the Harpe, Viole, Timbrell, and Pipe, men fingers and women fingers were at my Feasts; it was my felicitie to see my children dance before me. I said of euery kind of vanitie, O how sweet art thou vnto my soule? All which things now are crucified to me, and I to them: now I hate the pride of life, and pompe of this World; now I take as great delight in the way of thy testimonies, O Lord, as in all riches; now I find more loy of heart in my Lord and Sauiour, then the worldly-minded man, when his Wheate and Oyle doe much abound: now I taste nothing sweet, but the Bread that came downe from Heauen, to giue life vnto the World: now mine eyes see nothing, but Iesus rising from the dead: now my eare refuseth all kinde of melodie to heare the Song of them that haue gotten victorie of the Beast, and of his image, and of his marke, and of the number of his Name, that stand

on

on the Sea of Glaſſe, hauing the Harpes of God, and ſinging the Song of *Moſes* the ſeruant of God, and the Song of the Lambe, ſaying, Great and maruelous are thy Workes, Lord God Almightie, iuſt and true are thy wayes, O King of Saints. Surely, if the Spirit haue beene thus effectuall in the ſecret worke of our Regeneration vnto newneſſe of life; if wee endeuour thus to frame our ſelues anew, then we may ſay boldly with the bleſſed Apoſtle in the tenth to the Hebrewes, *We are not of them which withdraw our ſelues to perdition, but which follow faith to the ſauing of the ſoule.* For they that fall away from the grace of God, and ſeparate themſelues vnto perdition, they are fleſhly and carnall, they haue not Gods holy Spirit. But vnto you, becauſe yee are ſonnes, God hath ſent forth the Spirit of his Sonne into your hearts, to the end yee might know, that Chriſt hath built you vpon a Rocke vnmoueable, that he hath regiſtred your names in the Booke of Life; that hee hath bound himſelfe in a ſure and euerlaſting Couenant, to be your God, and the God of your children after you; that he hath ſuffered as much, groned as oft, prayed as heartily for you, as for *Peter: O Father, keepe them in thy Name! O righteous Father, the world hath not knowne thee, but I haue knowne thee, and theſe haue knowne that thou haſt ſent mee, I haue declared thy Name vnto them, and will declare it, that the loue wherewith thou haſt loued me, may be in them, and I in them.* The Lord of his infinite mercie giue vs hearts plentifully fraught with the treaſure of this bleſſed aſſurance of faith vnto the end.

14 Here I muſt aduertiſe all men, that haue the teſtimonie of Gods holy feare within their breſts, to conſider how vnkindly and iniuriouſly our owne country-men and brethren haue dealt with vs by the ſpace of foure and twentie yeres, from time to time, as if we were the men of whom S. *Iude* here ſpeaketh; neuer ceaſing to charge vs, ſome with Schiſme, ſome with Hereſie, ſome with plaine and manifeſt Apoſtaſie, as if wee had cleane ſeparated our ſelues from Chriſt, vtterly forſaken God, quite abiured Heauen, and trampled all Truth and all Religion vnder our feet. Againſt this third ſort, God himſelfe ſhall plead our Cauſe, in that day, when they ſhall anſwer vs for theſe words, not we them. To others, by whom we are accuſed for Schiſme and Hereſie, we haue often made our reaſonable, and in the ſight of God, I truſt, allowable anſwers. For in the way which they call *Hereſie*, we worſhip the God of our Fathers, beleeuing all things which are written in the Law & the Prophets. That which they call *Schiſme*, we know to be our reaſonable ſeruice vnto God, and obedience to his voice, which cryeth ſhrill in our eares, *Gee out of Babylon, my people, that you be not partakers of her ſins, and that yee receiue not of her plagues.* And therefore when they riſe vp againſt vs, hauing no quarrell but this, wee need not to ſeeke any farther for our Apologie, then the words of *Abiah* to *Ieroboam* and his Armie, 2. *Chron.* 13. *O* IEROBOAM, *and Iſrael, heare you me, ought you not to know, that the Lord God of Iſrael hath giuen the Kingdome ouer Iſrael to* DAVID, *for euer, euen to him and to his ſonnes, by a Couenant of Salt?* that is to ſay, an euerlaſting Couenant. Ieſuites and Papiſts, heare yee mee, ought you not to know, that the Father hath giuen all power vnto the Sonne, and hath made him the onely Head ouer his Church, wherein hee dwelleth as an Husband-man in the midſt of his Vineyard, manuring it with the

The Papiſts falſely accuſe vs of Hereſie and Apoſtaſie.

Act. 25.

Apoc. 18.

the ſweat of his owne browes, not letting it forth to others? For as it is in the Canticle, *Salomon* had a Vineyard in *Baalhamon*, hee gaue the Vineyard vnto Keepers, euery one bringing for the fruit thereof a thouſand pieces of Siluer; but my Vineyard, which is mine, is before mee, ſaith Chriſt. It is true, this is meant of the myſticall Head ſet ouer the body, which is not ſeene. But as he hath reſerued the myſticall adminiſtration of the Church inuiſible vnto himſelfe, ſo he hath committed the myſticall gouernment of Congregations viſible, to the ſonnes of *Dauid*, by the ſame Couenant, whoſe ſonnes they are, in the gouerning of the Flocke of Chriſt, whomſoeuer the Holy Ghoſt hath ſet ouer them, to goe before them, and to lead them in their ſeuerall Paſtures, one in this Congregation, another in that: as it is written, *Take heed vnto your ſelues, and to all the Flocke, wherein the Holy Ghoſt hath made you Ouerſeers, to feed the Church of God, which he hath purchaſed with his owne blood.* Neither will euer any Pope, or Papiſt, vnder the Pope of Heauen, be able to proue the Romiſh Biſhops vſurped Supremacie ouer all Churches, by any one word of the Couenant of Salt, which is the Scripture. For the children in our ſtreets doe now laugh them to ſcorne, when they force, *Thou art* PETER, to this purpoſe. The Pope hath no more reaſon to draw the Charter of his vniuerſall Authoritie from hence, then the Brethren had to gather by the words of Chriſt, in the laſt of S. *Iohn*, that the Diſciple, whom Ieſus loued, ſhould neuer die. *If I will that he tarrie till I come, what is that to thee?* ſaith Chriſt. Straightwayes a report was raiſed amongſt the Brethren, That this Diſciple ſhould not die. Yet Ieſus ſaid not to him, He ſhall not die; but, *If I will that he tarrie till I come, what is that to thee?* Chriſt hath ſaid in the ſixteenth of S. *Matthewes* Goſpel, to *Simon* the ſonne of *Ionas*; *I ſay to thee, Thou art* PETER. Hence an opinion is held in the world, That the Pope is vniuerſall Head of all Churches. Yet Ieſus ſaid not, The Pope is vniuerſall Head of all Churches; but, *Tu es Petrus, Thou art* PETER. Howbeit, as *Ieroboam*, the ſonne of *Nebat*, the ſeruant of *Salomon*, roſe vp and rebelled againſt his Lord, and there were gathered vnto him vaine men and wicked, which made themſelues ſtrong againſt *Ieroboam*, the ſonne of *Salomon*, becauſe *Roboam* was but a child, and tender-hearted, and could not reſiſt them: So the Sonne of Perdition, and Man of Sinne, being not able to brooke the words of our Lord and Sauiour Ieſus Chriſt, which forbad his Diſciples to be like Princes of Nations, *They beare Rule, and are called Gracious, It ſhall not be ſo with you*, hath riſen vp and rebelled againſt his Lord, and to ſtrengthen his arme, he hath crept into the houſes almoſt of all the Nobleſt Families round about him, and taken their children from the Cradle, to be his Cardinals: He hath fawned vpon the Kings and Princes of the Earth, and by Spirituall Coosenage hath made them ſell their lawfull Authoritie and Iuriſdiction, for Titles of *Catholicus*, *Chriſtianiſſimus*, *Defenſor fidei*, and ſuch like: He hath proclaimed ſale of Pardons, to inueagle the ignorant; built Seminaries, to allure young men, deſirous of Learning; erected Stewes, to gether the diſſolute vnto him. This is the Rocke whereupon his Church is built. Hereby the Man is growne huge and ſtrong, like the Cedars, which are not ſhaken with the wind, becauſe Princes haue beene as children, ouer-tender-hearted, and could not reſiſt.

Cant. 8. 11.

Act. 20.

The Popes vſurped Supremacie.

Concil. de Leſſor. Cardin. Laurent. Surius Comm. de reb. geſt. à Pio 5. Franciſc. Sanſovin. de gubernat. Regnorum & Rerumpub. l. 11. cap. de Iud. Mareſtal. & Soldan.

Hereby

Hereby it is come to paſſe, as you ſee this day, that the Man of Sinne doth warre againſt vs, not by meanes of a Language which we cannot vnderſtand, but he commeth as *Ieroboam* againſt *Iuda*, and bringeth the fruit of our owne bodies to eat vs vp, that the bowels of the child may be made the mothers graue, that hath cauſed ſo ſmall number of our Brethren to forſake their Natiue Country, and with all diſloyaltie to caſt off the yoke of their Allegeance to our dread Soueraigne, whom God in mercie hath ſet ouer them; for whoſe ſafegard, if they carried not the hearts of Tygers in the bowmes of men, they would thinke the deareſt blood in their bodies well ſpent. But now, ſaith *Abiah* to *Ieroboam*, you think you be able to reſiſt the Kingdome of the Lord, which is in the hands of the ſonnes of *Dauid*. Yea haue a great multitude, the golden Calues are with you, which *Ieroboam* made you for gods. Haue ye not driuen away the Prieſts of the Lord, the ſonnes of *Aaron*, and the Leuites, and haue made you Prieſts like the people of Nations? Whoſoeuer commeth with a young Bullocke, and ſeuen Rammes, the ſame may be a Prieſt of them that are no gods. If I ſhould follow the Compariſon, and here vncouer the Cup of thoſe deadly and ougly Abominations wherewith this IEROBOAM, of whom we ſpeake, hath made the Earth ſo drunke, that it hath reeled vnder vs, I know, your godly hearts would loath to ſee them. For my owne part, I delight not to take in ſuch filth, I had rather take a garment vpon my ſhoulders, and goe with my face from them, to couer them. The Lord open their eyes, and cauſe them, if it be poſſible, at the length to ſee, how they are wretched, and miſerable, and poore, and blind, and naked! Put it, O Lord in their hearts, to ſeeke white Rayment, and to couer themſelues, that their filthy nakedneſſe may no longer appeare! For, beloued in Chriſt, we bow our knees, and lift vp our hands to Heauen in our Chambers ſecretly, and openly in our Churches we pray heartily and bourely, euen for them alſo: though the Pope hath giuen out as a Iudge, in a ſolemne declaratorie Sentence of *Excommunication* againſt this Land, That our gracious Ladie hath quite aboliſhed *Prayers* within her Realme; and his Schollers, whom he hath taken from the midſt of vs, haue in their publiſhed Writings charged vs not onely not to haue any holy Aſſemblies vnto the Lord for Prayer, but to hold a common Schoole of Sinne and Flatterie; to hold Sacriledge to be Gods ſeruice; Vnfaithfulneſſe, and breach of promiſe to God, to giue it to a ſtrumpet, to be a vertue; to abandon Faſting; to abhorre Confeſſion; to miſlike with Penance; to like well of Vſurie; to charge none with Reſtitution; to find no good before God in ſingle life, nor in no well-working; that all men, as they fall to vs, are much worſed, and more, then afore, corrupted. I doe not adde one word, or ſyllable, vnto that, which Maſter *Briſtow*, a man both borne and ſworne amongſt vs, hath taught his hand to deliuer to the view of all. I appeale to the conſcience of euery ſoule, that hath beene truely conuerted by vs; Whether his heart were neuer raiſed vp to God by our Preaching; whether the words of our exhortation neuer wrung any teare of a penitent heart from his eyes; whether his ſoule neuer reaped any ioy, any comfort, any conſolation in Chriſt Ieſus, by our Sacraments, and Prayers, and Pſalmes, and Thanſgiuing; whether hee were neuer bettered, but alwayes worſed by vs.

O mercifull God; if Heauen and Earth in this caſe doe not witneſſe with vs, and againſt them, let vs be rated out from the Land of the Liuing! Let the Earth, on which wee ſtand, ſwallow vs quicke, as it hath done *Corah*, *Dathan*, and *Abiram*! But if we belong vnto the Lord our God, and haue not forſaken him; if our Priests, the ſonnes of *Aaron*, miniſter vnto the Lord, and the Leuites in their Office; if we offer vnto the Lord euery morning and euery euening the burnt Offerings, and ſweet Incenſe of Prayers, and Thankſgiuings; 2. Chr. cap. 13.
if the Bread be ſet in order vpon the pure Table, and the Candleſtick of Gold, with the Lamps thereof, to burne euery morning; that is to ſay, if amongſt vs Gods bleſſed Sacraments be duely adminiſtred; the holy Word ſincerely and daily preached; if we keepe the Watch of the Lord our God, and if yee haue not forſaken him: then doubt yee not, this God is with vs in a Campe, his Priests with ſounding Trumpets muſt crie alarme
vers. 12. againſt you; *O yee children of Iſrael, fight not againſt the Lord God of your Fathers, for yee ſhall not proſper.*

THE

THE SECOND SERMON.

EPIST. IVDE, VERS. 17, 18, 19, 20, 21.

But yee, beloued, remember the words which were ſpoken before of the Apoſtles of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt,

How that they told you, that there ſhould be mockers in the laſt time, which ſhould walke after their owne vngodly luſts.

Theſe are makers of Sects, ſenſuall, hauing not the Spirit.

But yee, beloued, edifie your ſelues in your moſt holy faith, praying in the Holy Ghoſt,

And keepe your ſelues in the loue of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, vnto eternall life.

HAuing otherwhere ſpoken of the words of Saint *Iude*, going next before, concerning *Mockers*, which ſhould come in the laſt time, and backſliders, which euen then fell away from the faith of our Lord and Sauiour Ieſus Chriſt; I am now, by the aid of Almighty God, and through the aſſiſtance of his good Spirit, to lay before you the words of Exhortation, which I haue read.

2 Wherein firſt of all, whoſoeuer hath an eye to ſee, let him open it, and he ſhall well perceiue, how carefull the Lord is for his children, how deſirous to ſee them profit and grow vp to a manly ſtature in Chriſt, how loth to haue them any way miſ-lad, either by examples of the wicked, or by enticements of the world, and by prouocation of the fleſh, or by any other meanes forcible to deceiue them, and likely to eſtrange their hearts from God. For God is not at that point with vs, that he careth not whether we ſinke or ſwimme. No, hee hath written our names in the Palme of his hand, in the Signet vpon his finger are we grauen, in ſentences not onely of Mercie, but of Iudgement alſo, we are remembred. Hee neuer denounceth Iudgements againſt the wicked, but hee maketh ſome *Prouiſo* for his children, as it were for ſome certaine priuiledged perſons, *Touch not mine Anointed, doe my Prophets no harme, hurt not the Earth, nor the Sea, nor the Trees, till we haue ſealed the ſeruants of God in their foreheads.* He neuer ſpeaketh of godleſſe men, but he adioyneth words of comfort, or admonition, or exhortation, whereby we are moued to reſt and ſettle our hearts on him. In the ſecond to *Timothy*, the 3. Chapter, *Euill men* (ſaith the Apoſtle)

and

and deceiners ſhall waxe worſe and worſe, deceiuing, and being deceiued. But continue thou in the things which thou haſt learned. And in the firſt to *Timothy*, the ſixt Chapter, *Some men coueting after money, haue erred from the faith, and pierced themſelues thorow with many ſorrowes. But thou, O man of God, flie theſe things, and follow after righteouſneſſe, godlineſſe, faith, loue, patience, meekneſſe.* In the ſecond to the Theſſalonians, the ſecond Chapter, *They haue not receiued the loue of the Truth, that they might be ſaued, God ſhall ſend them ſtrong deluſions, that they may beleeue lyes. But we ought to giue thankes alway to God for you, brethren, beloued of the Lord, becauſe God hath from the beginning choſen you to ſaluation, through ſanctification of the Spirit, and faith in the Truth.* And in his epiſtle of S. *Iude*, *There ſhal come mockers in the laſt time, walking after their owne vngodly luſts. But, beloued, edifie yee your ſelues in your moſt holy faith.*

3 Theſe ſweet Exhortations, which God putteth euery where in the mouthes of the Prophets and Apoſtles of Jeſus Chriſt, are euident tokens, that God ſitteth not in Heauen careleſſe and vnmindfull of our eſtate. Can a mother forget her child? Surely, a mother will hardly forget her child. But if a mother be haply found vnnaturall, and doe forget the fruit of her owne Wombe, yet Gods iudgements ſhew plainely, that hee cannot forget the man whoſe heart he hath framed and faſhioned anew, in ſimplicitie and truth to ſerue and feare him. For when the wickedneſſe of man was ſo great, & the earth ſo filled with crueltie, that it could not ſtand with the righteouſneſſe of God any longer to forbeare, wrathfull ſentences brake out from him, like Wine from a veſſell
Gen. 6.3. & 13. that hath no vent: *My Spirit* (ſaith he) *can ſtruggle and ſtriue no longer, an end of all fleſh is come before mee.* Yet then did *Noah* find grace in the eyes of the
Gen. 6.8. & 18. Lord; *I will eſtabliſh my Couenant with thee* (ſaith God) *thou ſhalt goe into the Arke, thou, and thy ſonnes, and thy wife, and thy ſonnes wiues with thee.*

4 Doe we not ſee what ſhift God doth make for *Lot*, and for his family, in the nineteenth of Geneſis, leſt the fierie deſtruction of the wicked ſhould ouertake him? Ouer-night the Angels make enquirie, what ſonnes or daughters, or ſonnes in law, what wealth and ſubſtance hee had. They charge him to carrie
Gen. 19.12. out all. *Whatſoeuer thou haſt in the Citie, bring it out.* God ſeemeth to ſtand in a kind of feare, leſt ſome thing or other would be left behind. And his will was, that nothing of that which he had, not an hoofe of any beaſt, not a thred of any garment, ſhould be findged with that fire. In the morning the Angels faile
Gen. 19.15. not to call him vp, and to haſten him forward, *Ariſe, take thy wife, and thy daughters which are heere, that they be not deſtroyed in the puniſhment of the Citie.* The Angels hauing ſpoken againe and againe, *Lot* for all this lingereth out the time ſtill, till at the length they were forced to take *both him, and his wife,*
Verſe 16. *and his daughters, by the armes (the Lord being mercifull vnto him)* and to carrie them forth, and ſet them without the Citie.

5 Was there euer any father thus carefull to ſaue his child from the flame? A man would thinke, that now being ſpoken vnto to eſcape for his life, and not to looke behind him, nor to tarrie in the plaine, but to haſten to the mountaine, and there to ſaue himſelfe, he ſhould doe it gladly. Yet behold, now he is ſo farre off from a cheerefull and willing heart to do whatſoeuer is commanded him for his owne weale, that he beginneth to reaſon the matter, as if God

had

had miſtaken one place for another, ſending him to the Hill, when ſaluation was in the Citie. *Not ſo, my Lord, I beſeech thee, Behold, thy ſeruant hath found grace in thy ſight, and thou haſt magnified thy mercie which thou haſt ſhewed vnto me in ſauing my life. I cannot eſcape in the mountaine, leſt ſome euill take mee and I die. Heere is a Citie hard by, a ſmall thing, O let me eſcape thither (is it not a ſmall thing?) and my ſoule ſhall liue.* Well, God is contented to yeeld to any conditions. *Behold, I haue receiued thy requeſt concerning this thing alſo, I will ſpare this Citie, for which thou haſt ſpoken; haſte thee, ſaue thee there. For I can doe nothing till thou come thither.* Verſ. 18.

6 Hee could doe nothing! Not becauſe of the weakneſſe of his ſtrength (for who is like vnto the Lord in power?) but becauſe of the greatneſſe of his mercie, which would not ſuffer him to lift vp his arme againſt that Citie, nor to powre out his wrath vpon that place, where his righteous ſeruant had a fancie to remaine, and a deſire to dwell. O the depth of the riches of the mercie and loue of God! God is afraid to offend vs which are not afraid to diſpleaſe him! God can doe nothing till he haue ſaued vs, which can find in our hearts rather to doe any thing then to ſerue him. It commeneth him not to exempt vs, when the pit is digged for the wicked; to comfort vs at euery mention which is made of reprobates and godleſſe men; to ſaue vs as the apple of his owne eye when fire commeth downe from heauen to conſume the inhabitants of the earth, except euery Prophet, and euery Apoſtle, and euery ſeruant, whom he ſendeth forth, doe come loaden with theſe and the like exhortations, *O beloued, edifie your ſelues in your moſt holy faith. Vine your ſelues in prayer in the Spirit, keepe your ſelues in the loue of God. Looke for the mercie of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt vnto eternall life.*

7 *Edifie your ſelues.* The ſpeech is borrowed from materiall builders, and muſt bee ſpiritually vnderſtood. It appeareth in the 6. of S. *Iohns* Goſpell by the Iewes, that their mouthes did water too much for bodily food, *Our fathers*, ſay they, *did eate Manna in the Deſart, as it is written, He gaue them bread from heauen to eate, Lord, euermore giue vs of this bread!* Our Sauiour, to turne their appetite another way, maketh them this anſwere, *I am the Bread of life, he that commeth to me, ſhall not hunger, and he that beleeueth in me, ſhall neuer thirſt.*

8 An vſuall practice it is of Satan, to caſt heapes of worldly baggage in our way, that whileſt wee deſire to heape vp gold as duſt, wee may be brought at the length to eſteeme vilely that ſpirituall bliſſe. Chriſt, in the 6. of *Matthew*, to correct this euill affection, putteth vs in minde to lay vp treaſure for our ſelues in heauen. The Apoſtle, 1. *Tim.* 3. *chapt.* miſliking the vanitie of thoſe women, which attired themſelues more coſtly, then beſeemed the holineſſe and calling of ſuch as profeſſed the feare of God, willeth them to cloath themſelues with ſhamefaſtneſſe and modeſtie, and to put on the apparell of good workes. *Taliter pigmentata Deum habebitis amatorem*, ſayth *Tertullian*. Put on righteouſneſſe as a garment: in ſtead of Citie, haue Faith, which may cauſe a ſauour of life to iſſue from you, and God ſhall be enamoured, he ſhall be raviſhed with your beautie. Theſe are the ornaments, and bracelets, and iewels, which inflame the loue of Chriſt, and ſet his heart on fire vpon his Spouſe.

Wee ſee, how he breaketh out in the Canticles at the beholding of his mines, How faire art thou, and how pleaſant art thou, O my loue, in theſe pleaſures!

9 And perhaps S. *Iude* exhorteth vs here not to build our houſes, but our ſelues, foreſeeing by the Spirit of the Almightie, which was with him, that there ſhould be men in the laſt dayes like to thoſe in the firſt, which ſhould encourage and ſtirre vp each other to make Bricke, and to burne it in the fire, to build Houſes huge as Cities, and Towres as high as Heauen, thereby to get them a name vpon earth; men that ſhould turne out the poore, and the fatherleſſe, and the Widdow, to build places of reſt for Dogs and Swine in their roomes; men that ſhould lay Houſes of prayer euen with the ground, and make them ſtables where Gods people haue worſhipped before the Lord. Surely this is a vanitie of all vanities, and it is much amongſt men: a ſpeciall ſickneſſe of this age. What it ſhould meane, I know not, except God haue ſet them on worke to prouide fewell againſt that day, when the Lord Ieſus ſhall ſhew himſelfe from Heauen with his mightie Angels in flaming fire.

Eccleſ. 5. What good commeth vnto the owners of theſe things, ſayth *Salomon*, but only the beholding thereof with their eyes? *Martha, Martha, thou buſieſt thy ſelfe about many things, One thing is neceſſarie.* Yee are too buſie, my brethren, with Timber, and Bricke; They haue choſen the better part, they haue taken a better courſe, that build themſelues: Yee are the Temples of the liuing God, as God hath ſaid, I will dwell in them, and will walke in them; and they ſhall be my people, and I will be their God.

10 Which of you will gladly remaine, or abide in a miſ-ſhapen, a ruinous, or a broken houſe? And ſhall we ſuffer ſinne, and vanitie to drop in at our eyes, and at our eares, at euery corner of our bodies, and of our ſoules, knowing that wee are the Temples of the holy Ghoſt? Which of you receiueth a Gueſt, whom he honoureth, or whom he loueth, and doth not ſweepe his Chamber againſt his comming? And ſhall wee ſuffer the chamber of our hearts and conſciences to lie full of vomiting, full of filth, full of garbidge, knowing that Chriſt hath ſaid, I, and my Father will come, and dwell with you? Is it meete for your Oxen to lie in Parlours, and your ſelues to lodge in Cribs? Or is it ſeemely for your ſelues to dwell in your ſetled houſes, and the houſe of the Almightie to lie waſte, whoſe houſe yee are your ſelues? Doe not our eyes behold, how God euery day ouertaketh the wicked in their iourneyes, how ſuddenly they pop downe into the pit? how Gods iudgements for their ſinnes come ſo ſwiftly vpon them, that they haue not the leaſure to ſo-ſie, Aint? how their life is cut off like a threed in a moment? how they paſſe like a ſhadow? how they open their mouthes to ſpeake, and God ſtaketh them euen in the midſt of a vaine or an idle word? And dare wee for all this lie downe, take our reſt, ſaue our meate ſecurely and carelеſſly in the midſt of ſo great and ſo many ruines? Bleſſed and praiſed for euer and euer be his name, who perceiuing of how fraileſſe and brauie mettall wee are made, hath inſtituted in his Church a ſpirituall Supper, and an holy Communion, to be celebrated often, that wee might thereby be occaſioned often to examine the ſe buildings of ours, in what caſt they ſtand. For ſith God doth not

The Sacrament of the Lords Supper.

dwell

dwell in Temples which are vncleane, ſith a Shrine cannot bee a Sanctuarie vnto him; and this Supper is receiued as a ſeale vnto vs, that wee are his Houſe and his Sanctuarie; that his Chriſt is as truly vnited to mee, and I to him, as my arme is vnited and knit vnto my ſhoulder; that Hee dwelleth in mee as verily, as the elements of Bread and Wine abide within mee; which perſwaſion, by receiuing theſe dreadfull myſteries, wee profeſſe our ſelues to haue a due comfort, if truly; and if in hypocriſie, then woe worth vs. Therefore ere wee put forth our hands to take this bleſſed Sacrament, wee are charged to examine and to trie our hearts, whether God bee in vs of a truth, or no: and if by faith and loue vnfained wee be found the Temples of the holy Ghoſt, then to iudge, whether we haue had ſuch regard euery one to our building, that the Spirit which dwelleth in vs hath no way beene vexed, moleſted, and grieued: or if it haue, as no doubt ſometimes it hath by incredulitie, ſometimes by breach of charitie, ſometimes by want of zeale, ſometimes by ſpots of life, euen in the beſt and moſt perfect amongſt vs (for who can ſay, his heart is cleane?) O then, to flye vnto God by vnfained repentance, to fall downe before him in the humilitie of our ſoules, begging of him whatſoeuer is needfull to repaire our decayes, before wee fall into that deſolation whereof the Prophet ſpeaketh, ſaying, *Thy breach is great like the Sea, who can heale thee?* Lam. 2. 13.

11 Receiuing the Sacrament of the Supper of the Lord after this ſort, (you that are Spirituall, iudge what I ſpeake) is not all other Wine like the Water of *Marah*, being compared to the Cup, which we bleſſe? Is not *Manna* like to gall, and our bread like to *Manna?* Is there not a taſt, a taſt of Chriſt Ieſus, in the heart of him that eateth? Doth not hee which drinketh, behold plainely in this Cup, that his ſoule is bathed in the bloud of the Lambe? O beloued in our Lord and Sauiour Ieſus Chriſt, if yee will taſt how ſweet the Lord is, if ye will receiue the King of Glorie, *Build your ſelues.*

12 *Young men*, I ſpeake this to you; for yee are his Houſe, becauſe by faith ye are Conquerors ouer *Satan*, and haue ouercome that euill. *Fathers*, I ſpeake it alſo to you; yee are his Houſe, becauſe yee haue knowne him, which is from the beginning. Sweet *Babes*, I ſpeake it euen to you alſo; yee are his Houſe, becauſe your ſinnes are forgiuen you for his Names ſake. *Matrons* and *Siſters*, I may not hold it from you; yee are alſo the Lords building, and, as S. *Peter* ſpeaketh, heires of the grace of life as well as wee. Though it be forbidden you to open your mouthes in publike Aſſemblies, yet yee muſt be inquiſitiue in things concerning this building, which is of God, with your huſbands and friends at home; not as *Dalila* with *Samſon*, but as *Sara* with *Abraham*, whoſe daughters yee are, whileſt yee doe well, and build your ſelues.

13 Hauing ſpoken thus farre of the Exhortation, as whereby wee are called vpon to edifie and build our ſelues; it remayneth now, that wee conſider the thing preſcribed, namely, wherein wee muſt bee built. This preſcription ſtandeth alſo vpon two points, the *thing* preſcribed, and the *adiuncts* of the *thing*. And that is our moſt pure and *holy faith*.

14 The thing preſcribed is *Faith*. For as in a chaine, which is made of many linkes, if you pull the firſt, you draw the reſt; and as in a Ladder of many

ſtaues, if you take away the loweſt, all hope of aſcending to the higheſt, will be remooued: So, becauſe all the Precepts and Promiſes in the Law and in the Goſpell doe hang vpon this, *Beleeue*; and becauſe the laſt of the graces of God doth ſo follow the firſt, that hee glorifieth none, but whom hee hath iuſtified, nor iuſtifieth any, but whom he hath called to a true, effectuall, and liuely faith in Chriſt Ieſus; therefore *S. Iude* exhorting vs to *build our ſelues*, mentioneth here expreſly onely faith, as the thing wherein we muſt be edified, for that faith is the ground and the glorie of all the wel-fare of this building.

Ephe. 2. 19 *Yee are not ſtrangers and forainers, but Citizens with the Saints, and of the houſhold of God* (ſaith the Apoſtle) *and are built vpon the foundation of the Prophets and Apoſtles, Ieſus Chriſt himſelfe being the chiefe corner Stone, in whom all the building being coupled together, groweth vnto an holy Temple in the Lord, in whom yee alſo are built together to be the habitation of God by the Spirit.* And wee are the habitation of God by the Spirit, if wee beleeue. For it is written, Whoſoeuer confeſſeth, that Ieſus is the Sonne of God, in him God dwelleth, and he in God. The ſtrength of this habitation is great; it preuaileth againſt Satan; it conquereth Sinne; it hath Death in deriſion; neyther Principalities, nor Powers, can throw it downe; it leadeth the World captiue, and bringeth euery enemie, that riſeth vp againſt it, to confuſion and ſhame, and all by faith; for this is the victorie that ouercommeth the World, euen our faith. Who is it that ouercommeth the World, but he which beleeueth, that Ieſus is the Sonne of God?

1. Iohn 4. 1. Iohn 5. 16 The ſtrength of euery Building, which is of God, ſtandeth not in any mans armes, or legges; it is onely in our faith, as the valour of *Samſon* lay onely in his haire. This is the reaſon, why we are ſo earneſtly called vpon to *edifie our ſelues in faith*. Not as if this bare action of our minds, whereby we beleeue the Goſpel of Chriſt, were able in it ſelfe, as of it ſelfe, to make vs vnconquerable, and inuincible, like ſtones, which abide in the building for euer, and fall not out. No, it is not the worthineſſe of our beleeuing, it is the vertue of him in whom we beleeue, by which we ſtand ſure, as houſes that are builded vpon a Rocke. He is a Wiſeman, which hath builded his houſe vpon a Rocke; for hee hath choſen a good foundation, and no doubt his houſe will ſtand. But how ſhall it ſtand? Verily, by the ſtrength of the Rocke which beareth it, and by nothing elſe. Our fathers, whom God deliuered out of the Land of Ægypt, were a people that had no Peeres amongſt the Nations of the Earth, becauſe they were built by faith vpon the Rocke, which Rocke is Chriſt. *And the Rock* (ſaith the Apoſtle in the firſt to the Corinthians, the tenth Chapter) *did follow him.* Whereby we learne not onely this, that being built by faith on Chriſt as on a Rocke, and grafted into him as into an Oliue, wee receiue all our ſtrength and fatneſſe from him; but alſo, that this ſtrength and fatneſſe of ours ought to be no cauſe why we ſhould be high-minded, and not worke out our ſaluation with a reuerent trembling, and holy feare. For if thou boaſteſt thy ſelfe of thy faith, know this, That Chriſt choſe his Apoſtles, his Apoſtles choſe not him; that Iſrael followed not the Rocke, but the Rocke followed Iſrael; and that thou beareſt not the Roote, but the Roote thee. So that euery heart muſt this thinke, and euery tongue muſt thus ſpeake, *Not vnto vs, O Lord, not vnto*

Rom. 7.

Rom. 11.

vs,

vs, nor vnto any thing which is within vs, but vnto thy Name onely, onely to thy Name, belongeth all the praise of all the Treasures and Riches of euery Temple which is of God. This excludeth all boasting and vaunting of our faith.

17 But this must not make vs careleſſe to edifie our ſelues in faith. It is the Lord that deliuereth mens ſoules from death, but not except they put their truſt in his mercie. It is God that hath giuen vs eternall life, but no otherwiſe then thus, If we beleeue in the name of the Sonne of God; for hee that hath not the Sonne of God, hath not life. It was the Spirit of the Lord which came vpon *Samſon*, and made him ſtrong to teare a Lyon as a man would rent a Kid: but his ſtrength forſooke him, and he became like other men when the Razor had touched his head. It is the power of God whereby the faithfull haue ſubdued kingdomes, wrought righteouſneſſe, obtayned the promiſes, ſtopped the mouthes of Lyons, quenched the violence of fire, eſcaped the edge of the ſword: But take away their faith, and doth not their ſtrength forſake them? are they not like vnto other men? 1. Ioh. 5.

18 If yee deſire yet farther to know how neceſſarie and needfull it is, that wee edifie and build vp our ſelues in faith, marke the words of the bleſſed Apoſtle, *Without faith it is impoſſible to pleaſe God.* If I offer vnto God all the Sheepe and Oxen that are in the world, if all the Temples that were builded ſince the dayes of *Adam* till this houre, were of my foundation, if I breake my very heart with calling vpon God, and weare out my tongue with Preaching, if I ſacrifice my bodie and my ſoule vnto him, *and haue no faith*, all this auayleth nothing. *Without faith it is impoſſible to pleaſe God.* Our Lord and Sauiour therefore being asked in the ſixt of S. *Iohns* Goſpell *What ſhall we doe that we might worke the workes of God*, maketh anſwer, *This is the worke of God, that yee beleeue in him, whom he hath ſent.* No pleaſing of God without faith.

19 That no worke of ours, no building of our ſelues in any thing can be auaileable or profitable vnto vs, except we be edified and built in faith, what need wee to ſeeke about for long proofe? Looke vpon Iſrael, once the very choſen and peculiar of God, to whom the adoption of the faithfull, and the glorie of Cherubins, and the couenants of mercie, and the law of *Moſes*, and the ſeruice of God, and the promiſes of Chriſt were made impropriate, who not onely were the off-ſpring of *Abraham*, father vnto all them which doe beleeue, but Chriſt their off-ſpring, which is God to bee bleſſed for euermore.

20 Conſider this people, and learne, what it is to *build your ſelues in faith*. They were the Lords Vine: hee brought it out of Egypt, hee threw out the Heathen from their places, that it might be planted, he made roome for it, and cauſed it to take roote, till it had filled the earth, the mountaines were couered with the ſhadow of it, and the boughes thereof were as the goodly Cedars. Shee ſtretched out her branches vnto the ſea, and her bought vnto the riuer. But when God hauing ſent both his ſeruants and his Sonne to viſite this Vine, they neither feared the one, nor reuered the other, but ſtoned the Prophets, and crucified the Lord of glorie which came vnto them, then began the curſe of God to come vpon them, euen the curſe whereof the Prophet *Dauid* hath

Pſal. 69. Rom. 11. spoken, saying, *Let their table be made a snare, and a net, and a stumbling block, even for a recompence vnto them, let their eyes be darkened, that they doe not see, bow downe their backes for euer*, keepe them downe. And hitherto the houre, that the measure of their infidelitie was first made vp, they haue beene spoyled with warres, eaten vp with plagues, spent with hunger and famine: they wander from place to place, and are become the most base and contemptible people that are vnder the Sunne. *Ephraim*, which before was a terrour vnto nations, and they trembled at his voice, is now by infidelitie so vile, that he sheweth as a thing cast out, to be trampled vnder mens feet. In the midst of these desolations they cry, *Returne, wee beseech thee, O God of hosts, looke downe from heauen, behold and visit this Vine:* but their very prayers are turned into sin, and their cryes are no better then the lowing of beasts before him. *Well*, layth the Apostle, *By their vnbeliefe they are broken off, and thou dost stand by thy faith. Behold therefore the bountifulnesse and seuerity of God, towards them seueritie, because they haue fallen, bountifulnesse towards thee, if thou continue in his bountifulnesse, or else thou shalt be cut off.* If they forsake their vnbeliefe, and bee grafted in againe, and wee at any time for the hardnesse of our hearts be broken off, it will be at such a iudgement as will amaze all the powers and principalities which are aboue. Who hath searched the counsell of God concerning this secret? and who doth not see that *infidelitie* doth threaten *Lo-ammi* vnto the Gentiles, as it hath brought *Lo-ruhama* vpon the Iewes? It may be that these words seeme darke vnto you. But the words of the Apostle in the eleuenth to the *Romans*, are plaine enough, *If God haue not spared the naturall branches, take heed, take heed, lest he spare not thee.* Build thy selfe in faith. Thus much of the thing which is prescribed, and wherein we are exhorted to edifie our selues. Now consider the *conditions* and *properties*, which are in this place annexed vnto faith. The former of them (for there are but two) is this, *Edifie your selues in your faith.*

Hoſ. 1. 9. not my people. Verſ. 6. not obtaining mercy.

21. A strange, and a strong delusion it is wherewith the *man of sinne* hath bewitched the world; a forcible spirit of errour it must needs be, which hath brought men to such a senselesse and vnreasonable perswasion as this is, not only that men cloathed with mortalitie and sinne, as wee our selues are, can doe God so much seruice, as shall be able to make a full and a perfect satisfaction before the Tribunall seate of God for their owne sinnes, yea a great deale more, then is sufficient for themselues; But also that a man at the hands of a Bishop or a Pope, for such or such a price, may buy the *merits* of other mens merits, purchase the fruits of other mens labours, and build his soule by another mans faith. Is not this wee drowned in the gall of bitternesse? Is his heart right in the sight of God? Can hee haue any part or fellowship with *Peter*, and with the *successors of Peter*, which thinketh so vilely of building the precious Temple of the holy Ghost? Let his money perish with him, and he with it, because he iudgeth, that the gift of God may be sold for money.

22. But, Beloued in the Lord, deceiue not your selues, neither suffer you your selues to be deceiued: you can receiue no more ease nor comfort for your soules by another mans faith, then warmth for your bodies by another mans clothes, or sufficiencie by the bread which another doth eate. The iust shall liue

liue by his *owne faith. Let a Saint, yea a Martyr content himselfe, that he hath cleansed himselfe of his owne sinnes*, saith *Tertullian*. No *Saint* or *Martyr* can cleanse himselfe of his owne sinnes. But if so bee a *Saint*, or a *Martyr* can cleanse himselfe of his owne sinnes, it is sufficient that hee can doe it for himselfe. Did euer any man by his death deliuer another man from death, except onely the Sonne of God? he indeed was able to *Ransome* a Theefe from the Crosse to Paradise: for to this end he came, that being himselfe pure from sinne, hee might obey for sinners. Thou which thinkest to doe the like, and supposest, that thou canst iustifie another by thy righteousnesse, if thou be without sinne, then lay downe thy life for thy brother, die for me. But if thou be a sinner, euen as I am a sinner, how can the Oyle of thy Lampe bee sufficient both for thee, and for me? *Virgins*, that are wise, get yee Oyle, while yee haue day, into your owne Lampes. For out of all peraduenture, others, though they would, can neither giue nor sell. Edifie your selues in your *owne* most holy faith. And let this be obserued for the first *propertie* of that, wherein we ought to edifie our selues.

23 Our faith being such, is that indeed which S. *Iude* doth here terme *Faith*, namely, a thing most *holy*. The reason is this. We are iustified by *Faith*. For *Abraham* beleeued, and this was imputed vnto him for righteousnesse. Being iustified, all our iniquities are couered; God beholdeth vs in the righteousnesse which is imputed, and not in the sinnes which wee haue committed.

24 It is true, wee are full of sinne, both *originall* and *actuall*, whosoeuer denyeth it, is a double sinner, for he is both a *sinner* and a *liar*. To denie sinne, is most plainely and cleerely to confesse it, because hee that saith, hee hath no sinne, lyeth, and by lying, proueth that he hath sinne.

25 But *imputation* of righteousnesse hath couered the sinnes of euery soule which beleeueth; God by pardoning our sinne, hath taken it away. So that now, although our transgressions be multiplied aboue the haires of our head, yet being iustified, wee are as free, and as cleere, as if there were no one sinne or spice of any vncleannesse in vs. For it is God that iustifieth, and who shall lay any thing to the charge of Gods chosen? saith the Apostle in the eight chapter to the Romans.

26 Now sinne being taken away, wee are made the righteousnesse of God in Christ. For *Dauid* speaking of this righteousnesse, saith, *Blessed is he whose iniquities are forgiuen*. No man is blessed, but in the righteousnesse of God. Euery man whole sinne is taken away, is blessed. Therefore euery man whole sinne is couered, is hyde the righteousnesse of God in Christ. This righteousnesse doth make vs to appeare most holy, most pure, most vnblameable before him.

27 This then is the fruite of that which thy Faith doth build, Iustification washeth away sinne; Sinne remoued, we are clothed with the righteousnesse which is of God; the righteousnesse of God maketh vs most holy. Euery of these 3 haue proued by the testimonie of Gods owne mouth. Therefore I conclude, that faith is that which maketh vs most holy, in consideration whereof, it is called in this place, *Our most holy Faith*.

28 To

28. To make a wicked and a sinfull man most holy through his beleeuing, is more then to create a World of nothing. Our faith most holy? Surely, *Salomon* could not shew the Queene of *Saba* so much treasure in all his Kingdome, as is layd vp in these words. O that our hearts were stretched out like tents, and that the eyes of our vnderstanding were as bright as the Sunne, that we might throughly know the riches of the glorious inheritance of Saints, and what is the exceeding greatnesse of his power towards vs, whom he accepteth for pure, and most holy, through our beleeuing. O that the Spirit of the Lord would giue this doctrine entrance into the stonie and brazen heart of the Iew, which followeth the Law of Righteousnesse, but cannot attaine vnto the righteousnesse of the Law? Wherefore? sayth the Apostle. They seeke righteousnesse, and not by faith. Wherefore they stumble at Christ, they are bruised, shiuered to pieces as a Ship that hath runne her selfe vpon a rocke. O that God would cast downe the eyes of the proud, and humble the soules of the high-minded, that they might at the length abhorre the garments of their owne flesh, which cannot hide their nakednesse, and put on the faith of Christ Iesus, as he did put it on, which hath said; *Doubtlesse I thinke all things but losse, for the excellent knowledge sake of Christ Iesus my Lord, for whom I haue counted all things losse, and do iudge them so to be dung, that I might winne Christ, and might be found in him, not having mine owne righteousnesse, which is of the Law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, euen the righteousnesse which is of God through faith.* O that God would open the Arke of mercie, wherein this doctrine lyeth, and lay it wide before the eyes of poore afflicted consciences, which flie vp and downe vpon the water of their afflictions, and can see nothing but onely the gulfe and deluge of their sinnes, wherein there is no place for them to rest their feet. The God of peace and compassion giue you all strength and courage, euery day, and euery houre, and euery moment, to build and edifie your selues in this most pure and holy faith. And thus much both of the thing prescribed in this Exhortation, and also of the properties of edifying, *Build your selues in your most holy faith.* I would come to the next branch, which is of *Prayer*, but I cannot lay this matter out of my hands, till I haue added somewhat for the applying of it both to others and to our selues.

29. For your better vnderstanding of matters contayned in this Exhortation, *Build your selues*, you must note, that euery Church and Congregation doth consist of a multitude of beleeuers, as euery house is built of many stones. And although the nature of the mysticall bodie of the Church be such, that it admitteth no distinction in the indiuisible members, be it whether it be *Paul* or *Apollos*, Peter or Prophet, he that is rough, or he that teacheth, all are equally Christs, and Christ is equally theirs: yet in the externall administration of the Church of God, because God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, it is necessarie, that in euery Congregation there be a distinction, if not of inward dignitie, yet of outward degree: for that all are Saints, or seeme to bee Saints, and should be as they seeme, *Are they all Apostles?* If the whole bodie were an eye, where were then the hearing? God therefore hath giuen some to be Apostles, and some to be Pastours, &c. for the edification of the bodie of

Christ.

Christ. In which worke wee are Gods labourers (sayth the Apostle) and yee are Gods husbandrie, and Gods building.

30 The Church respected with reference vnto administration Ecclesiasticall, doth generally consist but of two sorts of men, the *Labourers*, and the *Building*; they which are ministred vnto, and they to whom the worke of the Ministerie is committed; *Pallours*, and the *Flocke*, ouer whom the holy Ghost hath made them ouerseers. If the *Guide* of a Congregation, by whatsoeuer name or in what degree whatsoeuer, bee diligent in his vocation, feed the flocke of God which dependeth vpon him, caring for it not by constraint, but willingly, not for filthie lucre, but of a readie mind, not as though he would tyrannize ouer Gods heritage, but as a patterne vnto the flocke, wisely guiding them: if the people in their degree doe yeald themselues frameable to the truth, not like rough stone or flint, refusing to be smoothed and squared for the building: if the Magistrate doe carefully and diligently suruey the whole order of the worke, prouiding by statutes and lawes, and bodily punishments, if need require, that all things may be done according to the rule which cannot deceiue, euen as *Moses* prouided that all things might be done according to the patterne which he saw in the Mount, there the words of this exhortation are truely and effectually heard. Of such a Congregation euery man will say, *Behold a people that are wise, a people that walke in the Statutes and Ordinances of their God, a people full of knowledge and vnderstanding, a people that haue skill in building themselues.* Where it is otherwise, there, *as by slothfulnesse, the roofe doth decay*; and as *by idlenesse of hands, the house droppeth thorow*, as it is in the 10. of Ecclesiastes, verse. 18. so first one piece, and then another of their building shall fall away, till there be not a stone left vpon a stone.

31 We see how fruitlesse this exhortation hath beene to such as bend all their trauaile only to build and manage a *Papacie* vpon earth, without any care in the world of building themselues in their most holy faith. Gods people haue enquired at their mouthes, *What shall we doe to haue eternally life?* Wherein shall wee build and edifie our selues? And they haue departed home from their Prophets, and from their Priests, laden with doctrines, which are precepts of men; they haue beene taught to tire out themselues with bodily exercise; those things are inioyned them, which God did neuer require at their hands, and the things he doth require, are kept from them; their eyes are fed with pictures, and their eares filled with melodie, but their soules doe wither, and starue, and pine away; they crye for bread, and behold, stones are offered them; they aske for fish, and see, they haue Scorpions in their hands: Thou seest, O Lord, that they build themselues, but not in faith; they feed their children, but not with food; Their Rulers say with shame, Bring, and not build. But God is righteous; their drunkennesse stinketh, their abominations are knowne, their madnesse is manifest, the wind hath bound them vp in her wings, and they shall be ashamed of their doings. *Ephraim*, sayth the Prophet, is ioyned to idols, let him alone, I will turne me therefore from the Priests, which doe minister vnto idols, and apply this exhortation to them, whom God hath appointed to feed his chosen in Israel.

32 If there bee any feeling of Christ, and drop of heauenly dew, or any sparke

ſparke of Gods good Spirit within you, ſtirre it vp, bee carefull to build and edifie, firſt your ſelues, and then your flockes in this moſt holy faith.

33 I ſay, *firſt your ſelues*; For, hee which will fire the heart of other men with fire, with the loue of Chriſt, muſt himſelfe burne with loue. It is want of faith in our ſelues, my Brethren, which maketh vs * vnapt and vnable in building others: Wee forſake the Lords inheritance, and feed it not. What is the reaſon of this? Our owne deſires are ſettled where they ſhould not be. We our ſelues are like thoſe women which haue a longing to eate coales, and haue vile filth; wee are fed, ſome with honour, ſome with eaſe, ſome with wealth; the Goſpell waxeth lothſome and vnpleaſant in our taſte; how ſhould wee then haue a care to feed others with that, which we cannot fancie our ſelues? If *faith* waxe cold, and ſlender, in the *heart* of the *Prophet*, it will ſoone perish from the eares of the people. The Prophet *Amos* ſpeaketh of a famine, ſaying, *I will ſend a famine in the Land, not a famine of bread, nor a thirſt of water, but of hearing the Word of the Lord. Men ſhall wander from ſea to ſea, and from the North vnto the Eaſt ſhall they runne to and fro, to ſeeke the Word of the Lord, and ſhall not find it. Iudgement muſt beginne at the houſe of God*, ſayth *Peter*. Yea, I ſay, at the Sanctuarie of God, this iudgement muſt beginne. This famine muſt beginne at the heart of the Prophet: Hee muſt haue darkeneſſe for a viſion, hee muſt ſtumble at noone dayes, as at the twi-light; and then truth ſhall fall in the middeſt of the ſtreets, then ſhall the people wander from ſea to ſea, and from the North, vnto the Eaſt ſhall they runne to and fro, to ſeeke the Word of the Lord.

* Careleſſe.

Amos 8. 11.

Verſ. 12.

1. *Pet.* 4. 17.

34 In the ſecond of HAGGAI, *Speake now*, ſayth God, to his Prophet, *Speake now to* Zerubbabel, *the ſonne of* Shealtiel, *Prince of Iudah, and to* Iehoſhua, *the ſonne of* Iehozadak *the high Prieſt, and to the reſidue of the people, ſaying, Who is left among you, that ſaw this houſe in her firſt glorie, and how doe you ſee it now? Is not this houſe in your eyes, in compariſon of it, as nothing?* The Prophet would haue all mens eyes turned to the view of themſelues, euery ſort brought to the conſideration of their preſent ſtate. This is no place to ſhew what dutie *Zerubbabel* or *Iehoſhua* doth owe vnto God in this reſpect. They haue, I doubt not, ſuch as put them hereof in remembrance. I aske of you, which are a part of the reſidue of Gods Elect and choſen people: Who is there amongſt you, that hath taken a ſuruey of the Houſe of God, as it was in the dayes of the bleſſed Apoſtles of Ieſus Chriſt? Who is there amongſt you, that hath ſeene and conſidered this holy Temple in her firſt glorie? And how doe you ſee it now? Is it not in compariſon of the other, almoſt as nothing, when ye looke vpon them that haue vndertaken the charge of your ſoules, and know how farre theſe are for the moſt part growne out of kind, how few there bee that treade the ſteps of their ancient Predeceſſors, yee are eaſily filled with indignation, eaſily drawne vnto theſe complaints, wherein the difference of preſent, from former times, is bewailed, eaſily perſwaded to thinke of them that liued to enioy the dayes which now are gone. Surely they were happie in compariſon of vs that haue ſucceeded them: were not their Biſhops men vnreproueable, wiſe, righteous, holy, temperate, well reported of, euen of thoſe which were without? were not their Paſtors, Guides, and Teachers, able and

willing

willing to exhort with wholsome doctrine, and to improue which gainesaid the Truth? had they Priests made of the refuse of the people? were men, like to the children which were in *Ninineh*, vnable to discerne betweene the right hand and the left, presented to the charge of their Congregation? did their Teachers leaue their flockes ouer which the holy Ghost had made them ouerseers? did their Prophets enter vpon holy things as spoiles, without a reuerend calling? were their Leaders so vnkindly affected towards them, that they could find in their hearts to sell them as sheepe or Oxen, not caring how they made them away? But beloued, deceiue not your selues. Doe the faults of your Guides and Pastors offend you? It is your fault if they bee thus faulcie. *Nullus qui malum rectorem patitur, eum accuset, quia sui fuit meriti pernersi Pastoris subiacere ditioni*, sayth S. *Gregorie*, whosoeuer thou art whom the inconuenience of an euill Gouernour doth presse, accuse thy selfe, and not him. His being such, is thy deseruing. *O yee disobedient children, turne againe*, sayth the Lord, *and then will I giue you Pastors according to mine owne heart, which shall feed you with knowledge and vnderstanding*. So that the onely way to repaire all ruines, breaches, and offensiue decayes in others, is to beginne reformation at your selues. Which that we may all sincerely, seriously, and speedily doe, God the Father grant for his Sonne our Sauiour Iesus sake, vnto whom with the holy Ghost, three Persons, one Eternall and Euerlasting God, be honor, and glorie, and praise for euer.

Ier.3.14.15.

AMEN.

FINIS.

willing to exhort with wholsome doctrine, and to improue which gainesaid
the truth? and they Priests made of the refuse of the people? were men, like
to the children which were in Aegypt, vnable to discerne betweene the right
hand and the left, preferred to the charge of their Congregation? did not
Caesars leaue their Eagles ouer which the holy Ghost had made them ouer-
seers? did their Prophets enter vpon holy charges (poore, without a reue-
rend calling? were their Leaders so vnkindly affected towards them, that they
could find in their hearts to call them as Iacob, nor caring how they
made them away? But beloued, decease not your labors. Lose the fruits of
your Guides and Pastors sweat you? It is your fruit they see thats lasting.

In 3.1.17.

dos, God the Father grant for his Sonne our Sauiour Iesus Christ, who
whom with the holy Ghost, three Persons, one Eternall
and Euerliuing God, be honor and glorie,
and praise for euer.
AMEN.

FINIS.

AN ALPHABETICALL TABLE, CONTAINING ALL THE PRINCIPALL MATTERS HANDLED IN THE FIRST FOVRE BOOKES, OF THE ECCLESIASTICALL Politie.

Action, any thing by which Actions are framed is a Law, 6. Angelicall Actions how reduced, 10. Man bound to imitate God in his Actions, 11. What are the fountaines of humane Actions, 14. Whether Actions are rewardable. 24

Agents, the Law which Agents must keepe. 6

Ambrose. 36

Anaxagoras. 4

Argument, see Disputation.

Aristotle. 61

Assertion, see *Position*.

Authoritie, the force of humane Authoritie. 77

Augustine, 21.34.40.62.75.106.128. 131.159.166.

Angels, what Law they obey, 9. Considerations of Angels. 10

Authour, his cause of writing this Booke, and the severall inducements. 23

Bishop, the Bishop of Salisburie, his Answere to Master *Harding*. 68 69

Benefit, the benefite of keeping Reasons Lawes. 23

Calvine. 87.159

Canons, Ecclesiasticall Canons how made. 105

Ceremonies, all Ceremonies are not left to the order of the Church, 119 The vse of Ceremonies in our Church, 128. What is condemned in our Ceremonies, 130. Our Ceremonies accused of Popishnesse, and the answere, 134. That it is lawfull to vse some Ceremonies which the Church of Rome hath, 136. That we are not to abolish our Ceremonies for any of the Adversaries

saries Reasons, 143. The vse of the Papists Ceremonies greatly to hope to the Popish Religion, 144. Of the griefe which they say godly men take at the vse of Popish Ceremonies answered, 146. Touching the Papists taking some Ceremonies from the Iewes answered, 147. That difference in Ceremonies should not breed controuersies, 153. The Allegation that our Ceremonies hauing beene abused by Idolatrie are scandalous, and the answere, 154. That wee should abolish our Ceremonies as other reformed Churches haue done, is answered, 158. There should be an vnitie, both in Ceremonies and Doctrine, 159. The Ceremonies of Rome to be chosen before the Ceremonies of the Turkes, 170. The Aduersaries contradicting himselfe in expounding Ceremonies. 134

Christ, his Lawes not abated, 120. Whether Christ haue forbidden the change of Lawes. 112

Church, what it is, and why Politicke Lawes are required, 82. Whether the forme of Church Policie be necessarie to be set down in the Scriptures, 89. The difference betweene matters of Church Policie and matters of Faith, 90. What they meant that pleaded against the Policie of the Church of England, 93. A wrong to all Churches, to condemne Ecclesiasticall Lawes, 94. A shift to maintaine that nothing ought to bee established in the Church which is not commanded in Scripture, and the answere, *ibid.* 95. Another deuise to maintaine the former Position, and the answere, 97. Sixe other Proofes for the same, 98. 99. 100. 101. The examples of the eldest Churches doth not approue vs, 102. Churches compared rather to Families then the Statutes of one Familie, 106. The establishment of Ecclesiasticall Lawes in the Churches of England, 163

Cyprian, 61.

Command, the exposition of the word commanded. 97

Constantine the Emperour, his opinion of the Feast of Easter. 148

Corruption, a corrupt Bodie is inimicall to the Soule. 16

Creator, he made the World by Reason, not Hands, 4. He proceeded by a set and certaine way in the Creation, *Ibid.* see *Good.*

D

Discipline, it is a part of the Gospell. 110

Disputation, how the Fathers doe dispute, 65. Cautions of disputing from Diuine authoritie negatiuely, 66. Disputation from Humane authoritie. 70

E

Edward the sixt, King of England termed a Saint. 167

Elizabeth, Queene of England her praise, and great worke in Religion. 168

Ephemias, the first man that receiued the Christian Faith in Acchaia. 162

Experience, that which Experience hath allowed is not to be condemned. 69

Faith, the difference betwixt Faith and Pollicie. 8

Fathers, the number of their differing, &c. The first Answere taken from the Fathers answered. 77

Felicitie, what Creatures are of and who not. 35

Forme, what it is in Man and in other Creatures. 8

God, that God being the Author of Lawes, God yet is not any reason to prove Lawes vnchangeable, 108. God hath left a prescript forme of government, 113. The course which God teacheth is not against our conformitie with the Church of Rome, 137. See *Creator*.

Gregorie, his charitable speech to *Leander*. 83

Hardie, against the Bishop of Salisburie, and the Bishops answere. 62. 69

Heaven, it hard to find out the things in Heaven. 16

Henry the eight, King of England, the first which put downe Superstition. 167

Hilarie, 82

Hooker, his Oracle. 8

Horne, 4

Iarret. 47

Iesus. 86

Iupiter, his counsell fulfilled. 4

Knowledge is the fountaine of humane Actions. 14

Law, the Law which God is, himselfe before all beginnings, to doe all things by, 2. The law which naturall Agents haue giuen them to obserue, and how to keepe it, 6. What a Law is, *Ibid.* The diuerſitie of Lawes, *Ibid.* 47. The Law which Angels worke by, 9. The Law by which man must Imitate God in his Actions, 11. How men be apt to vnderstand the Law, 12. Of Lawes grounded vpon mans Will, 13. The finding out of Lawes by Reason, 16. On what all Lawes consist, 20. The benefit of keeping of Reasons Lawes, 23. Supernaturall Lawes how inferred by God, 33. The cause why Naturall and Rationall Lawes are set downe in the Scriptures, 38. The benefit of diuers Lawes, 39. 40. Of Lawes politique, 44. All Church Lawes not to be condemned, 94. Good Lawes for the rule of the Church may bee made by the aduice of men, 105. Lawes are not vnchangeable, 108. The

Laws of Christ not abrogated, 120.
3 Of eleuen Ordinances to prooue that our Church Lawes are lawfull, 120. 121. 122. 123. Lawes made against the Iewes, 152. All positiue Lawes of men may be established.
Light, see Vnitie.

M

Man, God in his Creation, 11. Mans first knowledge of the Law, which
Marcionites Testimonie.
Master, the attributes of
Matter, of the Law of Nature,
Minister, a preaching
Mirth, a Question of his concluded.
Scripture, the sufficiencie of Scriptures, 41. What the Scriptures doe containe, 45. The Scriptures direct a man in all his Actions.
The Scripture doth deny the thing it poteth not, 63. Nothing is taken from the Scriptures which may
Societies, how Societies were founded and gouerned, 24. How Societies stand and continue. 25. 26. &c.
Soule,

on Psalme 4. Of the Church Politie, 89. What is to be the Politie to haue no agreement with the Church of Rome.
Position, the Aduersaries first Position answered, 54. The first proofe thereof answered, 55. The second proofe answered, 56. The third proofe answered, 57. The fourth answered.
Precepts, the seuen Precepts which
God to the sonnes of Noah.
Creation.

R

Reason, how Reason findeth out Lawes, 8. The benefite
Reason, how Reason teacheth men to make Lawes, 24. How Reason
a preaching
The course which God
Christ is not against all our conformitie with the Church of Rome,
See Creation.
Christ, his charitable speech to
Coine, a Question of his concluded.

T

Tithes.
Church Lawes not to be condemned, 94. Good Lawes for the rule of the Church may bee made by the aduice of men, 105.
Politie, how Politie is grounded

Soule, what is iniurious to it. 16
Stroke. 46
Supernaturall, how Supernaturall Lawes were made knowne. 33

T

Tarquine, a Consull in Rome, banisht onely because his name was *Tarquine*. 166
Tertullian: 62.63.64.65.83.88.99. 110.133.151.162.
Theophraſt. 18
Thomas Aquinas. 106
Traditions disproued. 40
Truth, how it is ioyned to this worke. 77

V

Vnitie, how Vnitie is allowed 159. The manner of Vnitie betweene Churches described. *Ibid.*

W

Whitaker, his confutation of *Bellarmine*. 44
Will, of Mans Will whereon Lawes are made, 13. Will a Fountaine of humane Actions. 14
Wiſedome, the course which Gods Wiſedome teacheth is not against our conformitie with the Church of Rome. 137
Words, how to be taken. 150

Z

Zonaras. 51

FINIS.

FINIS.

AN ALPHABETICALL TABLE, CONTAINING ALL THE PRINCIPALL MATTERS MENTIONED IN THE FIRT BOOKS of *Ecclesiasticall Politie*, and in the *Dinine Tractates*, and other godly Sermons of Master RICHARD HOOKER.

Action, whose Actions are freed from prejudice, 195. How Actions make men idle. 376

Advice, where to be sought. 247

Affaires, what Instruments are fittest to be imployed in any Affaire, 184. What things are convenient in the outward ordering of Church Affaires. 193

Alchidimus, his opinion of commendicate Speech. 230

Ambrose, his opinion of the power of mans Will. 317

Annunciation, the Feast Day thereof. 378

Apocrypha, of the reading thereof. 445

Arrius, his first cause of dissention. 466

Athanasius, of his Creed, and the use thereof. 364

Atheisme, it is the greatest opposite to Religion. 182. What makes Atheists politique. *Ibid.*

Attire, of Attire belonging to the Service of God, 243. The glory of white Attire in the East parts of the world. 244

Authority, how it may with good Conscience be obeyed. 245

Averroes, his opinion of the Dedication of Churches. 205. His opinion of devout meditation. His opinion of silent Prayer. 459. His opinion of Christ, 301. 302. His opinion touching remote after Baptisme, 330. His opinion of Baptisme administred by Lay-men in case of necessitie, 331. His answere to *Baptisme*. 338

Age, see *Feare*.

Babylon, the whore of Babylon, Rome called so. 89. Babylon taken for the Church of Rome. The doctrine of Babylon. 204. 205

Baptisme, the fashions, the Rites and Solemnities, 312. the grounds in Scripture whereupon the necessitie of outward Baptisme hath been built, 329. what kind of necessitie in outward Baptisme hath beene

gathered by the words of our Sauiour, &c. What things in Baptisme hath beene dispenst with, 317. Whether Baptisme by vnlearned be true Baptisme, 322. Of Interrogatories in Baptisme as touching Faith, &c. 334. Interrogatories to be propoſed Infants at Baptisme, and in their names answered by Godfathers, 335. Of the Crosse in Baptisme. 340

Basil, his aduice touching Obedience to Governors, 247. His Opinion of Musicke in Churches. 260

Behauiour, how to behaue a mans ſelfe in Prayer. 248

Beliefe, it is not to be got by the bare contemplation of Heauen and hell. What must goe to beleeuers. 228

Bishops, their calling of Synods for the reformation of abuſes in Baptisme. 336

Bishop of Rome, his claime of Supremacie. 161

Blessing, the Crosse of Chriſt, 320. His opinion of Baptisme, 330. His opinion of Baptisme adminiſtred by Lay-men in caſe of neceſſitie, 331. His aduice touching the outward forme of blessing the Communion. 386

Catechising, how it was the firſt kind of preaching. 212

Ceremonie, no Chriſtian Church can be without the vſe of ſome Ceremonie. 342

Christ, what manner of perſon he is, 293. That by the vnion of the nature of God and man in Chriſt, 294. Chriſt is neither one nor two perſons, 295. What manner of obedience we owe to Chriſt, 296. Chriſt is the Author of our Faith, 297. Chriſt is the Author of our Loue, 298. Chriſt is the Author of our Hope, 299. Chriſt is the Author of our Obedience, 300. Chriſt is the Author of our Peace, 301. Chriſt is the Author of our Saluation, 302. Chriſt is the Author of our Glorie, 303. Chriſt is the Author of our Life, 304. Chriſt is the Author of our Loue to Man. 368

Church, the Power of the Church 196. The delight of the Church, 199. The antiquitie of Churches, 202. Solemnities in erecting Churches, and the hallowing and dedicating of them, 203. Burthens not to be carried through Churches, 204. Of the names whereby Churches are diſtinguiſhed, 205. Of the faſhion of Churches, 206. The inexpreſſible beautie of Churches, 207. What holineſſe and vertue is aſcribed to the Church, more then to other places, 209. The pretence of ſuch as would deſtroy Churches, *Ibid.* The power and beautie of the Church, a meane to Prayer, 238. The priuiledge of the Church of God, 368. The firſt things belonging to the Church, were Truth, 448. The profeſſion of the Church of England, *Ibid.* A Definition of the viſible Church of Chriſt, 498. What Churches cannot erre, &c. Certaine conſiderations touching the Church of God. 586

Churching of Women. 400

Cyprian, his opinion of reading, 231. His opinion of Baptisme. 324

Commixture of Water, vſed in the forme of adminiſtring the Communion. 364

Concubine, the difference betwixt her and a Wife. 399

Confirmation, how to be vſed after Baptisme. 351

Conſtantine, his building of a Church, 203. His licencing of Sunday labours. 253

Conſtitution, the Church thereof ſets forth all things done in it with a good Conſcience. 192

Crosse, the vſe of the Crosse. 342

Deacons,

D

Deacons, the vse for which they were made. 400
Death, what makes it bitter, 277. Of sodaine death. *Ibid.*
Dedication, the Feast of *Dedication*, 377
Deitie, see *God*.
Delight, see *Pleasure*.
Demands, see *Questions*.
Dentill, see *Tooth*.
Diocletian, his destroying of Churches, 208
Dionysius, his report touching Re-baptisme, 324
Doctrine, how all Doctrines are to be maintained, 289. What Doctrine is, 336
Duties, how Duties are best performed, 184. The Nature of the Ministerie, which performeth diuine Duties. 404

E

Ecclesiasticall Liuings, who may hold one or more. 485
Eate, what is to be taken for Eate. 198
Eutyches, his Opinion and Error touching Christ. 293
Expedients, see *Necessitie*.

F

Faith, whatsoeuer is faithfully and rightly asked, is heard & obtayned, 280. The Seed of faithfull Parentage, is holy from the birth, 318. How to make the whole abide in the light of Faith, 335. Who are faithlesse, and who are not, 501. the Faith of a Christian doth apprehend the words of the Law, 548 Of *Abrahams* Faith, *Ibid.* The weakenesse of *Habakuks* Faith, 549 Some Admonitions to Faith, 563. Of the maintenance of Faith, 561. Euidence to proue that al the faithfull are Gods Children, 570. More of Faith, 579. No pleasing of God without Faith, 581. No man can receiue comfort to his soule by any other meanes but Faith, 582
Fasting, of the dayes which are appointed both for ordinary, and extraordinary Fasts, 389. Of priuate Fasts, 389. The outcome of fasting before Feasts, 391. Fasts are the Vsher of Festiuall Dayes, 397
Feare, what makes Men fearefull in the best things, 185. The loue of feare ing God, 189. Ignorant feare is a roote of Superstition, 190. Feare makes all men thinke of God, 191. A Sermon against Feare, 539. The Apostles Feare. *Ibid.* The sundry affections of Feare, 543. Whether a man may feare *Destruction* or *Poverty*, without Sinning. *Ibid.* How men sinne in the matter of Feare, 544. The danger of neglecting Feare. *Ibid.*
Festiuall, of Festiuall Dayes, and the naturall causes of their Institution, 373. The manner of celebrating Festiuall Dayes, 378. The abuse of Festiuall Dayes, 378. Exceptions against keeping other Festiuall Dayes besides the Sabbath, 377
Flesh, the meanes whereby our Flesh hath by being the Flesh of Christ. 398
Foundation, what is meant by the word Foundation, 507. Of denying the foundation, 508. Whether the

the Church of Rome denying the Foundation. 514
Friends, why Friends are naturally desired. 405

G

Gloria Patri, the vse thereof. 266 270
Gladusse, see *Ire*.
Godlinesse, it is the well-spring of all Vertues. 284
God, what God requireth at mans hands 194. His goodnesse in granting all things fit to sustayne life, and making them profitable, and easie, 232. Gods worthinesse and Mans vnworthinesse, 278. The will of God that all men might be saued, 286. God is in Christ by the personall Incarnation of the Sonne, 296. How God is in Christ, 305
Grace, how it is a consequent of Sanctification. 312
Gifts, how they are not offered to God as supplies of his wants, but as testimonies of our affection to his greatnesse. 354

H

Heresies, how Multitude of Heresies is not to be vsed in the Church. 258
Health, why health is so precious. 405
Heresie, it oft troubled the West part of the World, but the East very little, 101. The reason of this question. Heresie hath much of the Nature how God and Man are vnited in Christ. 292. Of speaking with Heresie. 500. How the Papists accuse vs falsly of Heresie, 571
Hymnes, their vses, 256. How *Hymnes* are to be sung. 258
Homilies defended. 232
Hooker, his Answere to Master *Travers* Supplication, 473. Master *Travers* first and second conference with Master *Hooker*, 474. Master *Hookers* willingnesse to peace, *ibid.* The Obiections of *Travers* answered, as that of Predestination and Faith, 477. That of Iustification, 478. Touching the Virgin *Maries* sinne, 479. The faults Master *Travers* found in Master *Hookers* manner of teaching confuted, 481. *Travers* application of the Texts, answered, 483. *Travers* fourth excuse answered, 485. Master *Hookers* answere to Master *Travers* demands, 486. Touching the citing only of Canonicall Scriptures in preaching. 487

I

Idolatrie, see *Superstition*.
Idiot one, his complaint. 208
Ignorance, the effects which Ignorance worketh. 199
Infants, how they haue right to Baptisme, 332. How Infants may Covenant with God. 338
Instruction, how it is a part belonging to the Sacrament. 289
Ire, what it worketh, 386. It euer swarueth from Mediocritie. 396
Irenæus, his opinion touching the Natiuity of Christ. 278
Isidore, his opinion of reading. 232
Iewes, the vertues of that blessed Apostle. 368
Iulian, a Persecutor. 367
Iniustice, the vse and abuse of Iustice. 485

In-

Iustine the Martyr, his opinion of Baptisme. 335
Iustification, what it is, 306. Of the Iustification of the Iewes, 497
Whether those which Christ hath called and iustified, may fall, &c. 605
Iustly, and of diuerse places for the same.
of our Seruice or Common Prayer.
Of diuers Articles found in our Common Prayer.
Knowledge, how it is attayned by Reading, 277. The knowledge of God, with how great by hearing Sermons, 290. The knowledge of God is not brought into the World without, 289. What is the true knowledge of God and man, 347. In what estimation knowledge was amongst the Valentinian Heretikes. 418
some particular words.
Lawes, good Lawes are the voyces of Reason, 200. Good Lawes are the Images of Wisdome. 453
Legendi, the rule of them. 218
Leuate, of the vse and the singing thereof. 264
Lots, of the Feast of Lots. 377
ing, 311. Of preaching by
Man, of the principall Instruments God hath furnished him with-all, 191. Whatsoeuer is Man is vanitie, 278. How men are the Sonnes of God, 346. In what the perfection of a Christian man consisteth, 447. The nature of all men, 529
No mans minde is right, 532
The iust man, and the iniquous man are of contrary minds, 532
Why naturall men know not the things of God, 547. 564. Man must not halt betweene two opinions, 565. The goodnesse of God to man. 575
Marriage, see Matrimonie.
Marcion, his opinion of Christ. 381
Matrimonie, of the celebration thereof, 397. Of the Ring in Matrimonie, 398. The fruits of Matiage. 400
Maximus, his giuing way to build Churches. 208
Ministerie, of the Nature and Function thereof, 404. Of power giuen to men to execute the office of the Holy Ghost, 410. The difference betweene the Minister and other men, 411. In what sort Ministers may giue the Holy Ghost, 412. When as the Ministers receiue Ordination, they receiue the Holy Ghost, 413. The Ministerie is an office of dignitie and honour, 414 The Minister must wayte for, not attempt his office, 415. Ministers must not bee made for reward, 416
Of the degrees whereby the power of order is distinguished, and of the attyre of Ministers, 417. The ranks of the first Ministerie, 422. Of the learning which should be in Ministers, 437. Against sloth in Ministers, 439. What learning Ministers should haue, 442. Of the abstinence of Ministers.
Mockers, of Mockers in the last times, 566. Of Mockers, ibid. Mockers worse then Pagans. 367
Moses, his casting of Prayer into Poeticall Modele. 340
Mosaike, see Harmonie.

N

Nature, how shee expelleth preservation from things hurtfull, 540
Necessitie, what is needfull in Church assemblies, 396
Nestorius, his opinion and errour touching Christ, 293
Nicene-Creed, by whom framed for the whole Christian World. 367
Nineveh, the force of Prayer there, 257
Nolarius his opinion of Baptisme, 324

O

Obedience, how it belongeth to the Church. 197
Opinion, what the varietie of opinions argueth, 362. Dangerous opinions amongst the Fathers, 522
Ordination, of lawfull Ordination, and what their qualitie is that enter into holy Orders. 432
Ornaments, see *Attyre*.
Ofius, the framer of the *Nicene-Creed*, his declining to *Arrius*. 367

P

Paschasius, his opinion of Christ. 293
Patience, what it is. 542
Pelagius, his Vll of Baptisme. 316
Pharisies, of their most grosse Superstition 91
Policie, how it is indebted to Religion, 84. Popish grosse Ambition, 515. His vsurped Supremacie. 572
Prayer, what it is. Of publique Prayer, 237. The forme of common Prayer, *Ibid.* What the place of publike Prayer is, 238. The authoritie of the place, *Ibid.* Of such as denie the forme of Common Prayer, 239. Of those which allow the former Prayer, but not our forme, 240. How opposed in our forme of Prayer, 241. Of fervencie in praying, and of different places for that purpose, 248. Easinesse of praying after our forme, 249. The length of our Service or Common Prayer, 250. Of divers defects found in our Common Prayer, 252. Of Lessons intermingled with Prayer, *Ibid.* The effect of Prayer, 253. The benefite wrought unto by praying in due sort, *Ibid.* The number of Prayers for severall things, and of the often rehearsing of the Lords Prayer, 254. Of the peoples answering Prayers after the Minister, 256. Of a supposed vnfruitfulnesse in our forme of Prayer, 275. Examples in some particular words, *Ibid.* Touching Prayer for deliverance from sudden death, 276. Other Examples of Prayer, 278. Of the Prayer, *To bee evermore delivered from*, 279. The Prayers of the Iust are accepted, but not alwayes granted, 280. The vses of Prayer, *Ibid.* Of vaine Prayers, 285. Of praying, *That we may find mercie*, 286. Prayer a member of the Sacraments. 289
Predestination, what it doth. 316
Preaching, of the first publike preaching, 211. Of preaching by reading, 212. 215. Of preaching by Sermons, 220. The fruict and vse of the word preached, 222. Preaching the Ordinance of God, 231. A glorious shew of Eloquence, no good preaching, 234. The substance of good preaching, *Ibid.* *Presbyter*, what the word signifieth, 418 who may not be Priests, 446

Pride

Pride, a Sermon of *Pride*, 529. Tokens of Pride, 532. What is in the heart of a proud man, 534. Pride the Mother of all evils, 535. Remedies against Pride, *ibid.*
Priviledges, their severall natures, 441
Prophets, not made by ordination, 421
Prophesie, the spirit of prophesie received from God himselfe, 562.
Of the Prophets manner of speech 563
Propositions, of two Propositions, foure reasonable, and one unreasonable, 189. The first Proposition, *ibid.* The second Proposition, 191. The third Proposition, 196. The fourth Proposition, 198. The fifth Proposition, 198.
Prosper, his opinion of the Law, of Supplication. 288
Psalmes, of their severall uses, 256. Of Musicke with Psalmes, 258. Of singing Psalmes where the people [illegible] Ministers answere, organs [illegible] 260

Q

Quæstion, a Question concerning the outward formes in the exercise of Religion, 193. Questions concerning Indgement. *ibid.*
[illegible] laid by the Scriptures to be lined, 425. The [illegible] of diuision between Church of Rome compared with the Galatians, 469. Speech compared with Master Hooker, 466. The

R

Rabanus Maurus, his opinion of Musicke in Churches. 259
Religion, It is the [illegible] Vertue, 184
All things [illegible] religious are prosperous, 186. What the Heathen in their religion, *ibid.* Foure generall demands concerning the outward forme in the exercise of Religion, 193. A fit Rule not safe nor possible, *ibid.* The use of Religion or the publike service of God must have their places, 201. Of Oratories, Foundations, Endowments, and Tithes intended for the maintenance of Religion, 424
Repentance, true Repentance may come by reading, 242. What perfecteth not Repentance, 271. Without Repentance all doe perish, 503. Argument to Repentance to serve for all sinnes. 504
Reuenge, about the reuenge which belongeth to God. 505. 506. 507. 508
Righteousnesse, that there is no righteous, no not one, 493. Two sorts of Righteousnes.
Romulus his Lawes concerning Marriage. 398

S

The Apostles Sorrow, *ibid.* The [illegible] Sorrow. 241
Moderation of Sorrow.
[illegible] compared into Specific [illegible] Sacraments, of the nature, the Author and force of them, 289. Instruction and Prayer for the Elements and parts of the Sacrament, *Ibid.* The necessitie of Sacraments unto the participation of Christ, 310. Sacraments diuersly interpreted, *ibid.* Sacraments are Foods, 330. Of the Sacrament of the Body and Blood of Christ, 330. The three Expositions of [illegible] Pauls to be [illegible] adding the Sacrament of the Body and Blood of Christ, 364
More of the Lords Supper, 373
[illegible] Parables, 185

Satan

Sabin, his fabricke. 377
Scriptures, of false supposed varieties in the translation of them. 212
Separation, what the vilest Separation meaneth. 368. A threefold Separation. 369. What Separatists and Backsliders they are. 370
Sermons, whether they be the ordinary way of teaching. 560. What are attributed to Sermons only. 523. A Sermon against Pride. 529. A Sermon against Sorrow, and Feare. 538. A Sermon of the perspicuitie of Scripture. 557. A Sermon upon part of Saint Iudes Epistle. 568. A second Sermon upon Saint Iude. 575
Singing of Singing in Churches. 257. 258. 259. 260. 261. 262. Of singing the Psalmes. Rouse, 263. Of singing the Psalmes, Dyson. 264. Of singing the Psalmes. 265
Sinne, to deny sinne is a double sinne. 383
Sorrow, a Sermon against Sorrow. 539. The Apostles Sorrow, *ibid.* The Womens Sorrow for Christ. 540. Moderation of Sorrow. 541
Speech, compared unto Tapestrie. 496
Superstition, about Superstition ruled enough the Romanes. 286. The Roote of Superstition. 290. The evill effects of Superstition. 291. The occasions of Superstition. *ibid.* The necessitie of Sacraments. 310. Sacraments diuersly inuented, *ibid.* Sacraments are Foods. 330. Of the Sacrament of the Body
T. Tertullian, his opinion of publike Prayer. 137. His opinion of Christian Women. Weeping with Infidels. 164. His opinion of Fasts. 181. His opinion of the Ring in Marriage. 392. His opinion of Thanksgiving, the vse of pertaining. 187. Thanksgiving. 274. Of other Thanksgiving for common Calamities. 274
Transfiguration, of the first beginning thereof. 286
Truth, what keepeth men from the knowledge of truth. 337
Vocation, not made by ordination. 421. The fruits of corrupt vocation. 422. Of the Prophesie matter of speech
Vocation, of Preachers. 287. How the vocation of Preachers is to be tried. 288. The vocation of Bishops. 289. The vocation of Christ and the Church. 290
Vnworthinesse, the worthinesse of God and of mans vnworthinesse. 378
Supplication.
Walter Travers, his Supplication to the Lords of her Majesties Councell. 459. *Travers* not lawfully called to the Ministerie, & his answere thereunto. 461. That he preached without licence, and his answere thereunto 463. Of his Action with Master *Hooker*, *ibid.* His Position, *That such as live in the Church of Rome, holding ignorantly that Faith, yet cannot bee* said by the Scriptures to be saued. 465. The cause of diuision betwixt him and Master *Hooker*. 466. The Church of Rome compared with the Galathians. 469. Speech compared by Master *Travers* to Tapestrie, *ibid.* *Travers* charged with indiscretion, by the high Commissioners. 482. It is the Ordinance
Wickednesse, two sorts of wicked men.
Wife, the difference betwixt a Wife and

and a Concubine. 399
Will, whether Will be in God or Man, to what it belongeth, 282. Mans will must bee framed to Gods will, 288
Wit, the weakneſſe and dulneſſe thereof, makes men slow to beleeue what is written. 232
Wiſdome, the effects thereof, 200 Wiſdome maketh men deſire ſlowneſſe in death, 277. Diuerſitie of Wiſdomes. 293
Women, of Chriſtian women, marrying with Infidels. 264
Works, what thoſe men call good Workes are, 515. 516. Errour in the Church of Rome touching good workes, 518. 519
Worſhip, what worſhip belongeth to God. 192
Worthineſſe, the worthineſſe of God, and of mans vnworthineſſe. 278

I

Young-men, an exhortation to Young-men. 579

Z

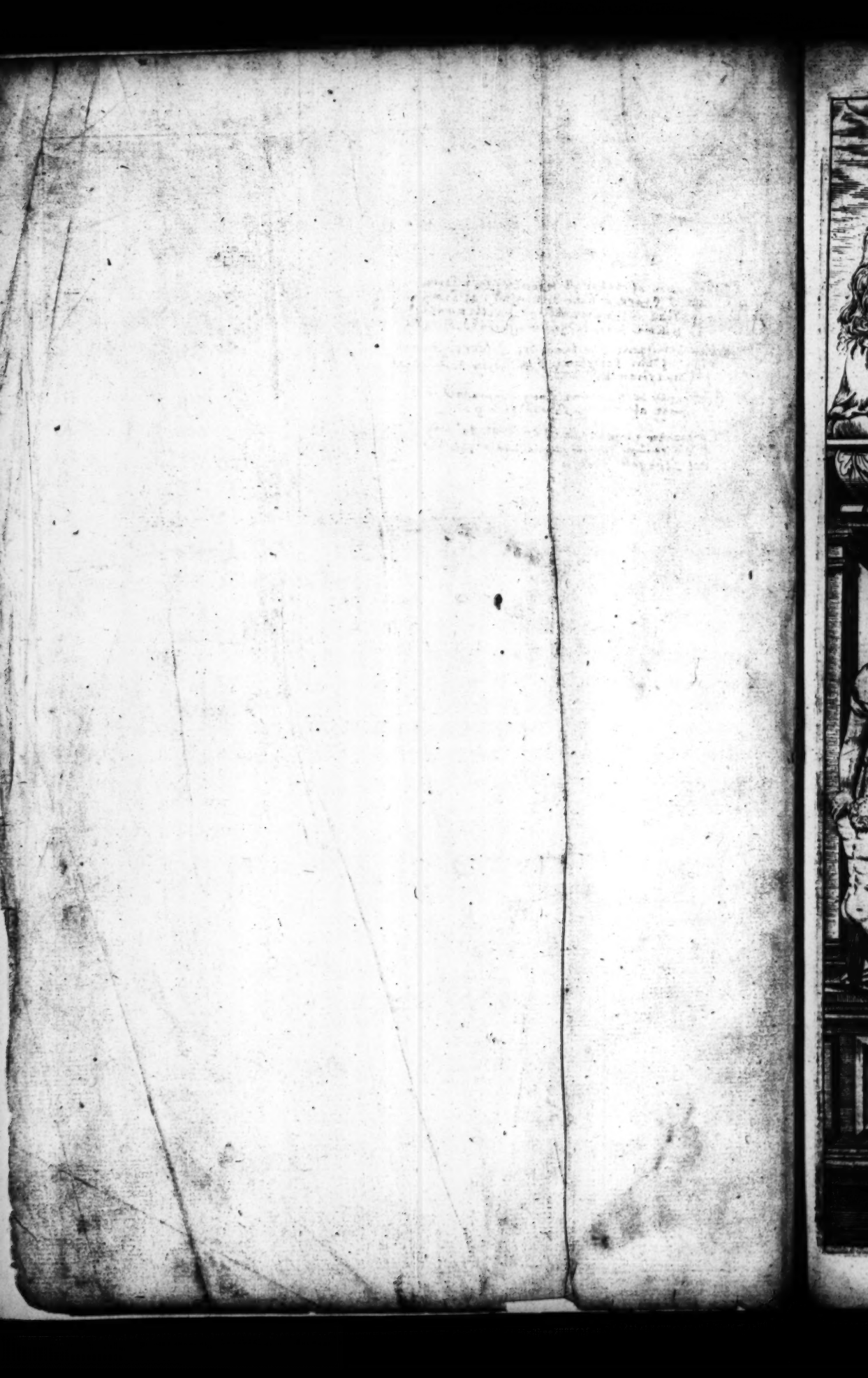
Zeale, and a principall roote of Superſtition. 198

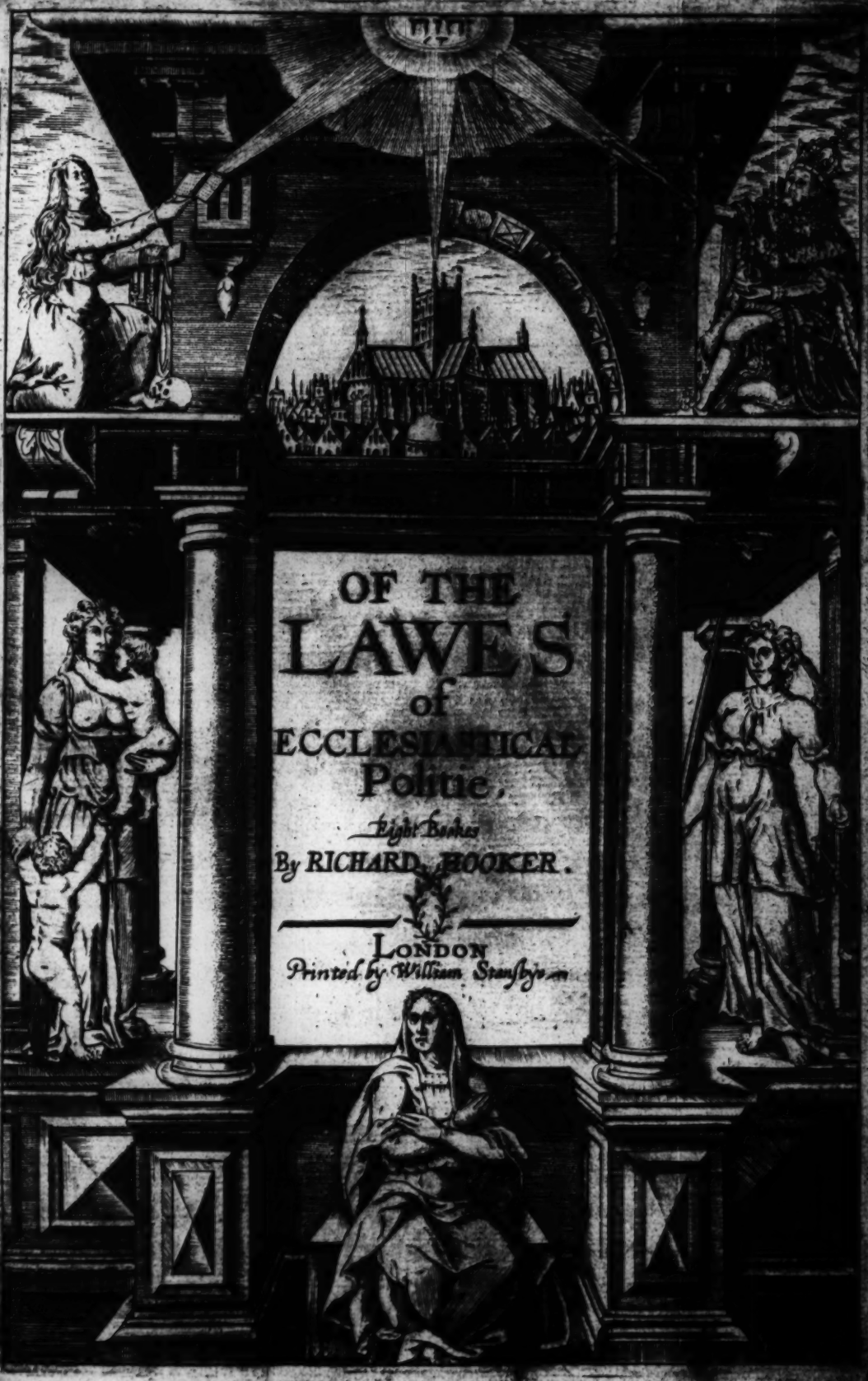
FINIS.

MICROFILMED
BY
HARVARD UNIVERSITY LIBRARY
MICROREPRODUCTION SERVICE



THE END




OF THE
LAWES
of
ECCLESIASTICAL
Politie,
Eight Bookes
By RICHARD HOOKER.
LONDON
Printed by William Stansby.

To the Reader.



THis vnhappy Controuersie, about the receiued Ceremonies & Discipline of the Church of England, which hath so long time withdrawne so many of her Ministers from their principall worke, and imployed their Studies in contentious Oppositions: hath by the vnnaturall growth and dangerous fruits therof, made knowne to the World, that it neuer receiued blessing from the Father of Peace. For whose experience doth not find, what confusion of Order, and breach of the sacred Bond of Loue hath sprung from this Dissention; how it hath rent the body of the Church into diuers parts, and diuided her people into diuers Sects; how it hath taught the Sheepe to despise their Pastors, and alienated the Pastors from the loue of their Flockes: how it hath strengthened the Irreligious in their Impieties, and

hath raiſed the hopes of the ſacrilegious deuouters of the remaines of Chriſts Patrimonie; and giuen way to the common Aduerſarie of Gods Truth, and our proſperitie, to grow great in our Land without reſiſtance; who ſeeth not how it hath diſtracted the minds of the multitude, and ſhaken their faith, and ſcandalized their weakeneſſe, and hath generally killed the very heart of true Pietie, and religious Deuotion, by changing our zeale towards Chriſts glorie, into the fire of Enuie and Malice, and Heart-burning, and zeale to euery mans priuate cauſe? This is the ſumme of all the gaines which the tedious contentions of ſo many yeers haue brought in, by the ruine of Chriſts Kingdome, the encreaſe of Satans, partly in Superſtition, and partly in Impietie. So much better were it in theſe our dwellings of Peace to endure any inconuenience whatſoeuer in the ontward frame, then in deſire of alteration, thus to ſet the whole houſe on fire. Which mooued the Religious heart of this learned Writer, in zeale of Gods truth, and in compaſsion to his Church, the mother of vs all, which gaue vs both the firſt breath of Spiritnall Life, and from her Breſts hath fed vs vnto this whatſoeuer meaſure of growth we haue in Chriſt, to ſtand vp and take vpon him a generall defence both of her ſelfe, and of her eſtabliſhed Lawes, and by force of demonſtration, ſo farre as the nature of the preſent matter could beare, to make knowne to the World, and theſe Oppugners of her; that all thoſe bitter accuſations laide to her charge, are not the faults of her Lawes and Orders,

but

but either their owne mistakes in the misvnderstanding, or the abuses of men in the execution of them. A Work subiect to manifold reprehensions and oppositions, and not sutable to his soft and milde disposition, desirous of a quiet priuate life, wherein he might bring forth the fruits of Peace in Peace. But the loue of God and of his Countrie, whose greatest danger grew from this Diuision, made his heart hot within him, and at length the fire kindled, and amongst manie other most Reuerend and Learned men, hee also presumed to speake with his Pen. And the rather, because hee saw that none of these ordinarie obiections of partialities could eleuate the authoritie of his writing, who alwaies affected a priuate State, and neither enioyed, nor expected any the least Dignitie in our Church. What admirable height of Learning, and depth of Iudgement dwelled within the lowly mind of this true humble Man, great in all wise mens eyes, except his owne; with what Grauitie and Maiestie of speech his tongue and Pen vttered heauenly Mysteries, whose eyes in the humilitie of his heart were alwayes cast downe to the ground, how all things that proceeded from him were breathed, as from the spirit of Loue, as if He like the Bird of the Holy Ghost, the Doue, had wanted Gall, let them that knew him not in his person, iudge by these liuing Images of his Soule, his writings. For out of these, euen those who otherwise agree not with him in Opinion, doe afoord him the testimonie of a milde and a louing Spirit: and of his Learning, what greater proofe can we

Not always see p. 556, 581

haue

haue then this, that his writings are most admired by those who themselues doe most excell in iudicious Learning, and by them the more often they are read, the more highly they are extolled & desired? which is the cause of this sixth Edition of his former bookes, and that without any addition or diminution whatsoeuer. For who will put a Pencile to such a Worke, from which such a workman hath taken his? There is a purpose of setting forth the three last Books also, their Fathers *Posthumi*. For as in the great declining of his body spent out with studie, it was his ordinarie Petition to Almighue God, that if hee might liue to see the finishing of these bookes, then *Lord lets thy seruant depart in peace* (to vse his own words,) so it pleased God to grant him his desire: For he liued till he saw them perfected; & though like *Rachel* he died as it were in the trauell of them, and hastned death vpon himselfe, by hastening to giue them life: yet he held out to behold with his eyes, these *partus ingenij*, these *Beniamins*, Sonnes of his right hand, though to him they were *Benonies*, Sonnes of Paine and Sorrow. But some euil disposed minds, whether of Malice or couetousnesse, or wicked blind Zeale, it is vncertain, as if they had beene Egiptian Mid-wiues, as soone as they were borne, and their Father dead, smothered them, & by conueying away the perfect Copies left vntovs nothing but certain old vnperfect and mangled Draughts, dismembred into pieces, and scattered like *Medeas Absirtus*: no fauor, no grace, not the shadowes of themselues almost remaining in them. Had

the

the Father liued to ſee them brought foorth thus defaced, he might rightfully haue named them *Benonies*, the Sonnes of Sorrow.

But ſeeing the importunities of many great and worthy perſons, will not ſuffer them quietly to die and to be buried, it is intended that they ſhall ſee them as they are. The Learned and Iudicious eye, will yet perhaps delight it ſelfe in beholding the goodly Lineaments of their well ſet Bodies, and in finding out ſome ſhadowes and reſemblances of their Fathers face. God graunt that as they were with their Brethren dedicated to the Church for Meſſengers of Peace: ſo in the ſtrength of that little breath of life that remaineth in them, they may proſper in their worke; and by ſatisfying the doubts of ſuch as are willing to learne, may helpe to giue an end to the calamities of theſe our Ciuill

WARRES.

F. S.

A PREFACE,

To them that seeke (as they terme it) the *Reformation of Lawes and Orders* Ecclesiasticall, in the Church of ENGLAND.



Though for no other cause, yet for this, that posteritie may know, we haue not loosely through silence permitted things to passe away as in a dreame, there shall be for mens information extant thus much concerning the present state of the Church of God established amongst vs, and their carefull endeauour which would haue vpheld the same. As your hands, beleeued in our Lord and Sauiour Iesus Christ (for in him the loue which we beare vnto all that would but seeme to be borne of him, it is not the sea of your gall and bitternesse that shall euer drowne) I haue no great cause to looke for other then the selfe-same portion and lot, which your manner hath beene hitherto to lay on them that concurre not in Opinion and Sentence with you. But our hope is, that the God of peace shall (notwithstanding mans nature, too impatient of contumelious malediction) enable vs quietly, and euen gladly to suffer all things, for that worke sake which we couet to performe. The wonderfull zeale and feruour wherewith yee haue withstood the reetined orders of this Church,

The cause and occasion of handling these things: and what might be wished in them, for whose sakes so much paines is taken.

was

was the firſt thing which cauſed me to enter into conſideration, whether (as all your publiſhed Bookes and Writings peremptorily maintaine) euery Chriſtian man fearing God, ſtand bound to ioyne with you for the further- Presbyterianisme *rance of that which yee terme* the Lords Diſcipline. *Wherein I muſt plainly confeſſe vnto you, that before I examined your ſundrie declarations in that behalfe, it could not ſettle in my head to thinke, but that vndoubtedly ſuch numbers of otherwiſe right well affected and moſt religionſly enclined minds, had ſome marueilous reaſonable inducements which led them with ſo great earneſtneſſe that way. But when once, as neere as my ſlender abilitie would ſerue; I had with trauell & care performed that part of the Apoſtles aduice and counſell in ſuch caſes, whereby he willeth to* trie all things; *and was come at the length ſo farre, that there remained onely the other clauſe to be ſatisfied, wherein he concludeth, that* what good is muſt be held: *there was in my poore vnderſtanding no remedy but to ſet downe this as my finall reſolute perſwaſion;* Surely the preſent forme of Church gouernment which the Lawes of this Land haue eſtabliſhed, is ſuch, as no Law of God, nor reaſon of man, hath hitherto beene alleadged, of force ſufficient to prooue they doe ill, who to the vttermoſt of their power withſtand the alteration thereof: *Contrariwiſe*, The other which inſteade of it wee are required to accept, is only by errour and miſconceipt named the ordinance of Ieſus Chriſt, no one proofe as yet brought forth, whereby it may cleerely appeare to bee ſo in very deede. *The explication of which two things I haue here thought good to offer into your owne hands: heartily beſeeching you euen by the meeknesſe of Ieſus Chriſt, whom I truſt ye loue; that, as ye tender the peace and quietneſſe of this Church, if there bee in you that gracious humilitie which hath euer beene the Crowne and glory of a Chriſtianly diſpoſed minde; if your owne ſoules, hearts and conſciences, (the ſound integritie whereof can but hardly ſtand with the refuſall of truth in perſonall reſpects) be, as I doubt not but they are, things moſt deare and precious vnto you,* Let not the faith which ye haue in our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, be blemiſhed with partialities, *regard not who it is which ſpeaketh, but weigh only what is ſpoken. Thinke not that ye reade the words of one, who bendeth himſelfe as an Aduerſary againſt the Truth, which ye haue alreadie imbraced; but the words of one who deſireth euen to imbrace together with you the ſelfe ſame truth, if it bee the truth; and for that cauſe (for no other God bee knoweth) hath vndertaken the burthenſome labour of this painfull kind of conference. For the playner acceſſe whereunto, let it bee lawfull for me to*

Iam. 2. 1.

rip vp to the very bottome how and by whom your Diſcipline was planted, at ſuch time as this age we liue in began to make firſt triall thereof.

2. A founder it had, whom, for mine owne part, I thinke incomparably the wiſeſt man that euer the French Church did enioy, ſince the houre it enioyed him. His bringing vp was in the ſtudie, of the Ciuill Law. Diuine knowledge he gathered not by hearing or reading ſo much, as by teaching others. For though thouſands were debters to him, as touchinge knowledge in that kind, yet he to none but only to God, the author of that moſt bleſſed Fountaine the Booke of Life, and of the admirable dexteritie of wit, togeather with the helps of other learning which were his guides: till being occaſioned to leaue France, he fell at the length vpon Geneua: Which Citie, the Biſhop and Clergie thereof had a little before (as ſome doe affirme) forſaken, being of likelyhood frighted with the peoples ſudden attempt for abolishment of Popiſh Religion: the euent of which enterprize they thought it not ſafe for themſelues to wait for in that place. At the comming of Caluine thither, the forme of their ciuill Regiment was popular, as it continueth at this day: neither King, nor Duke, nor Nobleman of any authoritie or power ouer them, but officers choſen by the people yeerely out of themſelues, to order all things with publique conſent. For ſpiritual Gouernement, they had no Lawes at all agreed vpon, but did what the Paſtors of their ſoules by perſwaſion could winne them vnto. Caluine being admitted one of their Preachers and a Diuinitie-Reader amongſt them, conſidered how dangerous it was that the whole eſtate of that Church ſhould hang ſtill on ſo ſlender a threed, as the liking of an ignorant multitude is, if it haue power to change whatſoeuer it ſelfe liſteth. Wherefore taking vnto him two of the other Miniſters, for more countenance of the action, (albeit the reſt were all againſt it) they moued, and in the end perſwaded with much adoe, the People to binde themſelues by ſolemne Oath, firſt, neuer to admit the Papacie amongſt them againe; And ſecondly, to liue in obedience vnto ſuch orders concerning the exerciſe of their Religion, and the forme of their Eccleſiaſticall Gouernement, as thoſe their true and faithfull Miniſters of Gods Word had agreeably to Scripture ſet downe for that end and purpoſe. When theſe things began to be put in vre, the people alſo (what cauſes mouing them thereunto, themſelues beſt know) began to repent them of that they had done, and irkſully to champe vpon the bit they had taken into their mouthes, the rather for that they grew by meanes of this innouation into diſlike with ſome

The firſt eſtabliſhment of new Diſcipline by M *Caluines* induſtrie, in the Church of *Geneua*: and the beginning of ſtrife about it amongſt our ſelues.

Churches neere about them, the benefit of whose good friendship their state could not well lacke: It was the manner of those times (whether through mens desire to enioy alone the glory of their owne enterprises, or else because the quicknesse of their occasions required present dispatch,) so it was, that euery particular Church did that within it selfe, which some few of their owne thought good, by whom the rest were all directed. Such number of Churches then being, though free within themselues, yet small, common conference before-hand might haue eased them of much after-trouble. But a greater inconuenience it bred, that euery later endeuoured to be certayne degrees more remoued from conformitie with the Church of Rome, then the rest before had beene: whereupon grew maruellous great dissimilitudes, and by reason thereof, iealousies, heart-burnings, iarres, and discords amongst them. Which notwithstanding might haue easily beene preuented, if the orders which each Church did thinke fit and conuenient for it selfe, had not so peremptorily beene established vnder that high commanding forme, which tendered them vnto the people, as things euerlastingly required by the Law of that Lord of Lords, against whose statutes there is no exception to be taken. For by this meane it came to passe, that one Church could not but accuse and condemne another of disobedience to the will of Christ, in those things where manifest difference was betweene them: whereas the selfe-same orders allowed, but yet established in more varie and suspence manner, as being to stand in force till God should giue the opportunity of some generall conference what might bee best for euery of them afterwards to doe; this, I say, had both preuented all occasion of iust dislike which others might take, and reserued a greater libertie vnto the Authors themselues of entring into farther consultation afterwards. Which though neuer so necessarie, they could not easily now admit, without some feare of derogation from their credit: and therefore that which once they had done, they became for euer after resolute to maintayne. Caluine therefore and the other two his Associates, stiffely refusing to administer the holy Communion to such as would not quietly without contradiction and murmure submit themselues vnto the orders which their solemne Oath had bound them to obey, were in that quarrell banished the Towne. A few yeeres after (such was the leiuty of that people) the places of one or two of there Ministers being fallen voyd, they were not before so willing to be rid of there learned Pastor, as now importunate to obtayne him againe from them who had giuen

him

him entertainment, and which were loth to part with him, had not irresistable earnestnesse bene vsed. One of the Towne-Ministers that saw in what manner the people were bent for the vocation of Caluine, gaue him notice of their affection in this sort. The Senate of 100 hundred being assembled, they all craue *Caluine*. The next day a generall Conuocation. They crie in like sort againe all: Wee will haue *Caluine* that good and learned man Christs Minister. This, *saith he*, when I vnderstood, I could not choose but praise God, nor was I able to iudge otherwise, then that this was the Lords doing, and that it was marueilous in our eyes, *And that* the stone which the builders refused, was now made the head of the corner. *The other two whom they had throwne out* (together with Caluine) *they were content should enioy their exile. Many causes might leade them to be more desirous of him. First, his yeelding vnto them in one thing, might haply put them in hope, that time would breed the like easinesse of condescending further vnto them. For in his absence he had perswaded them, with whom he was able to preuaile, that albeit himselfe did better like of common bread to be vsed in the Eucharist, yet the other they rather should accept, then cause any trouble in the Church about it. Againe, they saw that the name of* Caluine *waxed euery day greater abroad, and that together with his fame, their infamy was spread, who had so rashly and childishly cielled him. Besides, it was not vnlikely but that his credit in the World, might many wayes stand the poore Towne in great stead: as the truth is, their Ministers forreine estimation hitherto hath beene the best stake in their hedge. But whatsoeuer secret respects were likely to moue them, for contenting of their minds,* Caluine *returned* (as it had beene another Tully) *to his old whom. He ripely considered how grosse a thing it were for men of his qualitie, wise and graue men, to liue with such a multitude, and to be Tenants at will vnder them, as their Ministers, both himselfe and others, had beene. For the remedy of which inconuenience, he gaue them plainly to vnderstand, that if he did become their Teacher againe, they must be content to admit a complete forme of Disciplin, which both they and also their Pastors should now be solemnly sworne to obserue for euer after. Of which discipline the maine and principall parts were these: A standing Ecclesiasticall Court to be established: perpetuall Iudges in that Court to be their Ministers, others of the people annually chosen (twice so many in number as they) to be Iudges together with them in the same*

Epist. Cal. 14.

Luc. 20. 17.

Court: these two sorts to haue the care of all mens manners, power of determining of all kinde of Ecclesiastic all causes, and authoritie to conuent, to controll, to punish, as farre as with Excommunication, whomsoeuer they should thinke worthy, none either small or great excepted. This deuice, I see not, how the wisest that time liuing could haue bettered, if we duly consider what the present estate of Geneua did then require. For their Bishop and his Clergie being (as it is said) departed from them by Moone-light, or howsoeuer, being departed, to choose in his roome any other Bishop, had beene a thing altogether impossible. And for their Ministers to seeke, that themselues alone might haue coercive power ouer the whole Church, would perhaps haue beene hardly construed at that time. But when so franke an offer was made, that for euery one Minister there should be two of the People to sit and giue voice in the Ecclesiasticall Consistorie, what inconuenience could they easily finde which themselues might not be able alwayes to remedie? Howbeit (as euermore the simpler sort are, euen when they see no apparant cause, iealous notwithstanding ouer the secret intents and purposes of wiser men) this Proposition of his did somewhat trouble them. Of the Ministers themselues which had stayed behind in the Citie when Caluine was gone, some, vpon knowledge of the peoples earnest intent to recall him to his place againe, had before-hand written their Letters of submission, and assured him of their allegeance for euer after, if it should like him to harken vnto that publike suite. But yet misdoubting what might happen, if this Discipline did go forward; they obiected against it the example of other reformed Churches, liuing quietly and orderly without it. Some of the chiefest place and countenance amongst the Laytie professed with greater stomacke their iudgments, that such a Discipline was little better then Popish tyrannie, disguised and tendered vnto them vnder a new forme. This sort, it may be, had some feare that the filling vp of the seates in the Consistorie, with so great a number of lay-men, was but to please the minds of the people, to the end they might thinke their owne sway somewhat: but when things came to triall of practice, their Pastors learning would be at all times of force to ouer-perswade simple men, who knowing the time of their owne Presidentship to be but short, would alwayes stand in feare of their Ministers perpetuall authoritie. And among the Ministers themselues, one being so farre in estimation aboue the rest, the voices of the rest were likely to be giuen for the most part respectiuely with a kinde of secret dependencie

dencie and awe: so that in shew a marueilous indifferently composed Senate Ecclesiasticall was to gouerne, but in effect one only man should, as the Spirit and Soule of the residue, doe all in all. But what did these vaine surmises boot? Brought they were now to so straight an issue, that of two things they must choose one; Namely, whether they would to their endlesse disgrace, with ridiculous lightnesse, dismisse him, whose restitution they had in so impotent manner desired, or else condescend vnto that demand, wherein he was resolute either to haue it, or to leaue them. They thought it better to be somewhat hardly yoked at home, then for euer abroad discredited. Wherefore in the end those orders were one all sides assented vnto, with no lesse alacritie of An.Dom.1541
minde, then Cities vnable to hold out longer are wont to shew, when they take conditions such as it liketh him to offer them which hath them in the narrow streights of aduantage. Not many yeeres before ouerpassed, before these twice-sworne men aduentured to giue their last and hottest assault to the Fortresse of the same Discipline, childishly granting by common consent of their whole Senate, and that vnder their Towne-Seale, a relexation to one Bertelier *whom the Eldership had Excommunicated; further also decreeing, with strange absurditie, that to the same Senate it should belong to giue finall iudgement in matter of Excommunication, and to absolue whom it pleased them; cleane contrarie to their owne former Deedes and Oathes. The report of which Decree being forthwith brought vnto* Caluine; Before (*saith hee*) this Decree take place, either my bloud or banishment shall signe it. *Againe, two dayes before the Communion should be celebrated, this speech was publiquely to like effect,* Kill me, if euer this hand doe reach forth the things that are Holy, to them whom THE CHVRCH hath iudged Despisers. *Whereupon, for feare of tumult, the forenamed* Bertelier *was by his friends aduised for that time not to vse the libertie granted him by the Senate, nor to present himselfe in the Church, till they saw somewhat further what would ensue. After the Communion quietly ministred, and some likelyhood of peaceable ending of these troubles without any more adoe, that very day in the after noone, besides all mens expectation, concluding his ordinary Sermon, he telleth them, That because he neither had learned nor taught to striue with such as are in authoritie, therefore* (*saith he*) the case so standing as now it doth, let me vse these words of the Apostle vnto you, I commend you vnto God

of Christs according to his word, are held as lawfull, being done in one Church, as in another. Which as it holdeth in other acts of ministery, as baptisme, marriage, and such like, so doth it in the calling to the ministerie; by reason whereof all Churches doe acknowledge and receiue him for a minister of the word, who hath bin lawfully called thereunto in any Church of the same profession. A Doctor created in any Vniuersitie of Christendome, is acknowledged sufficiently qualified to teach in any country. The Church of Rome it selfe, and the Canon law holdeth it, that being ordered in Spaine, they may execute that belongeth to their order in Italie, or in any other place. And the Churches of the Gospell neuer made any question of it. Which if they shall now begin to make doubt of, and denie such to be lawfully called to the Ministery, as are called by another order then our owne; then may it well be looked for that other Churches will doe the like: and if a Minister called in the Low Countries bee not lawfully called in England, then may they say to our Preachers which are there, that being made by another order then theirs, they cannot suffer them to execute any act of Ministery amongst them; which in the end must needs breed a schisme and dangerous diuision in the Churches. Further I haue heard of those that are learned in the lawes of this land, that by expresse Statute to that purpose *Anno* 13. vpon subscription of the Articles agreed vpon *Anno* 62. that they who pretend to haue beene ordered by another order then that which is now established, are of like capacitie to enioy any place of ministery within the land, as they that haue bin ordered according to that is now by law in this case established. Which comprehending manifestly all, euen such as were made Priests according to the order of the Church of Rome, it must needs be, that the law of a Christian land professing the Gospell, should be as fauorable for a Minister of the Word as for a Popish Priest, which also was so found in M. *Whittingams* case, who notwithstanding such replies against him, enioyed still the benefit he had by his ministerie, and might haue done vntill this day if God had spared him life so long; which if it be vnderstood so & practised in others, why should the change of the person alter the right, which the law giueth to all other? The place of ministery, whereunto I was called, was not presentative: and if it had beene so, surely they would neuer haue presented any man whom they neuer knew; and the order of this Church is agreeable herein to the Word of God, and the ancient and best Canons, that no man should be made minister *sine titulo*; therefore hauing none, I could not by the orders of this Church haue entred into the ministerie, before I had charge to tend vpon. When I was at *Antwerp*, and to take a place of ministerie among the people of that nation, I see no cause why I should haue returned againe ouer the seas for orders here, nor how I could haue done it, without disallowing the orders of the Churches prouided in the countrie where I was to liue. Whereby I hope it appeareth, that my calling to the ministerie is lawfull, and maketh mee by our law of capacitie to enioy any benefit or commoditie, that any other by reason of his ministerie may enioy. But my cause is yet more easie, who reaped no benefit of my ministerie by law; receiuing onely a beneuolence and voluntarie contribution, and the ministerie I dealt with being preaching onely, which euery Deacon here may doe being licensed, and certaine that are neither Ministers

nor

nor Deacons: thus I answere the former of these two points, whereof if there be yet any doubt, I humbly desire for a finall end thereof, that some competent Iudges in Law may determine of it; whereunto I referre and submit my selfe with all reuerence and dutie.

The second is, that I preached without licence: whereunto this is my answere, I haue not presumed vpon the calling I had to the Ministery abroad, to preach, or deale with any part of the Ministery within this Church, without the consent and allowance of such as were to allow me vnto it: my allowance was from the Bishop of *London*, testified by his two seuerall Letters to the Inner Temple, who without such testimonie would by no meanes rest satisfied in it; which letters being by me produced, I referre it to your Honors wisedome, whether I haue taken vpon me to preach without being allowed (as they charge) according to the orders of the Realme. Thus hauing answered the second point also, I haue done with the obiection of dealing without calling or licence.

The other reason they alleage is, concerning a late action wherein I had to deale with Master *Hooker*, Master of the Temple, in the handling of which cause they charge me with an indiscretion and want of dutie, in that I inueighed (as they say) against certaine points of doctrine taught by him as erroneous, not conferring with him, nor complayning of it to them. My answere hereunto standeth in declaring to your Honors the whole course and carriage of that cause, and the degrees of proceeding in it, which I will doe as briefly as I can, and according to the truth, God be my witnesse, as neere as my best memorie, and notes of remembrance may serue me thereunto. After that I haue taken away that which seemeth to haue moued them to thinke me not charitably minded to Master *Hooker*, which is, because he was brought into Master *Alueyes* place, wherein this Church desired that I might haue succeeded; which place, if I would haue made sute to haue obtayned, or if I had ambitiously affected and sought, I would not haue refused to haue satisfied by subscription such as the matter then seemed to depend vpon: whereas contrariwise, notwithstanding I would not hinder the Church to doe that they thought to be most for their edification and comfort, yet did I neither by speech, nor letter, make sute to any for the obtayning of it, following herein that resolution which I iudge to be most agreeable to the Word and Will of God, that is, That labouring and suing for places and charges in the Church is not lawfull. Further, whereas at the sute of the Church some of your Honors entertayned the cause, and brought it to a neere issue, that there seemed nothing to remayne, but the commendation of my Lord the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, when as he could not be satisfied but by my subscribing to his late Articles, and that my answere agreeing to subscribe according to any Law, and to the Statute prouided in that case, but praying to be respited for subscribing to any other, which I could not in conscience doe, either for the Temple (which otherwise, he said, he would not commend me to) not for any other place in the Church, did so little please my Lord Archbishop, as hee resolued that otherwise I should not be commended to it. I had vtterly here no cause of offence against Master *Hooker*, whom I did in no sort esteeme to haue preuented

uented or vnderminded me, but that God diſpoſed of me as it pleaſed him, by ſuch meanes and occaſions as I haue declared. Moreouer, as I had taken no cauſe of offence at Maſter *Hooker* for being preferred, ſo there were many witneſſes that I was glad that the place was giuen him, hoping to liue in all godly peace and comfort with him, both for acquaintance and good will which hath beene betweene vs, and for ſome kinde of affinitie in the marriage of his neereſt kinred and mine: ſince his comming I haue ſo carefully endeuoured to entertaine all good correſpondence and agreement with him, as I thinke he himſelfe will beare mee witneſſe of many earneſt Diſputations and Conferences with him about the matter; the rather, becauſe that contrarie to my expectation, he enclined from the beginning but ſmally thereunto, but ioyned rather with ſuch as had alwaies oppoſed themſelues to any good order in this charge, and made themſelues to be brought indiſpoſed to his preſent ſtate and proceedings. For both knowing that Gods commandement charged mee with ſuch dutie, and diſcerning how much our peace might further the good ſeruice of God and his Church, and the mutuall comfort of vs both, I had reſoluued conſtantly to ſeeke for peace, and though it ſhould flie from me (as I ſaw it did by meanes of ſome, who little deſired to ſee the good of our Church) yet according to the rule of Gods Word to follow after it. Which being ſo (as hereof I take God to witneſſe, who ſearcheth the heart, and reines, and by his Sonne will iudge the World, both the quicke and dead) I hope no charitable iudgement can ſuppoſe me to haue ſtood euill-affected towards him for his place, or deſirous to fall into any Controuerſie with him. Which my reſolution I purſued, that whereas I diſcouered ſundrie vnſound matters in his doctrine (as many of his Sermons taſted of ſome ſowre leauen, or other) yet thus I carried my ſelfe towards him. Matters of ſmaller weight, and ſo couertly diſcouered, that no great offence to the Church was to be feared in them, I wholly paſſed by, as one that diſcerned nothing of them, or had beene vnfurniſhed of replyes. For other of greater moment, and ſo openly deliuered, as there was iuſt cauſe of feare, leſt the Truth and Church of God ſhould bee preiudiced and perilled by it, and ſuch as the conſcience of my dutie and calling would not ſuffer me altogether to paſſe ouer, this was my courſe, to deliuer, when I ſhould haue iuſt cauſe by my Text, the truth of ſuch doctrine as he had otherwiſe taught in generall ſpeeches, without touch of his perſon in any ſort, and further at conuenient opportunitie to conferre with him in ſuch points. According to which determination, whereas he had taught certaine things concerning Predeſtination otherwiſe then the Word of God doth, as it is vnderſtood by all Churches profeſſing the Goſpell, and not vnlike that wherewith *Corauus* ſomtimes troubled his Church, I both deliuered the truth of ſuch points in a generall doctrine, without any touch of him in particular, and conferred with him alſo priuately vpon ſuch Articles. In which Conference, I remember, when I vrged the conſent of all Churches, and Good Writers againſt him that I knew, and deſired if it were otherwiſe, what Authours he had ſeene of ſuch doctrine, he anſwered me, That his beſt Authour was his owne reaſon: which I wiſhed him to take heed of, as a matter ſtanding with Chriſtian modeſtie and wiſedome in a doctrine not receiued by the Church,

not

not to truſt to his owne iudgement ſo farre, as to publiſh it before he had conferred with others of his profeſſion, labouring by daily prayer and ſtudie, to know the will of God, as he did, to ſee how they vnderſtood ſuch Doctrine: notwithſtanding, hee with wauering replying, that hee would ſome other time deale more largely in the matter, I wiſhed him, and prayed him not ſo to doe, for the Peace of the Church, which by ſuch meanes might be hazarded; ſeeing he could not but thinke, that men, who make any conſcience of their Miniſterie, will iudge it a neceſſarie dutie in them, to teach the Truth, and to conuince the contrarie. Another time, vpon like occaſion of this Doctrine of his, that the aſſurance of that wee beleeue by the Word, is not ſo certaine, as of that wee perceiue by ſenſe; I both taught the Doctrine otherwiſe, namely, the aſſurance of Faith to bee greater, which aſſureth both of things aboue, and contrarie to all ſenſe and humane vnderſtanding, and dealt with him alſo priuately vpon that point. According to which courſe, of late, when as he had taught that the Church of Rome is a true Church of Chriſt, and a ſanctified Church by profeſſion of that Truth, which God hath reuealed vnto vs by his Sonne, though not a pure, and perfect Church: and further that hee doubted not, but that thouſands of the Fathers, which liued and died in the Superſtitions of that Church, were ſaued becauſe of their ignorance, which excuſeth them, miſ-alleaging to that end a * Text of Scripture to prooue it: the matter being of ſet purpoſe openly and at large handled by him, and of that moment that might preiudice the Faith of Chriſt, encourage the ill-affected to continue ſtill in their damnable wayes, and other weake in Faith to ſuffer themſelues eaſily to bee ſeduced to the deſtruction of their Soules; I thought it my moſt bounden dutie to God, and to his Church, whileſt I might haue oportunitie to ſpeake with him, to teach the Truth in a generall ſpeech in ſuch points of Doctrine. * 1. Tim. 1. 13.

At which time I taught that ſuch as dye, or haue dyed at any time in the Church of Rome, holding in their ignorance that Faith, which is taught in it, and namely, Iuſtification in part by Workes, could not bee ſaid by the Scriptures to be ſaued. In which matter foreſeeing that, if I waded not warily in it, I ſhould bee in danger to bee reported (as hath falne out ſince notwithſtanding) to condemne all the Fathers: I ſaid directly and plainly to all mens vnderſtanding, that it was not indeed to bee doubted, but many of the Fathers were ſaued, but the meanes (I ſaid) was not their ignorance, which excuſeth no man with God, but their knowledge and Faith of the Truth, which it appeareth God vouchſafed them by many notable Monuments and Records extant of it in all Ages. Which being the laſt point in all my Sermon, riſing ſo naturally from the Text I then expounded, as would haue occaſioned mee to haue deliuered ſuch matter, notwithſtanding the former Doctrine had beene ſound, and being deale in by a generall ſpeech without touch of his particular: I looked not that a matter of controuerſie would haue beene made of it, no more then had beene of my like dealing in former time. But farre otherwiſe then I looked for, Maſter *Hooker* ſhewing no griefe of offence taken at my ſpeech all the weeke long, the next Sabbath, leauing to proceed vpon his ordinary Text, profeſſed to preach againe that he had done the day before, for

ſome

some question that his Doctrine was drawne into, which he desired might bee examined with all seueritie.

So proceeding, he bestowed his whole time in that Discourse, concerning his former doctrine, and answering the places of Scripture, which I had * alleaged, to proue that a man dying in the Church of Rome, is not to be iudged by the Scriptures to be saued. In which long Speech, and vtterly impertinent to his Text, vnder colour of answering for himselfe, hee impugned directly and openly to all mens vnderstanding the true Doctrine which I had deliuered, and added to his former points some other like (as willingly one errour followeth another) that is, that the Galathians ioyning with Faith in Christ Circumcision, as necessarie to Saluation, myght not be saued. And that they of the Church of Rome may be saued by such a Faith of Christ, as they had, with a generall Repentance of all their errours, notwithstanding, their opinion of Iustification, in part by their Workes and Merits. I was necessarily, though not willingly drawne to say some thing to the points hee obiected against sound Doctrine, which I did in a short Speech in the end of my Sermon, with protestation of so doing, not of any sinister affection to any man, but to beare witnesse to the Truth according to my Calling. And wished, if the matter should needs further be dealt in, some other more conuenient way might be taken for it; wherein I hope, my dealing was manifest to the consciences of all indifferent hearers of me that day, to haue beene according to Peace, and without any vncharitableneese being duly considered.

* Act. 18. 4. Gal. 5. 2, 3, 4.

For that I conferred with him the first day, I haue shewed that the cause requiring of mee the dutie, at the least not to bee altogether silent in it, being a matter of such consequence, that the time also being short, wherein I was to preach after him, the hope of the fruit of our communication being small, vpon experience of former Conferences, my expectation being that the Church should be no further troubled with it, vpon the motion I made of taking some other course of dealing. I suppose my deferring to speake with him till some fit oportunitie, cannot in Charitie be iudged vncharitable.

The second day, his vnlooked for opposition with the former reasons, made it to be a matter that required of necessitie some publique answere; which being so temperate, as I haue shewed, if notwithstanding it be censured as vncharitable, and punished so grieuously as it is, what should haue beene my punishmeat, if (without all such cautions and respects as qualified my speech) I had before all, and in the vnderstanding of all so reproued him offending openly, that other might haue feared to doe the like? Which yet if I had done, might haue beene warranted by the rule and charge of the Apostles, *Them that offend openly, rebuke openly, that the rest may also feare*, and by his example, who when *Peter* in this very case which is now betweene vs, had (not in preaching) but in a matter of conuersation not gone with a right foot, as was fit, for the truth of the Gospell, conferred not priuately with him, but, as his owne rule required, reproued him openly before all, that other might heare, and feare, and not dare to doe the like? all which reasons together weighed, I hope, will shew the manner of my dealing to haue beene charitable, and warrantable in euery sort.

The

The next Sabbath day after this, Maister *Hooker* kept the way hee had entred into before, and bestowed his whole houre and more only vpon the questions he had moued and maintayned, wherein he so set forth the agreement of the Church of Rome with vs, and their disagreement from vs, as if we had consented in the greatest, and waightiest points, and differed onely in certaine smaller matters: which agreement noted by him in two chiefe points, is not such as he would haue made men beleeue. The one in that he said, They acknowledged all men sinners, euen the blessed Virgin, though some of them freed her from sinne: for the Councell of Trent boldeth that shee was free from sinne. Another in that he said, They teach Christs righteousnesse to be the only meritorious cause of taking away sinne, and differ from vs only in the applying of it. For *Thomas Aquinas* their chiefe Schoole man, and Archbishop *Catherinus* teach, That Christ tooke away *only* originall sinne, and that the rest are to be taken away by our selues; yea, the Councell of Trent teacheth, that righteousnesse, whereby we are righteous in Gods sight, is an inherent righteousnesse: which must needs be of our owne workes, and cannot be vnderstood of the righteousnesse inherent only in Christs person, and accounted vnto vs. Moreouer, he taught the same time, that neither the Galathians, nor the Church of Rome did directly ouerthrow the foundation of Iustification by Christ alone, but onely by consequent, and therefore might well be saued; or else neither the Churches of *Lutherans*, nor any which hold any manner of error could be saued, because (sayth he) euery error by consequent ouerthroweth the foundation. In which discourses and such like he bestowed his whole time and more, which, if he had affected either the Truth of God, or the Peace of the Church, he would truly not haue done. Whose example could not draw me to leaue the Scripture I tooke in hand, but standing about an houre to deliuer the doctrine of it, in the end vpon fit occasion of the Text, leauing sundry other his vnsound speeches, and keeping me still to the principall, I confirmed the beleeuing the doctrine of Iustification by Christ onely, to be necessarie to the iustification of all that should be saued, and that the Church of Rome directly denyeth that a man is saued by Christ, or by Faith alone without the workes of the Law. Which my answere, as it was not necessarie for the seruice of God, and the Church, so was it without any immodest, or reproachfull speech in Maister *Hooker*, whole vnfound and wilfull dealings in a cause of so great importance to the faith of Christ, and saluation of the Church, notwithstanding I knew well what speech it deserued, and what some zealous earnest man of the spirit of *Iohn* and *James*, surnamed *Boanerges*, sonnes of Thunder, would haue said in such a case: yet I chose rather to content my selfe in exhorting him to reuoke his doctrine, as *Nathan* the Prophet did, the deuice which without consulting with God, he had of himselfe giuen to *Dauid*, concerning the building of the Temple: and with *Peter* the Apostle to indure to bee withstood in such a case, not vnlike vnto this. This in effect was that which passed betweene vs concerning this matter, and the inuectiues I made against him, wherewith I am charged; which rehearsall, I hope, may cleere me (with all that shall indifferently consider it) of the blames laid vpon me for want of dutie to Maister *Hooker*, in not conferring with

* *Mark.3.17.*

a 2.*Sam.7.3.* 3,4,5.

b *Gala.* 11,14.

him,

him, whereof I haue ſpoken ſufficiently already: and to the high Commiſſion, in not reuealing the matter to them, which yet now I am further to anſwere. My anſwere is, That I proteſt, no contempt nor wilfull neglect of any lawful authoritie ſtayed me from complayning vnto them, but theſe Reaſons following.

First, I was in ſome hope, that Maſter *Hooker*, notwithſtanding he had beene ouer-carried with a ſhew of charitie to preiudice the Truth, yet when it ſhould be ſufficiently proued, would haue acknowledged it, or at the leaſt induced with peace, that it might be offered without either offence to him, or to ſuch as would receiue it; either of which would haue taken away any cauſe of iuſt complaint. When neither of theſe fell out according to my expectation and deſire, but that he replyed to the truth, and obiected againſt it, I thought he might haue ſome doubts, and ſcruples in himſelfe, which yet if they were cleared, hee would either embrace ſome doctrine, or at leaſt ſuffer it to haue his courſe; which hope of him I nouriſhed ſo long as the matter was not bitterly, and immodeſtly handled betweene vs.

Another reaſon was the cauſe it ſelfe, which according to the parable of the Tares (which are ſaid to be ſowne amongſt the Wheat) ſprung vp firſt in his graſſe. Therefore as the Seruants in that place are not ſaid to haue come to complaine to the Lord, till the Tares came to ſhew their fruits in their kind; ſo I thinking it yet but a time of diſcouering of it, what it was, deſired not their ſickle to cut it downe.

For further anſwere, it is to be conſidered, that the conſcience of my dutie to God, and to his Church, did binde me at the firſt to deliuer ſound doctrine in ſuch points, as had beene otherwiſe vttered in the place, where I had now
b Ezec.22.30. ſome yeeres taught the truth. Otherwiſe the rebuke of the b Prophet had
c Ezec.33.6. fallen vpon me for not going vp to the breach, and ſtanding in it, and the c perill for anſwering the bloud of the Citie, in whoſe watch Tower I ſate, if it had beene ſurpriſed by my default. Moreouer, my publike proteſtation in being vnwilling, that if any were not yet ſatisfied, ſome other more conuenient way might be taken for it. And laſtly, that I had reſolued (which I vttered before to ſome, dealing with me about the matter) to haue proteſted the next Sabbath day, that I would no more anſwere in that place any obiections to the doctrine taught by any meanes, but ſome other way ſatisfie ſuch as ſhould require it. Theſe I truſt may make it appeare, that I fayled not in dutie to authoritie; notwithſtanding I did not complaine, nor giue ouer ſo ſoone dealing in the caſe. If I did, how is he cleere, which can alleage none of all theſe for himſelfe, who leauing the expounding of the Scriptures, and his ordinarie calling, voluntarily diſcourſed vpon ſchoole-points and queſtions, neither of edification nor of truth, who after all this, as promiſing to himſelfe, and to vntruth a victorie by my ſilence, added yet in the next Sabbath day to the maintenance of his former opinions, theſe which follow?

That no additament taketh away the foundation, except it be a repugning, of which ſort neither the workes added to Chriſt by the Church of Rome, nor circumciſion by the Galathians were: as one denyeth him not to be a man, that ſaith he is a righteous man, but he that ſaith he is a dead man; whereby it might

might ſeeme that a man might, without hurt, adde workes to Chriſt, and pray alſo, that God and S. *Peter* would ſaue him.

That the Galathians caſe is harder then the caſe of the Church of Rome, becauſe the Galathians ioined Circumciſion with Chriſt, which God hath forbidden, and aboliſhed: but that which the Church of Rome ioined with Chriſt, were good works which God hath commanded. Wherein he committed a double fault; one, in expounding all the queſtion of the Galathians, and conſequently of the Romans, and other Epiſtles of Circumciſion only, and the Ceremonies of the Law (as they doe who anſwer for the Church of Rome in their Writings) contrary to the cleere meaning of the Apoſtle, as may appeare by many ſtrong, and ſufficient reaſons: the other, in that he ſaid, the addition of the Church of Rome was of works commanded of God, whereas the leaſt part of the works, whereby they looked to merit, was of ſuch works, and moſt were of ſupererogation, and of works which God neuer commanded, but was highly diſpleaſed with, as of Maſſes, Pilgrimages, Pardons, paines of Purgatory, and ſuch like: further, that no one ſequell vrged by the Apoſtle againſt the Galathians for ioining Circumciſion with Chriſt, but might bee aſwell enforced againſt the Lutherans, that is, that for their vbiquitie it may bee aſwell ſaid to them, If yee hold the Bodie of Chriſt to be in all places, you are fallen from grace, you are vnder the curſe of the Law, ſaying, Curſed be he that fulfilleth not all things written in this Booke, with ſuch like: he added yet further, that to a Biſhop of the Church of Rome, to a Cardinall, yea to the Pope himſelfe, acknowledging Chriſt to be the Sauiour of the World denying other errours, and being diſcomforted for want of workes whereby he might be iuſtified, he would not doubt but vſe this ſpeech; Thou holdeſt the foundation of Chriſtian Faith, though it bee but by a ſlender thread; thou holdeſt Chriſt, though but as by the hem of his Garment, why ſhouldſt thou not hope that vertue may paſſe from Chriſt to ſaue thee? That, which thou holdeſt of Iuſtification by thy works, ouerthroweth indeed by conſequent the foundation of Chriſtian Faith; but be of good cheere, thou haſt not to doe with a captious Sophiſter, but with a merciſull God, who will iuſtifie thee for that thou holdeſt, and not take the aduantage of doubtfull conſtruction to condemne thee. And if this, he ſaid, be an errour, I hold it willingly; for it is the greateſt comfort I haue in this World, without which I would not wiſh either to ſpeake or to liue. Thus far, being not to be anſwered in it any more, he was bold to proceed; the abſurditie of which ſpeech I need not to ſtand vpon. I thinke the like to this and other ſuch in this Sermon, and the reſt of this matter hath not beene heard in publike places within this Land ſince Queene *Maries* dayes. What conſequence this Doctrine may be of, if he be not by authoritie ordered to renoke it, I beſeech your HH. as the truth of God and his Goſpel is deare and precious vnto you, according to your godly wiſdomes to conſider.

I haue beene bold to offer to your HH. a long and tedious Diſcourſe of theſe matters, but ſpeech being like to Tapeſtry, which if it be folded vp, ſheweth but part of that which is wrought, and being vnlapt and laid open, ſheweth plainely to the eye all the worke that is in it; I thought it neceſſarie to vnfold this Tapeſtrie, and to hang vp the whole chamber of it in your moſt Ho-

norable Senate: that ſo you may the more eaſily diſcerne of all the pieces, and the ſundry workes and maters contained in it. Wherein my hope is, your HH. may ſee I haue not deſerued ſo great a puniſhment as is laid vpon the Church for my ſake, and alſo vpon my ſelfe in taking from mee the exerciſe of my Miniſtery: which puniſhment how heauie it may ſeeme to the Church, or fall out indeed to be, I referre it to them to iudge, and ſpare to write what I feare; but to my ſelfe it is exceeding grieuous, for that it taketh from mee the exerciſe of my Calling. Which I doe not ſay is deare vnto me as the meanes of that little benefit whereby I liue (although this bee a lawfull conſideration, and to bee regarded of mee in due place, and of the authoritie vnder whoſe protection I moſt willingly liue, euen by Gods Commandement, both vnto them, and vnto me:) but which ought to bee more precious to me then my life, for the loue which I ſhould beare to the glory and honour of Almightie God, and to the edification and ſaluation of his Church, for that my life cannot any other way be of like ſeruice to God, nor of ſuch vſe and profit to men by any meanes: for which cauſe, as I diſcerne, how deare any Miniſtery ought to be vnto me, ſo it is my hearty deſire, and moſt humble requeſt vnto God, to your HH. and to all the authoritie I liue vnder, to whom any dealing herein belongeth, that I may ſpend my life according to his Example, who in a word of like ſound of fuller ſenſe, comparing by it the beſtowing of his life to the Offring powred out vpon the Sacrifice of the faith of Gods people, and eſpecially of this Church, whereupon I haue already powred out a great part thereof in the ſame Calling, from which I ſtand now reſtrayned. And if your HH. ſhall finde it ſo that I haue not deſerued ſo great a puniſhment, but rather performed the dutie, which a good and faithfull Seruant ought in ſuch a caſe to doe his Lord, and the people hee putteth him in truſt withall carefully to keepe; I am a moſt humble Suiter by theſe preſents to your HH. that by your godly Wiſdome, ſome good courſe may be taken for the reſtoring of me to my Miniſterie and place againe. Which ſo great a fauour ſhall bind mee yet in a greater obligation of duty (which is already ſo great, as it ſeemed nothing could be added vnto it, to make it greater) to honour God daily for the continuance and increaſe of your good eſtate, and to bee readie with all the poore meanes God hath giuen mee, to doe your HH. that faithfull ſeruice I may poſſibly performe: but if, notwithſtanding my cauſe bee neuer ſo good, your HH. can by no meanes pacifie ſuch as are offended, nor reſtore mee againe, then am I to reſt in the good pleaſure of God, and to commend to your HH. protection vnder her Maieſties my priuate life, while it ſhall be led in dutie, and the Church to him, who hath redeemed to himſelfe a people with his precious bloud, and is making ready to come to iudge both the quick and the dead, to giue to euery one according as hee hath done in this life, bee it good or euill, to the wicked and vnbeleeuer, iuſtice vnto death, but to the faithfull, and ſuch as loue his truth, mercie and grace to life euerlaſting.

Your Honours moſt bounden, and moſt humble Suppliant,
WALTER TRAVERS, *Miniſter of the Word of God.*

THE ANSWERE OF Mr. Richard Hooker TO A SVPPLICATION, Preferred by Mr. WALTER TRAVERS, to the *Honorable Lords of the* Priuie Councell.

LONDON, Printed by W. STANSBY

1622.

Digitized by Google

MASTER HOOKERS ANSWERE TO THE SVPPLICATION THAT MASTER TRAVERS made to the COVNCELL.

To my LORD of Canterbury his Grace.

MY dutie in moſt humble wiſe remembred. May it pleaſe your Grace to vnderſtand, that whereas there hath been a late Controuerſie rayſed in the Temple, and purſued by Maſter *Trauers*, vpon cõceit taken at ſome words by me vttered with a moſt ſimple and harmleſſe meaning; in the heate of which purſuit, after three publike Inuectiues, ſilence being enioyned him by authoritie; he hath hereupon for defence of his proceedings, both preſented the right Honorable Lords and others of her Maieſties Priuie Councell with a writing, and alſo cauſed or ſuffered the ſame to be copied out, and ſpred through the hands of ſo many, that wel-nigh all ſorts of men haue it in their boſomes; the matters wherewith I am therein charged being of ſuch qualitie as they are, and my ſelfe being better knowne to your Grace, then to any other of their Honours beſides; I haue choſen to offer to your Graces hands, a plaine declaration of my innocency in all thoſe things, wherewith I am ſo hardly and ſo heauily charged, leſt if I ſtill remayne ſilent, that which I doe for quietneſſe ſake, be taken as an Argument, that I lacke what to ſpeake truely and iuſtly in mine owne defence.

2 Firſt, becauſe Maſter *Trauers* thinketh it is expedient to breed an opinion in mens minds, that the roote of all inconuenient euents which are now ſprung out, is the ſurly and vnpeaceable diſpoſition of the man with whom he hath to doe, therefore the firſt in the ranke of accuſations laid againſt me is my inconformitie, which haue ſo little inclined to ſo many and ſo earneſt Exhortations and Conferences, as my ſelfe, hee ſaith, can witneſſe, to haue beene

ſpent vpon mee, for my better faſhioning vnto good correſpondence and agreement.

3 Indeed, when at the firſt, by meanes of ſpeciall well-willers, without any ſute of mine, as they very well know, (although I doe not thinke it had been a mortall ſinne, in a reaſonable ſort to haue ſhewed a moderate deſire that way) yet when by their indeuour without inſtigation of mine, ſome reuerend and honourable, fauourably affecting mee, had procured her Maieſties grant of the place, at the very point of my entring thereinto, the euening before I was firſt to preach, hee came and two other Gentlemen ioyned with him: the effect of his Conference then was, that he thought it his dutie to aduiſe me not to enter with a ſtrong hand, but to change my purpoſe of preaching there the next day, and to ſtay till he had giuen notice of mee to the Congregation, that ſo their allowance might ſeale my calling. The effect of mine Anſwere was, that as in place where ſuch order is, I would not breake it; ſo here where it neuer was, I might not of mine owne head take vpon me to beginne it; but liking very well the motion for the opinion which I had of his good meaning who made it, requeſted him not to miſlike my Anſwer, though it were not correſpondent to his mind.

4 When this had ſo diſpleaſed ſome, that whatſoeuer was afterwardes done, or ſpoken by me, it offended their taſte, angry informations were daily ſent out, intelligence giuen farre and wide what a dangerous enemy was crept in, the worſt that iealouſie could imagine was ſpoken and written to ſo many, that at the length ſome knowing me well, and perceiuing how iniurious the reports were, which grew daily more and more vnto my diſcredit, wrought meanes to bring M^r. *Trauers* and me to a ſecond conference. Wherein when a common friend vnto vs both, had quietly requeſted him to vtter thoſe things wherewith hee found himſelfe any way grieued, hee firſt renewed the memorie of my entring into this charge by vertue only of an humane creature (for ſo the want of that * formalitie of popular allowance was then cenſured;) and vnto this was annexed a Catalogue, partly of cauſeleſſe ſurmiſes; as that I had conſpired againſt him, and that I ſought ſuperioritie ouer him; and partly of faults, which to note, I ſhould haue thought it a greater offence then to commit, if I did account them faults and had heard them ſo curiouſly obſerued in any other then my ſelfe, they are ſuch ſilly things; as praying in the entrance of my Sermons only, and not in the end, naming Biſhops in my Prayer, kneeling when I pray, and kneeling when I receiue the Communion, with ſuch like, which I would be as loth to recite as I was ſorrie to heare them obiected, if the rehearſall thereof were not by him thus wreſted from mee. Theſe are the conferences wherewith I haue been wooed to entertayne peace and good agreement.

* A meere formalitie it had beene to me in that place, whereas no man had euer vſed it before me; ſo it could neyther further me, if I did vſe it, nor hinder me, if I did not.

5 As for the vehement exhortations he ſpeaketh of, I would gladly know ſome reaſon wherefore he thought them needfull to be vſed. Was there any thing found in my ſpeeches or dealings which gaue them occaſion, who are ſtudious of peace, to thinke that I diſpoſed my ſelfe to ſome vnquiet kinde of proceedings? Surely, the ſpeciall Prouidence of God, I doe now ſee it was, that the firſt words I ſpake in this place, ſhould make the firſt thing whereof I

am

am accuſed, to appeare not onely vntrue, but improbable to as many as then heard me with indifferent eares, and doe, I doubt not, in their conſciences cleere me of this ſuſpicion. Howbeit I graunt this were nothing if it might be ſhewed, that my deeds following were not ſuteable to my words. If I had ſpoken of peace at the firſt, and afterwards ſought to moleſt and grieue him, by croſſing him in his function, by ſtorming if my pleaſure were not asked and my will obeyed in the leaſt occurrences, by carping needleſſly ſometimes at the manner of his teaching; ſometimes at this, ſometimes at that point of his doctrine; I might then with ſome likelihood haue beene blamed, as one diſdaining a peaceable hand when it hath beene offered. But if I be able (as I am) to proode, that my ſelfe haue now a full yeere together borne the continuance of ſuch dealings, not onely without any manner of reſiſtance; but alſo without any ſuch complaint as might let or hinder him in his courſe; I ſee no cauſe in the world, why of this I ſhould be accuſed, vnleſſe it be left I ſhould accuſe, which I meant not. If therefore I haue giuen him occaſion to vſe conferences and exhortations vnto peace, if when they were beſtowed vpon me I haue diſpiſed them; it wil not be hard to ſhew ſome one word or deed wherewith I haue gone about to worke diſturbance: one is not much, I requite but one. Only I require if any thing be ſhewed, it may be prooued, and not obiected only as this is, *That I haue ioyned with ſuch as haue alwaies oppoſed to any good order in this Church, and made themſelues to be thought miſpoſed to the preſent eſtate and proceedings.* The words haue reference as it ſeemeth, vnto ſome ſuch things as being attempted before my comming to the Temple, went not ſo effectually perhaps forward as he which deuiſed them would haue wiſhed. An order as I learne there was tendred, that Communicants ſhould neither kneele, as in the moſt places of the Realme; nor ſit, as in this place the cuſtome is; but walke to the one ſide of the Table, and there ſtanding till they had receiued, paſſe afterwards away round about by the other. Which being on a ſudden begun to be practiſed in the Church, ſome fate wondering what it ſhould meane, others deliberating what to doe: till ſuch time as at length by name one of them being called openly thereunto, requeſted that they might doe as they had beene accuſtomed, which was graunted, and as Maſter *Trauers* had miniſtred his way to the reſt, ſo a Curate was ſent to miniſter to them after their way. Which vnproſperous beginning of a thing, (ſauing onely for the inconuenience of needleſſe alterations otherwiſe harmeleſſe) did ſo diſgrace that order in their conceit, who had to allow or diſallow it, that it tooke no place. For neither they could euer induce themſelues to thinke it good, and it ſo much offended Maſter *Trauers* who ſuppoſed it to be the beſt, that he ſince that time, although contented himſelfe to receiue it as they doe at the hands of others, yet hath not thought it meete they ſhould euer receiue it out of his, which would not admit that order of receiuing it, and therefore in my time hath beene alwayes preſent not to miniſter, but onely to be miniſtred vnto.

6 Another order there was likewiſe deuiſed, but an order of much more waight and importance. This ſoile, in reſpect of certaine immunities and other ſpecialties belonging vnto it, ſeemed likely to beare that which in other

places

places of the Realme of England doth not take. For which cauſe requeſt was made to ſome of her Maieſties Priuie Councell, that whereas it is prouided by a Statute, there ſhould bee Collectors and Side-men in Churches, which thing or ſomewhat correſpondent vnto it, this place did greatly want, it would pleaſe their Honors to motion ſuch a matter to the Ancients of the Temple. And according to their Honorable manner of helping forward all motions ſo grounded, they wrote their Letters, as I am informed, to that effect. Whereupon although theſe Houſes neuer had vſe of ſuch Collectors and Side-men, as are appointed in other places, yet they both erected a Boxe to receiue mens deuotion for the poore, appointing the Treaſurer of both Houſes to take care for beſtowing it where need is, and granting further, that if any could bee intreated (as in the end ſome were) to vndertake the labour of obſeruing mens ſlackneſſe in diuine duties, they ſhould be allowed, their complaints heard all times, and the faults they complained of, if Maſter *Alueyes* priuate admoniſhion did not ſerue, then by ſome other meanes redreſſed, but according to the old receiued Orders of both Houſes. Whereby the ſubſtance of their Honors Letters were indeed fully ſatisfied. Yet becauſe Maſter *Trauers* intended not this, but as it ſeemed another thing, therefore notwithſtanding the Orders which haue beene taken, and for any thing I know, doe ſtand ſtill in as much force in this Church now, as at any time heretofore: He complaineth much of the good Orders which hee doth meane haue beene withſtood. Now it were hard if as many, as any way oppoſe vnto theſe and the like Orders, in his perſwaſion good, do thereby make themſelues to be thought diſlikers of the preſent ſtate and proceedings. If they, whom he aymeth at, haue any otherwiſe made themſelues to be thought ſuch, it is likely hee doth know wherein, and will, I hope, diſcloſe to whom it appertayneth, both the perſons whom hee thinketh, and the cauſes why hee thinketh them ſo ill-affected. But whatſoeuer the men be, doe their faults make mee faultie? They doe, if I ioyne my ſelfe with them. I beſeech him therefore to declare wherein I haue ioyned with them. Other ioyning then this with any man here, I cannot imagine: It may be I haue talked, or walked, or eaten, or interchangeably vſed the duties of common humanitie, with ſome ſuch as he is hardly perſwaded of. For I know no Law of God or Man by force whereof they ſhould be as Heathens and Publicans vnto me, that are not gracious in the eyes of another man, perhaps without cauſe, or if with cauſe, yet ſuch cauſe as he is priuy vnto, and not I. Could hee or any reaſonable man thinke it a charitable courſe in mee, to obſerue them that ſhew by externall courteſies a fauourable inclination towards him, and if I ſpie out any one amongſt them, of whom I thinke not well, herevpon to draw ſuch an accuſation as this againſt him, and to offer it where he hath giuen vp his againſt me? Which notwithſtanding I will acknowledge to be inſt and reaſonable, if he or any man liuing ſhall ſhew that I vſe as much as the bare familiar companie but of one, who by word or deed hath euer giuen me cauſe to ſuſpect or coniecture him, ſuch as here they are termed, with whom complaint is made that I ioyne my ſelfe. This being ſpoken therefore and written without all poſſibilitie of proofe, doth not Maſter *Trauers* giue me ouer great cauſe to ſtand in ſome feare, leſt hee make too little conſcience

how

how he vſeth his tongue or penne? Theſe things are not laid againſt mee for nothing, they are to ſome purpoſe if they take place. For in a mind perſwaded that I am as he deciphereth me, one which refuſe to be at peace with ſuch as imbrace the truth, and ſide my ſelfe with men ſiniſterly affected thereunto, any thing that ſhal be ſpoken concerning the vnſoundnes of my doctrine, cannot chooſe but be fauourably entertained. This preſuppoſed, it will haue likelyhood enough, which afterwards followeth, that *many of my Sermons haue raſhed of ſome ſowre leauen or other*, that in them he hath *diſcouered ſundry vnſound matters*. A thing much to be lamented, that ſuch a place as this which might haue beene ſo well prouided for, hath falne into the hands of one no better inſtructed in the truth. But what if in the end it be found that hee iudgeth my words, as they doe colours, which looke vpon them with greene ſpectacles, and thinke that which they ſee is greene, when indeed that is greene whereby they ſee?

7 Touching the firſt point of this diſcouerie which is about the matter of Predeſtination, to ſet downe that I ſpake, (for I haue it written) to declare and confirme the ſeuerall branches thereof, would be tedious now in this writing, where I haue ſo many things to touch, that I can but touch them onely. Neither is it herein ſo needfull for mee to iuſtifie my ſpeech, when the verie place and preſence where I ſpake doth it ſelfe ſpeake ſufficiently for my cleering. This matter was not broached in a blind Alley, or vttered where none was to heere it that had skill with authoritie to controll, or couertly inſinuated by ſome glyding ſentence.

8 That which I taught was at *Pauls Croſſe*; it was not huddled in amongſt other matters in ſuch ſort that it could paſſe without noting, it was opened, it was prooued, it was ſome reaſonable time ſtood vpon. I ſee not which way my Lord of *London*, who was preſent and heard it, can excuſe ſo great a fault as patiently without rebuke or controlement afterwards, to heare any man there teach otherwiſe then *the Word of God doth*, not as it is vnderſtood by the priuate interpretation of ſome one or two men, or by a ſpeciall conſtruction receiued in ſome few bookes, but as it is vnderſtood *by all Churches profeſſing the Goſpel*, by them all, and therefore euen by our owne alſo amongſt others. A man that did meane to prooue that hee ſpeaketh, would ſurely take the meaſure of his words ſhorter.

9 The next thing diſcouered, is an opinion about the aſſurance of mens perſwaſion in matters of faith. I haue taught he ſaith; *That the aſſurance of things which we beleeue by the Word, is not ſo certain as of that we perceiue by ſence*. And is it as certain? Yea, I taught as he himſelfe, I truſt, wil not deny, that the things which God doth promiſe in his Word, are ſurer vnto vs then any thing wee touch, handle, or ſee. But are we ſo ſure and certaine of them? If wee be, why doth God ſo often proue his promiſes vnto vs, as he doth by argument taken from one ſenſible experience? Wee muſt be ſurer of the proofe then of the thing prooued, otherwiſe it is no proofe. How is it, that if ten men do all looke vpon the Moone, euery one of them knoweth it as certainly to be the Moone as another: but many beleeuing one and the ſame promiſes, all haue not one and the ſame fulneſſe of perſwaſion? How falleth it out, that men being aſſu-

red

red of any thing by ſence, can bee no ſurer of it then they are, whereas the ſtrongeſt in faith that liueth vpon the earth, hath alwayes need to labour, and ſtriue, and pray, that his aſſurance concerning heauenly and ſpirituall things, may grow, increaſe, and be augmented?

10 The Sermon wherein I haue ſpoken ſomewhat largely of this point, was long before this late controuerſie roſe betweene him and mee, vpon requeſt of ſome of my friends ſeene, and read by many, and amongſt many, ſome who are thought able to diſcerne: and I neuer heard that any one of them hitherto hath condemned it as containing vnſound matter. My caſe were very hard, if as oft as any thing I ſpeake diſpleaſing one mans taſte, my doctrine vpon his onely word ſhould be taken for ſowre leauen.

11 The reſt of this diſcouerie is all about the matter now in queſtion, wherein hee hath two faults predominant, which would tyre out any that ſhould anſwer vnto euery point ſeuerally: vnapt ſpeaking of Schoole controuerſies; and of my words ſometimes ſo vntoward a reciting, that hee which ſhould promiſe to draw a mans countenance, & did indeed expreſſe the parts, at leaſtwiſe the moſt of them truely, but peruerſly place them, could not repreſent a more offenſiue viſage, then vnto mee my owne ſpeech ſeemeth in ſome places as hee hath ordered it. For anſwer whereunto, that writing is ſufficient wherein I haue ſet downe both my words and meaning inſuch ſort, that where this accuſation doth depraue the one, and either miſinterpret, or without iuſt cauſe miſlike the other, it will appeare ſo plainely, that I may ſpare very well to take vpon me a new and a needleſſe labour here.

12 Onely at one thing which is there to be found, becauſe Maſter *Trauers* doth here ſeeme to take ſuch a ſpeciall aduantage, as if the matter were vnanſwerable, hee conſtraineth mee either to detect his ouer-ſight, or to confeſſe mine owne in it. In ſetting the queſtion betweene the Church of Rome and vs about Grace and Iuſtification, leſt I ſhould giue them an occaſion to ſay, as commonly they doe, that when we cannot refute their opinions, wee propoſe to our ſelues ſuch in ſtead of theirs, as we can refute, I tooke it for the beſt and moſt perſpicuous way of teaching, to declare firſt, how farre we doe agree, and then to ſhew our diſagreement; not generally (as Maſter *Trauers* his * words would carry it, for the eaſier faſtning that vpon me, wherewith, ſauing only by him, I was neuer in my life touched;) but about the matter onely of Iuſtification: for further I had no cauſe to meddle at that time. What was then my

* His words bethese: *The next Sabbath day after this* M. Hooker *kept the way he had entred into before, and beſtowed his whole houre and more only vpon the queſtions he had mooued and maintained. Wherein hee ſo ſet out the agreement of the Church of Rome with vs, and their diſagreement from vs, as if we had conſented in the greateſt and waightieſt points, and differed onely in certaine ſmaller matters. VVhich agreement noted by him in two chiefe points, is not ſuch as he would haue made men beleeue: The one, in that he ſaid they acknowledge all men ſinners, euen the bleſſed Virgin, though ſome of them freed her from ſinne: for the Councell of Trent holdeth that ſhe was free from ſinne: Another in that he ſaid, They teach Chriſts righteouſneſſe to be the onely meritorious cauſe of taking away ſinne, and differ from vs only in the applying of it. For* Thomas Aquinas *their chiefe Schoolaman, and Archbiſhop* Catharinus *teach, That Chriſt tooke away onely originall ſinne, and that the reſt are to be taken away by our ſelues: yea the Councell of Trent teacheth, That the righteouſneſſe whereby we are righteous in Gods ſight, is inherent righteouſneſſe, which muſt needs be of our owne workes, and cannot be vnderſtood of the righteouſneſſe inherent onely in Chriſts perſon and accounted vnto vs.*

offence

offence in this caſe? I did, as he ſaith, ſo ſet it out, as if we had conſented in the greateſt and waightieſt points, and differed onely in ſmaller matters. I will not be found, when it commeth to the ballance, a light difference where we diſagree, as I did acknowledge that we doe about the very eſſence of the Medicine whereby Chriſt cureth our diſeaſe. Did I goe about to make a ſhew of agreement in the waightieſt points, and was I ſo fond as not to conceale our diſagreement about this? I doe wiſh that ſome indifferencie were vſed by them, that haue taken the waighing of my words.

13 Yea, but our agreement is not ſuch in two of the chiefeſt points, as I would haue men beleeue it is: and what are they? The one is, I ſaid, *They acknowledge all men ſinners, euen the bleſſed Virgin, though ſome of them free her from ſin.* Put the caſe I had affirmed, that only ſome of them free her from ſin, and had deliuered it as the moſt currant opinion amongſt them, that ſhe was conceiued in ſinne: doth not *Bonauenture* ſay plainely, *Omnes fere*; In a manner all men doe hold this? Doth he not bring many reaſons wherefore all men ſhould hold it? Were there voices ſince that time euer counted, and their number found ſmaller which hold it, then theirs that hold the contrarie? Let the queſtion then be, whether I might ſay, The moſt of them *acknowledged all men ſinners, euen the bleſſed Virgin her ſelfe.* To ſhew that their generall receiued opinion is the contrarie, The Tridentine Councell is alledged, peraduenture not altogether ſo conſiderately. For if that Councell haue by reſolute determination freed her, if it hold as Maſter *Trauers* ſaith it doth, that ſhee was free from ſin; then muſt the Church of Rome needs condemne them that hold the contrarie. For what that Councell holdeth, the ſame they all doe and muſt hold. But in the Church of Rome, who knoweth not, that it is a thing indifferent to thinke and defend the one or the other? So that by this argument; the Councell of Trent holdeth the Virgin free from ſinne, *Ergo*, It is plaine that none of them may, and therefore vntrue that moſt of them doe acknowledge her a ſinner, were forcible to ouerthrow my ſuppoſed Aſſertion, if it were true that the Councell did hold this. But to the end it may cleerely appeare, how it neither holdeth this nor the contrarie, I will open what many do conceiue of the Canon that concerneth this matter. The Fathers of Trent perceiued, that if they ſhould define of this matter, it would bee dangerous, howſoeuer it were determined. If they had freed her from her originall ſinne, the reaſons againſt them are vnanſwerable which *Bonauenture* and others doe alledge, but eſpecially *Thomas*, whoſe line as much as may be they follow. Againe, if they did reſolue the other way, they ſhould controll themſelues in another thing, which in no caſe might be altered. For they profeſſe to keepe no day holy in the honour of an vnholy thing; and the Virgins Conception they honour with a * Feaſt; which they could not abrogate without cancelling a Conſtitution of *Xyſtus Quartus*. And that which is worſe, the world

* This doth much trouble *Thomas*, holding her Conception ſtayned with the naturall blemiſh inherent in mortall ſeed. And therefore hee putteth it off with two anſweres; the one, That the Church of Rome doth not allow, but tolerate the Feaſt, which anſwer now will not ſerue: the other, That being ſure ſhee was ſanctified before birth, but vnſure how long a while after her Conception, therefore vnder the name of her Conception-day, they honour the time of her Sanctification. So that beſides this, they haue now no ſoder to make the certaine allowance of their Feaſt, and their vncertaine ſentence concerning her ſinne to cleaue together, *Thom. 3. part. queſt. 27. art. 2. ad 2. & 3.*

might

might perhaps hereupon ſuſpect, that if the Church of Rome did amiſſe before in this, it is not impoſſible for her to faile in other things. In the end they did wiſely quote out their Canon by a middle thred, eſtabliſhing the Feaſt of the Virgins Conception, and leaning the other queſtion doubtfull as they found it: giuing onely a caueat, that no man ſhould take the Decree, which pronounceth all mankind originally ſinnefull, for a definitiue ſentence concerning the bleſſed Virgin. This in my ſight is plaine by their owne words, *Declarat hac ipſa ſancta Synodus, &c.* wherefore our Countrimen at Rhemes mentioning this point, are maruellous warie how they ſpeake; they touch it as though it were a hot cole: *Many godly deuout men iudge that our bleſſed Lady was neither borne nor conceiued in ſinne.* Is it their want to ſpeake nicely of things definitiuely ſet downe in that Councell? In like ſort we find that the reſt, which haue ſince the time of the Tridentine Synode written of originall ſinne, are in this point for the moſt part either ſilent or very ſparing in ſpeech; and when they ſpeake either doubtfull what to thinke, or whatſoeuer they thinke themſelues, fearefull to ſet downe any certaine determination. If I be thought to take the Canon of that Councell otherwiſe then they themſelues doe, let him expound it whoſe ſentence was neither laſt asked, nor his pen leaſt occupied in ſetting it downe. I meane *Andradius*, whom *Gregory* the Thirteenth hath allowed plainly to confeſſe, that it is a matter which neither expreſſe euidence of Scripture, nor the Tradition of the Fathers, nor the ſentence of the Church hath determined; that they are too ſurly and ſelfe-willed, which defending either opinion, are diſpleaſed with them by whom the other is maintained: finally, that the Fathers of Trent haue not ſet downe any certaintie about this queſtion, but left it doubtfull and indifferent. Now whereas my words which I had ſet downe in writing before I vttered them, were indeed theſe, *Although they imagine that the Mother of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt were for his honour, and by his ſpeciall protection preſerued cleane from all ſin, yet concerning the reſt they teach as we doe, that all haue ſinned.* Againſt my words they might with more pretence take exception, becauſe ſo many of them thinke ſhe had ſin: which exception notwithſtanding, the Propoſition being indefinite, and the matter contingent, they cannot take, becauſe they grant that many whom they count graue and deuout amongſt them, thinke that ſhee was cleere from all ſin. But whether Maſter *Trauers* did note my words himſelfe, or take them vpon the credit of ſome other mans noting, the Tables were faultie wherin it was noted: *All men ſinners, euen the bleſſed Virgin.* When my ſpeech was rather, *All men, except the bleſſed Virgin.* To leaue this; another fault he findeth that I ſaid, *They teach Chriſts righteouſneſſe to be the onely meritorious cauſe of taking away ſin, and differ from vs only in the applying of it.* I did ſay and doe, *They teach as we doe, that although Chriſt be the only meritorious cauſe of our iuſtice, yet as a medicine which is made for health, doth not heale by being made, but by being applied: So by the merits of Chriſt there can be no life nor iuſtification, without the application of his merits: But about the manner of applying Chriſt, about the number and power of meanes, whereby he is applied, we diſſent from them.* This of our diſſenting from them is acknowledged.

Anno. in Rom. 5. Sect. 9.

Lib. 5. defenſ. fidei.

14 Our agreement in the former is denied to bee ſuch as I pretend. Let their

their owne words therefore, and mine concerning them, be compared. Doth not *Andradius* plainly confeſſe, *Our ſinnes doe ſhut, and only the merits of Chriſt open the entring vnto bleſſednesſe?* And Soto, *It is put for a ground, that all ſince the fall of Adam obtaine ſalvation only by the paſſion of Chriſt: howbeit as no cauſe can be effectuall without applying, ſo neither can any man bee ſaved to whom the ſuffering of Chriſt is not applyed.* In a word, who not? when the Councell of Trent reckoning vp the cauſes of our firſt iuſtification, doth name no end but Gods glorie and our felicitie; no efficient, but his Mercie; no inſtrumentall, but Baptiſme; no meritorious, but Chriſt, whom to haue merited the taking away of no ſinne, but originall, is not their opinion: which himſelfe will find when he hath well examined his Witneſſes *Catharinus* and *Thomas*. Their Ieſuites are marvellous angry with the men, out of whoſe gleanings Maſter *Travers* ſeemeth to haue taken this; they openly diſclaime it, they ſay plainly, *Of all the Catholikes there is no one that did euer ſo teach*, they make ſolemne proteſtation, *We beleeue and profeſſe that Chriſt vpon the croſſe hath altogether ſatisfied for all ſins, as well originall as actuall.* Indeed they teach that the merit of Chriſt doth not take away actuall ſinne, in ſuch ſort as it doth originall, wherein if their Doctrine had beene vnderſtood, I for my ſpeech had neuer beene accuſed. As for the Councell of Trent concerning inherent righteouſneſſe, what doth it here? No man doubteth but they make another formall cauſe of Iuſtification then we doe. In reſpect whereof, I haue ſhewed alreadie, that we diſagree about the very eſſence of that which cureth our ſpirituall Diſeaſe. Moſt true it is which the Grand Philoſopher hath, *Euery man iudgeth well of that which he knoweth*, and therefore till we know the things throughly, whereof we iudge, it is a point of iudgement to ſtay our iudgement.

Orthod. lib. 3.

In 4. Sent. diſp. 1. queſt. 4. art. 6.

Bellarm. Iudic. de lib. Concor. Mendac. 18. Nemo Catholicorum vnquam ſic docuit; ſed credimus, & profitemur Chriſtum in cruce pro omnibus omnino peccatis ſatisfeciſſe, tam originalibus, quàm actualibus.

15 Thus much labour being ſpent in diſcouering the vnſoundneſſe of my Doctrine, ſome paines hee taketh further to open faults in the manner of my teaching, as that *I beſtowed my whole houre and more, my time, and more then my time, in Diſcourſes vtterly impertinent to my Text.* Which if I had done, it might haue paſt without complayning of to the Priuie Councell.

16 But I did worſe, as he ſaith, *I left the expounding of the Scriptures and my ordinarie calling, and diſcourſed vpon Schoole-points, and queſtions, neither of edification, nor of truth.* I read no Lecture in the Law or in Phyſick. And except the bounds of ordinary calling may be drawne like a Purſe, how are they ſo much wider vnto him then to me, that he which in the limits of his ordinarie calling, ſhould reproue that in mee which he vnderſtood not, and I labouring that both hee and others might vnderſtand, could not doe this without forſaking my calling? The matter whereof I ſpake was ſuch, as being at the firſt by me but lightly touched, he had in that place openly contradicted, and ſolemnely taken vpon him to diſproue. If therefore it were a Schoole queſtion and vnfit to be diſcourſed of there, that which was in me but a Propoſition only at the firſt, wherefore made he a Probleme of it? Why tooke he firſt vpon him to maintayne the negatiue of that, which I had affirmatiuely ſpoken, only to ſhew mine owne opinion, little thinking that euer it would haue a queſtion? Of what nature ſoeuer the queſtion were of, I could doe no leſſe then there explaine my ſelfe to them, vnto whom I was accuſed of vnſound Doctrine;

hold it but weakely, and as it were with a ſlender thred, although they build many baſe and vnſurable things vpon it, things that cannot abide the triall of the fire; yet ſhall they paſſe the fierie triall and be ſaued, which indeed haue builded themſelues vpon the Rocke, which is the foundation of the Church. If then our Fathers did not hold the foundation of Faith, there is no doubt, but they were faithleſſe. If many of them held it, then is therein no impediment, but many of them might be ſaued. Then let vs ſee, what the foundation of Faith is, and whether we may thinke, that thouſands of our Fathers, being in Popiſh ſuperſtitions, did notwithſtanding hold the foundation.

15 If the foundation of Faith doe import the generall ground, whereupon we reſt, when we doe beleeue, the writings of the Euangeliſts and the Apoſtles are the foundation of the Chriſtian Faith; *Credimus quia legimus*, ſaith S. *Ierome*: O that the Church of Rome did as * ſoundly interprete theſe fundamentall writings, whereupon wee build our Faith, as ſhee doth willingly hold and imbrace them.

* They miſinterpret, not onely by making falſe and corrupt gloſſes vpon the ſcripture, but, alſo by forcing the old vulgar tranſlation as the onely authentical: howbeit they refuſe no booke which is Canonicall, though they admit ſundrie which are not.

16 But if the name of *Foundation* doe note the principall thing, which is beleeued: then is that the foundation of our Faith, which S. *Paul* hath to *Timothy*: a *God manifeſted in the fleſh, iuſtified in the Spirit, &c.* that of *Nathaniel*, b *Thou art the Sonne of the liuing God; Thou art the King of Iſrael*: that of the Inhabitants of Samaria: c *This is Chriſt the Sauiour of the world*: he that directly denieth this, doth vtterly raſe the very foundation of our Faith. I haue prooued heretofore, that, although the Church of Rome hath plaid the Harlot worſe then euer did Iſrael, yet are they not as now the Synagogue of the Iewes, which plainely deny Chriſt Ieſus, quite and cleane excluded from the new Couenant. But as Samaria compared with Hieruſalem is termed *Aholah*, a Church or Tabernacle of her owne; contrariwiſe, Ieruſalem, *Aholibah*, the reſting place of the Lord: ſo whatſoeuer we terme the Church of Rome, when we compare her with reformed Churches, ſtill we put a difference, as then betweene Babylon and Samaria, ſo now betweene Rome and the Heathenith aſſemblies. Which opinion, I muſt, and will recall, I muſt grant, and will, that the Church of Rome, together with all her children, is cleane excluded. There is no difference in the world betweene our Fathers, and Saracens, Turkes, and Paynims; if they did directly denie Chriſt crucified for the ſaluation of the world.

a 1. *Tim.* 3. 16.
b *Iohn* 1. 49.
c *Iohn* 4. 42.

17 But how many millions of them were knowne ſo to haue ended their mortall liues, that the drawing of their breath hath ceaſed with the vttering of this Faith, *Chriſt my Sauiour, my Redeemer Ieſus?* Anſwer is made, That this they might vnfainedly confeſſe, and yet be farre enough from ſaluation. For, behold, ſaith the Apoſtle, *I Paul ſay vnto you, that if yee be circumciſed, Chriſt ſhall profit you not hing*. Chriſt in the worke of mans ſaluation is alone: the Galathians were caſt away by ioyning *Circumciſion*, and the other Rites of the Law with Chriſt: the Church of Rome doth teach her children to ioyne other things likewiſe with him; therefore their faith, their beliefe, doth not profit them any thing at all. It is true, that they doe indeed ioyne other things with Chriſt: but how? Not in the worke of redemption it ſelfe, which they grant, that Chriſt alone hath performed ſufficiently for the ſaluation of

Gal. 5. 2. 6.

the whole world; but in the applicarion of this ineſtimable treaſure, that it may be effectuall to their ſaluation: how demurely ſoeuer they confeſſe, that they ſeeke remiſſion of ſinnes, no otherwiſe then by the bloud of Chriſt, vſing humbly the meanes appointed by him to apply the benefit of his holy bloud; they teach, indeed, ſo many things pernicious in Chriſtian Faith, in ſetting downe the meanes, whereof they ſpeake, that the very foundation of Faith, which they hold, is thereby * plainely ouerthrowne, and the force of the bloud of Ieſus Chriſt extinguiſhed. We may therefore diſpute with them, vrge them euen with as dangerous ſequels, as the Apoſtle doth the Galatians. But I demand, if ſome of thoſe Galatians heartily imbracing the Goſpel of Chriſt, ſincere and ſound in faith (this one onely errour excepted) had ended their liues before they were euer taught, how perilous an opinion they held: ſhall we thinke, that the damage of this errour did ſo ouer-waigh the benefit of their faith, that the mercy of God might not ſaue them? I grant they ouerthrew the very foundation of faith by conſequent: doth not that ſo likewiſe, which the [a] *Lutheran* Churches doe at this day ſo ſtifly and ſo firmely maintaine? For mine owne part, I dare not here denie the poſſibilitie of their ſaluation, which haue beene the chiefeſt inſtruments of ours: albeit they carried to their graue a perſwaſion ſo greatly repugnant to the truth. Foraſmuch therefore as it may be ſaid of the Church of Rome, ſhee hath yet a little ſtrength, ſhe doth not directly deny the foundation of Chriſtianitie: I may, I truſt, without offence, perſwade my ſelfe, that thouſands of our Fathers in former times liuing and dying within her wals, haue found mercy at the hands of God. *See Flavil on mental errors. S. M.*

18 What although they repented not of their errors? God forbid, that I ſhould open my mouth to gaine-ſay that which Chriſt himſelfe hath ſpoken: *Except yee repent, yee ſhall all periſh.* And if they did not repent, they periſhed. But withall note, that we haue the benefit of a double repentance: the leaſt ſinne, which we commit in Deed, Thought, or Word, is death, without repentance. Yet how many things doe eſcape vs in euery of theſe, which we doe not know? How many, which we doe not obſerue to be ſinnes? And without the knowledge, without the obſeruation of ſinne, there is no actuall repentance. It cannot then be choſen, but that for as many as hold the foundation; and haue all holden ſinnes and errors in hatred; the bleſſing of repentance for vnknowne ſinnes and errours, is obtained at the hands of God, through the gracious mediation of Ieſus Chriſt, for ſuch ſuiters as crie with the Prophet DAVID: *Purge me, O Lord, from my ſecret ſinnes.*

19 But we waſh a wall of lome; we labour in vaine; all this is nothing; it doth not proone; it cannot iuſtifie, that which we goe about to maintaine. Infidels and Heathen men are not ſo godleſſe, but that they may, no doubt, crie God mercie, and deſire in generall to haue their ſinnes forgiuen them. To ſuch as deny the foundation of faith, there can be no ſaluation (according to the ordinarie courſe, which God doth vſe in ſauing men) without a particular repentance of that error. The Galatians thinking, that vnleſſe they were circumciſed, they could not be ſaued, ouerthrew the foundations of faith directly: therefore if any of them did die ſo perſwaded, whether before or after they

* Plainely in all mens ſight whoſe eyes God hath inlightened to behold his truth. For they, which are in error, are in darkeneſſe, and ſee not that, which in light is plaine. In that which they teach concerning the natures of Chriſt, they hold the ſame which *Neſtorius* fully the ſame with *Eutiches* about the proprieties of his nature.

a The opinion of the *Lutherans* though it be no direct deniall of the foundation may notwithſtanding be damnable vnto ſome: and I do not thinke but that in many reſpects it is leſſe damnable, as at this day ſome maintain it, then it was in them which held it at firſt, as *Luther* and others, whom I had an eye vnto in this ſpeech. The queſtion is not whether an errour with ſuch and ſuch circumſtances, but ſimply, whether an errot ouerthrowing the foundation, doe exclude all poſſibilitie of ſaluation, if it be not recanted, and expreſſly repented of.

they told of their errors, their end is dreadfull; there is no way with them but one, death and condemnation. For the Apoſtle ſpeaketh nothing of men departed, but ſaith generally of all, *If you be circumciſed, Chriſt ſhall profit you nothing. You are aboliſhed from Chriſt, whoſoeuer are iuſtified by the law; ye are fallen from grace, Gal.5.* Of them in the Church of Rome, the reaſon is the ſame. For whom Antichriſt hath ſeduced, concerning them did not S. *Paul* ſpeake long before, that they receiued not the word of truth, they might not be ſaued? therefore God would *ſend them ſtrong deluſions to beleeue lies, that all they might be damned which beleeued not the truth, but had pleaſure in vnrighteouſneſſe.* And S. *Iohn, All that dwel vpon the earth ſhal worſhip him, whoſe names are not written in the Booke of life, Apoc.*13. Indeed many in former times, as their Bookes and Writings doe yet ſhew, held the foundation, to wit, ſaluation by Chriſt alone, and therefore might be ſaued. God hath alwayes had a Church amongſt them, which firmely kept his ſauing truth. As for ſuch as hold with the Church of Rome, that we cannot be ſaued by Chriſt alone without workes; they doe not onely by a circle of conſequence, but directly deny the foundation of faith; they hold it not, no not ſo much as by a thred.

2.*Theſſ.*2.11.

*Apoc.*13.v.8.

20 This to my remembrance, being all that hath beene oppoſed with any countenance or ſhew of reaſon, I hope, if this be anſwered, the cauſe in queſtion is at an end. Concerning generall repentance therefore: what? A Murtherer, a Blaſphemer, an vncleane perſon, a Turke, a Iew, any ſinner to eſcape the wrath of God, by a generall repentance? *God forgiue me!* Truely it neuer came within mine heart, that a generall repentance doth ſerue for all ſinnes: it ſerueth only for the common ouerſights of our ſinfull life, and for the faults, which either we doe not marke, or doe not know, that they are faults. Our Fathers were actually penitent for ſinnes, wherein they knew they diſpleaſed God; or elſe they fall not within the compaſſe of my firſt ſpeech. Againe, that otherwiſe they could not be ſaued, then holding the foundation of Chriſtian faith, we haue not onely affirmed, but prooued. Why is it not then confeſſed, that thouſands of our fathers, which liued in Popiſh ſuperſtitions, might yet by the mercie of God be ſaued? Firſt, if they had directly denied the verie foundations of Chriſtianitie, without repenting them particularly of that ſin: he which ſaith there could be no ſaluation for them, according to the ordinary courſe, which God doth vſe in ſauing men, granteth plainely, or at the leaſt cloſely inſinuateth, that an extraordinary priuiledge of mercie might deliuer their ſoules from hell, which is more then I required. Secondly, if the foundation be denied, it is denied for feare of ſome Hereſie, which the Church of Rome maintaineth. But how many were there amongſt our Fathers, who being ſeduced by the common errour of that Church, neuer knew the meaning of her Hereſies? So that, although all Popiſh Heretiques did periſh: thouſands of them, which liued in Popiſh ſuperſtitions, might be ſaued. Thirdly, ſeeing all that held Popiſh Hereſies, did not hold all the Hereſies of the Pope: why might not thouſands, which were infected with other leauen, liue and die vnſowred with this, and ſo be * ſaued? Fourthly, if they all held this Hereſie, many there were that held it, no doubt, but onely in a generall forme of words, which a fauourable interpretation might expound in a ſenſe differing farre

* For this is the onely thing alledged to prooue the impoſſibilitie of their ſaluation: The Church of Rome ioyneth workes with Chriſt, which is a deniall of the foundation, and vnleſſe we hold the foundation, we cannot be ſaued.

faire enough from the poysoned conceit of Hettise. And for example, Did they holde, that we cannot be saued with Christ, without good workes? We our selues doe. I thinke, all say as much, with this constitution, Iustification being taken as in that sentence, *Conuertimini ad iustitiam, vt sit vnusquisque iustificatus ad salutem*; except infants, and men that dye vpon the point of their conuersion, of the residue shall see God, but such as seeke peace and holinesse, though not as a cause of their iustification, yet as a way which they must walke, which will bee saued. Did they hold, that without workes we are not iustified? Take iustification so as it may also imply sanctification, and Saint *Iames* doth say as much. For except there bee an ambiguitie in the same tearme, Saint *Paul*, and Saint *Iames* doe contradict each the other, which cannot be. Now there is no ambiguitie in the name either of faith, or of workes, being meant by them both in one and the same sense. Finding therefore, that iustification is spoken of by Saint *Paul*, without implying sanctification, when he pronoucth, that a man is iustified by faith without workes, finding likewise that iustification doth sometime imply sanctification also with it: I suppose nothing to be more sound, then so to interpret Saint *Iames*, speaking not in the same, but in this sense.

We haue already shewed, that there be two kinds of Christian righteousnesse: the one without vs, which we haue by imputation; the other in vs, which consisteth of faith, hope, and charitie, and other Christian vertues. And Saint *Iames* doth prooue, that *Abraham* had not onely the one, because the thing beleeued was imputed vnto him for righteousnesse: but also the other, because he offered vp his sonne. God giueth vs both the one iustice and the other; the one, by accepting vs for righteous in Christ; the other, by working Christian righteousnesse in vs. The proper and most immediate efficient cause in vs of this latter, is the Spirit of adoption wee haue receiued into our hearts. That whereof it consisteth, whence it is really and formally made, are those infused vertues, proper and particular vnto Saints, which the Spirit in the very moment, when first it is giuen of God, bringeth with it: the effects whereof are such actions as the Apostle doeth call the fruits of workes, the operations of the Spirit. The difference of the which operations from the roote whereof they spring, maketh it needfull to put two kinds likewise of sanctifying righteousnesse, *Habituall*, and *Actuall*. *Habituall*, that holinesse, wherewith our soules are inwardly indued, the same instant, when first wee beginne to be the Temples of the holy Ghost. *Actuall*, that holinesse, which afterwards beautifieth all the parts and actions of our life; the holinesse for the which *Enoch*, *Iob*, *Zacharie*, *Elizabeth*, and other Saints, are in the Scriptures so highly commended. If here it be demanded, which of these wee doe first receiue: I answere, that the Spirit, the vertues of the Spirit, the habituall iustice, which is ingrafted, the externall iustice of *Iesus Christ*, which is imputed; these we receiue all at one and the same time; whensoeuer we haue any of these, we haue all, they goe together. Yet first no man is iustified except hee beleeue, and no man beleeueth except he haue faith, and no man except hee haue receiued the Spirit of adoption, hath faith, forasmuch as they doe necessarily inferre iustification, and iustification doth of necessitie presuppose them: we must needs hold that imputed righteousnesse, indignitie being the chiefest, is notwith-

standing in order the last of all these: but *actuall righteousnesse*, which is the righteousnesse of good workes, succeedeth all, followeth after all, both in order and time. Which being attentiuely marked, sheweth plainely how the faith of true Beleeuers cannot bee diuorced from hope and loue; how faith is a part of sanctification, and yet vnto iustification necessarie; how faith is perfected by good workes, and no worke of ours without faith; finally, how our Fathers might hold, that wee are iustified by Faith alone, and yet hold truely, that without workes wee are not iustified. Did they thinke that men doe merit rewards in heauen, by the workes they performe on earth? The ancient vse *meriting*, for *obtaining*, and in that sense they of *Wittenberg* haue it in their Confession: *We teach, that good workes commanded of God, are necessarily to be done, and by the free kindnes of God they merit their certaine rewards.* Therefore speaking as our Fathers did, and we taking their speech in a sound meaning, as we may take our Fathers, and might for as much as their meaning is doubtfull and charitie doth alwaies interpret doubtfull things fauourably: what should induce vs to thinke, that rather the damage of the worst construction did light vpon them all, then that the blessing of the better was granted vnto thousands? Fiftly, if in the worst construction that may be made, they had generally all imbraced it liuing, might not many of them dying, vtterly renounce it? Howsoeuer men when they sit at ease, do vainely tickle their hearts with the wanton conceit, of I know not what proportionable correspondence, betweene their merits and their rewards, which in the trance of their high speculations they dreame that God hath measured, weighed, and laid vp, as it were, in bundles for them; notwithstanding, we see by daily experience, in a number euen of them, that when the houre of death approcheth, when they secretly heare themselues summoned forthwith to appeare, and stand at the Barre of that Iudge, whose brightnesse causeth the eyes of the Angels themselues to dazle, all these idle imaginations doe then beginne to hide their faces, to name merits then is to lay their soules vpon the racke, the memorie of their owne deeds is lothsome vnto them, they forsake all things, wherein they haue put any trust or confidence, no staffe to leane vpon, no ease, no rest, no comfort then, but onely in Iesus Christ.

22 Wherefore if this proposition were true: *To hold in such wise, as the Church of Rome doth, that we cannot be saued by Christ alone without works, is directly to deny the foundation of Faith*; I say, that if this Proposition were true: * neuertheless so many wayes I haue shewed, whereby wee may hope that thousands of our Fathers which liued in Popish superstition, might be saued. But what if it be not true? What if neither that of the Galatians concerning Circumcision, nor this of the Church of Rome, by Works, be any direct deniall of the foundation, as it is affirmed, that both are? I need not wade so farre as to discusse this Controuersie, the matter which first was brought into question being so cleere, as I hope it is. Howbeit, because I desire, that the truth euen in that also should receiue light, I will doe mine indeuour to set downe somewhat more plainely: first, the foundation of Faith, what it is: Secondly, what it is directly to deny the foundation: Thirdly, whether they whom God hath chosen to be Heires of life, may fall so farre as directly to denie

* They may cease to put any confidence in workes, and yet neuer thinke, liuing in Popish superstition, they did amisse. *Pighius* dyed Popish, and yet denyed Poperie in the Article of Iustification by workes long before his death.

nicle: Fourthly, whether the Galatians did ſo by admitting the errour about *Circumciſion* and the *Law*: laſt of all, whether the Church of Rome for this ſelfe opinion of Workes, may be thought to doe the like, and thereupon to be no more a Chriſtian Church, then are the Aſſemblies of Turkes and Iewes.

3 This word foundation being figuratiuely vſed, hath alwayes reference to ſomewhat which reſembleth a materiall building, as both that Doctrine of *Lawes* and the communitie of Chriſtians doe. By the Maſters of Ciuill Policie nothing is ſo much inculcated, as *that Common-weales are founded vpon Lawes*; for that a multitude cannot bee compacted into one body otherwiſe then by a common acception of Lawes, whereby they are to bee kept in order. The ground of all Ciuill Lawes is this: *No man ought to be hurt or iniured by another.* Take away this perſwaſion, and ye take away all the Lawes; take away Lawes, and what ſhall become of Common-weales? So it is in our ſpirituall Chriſtian Communitie: I doe not meane that Body Myſticall, whereof Chriſt is onely [a] the head, that building vndiſcernable by mortall eyes, wherein Chriſt is the [a] chiefe corner Stone: but I ſpeake of the viſible Church, the foundation whereof is the [b] Doctrine which the Prophets and Apoſtles profeſt. The marke whereunto their Doctrine tendeth, is pointed at in theſe words of *Peter* vnto Chriſt, [c] *Thou haſt the words of eternall life*: in theſe wordes of *Paul* to Timothy, [d] *The holy Scriptures are able to make thee wiſe vnto ſaluation.* It is the demand of Nature it ſelfe, *What ſhall we doe to haue eternall life?* The deſire of immortalitie and of the knowledge of that, whereby it may be obtayned, is ſo naturall vnto all men, that euen they, who are not perſwaded, that they ſhall, doe notwithſtanding wiſh, that they might know a way how to ſee no end of life. And, becauſe naturall meanes are not able ſtill to reſiſt the force of death: there is no people in the earth ſo ſauage, which hath not deuiſed ſome ſupernaturall helpe or other, to flye for ayde and ſuccour in extremities, againſt the Enemies of their Lawes. A longing therefore to be ſaued, without vnderſtanding the true way how, hath beene the cauſe of all the Superſtitions in the World. O that the miſerable ſtate of others, which wander in darkneſſe, and wote not whither they goe, could giue vs vnderſtanding hearts, worthily to eſteeme the riches of the mercy of God towards vs, before whoſe eyes the doores of the Kingdome of Heauen are ſet wide open! ſhould wee offer violence vnto it? it offereth violence vnto vs, and we gather ſtrength to withſtand it. But I am beſides my purpoſe, when I fall to bewaile the cold affection, which we beare towards that whereby wee ſhould be ſaued; my purpoſe being only to ſet downe, what the ground of ſaluation is. The Doctrine of the Goſpell propoſeth ſaluation as the end: and doth it not teach the way of attayning thereunto? Yet the Damoſell poſſeſt with a Spirit of diuination, ſpake the truth: [e] *Theſe men are the Seruants of the moſt High God, which ſhew vnto vs the way of Saluation*: [f] *A new and liuing way, which Chriſt hath prepared for vs, through the vaile, that is, his fleſh*; Saluation purchaſed by the death of Chriſt. By this foundation the Children of God before the written Law, were diſtinguiſhed from the ſonnes of men; the reuerend Patriarkes both poſſeſt it liuing, and ſpake expreſly of it s at the houre of their death. It [h] comforted *Iob* in the midſt of griefe; it was afterwards the anker-hold of all the righteous in Iſ-

What the foundation of Faith is.

Vocatâ ad concionem multitudine, quæ coaleſcere in populi vnius corpus nulla re præterquam legibus poterat, Liu. de Rom. lib. 1.

[a] *Epheſ.* 1. 23. & 4. 15.
[a] *Epheſ.* 2. 20.
[b] *Epheſ.* 2. 20.
[c] *Iohn* 6. 68.
[d] 2. *Tim.* 3. 15.
[e] *Acts* 16. 17.
[f] *Heb.* 10. 20.
[g] *Gen.* 49.
[h] *Iob* 19.

rael, from the writing of the Law, to the time of Grace. Euery Prophet maketh mention of it. It was famouſly ſpoken of about the time, when the comming of Chriſt to accompliſh the promiſes, which were made long before it, drew neere, that the ſound thereof was heard euen amongſt the Gentiles. When he was come, as many as were his, acknowledged that he was their Saluation; he, that long expected hope of Iſrael; he, that *Seed, in whom all the Nations of the earth ſhall be bleſſed*. So that now he is a name of ruine, a name of death and condemnation, vnto ſuch as dreame of a new *Meſſias*, to as many as looke for ſaluation by any other, but by him. *For* i *amongſt men there is giuen no other name vnder heauen whereby we muſt be ſaued*. Thus much *S. Mark* doth intimate by that, which he doth put in the front of his Booke, making his entrance with theſe words: *The beginning of the Goſpell of Ieſus Chriſt, the Sonne of God*. His Doctrine he termeth the Goſpell, becauſe it teacheth Saluation; the Goſpell of Ieſus Chriſt the Sonne of God, becauſe it teacheth Saluation by him. This is then the foundation, whereupon the frame of the Goſpell is erected; that very Ieſus whom the *Virgin* conceiued of the Holy Ghoſt, whom *Simeon* imbraced in his armes, whom *Pilate* condemned, whom the *Iewes* crucified, whom the *Apoſtles* preached, he is k Chriſt, the Lord, the only Sauiour of the World: l *Other foundation can no man lay*. Thus I haue briefly opened that principle in Chriſtianitie, which we call the foundation of our faith. It followeth now, that I declare vnto you, what is directly to ouerthrow it. This will be better opened, if wee vnderſtand, what it is to hold the foundation of Faith.

i *Acts* 4.12.

k *Luke* 2.11.

l 1. *Cor.* 3.

24 There are which defend, that many of the Gentiles, who neuer heard the Name of Chriſt, held the foundation of Chriſtianitie, and why? they acknowledged many of them, the Prouidence of God; his infinite Wiſedome, ſtrength, power; his goodneſſe, and his mercie towards the children of men; that God hath iudgement in ſtore for the wicked, but for the righteous, which ſerue him, rewardes, &c. In this which they confeſſed, that lyeth couered, which we beleeue; in the Rudiments of their knowledge concerning God, the foundation of our faith concerning Chriſt, lyeth ſecretly wrapt vp, and is vertually contayned: therefore they held the foundation of Faith, though they neuer had it. Might we not with as good a colour of Reaſon defend, that euery Plough-man hath all the Sciences, wherein Philoſophers haue exceld? For no man is ignorant of their firſt Principles, which do vertually contayne, whatſoeuer by naturall meanes is or can be knowne. Yea, might we not with as great reaſon affirme, that a man may put three mightie Oakes whereſoeuer three Akornes may be put? For vertually an Akorne is an Oake. To auoyde ſuch Paradoxes, wee teach plainly, that to hold the foundation, is in expreſſe termes to acknowledge it.

25 Now, becauſe the foundation is an affirmatiue Propoſition, they all ouerthrow it who denie it; they directly ouerthrow it, who denie it directly; and they ouerthrow it by conſequent, or indirectly, which hold any one aſſertion whatſoeuer, whereupon the direct denyall thereof may bee neceſſarily concluded. What is the Queſtion betweene the Gentiles and vs, but this, *Whether Saluation be by Chriſt?* What betweene the Iewes and vs, but this,

Whether

Whether by this Iesus, whom we call Christ, or no? This to be the maine point, whereupon Christianitie standeth, it is cleare by that one sentence of *Festus* concerning *Pauls* accusers: *They brought no crime of such things as I supposed, but had certaine questions against him of their superstition, and of one Iesus, which was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be alive.* Where we see that Iesus, dead, and raised for the saluation of the World, is by Iewes denyed, despised by a Gentile, by a Christian Apostle maintayned. The Fathers therefore in the Primitiue Church, when they wrote, *Tertullian*, the Booke which he calleth *Apologeticus*; *Minutius Felix*, the Booke, which hee intitleth *Octauius*; *Arnobius*, the seuen Bookes against the Gentiles; *Chrisostome*, his Orations against the Iewes; *Eusebius*, his ten Bookes of *Euangelicall Demonstration*: they stand in defence of Christianitie against them, by whom the foundation thereof was directly denyed. But the Writings of the Fathers against *Nouatians*, *Pelagians*, and other Heretikes of the like note, reuell Positions, whereby the foundation of Christian Faith was ouerthrowne by consequence only. In the former sort of Writings, the foundation is proued, in the later, it is alleaged as a proofe, which to men that had beene knowne directly to denie, must needs haue seemed a very beggerly kinde of disputing. All Infidels therefore denie the foundation of Faith directly, by consequent; many a Christian man, yea whole Christian Churches haue denyed it, and doe denie it at this present day. Christian Churches, the foundation of Christianitie? Not directly, for then they cease to be Christian Churches: but by a consequent, in respect whereof wee condemne them as erroneous, although for holding the foundation, wee doe, and must hold them Christian.

26 We see what it is to hold the foundation; what directly, and what by consequent, to denie it. The next thing which followeth, is, whether they whom God hath chosen to obtaine the glorie of our Lord Iesus Christ, may, once effectually called, and through faith iustified truly, afterwards fall so far, as directly to denie the foundation, which their hearts haue before imbraced with ioy and comfort in the Holy Ghost: for such is the faith, which indeede doth iustifie. Deuils know the same things, which we beleeue, and the minds of the most vngodly may be fully perswaded of the Truth: which knowledge in the one and in the other is sometimes termed faith, but equiuocally, being indeed no such faith as that, whereby a Christian man is iustified. It is the Spirit of Adoption, which worketh faith in vs, in them not: the things which wee beleeue, are by vs apprehended, not only as true, but also as good, and that to vs: as good, they are not by them apprehended; as true, they are. Whereupon followeth the third difference; the Christian man the more hee increaseth in faith, the more his ioy and comfort aboundeth: but they, the more sure they are of the truth, the more they quake and tremble at it. This begetteth another effect, where the hearts of the one sort haue a different disposition from the other. *Non ignoro plerosq; conscientia meritorum, nihil se esse post mortem magis optare, quàm credere. Malunt enim extingui penitus, quàm ad supplicium reparari.* I am not ignorant, saith *Minutius*, that there bee many, who being conscious, what they are to looke for, doe rather wish that they might, then thinke that they shall cease, when they cease to liue:

becauſe they hold it better that death ſhould conſume them vnto nothing, then God reuiue them vnto puniſhment. So it is in other Articles of Faith, whereof wicked men thinke, no doubt, many times they are too true: on the contrary ſide, to the other, there is no griefe or torment greater, then to feele their perſwaſion weake in things, whereof when they are perſwaded, they reape ſuch comfort and ioy of ſpirit; ſuch is the faith whereby wee are iuſtified; ſuch, I meane, in reſpect of the qualitie. For touching the principall obiect of faith, longer then it holdeth the foundation whereof wee haue ſpoken, it neyther iuſtifieth, nor is, but ceaſeth to bee faith, when it ceaſeth to beleeue, that Ieſus Chriſt is the onely Sauiour of the World. The cauſe of life ſpirituall in vs, is Chriſt, not carnally or corporally inhabiting, but dwelling in the ſoule of man, as a thing which (when the minde apprehendeth it) is ſaid to inhabite or poſſeſſe the minde. The minde conceiueth Chriſt by hearing the Doctrine of Chriſtianitie, as the light of Nature doth the minde to apprehend thoſe truths which are meerely rationall: ſo that ſauing Truth, which is farre aboue the reach of humane reaſon, cannot otherwiſe, then by the Spirit of the Almightie, be conceiued. All theſe are implyed, whereſoeuer any of them is mentioned as the cauſe of the ſpirituall life. Wherefore if we haue read that [a] *The Spirit is our life*; or, [b] *the Word our life*; or, [c] *Chriſt our life*: we are in euery of theſe to vnderſtand, that our life is Chriſt, by the hearing of the Goſpell, apprehended as a Sauiour, and aſſented vnto through the power of the Holy Ghoſt. The firſt intellectuall conceit and comprehenſion of Chriſt ſo imbraced, Saint *Peter* calleth [d] *the ſeed whereof we be new borne*: our firſt imbracing of Chriſt, is our firſt [e] reuiuing from the ſtate of death and condemnation. [f] *He that hath the Sonne, hath life*, ſaith S. *Iohn*, *and he that hath not the Sonne of God, hath not life*. If therefore hee which once hath the Sonne, may ceaſe to haue the Sonne, though it be for a moment, he ceaſeth for that moment to haue life. But the life of them which haue the Sonne of God, is euerlaſting *in the World to come*. But becauſe as Chriſt being raiſed from the dead, dyeth no more, death hath no more power ouer him: So the iuſtified man [h] being allyed to God in Ieſus Chriſt our Lord, doth as neceſſarily from that time forward alwayes liue, as Chriſt [i] by whom he doth life, liueth alwayes. I might if I had not otherwhere largely done it already, ſhew by many and ſundry, manifeſt, and cleere proofes, how the motions and operations of life, are ſometimes ſo indiſcernable, and ſo ſecret, that they ſeeme ſtone-dead, who notwithſtanding are ſtill aliue vnto God in Chriſt. For as long as that abideth in vs, which animateth, quickeneth, and giueth life, ſo long wee liue, and wee know that the cauſe of our faith abideth in vs for euer. If Chriſt, the Fountaine of life, may flit, and leaue the habitation, where once he dwelleth, what ſhall become of his promiſe, *I am with you to the Worlds end?* If the Seed of God, which contayneth Chriſt, may bee firſt conceiued, and then caſt out: how doth S. *Peter* tearme it [k] *immortall?* How doth S. *Iohn* affirme, [l] *It abideth?* If the Spirit, which is giuen to cheriſh, and preſerue the Seed of life, may be giuen and taken away, how is it [m] the earneſt of our inheritance vntill Redemption? how doth it continue with vs for euer? If therefore the man which is once iuſt by faith, ſhall liue by faith, and liue for euer: it followeth, that

a *Rom.*8.10.
b *Phil.*2.15.
c *Col.*3.4.
d 1.*Pet.*1.
e *Epheſ.*2.5.
f 1.*Iohn* 5.12.
g 1.*Iohn* 5.13. Perpetuitie of Faith.
h *Rom.*6.10.
i *Iohn* 14.19.
k 1.*Pet.*1.
l 1.*Iohn* 3.9.
m *Epheſ.*1.14. *Iohn* 4.16.

that he which once doth beleeue the foundation, muſt needs beleeue the foundation for euer. If he beleeue it for euer, how can he euer directly denie it? Faith holding the direct affirmation; the direct negation, ſo long as Faith continueth, is excluded. But you will ſay, that as he that is to day holy, may to morrow forſake his holineſſe, and become impure; as a friend may change his mind, and be made an enemy; as hope may wither: ſo Faith may die in the heart of man, the Spirit may be quenched, Grace may be extinguiſhed, they which beleeue, may be quite turned away from the truth. The caſe is cleere, long experience hath made this manifeſt: it needs no prooſe. I grant we are apt, prone, and readie to forſake God: but is God as readie to forſake vs? Our minds are changeable: is his ſo likewiſe? Whom God hath iuſtified, hath not Chriſt aſſured, that it is *his Fathers will to giue them a Kingdome?* Notwithſtanding it ſhall not be otherwiſe giuen them, then if they continue *grounded and ſtabliſhed in the faith, and be not moued away from the hope of the Goſpel; [a] *if they abide in loue and holineſſe.* Our Sauiour therefore, when hee ſpake of the ſheepe effectually called, and truely gathered into his fold, [b] *I giue vnto them eternall life, and they ſhall neuer periſh, neither ſhall any plucke them out of my hands*; in promiſing to ſaue them, he promiſed, no doubt, to preſerue them in that, without which there can be no ſaluation, as alſo from that whereby it is irrecouerably loſt. Euery error in things appertaining vnto God, is repugnant vnto faith; euery fearefull cogitation, vnto hope; vnto loue, euery ſtragling inordinate deſire; vnto holineſſe, euery blemiſh, wherewith either the inward thoughts of our minds, or the outward actions of our liues are ſtayned. But Hereſie; ſuch as that of *Ebion, Cerinthus*, and others, againſt whom the Apoſtles were forced to bend themſelues both by word, and alſo by writing; that repining diſcouragement of heart, which tempteth God, whereof we haue Iſrael in the Deſart for a patterne: coldneſſe, ſuch as that in the Angels of Epheſus; foule ſins, knowne to be expreſly againſt the firſt, or ſecond Table of the Law, ſuch as *Noah, Manaſſes, Dauid, Salomon*, and *Peter* committed; theſe are each in their kind ſo oppoſite to the former vertues, that they leaue no place for ſaluation without an actuall repentance. But Infidelitie, extreme deſpaire, hatred of God and all goodneſſe, obduration in ſinne, cannot ſtand where there is but the leaſt ſparke of faith, hope, loue, and ſanctitie: euen as cold in the loweſt degree cannot be, where heat in the higheſt degree is found. Whereupon I conclude, that, although in the firſt kind, no man liueth, which ſinneth not; and, in the ſecond, as perfect as any doe liue, may ſinne: yet ſith the man which is borne of God, hath a promiſe, that in him [c] *the ſeed of God ſhall abide*, which ſeed is a ſure preſeruatiue againſt the ſinnes that are of the third ſute: greater and cleerer aſſurance we cannot haue of anything, then of this, that from ſuch ſinnes God ſhall preſerue the righteous, as the apple of his eye for euer. Directly to denie the foundation of faith, is plaine Infidelitie; where faith is entred, there Infidelitie is for euer excluded; therefore by him which hath once ſincerely beleeued in Chriſt, the foundation of Chriſtian faith can neuer be directly denied. Did not *Peter?* Did not *Marcellinus?* Did not others both directly denie Chriſt, after that they had beleeued, and againe beleeue, after they had denyed? No doubt, as they

Ob. *Sol.*

* *Col.* 1. 23.

a 1. *Tim.* 2. 15.

b *Iohn* 10.

c 1. *Iohn* 3. 9.

Ob:

they confeſſe in words, whoſe condemnation is nevertheleſſe their not beleeuing: (for example we haue *Iudas*:) So likewiſe, they may beleeue in heart, whoſe condemnation, without repentance, is their not confeſſing. Although therefore *Peter* and the reſt, for whoſe faith Chriſt hath prayed, that it might not faile, did not by denyall, ſinne the ſinne of Infidelitie, which is an inward abnegation of Chriſt, (but if they had done this, their faith had cleerely fayled:) yet becauſe they ſinned notoriouſly and grieuouſly, committing that, which they knew to be expreſſly forbidden by the Law, which ſaith, *Thou ſhalt worſhip the Lord thy God, and him only ſhalt thou ſerue*; neceſſary it was that he, which purpoſed to ſaue their ſoules, ſhould, as he did, touch their hearts with true vnfained repentance, that his mercy might reſtore them againe to life, whom ſinne had made the children of death and condemnation. Touching the point therfore, I hope I may ſafely ſet downe, that if the iuſtified erre, as he may, and neuer come to vnderſtand his errour, God doth ſaue him through generall repentance: but if he fall into Hereſie, he calleth him at one time or other by actuall repentance: but from Infidelitie, which is an inward direct deniall of the foundation, he preſerueth him by ſpeciall prouidence for euer. Whereby we may eaſily know, what to thinke of thoſe Galatians, whoſe hearts was ſo poſſeſt with the loue of the Truth, that if it had beene poſſible, they would haue pluckt out their eyes to beſtow vpon their Teachers. It is true, that they were greatly * changed, both in perſwaſion and affection: ſo that the Galatians, when S. *Paul* wrote vnto them, were not now the Galatians, which they had beene in former time, for that through errour they wandered, although they were his ſheepe. I doe not deny, but that I ſhould deny, that they were his ſheepe, if I ſhould grant, that through errour they periſhed. It was a perillous opinion that they held; perillous, euen in them which held it onely as an errour, becauſe it ouerthroweth the foundation by conſequent. But in them which obſtinately maintaine it, I cannot thinke it leſſe then a damnable Hereſie. We muſt therefore put a difference betweene them, which erre of ignorance, retaining neuertheleſſe a mind deſirous to be inſtructed in truth, and them, which, after the truth is laid open, perſiſt in the ſtubborne defence of their blindneſſe. Hereticall defenders, froward and ſtiff-necked teachers of circumciſion, the bleſſed Apoſtle calls Dogges: Silly men, who were ſeduced to thinke they thought the truth, he pitieth, he taketh vp in his armes, he louingly imbraceth, he kiſſeth, and with more then fatherly tenderneſſe doth ſo temper, qualifie, and correct the ſpeech he vſeth toward them, that a man cannot eaſily diſcerne, whether did moſt abound, the loue, which he bare to their godly affection, or the griefe, which the danger of their opinion bred him. Their opinion was dangerous: was not theirs alſo, who thought the Kingdome of Chriſt ſhould be earthly? was not theirs, which thought the Goſpel only ſhould be preached to the Iewes? What more oppoſite to propheticall doctrine, concerning the comming of Chriſt, then the one? Concerning the Catholike Church, then the other? Yet they which had theſe fancies, euen when they had them, were not the worſt men in the world. The Hereſie of *Free-will* was a milſtone about the Pelagians necke: ſhall we therefore giue ſentence of death inexitable against

* Howſoeuer men be changed (for changed they may be, euen the beſt amongſt men) if they that haue receiued, as it ſeemeth, ſome of the Galatians which fell into error, had receiued the gifts and graces of God which are called ἐμπαυνατα, ſuch as faith, hope, and charitie are, which God doth neuer take away from him, to whom they are giuen, as if it repented him to haue giuen them; if ſuch might bee ſo farre changed by errour, as that the very roote of faith ſhould be quite extinguiſhed in them, and ſo their ſaluation vtterly loſt: it would ſhake the hearts of the ſtrongeſt and ſtouteſt of vs all. See the contrarie in Beza his obſeruations vpon the harmony of Confeſſions.

Nay, rather see what says the 'harmony' of Holy Scripture, which alone determines the question. But the above page is altogether too perplexed. Reason struggling with prejudice, light with darkness, and one scripture with creeds. J. W.

againſt all thoſe Fathers in the Greeke Church, which being inſtile perſwaded, dyed in the error of free Will? Of theſe Galatians therefore, which firſt were iuſtified and then deceiued, as I can ſee no cauſe, why as many as dyed before admonition, might not by mercie be receiued, euen in errour: ſo I make no doubt, but as many as liued, till they were admoniſhed, found the mercie of God effectuall in conuerting them from their * errour, leſt any one that is Chriſts, ſhould periſh. Of this I take it, there is no controuerſie; only againſt the ſaluation of them which dyed, though before admonition, yet in error, it is obiected, that their opinion was a very plaine direct denyall of the foundation. If *Paul* and *Barnabas* had beene ſo perſwaded, they would haply haue vſed the termes otherwiſe ſpeaking of the Maſters themſelues, who did firſt ſet that error abroach, * certaine of the Sects of the Phariſes which beleeued. What difference was there betweene theſe Phariſes, and other Phariſes, from whom by a ſpeciall deſcription they are diſtinguiſhed, but this? Theſe which came to *Antioch*, teaching the neceſſitie of Circumciſion, were Chriſtians; the other enemies of Chriſtianitie. Why then ſhould theſe be termed ſo diuinely Beleeuers, if they did directly deny the foundation of our beliefe; beſides which there was no other thing, that made the reſt to be no beleeuers? We need goe no farther then S. *Pauls* very reaſoning againſt them, for proofe of this matter: ſeeing you know God, or rather are knowne of God, how turne you againe to impotent rudiments? [b] The Law engendreth ſeruants, her children are in bondage; [c] They which are gotten by the Goſpell, are free! [d] Brethren, we are not children of the ſeruant, but of the free woman, and will yee yet be vnder the Law? That they thought it vnto ſaluation neceſſarie, for the Church of Chriſt, to [e] obſerue Dayes, and Moneths, and Times, and Yeeres, to keepe the Ceremonies and Sacraments of the Law, this was their errour. Yet he which condemneth their errour, confeſſeth, that notwithſtanding, they knew God, and were knowne of him; he taketh not the honour from them to be termed Sonnes begotten of the immortall ſeed of the Goſpel. Let the heauieſt words which he vſeth, be waighed; conſider the drift of thoſe dreadfull concluſions: If yee be circumciſed, Chriſt ſhall profit you nothing: As many as are iuſtified by the Law, are fallen from Grace. It had bin to no purpoſe in the world, ſo to vrge them; had not the Apoſtle beene perſwaded, that at the hearing of ſuch ſequels, no benefit by Chriſt, a defection from Grace, their hearts would tremble and quake within them: and why? becauſe that they knew, that in Chriſt, and in Grace, their ſaluation lay, which is a plaine direct acknowledgement of the foundation. Leſt I ſhould herein ſeeme to hold, that which no one learned, or godly hath done: let theſe words be conſidered, which import as much as I affirme. * Surely thoſe brethren, which in S. *Pauls* time, thought that God did lay a neceſſitie vpon them to make choice of dayes and meates, ſpake as they beleeued, and could not but in words condemne the libertie, which they ſuppoſed to be brought in againſt the authoritie of diuine Scripture. Otherwiſe it had beene needleſſe for Saint *Paul* to admoniſh them, not to condemne ſuch as eate without ſcrupuloſitie, whatſoeuer was ſet before them. This error, if you weigh what it is of it ſelfe, did at once ouerthrow all Scriptures, wherby we are taught ſaluation by faith

* Error conuicted, and afterwards maintained is more then error: for although opinion be the ſame it was in which reſpect I ſtill call it errour, yet they are not now the ſame they were when they are taught what the truth is, and plainely taught.

a *Act.* 15.5.

b *Gal.* 4.24,25.

c *Verſe* 28.

d *Verſe* 31.

e *Verſe* 21.

* *Bucer. de Vnit. Eccleſ. ſeruanda.*

in Chriſt, all that euer the Prophets did foretell, all that euer the Apoſtles did preach of Chriſt, it drew with it the denyall of Chriſt vtterly: in ſo much that S. *Paul* complaineth, that his labour was loſt vpon the Galatians, vnto whom this error was obtruded, affirming that Chriſt, if ſo be they were circumciſed, ſhould not profit them any thing at all. Yet ſo farre was S. *Paul* from ſtriking their names out of Chriſts booke, that he commandeth others to entertaine them, to accept them with ſingular humanitie, to vſe them like Brethren; he knew mans imbecillitie; he had a feeling of our blindneſſe which are mortall men, how great it is, and being ſure that they are the Sonnes of God, whoſoeuer be indued with his feare, would not haue them counted enemies of that, whereunto they could not as yet frame themſelues to be friends, but did euer vpon a very religious affection to the Truth, willingly reiect the Truth. They acknowledged Chriſt to be their only and perfect Sauiour, but ſaw not how repugnant their beleeuing the neceſſitie of Moſaicall Ceremonies was to their faith in Ieſus Chriſt. Hereunto a reply is made, that if they had not directly denyed the foundation, they might haue beene ſaued; but ſaued they could not be, therefore their opinion was not only by conſequent, but directly a denyall of the foundation. When the queſtion was about the poſſibilitie of their ſaluation, their denying of the foundation was brought to proue, that they could not be ſaued; now that the queſtion is about their denyall of the foundation, the impoſſibilitie of their ſaluation, is alledged to proue, they denyed the foundation. Is there nothing, which excludeth men from ſaluation, but only the foundation of faith denyed? I ſhould haue thought, that beſides this, many other things are death vnto as many as vnderſtanding, that to cleaue thereunto, was to fall from Chriſt, did notwithſtanding cleaue vnto them. But of this enough. Wherefore I come to the laſt queſtion, *Whether that the doctrine of the Church of Rome, concerning the neceſſitie of workes vnto ſaluation, be a direct denyall of our faith.*

27 I ſeeke not to obtrude vnto you any priuate opinion of mine owne; the beſt learned in our profeſſion are of this iudgement, that all the corruptions of the Church of Rome, doe not proue her to deny the foundation directly; if they did, they ſhould grant her ſimply to be no Chriſtian Church: Cabin. Ep. 104. *But I ſuppoſe*, ſaith one, *that in the Papacy ſome Church remaineth, a Church craz'd, or, if you wil, broken quite in pieces, forlorne, miſſe-ſhapen, yet ſome Church*: his reaſon is this, *Antichriſt muſt ſit in the Temple of God.* Leſt any man ſhould thinke ſuch ſentences as theſe to be true, onely in regard of them, whom that Church is ſuppoſed to haue kept by the ſpeciall prouidence of God, as it were in the ſecret corners of his boſome, free from infection, and as ſound in the faith, as we truſt, by his mercy, we our ſelues are: I permit it to your wiſe conſiderations, whether it be more likely, that as frenzie, though it ſelfe take away the vſe of reaſon, doth notwithſtanding proue them reaſonable creatures which haue it, becauſe none can be frantick but they: ſo Antichriſtianitie being the bane and plaine ouerthrow of Chriſtianitie, may neuertheleſſe argue the Church wherein Antichriſt ſitteth, to be Chriſtian. Neither haue I euer hitherto heard or read any one word alledged of force to warrant, that God doth otherwiſe, then ſo as in the two next queſtions before hath beene declared,

rod, bind himselfe to keepe his Elect from worshipping the Beast, and from receiuing his marke in their foreheads: but hee hath preserued, and will preserue them from receiuing any deadly wound at the hands of the Man of sin, whose deceit hath preuailed ouer none vnto death, but onely vnto such as neuer loued the truth, such as tooke a pleasure in vnrighteousnesse: they in all ages, whose hearts haue delighted in the principall truth, and whose soules haue thirsted after righteousnesse; if they receiued the marke of Errour, the mercie of God, euen erring, and dangerously erring, might saue them: if they receiued the marke of Heresie, the same mercy did, I doubt not, conuert them. How farre Romish Heresies may preuaile ouer Gods Elect, how many God hath kept falling into them, how many haue beene conuerted from them, is not the question now in hand: for if heauen had not receiued any one of that crew for these thousand yeeres, it may still bee true, that the doctrine which this day they doe professe, doeth not directly denie the foundation, and so proue them simply to be no Christian Church. One I haue alleaged, whose words, in my eares, sound that way: shall I adde * another, whose speech is plaine? *I deny her not the name of a Church*, sayth another, *no more then to a man the name of a man, as long as he liueth, what sicknesse soeuer he hath.* His reason is this; *Saluation in Iesus Christ, which is the marke which ingraffeth the head with the bodie, Iesus Christ with the Church is so cut off by mans merits, by the merits of Saints, by the Popes Pardons, and such other wickednesse, that the life of the Church holdeth by a very threed*, yet still the life of the Church holdeth. * A third hath these words, *I acknowledge the Church of Rome, euen at this present day, for a Church of Christ, such a Church as Israel did Ieroboam, yet a Church.* His reason is this; *Euery man seeth, except he willingly hoodwinke himselfe, that as alwaies, so now, the Church of Rome holdeth firmely and stedfastly the doctrine of truth concerning Christ, and baptizeth in the Name of the Father, the Sonne, and the holy Ghost, confesseth and auoucheth Christ, for the onely Redeemer of the World, and the Iudge that shall sit vpon quicke and dead, receiuing true beleeuers into endlesse ioy, faithlesse and godlesse men being cast with Satham and his angels into flames vnquenchable.*

* *Moru. de Eccles.*

* *Zanch. pro fat. de relig.*

28 I may, and will, reine the question shorter then they doe. Let the Pope take downe his top, and captiuate no more mens soules by his Papall iurisdiction: let him no longer count himselfe *Lord Paramount* ouer the Princes of the world: no longer hold Kings as his seruants *paranaile*: let his stately Senate submit their neckes to the yoke of Christ, and cease to die their garment like *Edom*, in bloud: let them from the highest to the lowest, hate and forsake their Idolatrie, abiure all their errours and heresies, wherewith they haue any way peruerted the truth: let them strippe their Churches, till they leaue no polluted rag, but only this one about her, *By Christ alone, without workes, we cannot bee saued*: it is enough for me, if I shew, that the holding of this one thing doth not proue the foundation of faith directly denied in the Church of Rome.

29 Workes are an addition: be it so; what then? the foundation is not subuerted by euery kind of addition. Simply to adde vnto those fundamentall words, is not to mingle Wine with Water, Heauen & Earth, things polluted, Very true, yet so many additions made, must not only disfigure the building, but also in processe of time render the foundation so obscure and indistinct, that new comers will not be able to discerne it, and will be in danger of building beside it instead of building upon it. L. Wilson.

luted, with the ſanctified bloud of Chriſt: of whatſoeuer indeed they be which attribute thoſe operations in whole or in part to any creature, which in the worke of our ſaluation wholly are peculiar vnto Chriſt, and if I open my mouth to ſpeake in this diſcourſe, if I hold my peace and plead not againſt them as long as breath is within my body, let me be guiltie of all the diſhonor that euer hath beene done to the Saints of God. But the more dead ſuch a thing it is to denie ſaluation by Chriſt alone, the more ſlow and ſtaſed I am, except it be rob manifeſt, to lay a thing ſo grieuous to any mans charge. Let vs beware, leſt if we take too many ways of defying Chriſt, we leaue not any way for our ſelues truely and ſoundly to confeſſe him. Saluation onely by Chriſt is the true foundation, whereupon indeed Chriſtianitie ſtandeth. But what if I ſay you cannot be ſaued onely by Chriſt, without this addition, Chriſt beleeued in heart, confeſſed with mouth, obeyed in life and conuerſation? Becauſe I adde, doe I therefore denie, that which I did directly affirme? There may be an addicament of explication, which doeth not contradict, but proueth and concludeth the propoſition, whereunto it is annexed. He which ſaith, *Peter* was a chiefe Apoſtle, doth proue that *Peter* was an Apoſtle; He which ſayth, Our ſaluation is of the Lord, * through ſanctification of the Spirit and Faith of the truth, proueth that our ſaluation is of the Lord. But if that which is added be ſuch a priuation as taketh away the very eſſence of that whereunto it is added, then by the requeſt it ouerthroweth. He which ſaith *Iudas* is a dead man, though in word he grant *Iudas* to be a man, yea in effect he proueth him by that very ſpeech no man; becauſe death depriueth him of being. In like ſort, he that ſhould ſay, our election is of grace for our workes ſake, ſhould grant in ſound of words, but indeed by conſequent denie that our election is of Grace; for the * grace which electeth vs, is no grace, if it elect vs for our workes ſake.

* 2. *Theſſ.* 2. 13.

* *Rom.* 11. 6.

30 Now whereas the Church of Rome addeth workes, we muſt note further, that the adding of * Workes is not like the adding of Circumciſion vnto Chriſt. Chriſt came not to abrogate and put away good workes, he did, to change Circumciſion; for we ſee that in place thereof, he hath ſubſtituted holy Baptiſme. To ſay, yee cannot be ſaued by Chriſt, except yee be circumciſed, is to adde a thing excluded, a thing not onely not neceſſarie to be kept, but neceſſarie not to be kept by them that will be ſaued. On the other ſide, to ſay yee cannot be ſaued by Chriſt without workes, is to adde things, not only not excluded, but commanded, as being in their place, and in their kinde neceſſarie, and therefore ſubordinate vnto Chriſt, by Chriſt himſelfe, by whom the way of ſaluation is found: * *Except your righteouſneſſe exceed the righteouſneſſe of the Scribes and Phariſees, yee ſhall not enter into the kingdome of heauen.* They were rigorous exacters of things not vtterly to be neglected, and let vndone, Waſhings, and Tithings, &c. As they were in theſe, ſo muſt wee be in iudgement, and the loue of God. Chriſt in workes ceremoniall, giueth more libertie, in * morall much leſſe, then they did. Workes of righteouſneſſe therefore are

* I denie not but that the Church of Rome requireth ſome kinds of works which ſhee ought not to require at mens hands. But our queſtion is generall about the adding of good workes, not whether ſuch or ſuch works be good In this compariſon it is enough to touch ſo much of the matter in queſtion betweene S. Paul and the Galatians, as thereth note Concluſion, *Ye are fallen from grace, Chriſt can profit you nothing*: which Concluſion will follow vpon Circumciſion, what workes ſoeuer elſe, morall or ceremoniall, it may be required withall as neceſſarie to ſaluation. This onely was the ſin againſt which the Apoſtle ſo much inueighed.

b *Luke* 11. 39.

c *Matth.* 5. 21.

not

not ſo repugnantly added in the one propoſition; as in the other, Circumciſion is.

31 But we ſay, our ſaluation is by Chriſt alone, therefore howſoeuer, or whatſoeuer wee adde vnto Chriſt in the matter of ſaluation, wee ouerthrow Chriſt. Our caſe were very hard, if this argument ſo vniuerſally meant, as it is propoſed, were ſound and good. We our ſelues doe not teach Chriſt alone, excluding our owne faith, vnto iuſtification; Chriſt alone, excluding our owne workes, vnto ſanctification; Chriſt alone, excluding the one or the other vnneceſſarie vnto ſaluation. It is a childiſh cauill wherewith in the matter of iuſtification our Aduerſaries doe ſo greatly pleaſe themſelues, exclayming that we tread all Chriſtian vertues vnder our feet, and require nothing in Chriſtians but faith, becauſe we teach, that faith alone iuſtifieth: whereas by this ſpeech we neuer meant to exclude either hope, or charitie from being alwayes ioyned as inſeparable Mates with Faith in the man that is iuſtified; or workes from being added as neceſſarie duties required at the hands of euery iuſtified man: but to ſhew, that faith is the only hand which putteth on Chriſt vnto iuſtification; and Chriſt, the only garment, which being ſo put on couereth the ſhame of our defiled natures, hideth the imperfections of our workes, preſerueth vs blameleſſe in the ſight of God, before whom otherwiſe, the weakeneſſe of our faith were cauſe ſufficient to make vs culpable, yea to ſhut vs from the Kingdome of Heauen, where nothing that is not abſolute, can enter. That our dealing with them bee not as childiſh as theirs with vs, when wee heare of ſaluation by Chriſt alone, conſidering that [*alone*] as an excluſiue particle, wee are to note, what it doth exclude, and where. If I ſay, *Such a Iudge only ought to determine ſuch a caſe*, all things incident to the determination thereof, beſides the perſon of the Iudge, as Lawes, Depoſitions, Euidences, &c. are not hereby excluded; perſons are not excluded from witneſſing herein, or aſſiſting, but onely from determining and giuing ſentence. How then is our ſaluation wrought by Chriſt alone? Is it our meaning that nothing is requiſite to mans ſaluation, but Chriſt to ſaue, and he to be ſaued quietly without any more adoe? No; we acknowledge no ſuch foundation. As we haue receiued, ſo we teach, that beſides the bare and naked worke, wherein Chriſt without any other Aſſociate, finiſhed all the parts of our Redemption, and purchaſed Saluation himſelfe alone: for conueyance of this eminent bleſſing vnto vs, many things are of neceſſitie required, as to bee knowne and choſen of God before the foundation of the World; in the World to be called, iuſtified, ſanctified; after we haue left the World, to bee receiued vnto glorie; Chriſt in euery of theſe hath ſomewhat, which hee worketh alone. Through him according to the eternall purpoſe of God, before the foundation of the World, Borne, Crucified, Buried, Raiſed, &c. wee were in a gracious acceptation knowne vnto God, long before we were ſeene of men: God * knew vs, loued vs, was kinde to vs in Ieſus Chriſt; in him we were elected to bee Heires of life. Thus farre God through Chriſt hath wrought in ſuch ſort alone, that our ſelues are meere Patients, working no more then dead and ſenſeleſſe Matter, Wood, or Stone, or Iob, doth in the Artificers hands, no more then the Clay when the Potter appointeth it to be framed for an honorable vſe, nay, not ſo much; for the

* Eph. 1. 2. 3.

Matter whereupon the Craftſman worketh, he chooſeth being moued by the fitneſſe which is in it to ſerue his turne; in vs no ſuch thing. Touching the reſt, which is laid for the foundation of our Faith, importeth farther; That * by him we are called; that [a] wee haue Redemption, [b] Remiſſion of ſinnes through his bloud, [c] Health by his ſtripes, [d] Iuſtice by him; that hee [e] doth ſanctifie his Church, and make it glorious to himſelfe; that [f] entrance into ioy ſhall be giuen vs by him, yea, all things by him alone. Howbeit not ſo by him alone, as if in vs to [g] our vocation, the hearing of the Goſpel; to our iuſtification, Faith; to our ſanctification, the fruits of the Spirit; to our entrance into reſt, perſeuerance in Hope, in Faith, in Holineſſe, were not neceſſarie.

* *Gal.* 5.8.
a 1. *Pet.* 2.9. 1. *Pet.* 5.3.
b *Epheſ.* 1.7.
c *Eſa.* 53.11.
d *Ierem.* 23.6.
e *Epheſ.* 8.26.
f *Matth.* 25.23.
g 2. *Theſſ.* 2.14. *Gal.* 2.16. *Gal.* 5.22. 1. *Theſſ.* 2.15.

32 Then what is the fault of the Church of Rome? Not that ſhee requireth workes at their hands which will be ſaued: but that ſhe attributeth vnto workes a power of ſatisfying God for ſinne; yea, a vertue to merit both grace here, and in heauen glorie. That this ouer-throweth the foundation of faith, I grant willingly; that it is a direct denying thereof, I vtterly deny: what it is to hold, and what directly to denie the foundation of faith, I haue alreadie opened. Apply it particularly to this cauſe, and there needes to more adoe. The thing which is handled, if the forme, vnder which it is handled, bee added thereunto, it ſheweth the foundation of any doctrine whatſoeuer. Chriſt is the Matter whereof the Doctrine of the Goſpel treateth; and it treateth of Chriſt, as of a Sauiour. Saluation therefore by Chriſt is the foundation of Chriſtianitie: as for workes, they are a thing ſubordinate, no otherwiſe then becauſe our ſanctification cannot be accompliſhed without them; the Doctrine concerning them is a thing builded vpon the foundation; therefore the Doctrine, which addeth vnto them the power of ſatisfying or of meriting, addeth vnto a thing ſubordinated, builded vpon the foundation, not to the very foundation it ſelfe: yet is the foundation by this addition conſequently ouerthrowne, for as much as out of this addition, it may be negatiuely concluded; Hee which maketh any worke good, and acceptable in the ſight of God, to proceed from the naturall freedome of our will; Hee which giueth vnto any good workes of ours, the force of ſatisfying the wrath of God for ſinne, the power of meriting either earthly or heauenly rewards; Hee which holdeth workes, going before our vocation, in congruitie to merit our vocation, works following our firſt, to merit our ſecond iuſtification, and by condignitie our laſt reward in the Kingdome of Heauen; pulleth vp the Doctrine of faith by the roots; for out of euery of theſe the plaine direct denyall thereof may bee neceſſarily concluded. Not this onely, but what other Hereſie is there, that doth not raze the very foundation of faith by conſequent? Howbeit, wee make a difference of Hereſies, accounting them in the next degree to Infidelitie, which directly deny any one thing to bee, which is expreſly acknowledged in the Articles of our Beliefe; for out of any one Article ſo denyed, the denyall of the very foundation it ſelfe is ſtraight-way inferd. As for example; if a man ſhould ſay, *There is no Catholike Church*, it followeth immediately thereupon, that this Ieſus whom we call the Sauiour, is not the Sauiour of the World; becauſe all the Prophets beare witneſſe, that the true *Meſſias* ſhould * *ſhew light vnto the Gentiles*, that is to ſay, gather ſuch a Church as is Catholike, not re-

Hæc ratio Eccleſiaſtici Sacramenti & Catholicæ Fidei eſt, vt qui partem diuini Sacramenti negat, partem non valeat confiteri. Ita enim ſibi connexa & concorporata ſunt omnia, vt aliud ſine alio ſtare non poſſit, & qui vnum ex omnibus denegauerit; alia ei omnia credidiſſe non proſit, Caſſiaſ. lib. 6. de Incarnat. Dom.

If he obſtinately ſtand in deniall. *pag.* 193.

* *Acts* 26.23.

reſtrayned any longer vnto one circumciſed Nation. In the ſecond ranke wee 2.
place them, out of whoſe Poſitions, the denyall of any the fore-ſaid Articles may be with like facilitie concluded: ſuch as are they, which haue denyed eyther the Diuinitie of Chriſt with *Hebion*, or with *Marcion* his Humanitie; an example whereof may be that of *Caſſianus*, defending the Incarnation of the Sonne of God, againſt *Neſtorius* Biſhop of Antioch, which held, that the Virgin, when ſhee brought forth Chriſt, did not bring forth the Sonne of God, but a ſole and a meere man: out of which Hereſie the denyall of the Articles of the Christian Faith he deduceth thus: *If thou doeſt deny our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, in denying the Sonne, thou canſt not chooſe but denie the Father: for according to the voice of the Father himſelfe, He that hath not the Sonne, hath not the Father. Wherefore denying him which is begotten, thou denyeſt him which doth beget. Againe, denying the Sonne of God to haue beene borne in the fleſh, how canſt thou beleeue him to haue ſuffered? beleeuing not his Paſſion, what remayneth, but that thou denie his Reſurrection? For we beleeue him not Rayſed, except we firſt beleeue him Dead: neither can the reaſon of his riſing from the Dead ſtand without the faith of his death going before. The denyall of his Death and Paſſion inferreth the denyall of his riſing from the depth. Whereupon it followeth that thou alſo deny his Aſcenſion into Heauen. The Apoſtle affirmeth, that he which Aſcended, did firſt Deſcend; ſo that as much as lyeth in thee, our Lord Ieſus Chriſt hath neither riſen from the depth, nor is aſcended into Heauen, nor ſitteth at the right hand of God the Father, neither ſhall he come at the Day of the finall account which is looked for, nor ſhall iudge the quicke and dead. And dareſt thou yet ſet foot in the Church? Canſt thou thinke thy ſelfe a Biſhop, when thou haſt denyed all thoſe things, whereby thou doſt obtaine a Biſhoply calling?* Lib. 6. de Incar. Dom. cap. 16.
NESTORIVS confeſſed all the Articles of the Creed, but his opinion did imply the denyall of euery part of his Confeſſion. Hereſies there are of the third ſort, ſuch as the Church of Rome maintayneth, which be remoued by a greater diſtance from the foundation, although indeed they ouerthrow it. Yet becauſe of that weakneſſe, which the Philoſopher noteth in mens capacities, when he ſaith, that the common ſort cannot ſee things, which follow in reaſon, when they follow as it were a-farre off by many deductions; therefore the repugnancie of ſuch Hereſie and the foundation, is not ſo quickly or ſo eaſily found, but that an Heretike of this, ſooner then of the former kind, may directly grant, and conſequently neuertheleſſe, denie the foundation of Faith. 3.

33 If reaſon be ſuſpected, tryall will ſhew that the Church of Rome doth no otherwiſe by teaching the doctrine ſhe doth teach concerning good works. Offer them the very fundamentall words: and what man is there, that will refuſe to ſubſcribe vnto them? Can they directly grant, and directly denie one and the very ſelfe-ſame thing? Our owne proceedings in diſputing againſt their workes ſatisfactorie, and meritorious, doe ſhew not only, that they hold, but that we acknowledge them to hold the foundation, notwithſtanding their opinion. For are not theſe our arguments againſt them? *Chriſt alone hath ſatisfied and appeaſed his Fathers wrath: Chriſt hath merited ſaluation alone.* Wee ſhould doe fondly to vſe ſuch diſputes, neither could we thinke to preuaile by them, if that, whereupon we ground, were a thing, which wee know they doe

not hold, which we are assured they will not grant. Their very answers to all such reasons as are in this Controuersie brought against them, will not permit vs to doubt, whether they hold the foundation, or no. Can any man that hath read their Bookes concerning this matter, be ignorant how they draw all their answers vnto these heads? *That the remission of all our sins, the pardon of all what-soeuer punishments thereby deserued, the rewards which God hath laid vp in Heauen, are by the blood of our Lord Iesus Christ purchased, and obtayned sufficiently for all men: but for no man effectually, for his benefit in particular, except the blood of Christ be applyed particularly vnto him, by such meanes as God hath appointed that to worke by. That these meanes of themselues, being but dead things, onely the blood of Christ is that which putteth life, force, and efficacie in them to worke, and to be available, each in his kind to our saluation. Finally, that grace being purchased for vs by the blood of Christ, and freely without any merit or desert at the first bestowed vpon vs, the good things which we do, after grace receiued, be thereby made satisfactory, & meritorious.* Some of their sentences, to this effect, I must alleage for mine owne warrant. If we desire to heare forraine iudgements, we find in one this confession: *He that could reckon how many the vertues and merits of our Sauiour Iesus Christ haue beene, might likewise vnderstand how many the benefits haue beene, that are to come to vs by him; forsomuch as men are made partakers of them all by meanes of his Passion: by him is giuen vnto vs Remission of our sinnes, grace, glory, liberty, prayse, saluation, redemption, iustification, iustice, satisfaction, sacraments merits, and all other things which we had, and were behoueful for our saluation.* In another we haue these oppositions, and answers made vnto them: *All grace is giuen by Christ Iesus; True, but not except Christ Iesus be applyed. He is the propitiation for our sins; by his stripes we are healed; he hath offered himselfe vp for vs: all this is true; but apply it: we put all satisfaction in the blood of Iesus Christ; but we hold that the meanes which Christ hath appointed for vs in this case to apply it, are our penall workes.* Our Countrimen in Rhemes make the like answere, that they seeke saluation no other way, then by the blood of Christ; and that humbly they doe vse Prayers, Fastings, Almes, Faith, Charitie, Sacrifice, Sacraments, Priests, only as the meanes appointed by Christ, to apply the benefit of his holy blood vnto them: touching our good workes, that in their owne natures they are not meritorious, nor answerable to the ioyes of Heauen; it commeth by the grace of Christ, and not of the worke it selfe, that we haue by well-doing a right to Heauen, and deserue it worthily. If any man thinke that I seeke to varnish their opinions, to set the better foote of a lame cause fore-most: let him know, that since I began throughly to vnderstand their meaning, I haue found their halting greater, then perhaps it seemeth to them which know not the deepnesse of Satan, as the blessed Diuine speaketh. For although this bee proofe sufficient, that they doe not directly denie the foundation of Faith: yet if there were no other leauen in the whole lumpe of their Doctrine, but this: this were sufficient to proue, that their Doctrine is not agreeable vnto the foundation of Christian Faith. The Pelagians being ouergreat friends vnto Nature, made themselues enemies vnto Grace, for all their confessing, that men haue their soules, and all the faculties thereof, their wils, and all the abilitie of their wils from God. And is not the Church of Rome still

Lewis of Granad. Medit. cap. last 3.

Panigarola Serm. 11.

Annot. in 1. Ioan 1.

still an aduersarie vnto Christ Iesus, because of her acknowledging, that we haue receiued the power of merting by the bloud of Christ? Sir *Thomas Moore* setteth downe the oddes betweene vs and the Church of Rome, in the matter of workes, thus, *Likewise we graunt them, that no good workes of man is regarded in heauen of his owne nature, but through the meere goodnes of God, that will be set so high a price vpon so poore a thing: and that this price God setteth through Christ. Last of all we graunt them also, that God worketh with vs, for good workes: so God worketh the man, without God worke in him, and if wee graunt them also, that we deserue nothing, but rather haue iust cause to be ashamed of that whose worke is in vs, for the imperfect working, & for that is in all that we can very little: and God the good, the true seruant vnprofitable & dutifull, that hath his due duty, & nothing more than these things: so this one thing we flatly deny, & vtterly gainesay them, that we haue cause to work good works, if they haue any mind vnto it, that whose worke is in vs, faith most shall be most rewarded: but then for they, therefore, that all his new gifts shall be geuen him for his faith alone, and nothing for his works at all, because his faith is the thing, they say, that setteth him to worke well.* Here by this of Sir *Thomas Moore*, how easie it is for man of the greatest capacity, to mistake things written or spoken, as well on the one side as on the other. Their doctrine, as he thought, maketh the worke of man rewardable in the World to come, through the goodnesse of God whom it pleased to set so high a price vpon so poore a thing and ours, that a man doth receiue that eternall and high reward, not for his works, but for his faiths sake, by which he worketh: whereas in truth our doctrine is no other then that wee haue learned at the feet of Christ, namely, that God doth iustifie the beleeuing man, yet not for the worthinesse of his beliefe, but for the worthinesse of him, which is beleeued; God rewardeth abundantly euery one which worketh, yet not for any meritorious dignitie, which is, or can bee in the worke, but through his meere mercie, by whose commandement he worketh. Contrariwise, their doctrine is, that as pure water of it selfe hath no sauour, but if it passe through a sweete Pipe, it taketh a pleasant smell of the Pipe through which it passeth: so, although before grace receiued, our workes doe neither satisfie, nor merit; yet after, they doe both the one and the other. Euery vertuous action hath then power in such sort satisfie, that if wee our selues continue not mortall sinne, no haynous crime whereupon to spend this treasure of satisfaction in our owne behalfe, it turneth to the benefit of other men relecte, on whom it shall please the Steward of the house of God to bestow it, so that we may satisfie for our selues and others; but meritorily for our selues. In meriting our actions doe worke with two hands; with one they get their morning stipend, the increase of grace, with the other their euening hire, the euerlasting Crowne of glorie. Indeed they teach that our good workes doe not these things, as they come from vs, but as they come from grace in vs: which grace in vs is another thing in their Diuinitie, then is the meere goodnesse of Gods mercie towards vs in Christ Iesus.

In his Book of Consolation.

Works of Supererogation.

34 If it were not a strong deluding spirit, which hath possession of their hearts: were it possible, but that they should see, how plainly they doe herein gaine say the very ground of Apostolique faith? Is this the delusion by grace, whereof so plentifull mention is made in the Scriptures of God? Was this

this their meaning, which first taught the World to looke for saluation only by Christ? By grace, the Apostle saith, and by grace in such sort as a gift, a thing that crosseth not of our deserts, nor of our workes, lest any man should boast, and say, *I haue wrought out my owne saluation*. By grace they consiste, but by grace in such, that as many as were the Diademe of blisse, they weare nothing but what they hope woone. The Apostle, as if he had fore-seene, how the Church of Rome would abuse the World in time by ambiguous termes, to declare in what sense the name of grace must be taken, when we make it the cause of our saluation, saith, *He saued vs according to his mercie*: which mercie, although it excludes not the washing of our new birth, the renewing of our hearts by the Holy Ghost, the mendes, the vertues, the duties, which God requireth of our hands which shall be saued; yet is it so repugnant vnto merit, that to say wee are saued for the worthinesse of any thing which is ours, is to deny wee are saued by grace. Grace bestoweth freely: and therefore iustly requireth the glory of that which is bestowed. We deny the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, if we should, disanull, and annihilate the benefit of his bitter Passion, if we rest in these proud imaginations, that life is deseruedly ours, that we merit it, and that we are worthy of it.

35 Howbeit, considering how many vertuous and iust men, how many Saints, how many Martyrs, how many of the ancient Fathers of the Church, haue had their sundry perilous opinions; and amongst sundry of their opinions, this, that they hoped to make good some part of amends for their sinnes, by the voluntary punishments which they laid vpon themselues, because by a consequent it may follow hereupon, that they were iniurious vnto Christ: shall we therefore make such deadly Epitaphs, and set them vpon their graues, *They denyed the foundation of faith directly, they are damned, there is no saluation for them?* S. *Austin* saith of himselfe, *Errare possum, haereticus esse nolo*. And except we put a difference betweene them that erre, and them that obstinately persist in errour, how is it possible, that euer any man should hope to be saued? Surely in this case, I haue no respect of any person aliue or dead. Giue me a man of what state or condition soeuer, yea, a *Caluinist* or a *Pope*, whome in the extreme point of his life affliction hath made to know himselfe, whose heart God hath touched with true sorrow for all his sinnes, and filled with loue towards the Gospell of Christ, whose eyes are opened to see the Truth, and his mouth to renounce all heresie and error any wise opposite thereunto: this one opinion of Merites excepted, hee thinketh God will require at his hands, and because he wanteth, therefore trembleth and is discouraged; it may be, I am forgetfull, and vnskilfull, not furnished with things new and old, as a wise learned Scribe should bee, not able to alleage that, whereunto, if it were alleaged, he doth beare a minde most willing to yeeld, and to be recalled as well from this, as from other errors. And shall I thinke, because of this onely error, that such a man toucheth not so much as the hemme of Christs garment? If he doe, wherefore should not I haue hope, that vertue may proceed from Christ to saue him? Because his errour doth by consequent ouerthrow his faith? Shall I therefore cast him off, as one that hath vtterly cast off Christ? one that holdeth not so much as by a slender threed? No, I will not

be afraid to say vnto a *Pope* or *Cardinall* in this plight, Be of good comfort, we haue to doe with a mercifull God, rather to make the best of a little which we hold well, and not with a captious Sophister, which gathereth the worst out of euery thing, wherein we erre. Is there any reason that I should be suspected, or you offended for this speech? * Is it a dangerous thing to imagine, that such men may find mercie? The houre may come when we shall thinke it a blessed thing to heare, that if our sinnes were the sinnes of the *Pope* and *Cardinals*, the bowels of the mercie of God are larger. I doe not propose vnto you a Pope with the necke of an Emperour vnder his feet, a Cardinall riding his horse to the bridle in the blood of Saints: but a *Pope* or *Cardinall*, sorrowfull, penitent, vnrobed, stript not onely of vsurped power, but also delivered and recald from errour; Antichrist converted and lying prostrate at the foote of Christ: and shall I thinke that Christ will spurne at him? And shall I crosse and gaine-say the mercifull promises of God, generally made vnto penitent sinners, by opposing the name of a Pope, of a Cardinall? What difference is there in the world betweene a *Pope* and a *Cardinall*, and *Iohn Style* in this case? If wee thinke it impossible for them, after they be once come within that ranke, to be afterwards touched with any such remorse, let that be granted. The Apostle saith, *If I or an Angell from heauen preach vnto, &c.* Let it be as likely that S. *Paul* or an Angell from heauen should preach Heresie, as that a Pope or a Cardinall should be brought so farre foorth to acknowledge the truth: yet if a Pope or Cardinall should, what find we in their persons, why they might not be saued? It is not the persons you will say, but the errour, wherein I suppose them to die, which excludeth them from the hope of mercie; the opinion of merits doth take away all possibilitie of saluation from them. What, if they hold it onely as an errour? Although they hold the truth truely and sincerely in all other parts of Christian faith? Although they haue in some measure all the vertues and graces of the Spirit, all other tokens of Gods elect children in them? Although they be farre from hauing any proud presumptuous opinion, that they shall be saued by the worthinesse of their deeds? Although the only thing which troubleth and molesteth them, be but a little too much dejection, somewhat too great a feare, rising from an erroneous conceit, that God will require a worthinesse in them, which they are grieued to find wanting in themselues? Although they be not obstinate in this perswasion? Although they be willing and would be glad to forsake it, if any one reason were brought sufficient to disproue it? Although the only let, why they doe not forsake it ere they die, be the ignorance of the meanes, by which it might be disprooued? Although the cause why the ignorance in this point is not removed, be the want of knowledge in such as should be able, and are not, to remoone it? Let me die, if euer it be prooued, that simply an errour doth exclude a *Pope* or a *Cardinall* in such a case vtterly from hope of life. Surely, I must confesse vnto you, if it be an errour, that God may be mercifull to false men, euen when they erre: my greatest comfort is my errour; were it not for the loue I beare vnto this errour, I would neuer wish to speake nor to liue.

* Let all affection bee laid aside; Let the matter indifferently be considered.

36 Wherefore, to resume that Mother sentence, whereof I little thought that so much trouble would haue growne: *I doubt not but that God is mercifull*

to

to ſaue thouſands of our Fathers liuing in Popiſh ſuperſtitions, in as much as they ſinned ignorantly. Alas! what bloudy matter is there contained in this ſentence, that it ſhould be an occaſion of ſo many hard cenſures? Did I ſay, *that thouſands of our Fathers might be ſaued?* I haue ſhewed which way it cannot be denied. Did I ſay, *I doubt not but they were ſaued?* I ſee no impietie in this perſwaſion, though I had no reaſon for it. Did I ſay, *Their ignorance doth make me hope they did find mercy, and ſo were ſaued?* What bindreth ſaluation but ſin? Sinnes are not equall: and ignorance, though it doth not make it to be no ſinne, yet ſeeing it did, make their ſinne the leſſe, why ſhould it not make our hope concerning their life, the greater? We pittie the moſt, and doubt not, but God hath moſt compaſſion ouer them that ſinne for want of vnderſtanding. As much is confeſſed by ſundrie others, almoſt in the ſelfe ſame words which I haue vſed. It is but onely my euill hap, that the ſame ſentences which ſauour veritie in other mens bookes, ſhould ſeeme to bolſter Hereſie when they are once by me recited. If I be deceiued in this point, not they, but the bleſſed Apoſtle hath deceiued me. What I ſaid of others, the ſame he ſaid of himſelfe, *I obtaine mercie, for I did it ignorantly.* Conſtrue his words, and you cannot miſconſtrue mine. I ſpeake no otherwiſe, I meant no otherwiſe then he did.

37 Thus haue I brought the queſtion, concerning our Fathers, at the length, vnto an end. Of whoſe eſtate vpon ſo fit an occaſion, as was offered me, handling the waighties cauſes of ſeparation betweene the Church of Rome and vs, and the weake motiues which are commonly brought to retaine men in that ſocietie; amongſt which motiues, the examples of our Fathers deceaſed is one, although I ſaw it conuenient to vtter the ſentence, which I did to the end, that all men might thereby vnderſtand, how vntruely we are ſaid to condemne as many as haue bin before vs otherwiſe perſwaded then we our ſelues are; yet more then that one ſentence I did not thinke it expedient to vtter, iudging it a great deale meeter for vs to haue regard to our owne eſtate, then to ſift ouer-curiouſly, what is become of other men. And fearing leſt that ſuch queſtions as theſe, if voluntarily they ſhould be too farre waded in, might ſeeme worthy of that rebuke, which our Sauiour thought needfull in a caſe not vnlike: *What is that vnto thee?* When I was forced much beſide mine expectation, to render a reaſon of my ſpeech, I could not but yeeld at the call of others, and proceed ſo farre as dutie bound mee, for the fuller ſatisfying of minds. Wherein I haue walked as with reuerence, ſo with feare: with reuerence, in regard of our Fathers, which liued in former times; not without feare, conſidering them that are aliue.

38 I am not ignorant, how readie men are to feed and ſoothe vp themſelues in euill. Shall I, will the man ſay that loueth the preſent world more then he loueth Chriſt, ſhal I incurre the high diſpleaſure of the mightieſt vpon earth? ſhal I hazzard my goods? Endanger my eſtate? Put my ſelfe in ieopardie, rather then to yeeld to that, which ſo many of my Fathers imbraced, and yet found fauour in the light of God? *Curſe Meroz*, ſaith the Lord, *curſe her Inhabitants, becauſe they helped not the Lord, they helped him not againſt the mightie.* If I ſhould not onely not helpe the Lord againſt the mightie, but helpe to

Iudg. 5.23.

ſtrengthen

ſtrengthen them that are mightie, againſt the Lord: worthily might I fall vnder the burthen of that curſe, worthy I were to beare my owne iudgement. But if the doctrine which I teach, be a flowre gathered in the Garden of the Lord; a part of the ſauing truth of the Goſpel; from whence notwithſtanding poyſoned creatures doe ſucke venome: I can but wiſh it were otherwiſe, and content my ſelfe with the lot that hath befallen me, the rather, becauſe it hath not befallen me alone. S. *Paul* teached a truth, and a comfortable truth, when he taught, that the greater our miſerie is, in reſpect of our iniquities, the readier is the mercy of God for our releaſe. If we ſeeke vnto him, the more we haue ſinned, the more praiſe, and glorie, and honour, vnto him that pardoneth our ſinne. But marke what lewd collections were made hereupon by ſome. *Why then am I condemned for a ſinner?* And the Apoſtle (as we are blamed, and as ſome affirme that we ſay: *Why doe we not euill, that good may come of it?*) he was accuſed to teach that which ill-diſpoſed men did gather by his teaching, though it were cleane not only beſides, but againſt his meaning. The Apoſtle addeth, *Their condemnation* (which thus doe) *is iuſt*. I am not haſtie to apply ſentences of condemnation. I wiſh from mine heart their converſion, whoſoeuer are thus peruerſly affected. For I muſt needs ſay, their caſe is fearefull, their eſtate dangerous, which harden themſelues, preſuming on the mercy of God towards others. It is true that God is mercifull; but let vs beware of preſumptuous ſinnes. God deliuered *Iunah* from the bottome of the Sea; will you therefore caſt your ſelues headlong from the tops of Rocks, and ſay in your hearts, God ſhall deliuer vs? Hee pitieth the blind that would gladly ſee; but will he pitie him, that may ſee, and hardneth himſelfe in blindneſſe? No. Chriſt hath ſpoken too much vnto you, to claime the priuiledge of your Fathers.

39 As for vs that haue handled this cauſe concerning the condition of our Fathers, whether it be this thing, or any other, which we bring vnto you, the counſell is good which the Wiſe man giueth, *Stand thou faſt in thy ſure vnderſtanding, in the way and knowledge of the Lord, and haue but one manner of word, and follow the Word of peace and righteouſneſſe*. As a looſe tooth is a griefe to him that eateth; ſo doth a wauering and vnſtable word in ſpeech, that tendeth to inſtruction, offend. *Shall a wiſe man ſpeake words of the winde*, ſaith *Eliphas*, light, vnconſtant, vnſtable words? Surely, the wiſeſt may ſpeake words of the winde, ſuch is the vntoward conſtitution of our nature, that we doe neither ſo perfectly vnderſtand the way and knowledge of the Lord, nor ſo ſtedfaſtly imbrace it, when it is vnderſtood; nor ſo graciouſly vtter it, when it is imbraced; nor ſo peaceably maintaine it, when it is vttered; but that the beſt of vs are ouer-taken ſometimes through blindneſſe, ſometimes through haſtineſſe, ſometime through impatience, ſometime through other paſſions of the mind, whereunto (God doth know) we are too ſubiect. We muſt therefore be contented, both to pardon others, and to craue that others muſt pardon vs for ſuch things. For no man, that ſpeaketh as a man, thinke himſelfe, while he liueth, alwayes freed from ſcapes and ouer-ſights in his ſpeech. The things themſelues, which I haue ſpoken vnto you, are ſound, howſoeuer they haue ſeemed otherwiſe vnto ſome: at whoſe hands I haue in that reſpect receiued

iniurie.

iniurie. I willingly forget it: although indeed, conſidering the benefit which I haue reaped by this neceſſarie ſpeech of truth, I rather incline to that of the Apoſtle, *They haue not iniured me at all.* I haue cauſe to wiſh them as many bleſſings in the Kingdome of heauen, as they haue forced me to vtter words and ſyllables in this cauſe; wherein I could not be more ſparing of ſpeech then I haue beene. *It becommeth no man,* ſaith Saint IEROME, *to be patient in the crime of Hereſie.* Patient, as I take it, we ſhould be alwayes, though the crime of Hereſie were intended; but ſilent in a thing of ſo great conſequence I could not, beloued, I durſt not be: eſpecially the loue that I beare to the truth of Chriſt Ieſus being hereby ſomewhat called in queſtion. Whereof I beſeech them in the meekeneſſe of Chriſt, that haue beene the firſt original cauſe, to conſider that a watch-man may crie *(an enemie)* when indeed a friend commeth. In which cauſe, as I deeme ſuch a watch-man more worthy to be loued for his care, then miſliked for his errour: ſo I haue iudged it my owne part in this, as much as in me lyeth, to take away all ſuſpicion of any vnfriendly intent or meaning againſt the Truth, from which, God doth know, my heart is free.

40 Now to you, Beloued, which haue heard theſe things, I will vſe no other words of admonition, then thoſe which are offered me by Saint IAMES, *My Brethren, haue not the faith of our glorious Lord Ieſus in reſpect of perſons.* Yee are not now to learne, that as of it ſelfe it is not hurtfull, ſo neither ſhould it be to any ſcandalous and offenſiue in doubtfull caſes, to heare the different iudgements of men: Be it that *Cephas* hath one interpretation, and *Apollos* hath another; that *Paul* is of this mind, that *Barnabas* of that; if this offend you, the fault is yours. Carry peaceable minds, and you may haue comfort by this varietie.

Now the God of peace giue you peaceable minds, and turne it to your euerlaſting comfort.

Few of the modern illuminaties in Theology haue set the doctrine of Iustification in a clearer light than Hooker, and his charity respecting our forefathers who died in the bosom of the Roman Catholic Church cannot be too much commended, and ought to be imitated by all who take vpon them to speak or to write upon that subject.

It is not for any man to say with what degree of error true piety may be consistent. Only the lesse of error so much the better, the lesse smoke, and the purer the flame, and warmer the fire. It is enough for vs to know, that in the final consummation of all things, the Iudge of all the earth will do right.

So says James Wilson.

But see Flavel on Mental Errors.

FINIS.

FIVE LEARNED SERMONS,

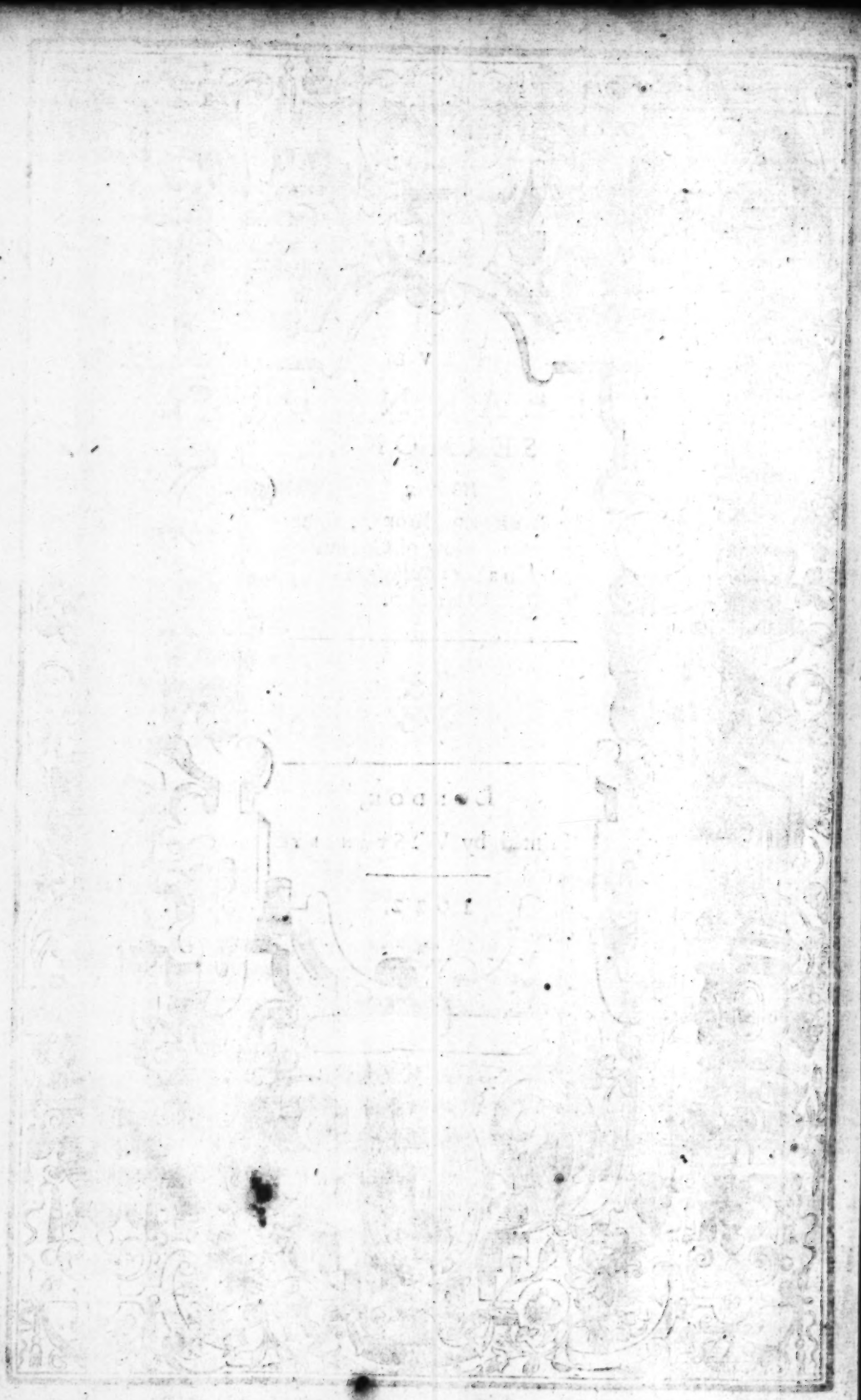
Written

By RICHARD HOOKER, sometimes Fellow of CORPVS CHRISTI *Colledge in* OXFORD.



LONDON,
Printed by W. STANSBY

1622.



A LEARNED SER-
MON OF THE NA-
TVRE OF PRIDE.

ABAC. 2. 4.

His minde ſwelleth and is not right in him:
But the iuſt by his Faith ſhall liue.

THE nature of man being much more delighted to bee led then drawne, doth many times ſtubbornely reſiſt authoritie, when to perſwaſion it eaſily yeeldeth. Whereupon the wiſeſt Law-makers haue endeuoured alwayes, that thoſe Lawes might ſeeme moſt reaſonable which they would haue moſt inuiolably kept. A Law ſimply commanding or forbidding, is but dead in compariſon of that which expreſſeth the reaſon wherefore it doth the one or the other. And ſurely, euen in the Lawes of God, although that diuine hath giuen commandement, bee it in it ſelfe a reaſon ſufficient to exact all obedience at the hands of men; yet a forcible inducement it is to obey with greater alacritie and chearefulneſſe of minde, when wee ſee plainely that nothing is impoſed more then we muſt needs yeeld vnto, except wee will be vnreaſonable: And in a word, whatſoeuer wee be taught, bee it Precept for direction of our manners, or Article for inſtruction of our faith, or Document any way ſoeuer for information of our minds, it then taketh roote and abideth, when wee conceiue not only what God doth ſpeake, but why. Neither is it a ſmall thing [illegible] derogate as well from the honour of his truth, as from the comfort, ioy, and delight which we our ſelues ſhould take by it, when wee looſely ſlide ouer diſpeeches, though they were as our owne is, commonly vulgar and trinitall: whereas if we ſtirre vp our ſelues to conſider, that nothing but it hath beſides the ſubſtance of Doctrine in it, a certaine depth of Wiſdome, in the very choice and frame of words to deliuer it: and the reaſon whereof being not perceiued, but by [illegible] intention of braine throughout our minds, for the moſt part can well away with; ſhame we [illegible] the World if we might ſo thinke it but a needleſſe curioſitie, to [illegible] any thing further then extemporall readines of wit doth ſeeme to reach vnto. Which coſtes, if heere we did not ſo follow, we might tell you that in the firſt branch of this ſentence, God doth condemne the Babylonians Pride, and in the ſecond teach, what happineſſe of ſtate ſhall grow to the righteous by

the constancie of their Faith, notwithstanding the troubles which now they suffer; and after certaine notes of wholesome instruction hereupon collected, passe ouer without detayning your mindes in any further remooued speculation. Beeing I take it, there is a difference betweene the talke that beseemeth Nurces amongst Children, and that which men of capacitie and iudgement do or should receiue instruction by.

The minde of the Prophet being erected with that which hath beene hitherto spoken, receiueth here for full satisfaction, a short abridgement of that which is afterwards more particularly vnfolded. Wherefore as the question before disputed of doth concerne two sorts of men, the wicked flourishing as the Bay, and the righteous like the withered Grasse; the one full of Pride, the other cast downe with vtter discouragement: so the answere which God doth make for resolution of doubts hereupon arisen, hath reference vnto both sorts, and this present sentence containing a briefe Abstract thereof, comprehendeth summarily as well the fearefull estate of iniquitie ouer-exalted, as the hope layd vp for righteousnesse oppreſt. In the former branch of which sentence, let vs first examine what this rectitude or straightnesse importeth, which God denyeth to bee in the minde of the *Babylonian*. All things which God did create, He made them at the first, true, good, and right. True, in respect of correspondence vnto that patterne of their being, which was eternally drawne in the counsell of Gods fore-knowledge; Good, in regard of the vse and benefit which each thing yeeldeth vnto other; Right, by an apt conformitie of all parts with that end which is outwardly proposed for each thing to tend vnto. Other things haue ends proposed, but haue not the facultie to know, iudge, and esteeme of them and therefore as they tend thereunto vnwittingly, so likewise in the meanes whereby they acquite their appointed matter, they are by necessitie so held, that they cannot decline from them. The ends why the Heauens doe moue, the heauens themselues know not, and their motions they cannot but continue. Only men in all their actions know what it is which they seeke for, neither are they by any such necessitie tyed naturally vnto any certaine determinate meane to obtaine their end by, but that they may, if they will forsake it. And therefore in the whole World no creature but only man which hath the last end of his actions proposed as a recompence and reward, whereunto his mind directly bending it selfe, is termed right or straight, otherwise peruerse.

To make this somewhat more plaine, wee must note, that as they which trauell from Citie to Citie, enquire euer for the straightest way, because the straightest is that which soonest bringeth them vnto their iourneis end: So we hauing here, as the Apostle speaketh, no abiding Citie, but being alwayes in trauell towards that place of ioy, immortalitie, and rest, compose the actions of our deeds, words and thoughts, thinke that to be best, which with most expedition leadeth vs thereunto, and is for that very cause termed right. That Soueraigne good, which is the eternall fruition of all good, being our last and chiefest felicitie, there is no desperate despiter of God and godlinesse living which doth not wish for. The difference betweene right and crooked mindes, is in the meanes which the one or the other doe eschew or follow. Certaine

it is, that all particular things which are naturally desired in the world, as food, rayment, honour, wealth, pleasure, knowledge, they are subordinated in such wise vnto that future good which we looke for in the world to come, that euen in them there lyeth a direct way tending vnto this. Otherwise we must thinke that God making promises of good things in this life, did seek to peruert men, and to leade them from their right mindes. Where is then the obliquitie of the minde of man? His minde is peruerse, vain, and crooked, not when it bendeth it selfe vnto any of these things, but when it bendeth so, that it swarueth either to the right hand or to the left, by excesse or defect from that exact rule whereby humane actions are measured. The Rule to measure and iudge them by, is the Law of God. For this cause the Prophet doth make so often & so earnest suite, *O direct me in the way of thy Commandements*. As long as I haue respect to thy Statutes, I am sure not to tread amisse. Vnder the name of the Law, wee must comprehend not only that which God hath written in Tables and leaues, but that which Nature also hath engrauen in the hearts of men. Else how shall those Heathen which neuer had Bookes but Heauen and Earth to looke vpon, be conuicted of peruersenesse? But the Gentiles which had not the Law in Bookes, had, saith the Apostle, the effect of the Law written in their hearts.

Then seeing that the heart of man is not right exactly, vnlesse it bee found in all parts such, that God examining and calling it vnto account with all seuerity of rigour, be not able once to charge it with declining or swarning aside, (which absolute perfection when did God euer finde in the sonnes of meere mortall men?) Doth it not follow that all flesh must of necessitie fall downe and confesse, wee are not dust and ashes, but worse, our mindes from the highest to the lowest are not right? If not right, then vndoubtedly not capable of that blessednesse which we naturally seeke, but subiect vnto that which wee most abhorre, anguish, tribulation, death, woe, endlesse miserie. For whatsoeuer misseth the way of Life, the issue thereof cannot bee but perdition. By which reason all being wrapped vp in sinne, and made thereby the Children of death, the minds of all men being plainly conuicted not to be right: shall we thinke that God hath indued them with so many excellencies, moe not only then any, but then all the Creatures in the World besides, to leaue them in such estate, that they had bin happier if they had neuer bin? Heere commeth necessarily in a new way vnto Saluation, so that they which were in the other peruerse, may in this be found straight and righteous. That the way of Nature, this the way of Grace. The end of that way, Saluation merited, presupposing the righteousnesse of mens workes, their righteousnesse, a naturall habilitie to doe them, that habilitie the goodnesse of God which created them in such perfection. But the end of this way, Saluation bestowed vp[illegible] as a gift presupposing not their righteousnesse, but the forgiuenesse o[illegible] vnrighteousnesse, iustification, their iustification, not their naturall h[illegible]itie to doe good, but their heartie sorrow for not doing, and vnfayned beliefe in him for whose sake not deeds are accepted, which is their vocation; their vocation, the election of God, taking them out from the number of lost children, their election a Mediator in whom to be elect; this mediation, inexplicable mercy, his mercy

their miſerie, for whome hee vouchſafed to make himſelfe a Mediatour. The want of exact diſtinguiſhing betweene theſe two wayes, and obſeruing what they haue common, what peculiar, hath beene the cauſe of the greateſt part of that confuſion whereof Chriſtianitie at this day laboureth. The lacke of diligence in ſearching, laying downe, and inuring mens minds with thoſe hidden grounds of Reaſon, whereupon the leaſt particulars in each of theſe are moſt firmely and ſtrongly builded, is the onely reaſon of all thoſe ſcruples and vncertainties wherewith we are in ſuch ſort intangled, that a number deſpaire of euer diſcerning what is right or wrong in any thing. But wee will let this matter reſt, whereinto we ſtepped to ſearch out a way how ſome mindes may bee and are right truely euen in the ſight of God, though they bee ſimply in themſelues not right.

Howbeit there is not onely this difference betweene the iuſt and impious, that the mind of the one is right in the ſight of God, becauſe his obliquitie is not imputed; the other peruerſe, becauſe his ſinne is vnrepented of: but euen as lines that are drawne with a trembling hand, but yet to the point which they ſhould, are thought ragged and vneuen, neuertheleſſe direct in compariſon of them which run clean another way; ſo there is no incongruity in terming them right-minded men, whom though God may charge with many things amiſſe, yet they are not as thoſe hideous and vgly Monſters, in whom becauſe there is nothing but wilfull oppoſition of minde againſt God, a more then toletable deformitie is noted in them, by ſaying, that their mindes are not right. The Angell of the Church of *Thyatira*, vnto whom the Sonne of God ſendeth this greeting, *I know thy workes and thy loue, and ſeruice, and faith: notwithſtanding I haue a few things againſt thee*, was not as he vnto whom Saint *Peter*, *Thou haſt no fellowſhip in this buſineſſe, for thy heart is not right in the ſight of God.* So that whereas the orderly diſpoſition of the minde of man ſhould be this, perturbations and ſenſuall appetites all kept in awe by a moderate and ſober will; will, in all things framed by reaſon; reaſon, directed by the Law of God and Nature; this *Babylonian* had his minde as it were turned vpſide downe. In him vnreaſonable cecity and blindneſſe trampled all Lawes both of God and Nature vnder feet; wilfulneſſe tyrannized ouer reaſon, and bruti[illegible] ſenſualitie ouer will. An euident token that his outrage would worke his ouerthrow, and procure his ſpeedie ruine. The Mother whereof was that which the Prophet in theſe words ſignifieth; *His minde doth ſwell.*

Immoderate ſwelling, a token of very eminent breach, and of inenitable deſtruction; Pride, a vice which cleaueth ſo faſt vnto the hearts of men, that if wee were to ſtrip our ſelues of all faults one by one, wee ſhould vndoubtedly find it the very laſt and hardeſt to put off. But I am not here to touch the ſecret itching humour of vanitie wherewith men are generally touched. It was a thing more t[illegible]eanely inordinate, wherewith the *Babylonian* did ſwell. Which that we [illegible] both the better conceiue, and the more eaſily reape profit by the nature of this vice, which ſetteth the whole World out of courſe, and hath put ſo many euen of the wiſeſt beſides themſelues, is firſt of all to bee inquired into; Secondly, the dangers to be diſcouered, which it draweth inexitable after it, being not cured; and laſt of all, the wayes to cure it.

Whether

Whether we looke vpon the gifts of nature, or of grace, or whatsoeuer is in the World admired as a part of mans excellencie, adorning his bodie, beautifying his minde, or externally any way commending him in the account and opinion of men, there is in euery kinde somewhat possible which no man hath, and somewhat had which few men can attayne vnto. By occasion whereof there groweth disparagement necessarily; and by occasion of disparagement, Pride through mens ignorance. First therefore, although men bee not proud of any thing which is not at least in opinion good, yet euery good thing they are not proud of, but onely of that which neither is common vnto many, and being desired of all, causeth them which haue it, to be honored aboue the rest. Now there is no man so voide of braine, as to suppose that Pride consisteth in the bare possession of such things; for then to haue Vertue were a Vice, and they should bee the happiest men who are most wretched, because they haue least of that which they would haue. And though in speech wee doe intimate a kind of vanity to be in them of whom we say, *They are Wisemen and they know it*, yet this doth not proue that euery Wiseman is proud which doth not thinke himselfe to be blockish. What we may haue and know that we haue it without offence, do we then make offensiue when we take ioy and delight in hauing it? What difference betweene men enriched with all abundance of earthly and heauenly blessings, and Idols gorgeously attyred, but this, *the one takes pleasure in that which they haue, the other none?* If we may be pollest with beautie, strength, riches, power, knowledge, if we may be priuie what we are euery way, if glad and ioyfull for our owne welfare, and in all this remayne vnblameable, neuertheless some there are who granting thus much, doubt whether it may stand with humility to accept those testimonies of praise and commendation, those titles, roomes, and other honours which the World yeeldeth as acknowledgements of some men excellencies aboue others. For in as much as Christ hath said vnto those that are his, *The Kings of the Gentiles raigne ouer them, and they that beare rule ouer them are called gracious Lords: Be ye not so*; The Anabaptist hereupon vrgeth equalitie amongst Christians, as if all exercise of authoritie were nothing else but Heathenish Pride. Our Lord & Sauiour had no such meaning. But his Disciples feeding themselues with a vain imagination for the time, that the Messias of the World should in Ierusalem erect his Throne, and exercise dominion with great pompe and outward statelinesse, aduanced in honour and temporall power aboue all the Princes of the Earth, began to thinke how with their Lords condition, their owne would also rise: that hauing left and forsaken all to follow him, their place about him should not be meane: and because they were many, it troubled them much, which of them should bee the greatest man. When sute was made for two by name, that of them one might sit at his right hand, and the other at his left, the rest beganne to stomacke, each taking it grieuously, that any should haue what all did affect. Their Lord and Master to correct this humour, turneth aside their cogitations from these vaine and fantasticall conceits, giuing them plainely to vnderstand that they did but deceiue themselues. His comming was not to purchase an earthly, but to bestow an heauenly Kingdome, wherein they (if any) shall bee greatest, whom vnfayned Humilitie maketh in this

World loweſt, and leaſt amongſt others: *Yee are they which haue continued with mee in my temptations, therefore I leaue vnto you a Kingdome, as my Father hath appointed me, that yee may eat and drinke at my Table in my Kingdome, and ſit in ſeates, and iudge the twelue Tribes of Iſrael.* But my Kingdome is no ſuch Kingdome as ye dreame of. And therefore theſe hungry ambitious contentions are ſeemlier in Heathens then in you. Wherefore from Chriſts intent and purpoſe nothing further remoued, then diſlike of diſtinctions in titles and callings annexed for orders ſake vnto authoritie, whether it be Eccleſiaſtical or Ciuil. And when wee haue examined throughly what the nature of this vice is, no man knowing it, can be ſo ſimple, as not to ſee an vgly ſhape thereof apparent many times in reiecting honours offered, then in the very exacting of them at the hands of men. For as *Iudas* his care for the poore was meere couetouſneſſe, and that franck-hearted waſtfulneſſe ſpoken of in the Goſpell, thrift; ſo there is no doubt but that going in rags may be Pride, and Thrones bee challenged with vnfained humilitie.

Wee muſt goe further therefore and enter ſomewhat deeper, before wee can come to the Cloſet wherein this Poyſon lyeth. There is in the heart of euery proud man, firſt, an errour of vnderſtanding; a vaine opinion whereby he thinketh his owne excellencie, and by reaſon thereof, his worthineſſe of eſtimation, regard, and honour, to be greater then in truth it is. This maketh him in all his affections accordingly to rayſe vp himſelfe, and by his inward affections his outward acts are faſhioned. Which if you liſt to haue exemplified, you may either by calling to minde things ſpoken of them whom God himſelfe hath in Scripture ſpecially noted with this fault, or by preſenting to your ſecret cogitations that which you daily behold in the odious liues and manners of high-minded men. It were too long to gather together ſo plentifull an harueſt of examples in this kind as the ſacred Scripture affordeth. That which wee drinke in at our Eares, doth not ſo piercingly enter, as that which the mind doth conceiue by ſight. Is there any thing written concerning the *Aſſyrian* Monarch in the tenth of *Eſay*, of his ſwelling mind, his haughtie looks, his great and preſumptuous vaunts: *By the power of mine owne hand I haue done all things, and by mine owne wiſdome I haue ſubdued the World?* Any thing concerning the Dames of Sion in the third of the Prophet *Eſay*, of their ſtretched out necks, their immodeſt eyes, their Pageant-like, ſtately, and pompeous gate? Any thing concerning the practices of *Corah, Dathan*, and *Abiram*; of their impatience to liue in ſubiection, their mutinies, repining at lawfull authority, their grudging againſt their Superiours Eccleſiaſticall and Ciuill? Any thing concerning Pride in any ſort ſect, which the preſent face of the World doth not as in a glaſſe repreſent to the view of all mens beholding? So that if Bookes, both prophane and holy, were all loſt, as long as the manners of men retaine the ſtate they [illegible] in: for him which obſerueth how that when men haue once conceiued an ouer-weaning of themſelues, it maketh them in all their affections to ſwell, how deadly their hatred, how beaſtie their diſpleaſure, how vnappeaſeable their indignation and wrath is aboue other mens, in what manner they compoſe themſelues to be as *Heteroclites*, without the compaſſe of all ſuch Rules as common are ſort meaſured by, how the Oathes which religious

hearts

hearts doe tremble at, they affect as principall graces of ſpeech; what felicitie they take to ſee the enormitie of their crimes aboue the reach of Lawes and punishments; how much it delighteth them when they are able to appale with the cloudineſſe of their looke; how farre they exceed the termes wherewith mans nature ſhould be limited; how high they beare their heads ouer others; how they brow-beat all men which doe not receiue their Sentences as Oracles with maruelous applauſe and approbation; how they looke vpon no man, but with an indirect countenance, nor heare any thing ſauing their owne praiſe, with patience, nor ſpeake without ſcornefulneſſe and diſdaine; how they vſe their ſeruants, as if they were beaſts, their inferiors as ſeruants, their equals as inferiors, and as for ſuperiors acknowledge none; how they admire themſelues as venerable, puiſſant, wiſe, circumſpect, prouident, euerie way great, taking all men beſides themſelues for cyphers, poore, inglorious, ſilly creatures, needleſſe burthens of the earth, off-ſcowrings, nothing: in a word, for him which marketh how irregular and exorbitant they are in all things, it can be no hard thing hereby to gather, that Pride is nothing but an inordinate elation of the mind, proceeding from a falſe conceit of mens excellencie in things honoured, which accordingly frameth alſo their deeds and behauiour, vnleſſe there be cunning to conceale it. For a foule ſcarre may be couered with a faire cloth. And as proud as *Lucifer*, may be in outward appearance lowly.

No man expecteth Grapes of Thiſtles; nor from a thing of ſo bad a nature, can other then ſutable fruits be looked for. What harme ſoeuer in priuate families there groweth by diſobedience of children, ſtubbornneſſe of ſeruants, vntractableneſſe in them, who although they otherwiſe may rule, yet ſhould in conſideration of the imparitie of their ſexe be alſo ſubiect; whatſoeuer by ſtrife amongſt men combined in the fellowſhip of greater Societies, by tyranny of Potentates, ambition of Nobles, rebellion of ſubiects in ciuill States; by Hereſies, Schiſmes, diuiſions in the Church; naming Pride, we name the Mother which brought them forth, and the only Nurſe that feedeth them. Giue me the hearts of all men humbled, and what is there that can ouerthrow or diſturbe the peace of the world? Wherein many things are the cauſe of much euill, but Pride of all.

To declaime of the ſundrie of euils iſſuing out of Pride, is an eaſie labour. I rather wiſh that I could exactly preſcribe & perſwade effectually the remedies, whereby a ſore ſo grieuous might be cured, and the meanes how the pride of ſwelling minds might be taken downe. Whereunto ſo much we haue already gained, that the euidence of the cauſe which breedeth it, pointeth directly vnto the likeſt and fitteſt helpe to take it away: diſeaſes that come of fulneſſe, emptineſſe muſt remoue. Pride is not cured, but by abating the error which cauſeth the mind to ſwell. Then ſeeing that men ſwell by miſconceit of their owne excellency; for this cauſe all which tend to the beating downe of their pride, whether it be aduerſitie from men, or from God himſelfe chaſtiſement, do then make them ceaſe to be proud, when it cauſeth them to ſee their error in euer-ſeeing the thing they were proud of. At this marke, *Iob*, in his Apologie vnto his eloquent friends, aymeth. For perceiuing

how

how much they delighted to heare themselues talke, as if they had giuen their poore afflicted familiar a schooling of marvellous deepe and rare instruction, as if they had taught him more then all the world besides could acquaint him with, his answer was to this effect: Yee swell as though yee had conceiued some greater matter, but as for that which yee are deliuered off, who knoweth it not? Is any man ignorant of these things? At the same marke the blessed Apostle driueth; yee abound in all things, yee are rich, yee raigne, and would to Christ we did raigne with you. But boast not. For what haue yee, or are yee of your selues? To this marke all those humble Confessions are referred, which haue beene alwayes frequent in the mouthes of Saints, truely wading in the tryall of themselues: as that of the Prophet, *We are nothing but for meate and festered corruption*: our very light is darkenesse, and our righteousnesse it selfe vnrighteousnesse; that of GREGORY, *Let no man euer put confidence in his owne deserts; Sordet in conspectu Iudicis, quod fulget in conspectu operantis*. In the sight of that dreadfull Iudge it is noysome, which in the doers iudgement maketh a beautifull shew: That of ANSELME, *I adore thee, I blesse thee, Lord God of heauen, and Redeemer of the world, with all the power, ability, and strength of my heart and soule, for thy goodnes so vnmeasurably extended, not in regard of my merits, whereunto only torments were due, but of thy meere vnprocured benignity*. If these Fathers should be raised again from the dust, & haue the bookes laid open before them wherein such sentences are found as this, *Workes, no other then the value, desert, price, and worth of the wages, of the Kingdome of heauen; Heauen, in relation to our workes, is the very stipend, which the hired Labourer couenanteth to haue of him whose workes he doth, a thing equally and iustly answering vnto the time and waight of his trauailes, rather then to a voluntarie or bountifull gift*. If, I say, those reuerend fore-rehearsed Fathers, whose bookes are so full of sentences, witnessing their Christian humilitie, should be raised from the dead, and behold with their eyes such things written, would they not plainly pronounce of the Authors of such writ, that they were fuller of *Lucifer* then of Christ, that they were proud-hearted men, and carried more swelling minds then sincerely and feelingly knowne Christianitie can tolerate?

Annot. Rhem. in 1. Cor. 3.

But as vnruly children, with whom wholsome admonition preuaileth little, are notwithstanding brought to feare that euer after, which they haue once well smarted for: so the mind which falleth not with instruction, yet vnder the rod of diuine chastisement ceaseth to swell. If therefore the Prophet *Dauid* instructed by good experience, hauing acknowledged, Lord, I was euen at the point of cleane forgetting my selfe, and so straying from my right mind; but thy rod hath beene my reformer, it hath beene good for me, euen as much as my soule is worth, that I haue beene with sorrow troubled: if the blessed Apostle did need the corrosiue of sharpe & bitter strokes, lest his heart should swell with too great abundance of heauenly Reuelations, surely, vpon vs whatsoeuer God in this world doth, or shall inflict, it cannot seeme more then our pride doth exact, not only by way of reuenge, but of remedie. So hard it is to cure a sore of such qualitie as pride is, in as much as that which rooteth out other vices, causeth this, and (which is euen aboue all conceit) if we were cleane from all spot and blemish, both of other faults of pride, the fall of

Angels

Angels doth make it almoſt a queſtion whether we might not need a preſeruatiue ſtill, leſt we ſhould haply waxe proud that we are not proud. What is Vertue, but a medicine; and Vice, but a wound? Yet we haue ſo often deeply wounded our ſelues with medicine, that God hath beene faine to make wounds medicinable, to cure by Vice where Vertue hath ſtricken, to ſuffer the iuſt man to fall, that being raiſed, he may be taught what power it was which vpheld him ſtanding. I am not afraid to affirme it boldly with S. *Auguſtine*, that men puffed vp through a proud opinion of their owne ſanctitie and holineſſe, receiue a benefit at the hands of God, and are aſſiſted with his grace, when with his grace they are not aſſiſted, but permitted, and that grieuouſly to tranſgreſſe, whereby as they were in ouer-great liking of themſelues ſupplanted, ſo the diſlike of that which did ſupplant them, may eſtabliſh them afterwards the ſurer. Aske the very ſoule of *Peter*, and it ſhall vndoubtedly make you it ſelfe this anſwer; My eager proteſtations made in the glorie of my ghoſtly ſtrength, I am aſhamed of, but thoſe Chryſtall teares wherewith my ſinne and weakeneſſe was bewayled, haue procured my endleſſe ioy, my ſtrength hath beene my ruine, and my fall my ſtay.

It would be very difficult to find Chapter & Verse for this diuine concept in the famous Mr Ralph Erskine's Gospel Sonnets. In his believers Riddle he says,

Humility makes my pride to grow,
And pride aſſuming lays me low.
My ſtanding does my fall procure,
My falling makes me ſtand more ſure.

a Riddle indeed! Against the Doctrine of which Iames Wilson enters his protest.

FINIS.

A REMEDIE AGAINST SORROW AND FEARE.

Deliuered in a Funerall Sermon.

IOHN 14. 27.

Let not your hearts be troubled, neither let them be afraid.

THE holy Apostles hauing gathered themselues together by the speciall appointment of Christ, and being in expectation to receiue from him such instructions as they had beene accustomed with, were told that which they least looked for, namely, That the time of his departure out of the world, was now come. Whereupon they fell into consideration, first of the manifold benefits which his absence should bereaue them off; and secondly, of the sundrie euils which themselues should be subiect vnto, being vnbereaued of so gracious a Master and Patron. The one consideration ouerwhelmed their soules with heauinesse: The other with feare. Their Lord and Saviour, whose words had cast downe their hearts, raiseth them presently againe with chosen sentences of sweet encouragement. My deare, it is for your owne sakes that I leaue the world. I know the affections of your hearts are tender, but if your loue were directed with that aduised and staid iudgement which should be in you, my speech of leauing the world, and going vnto my Father, would not a little augment your ioy. Desolate and comfortles I will not leaue you: to shunne I am with you to the worlds end, whether I be present or absent, nothing shall euer take you out of these hands: my going is to take possession of that, in your names, which is not only for me, but also for you prepared, where I am, you shall be. In the meane while, *My peace I giue vnto you, not as the world giueth, giue I vnto you: Let not your hearts be troubled, neither let them be afraid.* The former part of which sentence hauing other-where already beene spoken of, this vnacceptable occasion to open the latter part thereof here, I did not looke for. But so God disposeth the waues of men. Him I heartily beseech, that the thing which hee hath thus ordered by his prouidence, may through his gracious goodnesse turne vnto your comfort.

Our

Our nature coueteth preſeruation from things hurtfull. Hurtfull things being preſent, doe breed heauineſſe, being future, doe cauſe feare. Our Sauiour to abate the one, ſpeaketh thus vnto his Diſciples: *Let not your hearts bee troubled*, and to moderate the other, addeth *Feare not*. Griefe and heauineſſe in the preſents of ſenſible euils cannot but trouble the minds of men. It may therefore ſeeme that Chriſt required a thing impoſſible. Be not troubled. Why, how could they chooſe? But we muſt note this being naturall and therefore ſimply not reprooueable, is in vs good or bad according to the cauſes for which we are grieued, or the meaſure of our griefe. It is not my meaning to ſpeake ſo largely of this affection, as to go ouer all particulars whereby men doe one way or other offend in it, but to teach it ſo farre onely as it may cauſe the very Apoſtles equals to ſwarue. Our griefe and heauineſſe therefore is reprooueable, ſometime in reſpect of the cauſe from whence, ſometime in regard of the meaſure whereunto it groweth.

When Chriſt the life of the world was led vnto cruell death, there followed a number of people and women, which women bewayled much his heauie caſe. It was naturall compaſſion which cauſed them, where they ſaw vndeſerued miſeries, there to powre forth vnreſtrained teares. Nor was this reproued. But in ſuch readineſſe to lament where they leſſe needed, their blindneſſe in not diſcerning that for which they ought much rather to haue mourned, this our Sauiour a little toucheth, putting them in mind that the teares which were waſted for him, might better haue been ſpent vpon themſelues. *Daughters of Ieruſalem, weepe not for me, weepe for your ſelues, and for your children.* It is not as the Stoicks haue imagined, a thing vnſeemly for a wiſe man to be touched with griefe of mind, but to be ſorrowfull when we leaſt ſhould and where we ſhould lament, there to laugh, this argueth our ſmall wiſedome. Againe, when the Prophet *Dauid* confeſſeth thus of himſelfe, *I grieued to ſee the great proſperitie of vngodlyſſe men how they flouriſh and goe vntoucht*, Pſal. 73. Himſelfe hereby openeth both our common and this peculiar imperfection, which his cauſe ſhould not haue made to peruſue. To grieue at this, is to grieue where we ſhould not, becauſe this griefe doth riſe from errour. We erre when we grieue at wicked mens impunitie and proſperitie, becauſe their eſtate being highly eſteemed, they neither proſper nor goe vnpunished. It may ſeeme a paradoxe, it is a truth, that no wicked mans eſtate is proſperous, fortunate, or happie. For what though they bleſſe themſelues and thinke their happineſſe great? Haue not franticke perſons many times a great opinion of their owne wiſedome? It may be that ſuch as they thinke themſelues, others alſo doe accompt them. But what others? Surely ſuch as themſelues are. Truth and reaſon diſcerneth farre otherwiſe of them. Vnto whom the Iewes with all proſperitie, vnto them the ſtyle of their ſpeech is to wiſh peace. Seeing then the name of peace containeth in it all parts of true happineſſe, when the Prophet ſaith plainely that the wicked haue no peace, how can we thinke them to haue any part of other then vainely imagined felicitie? What wiſe man did euer accompt fooles happie? If wicked men were wiſe, they would ceaſe to be wicked. Their infelicitie therefore proouing their folly, how can we ſtand in doubt of their miſerie? They abound in thoſe things which all men

deſire.

desire. A poore happinesse to haue good things in possession, *A man to whom God hath giuen riches and treasures and honour, so that he wanteth nothing for his soule of all that it desireth, but yet God giueth him not the power to eat thereof.* Such a felicitie *Salomon* esteemeth but as a vanity, a thing of nothing. If such things adde nothing to mens happinesse where they are not vsed, surely wicked men that vse them ill, the more they haue, the more wretched. Of their prosperitie therefore we see what we are to thinke. Touching their impunitie, the same is likewise but supposed. They are oftener plagued then we are aware of. The pangs they feele are not alwayes written in their fore-heads. Though wickednes be sugar in their mouthes, and wantonnesse as Oyle to make them looke with cheerefull countenance, were their hearts discioled, perhaps their glittering estate would not greatly bee enuied. The voices that haue broken out from some of them, *O that God had giuen me a heart senselesse like the flint in the rocks of stone,* which as it can taste no pleasure, so it feeleth no woe; these and the like speeches are surely tokens of the curse which *Zophar* in the Booke of *Iob* powreth vpon the head of the impious man, *He shall sucke the gall of Aspes, and the Vipers tongues shall slay him.* If this seeme light because it is secret, shall we thinke they goe vnpunished, because no apparent plague is presently seene vpon them? The iudgements of God doe not alwayes follow crimes as Thunder doth lightning, but sometimes the space of many Ages comming betweene. When the Sunne hath shined faire the space of sixe dayes vpon their Tabernacle, wee know not what Clouds the seuenth may bring. And when their punishment doth come, let them make their account in the greatnes of their sufferings to pay the interest of abhorred sinne which hath beene giuen them. Or if they chance to escape clearely in this World, which they seldome doe, in the Day when the Heauens shall shrinke vp as a Scrole, and the mountaines mone as frighted men out of their places, what Caue shall receiue them? what Mountaine or Rock shall they get by intreate to fall vpon them? What couert to hide them from that wrath which they shall be neither able to abide nor auoyde? No more miserie therefore being greater then theirs whose impiety is most fortunate, much more cause there is for them to bewaile their owne infelicitie, then for others to be troubled with their prosperous and happie estate, as if the hand of the Almighty did not or would not touch them. For these causes and the like vnto these therefore be not troubled. Eccl. 6. 2.

Now though the cause of our heauinesse be iust, yet may not our affections herein be yeelded vnto with too much indulgencie and fauour. The griefe of compassion, whereby we are touched with the feeling of other mens woes, is of all other least dangerous. Yet this as the rest of our duties, by time and place we are to spare sometimes where we ought to strike. The griefe which our owne sufferings doe bring, what temptations haue bereaued from it? What great aduantage Satan hath taken vpon hym by the guilty griefe of hartie contrition for sinnes committed against God, the neere approaching of so many afflicted soules, whom the conscience of sinne hath brought vnto the very brinke of extreme despaire, doth but too abundantly shew. These things wheresoeuer they fall, cannot but trouble and molest the minde. Whether wee bee therefore moued vainely with that which seemeth to befall and is not; or

haue iuſt cauſe of griefe, being preſſed indeed with thoſe things which are grieuous; our Sauiours leſſon is, touching the one, Be not troubled, nor ouer-troubled for the other. For though to haue no feeling of that which meerely concerneth vs were ſtupiditie, neuertheleſſe, ſeeing that as the Author of our Saluation was himſelfe conſecrated by affliction, ſo the way which wee are to follow him by, is not ſtrewed with ruſhes, but ſet with thornes, bee it neuer ſo hard to learne wee muſt learne to ſuffer with patience, euen that which ſeemeth almoſt impoſſible to be ſuffered, that in the houre when God ſhall call vs vnto our tryall, and turne this honey of peace and pleaſure which wee ſwell in that gall and bitterneſſe which fleſh doth ſhrinke to taſte of, nothing may cauſe vs in the troubles of our ſoules to ſtorme and grudge and repine at God, but euery heart be enabled with diuinely inſpired courage to inculcate vnto it ſelfe, *Be not troubled*, and in thoſe laſt and greateſt conflicts to remember it, that nothing may be ſo ſharpe and bitter to be ſuffered, but that ſtill we our ſelues may giue our ſelues this encouragement, *Euen learne alſo patience, O my ſoule.*

Naming patience, I name that vertue which onely hath power to ſtay our ſoules from being ouer-exceſſiuely troubled: a vertue, wherein if euer any, ſurely that ſoule had good experience, which extremitie of paines hauing chaſed out of the Tabernacle of this fleſh, Angels, I nothing doubt, haue carried into the boſome of her father *Abraham*. The death of the Saints of God is precious in his ſight. And ſhall it ſeeme vnto vs ſuperfluous at ſuch times as theſe are, to heare in what manner they haue ended their liues? The Lord himſelfe hath not diſdayned ſo exactly to regiſter in the Booke of life, after what ſort his Seruants haue cloſed vp their dayes on earth, that he deſcendeth euen to their very meaneſt actions, what meate they haue longed for in their ſickneſſe, what they haue ſpoken vnto their Children, Kinſfolke, and Friends, where they haue willed their dead Carkaſſe to be laid, how they haue framed their Wils and Teſtaments, yea the very turning of their faces to this ſide or that, the ſetting of their eyes, the degrees whereby their naturall heate hath departed from them, their cryes, their groanes, their pantings, breathings, and laſt gaſpings, he hath moſt ſolemnely commended vnto the memorie of all Generations. The care of the liuing both to liue and to dye well muſt needes bee ſomewhat increaſed, when they know that their departure hath not beene folded vp in ſilence, but the cares of many bee made acquainted with it. Againe, when they heare how mercifully God hath deale with others in the houre of their laſt need, beſides the prayſe which they giue to God, and the ioy which they haue or ſhould haue by reaſon of their fellowſhip and communion of Saints, is not their hope alſo much confirmed againſt the day of their owne diſſolution? Finally, the ſound of theſe things doth not ſo pierce the eares of them that are moſt looſe and diſſolute of life, but it reacheth them ſometime or other to with in their hearts, *O that mine end might be like theirs!* Howbeit, becauſe to ſpend herein many words, would be to ſtrike euen *Many wounds into their minds whom I rather wiſh* to comfort, therefore concerning this vertuous Gentlewoman, only this little I ſpeake, and that of knowledge, *So liued Dan, and ſo dyed Lambe.* And if a-

mongſt

Zoyed

Gen. XXIV. 2, 4 26—40.
Ch. XLIX. 29, 30.
2 King. XX. 2.
Iſai. XXXVIII. 2.
1 Kings I. 1—4

mongſt ſo many vertues, heartie deuotion towards God, towards pouertie tender compaſſion, motherly affection towards ſeruants, towards friends euen ſeruiceable kindneſſe, milde behauiour, and harmeleſſe meaning towards all; if where ſo many vertues were eminent, any be worthy of ſpeciall mention, I wiſh her deareſt friends of that ſexe to be her neereſt followers in two things: *Silence*, ſauing only where dutie did exact ſpeech, and *Patience*, euen then when extremitie of paines did enforce griefe. *Bleſſed are they which dye in the Lord.* And concerning the dead which are bleſſed, let not the hearts of any liuing be ouer-charged, with griefe ouer-troubled.

Touching the latter affection of feare which reſpecteth euils to come, as the other which we haue ſpoken of doth preſent euils; firſt, in the nature thereof it is plaine, that we are not of euery future euill afraid. Perceiue wee not how they, whoſe tenderneſſe ſhrinketh at the leaſt raſe of a Needles point, doe kiſſe the Sword that pierceth their Soules quite through? If euery euill did cauſe feare, ſinne, becauſe it is ſinne, would be feared; whereas properly ſinne is not feared as ſinne, but onely as hauing ſome kind of harme annexed. To teach men to auoyd ſinne, it had beene ſufficient for the Apoſtle to ſay, Flye it. But to make them afraid of committing ſinne, becauſe the naming of ſinne ſufficed not, therefore he addeth further, that it is as a *Serpent which ſtingeth the ſoule.* Againe, be it that ſome nocive or hurtfull things be towards vs, muſt feare of neceſſitie follow hereupon? Not except that hurtfull things do threaten vs either with deſtruction or vexation, and that ſuch as wee haue neither a conceit of abilitie to reſiſt, nor of vtter impoſſibilitie to auoyde. That which we know our ſelues able to withſtand, we feare not, adde that which we know we are vnable to deferre or diminiſh, or any way auoyd, we ceaſe to feare, wee giue our ſelues ouer to beare and ſuſtaine it. The euill therefore which is feared, muſt be in our perſwaſion vnable to be reſiſted when it commeth, yet not vtterly impoſſible for a time in whole or in part to bee ſhunned. Neyther doe we much feare ſuch euils, except they be imminent and neere at hand; nor if they be neere, except we haue an opinion that they be ſo. When we haue once conceiued an opinion, or apprehended an imagination of ſuch euils preſt and readie to inuade vs, becauſe they are hurtfull vnto our nature, wee feele in our ſelues a kind of abhorring; becauſe they are thought neere, yet not preſent, our nature ſeeketh forthwith how to ſhift and prouide for it ſelfe; becauſe they are euils which cannot be reſiſted, therefore ſhe doth not prouide to withſtand, but to ſhun and auoyde. Hence it is, that in extreme feare the Mother of life contracting her ſelfe, auoyding as much as may be the reach of euill, and drawing the heate together with the ſpirits of the bodie to her, leaueth the outward parts cold, pale, weake, feeble, vnapt to performe the functions of life, as wee ſee in the feare of *Balthaſar* King of *Babel*. By this it appeareth, that feare is nothing elſe but a perturbation of the minde through an opinion of ſome imminent euill, threatning the deſtruction or great annoyance of our nature, which to ſhun, it doth contract and deiect it ſelfe.

Now becauſe not in this place onely, but other where often we heare it repeated *Feare not*, it is by ſome made a long queſtion, *whether a man may feare deſtruction or vexation, without ſinning?* Firſt, the reproofe wherewith Chriſt

checketh his Disciples more then once, *O men of little faith, wherefore are yee afraid?* Secondly, the punishment threatned in the twenty one of the *Reuelation*, to wit, the Lake, and fire, and brimstone, not onely to Murtherers, vncleane persons, Sorcerers, Idolaters, Lyers, but also to the fearefull and faint-hearted, this seemeth to argue that fearefulnesse cannot but be sinne. On the contrarie side we see, that He which neuer felt motion vnto sinne, had of this affection more then a slight feeling. How cleere is the euidence of the Spirit, that *in the dayes of his flesh hee offered vp Prayers and Supplications with strong cries and teares vnto him that was able to saue him from death, and was also heard in that which hee feared? Heb.* 5.7. Whereupon it followeth, that feare in it selfe is a thing not sinfull. For is not feare a thing naturall, and for mens preseruation necessary, implanted in vs by the prouident and most gracious Giuer of all good things, to the end that wee might not runne head-long vpon those mischiefes wherewith we are not able to encounter, but vse the remedie of shunning those euils which we haue not abilitie to withstand? Let that people therefore which receiue a benefit by the length of their Princes dayes, that Father or Mother that reioyceth to see the Off-spring of their flesh grow like greene and pleasant Plants, let those children that would haue their Parents, those men that would gladly haue their friends and brethrens dayes prolonged on earth, (as there is no naturall-hearted man but gladly would) let them blesse the Father of lights, as in other things, so euen in this, that he hath giuen man a fearefull heart, and setled naturally that affection in him, which is a preseruation against so many wayes of death. Feare then in it selfe being meere nature, cannot in it selfe bee sinne, which sinne is not nature, but thereof an accessary depriuation.

But in the matter of feare we may sinne, and doe, two wayes. If any mans danger be great, theirs greatest, that haue put the feare of danger farthest from them. Is there any estate more fearefull then that Babylonians Strumpets, that sitteth vpon the tops of seuen hils, glorying and vaunting, *I am a Queene? &c. Reuel.* 18.7. How much better and happier they, whose estate hath beene alwayes as his who speaketh after this sort of himselfe, *Lord, from my youth haue I borne thy yoke?* They which sit at continuall ease, and are setled in the lees of their securitie, looke vpon them, view their countenance, their speech, their gesture, their deedes; put them in feare, O God, saith the Prophet, that so they may know themselues to be but men, Wormes of the Earth, dust and ashes, fraile, corruptible, feeble things. To shake of securitie therefore, and to breed feare in the hearts of mortall men, so many admonitions are vsed concerning the power of euils which beset them, so many threatnings of calamities, so many descriptions of things threatned, and those so liuely, to the end they may leaue behind them a deepe impression of such as haue force to keepe the heart continually waking. All which do shew, that wee are to stand in feare of nothing more, then the extremitie of not fearing.

When feare hath deliuered vs from that Pit, wherein they are sunke that haue put far from them the euill day; that haue made a league with death, and haue said, *Tush, we shall feele no harme*; it standeth vs vpon to take heed it cast vs not into that, wherein soules destitute of all hope are plunged. For our direction, to auoyde, as much as may be, both extremities, that wee may know as a

Ship-

Shipmaſter by his Carde, how farre we are wide, either on the one ſide or on the other; we muſt note that in a Chriſtian man there is firſt, nature, Secondly, corruption peruerting Nature; Thirdly, grace correcting, and amending corruption. In feare all theſe haue their ſeuerall operations. Nature teacheth ſimply, to wiſh preſeruation and auoydance of things dreadful, for which cauſe one Sauiour himſelfe prayeth, and that often; Father, if it be *poſsible*. In which caſes, corrupt natures ſuggeſtions are, for the ſafetie of temporall life, not to ſticke at things excluding from eternall: wherein how farre euen the beſt may bee led, the chiefeſt Apoſtles frailtie teacheth. Were it not therefore for ſuch cogitations, as on the contrarie ſide grace and faith miniſtreth, ſuch as that of IOB, *Though God kill me*, that of PAVL, *Scio, cui credidi*, I know him on whom I doe relye, ſmall euils would ſoone be able to ouer-whelme euen the beſt of vs. *A Wiſeman*, ſaith SALOMON, *doth ſee a plague comming, and hideth himſelfe*. It is nature which teacheth a Wiſeman, in feare to hide himſelfe, but grace and faith doth teach him where. Fooles care not where they hide their heads. But where ſhall a Wiſeman hide himſelfe, when he feareth a plague comming? Where ſhould the frighted Childe hide his head, but in the boſome of his louing Father? Where a Chriſtian, but vnder the ſhadow of the wings of Chriſt his Sauiour? Come, my people, ſaith God, in the Prophet, *Enter into thy Chamber, hide thy ſelfe, &c. Eſay* 26. But becauſe we are in danger like chaſed Birds, like Doues that ſeeke, and cannot ſee the reſting holes that are right before them, therefore our Sauiour giueth his Diſciples theſe encouragements beforehand, that feare might neuer ſo amaze them, but that alwayes they might remember, that whatſoeuer euils at any time did beſet them, to him they ſhould ſtill repaire for comfort, counſell, and ſuccour. For their aſſurance whereof, his *Peace* he *gaue them*, his *Peace* he *left vnto them*, *not ſuch peace as the World* offereth, by whom his name is neuer ſo much pretended, as when deepeſt treachery is meant, but *Peace which paſſeth all vnderſtanding*, *Peace* that bringeth with it all happineſſe, *Peace* that continueth for euer and euer with them that haue it. This Peace God the Father grant, for his Sonnes ſake, vnto whom with the Holy Ghoſt, three Perſons, one Eternall, and Euer-liuing God, be all honour, glorie, and praiſe, now, and for eſer.

Amen.

FINIS.

Shipmaster by his Card, how farre we are wide, either on the one side or
the other, we must note that in a Christian man there is first, nature, Secondly,
corruption perverting Nature: Thirdly, grace correcting, and amending corru-
ption. In fearing all these have their severall operations. Nature teacheth
simply, to will preservation and advoydance of things dreadful, for which cause
one Saviour himselfe prayeth, and that often: Father, if it be possible, &c. In which
cases, corrupt natures suggestions are, for the lifetie of man overall live, not to
sticke at things exclu ding from eternall; wherein how farre even the best may
bee led, the chiefest Apostles failure teacheth. Yea it not therefore for such
cogitations, as on the contrarie side grace and faith mainteneth, such as that of
Ioa, I know God will me, that of P , Sciens certus I know him on whom
I doe relye, shall suffice would loone be able to over wheine even the best of vs.
Why (man, saith SALOMON, defy) ca plague comming, and watch thy self. It
is nature which teacheth a Wiseman, in fearc to hide himself, but grace and
faith doth teach him where. Fooles care not, where they hide their heads.
But where shall a Wiseman hide himself, when he feareth plague comming?
Where should the inspired Childe hide his head, [illegible] bolome of Iesus
ning Faith? Where a Christian, but vnder the shadow of the wings of Chris-
his Saviour? Come, my people, saith God, [illegible] Propose, enter into Christ Cham-
ber, hide thy self, &c. &c. &c. &c. &c. But because we are not like chaste Spouses,
like Doues that seeke, and cannot see the reason why's that are right before
them, therefore our Saviour giveth his Disciples a [illegible] encouragement, before-
hand, that feare might never so amaze them, by, that always they might re-
member, that whatsoever evils at any time did befall them, to him they should
fill repaire for comfort, counsell, and succour. For this is Iuraace whereof
his Peace be gone from, his Peace be [illegible] the World
offereth, by whom his name is never so much [illegible] then deepest trea-
chery is meant, but Peace which passeth all [illegible], Peace that bringeth
with it all happinesse, Peace that continueth for ever and ever with them that
have it. This Peace God the Father grant, for his Sonnes sake, unto
whom with the Holy Ghost, three Persons one Eternall,
and Ever-living God, be all honour, glorie,
and praise, now and [illegible] ever.

FINIS.

A LEARNED AND COMFORTABLE SERMON OF THE CERTAINTIE AND PERPETUITIE OF FAITH

in the Elect: especially of the Prophet Habakkuk.

Faith

Whether the Prophet Habakkuk, by alleaging this reason to prooue,
The Law doth faile, doubtedly shew himself to be vnbeleeuing.

WE haue seene in the opening of this clause, which concerneth the weaknesse of the Prophets faith, first, what things they are wherennto the faith of sound beleeuers doth assent: secondly, wherefore all men assent not thereunto: and thirdly, why they that doe, doe it many times with small assurance. Now because nothing can be so truely spoken, but through mis-vnderstanding it may be depraued: therefore to preuent, if it be possible, all misconstruction in this cause, where a small error cannot faile but with great danger, it is perhaps needfull ere we come to the fourth point, that somewhat be added to that which hath beene alreadie spoken concerning the third.

That meere naturall men doe neither know nor acknowledge the things of God, we doe not marueil, because they are spiritually to be discerned: but they in whose hearts the light of grace doth shine, they that are taught of God, why are they so weake in faith? Why is their assenting to the Law so scrupulous, so much mingled with feare and wauering? It seemeth strange that euer they should imagine the Law to faile. It cannot seeme strange if we waigh the reason. If the things which we beleeue be considered in themselues, it may truely be said, that Faith is more certaine then any Science. That which wee know either by sense, or by infallible demonstration, is not so certaine as the principles, articles, and conclusions of Christian faith. Concerning which we must note, that there is a *certaintie* of *euidence*, and a *certaintie* of *adherence*. *Certaintie* of *euidence* we cal that, when the mind doth assent vnto this or that, not because it is true in it selfe, but because the truth is cleere, because it is manifest to vs. Of things in themselues most certaine, except they be also most euident, our perswasion is not so assured, as it is of things more euident, although in themselues they be lesse certaine. It is as sure, if not surer, that there be spirits as that there be men: but wee be more assured of these then of them, because these are more euident. The truth of some things is so euident, that no man which heareth them, can doubt of them: as when we heare that *a part of any thing is lesse then the whole*, the mind is constrained to say, This is true. If it were so in matters of faith, then as all men haue equall certaintie of this, so no beleeuer should be more scrupulous and doubtfull then another. But we find

the

the contrarie. The Angels and Spirits of the righteous in heauen, haue certaintie, [illegible] by the light of glorie. That which we see by the light of grace, though it be indeed more certaine, yet is not so vnspeakably certaine, as that which sense of the light of nature will not suffer a man to doubt of. Proofes are vaine and friuolous, except they be more certaine than is the thing proued: and do we not see how the Spirit euery where in the Scripture proueth matters of faith, laboureth to confirme vs in the thing which wee beleeue, by things whereof we haue sensible knowledge? I conclude therefore that we haue lesse certaintie of euidence concerning things beleeued, then concerning sensible or naturally perceiued. Of these who doth doubt at any time? Of them at sometime who doubteth not? I will not here alledge the sundrie confessions of the perfectest, that haue liued vpon earth, concerning their great imperfections this way; which if I did, I should dwel too long vpon a matter sufficiently known by euery faithfull man that doth know himselfe.

The other which we call the *certaintie* of *adherence*, is when the heart doth cleaue and sticke vnto that which it doth beleeue. This certaintie is greater in vs then the other. The reason is this. The faith of a Christian doth apprehend the words of the Law, the promises of God, not only as true, but also as good: and therefore euen then when the euidence which he hath of the truth, is so small, that it grieueth him to feele his weakenesse in assenting thereto; yet is there in him such a sure adherence vnto that which he doth but faintly and fearefully beleeue, that his Spirit hauing once truly tasted the heauenly sweetnesse thereof, all the world is not able quite and cleane to remoue him from it; but hee striueth with himselfe to hope against all reason of beleeuing, being settled with *Iob* vpon this vnmoueable resolution, *Though God kill me, I will not giue ouer trusting in him.* For why? This lesson remaineth for euer imprinted in him, *It is good for me to cleaue vnto God*, Psal. 73.

Now the minds of all men being so darkned, as they are with the foggie dampe of originall corruption, it cannot be that any mans heart liuing should be either so enlightned in the knowledge, or so established in the loue of that wherein his saluation standeth, as to be perfect, neither doubting nor shrinking at all. If any such were, what doth let why that man should not be iustified by his owne inherent righteousnesse? For righteousnesse inherent, being perfect, will iustifie. And perfect faith is a part of perfect righteousnesse inherent; yea a principall part, the roote and the mother of all the rest: so that if the fruit of euery tree be such as the roote is, faith being perfect, as it is if it be not at all mingled with distrust and feare, what is there to exclude other Christian vertues from the like perfections? And then what need we the righteousnesse of Christ? His garment is superfluous; we may be honourably clothed with our owne Robes, if it be thus. But let them beware who challenge to themselues a strength which they haue not, lest they lose the comfortable support of that weakenesse which indeed they haue.

Some shew, although no soundnesse of ground there is, which may be alledged for defence of this supposed perfection in certaintie touching matters of our faith: as first, that *Abraham* did beleeue and doubted not: secondly, that the Spirit which God hath giuen vs to no other end, but only to assure vs

that

that we are the ſonnes of God; to imbolden vs to call vpon him as our Father, to open our eyes and to make the truth of things beleeued euident vnto our minds, is much mightier in operation then the common light of nature, whereby we diſcerne ſenſible things; wherefore we muſt needs be more ſure of that we beleeue, then of that we ſee; wee muſt needs be more certaine of the mercies of God in Chriſt Ieſus, when we are of the light of the Sunne when it ſhineth vpon our faces. To that of ABRAHAM, *He did not doubt*, I anſwer, that this *negation* doth not exclude all feare, all doubting; but only that which cannot ſtand with true faith. It freeth *Abraham* from doubting through *infidelitie*, not from doubting through *infirmitie*; from the doubting of *vnbeleeuers*, not of *weake beleeuers*; from ſuch a doubting as that whereof the Prince of Samaria is attainted, who hearing the promiſe of ſudden plentie in the middeſt of extreme dearth, anſwered, *Though the Lord would make windowes in heauen, were it poſſible ſo to come to paſſe?* But that *Abraham* was not void of all doubting, what need wee any other proofe then the plaine euidence of his owne words? *Geneſ.* 17. *v.* 17. the reaſon which is taken from the power of the Spirit were effectuall, if God did worke like a naturall Agent, as the fire doth inflame, and the Sunne inlighten, according to the vttermoſt abilitie which they haue to bring forth their effects. But the incomprehenſible wiſedome of God doth limit the effects of his power, to ſuch a meaſure as ſeemeth beſt vnto himſelfe. Wherefore he worketh that certaintie in all, which ſufficeth abundantly to their ſaluation in the life to come; but in none ſo great as attaineth in this life vnto perfection. Euen ſo, O Lord, it hath pleaſed thee, euen ſo it is beſt and fitteſt for vs, that feeling ſtill our owne infirmities, we may no longer breathe, then pray, *Adiuua Domine, Helpe, Lord, our incredulitie.* Of the third queſtion, this I hope, will ſuffice, being added vnto that which hath beene thereof alreadie ſpoken. The fourth queſtion reſteth, & ſo an end of this point.

That which commeth laſt of all in this firſt branch, to be conſidered concerning the weakneſs of the Prophets faith: *Whether he did by this very thought*, The Law doth faile, *quench the ſpirit, fall from faith, and ſhew himſelfe an vnbeleeuer or no.* The queſtion is of moment, the repoſe and tranquillitie of infinite ſoules doth depend vpon it. The Prophets caſe is the caſe of many; which way ſoeuer wee caſt for him, the ſame way it paſſeth for all others. If in him this cogitation did extinguiſh grace, why the like thoughts in vs ſhould not take the like effect, there is no cauſe. Forasmuch therefore as the matter is waightie, deare, and precious, which wee haue in hand, it behoueth vs with ſo much the greater charineſſe to wade through it, taking ſpecial heed both what we build, and whereon we build: that if our building be pearle, our foundation be not ſtubble; if the doctrine wee teach be full of comfort and conſolation, the ground whereupon we gather it be ſure: otherwiſe we ſhall not ſaue but deceiue both our ſelues and others. In this we know we are not deceiued, neither can wee deceiue you, when wee teach that the faith whereby yee are ſanctified cannot faile; it did not in the Prophet, it ſhall not in you. If it be ſo; let the difference be ſhewed betweene the condition of vnbeleeuers and his, in this or in the like imbecillitie and weakneſs. There was in *Abakkuk*, that which *S. Iohn* doth call the *ſeed of God*, meaning thereby, the *firſt grace* which God powreth into the hearts of them that are incorporated into Chriſt; which hauing

1. *King.* 7. 2.

uing receiued, if becauſe it is an aduerſarie vnto ſinne, we doe therefore thinke we ſinne not both otherwiſe, and alſo by diſtruſtfull and doubtfull apprehending of that, which we ought ſtedfaſtly to beleeue, ſurely, we doe but deceiue our ſelues. Yet they which are of God, doe not ſinne either in this, or in any thing any ſuch ſinne as doth quite extinguiſh grace, cleane cut them off from Chriſt Ieſus: becauſe the *ſeed of God* abideth in them, and doth ſhield them from receiuing any irremediable wound. Their faith when it is at ſtrongeſt is but weake; yet euen then when it is at the weakeſt, ſo ſtrong, that vtterly it neuer faileth, it neuer periſheth altogether, no not in them, who thinke it extinguiſhed in themſelues. There are, for whoſe ſakes I dare not deale ſlightly in this cauſe, ſparing that labour which muſt be beſtowed to make it plaine. Men in like agonies vnto this of the Prophet *Habakkuks*, are through extremitie of griefe many times in iudgement ſo confounded, that they find not themſelues in themſelues. For that which dwelleth in their hearts they ſeeke, they make diligent ſearch and enquirie. It abideth, it worketh in them, yet ſtill they aske where? Still they lament as for a thing which is paſt finding: they mourne as *Rachel*, and refuſe to be comforted, as if that were not, which indeed is; and as if that which is not, were; as if they did not beleeue when they doe; and as if they did deſpaire when they doe not. Which in ſome, I grant, is but a melancholy paſſion proceeding only from that deiection of mind, the cauſe whereof is in the bodie, and by bodily meanes can be taken away. But where there is no ſuch bodily cauſe, the mind is not lightly in this moode, but by ſome of theſe three occaſions. One; that iudging by compariſon either with other men or with themſelues, at ſome other time more ſtrong, they thinke imperfection to be a plaine depriuation, weakeneſſe to be vtter want of faith. Another cauſe is; they often miſtake one thing for another. Saint *Paul* wiſhing well to the Church of Rome, prayeth for them after this ſort: *The God of hope fill you with all ioy of beleeuing.* Hence an error groweth, when men in heauineſſe of ſpirit ſuppoſe they lacke faith, becauſe they find not the ſugered ioy and delight which indeed doth accompany faith, but ſo as a ſeparable accident, as a thing that may be remooued from it; yea, there is a cauſe why it ſhould be remooued. The light would neuer be ſo acceptable, were it not for that vſuall entercourſe of darkeneſſe. Too much hony doth turne to gall, and too much ioy euen ſpiritually would make vs wantons. Happier a great deale is that mans caſe, whoſe ſoule by inward deſolation is humbled, then he whoſe heart is through abundance of ſpirituall delight lifted vp, and exalted aboue meaſure. Better it is ſometimes to goe downe into the pit with him, who beholding darkneſſe, and bewailing the loſſe of inward ioy and conſolation, cryeth from the bottome of the loweſt hell, *My God, my God, why haſt thou forſaken me?* then continually to walke arme in arme with Angels, to ſit, as it were, in *Abrahams* boſome, and to haue no thought, no cogitation, but, *I thanke my God, it is not with me as it is with other men.* No; God will haue them that ſhall walke in light, to feele now and then what it is to ſit in the ſhadow of death. A grieued ſpirit therefore is no argument of a faithleſſe mind. A third occaſion of mens miſ-iudging themſelues, as if they were faithleſſe when they are not, is; They faſten their cogitations vpon the diſtruſtfull ſuggeſtions of the fleſh, whereof finding great abundance in themſelues, they gather thereby,

Surely,

Surely, vnbeliefe hath full dominion, it hath taken plenarie possession of me; if I were faithfull, it could not be thus. Not marking the motions of the Spirit and of Faith, because they lye buried and over-whelmed with the contrarie: which notwithstanding as the blessed Apostle doth acknowledge, that the *Spirit groaneth*, and that God heareth when we doe not; so there is no doubt, but that our faith may have, and hath her priuie operations secret to vs, in whom, yet knowne to him by whom they are. Tell this to a man that hath a mind deceiued by too hard an opinion of himselfe, and it doth but augment his griefe. He hath his answer readie; *Will you make me thinke otherwise then I find, when I seeke in my selfe? I have throughly considered and exquisitely sifted all the corners of my heart, and I see what there is: never seeke to perswade me against my knowledge, I doe not, I know, I doe not beleeue.* Well, to fauour them a little in their weakenesse: let that be granted which they doe imagine; be it that they are faithlesse and without beliefe. But are they not grieued for their vnbeliefe? They are. Doe they not wish it might, and also striue that it may be otherwise? We know they doe. Whence commeth this, but from a secret loue and liking which they have of those things that are beleeued? No man can loue things which in his owne opinion are not. And if they thinke those things to be, which they shew that they loue, when they desire to beleeue them; then must it needs be, that by desiring to beleeue, they proue things to be true beleeued. For without faith, no man thinketh that things beleeued are. Which argument all the subtilties of infernall powers will neuer be able to dissolue. The Faith therefore of true Beleeuers, though it haue many bad grieuous down falls, yet doth it still continue inuincible; it conquereth and ouercommeth it selfe in the end. The dangerous conflicts whereunto it is called, are not able to preuayle against it. The Prophet *Habbakuk* remained faithfull in weakenesse, though weake in faith. It is true, such is our weake and wauering nature, that we have no sooner receiued grace, but we are readie to fall from it: we have no sooner given our assent to the Law that it cannot faile, but the next conceit which we are readie to imbrace, is, that it may, and therein doth faile. Though we find in our selues a most willing heart to cleaue vnfeignedly vnto God; euen so farre as to thinke vnfainedly with Peter, *Lord, I am readie to goe with thee into Prison and to death*: yet how soone and how easily, vpon how small occasions are we changed, if we be but a while left blanke and destitute of our selues? The Galatians so dear for their sakes which receiued them the truth in Christ, content if need were to plucke out their owne eyes and giue them vnto him: and yet ready to pluck out their eyes which taught them. The loue of the Angel to the Church of Ephesus, how greatly enflamed, and how quickly slaked? The higher we flow, the neerer we are vnto an ebbe, if men be left to the instabilitie of their owne nature, according to the wonted course of their alterable inclination, without the heauenly support of the Spirit. Against the desire of our ghostly Enemie is of no credible, and his meanes so forcible to ouerthrow our faith, that whom the blessed Apostle knew to be established & made hand-fast vnto Christ, so as there should no danger ensue but with great trembling: *I am zealous ouer you with a godly iealousie, for I haue prepared you as a chaste Virgin vnto Christ: but I feare, least by any meanes, as the serpent beguiled Eue through his subtilties, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicitie which is in Christ.*

Nations

The

The simplicitie of faith which is in Christ, taketh the naked promise of God, his bare Word, and on that it resteth. This simplicitie the Serpent laboureth continually to peruert, corrupting the mind with many imaginations of repugnancie and contrarietie betweene the promise of God; and those things which sense or experience, or some other fore-conceiued perswasion hath imprinted. The Word of the promise of God vnto his people is, *I will not leaue thee, nor forsake thee*: vpon this the simplicitie of Faith resteth, and is not afraid of famine. But marke how the subtiltie of Satan did corrupt the minds of that rebellious generation, whose Spirits were not faithful vnto God. They beheld the desolate state of the Desart in which they were, and by the wisedome of their sense, concluded the promise of God to be but folly: *Can God prepare a Table in the wildernesse?* The Word of the promise to *Sara* was, *Thou shalt beare a Sonne*. Faith is simple and doubteth not of it: but Satan, to corrupt this simplicitie of faith, entangleth the mind of the Woman with an argument, drawne from common experience to the contrarie: *A woman that is old; SARA now to be acquainted againe with forgotten passion of youthe?* The Word of the promise of God by *Moses* and the Prophets, made the Sauiour of the world so apparent vnto *Philip*, that his simplicitie could conceiue no other Messias, then Iesus of Nazareth the Sonne of *Ioseph*. But to stay *Nathaniel*, left being inuited to come and see, he should also beleeue, and so be saued: the subtiltie of Satan casteth a mist before his eyes, putteth in his head against this, the common conceiued perswasion of all men concerning Nazareth, *that it possible that a good thing should come from thence?* This stratagem he doth vse with so great dexteritie, the minds of all men are so strangely enforceled with it, that it bereaueth them for the time of all perceiuation of that which should releeue them and be their comfort, yea it taketh all remembrance from them, euen of things wherewith they are most familiarly acquainted. The people of Israel could not be ignorant, that he which led them through the Sea, was able to feed him in the Desart: but this was obliterated and put out by the sense of their present want. Feeling the hand of God against them in their food, they remembred not his hand in the day that he deliuered them from the hand of the Oppressor. *Sara* was not then to learne, that *with God all things are possible*. Had *Nathaniel* neuer noted, how *God hath chosen the base things of the world to confound the things that are mightie, and abhorred*? The Prophet *Daniel* knew that the promises of grace, protection, and fauour, which God in the Law doth make vnto his people, do not grant them any such immunitie as can free and exempt them from all chastisements: the Iewes against God said, *I will continue my mercies for euer towards thee*; to the like wise said, *Their transgressions I will punish with a rod*. He knew that if sinne should be pardoned, we should set the measure of our owne punishments, and prescribe vnto God how great or how long our sufferings shall be. He knew that we were blinde, so altogether ignorant what is best for vs, as that we sue for many things very wisely against our selues, thinking we aske fish, when indeed we craue a serpent: he knew that when the thing we aske is good, & yet God seemeth slow to grant it, he doth not deny, but defer our petitions, to the end we might learne to desire great things greatly: all this he knew. But beholding the Land which God had scituated for his owne people, and seeing it abandoned vnto Heathen

Nations;

nations; viewing how reprochfully they did tread it downe, and wholly make hauock of it at their pleasure; beholding the Lords owne Royall Seate made an heape of stones, his Temple defiled, the carkases of his seruants cast out for the Fowles of the ayre to deuoure, and the flesh of his meeke ones for the beasts of the field to feed vpon; being conscious to himselfe how long and how earnestly he had cryed, *Succour vs, O God of our wel-fare, for the glorie of thine owne Name*; and feeling that their sore was still increased: the conceit of repugnancie betweene this which was obiect to his eyes, and that which faith vpon promise of the Law did looke for, made so deepe an impression and so strong, that hee disputeth not the matter, but without any further enquirie or search, inferreth as we see, *The Law doth faile*.

Of vs who is heere, which cannot very soberly aduise his Brother; Sir, you must learne to strengthen your faith by that experience which heretofore you haue had of Gods great goodnesse towards you, *per ea quæ agnouisti præstita discas sperare promissa*: By those things which you haue knowne performed, learne to hope for those things which are promised. Doe you acknowledge to haue receiued much? Let that make you certaine to receiue more. *Habenti dabitur: To him that hath, more shall be giuen.* When you doubt what you shall haue, search what you haue had at Gods hands. Make this reckoning, that the benefits which he hath bestowed, are Bils Obligatorie and sufficient Sureties that he will bestow further. His present mercie is still a warrant of his future loue, because *whom he loueth, he loueth vnto the end.* Is it not thus? Yet if wee could reckon vp as many euident, cleere, vndoubted signes of Gods reconciled loue towards vs, as there are yeeres, yea dayes, yea houres past ouer our heads; all these set together haue not such force to confirme our faith, as the losse, and sometimes the onely feare of losing a little transitorie goods, credit, honour, or fauour of men, a small calamitie, a matter of nothing to breed a conceit, and such a conceit as is not easily againe remoued; that wee are cleane crost out of Gods Booke, that he regards vs not, that he looketh vpon others, but passeth by vs like a stranger, to whom we are not knowne. Then we thinke, looking vpon others, and comparing them with our selues; their Tables are furnished day by day; earth and ashes are our bread: they sing to the Lute, and they see their children dance before them; our hearts are heauie in our bodies as lead, our sighes beat as thicke as a swift Pulse, our teares doe wash the beds wherein we lye: the Sunne shineth faire vpon their fore-heads; we are hanged vp like Bottles in the smoke, cast into corners like the sherds of a broken Pot: tell not vs of the promises of Gods fauour, tell such as doe reape the fruit of them, they belong not to vs, they are made to others: the Lord bee mercifull to our weaknes; but thus it is. Well, let the frailtie of our nature, the subtiltie of Satan, the force of our deceiuable imaginations be, as wee cannot deny but they are; things that threaten euery moment the vtter subuersion of our faith; faith notwithstanding is not hazarded by these things. That which one sometimes told the Senators of Rome, *Ego sic existimabam, P.C. vti patrem sæpe meum prædicantem audiebam, qui vestram amicitiam diligenter colerent eos multum laborem suscipere, vtterùm ex omnibus maximè vtile esse*: As I haue often heard my Father acknowledge, so I my selfe did euer thinke, that the friends and fauour-

rers of this State charged themſelues with great labour, but no mans condition ſo ſafe as theirs: the ſame we may ſay a great deale more iuſtly in this caſe: our Fathers and Prophets, our Lord and Maſter hath full often ſpoken, by long experience we haue found it true; as many as haue entred their names in the myſticall Booke of Life, *eos maximum laborem ſuſcipere*, they haue taken vpon them a labourſome, a toyleſome, a painefull profeſſion, *ſed omnium maximè tutos eſſe*, but no mans ſecuritie like to theirs. *Simon, Simon, Satan hath deſired to winnow thee as wheat*; Here is our toyle: *but I haue prayed for thee, that thy faith faile not*; this is our ſafetie. No mans condition ſo ſure as ours: the Prayer of Chriſt is more then ſufficient both to ſtrengthen vs, be wee neuer ſo weake; and to ouerthrow all aduerſarie power, be it neuer ſo ſtrong and potent. His Prayer muſt not exclude our labour: their thoughts are vaine, who thinke that their watching can preſerue the Citie which God himſelfe is not willing to keepe. And are not theirs as vaine, who thinke that God will keepe the Citie, for which they themſelues are not carefull to watch? The Huſbandman may not therefore burne his Plough, nor the Marchant forſake his Trade, becauſe God hath promiſed, *I will not forſake thee*. And doe the promiſes of God concerning our ſtabilitie, thinke you, make it a matter indifferent for vs to vſe or not to vſe the meanes whereby, to attend or not to attend to reading, to pray or not to pray that we fall not into temptation? Surely if we looke to ſtand in the faith of the Sonnes of God, we muſt hourely, continually bee prouiding and ſetting our ſelues to ſtriue. It was not the meaning of our Lord and Sauiour in ſaying, *Father, keepe them in thy Name*, that wee ſhould bee careleſſe to keepe our ſelues. To our own ſafetie, our owne ſedulitie is required. And then bleſſed for euer and euer be that Mothers child, whoſe faith hath made him the child of God. The earth may ſhake, the pillars of the World may tremble vnder vs; the countenance of the Heauen may be appaled; the Sunne may loſe his light, the Moone her beautie, the Starres their glorie: but concerning the man that truſteth in God, if the fire haue proclaimed it ſelfe vnable as much as to ſindge a haire of his head; if Lyons, Beaſts rauenous by nature, and keene with hunger, being ſet to deuoure, haue as it were religiouſly adored the very fleſh of the faithfull man, what is there in the World that ſhall change his heart, ouerthrow his faith, alter his affection towards God, or the affection of God to him? If I be of this note, who ſhall make a ſeparation betweene me and my God? Shall tribulation, or anguiſh, or perſecution, or famine, or nakednеſſe, or perill, or ſword? No; I am perſwaded that neither tribulation, nor anguiſh, nor perſecution, nor famine, nor nakednеſſe, nor perill nor ſword, nor death, nor life, nor Angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things preſent, nor things to come, nor height nor depth, nor any other creature ſhall euer preuaile ſo far ouer me, I know in whom I haue beleeued; I am not ignorant whoſe precious blood hath beene ſhed for me; I haue a Shepheard full of kindneſſe, full of care, and full of power: vnto him I commit my ſelfe; his owne finger hath engraued this ſentence in the Tables of my heart, *Satan hath deſired to winnow thee as wheat, but I haue prayed that thy faith faile not*. Therefore the aſſurance of my hope I will labor to keepe as a Iewell vnto the end, and by labor, through the gracious mediation of his Prayer, I ſhall keepe it.

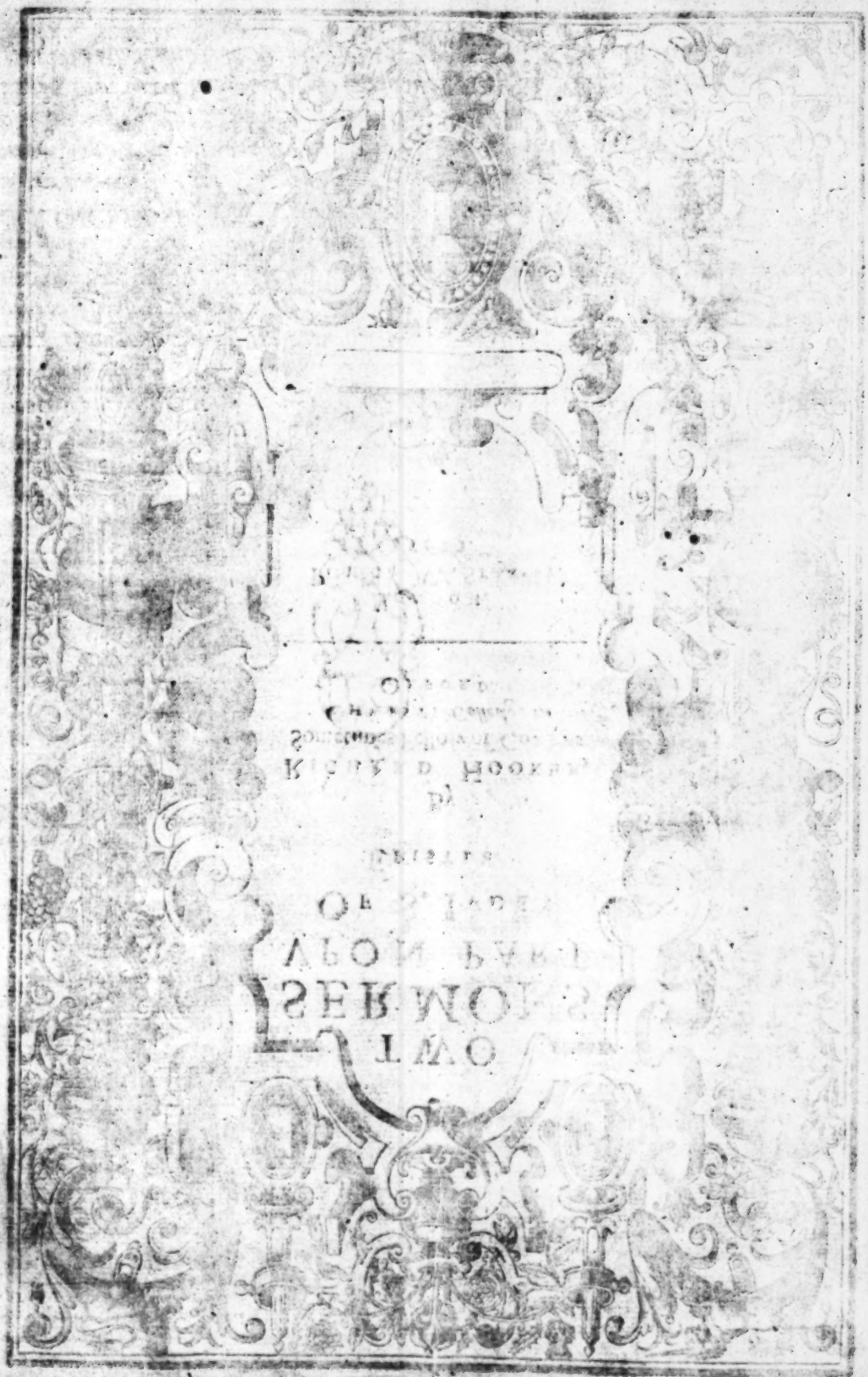
FINIS.

TWO SERMONS VPON PART OF S. IVDES EPISTLE.

By

RICHARD HOOKER,
Sometimes Fellow of CORPVS CHRISTI *Colledge in* OXFORD.

LONDON,
Printed by W. STANSBY.
1622.



TO THE WORSHIPFVLL

M. GEORGE SYMMASTER, Principall of Broad-Gates Hall in Oxford,

HARRY LACKSON wisheth all happinesse.

YOur kind acceptance of a former testification of that respect I owe you, hath made mee venture to shew the World these godly Sermons vnder your name. In which, as euerie point is worth obseruation, so some especially are to be noted. The first, that as the Spirit of Prophecie is from God himselfe, who doth inwardly heat and enlighten the hearts and mindes of his holy Pen-men, (which if some would diligently consider, they would not puzzle themselues with the contentions of SCOT, *and* THOMAS, Whether God onely, or his ministring Spirits, doe infuse into mens mindes Propheticall Reuelations, *per species intelligibiles*) *so God framed their words also, whence the holy Father* [a] *Saint* AVGVSTINE *religiously obserueth, That all those which vnderstand the sacred Writers, will also perceiue, that they ought not to vse other words, then they did, in expressing those heauenly Mysteries which their hearts* conceiued, *as the* Blessed Virgin *did our Saiour,* By the Holy Ghost. *The greater is* CASTELLIO *his offence, who hath laboured to teach the Prophets to speake otherwise, then they haue alreadie. Much like to that impious King of Spaine,* ALPHONSVS *the tenth, who found fault with Gods Workes,* [b] *Si, inquit,* creationi affuissem, mundum melius ordinassem, *If hee had beene with God at the Creation of World, the World had gone better, then now it doth. As this man found fault with Gods Workes, so did the other with Gods words. But because we haue a* [c] *most sure*

[a] *Lib.4.cap.6. de doct. Chr.*

[b] *Rob. Tolet. lib.4 cap.5.*

[c] *2.Pet.1.*

word of the Prophets, to which we must take heed. I will let his words passe with the wind, hauing [d] elsewhere spoken to you more largely of his Errours, whom notwithstanding, for his other excellent parts, I much respect.

[d] Pref. in Orat. D. Rainold.

You shall moreouer from hence vnderstand, how Christianitie consists not in formall and seeming puritie (vnder which, who knowes not notorious villanie to maske?) but in the heart-roote. Whence the Authour truly teacheth, that Mockers, which vse Religion as a Cloake, to put off and on, as the Weather serueth, are worse then Pagans and Infidels. Where I cannot omit to shew, how iustly this kind of men hath beene reproued by that renowmed Martyr of Iesus Christ, B. Latimer; both because it will bee opposite to this purpose, and also free that Christian Worthie from the slanderous reproches of [e] him, who was, if euer any, a Mocker of God, Religion, and all good men. But first I must desire you, and in you all Readers, not to thinke lightly of that excellent man, for vsing of this and the like vittie Similitudes in his Sermons: for whosoeuer will call to mind, with what riff-raff Gods people were fedde in those dayes, when their Priests, [e] whose lips should haue preserued knowledge, preached nothing else but Dreames, and false Miracles of counterfeit Saints, enrolled in that [f] fatuish Legend, toyed and amplified by a drowsie head, betweene sleeping and waking. He that will consider this, and also how the people were delighted with such toyes (God sending them strong Delusions, that they should beleeue lyes) and how hard it would haue beene for any man, wholly, and vpon the suddayne, to draw their minds to another bent: will easily perceiue, both how necessary it was to vse Symbolicall Discourse, and how wisely and moderately it was applyed by that Religious Father, to the end hee might lead their vnderstanding so farre, till it were so conuinced, informed, and setled, that it might forget the meanes and way, by which it was led, and thinke onely of that it had acquired. For in all such mysticall speeches, who knowes not, that the end for which they are vsed, is onely to bee thought vpon?

[e] Parsons in 3. conuers.

e Malac. 2. 7.

[f] Canus loc. lib. 11. cap. 6. Viues lib. 2. de corrupt. art. Hard. lib. 4.

This then being first considered, let vs heare the Storie, as it is related by Master FOX: Master LATIMER ([g] saith he) in his Sermon gaue the people certaine Cards out of the fift, sixt, and seuenth Chapters of Saint *Matthew*. For the chiefe Triumph in the Cards, hee limitted the Hart; as the principall thing that they should serue God withall, whereby hee quite ouerthrew all

[g] Pag. 1903. edit. 1570.

all hypocriticall and externall Ceremonies, not tending to the neceſſarie furtherance of Gods holy Word and Sacraments. By this hee exhorted all men to ſerue the Lord with inward heart and true affection, and not with outward Ceremonies, adding moreouer to the praiſe of that Triumph, that though it were neuer ſo ſmall, yet it would take vp the beſt Coat-Card beſide in the Bunch, yea, though it were the King of Clubbes, &c. meaning thereby, how the Lord would be worſhipped and ſerued in ſimplicitie of the heart, and veritie, wherein conſiſteth true Chriſtian Religion, &c. *Thus Maſter* FOX.

By which it appeares, that the holy mans intention was to lift vp the peoples hearts to God, and not that he made a Sermon of playing at Cards, and taught them how to play at Triumph, and played (*himſelfe*) at Cards in the Pulpit, *as that baſe Companion* [h] Parſons *reports the matter, in his vented ſcurrilous vaine of Railing, whence hee calleth it a* [i] Chriſtmaſſe Sermon. *Now he that will thinke ill of ſuch Alluſions, may out of the abundance of his folly, ieſt at* Demoſthenes, *for his ſtorie of the* [k] *Sheepe, Wolues, and Dogges, and at* [l] Menenius, *for his fiction of the Belly. But hinc illæ lachrymæ; The good Biſhop meant, that the Romiſh Religion came not from the* heart, *but conſiſted in outward Ceremonies: Which ſorely grieued* Parſons, *who neuer had the leaſt warmth or ſparke of honeſtie. Whether Biſhop* Latimer *compared the Biſhops to the* Knaues *of* Clubbes, *as the fellow interprets him, I know not: I am ſure* Parſons, *of all others, deſerued thoſe Colours; and ſo I leaue him.*

Wee ſee then, what inward puritie is required of all Chriſtians, which if they haue, then in prayer, and all other Chriſtian duties, they ſhall lift vp pure hands, *as the* [m] *Apoſtle ſpeakes, not as* [n] Baronius *would haue it*, waſhed from ſinnes with holy water, *but* pure, *that is*, holy, *free from the pollution of ſinne, as the Greeke word* [illegible] *doth ſignifie.*

You may alſo ſee here refuted thoſe Calumnies of the Papiſts, that wee abandon all Religious Rites, and godly Duties, as alſo the confirmation of our Doctrine touching certainetie of Faith (and ſo of Saluation) which is ſo ſtrongly denied by ſome of that Faction, that they haue told the world, [o] S. PAVL himſelfe was vncertaine of his owne ſaluation. *What then ſhall wee ſay, but pronounce a* woe

to

h In the third part of 3. conuerſions of England: in the Examin. of *Foxes* Saints, cap. 14. §. 53. 54. p. 215.

i *Sect.* 55.

k *Plut. in Demoſthen.*

l *Liu. Dec. 1. lib. 2. an V.C. 60*

m 1. Tim. 2. 8.

n *Annal. to. 1. An. 57. n. 109. 110. & to 2. An. 132. num. 5*

o S. Paulus de ſua ſalute incert'. Richeom. Ieſuit. l. 2. c. 12. Idololat. Hugon. pag. 119. in marg. edit. lat. Mogunt. 1613. inter ref. Marcel. Iam. dr. Ieſuitâ.

to the most strict obseruers of Saint Francis *Rule, and his Canonicall Discipline (though they make him euen* p *equall with Christ) and the most meritorious Monke that euer was registred in their Kalender of Saints? But wee for our comfort are otherwise taught out of the holy Scripture, and therefore exhorted to* build *our selues in our most holy faith, that so, when our* q *earthly house of this Tabernacle shall be destroyed, we may haue a building giuen of God, a house not made with hands, but eternall in the Heauens.*

This is that, which is most pieusly and feelingly taught in these few leaues, so that you shall read nothing here, but what, I perswade my selfe, you haue long practised in the constant course of your life.

It remaineth onely, that you accept of these labours tendered to you by him, who wisheth you the long ioyes of this world, and the eternall of that which is to come.

Oxon. from Corp. Christi Colledge, this 13. of Ianuarie, 1613.

p *Witnesse the verses of* Horatius *a Iesuite, recited by Possev. Biblioth. Select. part. 2. l. 17. c. 19* Exue Franciscum tunicâ, laceroq; cucullo, Qui Franciscus erat, iam tibi Christus erit. Francisci exuvijs (si qua licet) indue Christum, Iam Franciscus erit, qui modo Christus erat. *The like hath* Bencius, *another Iesuite.*

q 2. Cor. 5. 1.

TWO SERMONS VPON PART OF S. IVDES EPISTLE.

THE FIRST SERMON.

EPIST. IVDE, VERS. 17, 18, 19, 20, 21.

But ye, beloued, remember the words which were spoken before of the Apostles of our Lord Iesus Christ;

How that they told you, that there should be mockers in the last time, which should walke after their owne vngodly lusts.

These are makers of diuision, sensuall, hauing not the Spirit.

But ye, beloued, edifie your selues in your most holy faith, praying in the Holy Ghost.

And keepe your selues in the loue of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Iesus Christ, vnto eternall life.



His occasions whereupon, together with the end wherefore, this Epistle was written, is opened in the front and entrie of the same. There were then, as there are now, many euill and wicked-ly disposed persons, not of the mysticall bodie, yet within the visible bounds of the Church, men which were of old ordained to condemnation, vngodly men, which turned the grace of our God into wantonnesse, and denied the Lord Iesus. For this cause the Spirit of the Lord is in the hand of *Iude*, the seruant of Iesus, and brother of *Iames*, to exhort them that are called, and sanctified of God the Father, that they would earnestly contend to maintaine the faith, which was once deliuered vnto the Saints. Which faith because we cannot maintaine, except we know perfectly, first, against whom, secondly, in what sort it must be maintained; therefore in the former three verses of that parcell of Scripture which I haue read, the enemies of the Crosse of Christ are plainely described; and in the later two, they that loue the Lord Iesus, haue a sweet Lesson giuen them, how to strengthen and stablish themselues in the faith. Let vs first therefore examine the description of these reprobates, concerning

faith;

faith; and afterwards come to the words of the exhortation, wherein Christians are taught how to rest their hearts on Gods eternall and euerliuing Truth. The description of these godlesse persons is two-fold, *Generall* and *Speciall*. The *generall* doth point them out, and shew what manner of men they should be. The *particular* pointeth at them, and saith plainly, These are they. In the *generall* description we haue to consider of these things. *First*, when they were described, *they were told of before*. *Secondly*, the men by whom they were described, *They were spoken of by the Apostles of our Lord Iesus Christ*. *Thirdly*, the dayes when they should be manifested vnto the world, they told you they *should be in the last time*. *Fourthly*, their disposition and whole demeanure, *mockers and walkers after their owne vngodly lusts*.

2 In the third to the Philippians, the Apostle describeth certaine. *They are men* (saith he) *of whom I haue told you often, and now with teares I tell you of them, their God is their belly, their glorying and reioycing is in their owne shame, they mind earthly things*.

These were enemies of the Crosse of Christ, enemies whom he saw, and his eyes gusht out with teares to behold them. But we are taught in this place how the Apostles spake also of enemies, whom as yet they had not seene, described a family of men as yet vnheard of, a generation reserued for the end of the world, and for the last time, they had not onely declared what they heard and saw in the dayes wherein they lived, but they haue propheciedalso of men in time to come. And *you doe well* (saith S. Peter) *in that yee take heed to the words of Prophecie, so that yee first know this, that no Prophecie in the Scripture commeth of any mans owne resolution*. No prophcie in Scripture commeth of any mans owne resolution. For all prophecie, which is in Scripture, came by the secret inspiration of God. But there are prophecies which are no Scripture, yea, there are prophecies against the Scripture: by brethren, beware of such prophecies, and take heed you heed them not. Remember the things that were spoken of before; but spoken of before by the Apostles of our Lord and Sauiour Iesus Christ. Take heed to prophecies, but to prophecies which are in Scripture: For both the manner and the matter of those prophecies doe shew plainely, that they are of God.

Of the spirit of Prophecie receiued from God himselfe.

3 Touching the manner, how men by the spirit of prophecie in holy Scripture haue spoken and written of things to come, we must vnderstand, that as the knowledge of that they spake, so likewise the vtterance of that they knew, came not by these vsuall and ordinarie meanes, whereby wee are brought to vnderstand the mysteries of our saluation, and are wont to instruct others in the same. For whatsoeuer we know, we haue it by the hands and ministerie of men, which lead vs along like children, from a letter to a syllable, from a syllable to a word, from a word to a line, from a line to a sentence, from a sentence to a side, and so turne ouer. But God himselfe was their instructor, he himselfe taught them, partly by Dreames and Visions in the night, partly by Reuelations in the day, taking them aside from amongst their brethren, and talking with them, as a man would talke with his neighbour in the way. Thus they became acquainted euen with the secret and hidden counsels of God. They saw things, which themselues were not able

able to vtter, they beheld that whereat men and Angels are astonished. They vnderstood in the beginning, what should come to passe in the last dayes.

4 God, which lightned thus the eyes of their vnderstanding, giuing them knowledge by vnusuall and extraordinarie meanes, did also miraculously himselfe frame and fashion their words and writings, in so much that a greater difference there seemeth not to be betweene the manner of their knowledge, then there is betweene the manner of their speech and ours. When we haue conceiued a thing in our hearts, and throughly vnderstand it, as we thinke within our selues, ere we can vtter it in such sort that our brethren may receiue instruction or comfort at our mouthes, how great, how long, how earnest meditation are we forced to vse? And after much trauaile, and much paines, when we open our lips to speake of the wonderfull works of God, our tongues doe faulter within our mouthes, yea many times we disgrace the dreadfull mysteries of our faith, and grieue the spirit of our hearers by words vnsauory, and vnseemely speeches. *Shall a wise man fill his belly with the Easterne wind*, saith *Eliphaz*, *shall a wise man dispute with words not comely? or with talke that is not profitable?* Yet behold, euen they that are wisest amongst vs liuing, compared with the Prophets, seeme no otherwise to talke of God, then as if the children which are carried in armes, should speake of the greatest matters of state. They whose words doe most shew forth their wise vnderstanding, and whose lips doe vtter the purest knowledge, so long as they vnderstand and speake as men, are they not faine sundrie wayes to excuse themselues? Sometimes acknowledging with the wise man, *Hardly can we discern the things that are on earth, and with great labour find we out the things that are before vs; who can then seeke out the things that are in heauen?* Sometimes confessing with *Iob* the righteous, intreating of things too wonderfull for vs, we haue spoken we wist not what. Sometimes ending their talke, as doth the Historie of the Macchabees, If we haue done well, and as the cause required, it is that we desire, if we haue spoken slenderly and barely, we haue done what we could. But *God hath made my mouth like a sword*, saith *Esay*. And *we haue receiued*, saith the Apostle, *not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is of God, that we might know the things which are giuen to vs of God, which things also we speake, not in words, which mans wisdome teacheth, but which the holy Ghost doth teach.* This is that which the Prophets meane by those bookes written full within, and without; which bookes were so often deliuered them to eate, not because God fed them with inke, and paper, but to teach vs, that so oft as he imployed them in this heauenly worke, they neither spake nor wrote any word of their owne, but vttered sillable by sillable as the Spirit put it into their mouthes, no otherwise then the Harpe or the Lute doth giue a sound according to the discretion of his hands that holdeth and striketh it with skill. The difference is onely this: An Instrument, whether it be a Pipe or Harpe, maketh a distinction in the Times and Sounds, which distinction is well perceiued of the hearer, the Instrument it selfe vnderstanding not what is Piped or Harped. The Prophets and holy men of God not so. *I opened my mouth*, saith *Ezechiel*, and *God reached me a scroule, saying, Sonne of man, cause thy belly to eat, and fill thy bowels with this I giue thee. I ate it, & it was sweet in my mouth as hony*, saith

Of the Prophets manner of speech.

Iob 15. 2, 3.

Wisd. 9. 16.

Esay 49. 2.

Ezech. 3. 1, 2.

ſaith the Prophet. Yea ſweeter, I am perſwaded, then either hony, or the hony-combe. For herein they were not like Harps or Lutes, but they felt, they felt the power and ſtrength of their owne words. When they ſpake of our peace, euery corner of their hearts, was filled with ioy. When they prophecied of mournings, lamentations, and woes, to fall vpon vs, they wept in the bitterneſſe and indignation of ſpirit, the arme of the Lord being mighty and ſtrong vpon them.

5 On this manner were all the prophecies of holy Scripture. Which Prophecies, although they containe nothing which is not profitable for our inſtruction, yet as one ſtarre differeth from another in glory, ſo euery word of prophecie hath a treaſure of matter in it, but all matters are not of like importance, as all treaſures are not of equall price. The chiefe and principall matter of prophecie is the promiſe of righteouſneſſe, peace, holineſſe, glory, victory, immortalitie, vnto euery Soule which beleeueth that Ieſus is Chriſt, of the *Iew* firſt, and of the *Gentile*. Now becauſe the doctrine of Saluation to be looked for by Faith in him, who was in outward appearance as it had beene a man forſaken of God, in him who was numbred, iudged, and condemned with the wicked, in him whom men did ſee buffetted on the face, ſcoft at by Souldiers, ſcourged by tormentors, hanged on the Croſſe, pearced to the heart, in him whom the eyes of many witneſſes did behold, when the anguiſh of his ſoule enforced him to roare as if his heart had rent in ſunder, *O my God, my God, why haſt thou forſaken me?* I ſay, becauſe the doctrine of ſaluation by Him, is a thing improbable to a naturall man, that whether wee preach it to the Gentile, or to the Iew, the one condemneth our faith as madnes, the other as blaſphemie, therefore to eſtabliſh and confirme the certaintie of this ſaving Truth in the hearts of men; the Lord together, with their preachings, whom hee ſent immediately from himſelfe, to reueale theſe things vnto the world, mingled prophecies of things both Ciuill and Eccleſiaſticall, which were to come in euery age from time to time, till the very laſt of the latter dayes, that by thoſe things, wherein wee ſee daily their words fulfilled and done, wee might haue ſtrong conſolation in the hope of things which are not ſeene, becauſe they haue reuealed as well the one as the other. For when many things are ſpoken of before in Scripture, whereof we ſee firſt one thing accompliſhed, and then another, and ſo a third, perceiue we not plainely, that God doth nothing elſe but lead vs along by the hand, till hee haue ſettled vs vpon the Rocke of an aſſured hope, that no one iot or tittle of his Word ſhall paſſe till all be fulfilled? It is not therefore ſaid in vaine, that theſe godleſſe wicked ones *were ſpoken of before*.

6 But by whom? By them whoſe words, if men or Angels from heauen gaineſay, they are accurſed; by them, whom whoſoeuer deſpiſeth, deſpiſeth not them, but me, ſaith Chriſt. If any man therefore doth loue the Lord Ieſus (and woe worth him that loueth not the Lord Ieſus!) hereby we may know that he loueth him indeed, if he deſpiſe not the things that are ſpoken of by his Apoſtles; whom many haue deſpiſed euen for the baſeneſſe and ſimpleneſſe of their perſons. For it is the propertie of fleſhly and carnall men, to honour, and diſhonour, credit, and diſcredit the words and deeds of euery man,

A naturall man perceiueth not heauenly things.

man according to that he wanteth or hath without. If a man with gorgeous apparell come amongſt vs, although he be a Thiefe or a Murtherer (for there are Theeues and Murtherers in gorgeous apparell) bee his heart whatſoeuer, if his Coat be of Purple, or Veluet, or Tiſſue, euery one riſeth vp, and all the reuerent Solemnities we can vſe, are too little. But the man that ſerueth God, is contemned and deſpiſed amongſt vs for his pouertie. *Herod* ſpeaketh in Iudgement, and the people cry out, *The voice of God, and not of man. Paul* preacheth Chriſt, they tearme him a trifler. Hearken, beloued: hath not God choſen the poore of this World, that they ſhould be rich in faith? Hath hee not choſen the refuſe of the World to bee heires of his Kingdome, which hee hath promiſed to them that loue him? Hath he not choſen the off-ſcowrings of men to be the Lights of the World, and the Apoſtles of Ieſus Chriſt? Men vnlearned, yet how fully repleniſhed with vnderſtanding? few in number, yet how great in power? contemptible in ſhew, yet in Spirit how ſtrong? how wonderfull? *I would faine learne the myſterie of the eternall generation of the Sonne of God*, ſaith *Hilarie*. Whom ſhall I ſeeke? Shall I get me to the Schooles of the *Gracians*? Why? I haue read, *Vbi ſapiens? vbi Scriba? vbi Conquiſitor huius ſeculi?* Theſe Wiſemen in the World muſt needs be dumbe in this, becauſe they haue reiected the Wiſdome of God. Shall I beſeech the Scribes and Interpreters of the Law, to become my Teachers? how can they know this, ſith they are offended at the Croſſe of Chriſt? It is death for me to be ignorant of the vnſearchable myſterie of the Sonne of God: of which myſterie notwithſtanding I ſhould haue beene ignorant, but that a poore Fiſherman, vnknowne, vnlearned, new come from his Boat with his clothes wringing wet, hath opened his mouth and taught me, *In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.* Theſe poore ſillie creatures haue made vs rich in the knowledge of the myſteries of Chriſt.

Iam. 2. Acts 12. Acts 17.

7 Remember therefore that which is ſpoken of by the Apoſtles. Whoſe words if the Children of this World doe not regard, is it any maruaile? They are the Apoſtles of our Lord Ieſus; not of their Lord, but of our. It is true which one hath ſaid in a certaine place, *Apoſtolicam fidem ſeculi homo non capit*, A man ſworne to the World, is not capeable of that Faith which the Apoſtles doe teach. What meane the Children of this World then to tread in the courts of our God? What ſhould your bodies doe at *Bethel*, whoſe hearts are at *Bethauen*? The god of this World, whom ye ſerue, hath prouided apoſtles and teachers for you, *Chaldeans, Wiſards, Southſayers, Aſtrologers*, and ſuch like: Heare them. Tell not vs that yee will ſacrifice to the Lord our God, if wee will ſacrifice to *Aſtereth* or *Melcom*; that ye will reade our Scriptures, if wee will liſten to your Traditions; that if yee may haue a Maſſe by permiſſion, wee ſhall haue a Communion with good leaue and liking; that yee will admit the things that are ſpoken of by the Apoſtles of our Lord Ieſus, if your Lord and Maſter may haue his ordinances obſerued, and his Statutes kept. *Salomon* tooke it (as well he might) for an euident proofe, that ſhe did not beare a motherly affection to her Child, which yeelded to haue it cut in diuers parts. Hee cannot loue the Lord Ieſus with his heart, which lendeth one eare to his Apoſtles, and another to falſe apoſtles: which can brooke to ſee a mingle-

We muſt not halt betweene two Opinions.

mangle of Religion and Superſtition, Miniſters and Maſſing Prieſts, Light and Darkneſſe, Truth and Error, Traditions and Scriptures. No; we haue no Lord but Ieſus; no Doctrine, but the Goſpell; no Teachers, but his Apoſtles. Were it reaſon to require at the hands of an Engliſh ſubiect, obedience to the Lawes and Edicts of the Spaniard? I doe marueil, that any man bearing the name of a Seruant of the Seruants of Ieſus Chriſt, will goe about to draw vs from our Allegeance. We are His ſworne Subiects; it is not lawfull for vs to heare the things that are not told vs by his Apoſtles. They haue told vs, that in the laſt dayes there ſhall be Mockers; therefore we beleeue it; *Credimus quia legimus*, We are ſo perſwaded, becauſe we reade it muſt be ſo. If we did not reade it, we would not teach it: *Nam quæ libro Legis non continentur, ea nec noſſe debemus*, ſaith *Hilarie*: Thoſe things that are not written in the Booke of the Law, wee ought not ſo much as to be acquainted with them. *Remember the words which were ſpoken of before of the Apoſtles of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt.*

Mockers in the laſt time.

8 The third thing to bee conſidered in the deſcription of theſe men of whom we ſpeake, is the time, wherein they ſhould be manifeſted to the World. They told you, there ſhould be mockers in the laſt time. *Noah* at the commandement of God, built an Arke, and there were in it beaſts of all ſorts, cleane and vncleane. A Huſbandman planteth a Vineyard, and looketh for Grapes, but when they come to the gathering, behold, together with Grapes there are found alſo wilde Grapes. A rich man prepareth a great Supper, and biddeth many, but when he ſitteth him downe, he findeth amongſt his friends here and there a man whom he knoweth not. This hath beene the ſtate of the Church fithence the beginning. God alwayes hath mingled his Saints with faithleſſe and godleſſe perſons; as it were the cleane with the vncleane, Grapes with ſowre Grapes, his friends and children with aliens and ſtrangers. Marueil not then, if in the laſt dayes alſo yee ſee the men, with whom you liue & walke arme in arme, laugh at your Religion, and blaſpheme that glorious Name, whereof you are called. Thus it was in the dayes of the Patriarkes and Prophets; and are we better then our Fathers? Albeit we ſuppoſe, that the bleſſed Apoſtles, in foreſhewing what manner of men were ſet out for the laſt dayes, meant to note a calamitie ſpeciall and peculiar to the Ages and Generations which were to come. As if he ſhould haue ſaid; As God hath appointed a time of Seed for the Sower, and a time of harueſt for him that reapeth, as he hath giuen vnto euery herbe and euery tree his owne fruit, and his owne ſeaſon, not the ſeaſon nor the fruit of another (for no man looketh to gather figges in the Winter, becauſe the Summer is the ſeaſon for them, nor Grapes of Thiſtles, becauſe Grapes are the fruit of the Vine) ſo the ſame God hath appointed ſundry for euery Generation of men, other men for other times, and for the laſt times the worſt men, as may appeare by their properties, which is the fourth point to be conſidered of in this deſcription.

Mockers.

9 They told you, that there ſhould be *Mockers*. He meaneth men that ſhal vſe Religion as a cloke, to put off, and on, as the weather ſerueth; ſuch as ſhall with *Herod* heare the preaching of *Iohn Baptiſt* to day, and to morrow condeſcend to haue him beheaded; or with the other *Herod* ſay, they will worſhip Chriſt, when they purpoſe a maſſacre in their hearts; kiſſe Chriſt with *Iudas*, and

and betray Christ with *Iudas*. These are Mockers. For as *Ishmael* the sonne of *Hagar* laughed at *Isaak*, which was heire of the promise; so shall these men laugh at you as the maddest people vnder the Sunne, if yee be like *Moses*, choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, then to enioy the pleasures of sinne for a season. And why? God hath not giuen them eyes to see, nor hearts to conceiue that exceeding recompence of your reward. The promises of saluation made to you are matters wherein they can take no pleasure, euen as *Ishmael* tooke no pleasure in that promise, wherein God hath said vnto *Abraham*, *In Isaak shall thy seed be called*, because the promise concerned not him, but *Isaak*. They are tearmed for their impietie towards God, *mockers*, and for the impuritie of their life and conuersation, *walkers after their own vngodly lusts*. S. *Peter* in his second Epistle and third Chapter soundeth the verie depth of their impietie: shewing *first*, how they shall not shame at the length to professe themselues prophane, and irreligious, by flat denying the Gospell of Iesus Christ, and deriding the sweet and comfortable promises of his appearing; *secondly*, that they shall not be only deriders of all religion, but also Disputers against God, vsing Truth to subuert the Truth; yea Scriptures themselues to disproue Scriptures. Being in this sort *mockers*, they must needes bee also followers of *their owne vngodly lusts*. Being Atheists in perswasion, can they choose but be beasts in conuersation? For why remooue they quite from them the feare of God? Why take they such paines to abandon and put out from their hearts all sense, all taste, all feeling of Religion? but only to this end and purpose, that they may without inward remorse and grudging of conscience giue ouer themselues to all vncleanesse. Surely the state of these men is more lamentable, then is the condition of Pagans and Turkes. For at the bare beholding of Heauen and Earth, the Infidels heart by and by doth giue him, that there is an eternall, infinite, immortall, and euer-liuing God; whose hands haue fashioned and framed the World; hee knoweth that euery house is builded of some man, though hee see not the man which built the house, and hee considereth, that it must bee God which hath built and created all things; although because the number of his dayes bee few, hee could not see when God disposed his workes of old, when he caused the light of his cloudes first to shine, when he laid the corner stone of the earth, and swadled it with bands of water and darknesse, when he caused the morning starre to know his place, and made barres and doores to shut vp the Sea within his house, saying, *Hitherto shalt thou come, but no farther*: he hath no eye-witnesse of these things. Yet the light of naturall reason hath put this wisedome in his reines, and hath giuen his heart thus much vnderstanding. Bring a Pagan to the Schooles of the Prophets of God; propheſie to an Infidell, rebuke him; lay the iudgements of God before him, make the secret sinnes of his heart manifest, and he shall fall downe and worship God. They that crucified the Lord of Glorie, were not so far past recouery, but that the preaching of the Apostles was able to moue their hearts and to bring them to this, *Men and brethren, what shall we do?* *Agrippa*, that sate in iudgement against *Paul* for preaching, yeelded notwithstanding thus farre vnto him, *Almost thou perswadest me to become a Christian*. Although the Iewes for want of knowledge haue not submitted them-

Mockers worse then Pagans, and Infidels.

Acts 2.

Acts 26.

selues to the righteousnesse of God; yet I beare them record, saith the Apostle, *that they haue a zeale.* The *Athenians*, a people hauing neither Zeale, nor knowledge, yet of them also the same Apostle beareth witnesse, *Yee men of Athens, I perceiue yee are superstitious*, some way religious, but Mockers, walking after their owne vngodly lusts, they haue smothered euery sparke of that heauenly Light, they haue stifled euen their very naturall vnderstanding. O Lord, thy mercie is ouer all thy workes, thou saueſt Man and Beast! yet a happie case it had beene for these men if they had neuer beene borne: and so I leaue them. *But certainly not in a very enuiable plight.* S. M.

Rom. 10.

10 S. *Iude* hauing his minde exercised in the doctrine of the Apostles of Iesus Christ, concerning things to come in the last time, became a man of a wise and staid iudgement. *Grieued* he was, to see the departure of many, and their falling away from the faith, which before they did professe: *grieued*, but not *dismayed*. With the simpler and weaker sort it was otherwise: Their countenance began by and by to change, they were halfe in doubt they had deceiued themselues in giuing credit to the Gospell of Iesus Christ. S. *Iude*, to comfort and refresh these silly Lambes, taketh them vp in his armes, and sheweth them the men at whom they were offended. Looke vpon them that forsake this blessed Profession wherein you stand: They are now before your eyes; view them, marke them, are they not carnall? are they not like to noysome carrion cast out vpon the earth? is there that Spirit in them which cryeth *Abba* Father in your bosomes? Why should any man be discomforted? Haue you not heard that there should be *mockers* in the last time? These verily are they, that now doe separate themselues.

Iudas *vir sapiens & certi iudicij.*

11 For your better vnderstanding, what this seuering and separating of themselues doth meane, wee must know, that the multitude of them which truly beleeue (howsoeuer they bee dispersed farre and wide each from other) is all *one bodie*, whereof the Head is Christ, *one building*, whereof he is the Corner Stone, in whom they as the members of the bodie being knit, and as the stones of the building, being coupled, grow vp to a man of perfect stature, and rise to an holy Temple in the Lord. That which linketh Christ to vs, is his meere mercie and loue towards vs. That which tyeth vs to him, is our faith in the promised saluation reuealed in the Word of truth. That which vniteth and ioyneth vs amongst our selues, in such sort that wee are now as if wee had but one heart and one soule, is our loue. Who bee inwardly in heart the liuely members of this body, and the polished stones of this building, coupled and ioyned to Christ, as flesh of his flesh, and bones of his bones, by the mutuall bond of his vnspeakeable loue towards them, and their vnfayned faith in him, thus linked and fastned each to other by a spirituall, sincere, and hearty affection of loue, without any manner of simulation, who be Iewes within, and what their names be, none can tell, saue he whose eyes doe behold the secret disposition of all mens hearts. Wee, whose eyes are too dimme to behold the inward man, must leaue the secret iudgement of euery seruant to his owne Lord, accounting and vsing all men as brethren both neere and deare vnto vs, supposing Christ to loue them tenderly, so as they keepe the profession of the Gospell, and ioyne in the outward Communion of Saints. Whereof the one doth

doth warrantize vnto vs their faith, the other their loue, till they fall away, and forsake either the one, or the other, or both; and then it is no iniurie to terme them as they are. When they separate themselues, they are *διστασιαστοὶ* not iudged by vs, but by their owne doings. Men doe separate themselues eyther by Hereſie, Schiſme, or Apoſtaſie. If they looſe the bond of faith, which then they are iuſtly ſuppoſed to doe, when they frowardly oppugne any principall point of Chriſtian doctrine, this is to ſeparate themſelues by *Hereſie*, If they breake the bond of vnitie, whereby the bodie of the Church is coupled and knit in one, as they doe, which wilfully forſake all externall communion with Saints in holy exerciſes purely and orderly eſtabliſhed in the Church, this is to ſeparate themſelues by *Schiſme*. If they willingly caſt off, and vtterly forſake both profeſſion of Chriſt, and communion with Chriſtians, taking their leaue of all Religion, this is to ſeparate themſelues by plaine *Apoſtaſie*. And Saint *Iude*, to expreſſe the manner of their departure, which by *Apoſtaſie* fell away from the Faith of Chriſt, ſaith, they ſeparated themſelues: noting thereby, that it was not conſtraint of others, which forced them to depart, it was not infirmitie and weakneſſe in themſelues, it was not feare of perſecution to come vpon them, whereat their hearts did faile; it was not griefe of torments, whereof they had taſted, and were not able any longer to endure them. No, they voluntarily did ſeparate themſelues with a fully ſettled and altogether determined purpoſe neuer to name the Lord Ieſus any more, nor to haue any fellowſhip with his Saints, but to bend all their counſell and all their ſtrength to raze out their memoriall from amongſt men.

Three-fold Separation.
1. Hereſie.
2. Schiſme.
3. Apoſtaſie.

12 Now becauſe that by ſuch examples, not only the hearts of Infidels were hardened againſt the Truth, but the minds of weake Brethren alſo much troubled, the Holy Ghoſt hath giuen ſentence of theſe back-ſliders, that they were carnall men, and had not the Spirit of Chriſt Ieſus, leſt any man hauing an ouer-weening of their perſons, ſhould be ouer-much amazed and offended at their fall. For ſimple men not able to diſcerne their ſpirits, were brought by their Apoſtaſie thus to reaſon with themſelues. If Chriſt be the Sonne of the liuing God, if he haue the words of eternall life, if he be able to bring ſaluation to all men that come vnto him, what meaneth this Apoſtaſie, and vnconſtrayned departure? Why doe his ſeruants ſo willingly forſake him? Babes be not deceiued, his Seruants forſake him not. They that ſeparate themſelues, were amongſt his Seruants, but if they had beene of his Seruants, they had not ſeparated themſelues. They were amongſt vs, not of vs, ſaith S. *Iohn*: and S. *Iude* proueth it, becauſe they were carnall, and had not the Spirit. Will you iudge of Wheate by Chaffe which the winde hath ſcattered from amongſt it? Haue the children no bread becauſe the Dogs haue not taſted it? Are Chriſtians deceiued of that ſaluation they looked for, becauſe they denyed the ioyes of the life to come which were no Chriſtians? What if they ſeemed to be Pillers and principall vpholders of our faith? What is that to vs, which know that Angels hath falne from Heauen? Although if theſe men had beene of vs indeede, (O the bleſſednesse of a Chriſtian mans eſtate!) they had ſtood ſurer then the Angels, they had neuer departed from their place. Whereas now wee marualle not at their departure at all, neither are wee preiudiced by their falling away;

because they were not of vs, sith they are fleshly, and haue not the Spirit. Children abide in the house for euer; they are bond-men and bond-women which are cast out.

13 It behoueth you therefore greatly euery man to examine his owne estate, and to try whether you be bond or free, children or no children. I haue told you already, that we must beware we presume not to sit as Gods in iudgement vpon others, and rashly, as our conceit and fancie doth lead vs, to determine of this man, he is sincere; or of that man, He is an hypocrite, except by their falling away they make it manifest and knowne what they are. For who art thou that takest vpon thee to iudge another before the time? Iudge thy selfe. God hath left vs infallible euidence, whereby wee may at any time giue true and righteous sentence vpon our selues. We cannot examine the hearts of other men, we may our owne. That we haue passed from death to life, we know it, saith Saint *Iohn*, because wee loue our Brethren: and know yee not your owne selues, how that Iesus Christ is in you, except yee be Reprobates? I trust, beloued, we know that we are not Reprobates, because our Spirit doth beare vs record, that the Faith of our Lord Iesus Christ is in vs.

Infallible euidence in the faithfull, that they are Gods Children.

14 It is as easie a matter for the Spirit within you to tell whose yee are, as for the eyes of your bodie to iudge where you sit, or in what place you stand. For what saith the Scripture? Yee, which were in times past strangers and enemies, because your mindes were set on euill workes, Christ hath now reconciled in the bodie of his flesh through death, to make you holy, and vnblameable, and without fault in his sight: if you continue grounded and established in the faith, and be not moued away from the hope of the Gospell, *Coloss.* 1. And in the third to the *Colossians*. Yee know, that of the Lord yee shall receiue the reward of that Inheritance, for yee serue the Lord Christ. If we can make this account with our selues; I was in times past dead in trespasses and sinnes, I walked after the Prince that ruleth in the Ayre, and after the Spirit that worketh in the Children of disobedience; but God, who is rich in mercie, through his great loue, wherewith hee loued mee, euen when I was dead, hath quickened me in Christ. I was fierce, headie, proud, high-minded; but God hath made me like the child that is newly weyned: I loued pleasures more then God; I followed greedily the ioyes of this present World; I esteemed him, that erected a Stage or Theatre, more then *Salomon* which built a Temple to the Lord; the Harpe, Viole, Timbrell, and Pipe, men singers and women singers were at my Feasts; it was my felicitie to see my children dance before me. I said of euery kind of vanitie, O how sweet art thou vnto my soule! All which things now are crucified to me, and I to them: now I hate the pride of life, and pompe of this World; now I take as great delight in the way of thy testimonies, O Lord, as in all riches; now I find more ioy of heart in my Lord and Sauiour, then the worldly-minded man, when his Wheate and Oyle doe much abound: now I taste nothing sweet, but the Bread that came downe from Heauen, to giue life vnto the World: now mine eyes see nothing, but Iesus rising from the dead: now my eare refuseth all kinde of melodie to heare the Song of them that haue gotten victorie of the Beast, and of his image, and of his marke, and of the number of his Name, that stand

on

on the Sea of Glasse, hauing the Harpes of God, and singing the Song of *Moses* the seruant of God, and the Song of the Lambe, saying, Great and marueilous are thy Workes, Lord God Almightie, iust and true are thy wayes, O King of Saints. Surely, if the Spirit haue beene thus effectuall in the secret worke of our Regeneration vnto newnesse of life; if wee endeuour thus to frame our selues anew, then we may say boldly with the blessed Apostle in that tenth to the Hebrewes, *We are not of them which withdraw our selues to perdition, but which follow faith to the conseruation of the soule.* For they that fall away from the grace of God, and separate themselues vnto perdition, they are fleshly and carnall, they haue not Gods holy Spirit. But vnto you, because yee are sonnes, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Sonne into your hearts, to the end yee might know, that Christ hath built you vpon a Rocke vnmoueable; that he hath registred your names in the Booke of Life; that he hath bound himselfe in a sure and euerlasting Couenant, to be your God, and the God of your children after you; that he hath suffered as much, groned as oft, prayed as heartily for you, as for *Peter*: *O Father, keepe them in thy Name. O righteous Father, the world hath not knowne thee, but I haue knowne thee, and these haue knowne that thou hast sent mee, I haue declared thy Name vnto them, and will declare it, that the loue wherewith thou hast loued me, may be in them, and I in them.* The Lord of his infinite mercie giue vs hearts plentifully fraught with the treasure of this blessed assurance of faith vnto the end.

14 Here I must aduertise all men, that haue the testimonie of Gods holy feare within their brests, to consider how vnkindly and iniuriously our owne country-men and brethren haue dealt with vs by the space of foure and twentie yeres, from time to time, as if we were the men of whom S. *Iude* here speaketh; neuer ceasing to charge vs, some with Schisme, some with Heresie, some with plaine and manifest Apostasie, as if wee had cleane separated our selues from Christ, vtterly forsaken God, quite abiured Heauen, and trampled all Truth and all Religion vnder our feet. Against this third sort, God himselfe shall plead our Cause, in that day, when they shall answer vs for these words, not we them. To others, by whom we are accused for Schisme and Heresie, we haue often made our reasonable, and in the sight of God, I trust, allowable answers. For in the way which they call *Heresie*, we worship the God of our Fathers, beleeuing all things which are written in the Law & the Prophets. That which they call *Schisme*, we know to be our reasonable seruice vnto God, and obedience to his voice, which cryeth shrill in our eares, *Get out of Babylon, my people, that you be not partakers of her sins, and that yee receiue not of her plagues.* And therefore when they rise vp against vs, hauing no quarrell but this, wee need not to seeke any farther for our Apologie, then the words of *Abiah* to *Ieroboam* and his Armie, 2. *Chron.* 13. *O* IEROBOAM, *and Israel, heare you me, ought you not to know, that the Lord God of Israel hath giuen the Kingdome ouer Israel to* DAVID, *for euer, euen to him and to his sonnes, by a Couenant of Salt?* that is to say, an euerlasting Couenant. Iesuites and Papists, heare yee mee, ought you not to know, that the Father hath giuen all power vnto the Sonne, and hath made him the onely Head ouer his Church, wherein hee dwelleth as an Husband-man in the midst of his Vineyard, manuring it with the

The Papists falsely accuse vs of Heresie and Apostasie.

The euidences of our peace with God, are in no writer better expressed, than in the above Section.
J. Wilson

Act. 25.

Apoc. 18.

the ſweat of his owne browes, not letting it forth to others? For as it is in the
Cant. 8. 11. Canticle, *Salomon* had a Vineyard in *Baalhamon*, hee gaue the Vineyard vnto Keepers, euery one bringing for the fruit thereof a thouſand pieces of Siluer; but my Vineyard, which is mine, is before mee, ſaith Chriſt. It is true, this is meant of the myſticall Head ſet ouer the body, which is not ſeene. But as he hath reſerued the myſticall adminiſtration of the Church inuiſible vnto himſelfe, ſo he hath committed the myſticall gouernment of Congregations viſible, to the ſonnes of *Dauid*, by the ſame Couenant, whoſe ſonnes they are, in the gouerning of the Flocke of Chriſt, whomſoeuer the Holy Ghoſt hath ſet ouer them, to goe before them, and to lead them in their ſeuerall Paſtures, one
Act. 20. in this Congregation, another in that: as it is written, *Take heed vnto your ſelues, and to all the Flocke, wherof the Holy Ghoſt hath made you Ouerſeers, to feed the Church of God, which he hath purchaſed with his owne blood.* Neither wil
The Popes vſurped Supremacie. euer any Pope, or Papiſt, vnder the Cope of Heauen, be able to proue the Romiſh Biſhops vſurped Supremacie ouer all Churches, by any one word of the Couenant of Salt, which is the Scripture. For the children in our ſtreets doe now laugh them to ſcorne, when they force, *Thou art* PETER, to this purpoſe. The Pope hath no more reaſon to draw the Charter of his vniuerſall Authoritie from hence, then the Brethren had to gather by the words of Chriſt, in the laſt of S. *Iohn*, that the Diſciple, whom Ieſus loued, ſhould neuer die. *If I will that he tarrie till I come, what is that to thee?* ſaith Chriſt. Straightwayes a report was raiſed amongſt the Brethren, That this Diſciple ſhould not die. Yet Ieſus ſaid not to him, He ſhall not die; but, *If I will that he tarrie till I come, what is that to thee?* Chriſt hath ſaid in the ſixteenth of S. *Matthewes* Goſpel, to *Simon* the ſonne of *Iona*; *I ſay to thee, Thou art* PETER. Hence an opinion is held in the world, That the Pope is vniuerſall Head of all Churches. Yet Ieſus ſaid not, The Pope is vniuerſall Head of all Churches; but, *Tu es Petrus, Thou art* PETER. Howbeit, as *Ieroboam*, the ſonne of *Nebat*, the ſeruant of *Salomon*, roſe vp and rebelled againſt his Lord, and there were gathered vnto him vaine men and wicked, which made themſelues ſtrong againſt *Ieroboam*, the ſonne of *Salomon*, becauſe *Roboam* was but a child, and tender-hearted, and could not reſiſt them: So the Sonne of Perdition, and Man of Sinne, being not able to brooke the words of our Lord and Sauiour Ieſus Chriſt, which forbad his Diſciples to be like Princes of Nations, *They beare Rule, and are called Gracious, It ſhall not be ſo with you*, hath riſen vp and rebelled againſt his Lord, and to ſtrengthen his arme, he hath crept into the houſes almoſt of all the Nobleſt Families round about him, and taken their children from the Cradle, to be his Cardinals: He hath fawned vpon the Kings and Princes of the Earth, and by Spirituall Coozenage hath made them ſell their lawfull Authoritie and Iuriſdiction, for Titles of *Catholicus*, *Chriſtianiſſimus*, *Defenſor fidei*, and ſuch like: He hath proclaimed ſale of Pardons, to inueagle the ignorant; built Seminaries, to allure young men, deſirous of Learning; erected Stewes, to gether the diſſolute vnto him. This is the Rocke whereupon his Church is built. Hereby the Man is growne huge and ſtrong, like the Cedars, which are not ſhaken with the wind, becauſe Princes haue beene as children, ouer-tender-hearted, and could not reſiſt. Hereby

Iames, but is not my Soueraign George IV. the Head of all the Churches in Great Britaine and Ireland as by Law Eſtabliſhed? And which has the better title to be ſo the Pope! I. R.

Emil. de Leſſer. Cardin. Laurent. Surius Comm. de reb. geſt. à Pio 5. Franciſc. Sanſeuin. de gubernat. Regnorum & Rerumpub. l. 11. cap. de Iud. Mareſcal. & Seldm.

and the British Kings haue retained it euer since gaue this distinguished t

I. R.

Hereby it is come to passe, as you see this day, that the Man of Sinne doth warre against vs, not by men of a Language which we cannot vnderstand, but he commeth as *Ieroboam* against *Iuda*, and bringeth the fruit of our owne bodies to eat vs vp, that the bowels of the child may be made the mothers grabe, that hath caused no small number of our Brethren to forsake their Native Countrey, and with all disloyaltie to cast off the yoke of their Allegeance to our dread Soueraigne, whom God in mercie hath set ouer them; for whose safegard, if they carried not the hearts of Tygers in the bosomes of men, they would thinke the deerest bloud in their bodies well spent. But now (saith *Abiah* to *Ieroboam*, yee thinke yee be able to resist the Kingdome of the Lord, which is in the hands of the sonnes of *Dauid*. Yee bee a great multitude, the golden Calues are with you, which *Ieroboam* made you for gods. Haue ye not driuen away the Priests of the Lord, the sonnes of *Aaron*, and the Leuites, and haue made you Priests like the people of Nations? Whosoeuer commeth with a young Bullocke, and seuen Rammes, the same may be a Priest of them that are no gods. If I should follow the Comparison, and here vncouer the Cup of those deadly and ougly Abominations wherewith this IEROBOAM, of whom we speake, hath made the Earth so drunke, that it hath reeled vnder vs, I know, your godly hearts would loath to see them. For my owne part, I delight not to take in such filth, I had rather take a garment vpon my shoulders, and goe with my face from them, to couer them. The Lord open their eyes, and cause them, if it be possible, at the length to see, how they are wretched, and miserable, and poore, and blind, and naked (Reuel. 3.) O Lord in their hearts, to seeke white Rayment, and to couer themselues, that their filthy nakednesse may no longer appeare! For, [illegible] in Christ we bow our knees, and lift vp our hands to Heauen in our Chambers (verily) and openly in our Churches we pray heartily and hourely, euen [illegible] also: though the Pope hath giuen out as a Iudge, in a solemne declaratorie Sentence of *Excommunication* against this Land, That our gracious Ladie hath quite abolished *Prayers* within her Realme; and his Schollers, whom he hath taken from the midst of vs, haue in their published Writings charged vs not onely not to haue any holy Assemblies vnto the Lord for Prayer, but to hold a common Schoole of Sinne and Flatterie; to hold Sacrilege to be Gods seruice; Vnfaithfulnesse, and breach of promise to God, to giue it to a strumpet, to be a vertue; to abandon Fasting; to abhorre Confession; to mislike with Penance; to like well of Vsurie; to charge none with Restitution; to find no good before God in single life, nor in no well-working; that all men, as they fall to vs, are much worsed, and more, then afore, corrupted. I doe not adde one word, or syllable, vnto this which Master *Bristow*, a man both borne and sworne amongst vs, hath taught his hand to deliuer to the view of all. I appeale to the conscience of euery soule, that hath beene truely conuerted by vs; Whether his heart were neuer raised vp to God by our Preaching; whether the words of our exhortation neuer wrung any teare of a penitent heart from his eyes; whether his soule neuer reaped any ioy, any comfort, any consolation in Christ Iesus, by our Sacraments, and Prayers, and Psalmes, and Thanksgiuing; whether hee were neuer bettered, but alwayes worsed by vs.

O

O mercifull God! If Heaven and Earth in this caſe doe not witneſſe with vs, and againſt them, let vs be razed out from the Land of the Liuing! Let the Earth, on which wee ſtand, ſwallow vs quicke, as it hath done *Corah*, *Dathan*, and *Abiram*! But if we belong vnto the Lord our God, and haue not forſaken him; if our Prieſts, the ſonnes of *Aaron*, miniſter vnto the Lord, and the Leuites in their Office; if we offer vnto the Lord euery morning and euery euening the burnt Offerings, and ſweet Incenſe of Prayers, and Thankſ-giuings;
2. Chr. cap. 13. if the Bread be ſet in order vpon the pure Table, and the Candleſtick of Gold, with the Lamps thereof, to burne euery morning; that is to ſay, if amongſt vs Gods bleſſed Sacraments bee duely adminiſtred, his holy Word ſincerely and daily preached; if we keepe the Watch of the Lord our God, and if yee haue not forſaken him: then doubt yee not, this God is with vs as a Captaine, his Prieſts with ſounding Trumpets muſt crie alarme
Vers. 12. againſt you; *O yee children of Iſrael, fight not againſt the Lord God of your Fathers, for yee ſhall not proſper.*

THE

THE SECOND SERMON.

EPIST. IVDE, VERS. 17,18,19,20,21.

But yee, beloued, remember the words which were ſpoken before of the Apoſtles of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt,

How that they told you, that there ſhould be mockers in the laſt time, which ſhould walke after their owne vngodly luſts.

Theſe are makers of Sects, fleſhly, hauing not the Spirit.

But yee, beloued, edifie your ſelues in your moſt holy faith, praying in the Holy Ghoſt,

And keepe your ſelues in the loue of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, vnto eternall life.

HAuing otherwhere ſpoken of the words of Saint *Iude*, going next before, concerning *Mockers*, which ſhould come in the laſt time, and backſliders, which euen then fell away from the faith of our Lord and Sauiour Ieſus Chriſt; I am now, by the aid of Almighty God, and through the aſſiſtance of his good Spirit, to lay before you the words of Exhortation, which I haue read.

2 Wherein firſt of all, whoſoeuer hath an eye to ſee, let him open it, and he ſhall well perceiue, how carefull the Lord is for his children, how deſirous to ſee them profit and grow vp to a manly ſtature in Chriſt, how loth to haue them any way miſled, either by examples of the wicked, or by enticements of the world, and by prouocation of the fleſh, or by any other meanes forcible to deceiue them, and likely to eſtrange their hearts from God. For God is not at that point with vs, that he careth not whether we ſinke or ſwimme. No, hee hath written our names in the Palme of his hand, in the Signet vpon his finger are we grauen, in ſentences not onely of Mercie, but of Iudgement alſo, we are remembred. Hee neuer denounceth Iudgements againſt the wicked, but hee maketh ſome *Prouiſo* for his children, as it were for ſome certaine priuiledged perſons, *Touch not mine Anointed, doe my Prophets no harme, hurt not the Earth, nor the Sea, nor the Trees, till we haue ſealed the ſeruants of God in their foreheads.* He neuer ſpeaketh of godleſſe men, but he adioyneth words of comfort, or admonition, or exhortation, whereby we are mouued to reſt and ſettle our hearts on him. In the ſecond to *Timothy*, the 3. Chapter, *Euill men* (ſaith the Apoſtle)

and

and deceiuers ſhall waxe worſe and worſe, deceiuing, and being deceiued. But continue thou in the things which thou haſt learned. And in the firſt to *Timothy*, the ſixt Chapter, *Some men luſting after money, haue erred from the faith, and pierced themſelues therow with many ſorrowes. But thou, O man of God, flie theſe things, and follow after righteouſneſſe, godlineſſe, faith, loue, patience, meekneſſe.* In the ſecond to the Theſſalonians, the ſecond Chapter, *They haue not receiued the loue of the Truth, that they might be ſaued, God ſhall ſend them ſtrong deluſions, that they may beleeue lyes. But we ought to giue thankes alway to God for you, brethren, beloued of the Lord, becauſe God hath from the beginning choſen you to ſaluation, through ſanctification of the Spirit, and faith in the Truth.* And in this epiſtle of S. *Iude*, *There ſhal come mockers in the laſt time, walking after their owne vngodly luſts. But, beloued, edifie yee your ſelues in your moſt holy faith.*

3 Theſe ſweet Exhortations, which God putteth euery where in the mouthes of the Prophets and Apoſtles of Ieſus Chriſt, are euident tokens, that God ſitteth not in Heauen careleſſe and vnmindful of our eſtate. Can a mother forget her child? Surely, a mother will hardly forget her child. But if a mother be haply found vnnaturall, and doe forget the fruit of her owne Wombe, yet Gods iudgements ſhew plainely, that hee cannot forget the man whoſe heart he hath framed and faſhioned anew, in ſimplicitie and truth to ſerue and feare him. For when the wickedneſſe of man was ſo great, & the earth ſo filled with crueltie, that it could not ſtand with the righteouſneſſe of God any longer to forbeare, wrathfull ſentences brake out from him, like Wine from a veſſell
Gen. 6.3. & 13. that hath no vent: *My Spirit* (ſaith he) *can ſtruggle and ſtriue no longer, an end of all fleſh is come before mee.* Yet then did *Noah* find grace in the eyes of the
Gen. 6.8. & 18. Lord; *I will eſtabliſh my Couenant with thee* (ſaith God) *thou ſhalt goe into the Arke, thou, and thy ſonnes, and thy wife, and thy ſonnes wiues with thee.*

4 Doe we not ſee what ſhift God doth make for *Lot*, and for his family, in the nineteenth of Geneſis, leſt the fierie deſtruction of the wicked ſhould ouertake him? Ouer-night the Angels make enquirie, what ſonnes or daughters, or ſonnes in law, what wealth and ſubſtance hee had. They charge him to carrie
Gen. 19.12. out all, *Whatſoeuer thou haſt in the Citie, bring it out.* God ſeemeth to ſtand in a kind of feare, leſt ſomething or other would be left behind. And his will was, that nothing of that which he had, not an hoofe of any beaſt, not a thred of any garment, ſhould be ſindged with that fire. In the morning the Angels faile
Gen. 19.15. not to call him vp, and to haſten him forward, *Ariſe, take thy wife, and thy daughters which are here, that they be not deſtroyed in the puniſhment of the Citie.* The Angels hauing ſpoken againe and againe, *Lot* for all this lingereth out the time ſtill, till at the length they were forced to take *both him, and his wife,*
Verſe 16. *and his daughters, by the armes (the Lord being mercifull vnto him)* and to carrie them forth, and ſet them without the Citie.

5 Was there euer any father thus carefull to ſaue his child from the flame? A man would thinke, that now being ſpoken vnto to eſcape for his life, and not to looke behind him, nor to tarrie in the plaine, but to haſten to the mountaine, and there to ſaue himſelfe, he ſhould doe it gladly. Yet behold, now he is ſo farre off from a cheerefull and willing heart to do whatſoeuer is commanded him for his owne weale, that he beginneth to reaſon the matter, as if God had

had mistaken one place for another, sending him to the Hill, when saluation was in the Citie. *Not so, my Lord, I beseech thee, Behold, thy seruant hath found grace in thy sight, and thou hast magnified thy mercie which thou hast shewed vnto me, in sauing my life. I cannot escape in the mountaine, least some euill take me, and I die. Here is a Citie hard by, to small thing, O let me escape thither (is it not a small thing?) and my soule shall liue.* Well, God is contented to yeeld to any conditions. *Behold, I haue receiued thy request concerning this thing also, I will spare this Citie, for which thou hast spoken; haste thee, saue thee there. For I can doe nothing till thou come thither.* Vers. 18.

6. Hee could doe nothing! Not because of the weaknesse of his strength (for who is like vnto the Lord in power?) but because of the greatnesse of his mercie, which would not suffer him to lift vp his arme against that Citie, nor to powre out his wrath vpon that place, where his righteous seruant had a fancie to remaine, and a desire to dwell. O the depth of the riches of the mercie and loue of God! God is afraid to offend vs which are not afraid to displease him! God can doe nothing till he haue saued vs, which can find in our hearts rather to doe any thing then to serue him: it contenteth him not to exempt vs, when the pit is digged for the wicked; to comfort vs at every mention which is made of reprobates and godlesse men; to saue vs as the apple of his owne eye when fire commeth downe from heauen to consume the inhabitants of the earth, except euery Prophet, and euery Apostle, and euery seruant, whom he sendeth forth, doe come loaden with these and the like exhortations, *O beloued, edifie your selues in your most holy faith. Giue your selues to prayer in the Spirit, keepe your selues in the loue of God. Looke for the mercie of our Lord Iesus Christ vnto eternall life.*

7. *Edifie your selues.* The speech is borrowed from materiall builders, and must be spiritually vnderstood. It appeareth in the 6. of S. *Iohn* Gospell by the Iewes, that their mouthes did water too much for bodily food, *Our fathers, say they, did eate Manna in the Desert; as it is written, He gaue them bread from heauen to eate. Lord, euermore giue vs of this bread!* Our Sauiour, to turne their appetite another way, maketh them this answere, *I am the Bread of life, he that commeth to me, shall not hunger, and he that beleeueth in me, shall neuer thirst.*

8. An vsuall practice it is of Satan, to cast heapes of worldly baggage in our way, that whilest wee desire to heape vp gold as dust, wee may be brought at the length to esteeme vilely that spirituall blisse. Christ, in the 6. of *Matthew*, to correct this euill affection, perceiues vs in minde to lay vp treasure for our selues in heauen. The Apostle, 1. *Tim.* 2. *chapter*, misliking the lasciuie of those women, which attired themselues more costly, then beseemed the heauenly calling of such as professed the feare of God, willeth them to cloath themselues with shamefastnesse and modestie, and so put on the apparell of good workes. *Talibus pigmentis Deum habet delectari mulier*, saith *Tertullian*. Put on righteousnesse as a garment: in stead of Citie, build Faith, which may cause a fauour of life to issue from you, and God shall be enamoured, he shall be ra-uished with your beautie. These are the ornaments, and bracelets, and iewels, which inflame the loue of Christ, and set his heart on fire vpon his Spouse.

Wee see, how hee breaketh out in the Canticles at the beholding of this attire, How faire art thou, and how pleasant art thou, O my loue, in these pleasures!

9 And perhaps S. *Iude* exhorteth vs here not to build our houses, but our selues, foreseeing by the Spirit of the Almightie, which was with him, that there should bee men in the last dayes like to those in the first, which should encourage and stirre vp each other to make Bricke, and to burne it in the fire, to build Houses huge as Cities, and Towers as high as Heauen, thereby to get them a name vpon earth; men that should turne out the poore, and the fatherlesse, and the Widdow, to build places of rest for Dogs and Swine in their roomes; men that should lay Houses of prayer euen with the ground, and make them stables where Gods people haue worshipped before the Lord. Surely this is a vanitie of all vanities, and it is much amongst men: a speciall sickenesse of this age. What it should meane, I know not, except God haue set them on worke to prouide fewell against that day, when the Lord Iesus shall shew himselfe from Heauen with his mightie Angels in flaming fire. What good commeth vnto the owners of these things, sayth *Salomon*, but only the beholding thereof with their eyes? *Martha, Martha, thou busiest thy selfe about many things, One thing is necessarie.* Yee are too busie, my brethren, with Timber, and Bricke; They haue chosen the better part, they haue taken a better course, that build themselues. Yee are the Temples of the liuing God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and will walke in them, and they shall be my people, and I will be their God. *Eccles. 5.*

10 Which of you will gladly remaine, or abide in a mis-shapen, a ruinous, or a broken house? And shall we suffer sinne, and vanitie to drop in at our eyes, and at our eares, at euery corner of our bodies, and of our soules, knowing that wee are the Temples of the holy Ghost? Which of you receiueth a Guest, whom he honoureth, or whom he loueth, and doth not sweepe his Chamber against his comming? And shall wee suffer the chamber of our hearts and consciences to lie full of vomiting, full of filth, full of garbidge, knowing that Christ hath said, I, and my Father will come, and dwell with you? Is it meete for your Oxen to lie in Parlours, and your selues to lodge in Cribs? Or is it seemely for your selues to dwell in your setled houses, and the house of the Almightie to lie waste, whose house yee are your selues? Doe not our eyes behold, how God euery day ouertaketh the wicked in their iourneyes, how suddenly they pop downe into the pit? how Gods iudgements for their sinnes come so swiftly vpon them, that they haue not the leasure to so much as cry, Alas? how their life is cut off like a threed in a moment? how they passe like a shadow? how they open their mouthes to speake, and God taketh them euen in the midst of a vaine or an idle word? And dare wee for all this lie downe, take our rest, eate our meate securely and carelesly in the midst of so great and so many ruines? Blessed and praised for euer and euer be his name, who perceiuing of how tender and brittle mettall wee are made, hath instituted in his Church a spirituall Supper, and an holy Communion, to bee celebrated often, that wee might thereby bee occasioned often to examine these buildings of ours, in what case they stand. For sith God doth not dwell

The Sacrament of the Lords Supper.

dwell in Temples which are vncleane, sith a Shrine cannot bee a Sanctuarie vnto him; and this Supper is receiued as a seale vnto vs, that wee are his House and his Sanctuarie; that his Christ is as truly vnited to mee, and I to him, as my arme is vnited and knit vnto my shoulder; that Hee dwelleth in mee as verily, as the elements of Bread and Wine abide within mee; which perswasion, by receiuing these dreadfull mysteries, wee professe our selues to haue a due comfort, if truly; and if in hypocrisie, then woe worth vs. Therefore ere wee put forth our hands to take this blessed Sacrament, wee are charged to examine and to trie our hearts, whether God bee in vs of a truth, or no: and if by faith and loue vnfained wee befound the Temples of the holy Ghost, then to iudge, whether we haue had such regard euery one to our building, that the Spirit which dwelleth in vs hath no way beene vexed, molested and grieued: or if it haue, as no doubt sometimes it hath by incredulitie, sometimes by breach of charitie, sometimes by want of zeale, sometimes by spots of life, euen in the best and most perfect amongst vs (for who can say his heart is cleane?) O then, to flye vnto God by vnfained repentance, to fall downe before him in the humilitie of our soules, begging of him whatsoeuer is needfull to repaire our decayes, before wee fall into that desolation whereof the Prophet speaketh, saying, *Thy breach is great like the Sea, who can heale thee?* Lam. 2. 13.

What dreadfull mystery is there for the diuersity of opinion touching the nature, and qualitie of which we Protestants haue diuersed?

11 Receiuing the Sacrament of the Supper of the Lord after this sort, (you that are Spirituall, iudge what I speake) is not all other Wine like the Water of *Marah*, being compared to the Cup, which we blesse? Is not *Manna* like to gall, and our bread like to *Manna*? Is there not a taste, a taste of Christ Iesus, in the heart of him that eateth? Doth not hee which drinketh, behold plainely in this Cup, that his soule is bathed in the bloud of the Lambe? O beloued in our Lord and Sauiour Iesus Christ, if yee will taste how sweet the Lord is, if ye will receiue the King of Glorie, *Build your selues.*

There must to be.

12 *Young men*, I speake this to you; for yee are his House, because by faith ye are Conquerors ouer *Satan*, and haue ouercome that euill. *Fathers*, I speake it also to you; yee are his House, because yee haue knowne him, which is from the beginning. Sweet *Babes*, I speake it euen to you also; yee are his House, because your sinnes are forgiuen you for his Names sake. *Matrons* and *Sisters*, I may not hold it from you; yee are also the Lords building, and, as S. *Peter* speaketh, heires of the grace of life as well as wee. Though it be forbidden you to open your mouthes in publike Assemblies, yet yee must be inquisitiue in things concerning this building, which is of God, with your husbands and friends at home; not as *Dalila* with *Samson*, but as *Sara* with *Abraham*, whose daughters yee are, whilest yee doe well, and build your selues.

13 Hauing spoken thus farre of the Exhortation, as whereby wee are called vpon to edifie and build our selues; it remayneth now, that wee consider the thing prescribed, namely, wherein wee must bee built. This prescription standeth also vpon two points, the *thing* prescribed, and the *adiuncts* of the *thing*. And that is our most pure and *holy faith*.

14 The thing prescribed is *Faith*. For as in a chaine, which is made of many linkes, if you pull the first, you draw the rest; and as in a Ladder of many

ſtaues, if you take away the loweſt, all hope of aſcending to the higheſt, will be remooued: So, becauſe all the Precepts and Promiſes in the Law and in the Goſpell doe hang vpon this, *Beleeue*; and becauſe the laſt of the graces of God doth ſo follow the firſt, that hee glorifieth none, but whom hee hath iuſtified, nor iuſtifieth any, but whom he hath called to a true, effectuall, and liuely faith in Chriſt Ieſus; therefore S. *Iude* exhorting vs to *build our ſelues*, mentioneth here expreſly onely faith, as the thing wherein we muſt be edified, for that faith is the ground and the glorie of all the welfare of this building.

Ephes. 2. 15 *Yee are not ſtrangers and forainers, but Citizens with the Saints, and of the houſhold of God* (ſaith the Apoſtle) *and are built vpon the foundation of the Prophets and Apoſtles, Ieſus Chriſt himſelfe being the chiefe corner Stone, in whom all the building being coupled together, groweth vnto an holy Temple in the Lord, in whom yee alſo are built together to be the habitation of God by the Spirit.* And wee are the habitation of God by the Spirit, if wee beleeue. For it is written, Whoſoeuer confeſſeth, that Ieſus is the Sonne of God, in him God dwelleth, and he in God. The ſtrength of this habitation is great, it preuaileth againſt Satan; it conquereth Sinne; it hath Death in deriſion; neyther Principalities, nor Powers, can throw it downe; it leadeth the world captiue, and bringeth euery enemie, that riſeth vp againſt it, to confuſion and ſhame, and all by faith; for this is the victorie that ouercommeth the World, euen oue faith. Who is it that ouercommeth the World, but he which beleeueth, that Ieſus is the Sonne of God?

1. Iohn 4. 1. Iohn 5. 16 The ſtrength of euery Building, which is of God, ſtandeth not in any mans armes, or legges; it is onely in our faith, as the valour of *Samſon* lay onely in his haire. This is the reaſon, why we are ſo earneſtly called vpon to *edifie our ſelues in faith*. Not as if this bare action of our minds, whereby we beleeue the Goſpel of Chriſt, were able in it ſelfe, as of it ſelfe, to make vs vnconquerable, and inuincible, like ſtones, which abide in the building for euer, and fall not out. No, it is not the worthineſſe of our beleeuing, it is the vertue of him in whom we beleeue, by which we ſtand ſure, as houſes that are builded vpon a Rocke. He is a Wiſeman, which hath builded his houſe vpon a Rocke, for hee hath choſen a good foundation, and no doubt his houſe will ſtand. But how ſhall it ſtand? Verily, by the ſtrength of the Rocke which beareth it, and by nothing elſe. Our fathers, whom God deliuered out of the Land of Ægypt, were a people that had no Peeres amongſt the Nations of the Earth, becauſe they were built by faith vpon the Rocke, which Rocke is Chriſt. *And the Rock* (ſaith the Apoſtle in the firſt to the Corinthians, the tenth Chapter) *did follow him*. Whereby we learne not onely this, that being built by faith on Chriſt as on a Rocke, and graſted into him as into an Oliue, wee receiue all our ſtrength and fatneſſe from him; but alſo, that this ſtrength and fatneſſe of ours ought to be no cauſe why we ſhould be high-minded, and not worke out our ſaluation with a reuerent trembling, and holy feare. For if thou boaſteſt thy ſelfe of thy faith, know this, That Chriſt choſe his Apoſtles, his Apoſtles choſe not him; that Iſrael followed not the Rocke, but the Rocke followed Iſrael; and that thou beareſt not the Roote, but the Roote thee. So that euery heart muſt this thinke, and euery tongue muſt thus ſpeake, *Not vnto vs, O Lord, not vnto*

Mat. 7.

Rom. 11.

vs,

vs, nor vnto any thing which is within vs, but vnto thy Name onely, onely to thy Name, belongeth all the praise of all the Treasures and Riches of euery Temple which is of God. This excludeth all boasting and vaunting of our faith.

17 But this must not make vs careleſſe to edifie our ſelues in faith. It is the Lord that deliuereth mens ſoules from death, but not except they put their truſt in his mercie. It is God that hath giuen vs eternall life, but no other- 1. Ioh. 5.
wiſe then thus, If we beleeue in the name of the Sonne of God; for hee that hath not the Sonne of God, hath not life. It was the Spirit of the Lord which came vpon *Samſon*, and made him ſtrong to teare a Lyon as a man would rent a Kid: but his ſtrength forſooke him, and he became like other men when the Razor had touched his head. It is the power of God whereby the faithfull haue ſubdued kingdomes, wrought righteouſneſſe, obtayned the promiſes, ſtopped the mouthes of Lyons, quenched the violence of fire, eſcaped the edge of the ſword: But take away their faith, and doth not their ſtrength forſake them? are they not like vnto other men?

18 If yee deſire yet farther to know how neceſſarie and needfull it is, that wee edifie and build vp our ſelues in faith, marke the words of the bleſſed Apoſtles, *Without faith it is impoſſible to pleaſe God.* If I offer vnto God all the Sheepe and Oxen that are in the world, if all the Temples that were builded ſince the dayes of *Adam* till this houre, were of my foundation, if I breake my very heart with calling vpon God, and weare out my tongue with Preaching, if I ſacrifice my bodie and my ſoule vnto him, *and haue no faith*, all this auayleth nothing. *Without faith it is impoſſible to pleaſe God.* Our Lord and Sauiour therefore being asked in the ſixt of S. *Iohns* Goſpell, *What ſhall we doe that we might worke the workes of God*, maketh anſwer, *This is the worke of God, that yee beleeue in him, whom he hath ſent.* No pleaſing of God without faith.

19 That no worke of ours, no building of our ſelues in any thing can be auaileable or profitable vnto vs, except we be edified and built in faith, what need wee to ſeeke about for long proofe? Looke vpon Iſrael, once the very choſen and peculiar of God, to whom the adoption of the faithfull, and the glorie of Cherubins, and the couenants of mercie, and the law of *Moſes*, and the ſeruice of God, and the promiſes of Chriſt were made impropriate, who not onely were the off-ſpring of *Abraham*, father vnto all them which doe beleeue, but Chriſt their off-ſpring, which is God to bee bleſſed for euermore.

20 Conſider this people, and learne, what it is to *build your ſelues in faith.* They were the Lords Vine; hee brought it out of Egypt, hee threw out the Heathen from their places, that it might be planted, he made roome for it, and cauſed it to take roote, till it had filled the earth, the mountaines were couered with the ſhadow of it, and the boughs thereof were as the goodly Cedars. Shee ſtretched out her branches vnto the ſea, and her boughs vnto the riuer. But when God hauing ſent both his ſeruants and his Sonne to viſite this Vine, they neither ſpared the one, nor receiued the other, but ſtoned the Prophets, and crucified the Lord of glorie which came vnto them, then began the curſe of God to come vpon them, euen the curſe whereof the Prophet *Dauid* hath

ſpoken, ſaying, *Let their table be made a ſnare, and a net, and a ſtumbling block, even for a recompence vnto them, let their eyes be darkened, that they ſee not, and bow downe their backs for ever*, keepe them downe. And in this the houre, that the meaſure of their infidelitie was firſt made vp, they haue beene ſpoyled with warres, eaten vp with plagues, ſpent with hunger and famine: they wander from place to place, and are become the moſt baſe and contemptible people that are vnder the Sunne. *Ephraim*, which before was a terrour vnto nations, and they trembled at his voice, is now by infidelitie ſo vile, that he ſeemeth as a thing caſt out, to be trampled vnder mens feet. In the midſt of theſe deſolations they cry, *Returne, wee beſeech thee, O God of hoſts, looke downe from heaven, behold and viſit this vine:* but their very prayers are turned into ſin, and their cryes are no better then the lowing of beaſts before him. *Well*, ſayth the Apoſtle, *By their vnbeliefe they are broken off, and thou doeſt ſtand by thy faith. Behold therefore the bountifulneſſe and ſeuerity of God, toward them ſeuerity, becauſe they haue fallen, bountifulneſſe toward thee, if thou continue in his bountifulneſſe, or elſe thou ſhalt be cut off.* If they forſake their vnbeliefe, and bee grafted in againe, and wee at any time for the hardneſſe of our hearts be broken off, it will be at ſuch a iudgement as will amaze all the powers and principalities which are aboue. Who hath ſearched the counſell of God concerning this ſecret? and who doth not ſee that *infidelitie* doth threaten *Lo-ammi* vnto the Gentiles, as it hath brought *Lo-ruhamma* vpon the Iewes? It may be that theſe words ſeeme darke vnto you. But the words of the Apoſtle in the eleuenth to the *Romans*, are plaine enough, *If God haue not ſpared the naturall branches, take heed*, take heed, *leſt he ſpare not thee.* Build thy ſelfe in faith. Thus much of the thing which is preſcribed, and wherein we are exhorted to edifie our ſelues. Now conſider the *conditions* and *properties*, which are in this place annexed vnto faith. The former of them (for there are but two) is this, *Edifie your ſelues in your faith.*

Pſal. 69. Rom 11.

Pſal. 18. 14.

Rom. 11. 20.

Verſ. 22.

Hoſ. 1. 9. not my people. Verſ. 6. not obtaining mercy.

11 A ſtrange, and a ſtrong deluſion it is wherewith the *man of ſinne* hath bewitched the world; a forcible ſpirit of errour it muſt needs be, which hath brought men to ſuch a ſenſeleſſe and vnreaſonable perſwaſion as this is, not onely that men cloathed with mortalitie and ſinne, as wee our ſelues are, can doe God ſo much ſeruice, as ſhall be able to make a full and a perfect ſatisfaction before the Tribunall ſeate of God for their owne ſinnes, yea a great deale more, then is ſufficient for themſelues; But alſo that a man at the hands of a Biſhop or a Pope, for ſuch or ſuch a price, may buy the *ouerplus* of other mens merits, purchaſe the fruits of other mens labours, and build his ſoule by another mans faith. Is not this man drowned in the gall of bitternesſe? Is his heart right in the ſight of God? Can hee haue any part or fellowſhip with *Peter*, and with the *ſucceſſours of Peter*, which thinketh ſo vilely of building the precious Temples of the holy Ghoſt? Let his money periſh with him, and he with it, becauſe he iudgeth, that the gift of God may be ſold for money.

12 But, Beloued in the Lord, deceiue not your ſelues, neither ſuffer yee your ſelues to be deceiued: yee can receiue no more eaſe nor comfort for your ſoules by another mans faith, then warmth for your bodies by another mans clothes, or ſuſtenance by the bread which another doth eate. The iuſt ſhall liue

lion by his owne faith. Let a Saint, yea a Martyr couet to cleanse himselfe, that he hath *cleansed himself of his owne sinne*, sayth *Tertullian*. No Saint or Martyr can cleanse himselfe of his owne sinne. But for to be a Saint, or a Martyr can cleanse himselfe of his owne sinne, it is sufficient that hee can doe it for himselfe. Did euer any man by his death deliuer another man from death, except only the Sonne of God? he onely was able to *saue vndone* a Theefe from the Crosse as hee liued, & to take him and become, that being himselfe pure from sinne, hee might obey for sinners. Thou no high thinkest to doe the like, and supposest that thou canst iustifie another by thy righteousnesse, if thou be without sinne, then lay downe thy life for thy brother; die for mee. But if thou be a sinner, euen as I am a sinner, how can the Oyle of thy Lampe bee sufficient both for thee, and for me? *Virgins*, that are wise, get yee Oyle, while yee haue day, into your owne Lampes. For out of all peraduenture, others, though they would, can neither giue nor sell. Edifie your selues in your *most* most holy faith. And see this be obserued for the first *property* of that, wherein we ought to edifie our selues.

23 Our faith being such, it is that indeed which S. *Iude* doth there terme *Faith*, namely, a thing most *holy*. The reason is this; We are iustified by *Faith*. For *Abraham* beleeued, and this was imputed vnto him for righteousnesse. Being iustified, all our iniquities are couered; God beholdeth vs in the righteousnesse which is imputed, and not in the sinnes which wee haue committed.

24 It is true, wee are full of sinne, both *originall* and *actuall*; whosoeuer denyeth it, is a double sinner; for he is both a *sinner* and a *lyar*. To denie sinne, is most plainely and clearely to prooue it, because hee that sayth, hee hath no sinne, lyeth, and by lying, proueth that he hath sinne.

25 But *imputation* of righteousnesse hath couered the sinnes of euery soule which beleeueth; God by pardoning our sinne, hath taken it away: So that now, although our transgressions be multiplied aboue the haires of our head, yet being iustified, wee are as free, and as cleere, as if there were no one spot or staine of any vncleannesse in vs. For it is God that iustifieth; and who shall lay anything to the charge of Gods chosen? sayth the Apostle in the eight chapter to the Romans.

26 Now sinne being taken away, wee are made the righteousnesse of God in Christ. For *Dauid* speaking of this righteousnesse, sayth, *Blessed is the man whose iniquities are forgiuen.* No man is blessed, but in the righteousnesse of God. Euery man whose sinne is taken away, is blessed. Therefore euery man whose sinne is couered, is made the righteousnesse of God in Christ. The righteousnesse doth make vs to appeare most holy, most pure, most vnblameable before him.

27 This then is the summe of that which I say: Faith doth iustifie; Iustification washeth away sinne; Sinne remoued, we are cloathed with the righteousnesse which is of God; the righteousnesse of God maketh vs most holy. Euery of these I haue proued by the testimonie of Gods owne mouth. Therefore I conclude, that faith is that which maketh vs most holy; in consideration whereof, it is called in this place, *Our most holy Faith.*

28 To

28 To make a wicked and a ſinfull man moſt holy through his beleeuing, is more then to create a World of nothing. Our faith moſt holy? Surely, *Salomon* could not ſhew the Queene of *Saba* ſo much treaſure in all his Kingdome, as is lapt vp in theſe words. O that our hearts were ſtretched out like tents, and that the eyes of our vnderſtanding were as bright as the Sunne, that we might throughly know the riches of the glorious inheritance of Saints, and what is the exceeding greatneſſe of his power towards vs, whom he accepteth for pure, and moſt holy, through our beleeuing. O that the Spirit of the Lord would giue this doctrine entrance into the ſtonie and brazen heart of the Iew, which followeth the Law of Righteouſneſſe, but cannot attaine vnto the righteouſneſſe of the Law. Wherefore? ſayth the Apoſtle. They ſeeke righteouſneſſe, and not by faith. Wherefore they ſtumble at Chriſt, they are bruiſed, ſhiuered to pieces as a Ship that hath runne her ſelfe vpon a rocke. O that God would caſt downe the eyes of the proud, and humble the ſoules of the high-minded, that they might at the length abhorre the garments of their owne fleſh, which cannot hide their nakednes, and put on the faith of Chriſt Ieſus, as he did put it on, which hath ſaid: *Doubtleſſe I thinke all things but loſſe, for the excellent knowledge ſake of Chriſt Ieſus my Lord, for whom I haue counted all things loſſe, and doe iudge them to be dung, that I might winne Chriſt, and might be found in him, not hauing mine owne righteouſneſſe, which is of the Law, but that which is through the faith of Chriſt, euen the righteouſneſſe which is of God through faith.* O that God would open the Arke of mercie, wherein this doctrine lyeth, and ſet it wide before the eyes of poore afflicted conſciences, which flie vp and downe vpon the water of their afflictions, and can ſee nothing but onely the gulfe and deluge of their ſinnes, wherein there is no place for them to reſt their feet. The God of pittie and compaſſion giue you all ſtrength and courage, euery day, and euery houre, and every moment, to build and edifie your ſelues in this moſt pure and holy faith. And thus much both of the thing preſcribed in this Exhortation, and alſo of the properties of the thing, *Build your ſelues in your moſt holy faith.* I would come to the next branch, which is of *Prayer*, but I cannot lay this matter out of my hands, till I haue added ſomewhat for the applying of it both to others and to our ſelues.

29 For your better vnderſtanding of matters contayned in this Exhortation, *Build your ſelues*, you muſt note, that euery Church and Congregation doth conſiſt of a multitude of beleeuers, as euery houſe is built of many ſtones. And although the nature of the myſticall bodie of the Church be ſuch, that it ſuffereth no diſtinction in the inuiſible members, but whether it be *Paul* or *Apollos*, Prince or Prophet, he that is taught, or he that teacheth, all are equally Chriſts, and Chriſt is equally theirs: yet in the externall adminiſtration of the Church of God, becauſe God is not the author of confuſion, but of peace, it is neceſſarie, that in euery Congregation there be a diſtinction, if not of inward dignitie, yet of outward degree; ſo that all are Saints, or ſeeme to bee Saints, and ſhould be as they ſeeme. But are all Apoſtles? If the whole bodie were an eye, where were then the hearing? God therefore hath giuen ſome to be Apoſtles, and ſome to be Paſtours, &c. for the edification of the bodie of Chriſt.

Christ. In which worke wee are Gods labourers (sayth the Apostle) and yee are Gods husbandrie, and Gods building.

30 The Church respected with reference vnto administration Ecclesiasticall, doth generally consist but of two sorts of men, the *Labourers*, and the *Building*; they which are ministred vnto, and they to whom the worke of the Ministerie is committed; *Pastours*, and the *Flocke*, ouer whom the holy Ghost hath made them ouerseers. If the *Guide* of a Congregation, be his name or his degree whatsoeuer, bee diligent in his vocation, feed the flocke of God which dependeth vpon him, caring for it not by constraint, but willingly, not for filthie lucre, but of a readie mind, not as though he would tyrannize ouer Gods heritage, but as a patterne vnto the flocke, wisely guiding them: if the people in their degree doe yeeld themselues frameable to the truth, not like rough stone or flint, refusing to be smoothed and squared for the building: if the Magistrate doe carefully and diligently survey the whole order of the worke, prouiding by statutes and lawes, and bodily punishments, if need require, that all things may be done according to the rule which cannot deceiue, euen as *Moses* prouided that all things might be done according to the patterne which he saw in the Mount; there the words of this exhortation are truely and effectually heard. Of such a Congregation euery man will say, *Behold a people that are wise, a people that walke in the Statutes and Ordinances of their God, a people full of knowledge and vnderstanding, a people that haue skill in building themselues.* Where it is otherwise, there, *as by slothfulnesse the roofe doth decay*; and as *by idleneſſe of hands, the house droppeth thorow*, as it is in the 10. of Eccleſiastes, verſ. 18. so first one piece, and then another of their building shall fall away, till there be not a stone left vpon a stone.

31 We see how fruitlesse this exhortation hath beene to such as bend all their trauaile only to build and manage a *Papacie* vpon earth, without any care in the world of building themselues in their most holy faith. Gods people haue enquired at their mouthes, *What shall we doe to haue eternally life?* Wherein shall wee build and edifie our selues? And they haue departed home from their Prophets, and from their Priests, laden with doctrines, which are precepts of men, they haue beene taught to tire out themselues with bodily exercise; those things are inioyned them, which God did neuer require at their hands, and the things he doth require, are kept from them; their eyes are fed with pictures, and their eares filled with melodie, but their soules doe wither, and starue, and pine away; they crye for bread, and behold, stones are offered them; they aske for fish, and see, they haue Scorpions in their hands: Thou seest, O Lord, that they build themselues, but not in faith; they feed their children, but not with food; Their Rulers say with shame, Bring, and not build. But God is righteous; their drunkennesse stinketh, their abominations are knowne, their madnesse is manifest, the wind hath bound them vp in her wings, and they shall be ashamed of their doings. *Ephraim*, sayth the Prophet, is ioyned to idols, let him alone, I will turne me therefore from the Priests, which doe minister vnto idols, and apply this exhortation to them, whom God hath appointed to feed his chosen in Israel.

32 If there bee any feeling of Christ, and drop of heauenly dew, or any sparke

sparke of Gods good Spirit within you, stirre it vp, bee carefull to build and edifie, first your selues, and then your flockes in this most holy faith.

33 I say, *first your selues*; For, bee which will set the hearts of other men on fire, with the loue of Christ, must himselfe burne with loue. It is want of faith in our selues, my Brethren, which maketh vs * retchlesse in building others: Wee forsake the Lords inheritance, and feed it not. What is the reason of this? Our owne desires are settled where they should not be. We our selues are like those women which haue a longing to eate coales, and lime, and filth; wee are fed, some with honour, some with ease, some with wealth; the Gospell waxeth lothsome and vnpleasant in our taste; how should wee then haue a care to feed others with that, which we cannot fancie our selues? If *faith* waxe cold, and slender, in the *hearts* of the *Prophets*, it will soone perish from the eares of the people. The Prophet *Amos* speaketh of a famine, saying, *I will send a famine in the Land, not a famine of bread, nor a thirst of water, but of hearing the Word of the Lord. Men shall wander from sea to sea, and from the North vnto the East shall they runne to and fro, to seeke the Word of the Lord, and shall not find it. Iudgement must beginne at the house of God*, sayth *Peter*. Yea, I say, at the Sanctuarie of God, this iudgement must beginne. This famine must beginne at the heart of the Prophet. Hee must haue darkenesse for a vision, hee must stumble at noone dayes, as at the twi-light, and then truth shall fall in the middest of the streets, then shall the people wander from sea to sea, and from the North, vnto the East shall they runne to and fro, to seeke the Word of the Lord.

* Careleſſe.

1 Pet. 4. 17.

34 In the second of HAGGAI, *Speake now*, sayth God, to his Prophet, *Speake now to* Zerubbabel, *the sonne of* Shealtiel, *Prince of Iudah, and to* Iehoshua, *the sonne of* Iehozadak *the high Priest, and to the residue of the people, saying, Who is left among you, that saw this house in her first glorie, and how doe you see it now? Is not this house in your eyes, in comparison of it, as nothing?* The Prophet would haue all mens eyes turned to the view of themselues, euery sort brought to the consideration of their present state. This is no place to shew what dutie *Zerubbabel* or *Iehoshua* doth owe vnto God in this respect. They haue, I doubt not, such as put them hereof in remembrance. I aske of you, which are a part of the residue of Gods Elect and chosen people: Who is there amongst you, that hath taken a surney of the House of God, as it was in the dayes of the blessed Apostles of Iesus Christ? Who is there amongst you, that hath seene and considered this holy Temple in her first glorie? And how doe you see it now? Is it not in comparison of the other, almost as nothing, when ye looke vpon them that haue vndertaken the charge of your soules, and know how farre these are for the most part growne out of kind, how few there bee that treade the steps of their ancient Predecessors, yee are easily filled with indignation, easily drawne vnto these complaints, wherein the difference of present, from former times, is bewailed, easily perswaded to thinke of them that liued to enioy the dayes which now are gone. Surely they were happie in comparison of vs that haue succeeded them: were not their Bishops men vnreproueable, wise, righteous, holy, temperate, well-reported of, euen of those which were without? were not their Pastors, Guides, and Teachers, able and willing

willing to exhort with wholsome doctrine, and to improue which gainesaid the Truth? had they Priests made of the refuse of the people? were men, like to the children which were in *Nineueh*, vnable to discerne betweene the right hand and the left, presented to the charge of their Congregation? did their Teachers leaue their flockes ouer which the holy Ghost had made them ouerseers? did their Prophets enter vpon holy things as spoiles, without a reuerend calling? were their Leaders so vnkindly affected towards them, that they could find in their hearts to sell them as sheepe or Oxen, not caring how they made them away? But beloued, deceiue not your selues. Doe the faults of your Guides and Pastors offend you? It is your fault if they bee thus faultie. *Nullus qui malum rectorem patitur, cum accuset, quia sui fuit meriti peruersi Pastoris subiacere ditioni,* sayth S. *Gregorie*, whosoeuer thou art whom the inconuenience of an euill Gouernour doth presse, accuse thy selfe, and not him. His being such, is thy deseruing. *O yee disobedient children, turne againe,* sayth the Lord, *and then will I giue you Pastors according to mine owne heart, which shall feed you with knowledge and vnderstanding.* So that the onely way to repaire all ruines, breaches, and offensiue decayes in others, is to beginne reformation at your selues. Which that we may all sincerely, seriously, and speedily doe, God the Father grant for his Sonne our Sauiour Iesus sake, vnto whom with the holy Ghost, three Persons, one Eternall and Euerlasting God, be honor, and glorie, and praise for euer.

Ier. 3. 14, 15.

AMEN.

FINIS.

willing to exhort with wholsome doctrine, and to improue which gainsaid the Truth? had they Priests made of the refuse of the people? were not, like to the children which were in Niniue, vnable to discerne betweene the right hand and the left, preferred to the charge of their Congregation? did their Teachers leaue their flocke ouer which the holy Ghost had made them ouerseers? did their Prophets enter vpon holy things as lyons, without a reuocall calling? were their Leaders so vnkindly affected towards them, that they could find in their hearts to tell them as lyke or Oxen, not caring how they made them away? But beloued, deceiue not your selues. Doe the faults of your Guides and Pastors offend you? It is your fault if they bee thus faulte. Nullius peccatum nocebit patri, cum accuset, quia fuit mentis peruersæ? Pastoris subiectæ delictum, sayth S. Gregorie, whosoeuer thou art whom the inconuenience of an euill Gouernour doth preiudice, accuse thy selfe, and not him. His being such, is thy deserning. O pro dolor! peccatum christum, parere, sayth the Lord, and then will I giue you Pastors according to mine owne heart, which shall feed you with knowledge and vnderstanding. So that the only way to repaire all ruines, breaches, and offensiue decayes in others, is to beginne reformation at your selues. Which that we may all sincerely, seriously, and speedily doe, God the Father grant for his Sonne our Sauiour Iesus sake, vnto whom with the holy Ghost, three Persons, one Eternall and Euerlasting God, be honor, and glorie, and praise for euer.

AMEN.

PSALMS.

AN ALPHABETICALL TABLE, CONTAINING ALL THE PRINCIPALL MATTERS HANDLED IN THE FIRST FOVRE BOOKES, OF THE ECCLESIASTICALL Politie.

A

Action, any thing by which Actions are framed is a Law, 6. Angelicall Actions how reduced, 10. Man bound to imitate God in his Actions, 11. What are the fountaines of humane Actions, 14. Whether Actions are rewardable. 24

Agents, the Law which Agents must keepe. 6

Ambrose. 36

Anaxagoras. 4

Argument, see Disputation.

Aristotle. 61

Assertion, see *Position*.

Authoritie, the force of humane Authoritie. 77

Augustine, 21.34.40.62.75.106.121 131.159.166.

Angels, what Law they obey, 9. Considerations of Angels. 10

Authour, his cause of writing this Booke, and the severall inducements. 2.3

B

Bishop, the Bishop of Salisburie, his Answere to Master *Harding*. 68 69

Benefit, the benefite of keeping Reasons Lawes. 23

C

Caluine. 87.159

Canons, Ecclesiasticall Canons how made. 105

Ceremonie, all Ceremonies are not left to the order of the Church, 119 The vse of Ceremonies in our Church, 128. What is condemned in our Ceremonies, 130. Our Ceremonies accused of Popishnesse, and the answere, 132. That it is lawfull to vse some Ceremonies which the Church of Rome hath, 136. That we are not to abolish our Ceremonies for any of the Aduer-

ſaries Reaſons, 143. The vſe of the Papiſts Ceremonies giueth no hope to the Popiſh Religion, 144. Of the griefe which they ſay godly men take at our vſe of Popiſh Ceremonies anſwered, 146. Touching the Papiſts taking ſome Ceremonies from the Iewes anſwered, 147. That difference in Ceremonies, ſhould not breed controuerſies, 153. The Allegation that our Ceremonies hauing beene abuſed by Idolatrie are ſcandalous, and the anſwere, 154. That wee ſhould aboliſh our Ceremonies as other reformed Churches haue done, is anſwered, 158. There ſhould be an vnitie, both in Ceremonies and Doctrine, 159. The Ceremonies of Rome to be choſen before the Ceremonies of the Turkes, 166. The Aduerſaries contradicting himſelfe in expounding Ceremonies. 134

Chriſt, his Lawes not altered, 120. Whether Chriſt haue forbidden the change of Lawes. 112

Church, what it is, and why Politicke Lawes are required, 82. Whether the forme of Church Policie be neceſſarie to be ſet down in the Scriptures, 89. The difference betweene matters of Church Politie and matters of Faith, 90. What they meant that pleaded againſt the Politie of the Church of England, 93. A wrong to all Churches, to condemne Eccleſiaſticall Lawes, 94. A ſhift to maintaine that nothing ought to bee eſtabliſhed in the Church which is not commanded in Scriptures, and the anſwere, *Ibid.* 95. 96. Another deuice to maintaine the former Poſition, and the anſwere, 97. Sixe other Prooſes for the ſame, 98. 99. &c. 102. The examples of the eldeſt Churches doth not diſproue vs, 139. Churches compared rather to Families, then the Seruants of one Familie, 160. The eſtabliſhment of Eccleſiaſticall Lawes in the Churches of England. 163

Ciprian. 63

Command, the expoſition of the word commanded. 97

Conſtantine the Emperour, his opinion of the Feaſt of Eaſter. 148

Corruption, a corrupt Bodie is iniurious to the Soule. 16

Creator, he made the World by Reaſon, not Hands, 4. He proceeded by a ſet and certaine way in the Creation, *Ibid.* ſee *Good.*

D

Diſcipline, it is a part of the Goſpell. 110

Diſputation, how the Fathers doe diſpute, 61. Cuſtome of diſputing from Diuine authoritie negatiuely, 66. Diſputation from Humane authoritie. 70

E

Edward the ſixt, King of England termed a Saint. 167

Elizabeth, Queene of England her praiſe, and great worke in Religion. 168

Epenetus, the firſt man that receiued the Chriſtian Faith in Acchaia. 162

Experience,

Experience, that which Experience hath allowed in all Ages, is not to be condemned. 129

F

Faith, the difference betwixt Faith and Politie. 90
Fathers, the manner of their disputing, 6. The first Assertion taken from the Fathers answered. *Ibid.*
Faustus, 140
Felicitie, who capable there of, and who not. 35
Forme, what it is in Man and in other Creatures. 8

G

GOD, that God beeing the Author of Lawes, &c. yet it is not any reason to prone Lawes vnchangeable, 108. God hath left a prescript forme of gouernment, 113. The course which God teacheth is not against our conformitie with the Church of Rome, 137. See *Creator*.
Gregorie, his charitable speech to *Leander*. 159

H

HArding, against the Bishop of Salisborie, and the Bishops answere. 68, 69
Heauen, is hard to find out the things in Heauen. 16
Henry the eight, King of England, the first which put downe Superstition. 167
Hilarie, 62
Hippocrates, his Oracle. 80
Homer. 14

I

Exome. 62, 147
Irene. 74
Iupiter, his counsell fulfilled. 4

K

KNowledge is the restraint of humane Actions. 14

L

LAw, the Law which God set for himselfe before all beginnings, to doe all things by, 3. of the Law which naturall Agents haue giuen them to obserue, and how to keepe it, 6. What a Law is, *Ibid.* The diuersitie of Lawes, *Ibid.* 47. The Law which Angels worke by, 9. The Law by which man must Imitate God in his Actions, 11. How man began to vnderstand the Law, 12. Of Lawes grounded vpon mans Will, 13. The finding out of Lawes by Reason, 16. On what all Lawes consist, 20. The benefit of keeping of Reasons Lawes, 23. Supernaturall Lawes how suffered by God, 33. The cause why Naturall and Rationall Lawes are set downe in the Scriptures, 38. The benefit of diuers Lawes, 39. 40. Of Lawes positiue, 44. All Church Lawes not to be condemned, 94. Good Lawes for the rule of the Church may bee made by the aduice of men, 105. Lawes are not vnchangeable, 168. The

Lawes of Christ not altered, 120. Of eleuen Circumstances to proue that our Church Lawes are lawfull, 120. 121. 122. 123. Lawes made against the Iewes, 152. All positiue Lawes of men may bee abolished, 166

Lawe, see *Vnitie*.

M

Man, how he is bound to imitate God in his Actions, 11. Mans first knowledge of the Law, which he is to obserue. 12

Mercurius Trismegistus. 4. 12

Moses, his attributing of speech to God, 7. The choise hee gaue vnto the people, and what they should elect. 14

N

Nature, of the Law of Nature, and whence, 6. The Heathen held themselues bound only to the Law of Nature, 150. Of supernaturall Lawes. 33

O

Orpheus, his opinion of Gods Throne. 10

P

Plato. 4

Politie, how Politie is grounded on Reason, 24. Of the Church Politie, 89. That it is not the best Politie to haue no agreement with the Church of Rome. 142

Position, the Aduersaries first Position answered, 54. The first proofe thereof answered, 55. The second proofe answered, 56. The third proofe answered, 57. The fourth proofe answered. 58

Prayer, the point of standing at prayer discussed. 160. &c.

Precepts, the seuen Precepts which the Iewes beleeued to be giuen by God to the sonnes of *Noah*. 150

R

Reason, how Reason findeth out Lawes, 16. The benefit by keeping of Reasons Lawes, 23. How Reason teacheth men to make Lawes, 24. How Reason made the World. 4

S

Scotus, a Question of his concluded. 41

Scripture, the sufficiencie of Scriptures, 41. What the Scriptures doe containe, 55. The Scriptures direct a man in all his Actions, 56. The Scripture doth deny the thing it noteth not, 63. Nothing is taken from the Scriptures which may bee giuen it with truth, 92. The whole drift of the Scriptures. 102

Societies, how Societies were founded and gouerned, 24. How Societies stand and continue. 25. 26. &c.

Soule,

Soule, what is iniurious to it. 16
Strabo. 46
Supernaturall, how Supernaturall Lawes were made knowne. 33

T

Tarquine, a Consull in Rome, banisht onely because his name was *Tarquine*. 166
Tertullian: 62.63.64.65.83.88.99. 110.133.151.160.
Theophrast. 18
Thomas Aquinas. 106
Traditions disproued. 40
Trueth, how it is ioyned to this worke. 77

V

Vnitie, how Vnitie is allowed 159. The manner of Vnitie betweene Churches described. *Ibid.*

W

Whitaker, his confutation of *Bellarmine*. 44
Will, of Mans Will whereon Lawes are made, 13. Will a Fountaine of humane Actions. 14
Wisedome, the course which Gods Wisedome teacheth is not against our conformitie with the Church of Rome. 137
Words, how to be taken. 150

Z

Zonaras. 51

FINIS.

THE TABLE.

Sanctes, what ejaculations to it. 16
Stratio. 46
Supernaturall, how Supernaturall Lawes were made known. 33

T

Tarquine, a Consull in Rome, ba-
nisht onely because his name was Tarquine. 166
Tertullian. 62. 63. 64. 67. 83. 88. 99. 112. 133. 171. 180.
Theophrast. 18
Tolum Aquum. 106
Traditions disproved. 40
Truth, how it is ioyned to this work. 17

V

Vnitie, how Vnitie is allowed 159. The manner of Vnitie betweene Churches described. 161.

W

Water, his conclusion of Bellarmine. 44
Will, of Mans Will whereon Lawes are made, 13. Will a Foundation of humane Actions. 14
Wisedome, the course which Gods Wisedome teacheth is not cōtinu-
ous conformable with the Church of Rome. 137
Work, how to be taken. 150

Z

Zuinglius. 51

FINIS.

AN ALPHABETICALL TABLE, CONTAINING ALL THE PRINCIPALL MATTERS MENTIONED IN THE FIFT BOOKE of *Ecclesiasticall Polities*, and in the *Diuine Vnities*, and other godly Sermons of Master RICHARD HOOKER.

A

Action, whose Actions are freed from preiudice, 195. How Actions make men idle. 376

Aduice, where to be sought. 247

Affaires, what Instruments are fittest to be imployed in any Affaire, 184. What things are conuenient in the outward ordering of Church Affaires. 193

Alchidimas, his opinion of premeditate Speech. 230

Ambrose, his opinion of the power of mans Will. 317

Annuntiation, the Feast Day thereof. 378

Apocrypha, of the reading thereof. 215

Arrius, his first cause of dissention. 266

Athanasius, of his Creed, and the vse thereof. 266

Atheisme, it is the greatest opposite to Religion, 188. What makes Atheists politique. *Ibid.*

Attire, of Attire belonging to the Seruice of God, 243. The glory of white Attire in the East part of the world. 344

Authoritie, how it may with good Conscience be obeyed. 285

Augustine, his opinion of the Dedication of Churches, 295. His opinion of deuout men, 321. His opinion of short Prayer, 252. His opinion of Christ, 301. 302. His opinion touching reuolt after Baptisme, 330. His opinion of Baptisme administred by Lay-men in case of necessitie, 331. His answere to *Boniface*. 336

Awe, see *Feare*.

B

Babylon, it was before Sion in zeale, 189. Babylon taken for the Church of Rome, 499. The sinnes of Babylon. 500

Baptisme, the Substance, the Rites and Solemnities, 312. the ground in Scripture whereupon the necessitie of outward Baptisme hath beene built, 313. 318. what kind of necessitie in outward Baptisme hath beene

beene gathered by the words of our Sauiour, 314. What things in Baptiſme hath beene diſpenſt with, 319. Whether Baptiſme by women be true Baptiſme, 322. Of Interrogatories in Baptiſme as touching Faith, &c. 334. Interrogatories to be propoſed Infants at Baptiſme, and in their names anſwered by Godfathers, 335. Of the Croſſe in Baptiſme. 340

Baſill, his aduice touching Obedience to Gouernors, 247. His Opinion of Muſicke in Churches. 260

Behauiour, how to behaue a mans ſelfe in Prayer. 248

Beliefe, it is not to be got by the bare contemplation of Heauen and Earth, 225. What muſt laue Beleeuers. 228

Boniface a Biſhop, his asking of Saint *Auguſtine* a reaſon for interrogatories in Baptiſme. 336

Buriall, the Rites of Buriall, 401

C

Catechiſing, how it was the firſt kind of preaching. 211

Ceremonie, no Chriſtian Church can be without the vſe of ſome Ceremonie. 342

Chriſt, what manner of perſon he is, 293. That by the vnion of the one with the other nature in Chriſt, there groweth neither gaine nor loſſe of eſſentiall properties to either, 294. What Chriſt hath obtayned according to the Fleſh by the vnion of his Fleſh, with Deitie, 296. The foure things which make complete the whole ſtate of Chriſt, 329. Of the perſonall preſence of Chriſt euery where, 360. Chriſt his loue to Man. 308

Church, the Power of the Church 196 The delight of the Church, 199. The antiquitie of Churches, 202. Solemnities in erecting Churches, and the hallowing and dedicating of them, 203. Burthens not to be carried through Churches, 204. Of the names whereby Churches are diſtinguiſhed, 205. Of the faſhions of Churches, 206. The ſumptuouſneſſe of Churches, 207. What holineſſe and vertue is aſcribed to the Church, more then to other places, 209. The pretence of ſuch as would deſtroy Churches, *Ibid.* The power and beautie of the Church, a motiue to Prayer, 238. The priuiledge of the Church of God, 368. The firſt things deliuered to the Church, were ſincere Truth, 448. The prouiſion of the Church of England, *Ibid.* A Deſinition of the viſible Church of Chriſt, 499. What Churches conſiſt of, 584. Certaine conſiderations touching the Church of God. 586

Churching of *Women*, 400

Cyprian, his opinion of reading, 231. His opinion of Baptiſme. 324

Communion of ſaults noted in the forme of adminiſtring the Communion. 364

Concubine, the difference betwixt her and a Wife. 399

Confirmation, how to bee vſed after Baptiſme. 351

Conſtantine, his building of a Church, 203. His licencing of Sunday labours. 385

Continence, the effects thereof 185. No Man can doe ill with a good Conſcience. 192

Counſell, ſee *Aduice*.

Croſſe, the vſe of the Croſſe. 342.

D

Deacons, the vse for which they were made. 420
Death, what makes it bitter, 177. Of ſodaine death. *Ibid.*
Dedication, the Feaſt of *Dedication*. 377
Deiſme, ſee *God*.
Delights, ſee *Pleaſures*.
Demands, ſee *Queſtions*.
Devill, ſee *Satan*.
Diotrephes, his deſtroying of Churches. 208
Dionyſius, his report touching Rebaptiſme. 324
Doctrine, how all Doctrines are to be examined, 219. What Doctrine is. 236
Duties, how Duties are beſt performed, 184. The Nature of the Miniſterie, which performeth divine Duties. 404

E

Eccleſiaſticall Livings, who may hold one or more. 445
Evill, what is to be taken for Evill. 198
Eutyches, his Opinion and Error touching *Chriſt*. 293
Expedient, ſee *Neceſſitie*.

F

Faith, whatſoever is faithfully and rightly asked, is ever obtayned, 280. The Seed of faithfull Parentage, is holy from the birth, 318. How to make the minde abide in the light of Faith, 335. Who are faithleſſe, and who are not, 501. the Faith of a Chriſtian doth apprehend the words of the Law, 548 Of *Abrahams* Faith, *Ibid.* The weakneſſes of *Habakuks* Faith, 549 Some Admonitions to Faith, 553. Of the maintenance of Faith, 561. Evidence to prove that al the faithfull are Gods Children, 570. More of Faith, 579. No pleaſing of God without Faith, 581. No man can receive comfort to his ſoule by another mans Faith. 582
Faſting, of the dayes which are appointed both for ordinary and extraordinary Faſts, 387. Of private Faſts, 389. The cuſtome of Faſting before *Eaſter*, 391. Faſts are the Vſhers of Feſtivall Dayes; 397
Feare, what made Men fearefull in the beſt times, 185. The ſhew of fearing God, 189. Ignorant feare is a roote of Superſtition, 190. Feare makes all men thinke of God, 191. A Sermon againſt Feare, 539. The Apoſtles Feare. *Ibid.* The ſundry affections of Feare, 543. Whether a man may feare *Deſtruction* or *Vexation*, without Sinning. *Ibid.* How men ſinne in the matter of Feare, 544. The danger of neglecting Feare. *Ibid.*
Feſtivall, of Feſtivall Dayes, and the naturall cauſes of their Inſtitution, 373. The manner of celebrating Feſtivall Dayes, 375. The number of our Feſtivall Dayes, 378. Exceptions againſt keeping other Feſtivall Dayes beſides the Sabbath, 379
Fleſh, the honour which our Fleſh hath, by being the Fleſh of Chriſt. 298
Foundation, what is meant by the word Foundation, 507. Of denying the foundation, 508. Whether the

the Church of Rome denying the Foundation. 514
Friends, why Friends are naturally desired. 405

G

Gloria Patri, the vse thereof. 266 270
Gladnesse, see *Ioy*.
Godlinesse, it is the well-spring of all Vertues. 184
God, what God requireth at mans hands 194. His goodnesse in granting all things fit to sustayne life, and making them prompt, and easie, 232. Gods worthinesse, and Mans vnworthinesse, 278. The will of God that all men might bee saued, 286. God is in Christ by the personall Incarnation of the Sonne, 290. How God is in Christ. 305
Grace, how it is a consequent of Sacraments. 311
Gifts, how they are not offred to God as supplyes of his wants, but as testimonies of our affection to his greatnesse. 254

H

Harmonie, how Musicall Harmonie is to be vsed in the Church. 258
Health, why health is so precious. 405
Heresie, it oft troubled the West part of the World, but the East was neuer quiet. 101. The misinterpretation Heresie hath made of the manner how God and Man are vnited in Christ. 291. Of pertaking with Heresie, 500. How the Papists accuse vs falsly of Heresie, 571
Himnes, their vses. 256. How *Himnes* are to be sung. 1258
Homilies defended. 431
Hooker, his Answere to Master *Trauers* Supplication. 473. Master *Trauers* first and second sentence with Master *Hookers*. 474. Master *Hookers* willingnesse to peace. *Ibid.* The Obiections of *Trauers* answered, as that of Predestination and Faith, 477. That of Iustification, 478. Touching the Virgin *Maries* sinne. 479. The fraude Master *Trauers* found in Master *Hookers* manner of teaching answered. 481. *Trauers* application of the Fathers answered. 483. *Trauers* fourth accuse answered. 485. Master *Hookers* answere to Master *Trauers* demands, 486. Touching the citing only of Canonical Scriptures in preaching, 487

I

Idolatrie, see *Superstition*.
Ierome, his complaint. 208
Ignorance, the effects which Ignorance worketh. 199
Infants, how they haue right to Baptisme, 332. How Infants may Couenant with God. 338
Instruction, how it is a part belonging to the Sacrament. 289
Ioy, what it worketh, 386. It euer swarueth from Mediocritie. 396
Irenæus, his opinion touching the flesh of Christ. 294
Isidore, his opinion of reading. 252
Iude, the vertues of that blessed Apostle. 568
Iulian, a Persecutor. 867
Iustice, the vse and abuse of Iustice. 185

Iu-

Iustine the Martyr, his opinion of Baptisme. 335
Iustification, what it is, 496. Of the Iustification of the Iewes, 497 Whether those which Christ hath called and iustified, may fall, &c. 509

K

Knowledge, how it is attayned by Reading, 217. The knowledge of Gods Truth how gotten by hearing Sermons, 220. The knowledge of God is not brought into the World with vs, 222. What is in the knowledge of God and man, 287. In what estimation knowledge was amongst the *Valentinian* Heretikes. 316

L

Law, good Lawes are the voyces of Reason, 200. Good Lawes are the Images of Wisdome. 453
Legends, the abuse of them. 218
Letanie, of the vse and the singing thereof. 264
Lots, of the Feast of Lots. 377

M

Man, of the principall Instruments God hath furnisht him withall, 195. Whosoeuer is Man is vanitie, 278. How men are the Sonnes of God, 306. In what the perfection of a Christian man consisteth, 447. The nature of all men, 529 No mans minde is right, 531. The iust man, and the impious man are of contrary mindes, 532 Why naturall men know not the things of God, 547. 564. Man must not halt betweene two opinions, 565. The goodnesse of God to man. 575
Marriage, see *Matrimonie*.
Marcion, his opinion of Christ, 361
Matrimonie, of the celebration thereof, 397. Of the Ring in Matrimonie, 398. The fruits of Mariage. 400
Maximinus, his giuing way to build Churches. 208
Ministerie, of the Nature and Function thereof, 404. Of power giuen to men to execute the office of the Holy Ghost, 410. The difference betweene the Minister and other men, 410. In what sort Ministers may give the Holy Ghost, 412. When as the Ministers receiue Ordination, they receiue the Holy Ghost, 413. The Ministerie is an office of dignitie and honour, 414 The Minister must wayte for, not attempt his office, 415. Ministers must not bee made for reward, 416 Of the degrees whereby the power of order is distinguished, and of the attyre of Ministers, 417. The ranke of the first Ministerie, 422. Of the learning which should be in Ministers, 437. Against sloth in Ministers, 439. What learning Ministers should haue, 442. Of the absence of Ministers. 443
Mockers, of Mockers in the last times, 566. Of Mockers, *Ibid.* Mockers worse then Pagans. 567
Moses, his casting of Prayer into Poeticall Models. 240
Musicke, see *Harmonie*.

N

Nature, how shee coueteth preseruation from things hurtfull, 540
Necessitie, what is needfull in Church Affaires. 196
Nestorius, his opinion and errour touching Christ. 293
Nicene-Creed, by whom fram'd for the whole Christian World. 267
Nineueh, the force of Prayer there, 217
Nouatianus his opinion of Baptisme, 324

O

Obedience, how it belongeth to the Church. 197
Opinion, what the varietie of opinions argueth. 362. Dangerous opinions amongst the Fathers. 522
Ordination, of lawfull Ordination, and what their qualitie is that enter into holy Orders. 432
Ornaments, see *Attyre*.
Osius, the framer of the *Nicene-Creed*, his declining to *Arrius*. 267

P

Paschasius, his opinion of Christ. 293
Patience, what it is. 541
Pelagius, his vse of Baptisme. 316
Pharisies, of their most grosse Superstition. 191
Policie, how it is indebted to Religion. 184
Pope, his great Ambition, 515. His vsurped Supremacie. 572
Prayer, what it is 234. Of publique Prayer, 237. The forme of common Prayer, *Ibid.* What the place of publike Prayer is, 238. The authoritie of the place, *Ibid.* Of such as denie the forme of Common Prayer, 239. Of those which allow a set forme of Prayer, but not our forme, 240. Errors supposed in our forme of Prayer, 242. Of gesture in praying, and of different places for that purpose, 248. Easinesse of praying after our forme, 249. The length of our Seruice or Common Praier, 250. Of diuers defects found in our Common Prayer, 252. Of Lessons intermingled with Prayer, *Ibid.* The effect of Prayer, 253. The benefits which arise by praying in due sort, *Ibid.* The number of Prayers for earthly things, and of the often rehearsing of the Lords Prayer, 254. Of the peoples repeating Prayers after the Minister, 256 Of a supposed vnsoundnesse in our forme of Prayer, 275. Examples in some particular words, *Ibid.* Touching Prayer for deliuerance from sudden death, 276. Other Examples of Prayer, 278. Of the Prayer, *To bee euermore deliuered from all Aduersitie*, 279. The Praiers of the iust are accepted, but not alwayes granted, 280. The vses of Prayer, *Ibid.* Of vaine Prayers, 285. Of praying, *That all men may find mercie*, 286. Prayer a member of the Sacraments. 289
Predestination, what it doth. 316
Preaching, of the first publike preaching, 211. Of preaching by reading, 212. 215. Of preaching by Sermons, 220. The sence and vse of the word preaching, 222. Preaching the Ordinance of God, 231. A glorious shew of Eloquence, no good preaching, 234. The substance of good preaching, *Ibid.*
Priest, what the word signifieth, 418 who may not be Priests, 446

Pride, a Sermon of *Pride*, 529. Tokens of Pride, 532. What is in the heart of a proud man, 534. Pride the Mother of all euils, 535. Remedies against Pride, *Ibid.*
Priuiledges, their seuerall natures, 441
Prophets, not made by ordination, 421
Prophesie, the spirit of prophesie receiued from God himselfe, 562. Of the Prophets manner of speech 563
Proposition, of fiue Propositions, foure reasonable and one vnreasonable, 193. The first Proposition, *Ibid.* The second Proposition, 194. The third Proposition, 196. The fourth Proposition, 198. The fifth Proposition. 201
Prosper, his opinion of the Law, of Supplication. 288
Psalmes, of their seuerall vses, 256. Of Musicke with Psalmes, 258. Of singing Psalmes where the people and Ministers answere one another. 260

Q

Questions, a question concerning the outward forme in the exercise of Religion, 193. Questions touching Iudgement. *Ibid.*

R

Rabanus Maurus, his opinion of Musicke in Churches. 259
Reading, what is attributed thereunto, 223. It is the Ordinance of God, 231
Religion, It is the root of Vertue, 184 All things that are Religious are prosperous, 186. What the Heathen impute to religion, *Ibid.* Foure generall demands concerning the outward forme in the exercise of Religion, 193. A fit Rule not safe nor reasonable, *Ibid.* The vse of Religion or the publike seruice of God must haue their places, 202. Of Oblations, Foundations, Endowments, and Tithes intended for the perpetuitie of Religion, 424
Repentance, true *Repentance* may come by reading, 224. What perfecteth Repentance, 277. Without Repentance all doe perish, 502. 503. A generall Repentance wil not serue for all sinnes. 504
Reason, how it forsaketh them which forsake God, 190
Righteousnesse, there is no meere naturall man absolutely righteous, 493. Two sorts of Righteousnes. 494. 505
Romulus his Lawes concerning Marriage. 398

S

Sacraments, of the name, the Author and force of them, 289. Instruction and Prayer are the Elements and parts of the Sacrament, *Ibid.* The necessitie of Sacraments vnto the participation of Christ, 310. Sacraments diuersly interpreted, *Ibid.* Sacraments are Foods, 330. Of the Sacrament of the Body and Bloud of Christ, 356. The three Expositions of *This is my Bodie*, 362. Faulsin the forme of administring the Sacrament of the Bodie and Bloud of Christ, 364 More of the Lords Supper. 573
Salomon, he was the Authour of many Parables. 185

Satan

Satan, his subtiltie. 377
Scriptures, of some supposed vntruths in the translation of them. 212
Separation, what the word Separation meaneth, 368. A triple-fold Separation, 369. What Separatists and Back-biders are, *Ibid.*
Sermons, whether they bee the ordinary way of teaching, 220. What are attributed to Sermons only, 223. A Sermon against Pride, 529. A Sermon against Sorrow and Teares, 539. A Sermon of the perpetuitie of Faith, 547. A Sermon upon part of Saint *Iudes* Epistle, 561. A second Sermon out of Saint *Iude*. 575
Singing, or Singing in Churches, 257. 258. 259. 260. 261. 262. Of singing the *Magnificat*, *Benedictus*, and *Nunc Dimittis*, 263. Of singing the *Letanie*. 264
Sinne, to deny sinne is a double sinne, 583
Sorrow, a Sermon against Sorrow, 539. The Apostles Sorrow, *Ibid.* The Womens Sorrow for Christ, 540. Moderation of Sorrow. 541
Speech, compared vnto Tapestrie. 496
Superstition, how Superstition ruled amongst the Romanes, 186. The Roote of Superstition, 190. The rediculle of Superstition. 192

T

Tertullian, his opinion of publike Prayer, 137. His opinion of Christian Women, Marrying with Infidels, 264. His opinion of Fasts, 388. His opinion of the Ring in Matrimonie. 398
Thanksgiving, the want of particular Thanksgiving, 273. Of other Thanksgiving for common Calamities, 274
Translation, of the true beginning thereof. 186
Truth, what keepes man from consenting to truth. 335

V

Valentinian, a Persecutor. 267
Vnion, how the vnion of *Deitie* with Mankind came, 297. The vnion which is betweene Christ and the Church. 304
Vnworthinesse, the worthinesse of God and of mans vnworthinesse. 278

W

Walter Travers, his Supplication to the Lords of her Maiesties Councell, 459. *Travers* not lawfully called to the Ministerie, & his answere thereunto, 461. That he preached without licence, and his answere thereunto 463. Of his Action with Master *Hooker*, *Ibid.* His Position, *That such as dye in the Church of Rome, holding Ignorantly that Faith, &c.* cannot bee said by the Scriptures to be saued, 465. The cause of division betwixt him and Master *Hooker*, 466. The Church of Rome compared with the Galathians, 469. Speech compared by Master *Travers* to Tapestrie, *Ibid.* *Travers* charged with indiscretion, by the high Commissioners. 482
Wickednesse, two sorts of wicked men, 493
Wife, the difference betwixt a Wife and

and a Concubine. 399
Will, whether Will be in God or Man, to what it belongeth, 282. Mans will muſt bee framed to Gods will, 288
Wit, the weakneſſe and dulneſſe thereof, makes men ſlow to beleeve what is written. 232
Wiſdome, the effects thereof, 200 Wiſdome maketh men deſire ſlowneſſe in death, 277. Diuerſitie of Wiſdomes. 293
Women, of Chriſtian women, marrying with Infidels. 264
Workes, what thoſe men call good Workes are, 515. 516. Errour in the Church of Rome touching good workes. 518. 519
Worſhip, what worſhip belongeth to God. 192
Worthineſſe, the worthineſſe of God, and of mans vnworthineſſe. 278

T

Young-men, an exhortation to Young-men. 579

Z

Zeale, and a principall roote of Superſtition. 198

FINIS.